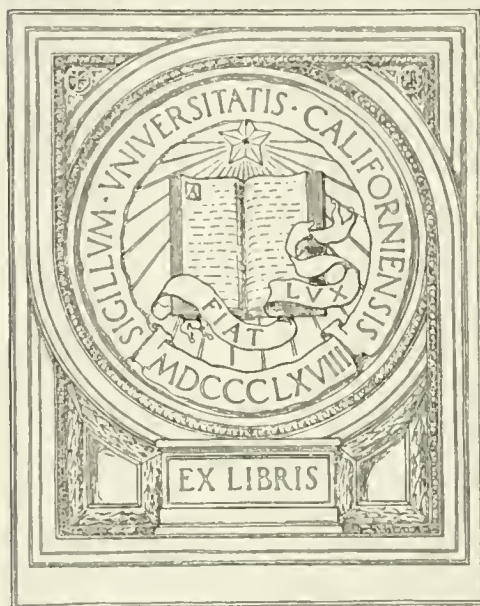


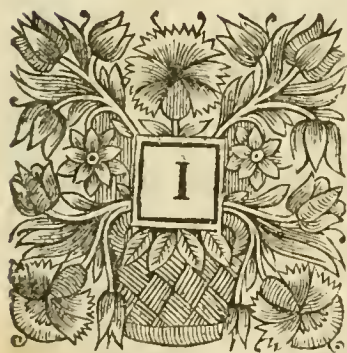
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
AT LOS ANGELES



IN MEMORIAM
S. L. MILLARD ROSENBERG

TO THE
Right Worshipful and Well-beloved,
THE
PARISHIONERS
OF
S^t CLEMENTS
EAST-CHEAP.

Mercy unto you, and Peace, and Love be multiplied.



I should be at any time unmindful of your commands, you might well esteem me unworthy of your continued Favours; and there is some reason to suspect I have incurred the interpretation of forgetfulness, having been so backward in the performance of my Promises. Some years have passed since I preached unto you upon such Texts of Scripture as were on purpose selected in relation to the CREED, and was moved by you to make those Meditations publick. But you were pleased then to grant what my inclinations rather led me to, that they might be turned into an Exposition of the Creed it self: which, partly by the difficulty of the Work undertaken, partly by the intervention of some other employments, hath taken me up thus long,
A for

65 5-14-46

AUG 14 1936

ROSENBERG LIBRARY

for which I desire your pardon. And yet an happy excuse may be pleaded for my delay, meeting with a very great felicity, that as Faith triumpheth in good works, so my Exposition of the Creed should be contemporary with the re-edifying of your Church. For though I can have little temptation to believe that my Book should last so long as that Fabrick; yet I am exceedingly pleased that they should begin together; that the publishing of the one should so agree with the opening of the other. This I hope may perswade you to forget my slackness, considering ye were not ready to your own expectation; your experience tells you the excuse of *Church-work* will be accepted in building, I beseech you let it not be denied in printing.

That blessed Saint, by whose name your Parish is known, was a fellow-labourer with *St. Paul*, and a successour of *St. Peter*; he had the honour to be numbered in the Scripture with them *whose names are written in the book of life*, and when he had sealed the Gospel with his Blood, he was one of the first whose memory was perpetuated by the building a Church to bear his name. Thus was *S. Clement's* Church famous in *Rome*, when *Rome* was famous for the *faith spoken of throughout the whole world*. He wrote an Epistle to the *Corinthians*, infested with a Schism, in imitation of *St. Paul*, which obtained so great authority in the Primitive times, that it was frequently read in their publick Congregations; and yet had for many hundred years been lost, till it was at last set forth out of the Library of the late King.

Now as by the Providence of God, the memory of that Primitive Saint hath been restored in our age,
so

The Epistle Dedicatory.

so my design aimeth at nothing else but that the Primitive Faith may be revived. And therefore in this Edition of the Creed I shall speak to you but what S. Jude hath already spoken to the whole Church, *Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, that ye should earnestly contend for the Faith which was once delivered to the Saints.* If it were so needful for him then to write, and for them to whom he wrote to contend for the first Faith, it will appear as needful for me now to follow his writing, and for you to imitate their earnestness, because the reason which he renders, as the cause of that necessity, is now more prevalent than it was at that time, or ever since. *For, saith he, there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation; ungodly men, turning the grace of God into lasciviousness, denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.* The Principles of Christianity are now as freely questioned as the most doubtful and controverted points; the grounds of Faith are as safely denied, as the most unnecessary superstructions; that Religion hath the greatest advantage which appeareth in the newest dress, as if we looked for another *Faith to be delivered to the Saints.* Whereas in Christianity there can be no concerning truth which is not antient; and whatsoever is truly new is certainly false. Look then for purity in the Fountain, and strive to embrace the first Faith, to which you cannot have a more probable guide than the Creed, received in all Ages of the Church; and to this I refer you, as it leads you to the Scriptures, from whence it was at first deduced, that while *those which are unskilful and unstable, wrest the words of God himself unto their own damnation,* ye

The Epistle Dedicatory.

may receive so much instruction as may set you beyond the imputation of unskilfulness, and so much of confirmation as may place you out of the danger of instability; which as it hath been the constant endeavour, so shall it ever be the Prayer of him, who after so many encouragements of his labours amongst you, doth still desire to be known as

Your most faithful

Servant in the Lord

JOHN PEARSON.

TO

TO THE READER.

I Have in this Book undertaken an Exposition of the Creed, and think it necessary in this Preface to give a brief Account of the Work : lest any should either expect to find that here which was never intended, or conceive that which they meet with such as they expected not.

The Creed without controversie is a brief comprehension of the objects of our Christian Faith, and is generally taken to contain all things necessary to be believed. Now whether all things necessary be contained there, concerneth not an Expositor to dispute, who is obliged to take notice of what is in it, but not to inquire into what is not : whether all truths comprehended in the same be of equal and absolute necessity, we are no way forced to declare ; it being sufficient, as to the design of an Exposition, to interpret the words, and so deliver the sense, to demonstrate the truth of the sense delivered, and to manifest the proper necessity of each truth, how far, and in what degree, and to what purposes it is necessary.

This therefore is the Method which I proposed to my self, and have prosecuted in every Article. First, to settle the words of each Article according to their Antiquity and Generality of reception in the Creed. Secondly, to explicate and unfold the Terms, and to endeavour a right notion and conception of them as they are to be understood in the same. Thirdly, to shew what are those truths which are naturally contained in those terms so explicated, and to make it appear that they are truths indeed, by such arguments and reasons as are respectively proper to evidence the verity of them. Fourthly, to declare what is the Necessity of believing those truths, what efficacy and influence they have in the soul, and upon the life of a Believer. Lastly, by a recollection of all, briefly to deliver the sum of every particular truth, so that every one when he pronounceth the Creed, may know what he ought to intend, and what he is understood to profess, when he so pronounceth it.

In the prosecution of the Whole, according to this Method I have considered, that a Work of so general a concernment must be exposed to two kinds of Readers, which though they may agree in judgment, yet must differ much in their capacities. Some there are who understand the Original Languages of the Holy Scripture, the Discourses and Treatates of the ancient Fathers, the determinations of the Councils, and History of the Church of God, the constant profession of settled truths, the rise and increase of Schisms and Heresies. Others there are unacquainted with such conceptions, and incapable of
such

To the Reader.

such instructions : who understand the Scriptures as they are translated : who are capable of the knowledge of the truths themselves, and of the proofs drawn from thence : who can apprehend the nature of the Christian Faith, with the power and efficacy of the same, when it is delivered unto them out of the Word of God, and in the language which they know. When I make this difference, and distinction of Readers : I do not intend thereby that, because one of these is Learned, the other is ignorant ; for he which hath no skill of the learned Languages, may notwithstanding be very knowing in the Principles of Christian Religion, and the reason and efficacy of them.

According to this distinction I have contrived my Exposition, so that the Body of it containeth fully what can be delivered and made intelligible in the English Tongue, without inserting the least sentence or phrase of any learned Language, by which he which is not acquainted with it, might be disturbed in his reading, or interrupted in his understanding. Not that I have selected only such notions as are common, easie, and familiar of themselves, but have endeavored to deliver the most material conceptions in the most plain and perspicuous manner ; as desirous to comprize the whole strength of the Work, as far as it is possible, in the Body of it. The other Part I have placed in the Margin, (but so as oftentimes it taketh up more room, and yet is never mingled or confounded with the rest,) in which is contained whatsoever is necessary for the illustration of any part of the Creed, as to them which have any knowledge of the Latine, Greek, and Original Languages, of the Writings of the ancient Fathers, the Doctrines of the Jews, and the History of the Church, those great advantages toward a right perception of the Christian Religion.

Now being the Creed comprehendeth the Principles of our Religion, it must contain those truths which belong unto it as it is a Religion, and those which concern it as it is ours. As it is a Religion, it delivereth such Principles as are to be acknowledged in Natural Theology, such as no man which worshippeth a God can deny, and therefore in the proof of these I have made use of such arguments and reasons as are most proper to oppose the Atheists, who deny there is a God to be worshipped, a Religion to be professed. As it is our Religion, it is Christian and Catholick : as Christian, it containeth such truths as were delivered by Christ and his Apostles, and those especially concerning Christ himself, which I have prosecuted constantly with an Eye to the Jews, who obstinately deny them, expecting still another Messias to come ; wherefore I shew out of the Law and the Prophets which they acknowledge, what was foretold in every particular concerning the Messias, and prove all those to be completed by that Christ in whom we believe. As our Religion is Catholick, it holdeth fast that faith which was once delivered to the Saints, and since preserved in the Church, and therefore I expound such verities in opposition to the Hereticks arising in all Ages, especially against the

To the Reader.

the Photinians, who of all the rest have most perverted the Articles of our Creed, and found out followers in these latter ages, who have erected a new Body of Divinity in opposition to the Catholick Theology. Against these I proceed upon such Principles as they themselves allow, that is, upon the Word of God delivered in the Old and New Testament, alledged according to the true sense; and applied by right reason: not urging the Authority of the Church which they reject, but only giving in the Margin the sense of the Primitive Fathers, for the satisfaction of such as have any respect left for Antiquity, and are perswaded that Christ had a true Church on the earth before these times.

In that part which after the demonstration of each Truth teacheth the necessity of the believing it, and the peculiar efficacy which it hath upon the life of a Christian: I have not thought fit to expatiate or enlarge my self, but only to mention such effects as flow naturally and immediately from the Doctrine, especially such as are delivered in the Scriptures; which I have endeavoured to set forth with all possible plainness and perspicuity. And indeed in the whole Work, as I have laid the foundation upon the written Word of God, so I have with much diligence collected such places of Scripture as are pertinent to each Doctrine, and with great faithfulness delivered them as they lye in the Writings of those holy Pen-men; not referring the Reader to places named in the Margin, (which too often I find in many Books multiplied to little purpose) but producing and interweaving the sentences of Scripture into the body of my Exposition, so that the Reader may understand the strength of all my reason without any further inquiry or consultation. For if those words which I have produced, prove not what I have intended, I desire not any to think there is more in the places named to maintain it.

At the Conclusion of every distinct and several Notion, I have recollected briefly and plainly the sum of what hath been delivered in the explication of it, and put it, as it were, into the mouth of every Christian, thereby to express more fully his faith, and to declare his profession. So that if the Reader please to put those Collections together, he may at once see and perceive what he is in the whole obliged to believe, and what he is by the Church of God understood to profess, when he maketh this publick, ancient and Orthodox Confession of Faith.

I have nothing more to add; but only to pray that the Lord would give you and me a good understanding in all things.

THE C R E E D.

I Believe in God the Father Almighty, maker of Heaven and Earth ; and in Jesus Christ, his only Son our Lord, Which Was conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, Was crucified, dead and buried, he descended into Hell, the third day he rose again from the dead, he ascended into Heaven, and sitteth at the right hand of God the Father Almighty ; from thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead. **I** Believe in the Holy Ghost, the Holy Catholick Church, the communion of Saints, the forgiveness of sins, the Resurrection of the body, and the life everlasting.



A N
EXPOSITION
OF THE
CREED.

ARTICLE I.

**I believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker
of Heaven and Earth.**

AS the first word *Credo, I believe*, giveth a denomination to the whole Confession of Faith, from thence commonly call'd the *CREED*; so is the same word to be imagin'd not to stand only where it is expressed, but to be carried through the whole Body of the Confession. For although it be but twice actually rehearsed, yet must we conceive it virtually prefix'd to the Head of every Article: that as we say, *I believe in God the Father Almighty*, so we are also understood to say, *I believe in Jesus Christ his only Son, our Lord*; as, *I believe in the Holy Ghost*, so also, *I believe the Catholick Church*. Neither is it to be joyned with every compleat Article only; but where any Article is not a single verity, but comprehensive, there it is to be look'd upon as affix'd to every part, or single truth, contained in that Article: as, for example, in the first, *I believe in God*, *I believe that God to be the Father*, *I believe that Father to be Almighty*, *I believe that Father Almighty to be the Maker of Heaven and Earth*. So that this *Credo I believe* rightly considered, multiplieth it self to no less than a double number of the Articles, and will be found at least twenty four times contained in the *CREED*. Wherefore being a word so pregnant and diffusive, so necessary and essential to every part of our Confession of Faith, that without it we can neither have *CREED* nor Confession, it will require a more exact consideration, and more ample explication, and that in such a Notion as is properly applicable to so many and so various Truths.

Now by this previous expression, *I believe*, thus considered, every parti-

cular Christian is first taught, and then imagined, to make confession of his Faith: and consequently this word, so used, admits a threefold consideration. First, as it supposeth Belief, or Faith, which is confessed. Secondly as it is a Confession, or external expression of that Faith so supposed. Thirdly, as both the Faith and Confession are of necessary and particular obligation. When therefore we shall have clearly delivered, First, what is the true nature and notion of Belief; Secondly, what the duty of confessing of our Faith; Thirdly, what obligation lyes upon every particular person to believe and confess; then may we be conceived to have sufficiently explicated the first word of the *C R E E D*, then may every one understand what it is he says, and upon what ground he proceeds, when he professeth, *I believe*.

For the right understanding of the true nature of Christian Faith, it will be no less than necessary to begin with the general notion of Belief; which being first truly stated and defined, then by degrees deduced into its several kinds, will at last make the nature of Christian Faith intelligible: a design, if I mistake not, not so ordinary and usual, as useful and necessary.

Belief in general I define to be *an Assent to that which is Credible, as Credible*.

By the word * *Assent* is expressed that Act or Habit of the Understanding, by which it receiveth, acknowledgeth and embraceth any thing as a Truth; it being the nature of the Soul so to embrace whatsoever appeareth true unto it, and so far as it so appeareth. Now this *Assent*, or Judgment of any thing to be true, being a general Act of the Understanding, and so applicable to other Habits thereof as well as to Faith, must be specified by its proper Object, and so limited and determined to its proper Act, which is the other part left to compleat the Definition.

This Object of Faith is first exprest by *that which is Credible*; for every one who believeth any thing, doth thereby without question assent unto it as to that which is Credible, and therefore all belief whatsoever is such a kind of Assent. But though all belief be an Assent to that *which is Credible*, yet every such Assent may not be properly Faith; and therefore those words make not the definition compleat. For he which sees an action done, knows it to be done, and therefore assents unto the Truth of the performance of it because he sees it: but another person to whom he relates it, may assent unto the performance of the same action, not because himself sees it, but because the other relates it; in which case *that which is Credible* is the Object of Faith in one, of evident knowledge in the other. To make the definition therefore full, besides the material Object or thing believed, we have added the formal Object, or that whereby it is properly believed, expressed in the last term, *as Credible*; which being taken in, it then appears that, First, whosoever believeth any thing, assenteth to something which is to him credible, and that as 'tis credible; and again, whosoever assenteth to any thing which is credible as 'tis credible, believeth something by so assenting: which is sufficient to shew the definition compleat.

* *Clem. Alex.*

Πίστις ἔστι τὸ ἐκ
ἀληθείας ἰκασίως
ᾧτιν, θεοσε-
βείας συγκα-
τάθεσις.

Strom. lib. 2.
S. Basil.

Πίστις μὲν ἐν
ᾧτι συγκατά-
θεσις ἀνακε-
ταται τῷ ᾧ ἀνα-
δείκνυται ἐν

πληροφορίᾳ τῇ
ἀληθείας ᾧτι
κηρυχθέντων
θεῶν χάριτι.

Affert. Fide.

The Basilidians,

Ὁμοῦτοι γὰρ ἐν
εἰς τὸ βασιλεί-
α δὲ τῶν ᾧτιν
ψυχῆς συγ-
κατάθεσιν

περὶ τι ᾧτι
μὴ κινέμεν
ᾧτιν διὰ
τὸ μὴ παρῆ-
ναι, *Clem. Alex.*
lib. 2.

Theodore. *de*

Prov. Serm. 1.

κατὰ τὸ τὸν

ἡμέτερον λό-
γον, πίστις ᾧτιν

ἐκείνη τῆς

ψυχῆς συγκατάθεσις.

And yet he also afterwards acknowledgeth they had that definition from the Greeks.

Τὴν μὲν γὰρ πίστιν καὶ

οἱ ἡμέτεροι φιλόσοφοι ἀείσαντο ἢ ἐθελοῦσιν ἢ ψυχῆς συγκατάθεσιν.

Credere est cum assensu cogitare, S. August.

Et de

Sp. et Lit. cap. Quid est credere, nisi consentire verum esse quod dicitur? So I take the συγκατάθεσις used by the Greek

Fathers to signify assensum or assensionem, as A. Gellius translateth the Stoick, συγκατατίθεται, sua assensione approbat, *l. 19.*

1. and before him Cicero, Nunc de assensione atq; approbatione, quam Græci συγκατάθεσιν vocant, pauca dicamus, in *Lucullo*.

So ἀπιστία and συγκατάθεσις are opposed by the Greeks. As Sextus Empiricus speaking of Admetus seeing Alcestis brought

back by Hercules from Hades, Ἐπεὶ μὲντοι ἦσαν ὅτι τέθνηκε, πενσάτω αὐτὸς ἢ διανοίᾳ ἀπὸ τῆς συγκατάθεσεως, καὶ περὶ

ἀπιστίας ἐκλινε, *Pyrrh. Hipoi. l. 13.3.* ἢ φιλαλήθης ἢ ψυχῆς ἐδέετο καὶ τὸ λεῖψαι ἀνιχομένη διελθῆναι, ἀλλὰ καὶ φανέν

ἀληθὲς πάντως καὶ ἀθός. *Simplic. in 3. Arist. de Anim. Cl. Alex. l. 2.* *Strom.* Ἐν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ σκοπῇ, ἀρετῇ καὶ ἀνθρώπου

εὖτε διὰ βεβαιωμένον μὲν περὶ τὴν τῆς ψυχῆς συγκατάθεσιν, ἔχοντα ὃ ἀπορροαί περὶ πίστιν ἀληθῆ. * As συγκατάθεσις

the Greek word used for this assent is applied to other acts of the understanding as well as that of Belief. So Clemens Alexandrinus,

speaking of the definition of Faith, Ἄλλοι δ' ἀπὸ τῆς προσηγορίας ἐννοήσαντες συγκατάθεσιν ἀπέδωκαν ἢ τὴν πίστιν, ἢ πάρε

ἀμέλει καὶ ἀποδείξιν ἀρροκίαν καὶ πρόμαλτον φανερὰν συγκατάθεσιν, *Strom. l. 2.* and again, Πᾶσα ἐν δοξᾷ, καὶ κείσιν καὶ

ὑποβολῇ καὶ οἷς σώματι καὶ ζωῆσιν αὐτῶν πρὸς γένεσιν ᾧτιν ἀνθρώπων, συγκατάθεσις ᾧτιν ἢ δ' ἐδὲν ἄλλο ἢ πίστις ἐν ἀν' ἢ τῇ

ἀπιστία, ἐπὶ πίστις ἔστι καὶ πίστις, διωκτὴν δέκνυσι καὶ συγκατάθεσιν τε καὶ πίστιν.

But

But for the explication of the same, farther observation will be necessary. For if that which we believe be something which is credible, and the notion under which we believe be the *Credibility* of it, then must we first declare what it is to be *Credible*, and in what *Credibility* doth consist, before we can understand what is the nature of *Belief*.

Now that is properly *Credible* which is not apparent of it self, nor certainly to be collected, either antecedently by its cause, or reversely by its effect, and yet, though by none of these ways, hath the attestation of a truth. For those things which are apparent of themselves, are either so in respect of our Sense, as that Snow is white, and Fire is hot; or in respect of our Understanding, as that the whole of any thing is greater than any one part of the whole, that every thing imaginable, either is, or is not. The first kind of which being propounded to our sense, one to the sight, the other to the touch, appear of themselves immediately true, and therefore are not termed *Credible*, but *evident* to sense; as the latter kind, propounded to the understanding, are immediately embraced and acknowledged as truths apparent in themselves, and therefore are not called *Credible*, but *evident* to the understanding. And so those things which are * apparent, are not said properly to be believed, but to be known:

Again, other things, though not immediately apparent in themselves, may yet appear most certain and evidently true, by an immediate and necessary connexion with something formerly known. For being every natural cause actually applied doth necessarily produce its own natural effect, and every natural effect wholly dependeth upon, and absolutely presupposeth, its own proper cause; therefore there must be an immediate connexion between the cause and its effect. From whence it follows that, if the connexion be once clearly perceived, the effect will be known in the cause, and the cause by the effect. And by these ways, proceeding from principles evidently known by consequences certainly concluding, we come to the knowledge of propositions in Mathematicks, and conclusions in other Sciences: which propositions and conclusions are not said to be *Credible*, but *Scientifical*; and the comprehension of them is not *Faith*, but *Science*.

Besides, some things there are, which, though not evident of themselves, nor seen by any necessary connexion to their causes or effects, notwithstanding appear to most as true by some external relations to other truths; but yet so, as the appearing truth still leaves a possibility of falshood with it, and therefore doth but incline to an *Assent*. In which cause whatsoever is thus apprehended, if it depend upon real Arguments, is not yet call'd *Credible*, but *Probable*: and an *Assent* to such a Truth is not properly *Faith*, but *Opinion*.

But when any thing propounded to us is neither apparent to our sense, nor evident to our understanding, in and of it self, neither certainly to be collected from any clear and necessary connexion with the cause from which it proceedeth, or the effects which it naturally produceth, nor is taken up upon any real Arguments or reference to other acknowledged Truths, and yet notwithstanding appeareth to us true, not by a manifestation, but attestation of the truth, and so moveth us to assent not of it self, but by virtue of the Testimony given to it; this is said || properly to be *Credible*; and an *Assent* unto this, upon such *Credibility*, is in the proper notion *Faith* or *Belief*.

Having thus defined and illustrated the nature of *Faith* in general, so far as it agreeth to all kinds of belief whatsoever; our method will lead us on to descend by way of division, to the several kinds thereof, till at last we come to the proper notion of *Faith* in the Christians *Confession*, the design of our present disquisition. And being we have placed the formality of the Object of all

* Apparentia non habent fidem, sed agnitionem. Greg. 4. Dial. cap. 5. Habet Fides oculos suos quibus quodammodo videt verum esse quod nondum videt, & quibus certissime videt nondum se videre quod credit. S. August. Ep. 222.

|| Aristot. Probl. 18. 3. αὐτὸ δὲ καὶ μαρτυρεῖται ὡς ἀληθές.

belief in *Credibility*, it will clearly follow, that diversity of *Credibility* in the Object will proportionably cause a distinction of *Assent* in the Understanding, and consequently a several kind of *Faith*, which we have supposed to be nothing else but such an *Assent*.

Now the *Credibility* of Objects, by which they appear fit to be believed, is distinguishable according to the diversities of its foundation, that is, according to the different *Authority* of the *Testimony* on which it depends. For we having no other certain means of assuring our selves of the truth, and consequently no other motives of our *Assent* in matters of *mere Belief*, than the *Testimony* upon which we believe; if there be any fundamental distinction in the *Authority* of the *Testimony*, it will cause the like difference in the *Assent*, which must needs bear a proportion to the *Authority* of the *Testimony*, as being originally and essentially founded upon it. It is therefore necessary next to consider, in what the *Authority* of a *Testimony* consisteth, and so to descend to the several kinds of *Testimonies* founded upon several *Authorities*.

* Τῷ δὲ τοῖς
τινα ἐκινεῖται,
τὸν λόγον
πιστεύουσι τῇ
τοῦ δ' ὁμοῦ, ὅτι
ἀγαθὸς ἐστὶν
ταῖς ἡ ἀγνοεῖ
ἀπορ. Ἀριστοτ.
Rhet. lib. 1.
cap. 8.

|| Testimonio-
rum quæ sunt
genera? Divi-
num & huma-
num. Divinum,
ut oracula, ut
auspicia, ut va-
tinationes, &
responsa sacer-
dotum, aruspici-
um, conjecto-
rum: Huma-
num, quod spe-
ctatur ex au-
thoritate, & ex
voluntate, &
ex oratione aut
libera aut ex-
pressa; in quo
insunt scripta,
pacta, promiss-
a, jurata, qua-
sita. Cicero O-
rat. Partit.

* Non dicant
non credimus
quia non vidi-
mus; quoniam
si hæc dicant,
coguntur fate-
ri incertos sibi
esse parentes
suos. De fide re-
tam in xpi. a-
mongst the
works of Saint
Augustin.
Αὐτὸν γὰρ ὁ
θεὸς εἶπε ὅτι
ποτ' ἰγὺνέτω.
'Αλλ' ὁ ποιοῦ-
μεν πάντες, ὅτι
πιστεύουσιν
ἐν ἐρανδῷ ἀπὸ
δ'.

The strength and validity of every *Testimony* must bear proportion with the * *Authority* of the *Testifier*; and the *Authority* of the *Testifier* is founded upon his *Ability* and *Integrity*: his *Ability* in the knowledge of that which he delivereth and asserteth; his *Integrity* in delivering and asserting according to his knowledge. For two several ways he which relateth or testifieth any thing may deceive us; one, by being ignorant of the truth, and so upon that ignorance mistaking, he may think that to be true which is not so, and consequently deliver that for truth, which in it self is false, and so deceive himself and us; or if he be not ignorant, yet if he be dishonest or unfaithful, that which he knows to be false he may propound and assert to be a truth, and so though himself be not deceived, he may deceive us. And by each of these ways, for want either of *Ability* or *Integrity* in the *Testifier*, whose grounds his *Assent* unto any thing as a truth, upon the testimony of another, may equally be deceived.

But whoſoever is so *able* as certainly to know the truth of that which he delivereth, and so *faithful* as to deliver nothing but what and as he knoweth, he, as he is not deceived, so deceiveth no man. So far therefore as any person testifying appeareth to be knowing of the thing he testifies, and to be faithful in the relation of what he knows, so far his testimony is acceptable, so far that which he testifieth is properly *Credible*. And thus the *Authority* of every *Testifier* or Relater is grounded upon these two foundations, his *Ability* and *Integrity*.

Now there is in this case, so far as it concerns our present design, || a double *Testimony*: the *Testimony* of man to man, relying upon humane *Authority*, and the *Testimony* of God to man, founded upon Divine *Authority*: which two kinds of *Testimony* are respective grounds of two kinds of *Credibility*, *Humane* and *Divine*; and consequently there is a two-fold *Faith* distinguish'd by this double Object, a *Humane* and a *Divine Faith*.

Humane Faith is an *Assent* unto any thing *Credible* merely upon the *Testimony* of man. Such is the belief we have of the words and affections one of another. And upon this kind of Faith we proceed in the ordinary affairs of our life; according to the opinion we have of the ability and fidelity of him which relates or asserts any thing we believe or disbelieve. By this a friend assureth himself of the affection of his friend: by this the * Son acknowledgeth his Father, and upon this is his obedience wrought. By virtue of this *Humane Faith* it is that we doubt not at all of those things which we never saw, by reason of their distance from us, either by time or place. Who doubts whether there be such a Country as *Italy*, or such a City as *Constantinople*, though he never pass'd

pass'd any of our four Seas? Who questions now whether there were such a Man as *Alexander* in the East, or *Cesar* in the West? and yet the latest of these hath been beyond the possibility of the knowledge of man these sixteen hundred years. There is no * Science taught without original belief, there are no || Letters learnt without preceding faith. There is no Justice executed, no commerce maintained, no business prosecuted without this; * all secular affairs are transacted, all great achievements are attempted, all hopes, desires and inclinations are preserved by this Humane Faith grounded upon the Testimony of man.

In which case we all by easie experience may observe the nature, generation and progress of *Belief*. For in any thing which belongeth to more than ordinary knowledge, we believe not him whom we think to be ignorant, nor do we assent the more for his assertion, though never so confidently delivered: but if we have a strong opinion of the knowledge and skill of any person, what he affirmeth within the compass of his knowledge, that we readily assent unto; and while we have no other ground but his affirmation, this *Assent* is properly *Belief*. Whereas if it be any matter of concernment in which the interest of him that relateth or affirmeth any thing to us is considerable, there it is not the skill or knowledge of the Relater which will satisfy us, except we have as strong an opinion of his fidelity and integrity: but if we think him so just and honest, that he hath no design upon us, nor will affirm any thing contrary to his knowledge for any gain or advantage, then we readily assent unto his affirmations; and this *Assent* is our *Belief*. Seeing then our *Belief* relies upon the ability and integrity of the Relater, and being the knowledge of all men is imperfect, and the hearts of all men are deceitful, and so their integrity to be suspected, there can be no infallible universal ground of *Humane Faith*.

But what satisfaction we cannot find in the testimony of man, we may receive in the testimony of God. || *If we receive the witness of man, the witness of God is greater.* Yea, let God be true, the ground of our *Divine*, and every man a liar, the ground of our *Humane Faith*.

As for the other Member of the Division, we may now plainly perceive that it is thus to be defined; *Divine Faith is an Assent unto something as Credible upon the Testimony of God.* This *Assent* is the highest kind of *Faith*, because the object hath the highest *Credibility*; because grounded upon the *Testimony of God*, which is *infallible*. Baalam could tell Balak thus much, *God is not a man, that he should lie*; and a better Prophet confirm'd the same truth to Saul, *The strength of Israel will not lie*; and because he will not, because he cannot, he is the strength of Israel, even *my God, my strength, in whom I will trust*.

For first, God is of infinite knowledge and wisdom, as *Hannah* hath taught us, *the Lord is a God of knowledge*, or rather, if our language will bear it, of *knowledges*, which are so plural, or rather infinite in their plurality, that the Psalmist hath said, *Of his understanding there is no number*. He knoweth therefore all things, neither can any truth be hid from his knowledge, who is essentially truth and essentially knowledge, and, as so, the cause of all other truth and knowledge. Thus the understanding of God is infinite in respect of * comprehension, and not so only, but of certainty also and evidence. Some things we are said to know which are but obscurely known, we see them but as in a Glass, or through a Cloud: But *God is light, and in him is no darkness at all*: he seeth without any obscurity, and whatsoever is propounded to his understanding is most clear and evident; *neither is there any Creature that is*

* ὑποβάθρα
μέντοι καὶ κρη-
τὴς τῆς ὁμολογίας
μὴ πείσας.
Theodor. The-
rap. 1.

|| Οὐδ' ὅτι τὰ
πρῶτα σοι-
χέα μὲν ἦν
οὐδ' ὅτι τὰ
γεγραμμένα
πεπρωμένα.
ibid.

* Πάντα τὰ
ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ
τελέμενα, καὶ
τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ
ἀλλοτρίου τοῦ
ἐκκλησίας τῆς
πίστεως τελέμενα.
Cyril. Catech.

V. Orig. cont.
Celsus, lib. 1.
Euf. de Prep.
Evangel. 1. 1.

c. 5.
Ariob. adver.
Gent. 1. 2.

|| 1 John 5. 9.
Rom. 3. 4.

Quam indig-
num, ut huma-
nis testimoniis
de alio creda-
mus, Dei ora-
culis de se non
credamus! S.

Ambros. 1. de
Abraham c. 3.

11 ὡς δ' ἐκ
ἐνός ὡς ἐπὶ
πλῆθος ἦν

ἀποφωτισμένων
τίσεως ἡ ἐπι-
μύνην ἐκεί-
νων, πολλὸν

τις εἶπεν πρὸς
θεῷ; Orig. ad.

Cels. 1. 1.

2 Numb. 23.

19.
1 Sam. 15.

29.
Psal. 18. 2.

1 Sam. 2. 3.

רוח
יהוה

Lxx. Θεός
γενόμενος καὶ

εἰ
Psal. 147.

5, in the Heb.

7
אין
סוד

* Cuius sapien-
tia simpliciter
multiplex, &
uniformiter

multiformis, incomprehensibili comprehensione omnia incomprehensibilia comprehendit. S. Augustinus de Civit. Dei, lib. 12. cap. 18. ^a 1 Joh. 1. 5. ^c Heb. 4. 13.

not manifest in his sight; but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do. Wherefore being all things are within the compass of his knowledge, being all things which are so, are most clear and evident unto him, being the knowledge he hath of them is most certain and infallible, it inevitably followeth that he cannot be deceiv'd in any thing.

Secondly, the justice of God is equal to his knowledge, nor is his holiness inferiour to his wisdom: *a God of truth*, || saith Moses; *and without iniquity, just and right is he.* From which internal, essential and infinite rectitude, goodness and holiness, followeth an impossibility to declare or deliver that for truth which he knoweth not to be true. For if it be against that finite purity and integrity which is required of man, to lie, and therefore sinful, then must we conceive it absolutely inconsistent with that transcendent purity and infinite integrity which is essential unto God. Although therefore the power of God be infinite, though he *can do all things*; yet we may safely say, without any * prejudice to his Omnipotency, that he || cannot speak that for truth which he knoweth to be otherwise. For the perfections of his will are as necessarily infinite as those of his understanding; neither can he be unholy or unjust more than he can be ignorant or unwise. ^a *If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful, he cannot deny himself.* Which words of the Apostle, though properly belonging to the promises of God, yet are as true in respect of his assertions; neither should he more *deny himself* in violating his fidelity, than in contradicting his veracity. 'Tis true, that ^b *God willing more abundantly to shew unto the Heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath; that by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation*: but 'tis as true, that all this confirmation is only for our consolation; otherwise it is as *impossible for God to lie*, without an oath, as with one; for being he can ^c *swear by no greater, he sweareth only by himself*, and so the strength even of the Oath of God relieth upon the Veracity of God. Wherefore being God as God is of infinite rectitude, goodness and holiness, being it is manifestly repugnant to his purity, and inconsistent with his integrity, to deliver any thing contrary to his knowledge, it clearly followeth that he cannot deceive any man.

It is therefore most infallibly certain, that God being infinitely wise, cannot * be deceived; being infinitely good, cannot || deceive: and upon these two immoveable pillars standeth the Authority of the *Testimony* of God. For since we cannot doubt of the witness of any one, but by questioning his ability, as one who may be ignorant of that which he affirmeth, and so deceived; or by excepting against his integrity, as one who may affirm that which he knoweth to be false, and so have a purpose to deceive us: where there is no place for either of these exceptions, there can be no doubt of the truth of the *Testimony*. But where there is an intrinsecal * repugnancy of being deceived in the understanding, and of deceiving in the Will, as there certainly is in the understanding and will of God, there can be no place for either of those exceptions, and consequently there can be no doubt of the truth of that which God testifieth. And whosoever thinketh any thing comes from him, and assenteth not unto it, must necessarily deny him to be wise or holy: ^d *He that believeth not God, said the Apostle, hath made him a liar.* That truth then which is testified by God, hath a *Divine Credibility*: and an *Assent* unto it as so *credible*, is Divine Faith. In which the material Object is the Doctrine which God delivereth, the formal Object is that *Credibility* founded on the || Authority of the deliverer. And this I conceive the true nature of *Divine Faith* in general.

|| Deut. 32. 4.
* Δύναται ὁ
καὶ ἡμᾶς
πλάττει ὁ θεὸς
ἀπὸ τοῦ οὐ
ρανοῦ, καὶ
ἀγαθὸς ὁ
καὶ σπουδὴς
ἐκ ἐξιστάται.
Orig. contra
Celsum.

|| Si velint in-
venire quod
omnipotens
non potest,
habent pro-
fus, ego di-
cam, mentiri
non potest.
S. August. de
Civ. Dei, l. 22.
c. 25.

^a 2 Tim. 2.

^b Heb. 6.
17, 18.

^c Heb. 6. 13.

* Ut sit om-
nium po-
tens, mori
non potest,
falli non po-
test, mentiri
non potest.
August. de
Symb. ad Ca-
techum.

|| Deus facere
fraudem ne-
scit, pati non
potest. Chry-
sol. Serm. 62.

* Autoritas
Dei consistit
in intrinseca
repugnantia
deceptionis
seu falsitatis
quam habet
divinum ju-
diciū, & in
intrinseca re-
pugnantia
actus volun-
tatis impe-
rantis testi-
monium ex-
trinsecum
non consen-
sientis iudicio
interno;
quæ per ter-
minis positi-
vos actū. in-
tellectus in-
fallibiliter
verū, & actus
voluntatis intrinsecē & necessariō recti, poterit explicari, Francisc. de Ovied. Tract. de Fide Contr. 2. pun. 2. ^d 1 Joh. 5. 10.

|| Divina est Autoritas cui credimus; divina est doctrina quam sequimur. Leo, Serm. 7. in Nativ.

Now

Now being the *Credibility* of all which we *believe* is founded upon the *Testimony* of God, we can never be sufficiently instructed in the notion of *Faith*, till we first understand how this testimony is given to those truths which we now believe. To which end it will be necessary to give notice that the *Testimony* of God is not given unto truths before questioned or debated; nor are they such things as are first propounded and doubted of by man, and then resolved and confirm'd by interposing the authority of God: but he is then said to witness when he doth propound, and his *testimony* is given by way of *Revelation*, which is nothing else but the delivery or speech of God unto his *Creatures*. And therefore upon a diversity of delivery must follow a difference, though not of *Faith* it self, yet of the means and manner of *Assent*.

Wherefore it will be farther necessary to observe, that *Divine Revelation* is of two kinds, either *Immediate*, or *Mediate*. An *Immediate Revelation* is that by which God delivereth himself to man by himself without the intervention of man. A *Mediate Revelation* is the conveyance of the counsel of God unto man by man. By the first he spake unto the *Prophets*; by the second in the *Prophets*, and by them unto us. Being then there is this difference between the revealing of God unto the *Prophets* and to others, being the *Faith* both of *Prophets* and others relieth wholly upon *Divine Revelation*, the * difference of the manner of *Assent* in these several kinds of *Believers* will be very observable for the explanation of the nature of our *Faith*.

tis & Apostolis factis: alia est quæ oritur in aliquibus per spiritualem locutionem, quâ Deus aliquibus per rationem credenda revelat, nullo hominis ministerio utens; sicut est fides Apostolorum & Prophetarum, qui ab ipso Deo per intrinsecam illuminationem sunt de credendis instructi. *Francisc. Ferrariensis in Thom. cont. Gent. cap. 40.*

* Sicut duplex est auditus & locutio, scilicet exterior sive corporalis, & interior ac spiritualis; ita duplex est fides, una quæ oritur in cordibus fidelium per auditum exterio-rem, cum scil. Deus per aliquos homines aliis credenda proponit; & ista est fides quæ nobis sive communi statui fidelium convenit, ex eo quod adhæremus revelationibus Prophe-

Those then to whom God did immediately speak himself, or by an Angel representing God, and so being in his stead, and bearing his name, (of which I shall need here to make no distinction) those persons, I say, to whom God did so reveal himself, did by virtue of the same *Revelation* perceive, know, and assure themselves that he which spake to them was God; so that at the same time they clearly understood both what was delivered, and by whom: otherwise we cannot imagine that *Abraham* would have slain his Son, or have been commended for such a resolution, had he not been most assured that it was God who by an immediate *Revelation* of his will clearly commanded it. Thus ^a by faith *Noah* being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an Ark, to the saving of his house: which * warning of God was a clear *Revelation* of God's determination to drown the world, of his will to save him and his Family, and of his command for that end to build an Ark. And this *Noah* so received from God, as that he knew it to be an Oracle of God, and was as well assured of the Author as informed of the Command. Thus the judgments hanging over *Judah* were revealed in the ears of ^b *Isaiah* by the Lord of Hosts. Thus ^c the Lord revealed himself to *Samuel* in *Shiloh*: at first indeed he knew him not; that is, when the Lord spake, he knew it not to be the voice of God, ^d Now *Samuel* did not yet know the Lord, neither was the word of the Lord yet revealed unto him; but after that he knew him, and was assured that it was He which spake unto him, the Scripture teaching us that the † ears of *Samuel* were revealed, and the * word of God revealed, and † God himself revealed to him. By all which we can understand no less, than that *Samuel* was so illuminated in his Prophecies, that he fully understood the words or things themselves which were delivered, and as certainly knew that the Deliverer was God: so *Samuel the Seer*, so the rest of those *Prophets* believed those truths revealed to them by such a Faith as was a firm Assent unto an object credible upon the immediate Testimony of God.

^a Heb. 11. 7. * πίσει ἔχουμα-
τισέας, which
word comes from
the original

ἔχουμα, appro-
priated by the
Greeks to an O-
racle, or Answer
given by God, ὁ
μὲν θεὸς ἔχου-
μα, ὁ δὲ ἄνθρωπος
μαντεύεται,
Mischopolus.

^b Isai. 22. 14.

^c 1 Sam 3. 21.

^d 1 Sam. 3. 7.

† יהוה נראה
לסמואל

κύειν ἀπε-
καλύψαι τὸ ὄ-
τιον Σαμουήλ,
1 Sam. 9. 15.

† סמואל
יורה אדני
רבה יהוה
πείν ἢ σκοτα-
λυσθῆναι αὐ-
τὸν ὅτι μακρύς
1 Sam. 3. 7.

† נראה
יהוה אל
שמואל

ἀπεκαλύφθη κύειν πρὸς Σαμουήλ, 1 Sam. 3. 21.

But

But those faithful people to whom the Prophets spake, believed the same truth, and upon the testimony of the same God, delivered unto them not by God, but by those Prophets, whose words they therefore assented unto as certain truths, because they were assured that what the Prophets spake was immediately revealed to them by God himself, without which assurance no faith could be expected from them. When God *appeared unto Moses in a flame of fire out of the midst of a Bush*, and there immediately revealed to him first himself, saying, *I am the God of thy Fathers, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob*, and then his will to bring the children of Israel out of the Land of Egypt, *Moses* clearly believed God both in the Revelation of himself and of his will, and was fully satisfied that the *Israelites* should be delivered, because he was assured it was God who promised their deliverance: yet notwithstanding still he doubted whether the *Israelites* would believe the same truth, when it should be delivered to them, not immediately by God, but by *Moses*. And *Moses answered and said, But behold they will not believe me, nor hearken unto my voice; for they will say, The Lord hath not appeared unto thee.* Which words of his first suppose, that if they had heard the voice of God, as he had, they would have assented to the truth upon a testimony Divine; and then as rationally affirm, that it was improbable they should believe, except they were assured it was God who promised, or think that God had promised by *Moses*, only because *Moses* said so. Which rational objection was clearly taken away when God endued *Moses* with power of evident and undoubted miracles; for then the Rod which he carried in his hand was as infallible a sign to the *Israelites* that God had appeared unto him, as the flaming Bush was to himself; and therefore they which saw in his hand God's Omnipotency, could not suspect in his tongue God's Veracity; inasmuch as when *Aaron* became to *Moses* instead of a Mouth, and *Moses* to *Aaron* instead of God, *Aaron* spake all the words which the Lord had spoken unto *Moses*, and did the signs in the sight of the people, and the people believed. For being persuaded by a lively and active presence of Omnipotency that God had appeared unto *Moses*, and what was delivered to them by him came to him from God, and being sufficiently assured out of the very sense and notion of a Deity, that whatsoever God should speak, must of necessity be true, they presently assented, and believed the Lord, and his Servant *Moses*; *Moses*, as the immediate Propounder, God, as the original Revealer: they believed *Moses* that God had revealed it, and they believed the promise because God had revealed it. So that the Faith both of *Moses* and the *Israelites* was grounded upon the same testimony or revelation of God, and differed only in the proposition or application of the testimony; *Moses* receiving it immediately from God himself, the *Israelites* mediately by the ministry of *Moses*.

In the like manner the succeeding Prophets were the instruments of Divine Revelation, which they first believed as revealed to them, and then the people as revealed by them: for what they delivered was not the testimony of man, but the testimony of God delivered by man. It was he who spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets which have been since the world began: the mouth, the instrument, the articulation was theirs; but the words were God's. The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, saith David, and his word was in my tongue. It was the word of the Lord, which he spake by the hand of *Moses*, and by the hand of his Servant *Abijah* the Prophet. The hand the general instrument of man, the mouth the particular instrument of speech, both attributed to the Prophets as merely instrumental in their prophecies. The words which *Balaam's Ass* spake were as much the Ass's words, as those which *Balaam* spake were his; for the Lord opened the mouth of the Ass, and the Lord put a word

in Balaam's mouth; and not only so, but a bridle with that word, *only the word that I shall speak unto thee, that thou shalt speak.* The Prophets, as they did not frame the notions or conceptions themselves of those truths which they delivered from God, so did they not loosen their own tongues of their own instinct, or upon their own motion, but as moved, impelled, and acted by God. So we may in correspondence to the antecedent and subsequent words interpret those words of S. Peter, that *no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any * private interpretation*: that is, that no Prophecy which is written did so proceed from the Prophet which spake or wrote it, that he of himself or by his own instinct did open his mouth to prophesie; but that all Prophetical Revelations came from God alone, and that whosoever first delivered them was antecedently inspired by him, as it followeth, *for the Prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.* That therefore which they delivered was the word, the Revelation of God; which they assented unto as to a certain and infallible truth, credible upon the immediate testimony of God, and to which the rest of the Believers assented upon the same testimony of God mediately delivered by the hands of the Prophets.

Thus God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in times past unto the Fathers by the Prophets, and by so speaking propounded the Object of Faith both to the Prophets and the Fathers, hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, and by so speaking hath enlarged the Object of Faith to us by him, by which means it comes to be the Faith of Jesus. Thus the only-begotten Son, who was in the bosom of the Father, the express image of his person, he in whom it pleased the Father that all fulness should dwell, he in whom dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily, revealed the will of God to the Apostles, who being assured that he knew all things, and convinced that he came forth from God, gave a full and clear assent unto those things which he delivered, and grounded their Faith upon his words as upon the immediate testimony of God. I have given unto them, saith Christ unto his Father, the words which thou gavest me, and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. Besides this delivery of these words by Christ to the Apostles, they received the Promise of the Spirit of truth, which should guide them into all truth, and teach them all things, and bring all things into their remembrance whatsoever Christ had said unto them. So clearly, so fully, so constantly were they furnished with Divine Illuminations and Revelations from God, upon which they grounded their own Faith; that each of them might well make that profession of S. Paul, *I know whom I have believed.* Thus the Faith of the Apostles, as of Moses and the Prophets, was grounded upon the immediate Revelations of God.

But those Believers to whom the Apostles preached, and whom they converted to the Faith, believed the same truths which were revealed to the Apostles, though they were not so revealed to them as they were unto the Apostles, that is, immediately from God. But as the Israelites believed those truths which Moses spake, to come from God, being convinced by the constant supply of miracles wrought by the Rod which he carried in his hand: so the blessed Apostles, being so plentifully endued from above with the power of Miracles, gave sufficient testimony that it was God which spake by their mouths, who so evidently wrought by their hands. They which heard S. Peter call a lame man unto his legs, speak a dead man alive, and strike a living man to death with his tongue, as he did Ananias and Sapphira, might easily be persuaded that it was God who spake by his mouth, and conclude that where they found him in his Omnipotency, they might well expect him in his Ver-

Numb. 22 35

2 Pet. 1. 20.

* ἡ δὲ προφητεία ἐκ θεοῦ ἐστίν.

Heb. 1. 1.

Vers. 2.

Rev. 14. 12.

John 1. 18.

Heb. 1. 3.

Col. 1. 19.

Col. 2. 9.

John 16. 30.

John 17. 8.

John 16. 13.

John 14. 26.

2 Tim. 1. 12.

racity. These were the persons for whom our Saviour next to the Apostles prayed, because by a way next to that of the Apostles they believed. *Neither pray I for these alone, saith Christ, but for them also who shall believe on me through their word.* Thus the Apostles believed on Christ through his own word, and the primitive Christians believed on the same Christ through the Apostles word: and this distinction our Saviour himself hath clearly made; not that the word of the Apostles was really distinct from the word of Christ, but only it was called theirs, because delivered by their Ministry, otherwise, it was the same word which they had heard from him, and upon which they themselves believed. *That which was from the beginning, saith S. John, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life, That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you.* And this was the true foundation of Faith in all them which believed, that they took not the words which they heard from the Apostles to be the words of the men which spake them, no more than they did the power of healing the sick, or raising the dead, and the rest of the miracles, to be the power of them that wrought them; but as they attributed those miraculous works to God working by him, so did they also that saving word to the same God speaking by them. When S. Paul preached at Antioch, *almost the whole City came together to hear the word of God*; so they esteemed it, though they knew him a man whom they came to hear speak it. This the Apostle commendeth in the *Thessalonians*, that when they received the word of God, *which they heard of him, they received it not as the word of man, but (as it is in truth,) the word of God*; and receiving it so, they embraced it as coming from him who could neither deceive nor be deceived, and consequently as infallibly true; and by so embracing it they assented unto it, by so assenting to it they believed it, ultimately upon the testimony of God, immediately upon the testimony of S. Paul, as he speaks himself, *because our testimony among you was believed.* Thus the Faith of those which were converted by the Apostles was an assent unto the word as credible upon the testimony of God, delivered to them by a Testimony Apostolical. Which being thus clearly stated, we may at last descend into our own condition, and so describe the nature of our own Faith, that every one may know what it is to Believe.

Although Moses was endued with the Power of Miracles, and conversed with God in the Mount, and spake with him face to face at the door of the Tabernacle: although upon these grounds the *Israelites* believed what he delivered to them as the word of God; yet neither the Miracles nor Moses did for ever continue with them; and notwithstanding his death, they and their Posterity to all Generations were obliged to believe the same truths. Wherefore it is observable which S. Stephen saith, *he received the lively Oracles to give unto them*; the Decalogue he received from the hand of God, *written with the finger of God*, the rest of the Divine patefactions he wrote himself, and so delivered them not a mortal word to die with him, but *living Oracles*, to be in force when he was dead, and oblige the People to a belief, when his Rod had ceased to broach the Rocks and divide the Seas. Neither did he only tie them to a belief of what he wrote himself, but by foretelling and describing the Prophets which should be raised in future Ages, he put a farther obligation upon them to believe their Prophecies as the Revelations of the same God. Thus all the *Israelites* in all Ages believed Moses, while he lived, by believing his words; after his death, by believing his writings. *Had ye believed Moses, saith our Saviour, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me.* But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words? Wherefore the Faith of the *Israelites* in the land of Canaan was an Assent unto the truths of the

Law as credible upon the testimony of God delivered unto them in the Writings of Moses and the Prophets.

In the like manner is it now with us. For although Christ first published the Gospel to those who beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten Son of the Father; although the Apostles first converted those unto the Faith who heard them speak with Tongues they never learn'd, they never heard before, and discover the thoughts of men they never saw before, who saw the lame to walk, the blind to see, the dead to revive, and the living to expire at their command: yet did not these Apostles prolong their lives by virtue of that power which gave such testimony to their Doctrine, but rather shortned them by their death. Nor did that power of frequent and ordinary miraculous operations long survive them; and yet they left as great an obligation upon the Church in all succeeding Ages to believe all the truths which they delivered, as they had put upon those persons who heard their words and saw their works; because they wrote the same truths which they spake, assisted in writing by the same Spirit by which they spake, and therefore require the same readiness of assent so long as the same truths shall be preserved by those Writings. While Moses lived and spake as a Mediator between God and the Israelites, they believed his words, and so the Prophets while they preached. When Moses was gone up to Mount Nebo, and there died, when the rest of the Prophets were gathered to their Fathers, they believed their Writings, and the whole object of their Faith was contained in them. When the Son of God came into the World to reveal the will of his Father, when he made known unto the Apostles, as his friends, all things that he had heard of the Father, then did the Apostles believe the Writings of Moses and the Prophets, and the words of Christ, and in these taken together was contained the entire object of their Faith, and they believed the Scripture, and the word which Jesus had said. When Christ was ascended up into Heaven, and the Holy Ghost came down, when the words which Christ had taught the Apostles were preached by them, and many thousand Souls converted to the Faith, they believed the Writings of the Prophets and the Words of the Apostles; and in these two was comprised the compleat object of their Faith. When the Apostles themselves departed out of this life, and confirmed the truth of the Gospel preached by the last of sufferings, their death, they left the summ of what they had received, in writing, for the continuation of the Faith in the Churches which they had planted, and the propagation thereof in other places, by those which succeeded them in their ordinary function, but were not to come near them in their extraordinary gifts. ^a These things were written, saith S. John, the longest Liver, and the latest Writer, that ye might believe, that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name.

John 1. 14.

John 15. 15.

John 2. 22.

^a John 20. 31.

^b Eph. 2. 20.

Propheta & Apostoli, super

quos omnium

Ecclesiarum

fundamental o-

canur. S. He-

ron. in Psal. 17.

Super Prophe-

tas edificatur

Orbis terrarum

credens in Do-

mino. Russ. ib.

* Durand. l. 3.

Dist. 24. q. 1.

§ 9. Fides est

habitus quo af-

sentimus dictis

Scripturae pro-

pter autori-

tatem Dei re-

velantis.

Those Christians then which have lived since the Apostles death and never obtain'd the wish of S^t Augustine, to see either Christ upon earth or S^t Paul in the Pulpit, have believed the writings of Moses and the Prophets, of the Apostles and Evangelists, in which together is fully comprehended whatsoever may properly be termed matter of Divine Faith; and so ^b the household of God is built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, who are continued unto us only in their Writings, and by them alone convey unto us the truths which they received from God, upon whose testimony we believe. And therefore he which put their Writings into the definition of Faith, considering Faith as now it stands with us, is none of the smallest of the * Schoolmen. From whence we may at last conclude, that the true nature of the Faith of a

Christian, as the state of Christ's Church now stands and shall continue to the end of the world, consists in this, that it is an *Affent unto truths credible upon the testimony of God delivered unto us in the Writings of the Apostles and Prophets.*

To *believe* therefore as the word stands in the Front of the *C R E E D*, and not only so, but is diffused through every Article and Proposition of it, is to assent to the whole and every part of it, as to a certain and infallible truth revealed by God, (who by reason of his infinite knowledge cannot be deceived, and by reason of his transcendent holiness cannot deceive) and delivered unto us in the Writings of the blessed Apostles and Prophets immediately inspired, moved and acted by God, out of whose Writings this brief summ of necessary points of Faith was first * collected. And as this is properly to *believe*, which was our first consideration; so to say *I believe*, is to make a confession or external expression of the Faith, which is the second Consideration propounded.

Faith is an habit of the intellectual part of man, and therefore of it self invisible; and to believe is a spiritual act, and consequently immanent and internal, and known to no man but him who believeth: ^a *For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of a man which is in him?* Wherefore Christ being not only the great Apostle sent to deliver these revealed truths, and so the Authour of our Faith, but also the Head of the Church, whose Body consisteth of faithful Members, and so the Authour of union and communion, which principally hath relation to the unity of Faith, he must needs be imagin'd to have appointed some external expression and communication of it: especially considering that the sound of the Apostles was to go forth unto the ends of the World, and all Nations to be called to the profession of the Gospel, and gathered into the Church of Christ; which cannot be performed without an acknowledgment of the truth, and a profession of Faith, without which no entrance into the Church, no admittance to Baptism. ^b *What doth hinder me to be baptized?* saith the Eunuch. *And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.* So believing with all his heart, as Philip required, and making profession of that Faith, he was admitted. ^c *For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.* The belief of the heart is the internal habit residing in the Soul, and act of Faith proceeding from it, but terminated in the same; the confession of the mouth is an external signification of the inward habit or act of Faith, by words expressing an acknowledgment of those truths which we believe or assent to in our Souls. || The ear receiveth the word, *faith cometh by hearing*; the ear conveyeth it to the heart, which being opened receiveth it, receiving believeth it; and then ^d *out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.* In the heart Faith is seated; with the tongue confession is made; between these two Salvation is * compleated. ^e *If thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.* This Faith of the heart every one ought, and is presum'd to have; this confession of the mouth every one is known to make, when he pronounceth these words of the *C R E E D*, *I believe*; and if true, he may with comfort say, ^f *the word of Faith is nigh me, even in my mouth and in my heart*: first in my heart really assenting, then in my mouth clearly and sincerely professing with the Prophet David, ^g *I have be-*

* Οὐκ ὡς ἔδο-
ξεν ἀνθρώποις
συνήεθη τὰ ᾗ
πίστεως, ἀλλ'
ἐκ πάσης γεν-
εῆς τὰ καὶ ἐκ
ὧν τὰ συλ-
λεχθέντα ἡμῶν
ἀναπληροῖ *
ᾗ πίστεως δι-
δασκαλίαν.
Cyril. Catech.
Ecclesiarum
Patres de po-
pulorum salute
soliciti, ex di-
versis volumi-
nibus Scriptu-
rarum college-
runt testimo-
nia divinis gra-
vida Sacramen-
tis. Euseb. Gall.
in Sym.

^a 1 Cor. 2. 11.
^b Act. 8. 36,
37.

^c Rom. 10. 10.
Habes, homio,
unde credere
debeas, corde
fit confessio ad-
justitiam; ha-
bes unde debe-
as confiteri, o-
re confessio fit
ad salutem.

Chrys. Serm 56.
|| Sermo creat
audium, audi-
tus concipit fi-
dem, credulita-
tem parturit fi-
des, confessio-
nem creduli-
tas nutrit. con-
fessio perpetu-
am dat salutem
Chrysol. Serm.
60.

^d Mat. 12 34.

* Magnum fili-
oli, per hoc fi-
dei nostræ vi-

demus esse compendium, quando inter eor & linguam totum salutis humanæ versatur & geritur Sacramentum. Chrysol. Serm. 56. Quod à te & pro te reposcitur, intra te est, i.e. oris famularus & cordis effectus. Euseb. Gall. ^e Rom. 10. 9. ^f Rom. 10 8. De hoc sine dubio legimus per Prophetam, propè est, inquit, in ore tuo, & in corde tuo. Euseb. Gall. ^g Psal. 116. 10.

lieved,

lied, therefore have I spoken. Thus briefly from the second Consideration concerning Confession implied in the first words *I believe*, we shall pass unto the third Consideration, of the necessity and particular obligation to such a Confession.

If there were no other Argument, yet being the Object of Faith is supposed infallibly true, and acknowledged to be so by every one that believeth, being it is the nature of Truth not to hide it self, but rather to desire the light that it might appear; this were sufficient to move us to a *Confession* of our *Faith*. But besides the nature of the thing, we shall find many Arguments obliging, pressing, urging us to such a profession. For first, from the same God, and by the same means by which we have received the Object of our Faith, by which we came under a possibility of Faith, we have also received an express command to make a *Confession* of the same: ^a *Be ready, saith St Peter, always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you; and there can be no reason of hope but what is grounded on Faith, nor can there be an Answer given unto that without an acknowledgement of this.* Secondly, 'tis true indeed that the great promises of the Gospel are made unto Faith, and glorious things are spoken of it; but the same promises are made to the *Confession of Faith* ^b together with it; and we know who it is hath said, ^c *Whosoever shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in Heaven.* Besides, the profession of the Faith of one Christian confirmeth and edifieth another in his, and the mutual benefit of all layeth an obligation upon every particular. Again, the matters of Faith contain so much purity of Doctrine, perswade such holiness of life, describe God so infinitely glorious, so transcendently gracious, so loving in himself, so merciful in his Son, so wonderful in all his works, that the sole confession of it glorifieth God; and how can we expect to enter into that glory which is none of ours, if we deny God that glory which is his? Lastly, the concealing those truths which he hath revealed, the not acknowledging that Faith which we are thought to believe, is so far from giving God that glory which is due unto him, that it dishonoureth the Faith which it refuseth or neglecteth to profess, and casteth a kind of contumely upon the Authour of it, as if God had revealed that which man should be ashamed to acknowledge. Wherefore he that came to save us hath also said unto us, ^d *Whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy Angels.* Such a necessity there is of Confession of Faith, in respect of God, who commanded it, and is glorified in it; in respect of our selves, who shall be rewarded for it; and in respect of our Brethren, who are edified and confirmed by it. Which necessity the wisdom of our Church in former Ages hath thought a sufficient ground to command the recitation of the *CREED* at the * first initiation into the Church by Baptism, (for which purpose it was taught and expounded to those which were to be baptized imme-

^a 1 Pet. 3. 15.

^b Rom. 10. 10.

^c Mat. 10. 32.

^d Luke 9. 26.

* Ο ὁ καὶ κατόχα τῆ ἀληθείας ἀκλινῆς ἐν ἑαυτοῦ κατέχων ἐν δὲ τῷ βαπτίσματι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον. *Tren. l. 1. c. 1.*

Cum sub tribus & testatio fidei & responsio salutis pignoren-

tur, necessariò adijcitur Ecclesiæ mentio, quoniam ubi tres, id est, Pater, Filius, & Spiritus Sanctus, ibi Ecclesia, quæ trium corpus est. *Tertul. de Baptis.* In quem tingere? in pœnitentiam? quo ergò illi præcursorem? in peccatorum remissionem quam verbo dabit? in semetipsum, quem humilitate celabat? in Spiritum Sanctum qui nondum à Patre descenderat? in Ecclesiam, quam nondum Apostoli struxerant? *Id.* Dehinc ter mergimur, amplius aliquid respondentes quàm Dominus in Evangelio determinavit. *Id. de Cor. Militis.* Sed & ipsa interrogatio quæ fit in Baptismo testis est veritatis, nam cum dicimus, *Credis in vitam æternam, & remissionem peccatorum per sanctam Ecclesiam?* intelligimus remissionem peccatorum non nisi in Ecclesia dari. *S. Cyprianus, Ep. ad Januarium, &c.* Quod si aliquis illud opponit, ut dicat eandem Novatianum Legem tenere quam Catholica Ecclesia teneat, eodem Symbolo quo & nos baptizare, eundem nosse Deum Patrem, eundem Filium Christum, eundem Spiritum Sanctum, ac propterea usurpare eum potestatem baptizandi posse, quòd videatur in interrogatione Baptismi à nobis non discrepare: sciat quisquis hoc opponendam putat, non esse unam nobis & Schismaticis Symboli Legem, neq; eandem interrogationem. Nam cum dicunt, *Credis remissionem peccatorum, & vitam æternam per Sanctam Ecclesiam?* mentuntur in interrogatione, quando non habeant Ecclesiam. *Idem, Epist. ad Magnum.* Mos ibi (id est, Romæ) servatur antiquus, eos qui gratiam Baptismi susceperunt, publicè i. e. fidelium populo audiente, Symbolum reddere. *Ruffin. in Symb.* Solenne est in lavacro, post Trinitatis confessionem interrogare, *Credis in Sanctam Ecclesiam? credis remissionem peccatorum?* *S. Hieron. contra Luifer.* Mens Hæretica reliquit Doctorem à quo fidem Ecclesiæ didicerat, oblita est pacti Dei sui, hoc est, fidei ipsius Dominicæ quæ in Symbolo continetur, quam se die baptismatis servaturum esse promiserat. *Id. Com. in Prov.* Interrogatus es, *Credis in Deum?* *Paten*

Patrem omnipotentem ? dixisti, Credo, & misisti, hoc est, sepultus es. Iterum interrogatus es, Credi in Dominum nostrum Jesum Christum, & in crucem eius ? dixisti, Credo, & misisti, ideo & Christo es consecutus. Tertiò interrogatus, Credis in Spiritum Sanctum ? dixisti, Credo; tertiò misisti: ut multiplicem lapsum superioris araris abolveret trina confessio. Ambros. de Sacram. l. 2. c. 7. Leo speaks thus of Euryches in his Epistle to Flavianus, Quam enim eruditionem de sacris Novi & Veteris Testamenti paginis acquisivit, qui ne ipsius quidem Symboli initia comprehendit? & quod per totum mundum omnium regenerationum voce depromitur, illius adhuc lenis corde non capitur. And in the 12. Book de Trinitate (formerly attributed to Athanasius, but more probably now thought to belong to Vigilius Tapsensis,) Nec non & illa magna & beata Confessio Fidei, imò ipsa Fides Sanctorum, & Testamentum quod disposuimus ad Patrem, Filium & Spiritum Sanctum, ad sacrum lavacrum regenerationis venientes, Credo in Deum Patrem omnipotentem, & in Jesum Christum Filium ejus unigenitum, & in Spiritum Sanctum, καθὰς παραδόχου παρὰ τοῦ περὶ ἡμῶν ὀπισθοποῦν ἢ τε τὴν πρώτην καὶ πρώτην, καὶ ὅτε τὸ λυγρὸν ἐλαφρόθυμον Euseb. of the Confession of Faith which he exhibited to the Council of Nice. Socr. l. 1. c. 8. Theodor. l. 1. c. 12. Abrenuntio, inquis, Diabolo, pompis, spectaculis, & operibus ejus; & quid postea? Credo, inquis, in Deum Patrem Omnipotentem. Salvianus de Gubern. Dei, lib. 6. And when this Creed was enlarged by the Council of Nice, and after that by others, Epiphanius commends it to the Catechumeni, to be repeated at their Baptism; ὅπως ἐκαστὸς τῶν καὶ ἡμετέρων τῶν μετὰ τὸν πρῶτον ἀγίον λυγρὸν πείσιναι, ὁ μόνον ἐπαγγέλλαν ὁρμηλαί τε τὸ πιστεύειν τοῖς ἑαυτῶν ὅτις ἐν κυρίῳ ἀλλὰ καὶ διδασκὴν ῥητάς, ὡς πάντων ἢ αὐτῶν μητρὸς ὡς ἡμῶν, τὸ λυγρὸν, Πιστεύω ὡς ἡμεῖς Θεὸν, &c. Epiph. in Ancorato. And when he had yet further enlarged it by reason of some new emergent Heresies, he commends it, καλίστα τοῖς τῶν ἀγίων λυγρὸν τρυφῶν, ἵνα ἀπαγγέλλωσι καὶ λυγρὸν ὅτις. Ib. The first Council of Constantinople confirms the Nicene Confession as πιστοῦτά τινι τε ὅταν καὶ ἀκούσθων περὶ βαπτίσματος. Theodor. lib. 5. cap. 9. And the Council of Chalcedon of the same, ὡς κοινὸν ἐξ ἀγίων Συμβολα, τοῖς μυαλοῖς πρὸς τὴν ἰσοδοσίαν παρεστῶν ἀσφάλειαν. Rite tertia. The Synod at Jerusalem, τὸ ἄγιον Σύμβολον ὡς ὁ ἐκκλησίαν καὶ βαπτίζοντες. The Synod at Tyre, ἐν αὐτῶν βαπτιστικῆς καὶ βαπτιστικῆς. And the Council of Constantinople under Menna, to which the former sent their Synodical Letters, τὸ ἄγιον Σύμβολον ἐν ᾧ πάντες ἐκκλησίαν. Concil. Constantinop. sub Agab, & Menna, Act. 5. Basiliscus and Marcus in two several Edicts, confirmed the same Nicene Creed with these words, ὡς ὁ ἡμεῖς τε καὶ πάντες εἰ περὶ ἡμῶν πιστεύοντες ἐκκλησίαν. Euagr. l. 3. cap. 4, and 7. and the Edit of the Emperor Justinian, Anathematizaverunt eos qui aliam definitionem fidei, sive Symbolum, sive Mathema, tradunt accedentibus ad sanctum baptisma.

* Ὅτι δὲ οὗτος
σοφισμὸς
τὴν πίστιν ἐκ-
μαρτύρου, καὶ
τῇ τέλει τῇ
ἐκδομᾷ τῆς
παγγέλλαντος
ὀπισθοποῦν ἢ
τοῖς πρεσβυ-
τέρους, Concil.
Laodic. Can. 46.
Where it is to
be observed that
πίστις is taken
for the Creed, or
Symbolum Fi-
dei, and was
first translated an-
ciently as ap-
peareth by the
Canon preserved
in the Canon-
Law, and ren-
dered thus, Ba-
ptizandos o-
portet Fidei
Symbolum discere,
& quintā
feriā ultimē ef-
pitimane vel E-
piscopo vel
Presbyteris
reddere. De
Consec. dist. 4.
cap. 58. Sym-
bolum etiam

diately * before the great Solemnity of *Easter) and to require a particular
|| repetition of it publickly as often as the Sacrament of the Eucharist was ad-
ministrated, and a constant and perpetual inculcation of the same by the * Cler-
gy to the people.

And as this necessity is great, as the practice useful and advantageous; so is
the obligation of believing and confessing particular, binding every single
Christian, observable in the number and person expressed, *I believe*. As if
Christ did question every one in particular, as he did him who was born blind,
after he had restored him his sight, (and we are all in his condition) *Doſt
thou believe on the Son of God?* every single Christian is taught to make the
same Answer which he made, *Lord, I believe*. As if the Son of God did pro-
mise to every one of them which are gathered together in his name, what he
promised to *one of the multitude whose Son had a dumb spirit, If thou canst be-
lieve, all things are possible to him that believeth;* each one for himself returneth
his Answer, *Lord, I believe; Lord, help my unbelief*. Not that it is unlawful or
unfit to use another number, and instead of *I*, to say, *We believe*: for taking in
of others, we exclude not our selves; and addition of charity can be no dis-
paragement to confession of Faith. S. Peter answered for the twelve, *We believe,
and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God*. For though
Christ immediately replied that *one of them had a Devil*, yet is not St. Peter
blam'd, who knew it not. But every one is taught to express his own Faith,
because by that he is to stand or fall. *The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous
man availeth much* for the benefit of his Brother, but his Faith availeth nothing
for the justification of another. And it is otherwise very fit that our Faith
should be manifested by a particular confession, because it is effectual by par-

placuit ab omnibus Ecclesiis una esse, i. e. ante octo dies Dominicæ resurrectionis, publicè in Ecclesia competentibus prædicari. Concil. Agath. capit. 13. Sicut antiqui Canones jubent, ante viginti dies Baptismi ad purificationem exorcismi Catechumeni currant, in quibus viginti diebus omnino Catechumeni Symbolum, quod est, *Credo in Deum Patrem Omnipotentem*, specialiter doceantur. Concil. Brachar. 2. cap. 1. The Canon of the Laodicean Council, already mentioned, is verbatim rehearsed in the sixth Council in Trulla, Can. 78. It appeareth therefore a general command of the Church, that those who were to be baptized, should have a certain time allotted for the learning and rehearsing of the Creed. And in case of Necessity if any were baptized, they were to learn the Creed immediately after their Baptism, ὅτι δὲ (not, as it is in the Edition of Einius, both in this Canon and in the former, most absurdly, ὅτι εἰ δὲ) πρὸς ἐν νότῳ παραλαβάνοντες τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, καὶ ἐτα ἀναστάντες, ἐμμανθάνειν τὴν πίστιν, καὶ γινώσκων ὅτι θύμῃ δουλεύει καὶ ἡξιώσαν. Conc. Laod. Can. 47. || As appears in the ancient Greek Liturgies and the Decree of the third Council of Toledo, ut omni sacrificii tempore ante communione corporis Christi & sanguinis, juxta Orientalium partium morem, unanimiter clara voce sacratissimum fidei recenscant Symbolum. Which Custom as they call it of the Oriental parts, is said first to be introduced by Petrus Mongus at Alexandria, and after by Timotheus at Constantinople, as appears out of the fragments of Theodorus Lecttor. * Concil. Mogunt. cap. 45. Symbolum quod est signaculum fidei, & Orationem Dominicam discere semper admoncant sacerdotes populum Christianum. * Joh. 9. 35, 38. * Mar. 9. 17, 23, 24. * Joh. 6. 59. * Jam. 5. 15.

particular

ticular application ; therefore must it needs be proper for me to say *I believe*, and to make profession of my *faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.* Gal. 2. 20.

Being then I have described the true nature and notion of *Belief*, the duty of *confessing* our Faith, and the obligation of every particular Christian to *believe* and to *confess* ; being in these three explications all which can be imaginably contained in the first word of the *C R E E D* must necessarily be included ; it will now be easie for me to deliver, and for every particular person to understand what it is he says, and upon what ground he proceeds, when he begins his *Confession* with these words, *I believe*, which I conceive may in this manner be fitly expressed.

Although those things which I am ready to affirm be not apparent to my sense, so that I cannot say I see them ; although they be not evident to my understanding of themselves, nor appear unto me true by the virtue of any natural and necessary cause, so that I cannot say I have any proper knowledge or science of them : yet being they are certainly contained in the Scriptures, the writings of the blessed Apostles and Prophets ; being those Apostles and Prophets were endued with miraculous power from above, and immediately inspired with the Holy Ghost, and consequently what they delivered was not the word of man, but of God himself ; being God is of that universal knowledge and infinite wisdom, that it is impossible he should be deceived ; of that indefectible holiness and transcendent rectitude, that it is not imaginable he should intend to deceive any man, and consequently whatsoever he hath delivered for a truth must be necessarily and infallibly true ; I readily and stedfastly assent unto them as most certain truths, and am as fully and absolutely, and more concerningly perswaded of them, than of any thing I see or know. And because that God who hath revealed them hath done it not for my benefit only, but for the advantage of others, nor for that alone, but also for the manifestation of his own glory ; being for those ends he hath commanded me to profess them, and hath promised an eternal reward upon my profession of them ; being every particular person is to expect the justification of himself, and the Salvation of his Soul, upon the condition of his own Faith : as with a certain and full perswasion I assent unto them, so with a fixed and undaunted resolution I will profess them ; and with this faith in my heart, and confession in my mouth, in respect of the whole body of the *C R E E D*, and every Article and particle in it, I sincerely, readily, resolvedly say, *I believe*.

I believe in God.

HAVING delivered the Nature of *Faith*, and the act of *Belief* common to all the Articles of the *Creed*, that we may understand what it is to *believe* ; we shall proceed to the explication of the Articles themselves, as the most necessary objects of our *Faith*, that we may know what is chiefly to be believed. Where immediately we meet with another word as general as the former, and as universally concerned in every Article, which is *G O D* ; for if to *believe* be to assent upon the testimony of God, as we have before declared, then wheresoever belief is expressed or implied, there is also the name of *God* understood, upon whose testimony we *believe*. He therefore whose authority is the ground and foundation of the whole, his existence begins the *Creed*, as the foundation of that authority. For if there can be no divine Faith without the attestation of *God*, by which alone it becomes divine, and there can be no such attestation, except there were an existence of the testifier, then must it needs be

on, by which it is attributed to the material object of belief. For the *Creed* being nothing else but a brief comprehension of the most necessary matters of faith, whatsoever is contained in it beside the first word *I believe*, by which we make confession of our Faith, can be nothing else but part of those verities to be believed, and the act of belief in respect of them nothing but an assent unto them as divinely credible and infallible truths. Neither can we conceive that the ancient Greek Fathers of the Church could have any farther meaning in it, who make the whole body of the *Creed* to be of the same nature, as so many truths to be believed, acknowledged and confessed; inso-much as sometimes they use not **believing in*, neither for the Father, Son, nor Holy Ghost; sometimes using it as to them, they || continue the same to the following Articles of, *the Catholick Church, the communion of Saints, &c.* and **generally* speak of the *Creed* as of nothing but mere matter of Faith, without any intimation of hope, || Love, or any such notion included in it. So that *believing in*, by virtue of the phrase or manner of speech, whether we look upon the original use of it in the Hebrew, or the derivative in the Greek, or the sense of it in the first Christians in the Latine Church, can be of no farther real importance in the *Creed* in respect of God, who immediately follows, than to acknowledge and assert his being or existence. Nor ought this to be imagin'd a slender notion or small part of the first Article of our Faith, when it really is the foundation of this and all the rest; that as the *Creed* is fundamental in respect of other truths, this is the **foundation* even of the Fundamentals, *^a For he that cometh to God must believe that he is.* And this I take for a sufficient explication of the phrase, *I believe in God*, that is, *I believe that God is.*

ἡ εἰς ζωὴν τοῦ μέλλοντος αἰῶνος, καὶ εἰς βασιλείαν ὑψάντων, καὶ εἰς μίαν καθολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν τῷ Θεῷ. Socrat. Hist. Eccl. l. i. c. 26. Sozomen. l. 2. c. 27. S. Cyril. Hierosol. ἡ καθήχησις τῇ φωτισσομένην διδάσκει εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα ἄγιον, καὶ εἰς μίαν ἁγίαν καθολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ εἰς σαρχὶς ἀνάστασιν, καὶ εἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον. Euseb. in Anc. εἰς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον, εἰς μίαν ἁγίαν καθολικὴν καὶ Ἀποστολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν. and in a larger Confession, πιστεύομεν εἰς μίαν καθολικὴν καὶ Ἀποστολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ εἰς ἐν βάπτισμῳ μετανοίας, καὶ εἰς ἀνάστασιν νεκρῶν, καὶ εἰς βασιλείαν ὑψάντων, καὶ εἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον. * Greg. Nyss. calls them εὐσεβεῖς πρὸς Θεῷ ἀπολήψεις. And Eusebius, in his Confession exhibited to the Council of Nice, concludes, Πιστεύομεν καὶ εἰς πνεῦμα ἅγιον, τὸ τὸν ἑαυτοῦ ἐνδεδυμένον πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον. signifying that every particular which he had rehearsed he believed to be. And that was all in the Confession intended. Alexander Bishop of Alexandria, after a long declaration of the former Articles concerning the Father and the Son, draws to a conclusion on the latter Articles, thus; Περὶ ἧς τῇ εὐσεβείᾳ (ἐὐσεβείᾳ) ταύτῃ πρὸς πατέρας καὶ υἱὸν δόξαν. ἐν πνεύμα ἁγίον ὁμολογούμεθα. μίαν καὶ μένιν καθολικὴν καὶ Ἀποστολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν. καὶ εἰς τὴν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν οἰσμεθα. Theodor. Hist. Eccl. l. i. c. 4. So Tertul. de Praescr. adv. Haer. Regula est fidei illa qua creditur Unum omnino Deum esse: and adv. Praxeam, cap. 2. where he makes another rehearsal of his Creed, he begins with Unicum quidem Deum credimus. || Non est amor Dei Articulus, neque etiam amor proximi; quia etiam si sint praecepta generalia activa, tamen cum actio contineatur, non oportet eum constituere articulum: sed ista sunt fidei dogmata quae sunt columna & fundamenta legis divinae. Jf. Abravanel. de Cap. Fidei, c. 11. Primus est Deorum cultus, Deos credere. Sen. * Animonides de Fundam. Legis, יסוד היסודות ועמוד החכמות לידע שיש שם מצוי ראשון והוא מסצא כל נמצא the foundation of foundations and pillar of wisdoms is to know that the first Being is, and that it giveth existence to every thing which is. ^a Heb. 11. 6.

As for the matter or truth contained in these words so explained, it admits a threefold consideration, first of the Notion of *God*, what is here understood by that name; secondly, of the existence of *God*, how we know or believe that he is; thirdly, the Unity of *God* in that, though *There be Gods many and Lords many*, yet in our *Creed* we mention him as but one. When therefore we shall have clearly delivered what is the true notion of *God* in whom we believe, how and by what means we come to assure our selves of the existence of such a Deity, and upon what grounds we apprehend him of such a transcendent nature that he can admit no competitor; then may we be conceived to have sufficiently explicated the former part of the first Article; then may every one understand what he says, and upon what ground he proceeds, when he professeth, *I believe in God.*

The name of *God* is attributed unto many, but here is to be understood of him who by way of eminency and excellency bears that name, and therefore

^a Deut. 10. 17. is styled ^a *God of gods*; *The Lord our God is God of gods, and Lord of lords*: and
^b Psal. 136. 2. in the same respect is called ^b *the most high God*, (others being but inferiour, or
^c Dan. 2. 47. under him,) and *God* ^c *over or above all*. This eminency and excellency, by
^d Gen. 14. 18, which these titles become proper unto him and incommunicable to any other,
^e 19. 27. 42. is grounded upon the divine nature or essence, which all other who are called
^f Rom. 9. 5. gods have not, and therefore are not by nature gods. ^d *Then when ye knew*
^g Epist. 4. 5. *not God*, saith S. Paul, *ye did service to them which by nature are not Gods*. There
 In primis ne- is then a God by nature, and others which are called gods, but by nature are
 cille est con- aliquid subli- not so: for either they have no power at all, because no being, but only in
 cedatis esse miorem Deum the false opinions of deceived men, as the gods of the Heathen; or if they
 & mancipem quendam divi- have any real power or authority, from whence some are * called *gods* in the
 nitatis, qui ex Scripture, yet have they it not from themselves or of their own nature, but
 hominis De- from him who *only hath immortality*, and consequently only Divinity, and
 ostendit. Ter- therefore is the *only true God*. So that the Notion of a Deity doth at last
 tal. adu. Genes. expressly signifie a Being or nature of || infinite perfection; and the infinite per-
^h Gal. 4. 8. fection of Nature or Being consisteth in this, that it be absolutely and es-
 * Ego dixi. sentially necessary, an actual being of it self; and potential or causative of
 Dii estis; sed all Beings beside it self, independent from any other, upon which all things
 in eo indulti else depend, and by which all things else are governed. 'Tis true indeed, that
 nominis igni- to give a perfect definition of *God* is impossible, neither can our finite reason
 fictio est: & hold any proportion with infinity: but yet a sense of this Divinity we have,
 ubi refertur, e- and the first and common Notion of it consists in these three particulars, that
 go dixi, loquen- it is a Being of it self, and independent from any other; that it is that upon
 tis est potius which all things which are made depend; that it governs all things. And this
 sermo quam I conceive sufficient as to the first consideration, in reference to the Notion of
 rei nomen. S. a *God*.
 Hilar. de Trin. l. 7.

[Deus plene ac perfecte divinitatis est nomen. Hilar. de Trin. l. 11.
 Deus substan-
 tæ ipsius no-
 men, id est Di-
 vinitatis. Ter-
 tal. adu. Herm.

As for the existence of such a Being, how it comes to be known unto us, or by what means we are assured of it, is not so unanimously agreed upon, as that it is. For although some have imagined that the knowledge of a Deity is connatural to the Soul of man, so that every man hath a connate inbred notion of a *God*; yet I rather conceive the Soul of man to have no connatural knowledge at all, no particular notion of any thing in it from the beginning; but being we can have no assurance of its preexistence, we may more rationally judge it to receive the first apprehensions of things by sense, and by them to make all rational collections. If then the Soul of man be at the first like a fair smooth Table without any actual characters of knowledge imprinted in it; if all the knowledge which we have comes successively by sensation, instruction, and rational collection; then must we not refer the apprehension of a Deity to any connate notion or inbred opinion; at least we are assured God never chargeth us with the knowledge of him upon that account.

Again, although others do affirm, that the existence of God is a truth evident of it self, so as whosoever hears but these terms once named, that *God is*, cannot chuse but acknowledge it for a certain and infallible truth upon the first apprehension; that as no man can deny that the whole is greater than any part, who knoweth only what is meant by *whole*, and what by *part*; so no man can possibly deny or doubt of the existence of *God*, who knows but what is meant by *God*, and what it is *to be*; Yet can we not ground our knowledge of God's existence upon any such clear and immediate evidence: nor were it safe to lay it upon such a ground, because whosoever should deny it, could not by this means be convinced; it being a very irrational way of instruction to tell a man that doubts of this truth, that he must believe it because 'tis evident unto him, when he knows that he therefore only doubts of it, because it is not evident unto him.

Although

Although therefore that; *God is*; be of it self an immediate, certain, necessary truth, yet must it be *evidenced and made apparent unto us by its connexion unto other truths; so that the being of the Creatour may appear unto us by his Creature, and the dependency of inferior Entities lead us to a clear acknowledgement of the supreme and independent Being. The Wisdom of the Jews thought this method proper; ^a *for by the greatness and beauty of the creatures, proportionably the maker of them is seen*: and not only they, but St Paul hath taught us, that ^b *the invisible things of God from the Creation of the World are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal Power and Godhead*. For if *Phidias* could so contrive a piece of his own work, as in it to preserve the memory of himself, never to be obliterated without the destruction of the work; well may we read the great Artificer of the World in the Works of his own hands, and by the existence of any thing demonstrate the first Cause of all things:

* Hæc propositio, Deus est; quantum in se est, per se nota est, quia prædicatum est idem cum subiecto, Deus enim est suum esse. Sed quia nos non scimus de Deo quid est, non est nobis per se nota, sed indiget demonstratione per ea quæ sunt

magis nota quoad nos, & minus nota quoad naturam, scilicet per effectus. Aquin. 1. p. 9. 2. art. 1. ^a *Wisd. of Sol. 13. 5.*
^b Rom. 1. 20. This place must be vindicated from the false Gifs of Socinus, who contends that it cannot be proved from the Creation that there is a God, and therefore to this place of S. Paul answers thus: Sciendum est verba à creatione mundi debere conjungi cum verbo *Invisibilia*—Ait igitur eo in loco Apostolus, *eternam divinitatem Dei*, i. id quod nos Deus perpetuo facere vult, (*Divinitas enim hoc sensu alibi quoque apud ipsum enuntiatur, ut Col. 2. 9.*) *eternam potentiam*, i. promissiones quæ nunquam intercedunt, (quo sensu paulo superius dixerat *Evangelium esse potentiam Dei*) hæc, inquam, quæ nunquam postquam mundus creatus est ab hominibus visa fuerant, i. non fuerant eis cognita, *per opera*, hoc est, per mirabile ipsius Dei & divinorum hominum, præsertim v. Christi & Apostolorum ejus, operationes, conspecta fuisse. In which explication there is nothing which is not forced and distorted: for though his first observation seem plausible, yet there is no validity in it. He bringeth only for proof Mat. 13. 35 *καὲρ μυῶν*, *καὲρ ὁφθαλμῶν καὲρ*, which proves not at all that *καὲρ* has the same sense: and it is more probable that it hath not, because that is usually expressed by *ἀπ' ἀρχῆς καὲρ*, Mar. 10. 6. and 13. 19. 2 Pet. 3. 4. newer by *καὲρ*. Besides, the *καὲρ μυῶν* in S. Matthew bears not that Analogy with *ἀόρατα* which Socinus pretends signifying not things unseen or unknown till then, but only obscure sayings or parables; for which purpose those words were produced out of the Psalms by the Evangelist, to prove that the Messiah was to speak in parables, in the Original *לְהַגִּיד בְּפָרָבִים*, LXX. *παροβήματα*. *ἀπ' ἀρχῆς*, i. wise, ancient sayings, which were not unseen and unknown, for it immediately followeth, which we have heard and known, and our Fathers have told us, *Ψαλ. 78. 3.* And though he would make out this Interpretation, by accusing other Interpreters of unfaithfulness, Pleriq; interpretes ex præpositione *ἀ* ex fecerunt, contra ipsorum Græcorum Codicum fidem, qui non *ἀ* *καὲρ* sed *καὲρ* habent: yet there is no ground for such a calumny, because *καὲρ* may be, and is often, rendred *ex* or *ex* as well as *ἐκ*, as Matt. 3. 4. *ἀπὸ τευχῶν καμήλων*, *ἐ* pills camelinis. 7. 4. *καὲρ ὁφθαλμῶν σου*, *ex* oculo tuo, 16. *καὲρ ἀναθῶν*, *ex* spinis; and even in the sense which Socinus contends for, Matt. 17. 18. *καὲρ ὧν ἐλάμυνε*, V. T. *ex* illâ horâ, as Tully, *ex* eo die, and Virgil, *Ex illo Corydon*, Corydon est tempore nobis, and Tempore jam *ex* illo casus mihi cognitus urbis Trojanæ. So the Greek *καὲρ* the Latins render *ex* parte, *καὲρ τῆς γῆς* *ex* æquo: of which examples are innumerable. There is no unfaithfulness then imputable to the Interpreters: nor can such pitiful Criticisms give any advantage to the first part of Socinus's Exposition. However, the Catholick interpretation depends not on those words, *καὲρ*, but on the consideration of the persons, that is the Gentiles, and the other words, *ποιῶντα νοῦν*, which he farther perverts, rendring them the miraculous Operations of Christ and his Apostles, or, as one of our Learned Men, their doings, mistaking *ποιῶντα*, which is from the Passive *ποιῶμαι*, for *ποιῶντις*, from the Active *ποιῶναι* for *ποιῶντα* is properly the thing made or created, not the operation or doing of it; as *καὲρ* is sometimes taken for the Creature, sometimes for the Creation, but *καὲρ* is the Creature only. As therefore we read, 1 Tim. 4. 4. *πάν καὲρ Θεοῦ καλόν*. So Eph. 2. 10. *αὐτῷ γὰρ ἡμεῖς ποίημεν*. In this sense spake Thales properly, *Προσβύτατον ἦν ὧν Θεός, ἀγέννητον γὰρ κάλλιστον κόσμον, ποίημα γὰρ Θεοῦ*. Laert. The other Interpretations, which he was forced to, are yet more extravagant: as when he renders the eternal Godhead, that which God would always have us do, or, his everlasting will, and proves that rendition by another place of S. Paul, Col. 2. 9. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily, that is, says he, all the will of God: (whereas it is most certain, that where the Godhead is, especially where the fulness, even all the fulness of the Godhead is, there must be all the Attributes as well as the Will of God:) and when he interprets the eternal Power to be the promises which shall never fail; and thinks he has sufficiently prov'd it, because the same Apostle calls the Gospel the power of God. For by this way of Interpretation no sentence of Scripture can have any certain sense. || In the shield of Pallas. Arist. de mundo.

We find by the experience of our selves, that some things in this World have a beginning before which they were not; the account of the years of our Age sufficiently infer our Nativities, and they our Conceptions, before which we had no Being. Now if there be any thing which had a beginning, there must necessarily be something which had no beginning, because nothing can be a beginning to it self. Whatsoever is, must of necessity either have been made, or not made; and something there must needs be which was never made, because all things cannot be made. For whatsoever is made, is made by another, neither can any thing produce it self; otherwise it would follow, that the same thing is and is not at the same instant in the same respect: it is, because a producer; it is not, because to be produced: it is therefore in being, and is not in being; which is a manifest contradiction. If then all things which are made were made by some other, that other which produ-

ced them either was it self produced, or was not: and if not, then have we already an Independent Being; if it were, we must at last come to something which was never made, or else admit either a circle of productions, in which the effect shall make its own cause, or an * infinite succession in casualities, by which nothing will be made: both which are equally impossible. Something then we must confess was never made, something which never had beginning. And although these effects or dependent Beings singly considered by themselves, do not infer one supreme Cause and Maker of them all, yet the admirable order and || connexion of things shew as much; and this one supreme Cause is *God*. For all things which we see or know have their Existence for some end, which no man who considereth the uses and utilities of every Species can deny. Now whatsoever is and hath its being for some end, of that the end for which it is must be thought the Cause; and a final Cause is no otherwise the cause of any thing than as it moves the efficient Cause to work: from whence we cannot but collect a prime efficient Cause of all things, indued with infinite Wisdom, who having a full comprehension of the ends of all, designed, produced, and disposed all things to those ends.

Again, as all things have their Existence, so have they also their operations for some * end; and whatsoever worketh so, must needs be directed to it. Although then those creatures which are indued with reason can thereby apprehend the goodness of the end for which they work, and make choice of such means as are proportionable and proper for the obtaining of it, and so by their own counsel direct themselves unto it: yet can we not conceive that other natural Agents, whose operations flow from a bare Instinct, can be directed in their actions by any counsel of their own. The stone doth not deliberate whether it shall descend, nor doth the wheat take counsel whether it shall grow or no. Even men in natural actions use no act of deliberation: we do not advise how our heart shall beat, though without that pulse we cannot live; when we have provided nutriment for our stomach, we take no counsel how it shall be digested there, or how the chyle distributed to every Part for the reparation of the whole; the Mother which conceives taketh no care how that *conceptus* shall be framed, how all the parts shall be distinguished, and by what means or ways the Child shall grow within her womb: and yet all these operations are directed to their proper ends, and that with a greater Reason, and therefore by a greater Wisdom, than what proceeds from any thing of humane understanding. What then can be more clear, than that those natural Agents which work constantly for those ends which they themselves cannot perceive, must be directed by some high and over-ruling Wisdom? and who can be their directour in all their operations tending to those ends, but he which gave them their being for those ends? and who is that, but the great Artificer who works in all of them? For Art is so far the imitation of Nature, that if it were not in the Artificer, but || in the thing it self which by Art is framed, the works of Art and Nature would be the same. Were that which frames a Watch within it, and all those curious wheels wrought without the hand of man, it would seem to grow into that form; nor would there be any distinction between the making of that Watch, and the growing of a Plant. Now what the Artificer is to works of Art, who orders and disposes them to other ends than by nature they were made, that is the Maker of all things to all natural Agents, directing all their operations to ends which they cannot apprehend; and thus appears the Maker to be the Ruler of the World, * the steerer of this great Ship, the law of this universal Commonwealth, the General of all the hosts of Heaven and Earth. By these ways, as

by

* Ἀλλὰ μὴν
οἱ γ' ἐστὶν ἀρ-
χὴ τῆς, καὶ ἐκ
ἀπειρα τῶν ἀ-
τακτῶν ὄντων,
ἃ τ' οἱ ἐκθρο-
εῖαν, ὅτι κατ'
ἀδύνατον, δύνανται.
Arist. Meteor.
l. 2 c. 2. and
again, ἐπεὶ μὴ
δύνανται τὸ πρῶ-
τον, ὅλας αὖ-
τιον εἶναι δύνανται.
|| Πόθεν δύνανται
οἱ ὅλας ἐπὶ θεί-
ας; ἐκ τῆς ἡ-
συχίας συστάσε-
ως τε καὶ δια-
μορφῆς. *Justin.*
Quest. 78 Resp.
ad Græcos.

* Ἐν ὅποις τί-
λῳ τίθεται, τὸ
τῶν ἐνεκα πρᾶτ-
τεται τὸ πρῶ-
τον καὶ τὸ ἐ-
φεξῆς. ἀλλ' ὅπως
πρᾶττεται, ὅ-
τω πέρυκε καὶ
ὅς περὶ κεν, ἀν-
μῆτι ἐμποδίζ-
ει, ὅτω πρᾶτ-
τεται ἐκαστον.
πρᾶττεται, ὅ
ἐνεκα τῆς, καὶ
πέρυκεν ἀρ-
τὰ τῆς ἐνεκα.
Arist. Phys. l. 2.
c. 8.

|| Ἀποπον τὸ
μὴ οἶσθαι ἐνεκα
τῆς γίνεσθαι, ἐ-
άν μὴ ἰδῶσι
τὸ καὶ τὸ βυ-
λευσάμενον.
καὶ τοὶ καὶ ἡ
τέκνη εἰς βυ-
λευσάμενον καὶ γὰρ
αὐτοὶ ἐν πᾶσι
βυλῶν ἡ ναυτη-
γική, ὁμοίως
ἀν τῇ φύσει ἐ-
ποίηται. *Arist. ib.*
* Καθὼς ὁσὸν
ἐν νηὶ κυβερ-
νήτης, ἐν ἀρ-
ματι ἡνίο-
χος, ἐν χορῷ
ὁ κερύων, τ.
ἐν τῷ λαῷ ὁ νό-
μος, ἐν στρα-
τίῳ δὲ ἡγε-
μών. τοιοῦτο θε-
ός ἐν κόσμῳ.
Arist. de Mand.

by the * testimony of the Creature, we come to find an eternal and independent Being, upon which all things else depend, and by which all things else are governed; and this we have before supposed to be the first notion of *God*.

Neither is this any private collection or particular ratiocination, but the publick and universal reason of the world. || No Age so distant, no Country so remote, no people so barbarous, but gives a sufficient testimony of this truth. When the *Roman* Eagle flew over most parts of the habitable world, they met with Atheism no-where, but rather by their miscellany Deities at *Rome*, which grew together with their victories, they shewed no Nation was without its God. And since the later Art of Navigation improved hath discovered another part of the world, with which no former commerce hath been known, although the Customs of the people be much different, and their manner of Religion hold small correspondency with any in these parts of the world professed, yet in this all agree, that some religious observances they retain, and a Divinity they acknowledge. Or if any Nation be discovered which maketh no profession of Piety, and exerciseth no religious observances, it followeth not from thence that they acknowledge no God: for they may only deny his Providence, as the *Epicureans* did; or if any go farther, their numbers are so few, that they must be inconsiderable in respect of mankind. And therefore so much of the *Creed* hath been the general *Confession* of * all Nations, *I believe in God*. Which were it not a most certain truth grounded upon principles obvious unto all, what reason could be given of so universal a consent? or how can it be imagined, that all men should || conspire to deceive themselves and their posterity?

Nor is the reason only general, and the consent unto it universal, but God hath still preserved and quickened the worship due unto his Name, by the patefaction of himself. Things which are to come are so beyond our knowledge, that the wisest man can but conjecture: and being we are assured of the contingency of future things, and our ignorance of the concurrence of several free causes to the production of an effect, we may be sure that certain and infallible predictions are clear divine patefactions. For none but he who made all things, and gave them power to work, none but he who ruleth all things, and ordereth and directeth all their operations to their ends, none but he upon whose will the actions of all things depend, can possibly be imagined to foresee the effects depending merely on those causes. And therefore by what means we may be assured of a Prophecy, by the same we may be secured of a Divinity. Except then all the Annals of the world were forgeries, and all remarks of History designed to put a cheat upon posterity, we can have no pretence to suspect God's existence, having so ample testimonies of his influence.

The works of nature appear by observation uniform, and there is a certain sphere of every body's power and activity. If then any action be performed which is not within the compass of the power of any natural agent, if any thing be wrought by the intervention of a body which beareth no proportion to it, or hath no natural aptitude so to work; it must be ascribed to a Cause transcending all natural causes, and disposing all their operations. Thus every Miracle proves its authour, and every act of omnipotency is a sufficient demonstration of a Deity. And that man must be possessed with a strange opinion of the weakness of our Fathers, and the testimony of all former Ages, who shall deny that ever any Miracle was wrought. *We have heard with our ears, O God, our Fathers have told us what works thou didst in their days, in the times of old. Blessed be the Lord God, who only doth wondrous works.*

Nor are we only informed by the necessary dependency of all things on God,

* Habet Dominus testimonium totum hoc quod sumus, & in quo sumus *Tertul.*
|| Ἀρχαῖς τῆς λόγου καὶ τὰς τῶν θεῶν παλαιῶν ποιοῦσιν, ὡς ἐν θεῶ τοῖς παλαιῶν καὶ τοῖς νέων ἡμῶν καιρῶν. *Arist. de Mundo.*

* Nulla gens usquam est adeo contra leges morisque projecta, ut non aliquos Deos credat. *Sen.*

|| Nec in hunc furorem omnes mortales consensissent alloquendi furda numina & inefficaces Deos, *Sen.*

Psal. 44. 1.

72. 18.

Rom. 2. 15.

God, as effects upon their universal cause, or his external manifestations unto others, and the consentient acknowledgement of mankind; but every particular person hath a particular Remembrancer in himself, as a sufficient testimony of his Creatour, Lord, and Judge. We know there is a great force of Conscience in all men, by which their *thoughts* are ever *accusing, or excusing them*; they feel a comfort in those vertuous actions which they find themselves to have wrought according to their Rule, a sting and secret remorse for all vicious acts and impious machinations. Nay those who strive most to deny a God, and to obliterate all sense of Divinity out of their own Souls, have not been least sensible of this Remembrancer in their Breasts. 'Tis true indeed, that a false opinion of God, and a superstitious persuasion which hath nothing of the true God in it, may breed a remorse of Conscience in those who think it true; and therefore some may hence collect that the force of Conscience is only grounded upon an opinion of a Deity, and that opinion may be false. But if it be a truth as the testimonies of the wisest Writers of most different persuasions, and experience of all sorts of persons of most various inclinations, do agree, that the remorse of Conscience can never be obliterated, then it rather proveth than supposeth an opinion of a Divinity; and that man which most peremptorily denieth God's existence is the greatest argument himself that there is a God. Let *Caligula* profess himself an Atheist, and with that profession hide his head, or run under his bed, when the thunder strikes his ears, and lightning flashes in his eyes; those terrible works of nature put him in mind of the power, and his own guilt of the justice, of God; whom while in his wilful opinion he weakly denieth, in his involuntary action he strongly asserteth. So that a Deity will either be granted or extorted, and where it is not acknowledged it will be manifested. Only unhappy is that man who denies him to himself, and proves him to others; who will not * acknowledge his existence, of whose power he cannot be ignorant. ^a *God is not far from every one of us.* The proper discourse of *S. Paul* to the Philosophers of *Athens* was, that *they might feel after him and find him.* Some Children have been so ungracious as to refuse to give the honour due unto their Parent, but never any so irrational as to deny they had a Father. As for those who have dishonoured God, it may stand most with their interest, and therefore they may wish there were none; but cannot consist with their reason to assert there is none, when even the very Poets of the Heathen have taught us ^b *that we are his off-spring.*

* Hæc est
summa delicti,
nolle agnosce-
re quem igno-
rare non possis.
S. Cypriani de Idol.
Van.

^a *Act. 17. 27.*

^b *Act. 17. 28.*

It is necessary thus to believe there is a *God*, First, because there can be no Divine Faith without his belief. For all Faith is therefore only Divine because it relieth upon the authority of God giving testimony to the object of it; but that which hath no being can have no Authority, can give no Testimony. The ground of his Authority is his Veracity, the foundations of his Veracity are his Omniscience and Sanctity, both which suppose his essence and existence, because what is not is neither knowing nor holy.

Secondly, it is necessary to believe a Deity, that thereby we may acknowledge such a nature extant as is worthy of, and may justly challenge from us, the highest worship and adoration. For it were vain to be religious and to exercise devotion, except there were a Being to which all such holy applications were most justly due. Adoration implies submission and dejection, so that while we worship we cast down our selves: there must be therefore some great eminence in the object worshipped, or else we should dishonour our own nature in the worship of it. But when a Being is presented of that intrinsecal and necessary perfection, that it depends on nothing, and all things self depend on that, and are wholly governed and disposed by it, this worthily calls us to

our

our knees, and shews the humblest of our devotions to be but just and loyal retributions.

This necessary truth hath been so universally received, that we shall always find all nations of the World more prone unto Idolatry than to Atheism, and readier to multiply than deny the Deity. But our Faith teacheth us equally to deny them both, and each of them are renounced in these words, *I believe in God*. First, *in God* affirmatively, *I believe* he is, against Atheism. Secondly, *in God* exclusively, not in Gods, against Polytheism and Idolatry. Altho' therefore the *Existence* and *Unity* of God be two distinct truths, yet are they of so necessary dependence and intimate coherence, that both may be expressed by * one word, and included in one || *Article*.

* Solum Deum confirmas quem tantum Deum nominas, Tertul de Testim Animæ, c. 2.

When Leo Bi-

shop of Rome in an Epistle to Flavianus had written these words, Fidelium universitas profiteatur credere se in Deum Patrem omnipotentem, & in Jesum Christum filium ejus; one of the Eutychians objected with this question, Cur non dixerit in unum Deum Patrem, & in unum Jesum juxta Nicæni Decretum Concilii? To which Vigilius Bishop of Trent, or rather of Tapus, gives this answer, Sed Romæ & antequam Nicæna Synodus conveniret, à temporibus Apostolorum usque ad nos, ita fidelibus Symbolum traditur, nec p. adjudicant verba ubi sensus incolumis permanet: magis enim cum D. J. Christi sententia hæc fidei professio facit dicentis, creditis in eum & in me credite: nec dixit in unum Deum Patrem, & in unum meipsum. Quis enim nesciat unum esse Deum, & unum J. Christum filium ejus? Vigil. l. 4. contr. Eutych. || Rab. Chafidai in Or. Adonai. R. Joseph albo in alkharim.

And that the Unity of the Godhead is concluded in this Article is apparent, not only because the *Nicene* Council so expressed it by way of exposition, but also because this Creed in the * Churches of the East, before the Council of *Nice*, had that addition in it, *I believe in one God*. We begin our Creed then as || *Plato* did his chief and prime Epistles, who gave this distinction to his friends, that the Name of *God* was prefixed before those that were more serious and remarkable, but of *Gods*, in the plural, to such as were more vulgar and trivial. ^a *Unto thee it was shewed*, saith *Moses* to *Israel*, *that thou mightest know that the Lord he is God, there is none else beside him*. And as the Law, so the Gospel teacheth us the same, ^b *We know that an Idol is nothing in the World, and there is none other God but one*. This Unity of the Godhead will easily appear as necessary as the existence, so that it must be as impossible there should be more Gods than one, as that there should be none: which will clearly be demonstrated, first, out of the Nature of God, to which multiplication is repugnant; and, secondly, from the Government as he is Lord, in which we must not admit Confusion.

* Orientales Ecclesiæ omnes ista tradunt, Credo in unum Deum patrem omnipotentem. Russ. in symb. E ne hac omnia poterunt ad solos hæreticos pertinere, quia falsaverunt Symbolum, dum alter dixerit duos Deos, cum Deus unus sit. Optat. l. 1. Nos enim & scimus, & legi-

mus, & credimus, & tenemus, unum esse Deum, qui fecit cælum pariter ac terram, quoniam nec alterum novimus, nec nolle, cum nullus sit, aliquando poterimus. Novatianus de Trinit. c. 30. And before all these Irenæus, citing under the title of Scripture, a passage out of the book of Herimas called Pastor. Bene ergo Scriptura dicit, primum omnium crede quoniam unus est Deus, qui omnia constituit & consummavit, & fecit ex eo quod non erat, ut essent omnia, omnium capax, & qui à nemine capitur, l. 4. c. 37. || Euseb. in præp. Evang. the passage is yet extant in the Epistles of Plato. ^a Deut. 4. 35. ^b 1 Cor. 8. 4.

For first, the nature of God consists in this, that he is the prime and original cause of all things, as an independent Being upon which all things else depend, and likewise the ultimate end or final cause of all; but in this sense two prime causes are unimaginable, and for all things to depend of one, and to be more independent beings than one, is a clear contradiction. This primity God requires to be attributed to himself; *Hearken unto me, O Jacob, and Israel my called, I am he, I am the first, I also am the last*. And from this primity he challengeth his Unity; *Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and his Redeemer the Lord of Hosts, I am the first, and I am the last, and beside me there is no God*.

Isai. 48. 12.

41. 6.

Again, if there were more Gods than one, then were not all perfections in one, neither formally, by reason of their distinction, nor eminently and virtually, for then one should have power to produce the other, and that nature which is producible is not divine. But all acknowledge God to be absolutely and infinitely perfect, in whom all perfections imaginable which are simply such

must

must be contained formally, and all others which imply any mixture of imperfection, virtually.

But were no arguments brought from the infinite perfections of the Divine nature able to convince us, yet were the consideration of his supreme Dominion sufficient to persuade us. The will of God is infinitely free, and by that freedom doth he govern and dispose of all things. ^a *He doth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth*, said Nebuchadnezzar out of his experience; and S. Paul expresseth him as *working all things after the counsel of his own will*. If then there were more supreme Governours of the World than one, each of them absolute and free, they might have contrary determinations concerning the same thing, than which nothing can be more prejudicial unto Government. God is a God of order, not confusion; and therefore of unity, not admitting multiplication. If it be better that the

^a Dan. 4. 35.

|| Τὸν αὐτὸν θεόν
ἀλλ' οὐ πολλοὺς
θεοὺς κακῶς
οὐκ ἀγαθὸν
πολυθεῖαν ἶναι,
ὅς κοίτηται,
Arist. Metaph.
l. 12 c. ult.

|| Universe should be governed by one than many, we may be assured that it is so, because nothing must be conceived of God but what is best. He therefore who made all things, by that right is Lord of all, and because all * power is his, he alone ruleth over all.

Now God is not only *One*, but hath an *Unity* || peculiar to himself by which he is the *Only* God; and that not only by way of actuality, but also of possibility. Every individual man is one, but so as there is a second and a third, and consequently every one is part of a number, and concurring to a multitude. The Sun indeed is one; so as there is neither third nor second Sun, at least within the same Vortex: but though there be not, yet there might have been; neither in the Unity of the Solar nature is there any repugnancy to plurality; for that God which made this world, and in this *the Sun to rule the day*, might have made another world by the same fecundity of his omnipotency, and another Sun to rule in that. Whereas in the Divine Nature there is an intrinsic and essential singularity, because no other Being can have any existence but from that; and whatsoever essence hath its existence from another is not God. ^b *I am the Lord*, saith he, *and there is none else, there is no God besides me: that they may know from the rising of the Sun, and from the West, that there is none besides me, I am the Lord and there is none else*. He who hath infinite knowledge knoweth no other God beside himself. ^c *Is there a God besides me? yea there is no God, I know not any*. And we who believe in him, and desire to enjoy him, need for that end to know no other God but him: ^d *for this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God*; * as certainly *One*, as *God*.

* Unus omnium Dominus est Deus: neque enim illa sublimitas potest habere consortem cum sola omnipotentia beatitudine &c.
Cyp. de id. l. 1. tit. 1.

אֵלֹהִים אֶחָד
וְאֵין לֵאלֹהִים
שֵׁנִים וְלֵא
יִתְרֵךְ
שֵׁנִים אֶחָד
אֵלֹהִים אֶחָד
כִּי־הוּא־הוּא

אֵלֹהִים אֶחָד מִן־הָאֱלֹהִים הַנִּמְצְאִים בְּעוֹלָם לֹא־אֶחָד בְּמִין־שֶׁהֵינָּה כִּלְכֵּל אֲחֵרִים הַנִּבְרָא וְלֹא־אֶחָד
בְּנִיף שֶׁהֵינָּה נִחְלָק לְמַחֲדָקִית וּלְקְצוֹת אֶלֶּה אֶחָד שֶׁהֵינָּה יִיחִיד אֶחָד כְּמִדָּתוֹ בְּעוֹלָם
God is one, not two, or more than two, but only One: whose Unity is not like to that of the Individuals of this world, neither is he one by way of Species comprehending many Individuals, neither one in manner of a body which is divisible into parts and extremes: but he is so one, as no Unity like his is to be found in the World. Moses Num. de Fundam. legum. Quod autem diximus, Orientis Ecclesias tradere unum Patrem Omnipotentem, & unum Dominum, hoc modo intelligendum est, unum non numero dici, sed universitate: verbi gratia, si quis dicat unum hominem, aut unum equum, hic unum pro numero posuit, potest enim & alius homo esse, & tertius, vel equus. Ubi autem secundus & tertius non potest jungi, unus si dicatur, non numeri, sed universalitatis est nomen. Ut si exempli causa dicamus unum Solem, hic unus ita dicitur ut alius vel tertius addi non possit; multo magis Deus cum unus dicitur, unus non numeri, sed universalitatis vocabulo nuncupatur, id est, qui propterea unus dicitur, quod alius non sit. Ruffin. in symb. ^b Isa. 45. 5, 6. Deut. 4. 35. and 32. 39. Psal. 18. 31. ^c Isa. 45. 18, 21, 22. and 44. 8. ^d John 17. 3. * Veritas Christiana directe pronuntiavit, Deus si non unus est, non est, quia dignius credimus non esse, quodcumque non ita fuerit ut esse debeat. Tertul. adv. Marcion. l. 1. c. 2. Deus cum summum magnum sit, recte veritas nostra pronuntiavit, Deus si non unus est, non est. Non quasi dubitemus esse Deum, dicendo, si non unus, non est Deus; sed quia, quem confidimus esse, idem definimus esse, quod si non est Deus, non est, summum scilicet magnum. Porro summum magnum unicum sic necesse est, ergo & Deus unus erit non aliter Deus nisi summum magnum, nec aliter summum magnum nisi patrem non habens, nec aliter patrem non habens nisi unus erit. Ibid.

It is necessary thus to believe the Unity of the Godhead, that being assured there is a nature worthy of our devotions, and challenging our religious subjection,

jection, we may learn to know whose that nature is to which we owe our adorations, lest our minds should wander and fluctuate in our worship about various and uncertain objects. If we should apprehend more Gods than one, I know not what could determinate us in any instant to the actual adoration of any one : for where no difference doth appear, (as, if there were many, and all by nature Gods, there could be none) what inclination could we have, what reason could we imagine, to prefer or elect any one before the rest for the object of our devotions? Thus is it necessary to believe the Unity of God in respect of us who are obliged to worship him.

Secondly, It is necessary to believe the Unity of God in respect of him who is to be worshipped. Without this acknowledgment we cannot give unto God the things which are God's, it being part of the worship and honour due unto God, to accept of no compartner with him. When the Law was given, in the observance whereof the Religion of the *Israelites* consisted, the first precept was this prohibition, *Thou shalt have no other gods before me*; and who-
Exod. 20. 3.
 soever violateth this, denieth the foundation on which all the rest depend, as the * *Jews* observe. This is the true reason of that strict precept by which all are commanded to give divine worship to God only, ^a *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve*; because he alone is God: him only shalt thou fear, because he alone hath infinite power; in him only shalt thou trust, because *he only is our rock and our salvation*; to him alone shalt thou direct thy devotions, because *he only knoweth the hearts of the children of men*. Upon this foundation the whole heart of man is intirely required of him, and engaged to him. *Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one God: And*
Psal. 62. 2.
2 Chron. 6. 30.
Deut. 6. 4, 5.
 (or rather, *Therefore*) *thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might*. Whosoever were truly and by nature God, could not chuse but challenge our love upon the ground of an infinite excellency, and transcendent beauty of holiness: and therefore if there were more Gods than one, our love must necessarily be terminated unto || more
|| Numerus divinitatis summâ ratione constare deberet, vel quoniam & cultura ejus in anceps deduceretur.
 than one, and consequently divided between them; and as our love, so also the proper effect thereof, our chearful and ready obedience, which, like the Child propounded to the judgment of *Solomon*, as soon as 'tis divided, is destroyed. ^b *No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other: or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.*

duos intuens Deos tam pares quam duo summa magna, quid facerem si ambos colerem? vererer ne abundantia officii supersticio potius quam religio crederetur: quia duos tam pares & in altero ambos possem in uno demereri: hoc ipso testimonium prestans paritati & unitati eorum, dum alterum in altero venerarer, dum in uno mihi duo sunt. *Tertul. adv. Marcion. l. 1. c. 5.* ^b *Matth. 6. 24.*

Having thus described the first *notion* of a God, having demonstrated the *Existence* and *Unity* of that God, and having in these three particulars comprised all which can be contained in this part of the Article, we may now clearly deliver, and every particular Christian understand, what it is he says when he makes his *Confession* in these words, *I believe in God*; which in correspondence with the precedent discourse may be thus expressed:

Forasmuch as by all things created is made known the *eternal power and Godhead*, and the dependency of all limited Beings infers an infinite and independent essence; whereas all things are for some end, and all their operations directed to it, although they cannot apprehend that end for which they are, and in prosecution of which they work, and therefore must be guided by some universal and over-ruling wisdom; being this collection is so evident, that all the Nations of the earth have made it; being God hath not only written himself in the lively characters of his Creatures, but hath also made frequent patefactions of his Deity by most infallible predictions and super-

natural operations ; therefore I fully assent unto, freely acknowledge, and clearly profess this truth, that *there is a God*.

Again, being a prime and independent Being supposeth all other to depend, and consequently no other to be God ; being the intire fountain of all perfections is incapable of a double Head, and the most perfect government of the Universe speaks the supreme dominion of one absolute Lord ; hence do I acknowledge that God to be but one, and in this Unity or rather singularity of the Godhead, excluding all actual or possible multiplication of a Deity, *I believe in God*.

I believe in God the Father.

Eph. 4. 6.
1 Cor. 8. 6.

After the Confession of a *Deity*, and assertion of the Divine *Unity*, the next Consideration is concerning God's *Paternity* ; for that *one God is Father of all, and to us there is but one God, the Father*.

Now, although the Christian notion of the divine Paternity be some way peculiar to the Evangelical patefaction ; yet * wheresoever God hath been acknowledged, he hath been understood and worshipped as a *Father* : the very Heathen || Poets so describe their Gods, and their vulgar names did carry *father* * in them, as the most popular and universal notion.

* Omneni Deum qui ab homine colitur necesse est inter solemnes ritus & precatio- nes Patrem nuncupari ; non tantum honoris gratia, sed & rationis, & quod antiquior est homine, & quod vitam, salu- rem, victum prastat ut pater. Itaque & Jupiter à precantibus Pater vocatur, & Saturnus, & Janus, & Liber, & ceteri de- inceps. Laëtan. de rer. Sap. l. 4. c. 3. || That so frequent in Homer, πᾶσι θεῶν τε θεῶν τε · eundemque appellans dicit Ennius, Divumque hominumque pater rex. Ver. de L. L. l. 4. as Servius observes of Virgil, à Poëta penè omnibus Diis nomen paternum additur, ut fiant venerabiliores : and before him Lucilius,

Ut nemo sit nostrum quin pater optimus Divum,
Ut Neptunu' pater, Liber, Saturnu' pater, Mars,
Janu', Quirinu' pater nomen dicatur ad unum. Laëtan ib.

* As Jupiter, which is Jovis pater, or Ζεύς Πάτωρ, otherwise Diespater, or Δις Πάτωρ · and Marspiter, of whom Servius apud Pontifices Marspiter dicitur, Æneid. l. 3. So Semipater for Semo, and Σαρδοπάτωρ for Sardus the proper Deity of Sardinia. Ptolem.

This name of *Father* is a Relative ; and the proper foundation of Pater- nity, as of a Relation, is Generation. As therefore the phrase of genera- ting is diversly attributed unto several acts of the same nature with Gene- ration properly taken, or by consequence attending on it : so the title of *Father* is given unto divers persons or things, and for several reasons unto the same God. *These are the generations of the heavens and the earth, when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens, saith Moses*. So that the creation or production of any thing by which it is, and before was not, is a kind of generation, and consequently the Creator or Producer of it a kind of *Father*. *Hath the rain a Father ? or who hath begotten the drops of dew ?* By which words Job signifies, that as there is no other cause assignable of the Rain but God, so may he as the cause be called the *Father* of it, though not in the most proper sense, * as he is the *Father* of his Son : and so the || Philosophers of old, who thought that God did make the World, called him expressly, as the Maker, so the *Father* of it. And thus ^a *to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things* ; to which the words following in the Creed may seem to have rela- tion, *the Father Almighty, maker of heaven and earth*. But in this mass of Creatures and body of the Universe, some works of the Creation more pro- perly call him *Father* as being more rightly sons : such are all the rational and intellectual off-spring of the Deity. Of merely natural Beings and irra-

* Ἐτέρος γὰρ
τὸν υἱὸν πατρί-
ος θεὸν οὐκ
ἐστὶν ἕτερος υἱός.
Serenius in Job.
| Phurach of
Plato, calling
God πατέρα
πάντων καὶ
τοῦ κόσμου, ἡμῶν
τὸν μετὰ τοῦ
χρόνου ὄντα,
ὁ παρὲς ὁ ὅλος,
τὸν ὡς τὸν πατέρα
ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου κτίσαντα. Platon. Quest. And Alcimus, πᾶσι θεῶν δὲ ἐστὶ τὸ αὐτὸν ἵδναι πάντας. 1 Cor. 8. 6.

rational

Gen. 30. 1, 2.

* Οὐ γὰρ ἀλλή
 δεῖ ἐγὼ εἶμι
 τῷ μόνῳ δυνά-
 μεις τὰς ψυ-
 χῶν μήτρας
 ἀναιγνύσαι,
 καὶ παῖδεν ἐν
 αὐτῷ ἀρεῖσθαι,
 καὶ ποιεῖν ἐγ-
 κύμονα καὶ τι-
 τάς τὰ κα-
 λά. Philo de
 Alleg.
 b Mut. 19. 28.
 c Luke 20.
 35, 36.
 d Rom. 8. 17.
 * Col. 3. 24.
 Heb. 9. 15.
 e 1 Joh. 3. 2.
 καὶ ἔγω ἐφανε-
 ρώθη.

us of the new Creation. When *Rachel* called to *Jacob*, ^a *Give me children or else I die*; he answered her sufficiently with this question, *Am I in God's stead?* And if he only openeth the womb, who else can make the * *Soul* to bear? Hence hath he the name of *Father*, and they of *Sons* who are born of him; and so from that internal act of spiritual Regeneration another title of pater- nity redoundeth unto the Divinity.

Nor is this the only second birth or sole Regeneration in a Christian sense; the *Soul*, which after its natural Being requires a birth into the life of Grace, is also after that born again into a life of Glory. Our Saviour puts us in mind of *the Regeneration*, ^b *when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory*. The Resurrection of our bodies is a kind of coming out of the womb of the earth, and entering upon immortality, a nativity into another life. For ^c *they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, are the sons of God, being the sons of the resurrection*; and then as sons, ^d *they become heirs, coheirs with Christ*, * *receiving the promise and reward of eternal inheritance*. ^e *Beloved, now we are the sons of God, saith S. John*, even in this life by Regeneration, and it doth not yet appear, or, it hath not been yet made manifest, what we shall be; but we know, that if he appear, we shall be like him: the manifestation of the Father being a sufficient declara- tion of the condition of the Sons, when the Sonship it self consisteth in a simi- litude of the Father. And ^f *blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead; to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for us*. Why may not then a second kind of *Regeneration* be thought a fit addition of this paternal relation?

Neither is there only a natural, but also a voluntary and civil, foundation of Paternity: for the *Laws* have found a way by which a man may become a Father without procreation: and this imitation of || nature is called *Adoption*, taken in the general * signification. Although therefore many ways God be a Father, yet lest any way might seem to exclude us from being his Sons, he hath made us so also by Adoption. Others are wont to fly to this, as to a comfort of their solitary condition, when either || Nature hath denied them, or death bereft them of their off-spring. Whereas God doth it not for his own, but for our sakes; nor is the advantage his, but ours. ^g *Behold what manner of Love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God*; that we, the sons of disobedient and condemned *Adam* by natural generation, should be translated into the glorious liberty of the sons of God by Adoption; that we, who were aliens, strangers and enemies, should be assumed ^h *unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, on whom all the * family of heaven and earth is named*, and be made partakers of ⁱ *the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the Saints*. For as in the legal Adoption, the Father hath as || full and absolute power over his adopted son as over his own issue; so in the spiritual, the adopted sons have a clear and undoubted right of inheri-

|| *Cañ Inst.* 1. c. 5. §. 1. *Adoptio natu- ra similitudo est, ut aliquis filium habere possit, quem non generavit. τί δὲν ὁθε- σία; νομίμη πατρὶς μιμο- μῆν τινὲς εὐσε- βες παίδων παρρηγοῖαν ἐπιτηροῦσιν.* Theoph. *Inst.* 1. c. 11.

* *Ἡ ὁθεσία Ῥωμαϊκῇ νό- μι λέγεται ἀ- δοσίαν αὐτῇ ὅσα γυνεὶν ὄντα, εἰς δύ- νειται.*

διαρῆται, εἰς ἀδελφίσθονα, καὶ τινὲς ὁμόφυλον ἀδοσίθονα. Theoph. *ibid.* || *Cañ Inst.* 2. tit. 5. §. 4. *Spadones autem, qui generare non possunt, adoptare possunt; & licet filios generare non possint, quos adoptaverunt filios habere possunt.* Ulp. tit. 5. 6. *Hi qui generare non possunt, velut spado, utroque modo possunt adoptare. Idem juris est in cœlibe, Theoph.* tit. 11. *τυχεῖν ἐκ ἑχοῖ τις παῖδα διὰ τὸ μὴ εἶναι ἐκ γάμων, ἢ εἶναι μὴ, μὴ παιδοποιῆσαι ὅ, ἢ παιδοποιῆσαι μὴ, περ ἀλλοτρίῳ ὅ τῶτος, τὸ ἐκ τῆς εὐσεβείας ἐλάττωμα ἢ τὸ κυμαίνον δυσύχημα βέλτερον δὲ παρρηγοῖται, ἔλαβεν εἰς ὁθεσίαν τινά.* Leonis Nov. 27. *τεῖς ἀτυχῶν ἀπαιδαν λυόν βελόμην τὸ δυσύχημα νέμει ὁθεσίᾳ περσάσθαι, ὅ γυνὴν ἐπέινει κλάδης, ὃ μὴ ἀπορεῖν λαβεῖν παρὲρ εὐσεβείας.* ¹ *John* 3. 1. ^h *Eph* 3. 15. * *In alienam familiam transiis, is the description in Agellius, l. 5. 19. Cum in alienam familiam inque liberorum locum extranei sumuntur, aut per prætorem fit, aut per populum: quod per prætorem fit, adoptio dicitur; quod per populum, arrogatio, Ib. 1. 18. || As appears out of the form of Rogation yet extant in this manner: VELITIS, jubeatis, Quirites, uti Lucius Valerius Lucio Titio tam jure legeque Filius sibi fiet, quam si ex eo patre matreque familias ejus natus esset, utique ei vitæ necisque in eo potestas fiet, uti patri endo filio est? Ib.*

tance.

tance. He then who hath ^a *predestinated us unto the adoption of Children by Jesus Christ to himself*, hath thereby another kind of paternal relation, and so we receive the ^b *Spirit of adoption whereby we cry, Abba, Father.*

^a Eph. 1. 5.

^b Rom. 8. 15.

The necessity of this faith in God as in our Father appeareth, first, in that it is the ground of all our filial fear, honour and obedience due unto him upon this relation. ^c *Honour thy Father is the first Commandment with promise*, written in tables of stone with the finger of God; and, *children obey your parents in the Lord*, is an Evangelical precept, but founded upon principles of reason and justice; for *this is right*, saith S. Paul. And if there be such a rational and legal obligation of honour and obedience to the *fathers of our flesh*, how much more must we think our selves obliged to him whom we believe to be our *heavenly and everlasting Father*? ^d *A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master. If then I be a father, where is my honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear?* saith the Lord of hosts. If we be heirs, we must be co-heirs with Christ; if sons, we must be brethren to the only-begotten: but being he came not to do his own will, but the will of him that sent him, he acknowledgeth no fraternity but with such as do the same; as he hath said, ^e *Whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother.* If it be required of a Bishop in the Church of God, to be ^f *one that ruleth well his own House, having his Children in subjection with all gravity*; what obedience must be due, what subjection must be paid, unto the Father of the family?

^c Eph. 6. 1, 2.

^d Malac. 1. 5.

^e Matt. 12. 50.

^f 1 Tim. 3. 4.

^g Luk. 11. 2.

^h Matt. 6. 8.

ⁱ Matt. 7.

^j 9, 10, 11.

^k *ἀντί πέρους*

^l *σκορπίον πα-*

^m *ερίαι δὲ τῶ*

ⁿ *τὰ χεῖρα αἰσ-*

^o *μένον ἀντί τῶ*

^p *βελτίονων.*

^q Zeno.

^r *ὅς ἀντί τῶ*

^s *πέρους σκορπίον*

^t *παράγει.*

^u Lycophron.

^v Heb. 12.

^w 9, 10,

^x *Quod si à Do-*

^y *mine nonnulla*

^z *credimus incu-*

^{aa} *tui, cui magis*

^{ab} *patientiam*

^{ac} *quam Domino*

^{ad} *præbeamus?*

^{ae} *Quin insuper*

^{af} *gratulari &*

^{ag} *gaudere nos*

^{ah} *docet digna-*

^{ai} *tionis divine*

^{aj} *castigationis.*

^{ak} *Ego, inquit,*

^{al} *quos diligo ca-*

^{am} *stigo. O servum*

^{an} *illum beatum*

^{ao} *cujus emenda-*

^{ap} *tionis Dominus*

^{aq} *instat, cui di-*

^{ar} *gnatur irasci,*

^{as} *quem admo-*

^{at} *nendi dissimu-*

^{au} *latione non de-*

^{av} *cipit! Tertul.*

^{aw} *de Pat.*

^{ax} *Deut. 8. 5.*

The same Relation in the Object of our Faith is the life of our devotions, the expectation of all our petitions. Christ, who taught his disciples, and us in them, how to pray, propounded not the knowledge of God, though without that he could not hear us; neither represented he his power, though without that he cannot help us; but comprehended all in this Relation, ^g *When ye pray, say, Our Father.* This prevents all *vain repetitions* of our most earnest desires, and gives us full security to cut off all tautology; for ^h *Our Father knoweth what things we have need of before we ask him.* This creates a clear assurance of a grant without mistake of our petition: ⁱ *What man is there of us, who if his son ask bread, will give him a stone? or if he ask fish, will give him a serpent? If we then who are evil know how to give good gifts unto our children; how much more shall our Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?*

Again, *this paternity* is the proper foundation of our Christian patience, sweetning all afflictions with the name and nature of fatherly corrections. ^k *We have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection to the father of Spirits, and live?* especially considering that *they chastened us after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness*: they, as an argument of their authority; He, as an assurance of his love: they, that we might acknowledge them to be our Parents; He, that he may persuade us that we are his Sons: *For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.* And what greater incitement unto the exercise of patience is imaginable unto a suffering soul, than to see in every stroke the hand of a *Father*, in every affliction a demonstration of his love? Or how canst thou repine, or be guilty of the least degree of impatience, even in the sharpest corrections, if ^l *thou shalt know with thine heart, that as a man chasteneth his son, so the Lord thy God chasteneth thee?* How canst thou not be comforted, and even rejoice in the midst of thy greatest sufferings, when thou knowest that he which striketh pitieth, he which afflicteth is as it were afflicted with it? ^m *for like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear him.*

^c Matt. 12. 50.

^f 1 Tim. 3. 4.

^g Luk. 11. 2.

^h Matt. 6. 8.

ⁱ Matt. 7.

^j 9, 10, 11.

^k *ἀντί πέρους*

^l *σκορπίον πα-*

^m *ερίαι δὲ τῶ*

ⁿ *τὰ χεῖρα αἰσ-*

^o *μένον ἀντί τῶ*

^p *βελτίονων.*

^q Zeno.

^r *ὅς ἀντί τῶ*

^s *πέρους σκορπίον*

^t *παράγει.*

^u Lycophron.

^v Heb. 12.

^w 9, 10,

^x *Quod si à Do-*

^y *mine nonnulla*

^z *credimus incu-*

^{aa} *tui, cui magis*

^{ab} *patientiam*

^{ac} *quam Domino*

^{ad} *præbeamus?*

^{ae} *Quin insuper*

^{af} *gratulari &*

^{ag} *gaudere nos*

^{ah} *docet digna-*

^{ai} *tionis divine*

^{aj} *castigationis.*

^{ak} *Ego, inquit,*

^{al} *quos diligo ca-*

^{am} *stigo. O servum*

^{an} *illum beatum*

^{ao} *cujus emenda-*

^{ap} *tionis Dominus*

^{aq} *instat, cui di-*

^{ar} *gnatur irasci,*

^{as} *quem admo-*

^{at} *nendi dissimu-*

^{au} *latione non de-*

^{av} *cipit! Tertul.*

^{aw} *de Pat.*

^{ax} *Deut. 8. 5.*

Lastly,

* Πᾶν τὸ ὅμοιον ἐ-
αυτῷ ὅμοιον ἐ-
αυτῷ ὅμοιον ἐ-
Epiph. Hæres. 76.
6.

|| Τὸ ὅμοιον
γίνεσθαι τοῖς
ὅμοιον τὰ
ἐκγονα, δ' ὁ-
γεν. Aristot. de
Generat. Ani-
mal. l. 1. c. 9.

* Fories cre-
antur forcibus
& bonis. Est in
juvencis, est in
equis patrum
Virtus, nec im-
bellum feroces
Progenerant a-
quila colum-
ban. Hor. Ode.

† Gen. 5. 3.
† Ephef. 5. 1.
μικροῖσι. Filii
hominum sunt,
quando malè
faciunt; quan-
do bene, filii
Dei. S. Aug. in

Psal. 52. † Lev. 11. 44. and 19. 2. and 20. 7. † 1 Pet. 1. 15. † Matt. 5. 44, 45. Vide S. Aug. in Psal. 100. † Luke 6. 35. Similitudinem patris actus indicent sobolis; similitudo operis similitudinem indicet generis: actus nomen confirmet, ut nomen genus demonstret. Aug. de Temp. Serm. 76.

Lastly, the same Relation strongly inferreth an absolute necessity of our imitation; it being clearly vain to assume the title of Son without any simili-
tude of the Father. What is the * general notion of Generation but the pro-
duction of the like; Nature, ambitious of perpetuity, striving to preserve the
species in the multiplication and succession of individuals? And this similitude
consisteth partly in essentials, or the likeness of nature; partly in accidentals
or the likeness in || figure, * or affections. ^a Adam begat a son in his own like-
ness, after his image: and can we imagine those the sons of God which are no
way like him? A similitude of nature we must not, of figure we cannot pre-
tend unto: it remains then only that we bear some likeness in our actions
and affections. ^b Be ye therefore followers, saith the Apostle, or rather imitators,
of God, as dear children. What he hath revealed of himself, that we must ex-
press within our selves. Thus God spake unto the Children of Israel whom he
styled his Son, ^c Ye shall be holy, for I am holy. And the Apostle upon the same
ground speaketh unto us, as to obedient children, ^d As he that hath called you
is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation. It is part of the general bene-
ficence and universal goodness of our God, that ^e he maketh his sun to rise on
the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. These
impartial beams and undistinguishing showrs are but to shew us what we
ought to do, and to make us fruitful in the works of God; for no other
reason Christ hath given us this command, ^f love your enemies, bless them that
curse you, do good to them that hate you, that ye may be the children of your Father
which is in heaven. No other command did he give upon this ground, but,
Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father is merciful.

So necessary is this faith in God as in our Father, both for direction to the
best of actions, and for consolation in the worst of conditions.

But although this be very necessary, yet is it not the principal or most pro-
per explication of God's Paternity. For as we find one person in a more pecu-
liar manner the Son of God; so must we look upon God as in a more peculiar
manner the Father of that Son. ^a I ascend unto my Father, and your Father,
saith our Saviour; the same of both but in a different manner, denoted by
the Article prefixed before the one, and not the other: which distinction in
the original we may preserve by this translation, I ascend unto the Father of
me, and Father of you; first of me, and then of you: not therefore his, because
ours; but therefore ours, because his. So far we are the sons of God, as we
are like unto him; and our similitude unto God consisteth in our conformity
to the likeness of his Son. ^b For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate
to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born among ma-
ny brethren. He the first-born, and we sons, as brethren unto him: he ^c ap-
pointed heir of all things, and we heirs of God, as joint-heirs with him. Thus God
^d sent forth his Son, that we might receive the adoption of Sons. And because we
are Sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba,
Father. By his mission are we adopted, and by his Spirit call we God our Fa-

† Job. 20. 17.
ἀναβῆναι
πρὸς τὸ πατέ-
ρα μου καὶ πατέ-
ρα ὑμῶν. Had
πατέρα in both
places had its
article, there
would have
seemed two Fa-
thers: had the
article been pre-
fixed to πατέρα
ὑμῶν, he would
have seemed
first ours, then
Christ's: but
being prefixed to
πατέρα μου it
shows God to be

principally and originally Christ's, and by our reference unto him, our Father, Πατέρα μου καὶ Χριστοῦ ἐν τῇ θεότητι, καὶ πα-
τέρα ὑμῶν διὰ χάριν ἐν τῇ ὑποστάσει. Epiphani Hæres. 69. S. 55. ἐκ ἐμῶν, πρὸς τὸ πατέρα ὑμῶν ἀλλὰ διελθὼν, καὶ ἡμεῖς
πρῶτον τὸ δέκατον, πρὸς τὸ πατέρα μου, ὅθεν ἦν Χριστοῦ ἐν ἡμῖν. Ἐπὶ ἡ παραγγελίᾳ καὶ πατέρα ὑμῶν, ὅθεν ἦν Χριστοῦ θεοῦ. S.
Cyril. Catech. 7. Ἐτέρως ἢ αὐτὸν πατέρα, καὶ ἑτέρως ὑμῶν; πάντες μὲν ἦν. ἡ γὰρ ἡμεῖς δικάσιον ἑτέρως θεοῦ καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀλλων ἀν-
θρώπων, πολλοὶ μᾶλλον τοῦ ἡμεῖς καὶ ὑμῶν. Ἐπειδὴ γὰρ ὁ Χριστός, εἰπὲς τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς. ἵνα μὴ ἀπὸ τούτου ἴσιν τι φαντασθῶσιν,
δίδουσι τὸ ἰννοῦν μόνον. S. Chrysost. ad hec. † Rom. 8. 29. † Heb. 1. 2. † Gal 4. 4, 5, 6. Hoc facit Deus ex filiis
hominum filius Dei, quia ex filio Dei fecit Deus filium hominis. S. Aug. in Psal. 52.

ther. So are we no longer ^a *servants*, but now *sons*; and if *sons*, then *heirs* of ^a *Galat. 4. 7.* God, but still *through Christ*. 'Tis true indeed, that ^b *both he that sanctifieth*, ^b *Heb. 2. 11.* that is, *Christ*, and they who are *sanctified*, that is, faithful Christians, are all of one, the same Father, the same God; for which cause he is not ashamed to call them *brethren*: yet are they ^{*} not all of him after the same manner, not the ^c *many Sons* like the *Captain of their Salvation*: but *Christ* the beloved, the first-born, the only-begotten, the Son after a more peculiar and more excellent manner; the rest with relation unto and dependence on his Sonship; as given unto him, ^d *Behold I, and the children which God hath given me*; as being so by faith in him, ^e *For we are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus*; as receiving the right of Sonship from him. ^f *For as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God.* || Among all the sons of God there is none like to that one Son of God. And if there be so great a disparity in the Filiation, we must make as great a difference in the correspondent relation. There is one degree of Sonship founded on Creation, and that is the lowest, as belonging unto all, both good and bad: another degree above that there is grounded upon Regeneration, or Adoption, belonging only to the truly faithful in this life: and a third above the rest founded on the Resurrection, or Collation of the eternal inheritance, and the Similitude of God, appertaining to the Saints alone in the world to come: For ^g *we are now the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be; but we know that when he shall appear, we shall be like him.* And there is yet another degree of Filiation, of a greater eminency and a different nature, appertaining properly to none of these, but to the true Son of God alone, who amongst all his brethren hath only received the title of his ^{*} *own Son*, and a singular testimony from Heaven, ^h *This is my beloved Son*, even in the presence of *John* the Baptist, even in the midst of *Moses* and *Elias*, (who are certainly the sons of God by all the other three degrees of Filiation) and therefore hath called God after a peculiar way ⁱ *his own Father*. And so at last we come unto the most singular and eminent paternal relation, ^k *unto the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore; the Father of him, and of us, but not the Father of us as || of him.* *Christ* hath taught us to say, *Our Father*: a form of speech which he never used himself: sometimes he calls him *the Father*, sometimes *my Father*, sometimes *your*, but never *our*: he makes no such conjunction of us to himself, as to make no distinction between us and himself; so conjoining us as to distinguish, though so distinguishing as not to separate us.

nere nosceretur, non peperisse Patrem proprio filio suo docuit. Nec utique pro adoptandis adoptato, neque pro creatis creature: sed pro alienis suo, pro connumerandis proprio. *Hilar. l. 6. de Trin.* ^h *Mat. 3. 17. and 17. 5.* Anne ibi in eo quod dicitur, *Hic est*, non hoc significare videretur, Alios quidem cognominatos ab eo filios, sed hic filius meus est; Donavi adoptionis plurimis nomen, sed iste mihi filius est? *Id.* ⁱ *John 5. 18* πατὴρ ἰδίου λέγει ὁ θεός. *as Rom 8. 32. ὁ θεός ὁ πατὴρ ἰδίου ἡμῶν ἐποίησεν.* ^k *2 Cor. 11. 31.* || Non sicut Christi pater, irā & nostri pater. Nunquam enim Christus irā nos conjunxit, ut nullam distinctionem faceret inter nos & se. Ille enim filius æqualis patri, ille æternus cum patre, patrique cœternus: Nos autem facti per filium, adoptati per unicum. Proinde nunquam auditum est de ore Domini nostri Jesu Christi, cum ad discipulos loqueretur, dixisse illum de Deo summo patre suo, Pater noster; sed aut Pater meus dixit, aut Pater vester; usque aded ut quodam loco poneret hæc duo, *Vado ad Deum meum*, inquit, & *Deum vestrum*. Quare non dixit Deum nostrum? & patrem meum dixit, & patrem vestrum; non dixit nostrum? Sic jungit nè distinguat, sic distinguit ut non se-jungat. Unum nos vult esse in se, unum autem patrem & se. *S. Aug. in Joan. Tract. 21.*

Indeed I conceive this, as the most eminent notion of God's Paternity, so the original and proper explication of this Article of the *Creed*: and that not only because the ancient Fathers deliver no other exposition of it; but also because that which I conceive to be the first occasion, rise, and original of the *Creed* it self, requireth this as the proper interpretation. Immediately before the ascension of our Saviour, he said unto his Apostles, *All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them* ^{Matt. 28. 18, 19.}

* Dicimur & filii Dei, sed ille aliter filius Dei. *S. August. in Psal. 83.* ἡμεῖς τὰ υἱοὶ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ὁ χριστός πατὴρ, ἐν δὲ ὅ μόνος φύσις καὶ ἀληθὴς τοῦ πατρὸς ὁ υἱός. *S. Cyril. Hieros. Catech. 7.*

^c *Heb. 2. 10.*

^d *Isai. 8. 18.*

Heb. 2. 13.

^e *Gal. 3. 26.*

^f *John 1. 12.*

|| Ergo nemo in filiis Dei similis erat filio Dei. Et ipse dixit: *est filius Dei.* & nos dixit: *sumus filii Dei.* Sed quis erit similis Domino in filiis Dei? Ille unicus, nos multi. Ille unus, nos in illo unum. Ille natus, nos adoptati. Ille ab æterno filius unigenitus per naturam, nos à tempore facti per gratiam. *S. Aug. Psal. 88.*

^g *John 3. 2.*

^{*} *Rom. 8. 32.*

Ut magnificentia Dei dilectionis ex comparationis ge-

So when I said, *I believe in God the * Father*, I must as necessarily be understood of the Father of him whom I call *his Son* in the second Article.

Now as it cannot be denied that God may several ways be said to be the Father of *Christ*; first, as he was begotten by the ^a Holy Ghost of the Virgin *Mary*; secondly, as he was sent by him with special authority, as ^b the King of *Israel*; thirdly, as he was ^c raised from the dead, out of the womb of the earth unto immortal life, and made heir of all things in his Father's house: so must we not doubt but, besides all these, God is the Father of that Son in a more eminent and peculiar manner, as he is and ever was ^d with God, and God: which shall be demonstrated fully in the second Article, when we come to shew how *Christ* is the only-begotten Son. And according unto this Paternity by way of Generation totally Divine, in which he who begetteth is God, and he which is begotten the same God, do we believe in God, as the eternal Father of an eternal Son. Which Relation is co-æval with his Essence: so that we are not to imagine one without the other; but as we profess him always God, so must we acknowledge him || always *Father*, and that in a far more * proper manner than the same title can be given to any Creature. Such is the fluctuant condition of humane generation, and of those relations which arise from thence, that he which is this day a son, the next may prove a father, and within the space of one day more, without any real alteration in himself, become neither son nor father, losing one Relation by the death of him that begot him, and the other by the departure of him that was begotten by him. But in the Godhead these Relations are more || proper, because fixed, the Father having never been a Son, the Son never becoming Father, in reference to the same kind of generation.

* *Pater* cum ad-
dis, *Filii* intel-
lige patrem qui
filius supradi-
ctæ sit Imago
substantiæ.

Ruff, in *Sym.*

^a Luke 1. 35.

^b John 10. 36.
and 1. 49.

^c *AGS* 13. 32,
33.

^d John 1. 1.

11 Ἄμα γάρ ἐστι
 Θεὸς καὶ ἄμα
 πατὴρ· ἐχού-
 σαι ἔχουσιν ἔ-
 χον τὸ εἶναι
 τὴν φύσιν.
 ἀλλ' οὐκ ἐπὶ
 τῷ πατρὶ καὶ ὑ-
 φ' ἑσῶς, καὶ νο-
 ῦμεν. S. Cyril.
 Dial de Trin. 2.

Πατὴρ αἰ πα-
τὴρ, κὺ ἐκ λῶ
καρὸς ἐν ᾧ ἐκ
λῶν ὁ πατὴρ
πατὴρ. Εἰρηή.
Heres. 62.

Sicut nunquam
fuit non Deus,
itā nunquā fu-
it non Pater, à
quo filius natus.

Genad. de Eccles. dogm. c. 1. Credimus in Deum, eundem confitemur Patrem, ut eundem semper habuisse filium nos credamus. *Chrysol. Serm. 59.* Inest Deo pietas, est in Deo semper affectio, paternitas permanet apud illum: semper ergo filium fuisse credas, ne patrem semper non fuisse blasphemies. *Id. Serm. 62.* Adverte, quod cum Dei patris nomen in Confessione conjungit, ostendit quod non ante Deus esse coeperit & postea pater, sed sine ullo initio & Deus semper & pater est. *Aug. de Temp. Serm. 132.* * Deus solus propriè verus est pater, qui sine initio & sine pater est; non enim aliquando coepit esse quod pater est, sed semper pater est, semper habens filium ex se genitum. *Faustinus, lib. contra Arianos.* Ἐὰν τὸ θεοῦ πατρὸς μόνος ὁ πατὴρ κρείως ὁ πατὴρ ὄντι, καὶ ὁ υἱός κρείως υἱός ὄντι, καὶ ὅτι τῶν τῶν μόνον ἔσκε τὸ πατὴρ ἀπὸ παλαιοῦ ἔν, καὶ τὸ υἱός ἀπὸ υἱός ἔν. *S. Athanas. Diss. contra Arianos.* Ἢ Ἐπὶ μόνος τὸ θεοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τὸ υἱός ἔσκε καὶ ἔστιν ἀπὸ παλαιοῦ καὶ τὸ ἀνθρώπων ἡ πατὴρ λέγεισιν, ἀλλ' ἑτέρω γένονεν υἱός, καὶ ὁ υἱός λέγεισιν, ἀλλ' ἑτέρω λέγεισιν πατὴρ. ὥστε ἐπ' ἀνθρώπων μὴ κοῦζετε κρείως τὸ παλαιοῦ καὶ τὸ ὄνομα. *S. Athanas. Tom. 1.* Πατὴρ κρείως, ὅτι μὴ καὶ υἱός. ὥστε καὶ υἱός κρείως, ὅτι μὴ καὶ πατὴρ. τὰ δὲ ἡμῶτερα ἡ κρείως, ὅτι καὶ ἀμφοῖν. *Greg. Naz. Orat. 35.*

A farther reason of the propriety of God's Paternity appears from this, that he hath begotten a Son of the same nature and essence with himself, not only specifically, but individually, as I shall also demonstrate in the exposition of the second Article. For Generation being the production of the like, and that likeness being the similitude of * substance; where is the nearest identity of nature, there must be also the most proper Generation, and consequently he which generateth, the most proper Father. If therefore man, who by the benediction of God given unto him at his first creation in these words, ^a *Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth*, begetteth a Son ^b *in his own likeness, after his image*, that is, of the same humane nature, of the same substance with him, (which if he did not, he should not according to the benediction multiply himself or man at all,) with which similitude of nature many accidental disparities may consist, if by this act of Generation he obtaineth the name of Father, because, and in regard, of the similitude of his nature in the Son; how much more properly must that name belong unto God himself, who hath begotten a Son of a nature and essence so totally like, so totally the same, that no accidental disparity can imaginably consist with that identity?

* Etiam filius
hominis homo
in quibusdam
similis, in quibusdam sic
dissimilis paria;
tamen quia ejusdem
substantiæ est, negari
verus filius non
potest, & quia
verus est filius,
negari ejusdem
substantiæ non
potest. *S. Aug.*
l. 3. cont. Max.
c. 15.

Vide Tho. Sum.
p. 1. quest. 33.
art. 2. ad quart.

² Gen. i. 28.

^b Gen. 5.3.

That God is the proper and eternal Father of his own eternal Son is now declared: what is the eminency or excellency of this Relation followeth to be considered. In general then we may safely observe, that in the very * name of Father there is something of eminence which is not in that of Son; and some kind of priority we must ascribe unto him whom we call the first; in respect of him whom we term the second Person: and as we cannot but ascribe it, so must we endeavour to || preserve it.

Now that privilege or * priority consisteth not in this, that the essence or attributes of the one are greater than the essence or attributes of the other; (for we shall hereafter demonstrate them to be the same in both) but only in this, that the Father hath that essence of himself, the Son by communication from the Father. From whence he acknowledgeth that he is ^a *from him*, that he ^b *liveth by him*, that the ^c *Father gave him to have life in himself*, and generally referreth all things to him, as received from him. Wherefore in this sense some of the Ancients have not stuck to interpret those words, ^d *the father is greater than I*, of Christ as the Son of God, as the second Person in the blessed Trinity; but still with reference not unto his Essence, but his Generation, by which he is understood to have his Being from the Father, who only hath it of himself, and is the original of all power and essence in the Son. ^e *I can of mine own self do nothing*, saith our Saviour, || because he is not of himself; and whosoever receives his Being, must receive his power from another, especially where the essence and the power are undeniably the same, as in God they are. ^e *The Son then can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do*, because he hath no * power of himself, but what the Father gave:

* Αὐτὸ τὸ ὁ-
νομα τῆς πα-
τρὸς μόνον ἐστὶ
τὸ αἰν. S. n. 1. m.
dic. Theod. l. 2.
c. 2. Infinitum
nobis in Patre
auctoritas, in fi-
lio nativitas. S.

August.
|| Τὸ μὲν ἀρχον-
τὸν πατέρα εἰκό-
ναι ἀξίωμα ἐν-
δοξαζόμενον, μηδ-
ένα τῶν ἐν αὐτῷ
ἢ αὐτίον λέ-
γουσιν. Alex.
apud Theodor.
l. 1. c. 4.

* Ημεῖς δὲ κα-
τὰ μὲν τὴν ἑσ-
οτίαν πατρὸς
τὰ ἐξ αὐτοῦ
χρῶμεν, τὴν δὲ
τὰ ἑαυτοῦ τὴν
ἢ πατέρα κα-
λούμεν, καὶ τὴν
ἐκείνης διπε-
ρὸν ἔχοντες. S.
Basil. contr. Eu-
nom. l. 1.

^a John 7. 29.

^b John 5. 57. ^c John 5. 26. ^d John 14. 28. μεζων, ἢ πεν, ἢ μεχθὲν τινὶ ἐνδὲ χρόνω, ἀλλὰ διὰ τὴν ἐξ αὐτοῦ τῆς πατρὸς γέν-
νησιν. S. Athanas. contra Arianos, l. 2. λέπειν τοῖσι καὶ τῆς αἰτίας λόγον ἐνηαῦθα τὸ μεζων λέγειν, ἐπειδὴ γὰρ ἀπὸ τῆς
πατρὸς ἡ ἀρχὴ τοῦ υἱοῦ, καὶ τὸ τοῦ μεζων ὁ πατὴρ, ὡς αὐτὸς καὶ ἀρχὴ. διὸ καὶ κύριος ἢ πεν, Ὁ πατὴρ μεμίζων με ἐστὶ καθὼς
τατὴρ δυνάμετι. τὸ δὲ πατὴρ τί ἄλλο σημαίνει, ἢ ἔχει τὸ αἰτία ἐν καὶ ἀρχὴ; ἢ ἐξ αὐτοῦ γινώσκοντος; S. Basil. contr. Eunom.
l. 1. And the same S. Basil doth not only acknowledge this to be true in respect of the Divine Nature of Christ, but thinketh the Divinity
of the Son may be proved from hence. Ἐγὼ δὲ καὶ ἐκ ταύτης τῆς φωνῆς, τὸ οὐκ οἶσεν ἐν τῷ υἱὸν τὴν πατρίδι ἀναδιδόντες πεπείσμεθα. τὰ
δὲ Συγκρίσεις εἶδα κυρίως ἐπὶ τῆς αὐτῆς δύσεως γινώσκοντες. ἀρξεν γὰρ ἀρχὴν λέγουμεν μεζων, καὶ ἀνθρώπον ἀνθρώπου
δικαίως, καὶ πῶς τὴν ταχύτεραν. εἰ τοῖσι καὶ Συγκρίσεις ἐπὶ τῆς ὁμοειδῶς γινώσκοντες, μεζων δὲ καὶ Συγκρίσεις ἐνηαῦθα
ὁ πατὴρ καὶ ὁ υἱὸς οὐκ οἶσεν τὸν πατέρα ὁ υἱός. Ad Casarienses Epist. 141. τὸ μεζων μὲν ἐστὶ τῆς αἰτίας, τὸ δὲ ἴσον τῆς φύσεως, Naz.
Cris. 23. καὶ Orat. 4. * ὁ υἱὸς τὴν φύσιν τὸ μεζων, καὶ τὴν αἰτίαν δὲ. Vide Epiph. in Ancor. c. 17. καὶ λέγει τις μεζων ἐστὶ ὁ
πατὴρ καὶ ὁ υἱὸς αὐτοῦ ὁ υἱός, ὁ δὲ τὸν πατέρα μὲν μεζων αὐτὸν φωνῶν ὡς ἀναρχόν, ἔχων ἀρχὴν καὶ μόνον τὸ ἐξ ἑ, καὶ ὁ υἱὸς
μόνον αὐτὸν τὸν ἀρχὴν ἔχει. S. Cyril. thesaur. c. 11. and Isidore Pelusiota, Epist. 334. l. 3. cites this saying of an ancient Father:
καὶ τὸ μεζων ἵσαται ὁ υἱὸς ὁ πατὴρ, καὶ τὸ ἴσον καθὼς δεδός ὁ υἱὸς οὐκ οἶσεν. So Vigilus professes to believe the Son aequalum per omnia
Patris, excepto eo quod ille ingenuus est, & iste genitus. De Trinit. l. 11. Ideo totum quod habet, quod potest, non tribuit
sibi, sed Patri, quia non est a seipso, sed à Patre. Aequalis est enim Patri, sed hoc quoque accepit à Patre. S. Aug. Epist. 66.
Necesse est quoque lamino, lo prior sit, quia Pater sit; quoniam antecessit necesse est eum qui habet originem, ille qui originem
necit. Simul ut hic minor sit, dum in illo esse se scit, habens originem, quia nascitur. Major itaque, Pater filio
est, & plane major, cui tantum donat esse quantus ipse est, cui innascibilitatis esse imaginem sacramento nativitaris impertit,
quem ex se in forma sua generat. S. Hilary. de Trin. l. 9. Non praestantem quinquam cuiquam genere substantia, sed subjectum
alterum alteri nativitate natura: Patrem in eo majorem esse quod Pater est, Filium in eo non minorem esse quod filius sit.
Id. de Syn. contra Arianos. Quis Patrem non potiorum confitebitur ut ingenuum à genito, ut Patrem à filio, ut eum qui mi-
serit ab eo qui nullus est, ut volentem ab ipso qui obediatur? & ipse nobis restitit est, Pater major me est. Id. de Trin. l. 3. In
eo quod in se sunt Dei, ex Deo Divinitatem cognosce; in eo verò quod Pater major est, confessionem paternae auctoritatis
intelligit. Id. l. 11. And before all these Alexander Bishop of Alexandria; Τὸ δὲ ἀρχοντὸν τὸν πατέρα μόνον ἰδιώμα παρῆναι ὁ-
ρίζοντες, ἀπὸ τῆς καὶ αὐτοῦ ἀποκρίσεως τῶν σωτῆρων, Ὁ πατὴρ μεμίζων με ἐστὶ. Theodor. Hist. l. 1. c. 4. Lastly, we have the te-
stimony of Ithacius, that many of the ancient Fathers sh expounded it: Τὸν ὁ πατὴρ μεμίζων με ἐστὶ, τὸ ἐναρξεν φωνῶν,
ἀναρχὸς ἐστὶ τῶν ἑαυτοῦ ὁ υἱὸς ἀναρξεν. εἰ μὲν γὰρ εἰς τὸ αὐτὸ μεζων ἐμίζων ἐμίζων. Epist. 176. Aequalis Patri; sed major
Patri, quod ipse dedit ipsi omnia, & causa est ipsi filio ut sit, ut isto modo sit. Viator. Affr. l. 1. Pater, inquit, major me est;
merito major, quia solus hic auctor sine auctore est. Phyladus. * John 5. 30. 19. || Quicquid filius habet ut faciat, à Patre ha-
bet ut faciat. Quare habet à Patre ut faciat? quia à Patre habet ut filius sit; quia à Patre habet ut possit; quia à Patre habet
ut sit. S. Aug. Tract. 20 in Joan. * Non alia potentia est in filio, & alia substantia; sed ipsa est potentia quae substantia; sub-
stantia ut sit, potentia ut possit. Ergo quia filius de Patre est, ideo dixit, Non potest filius à se facere quicquam: quia non est
filius à se, ideo non potest à se. Id. Totum quod est, de Patre est; totum quod potest, de Patre est; quoniam quod potest &
est, de Patre totum est. Id. Non potest filius à se facere quicquam, nisi quod viderit Patrem facientem: quia de Patre est to-
tum. Filius, & tota substantia & potentia ejus ex illo est qui genuit eum. Id. Tract. 21. Et primum filium cognosce, cum dicitur,
Non potest filius à se facere quicquam, nisi quod viderit Patrem facientem. Habes nativitatem filii, quae ab se nihil potest facere
nisi videat. In eo autem quod à se nihil potest, innascibilitatis admittit errorem. Ab se enim non potest posse nativitas. S. Hi-
lary. de Trin. l. 7. Dum non à se facit, ad id quod agit secundum nativitatem sibi Pater auctor est. Id. l. 11. Autorem discrevit,
cum ait, Non potest à se facere: Obedientiam significat, cum addit, Nisi quod viderit Patrem facientem. Id. de Syn.

and

and being he gave him all the power, as communicating his entire and undivided Essence, therefore *what things soever he doth, these also doth the Son likewise*, by the same power by which the Father worketh, because he had received the same Godhead in which the Father subsisteth. There is nothing more intimate and essential to any thing than the life thereof, and that in nothing so conspicuous as in the Godhead, where life and truth are so inseparable, that there can be no living God but the true, no true God but the living. ^a *The Lord is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting King*, saith the Prophet *Jeremy*; and *S. Paul* putteth the *Thessalonians* in mind, how they ^b *turned from idols, to serve the living and true God*. Now life is other-wise in God than in the Creatures: in him originally, in them derivatively; in him as in the fountain of absolute perfection, in them by way of dependence and participation: our life is in him, but his is in himself; and * *as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself*: || both the same life, both in themselves, both in the same degree, *as the one, so the other*; but only with this difference, the Father giveth it, and the Son receiveth it. From whence he professeth of himself, *that the living Father sent him, and that he liveth * by the Father*.

^a Jer. 10. 10.
^b 1 Thess. 1. 9.
* Job. 5. 26.
Sicut habet Pater vitam in semetipso, sic dedit & Filio vitam habere in semetipso: ut hoc solum inter sit inter Patrem & Filium, quia Pater habet vitam in semetipso quam nemo ei dedit.

Filius autem habet vitam in semetipso quam Pater dedit. *S. Aug. Tract. 19. in Job.* Incommutabilis est vita Filii sicut & Patris, & tamen de Patre est; & inseparabilis est operatio Patris & Filii; sed tamen ita operari Filio de illo est de quo ipse est, id est, de Patre. *Id. de Trin. l. 2. c. 1.* || Sicut habet, dedit; qualem habet dedit; quantum habet, tantam dedit. *Id. contra Maxim. l. 3. c. 14.* Ergo quod dicitur *dedit filio*, tale est ac si diceretur, genuit filium; generando enim dedit. Quomodo enim dedit ut esset, sic dedit ut vita esset, & sic dedit ut in semetipso vita esset. *Id. Tract. 22. in Job.* Tali confessione originis suae indiseretæ naturæ perfecta nativitas est. Quod enim in utroque vita est, id in utroque significatur essentia; & vita quæ generatur ex vita, id est, essentia quæ de essentia nascitur, dum non dissimilis nascitur, scilicet quia vita ex vita est, tenet in se indissimilem naturam originis suæ, quia & nata & gignentis essentia, id est, vitæ quæ habetur & data est, similitudo non discrepet. *S. Hilary. de Synod. advers. Arianos.* Quia ergo apparet vita Patris hoc esse quod ipse est; sicut habet vitam in se, sic dedit; sic dedit Filio habere vitam, id est, sic est esse Filii, sicut esse Patris. *Vigil. Africanus Disput.* In vita naturæ & essentia significatio est, quæ sicut habetur, ita data esse docetur ad habendum. *S. Hilary. ib.* * Propter Patrem vivat Filius, quod ex Patre Filius est: propter Patrem, quod eructatum est verbum ex Patris corde, quod à Patre processit, quod ex paterno generatus est utero, quod fons Pater Filii est, quod radix Pater Filii est. *S. Ambrosius de Fide, l. 4. c. 5.*

We must not therefore so far endeavour to involve our selves in the darkness of this mystery, as to deny that glory which is clearly due unto the Father; whose preeminence undeniably consisteth in this, that he is God not of any other, but of himself, and that there is no other person who is God, but is God of himself. It is no diminution to the Son, to say he is from another, for his very name imports as much; but it were a diminution to the Father to speak so of him: and there must be some preeminence, where there is place for derogation. * What the Father is, he is from none; what the Son is, he is from him: what the first is, he giveth; what the second is, he receiveth. The first is a Father indeed by reason of his Son, but he is not God by reason of him; whereas the Son is not so only in regard of the Father, but also God by reason of the same.

* Pater de nullo patre, Filius de Deo Patre: Pater quod est, à nullo est; quod autem Pater est, propter Filium est. Fi-

lius verò & quod filius est, propter Patrem est, & quod est, à Patre est. *S. Aug. Tract. 19. in Job.* Filium dicimus Deum de Deo, Patrem autem Deum tantum, non de Deo. Unde manifestum est quod Filius habet alium de quo sit, & cui filius est; Pater autem non filium de quo sit habeat, sed cui Pater sit. Omnis enim filius de patre est quod est, & patri filius est: nullus autem pater de filio est quod est. *Id. de Trin. l. 2. c. 1.* Filius non hoc tantum habet nascendo, ut Filius sit, sed omnino ut sit. *Ib. l. 5. c. 14.* Filius non tantum ut sit Filius quod relativè dicitur, sed omnino ut sit, ipsam substantiam nascendo habet. *Ibid. c. 15.* Pater non habet patrem de quo sit, Filius autem de Patre est ut sit, acque ut illi co-æternus sit. *Ibid. l. 6. c. 10.* *Ab ipso*, inquit, *sum*, quia Filius de Patre, & quicquid est filius, de illo est cuius est Filius. Ideo Dominum Jesum dicimus Deum de Deo, Patrem non dicimus Deum de Deo: & dicimus Dominum Jesum lumen de lumine, Patrem non dicimus lumen de lumine, sed tantum lumen. Ad hoc ergo pertinet quod dixit, *Ab ipso sum*. *Id. Tract. in Job. 31.* Pater non est si non habeat Filium, & Filius non est si non habeat Patrem: sed tamen Filius Deus de Patre, Pater autem Deus, sed non de Filio: Pater Filii, non Deus de Filio; ille autem Filius Patris, & Deus de Patre. *Id. Tract. 30. in Job.* Hoc tamen inter Patrem & Filium interest, quia Pater à nullo hoc accepit, Filius autem per generationem omni Patris accepit. *Ambr. in Epist. ad Eph. c. 7.* Est ergo Deus Pater omnium, institutor & creator, solus originem nesciens. *Novat. de Trin. c. 31.* *whereas he speaks after the Son*, Est ergo Deus, sed in hoc ipsum genitus, ut esset Deus. Pater est Deus de quo Filius est Deus, de quo autem Pater nullus est Deus. *S. Aug. Epist. 65.*

Feb. 3. 1.
John 20. 21.

* Pater enim
solus nusquam
legitur missus.
S. Aug. l. 2. de
Trin. c. 5.
|| Solus Pater
non legitur
missus, quia so-
lus non habet
authorem à
quo genitus sit,
vel à quo pro-
cedat. Et ideo
non propter
naturæ diver-
sitate, sed pro-
pter ipsam au-
thoritatem, so-
lus Pater non
dicitur missus:
non enim
splendor aut
fervor ignem,
sed ignis mittit
sive splendo-
rem sive fervo-
rem. S. Aug.
Serm. contr. A-
rian. c. 4. Qui
mittit, potesta-
tem suam in
eo quod mit-
tit, ostendit.
S. Hilar. l. 8.
^a Matt. 21. 33,
&c.
^b Heb. 1. 1, 2.

* Si voluisset Deus Pater per subjectam creaturam visibiliter apparere, absurdissimè tamen aut à Filio, quem genuit, aut à Spiritu Sancto, qui de illo procedit, missus diceretur. S. August. de Trinit. lib. 4. cap. ult. * John 6. 57. || Filius est igitur à Patre missus, non Pater à Filio; quia Filius est à Patre natus, non Pater à Filio. Fulgent. l. 8. contra Fabianum, in Collect. Theodul. de S. S. Quis autem Christianus ignorat quod Pater miserit, missusque sit Filius? Non enim genitorem ab eo quem genuit, sed genitum à genitore mitti oportebat. S. Augustin. contra Maximin. lib. 3. c. 14. Ubi audis, Ipse me misit, noli intelligere naturæ dissimilitudinem, sed generantis auctoritatem. Idem Tract. 31. in Joh. Ἐνταῦθα ἔν ὁ ἀποστείλας καὶ ὁ ἀπεπελάμενος, ἵνα διξῇ ὁ πᾶντων ἀγαθῶν μίαν ἦν τὴν γῆν, τὰ ἐστὶ τὸ Πατέρος. Epiph. Hæres. 69. 54. Hence the language of the Schools, Missio importat processionem originis, as Thom. Aquin. 10. q. 43. art. 1. ad primum; or auctoritatem principii, as Durand. l. 1. dist. 15. q. 1. * John 7. 29. * Λέγουσι γὰρ τὸ ὄντων τῶν Εὐαγγελίων κατὰ ἐρμηνεύσεις, ὅτι ὁ ἀποστείλας με πατὴρ μόνος με ὄντι, saith Epiphanius of the Arians; and answering, grants in these words which follow, καὶ πρῶτον μὲν ὁ ἀποστείλας με πατὴρ, φάσκει, καὶ ἔχ ὁ κλίσας με. Hæres. 69. 53. To the same purpose Athanas. de Hum. Nat. susc. & Cyril. Thesaur. l. 11. read it, ὁ πέμψας με πατὴρ. and S. Basil makes Eunomius read it so, in his first Book against him, and with that addition answers it. So the second Confession of the Council of Sirmium, both in the Latine Original, and Greek Translation. S. Hilar. de Syn. S. Athanas. & Socr. l. 2. c. 3. * Joh. 14. 28. * Gal. 4. 4.

2 Cor. 13. 14

1 Cor. 12. 4, 5,
6.

Upon this preeminence (as I conceive) may safely be grounded the congruity of the Divine Mission. We often read that Christ was sent, from whence he bears the name of an *Apostle* himself, as well as those whom he therefore named so, because as the *Father sent him, so sent he them*: The Holy Ghost is also said to be sent, sometimes by the Father, sometimes by the Son: But we * never read that the Father was sent at all, there being an || authority in that Name which seems inconsistent with this Mission. In the Parable, ^a *a certain householder which planted a vineyard first sent his servants to the husbandman, and again other servants, but last of all he sent unto them his Son*: It had been inconsistent even with the literal sense of an historical Parable, as not at all consonant to the rational customs of men, to have said, that last of all the Son sent his Father to them. So God, placing man in the Vineyard of his Church, first sent his servants the Prophets, by whom he ^b *spake at sundry times and in divers manners*; but *in the last days he sent his Son*: And it were as * incongruous and inconsistent with the Divine Generation, that the Son should send the Father into the world. ^c *As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father*, saith our Saviour; intimating, that by whom he lived, by him he was sent, and therefore sent by him because he lived by him, laying his Generation as the proper ground of his Mission. Thus he which begetteth sendeth, and he which is || begotten is sent. ^d *For I am from him, and he hath sent me*, saith the Son: from whom I received my Essence by communication, from him also received I this Commission. As therefore it is more worthy to give than to receive, to send than to be sent; so in respect of the Sonship there is some priority in the Divine Paternity: from whence divers of the * Ancients read that place of S. John with this addition, ^e *The Father (which sent me) is greater than I. He then is that God who sent forth his Son made of a woman, that God who hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father*, So that the authority of sending is in the Father: which therefore ought to be acknowledged, because upon this Mission is founded the highest testimony of his love to man; for *herein is love*, saith S. John, *not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins*.

Again, the dignity of the Father will farther yet appear from the order of the Persons in the blessed Trinity, of which he is undoubtedly the first. For although in some passages of the Apostolical discourses the Son may first be named, (as in that of S. Paul, *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all*, the latter part of which is nothing but an addition unto his constant Benediction;) and in others the Holy Ghost precedes the Son (as, *Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit; and there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord; and there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all*:) yet where the three Persons are barely enumerated, and delivered unto us as the

* Παρρησίας
ὁ κύριος τὴν
συνήθειαν πιστῶν
τοῖς μαθητα-
σὶν αὐτοῦ τὸ λό-
γῳ, πρὸς παλαιοὺς
καὶ τὸν ἡφ' ὧν συ-
νίσταται τὸ
πνεῦμα τὸ ἁ-
γίον. S. Basil.
Epist. 80.

[illegible]

Howsoever, it is most reasonable to assert that there is but one Person who is from none; and the very generation of the Son and procession of the Holy Ghost undeniably prove, that neither of those two can be that Person. For whosoever is generated is from him which is the Genitor, and whosoever proceedeth is from him from whom he proceedeth, whatsoever the nature of the generation or procession be. It followeth therefore that this Person is the *Father*, which name speaks nothing of dependence, nor supposeth any kind of priority in another.

* ὁ θεὸς εἰς ἑαυτὸν
γενόμενος, καὶ πατέρα
γενόμενος ἢ ἀρχὴν
γενόμενος, ὅταν
ἡ πη, ὁ θεός,
ἕως ἀπαύ-
τως καὶ ἀπερ-
σώτως, καὶ ὡς
ὁππότεν ὡς
ἀρεθῶς, καὶ χω-
ρὶς ἡρώματι

From hence it is observed that the name of *God*, taken * absolutely, is often in the Scriptures spoken of the Father: as when we read of *God sending his own Son*; of ^a *the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God*; and generally wheresoever Christ is called the Son of God, or the Word of God, the name of God is to be taken particularly for the Father, because he is no Son but of the Father. From hence he is styled ^b *one God*, ^c *the true God*, ^d *the only true God*, ^e *the || God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ*.

ἡσυχαστικῶς, ἢ πατρίαν δυνάμει. Theod. Abucara Opusc. 42. ^a 2 Cor. 13. 14. ^b 1 Cor. 8. 6. Eph. 4. 6. ^c 1 Thess. 1. 9. ^d Joh. 17. 3. ^e 2 Cor. 1. 3. Eph. 1. 3. || Unxit te Deus, Deus tuus. Id enim quod ait, tuus, ad nativitatem refertur; ceterum non perimit naturam. Et ideo Deus ejus est, qui ex Deo natus in Deum est. Non tamen per id quod Pater Deus est, non & Filius Deus est. Unxit enim te Deus, Deus tuus; designatā videlicet & authoris sui & ex eo geniti significatione, uno eodemque cōsuo utrumque illum in naturā ejusdem & dignitatis nuncupatione constituit. S. Hilari. l. 4. Deo enim ex quo omnia sunt Deus nullus est qui sine initio æternus est. Filio autem Deus Pater est, ex eo enim Deus natus est. Id. pauli p. ft. Cū autem ex Deo Deus est, per id Deus Pater Deo Filio & nativitas ejus Deus est, & naturā Pater, quia Dei nativitas & ex Deo est, & in eo generis est natura quā Deus est. Id. l. 11. So S. Cyril. of Jerusalem, Catech. 11. Θεός ὁ ἡσυχαστής, θεός ὁ ἡσυχαστής. θεὸς ὁ ἡσυχαστής πάντων. θεὸς ὁ ἡσυχαστής καὶ πατὴρ ὁππότεν ἀπαύτως

Which, as it is most true, and so fit to be believed, is also a most necessary truth, and therefore to be acknowledged, for the avoiding * multiplication and plurality of Gods. For if there were more than one which were from none, it could not be denied but there were more Gods than one. Wherefore this || origination in the Divine Paternity hath anciently been looked upon as the assertion of the Unity: and therefore the Son and Holy Ghost hath been believed to be but one God with the Father, because both from the Father, who is one, and so the * union of them.

* Μῆ μοι ἡ πη-
τε, ὁ θεός
κηρύσσας, πολυ-
θεῖαν καὶ αἰ-
γιόλην, ὃ θεός
θεός, ὃ καὶ
θεός πατέρες. ὁ
μὲ ἀρχαίως ἐσα-
γών ὁ θεός, ὁ θεός
κηρύσσας θεός.

S. Basil. Homil. 26. In duobus ingentis diversa Divinitas invenitur, in uno autem genito ex uno ingenito naturalis unitas demonstratur. Fulgen. Resp. contr. Arian. ad Obj. 5. Si quis innascibilem & sine initio dicat Filium, tanquam duo sine principio, & duo innascibilia, & duo innata dicens, duos faciat Deos, Anathema sit, Concil. Sirmi. Deus utique procedens ex Deo secundam personam efficiens, sed non eripiens illud Patri quod unus est Deus. Si enim natus non fuisset, innatus comparatus cum eo qui esset innatus, aequatione in utroque ostensā, duos taceret innatos, & ideo duos faceret Deos. Si non genitus esset, collatis cum eo qui genitus non esset aequales inventi duos Deos merito reddidissent non geniti: atque ideo duos Deos reddidisset Christus, si sine origine esset ut Pater inventus; & ipse principium omnium ut Pater, duo faciens principia, duos ostendisset nobis consequenter & Deos, &c. Novatian. de Trin. c. 31. ἢ ὡς αὐτὸς ὁ μὴ ἀρχὴν, καὶ καὶ τὸ τοῦ θεοῦ. S. Athan. Orat. 5. Τησὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ ὡς ὁ αὐτοῦ λόγος, ὡς ὁ αὐτοῦ θεός, ὡς ὁ αὐτοῦ πνεῦμα καὶ ἀναπαύσας. S. Gregor. Naz. Orat. 29. Ὁ παὶς ὁ αὐτοῦ μὴ ἡ ἀρχὴν, ἐν τῷ τῷ αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἐν τῷ τῷ ἀρχιτυπῶν, μὴ ὁ ἡ ἀρχὴν, ὁ ὁ ἐν τῷ τῷ λόγῳ, ὁ ὁ διαθερίζεται. S. Basil Homil. 26. Patri suo originem suam debens, discordiam Divinitatis de numero duorum Deorum facere non potuit, qui ex illo qui est unus Deus originem nascendo contraxit. Novat. c. 31. Confitemur non Deos duos, sed Deum unum, neque per id non & Deum Dei filium, est enim ex Deo Deus; non innascibiles duos, quia autoritate innascibilitatis Deus unus est. S. Hilari. de Syrod. whise assertionis, Unum Deum esse ex quo omnia, unam virtutem innascibilem, & unam hanc esse sine initio potestatem: which words belong unto the Father, and then it followeth of the Son; Non enim Patri adimitur quod Deus unus est, quia & Filius Deus est. Est enim Deus ex Deo, unus ex uno. Ob id unus Deus, quia ex se Deus. Contra verò non minus per id Filius Deus, quia Pater Deus unus sit. Est enim unigenitus Filius Dei non innascibilis, ut Patri adimat quod Deus unus sit. De Trin. l. 4. * ὡς αὐτὸς ὁ τοῦ τῷ μὴ θεός. ὡς αὐτὸς ὁ πατὴρ, ἐξ ὃ καὶ τῷ ὡς ἀνάγκη τὰ ἐξ ὡς. Greg. Naz. Orat. 32. Unto which words those of Theod. Abucara have relation; Θεός ὁ ἡσυχαστής λέγειται, ἐπειδὴ ἡ ἡσυχία, ἡτοι ἀναπαύσις καὶ ἀνα-
κηρύσσας, ὁ τῷ πατρί ὡς αὐτὸς ὁ πατὴρ ὡς αὐτὸς ὁ θεός. Opusc. 42.

Secondly, It is necessary thus to believe in the *Father*, because our Salvation is propounded to us by an access unto the Father. We are all gone away and fallen from God, and we must be brought to him again. There is no other notion under which we can be brought to God as to be saved, but the notion of the Father; and there is no other person can bring us to the Father, but the Son of that Father: For, as the Apostle teacheth us, *through him we have an access by one Spirit unto the Father*.

Eph. 2. 18.

Having

Having thus described the true nature and notion of the Divine Paternity, in all the several degrees and eminencies belonging to it, I may now clearly deliver, and every particular Christian understand, what it is he speaks, when he makes his Confession in these words, *I believe in God the Father*: by which I conceive him to express thus much.

As I am assured that there is an infinite and Independent Being, which we call a *God*, and that it is impossible there should be more Infinities than one: so I assure my self that this one God is the *Father* of all things, especially of all men and Angels, so far as the mere act of creation may be styled generation; that he is farther yet, and in a more peculiar manner, the *Father* of all those whom he regenerateth by his Spirit, whom he adopteth in his Son, as heirs and co-heirs with him, whom he crowneth with the reward of an eternal inheritance in the heavens. But beyond and far above all this, besides his general off-spring, and peculiar people, *to whom he hath given power to become the sons of God*; I believe him the Father, in a more eminent and transcendent manner, of one singular and proper Son, his own, his beloved, his only-begotten Son: whom he hath not only begotten of the blessed Virgin, by the coming of the Holy Ghost, and the overshadowing of his power; not only sent with special authority as the King of *Israel*; not only raised from the dead, and made heir of all things in his house; but antecedently to all this, hath begotten him by way of eternal generation in the same Deity, and Majesty with himself: by which Paternity, coeval to the Deity, I acknowledge him always, Father, as much as always God. And in this relation, I profess that eminency and priority, that as he is the Original cause of all things as created by him, so is he the fountain of the Son begotten of him, and of the Holy Ghost proceeding from him.

I believe in God the Father Almighty.

After the relation of God's Paternity, immediately followeth the glorious Attribute of his * *Omnipotency*: that as those in Heaven in their Devotions, so we on earth in our confessions might acknowledge that ^a *Holy, holy, holy Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come*; that in our solemn meetings at the Church of God, with the joynt expression and concurring language of the Congregation, we might some way imitate that ^b *voice of a great multitude, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying, Allelujah, for the Lord God Omnipotent reigneth.*

* For the oldest & Shortest Creed had always this Attribute expressed in it. In-
somuch that Παντοκράτωρ was ordinarily by the Ancients taken for the

Father, as Origen. l. 7. adv. Celsum. Ἐχλω ὃ αὐτὸν—ἐκθέσθαι αὐτῶς λέξεται τὰ περὶ φητέας· εἴτ' ἐν αὐτῷ Θεὸς Παντοκράτωρ ἐπηγγέλλετο ὃ ὁ λόγων, εἴτ' ἐν αὐτῷ ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, εἴτ' ἐν αὐτῷ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον λέγων ὃ ὁ Θεὸς δέετο. And according to this general Confession did Polycarpus begin his Prayer at his Martyrdom: Κύριε ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ, ὁ πᾶς ἀγαπῶν καὶ ἐυλογητὴ πατὴρ σου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ πατρὶ. Eccl. Smyrn. Epist. ^a Revel. 4. 8. ^b Revel. 19. 6. Ὁι παρρησίαν εἰληφότες τὸ παντοκράτωρ πατρίαν καλῶν. Constit. Apost. l. 1. Proœm.

This notion of *Almighty* in the *Creed* must certainly be interpreted according to the sense which the original word beareth in the New Testament: and that cannot be better understood than by the *Greek* Writers or Interpreters of the Old, especially when the Notion it self belongs unto the Gospel and the Law indifferently. Now the word which we translate * *Almighty*, the most ancient *Greek* Interpreters used sometimes for the title of God, the *Lord of hosts*, sometimes for his name *Shaddai*, as generally in the book of *Job*: by

* Παντοκράτωρ, translated by Tertul. and S. Aug. Omnipotens, as (Ter-

tullian translates κοσμοκράτορας munditeneantes) by Prudentius, omnipollens; by all, Omnipotens, (as S. Hilary translated κοσμοκράτωρ mundipotentes:) and, as I conceive, it is translated Capax universorum, by the Latin Interpreter of Hermas Primum omnium crede quod unus est Deus, qui omnia creavit, & consummavit, & ex nihilo fecit. Ipse capax universorum, solus inmensus est. l. 2. Mund. 1. Which by the Interpreter of Irenæus is thus translated, Omnium capax, & qui à nemine capitur. l. 4. c. 37.

^a Gen. 2. 1.

^b Isa. 45. 12.

* Κύριος σαβωθ.

|| Εἰ μὴ κύριος σαβωθ ἔγκαι-
τίλειτεν ἡμῖν
σῆμα.

Rom. 9. 29. the
words of Isa. 1.

9 Καὶ αἱ βοαὶ
τῶν θεισάντων
αἰς τὰ ὄτα Κυ-
εἰς σαβωθ εἰ
σεληνύσων.

Jam. 5. 4. which
are the words of
S. James, inre-

lation to Deut. 24. 15.

|| Ἄγιος, ἄγιος, ἄγιος κύριος ὁ Θεὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ.

Revel. 4. 8. which were before in Isaiah. Ἄγιος, ἄγιος, ἄγιος κύριος σαβωθ.

Isa. 6. 3. Τὸ δ' ὅμοιον ἐρῶν καὶ πᾶσι τῷ Σαβωθ οὐνῆς, πολλὰ καὶ ἡ ἐπαδὼν παραλαμ-
βανόμενος ὅτι ἐμετὰ λαμβάνω τὸ ὄνομα αἰς τὸ Κύριος ἡ δυνάμις, ἡ Κύριος ἡ ἐξουσία, ἡ Παντοκράτωρ, (διαφορῶς γὰρ αὐτὸ ἐξέ-
νῃσι τοῖς ἐρῶντες αὐτὸ) ἡ δὲν ποιήσωμεν. Origen. contra Cels. l. 5. * That παντοκράτωρ should have the sig-
nification of government in it, according to the composition in the Greek Language, no man can doubt, who but only considers those
vulgar terms of their Politicks, δημοκρατία, and δεσποκρατία, from whence it appears that μονοκρατία might as well have been
used as μοναρχία; and in that sense αὐτοκράτωρ is the proper title given by the Greeks to the Roman Emperour, not only the later
Historians, but even the Coins of Julius Caesar. Hefsch. Αυτοκράτωρ, αὐτεξουσία, κοσμοκράτωρ. because the Roman Emperour
was Ruler of the known World. So the Devils or Princes of the air are termed by S. Paul κοσμοκράτορες, Eph. 6. 12. which is all
one with ἀρχαὶ τοῦ κόσμου, as will appear Joh. 12. 31. and 14. 30. and 16. 11. As therefore Κράτος signifieth of it self
Rule and Authority, Hefsch. Κράτος, βασιλεία, ἐξουσία. Κράτος, ἀρχή, ἐξουσία. to which sense Eustathius hath observed. Homer
led the following Writers by those words of his, — ὃν δὲ Κράτος αἰὲν ἀΐεν. Iliad. M. τὸ μὲν Κράτος Κυλαμβάνεται
τοῖς ἔσπερον τῷ βασιλείαν Κράτος λέγουσι whence Aeschylus calls Agamemnon and Menelaus διδόνον Κράτος Ἀχαιῶν, and
Sophocles after him, Δικρατῆς Ἀτρεΐδαι. and as Κράτος to rule or govern, (Κρατῆ, κυεῖν, ἀρχή, from whence Κρατύς,
ἀρχων, ἐξουσίαζων.) So also in composition, παντοκράτωρ, the Ruler of all Παντοκράτωρ, ὁ Θεὸς, πάντων Κράτος. Hefsch. Πα-
ντοκρατορία, πανταρχία. Suid. || Αἰρετικοὶ καὶ οἰδισιν ἕνα παντοκράτωρα θεόν. παντοκράτωρ γὰρ ὅτι ὁ πάντων Κράτος
ὁ πάντων ἐξουσίαζων. οἱ δὲ λέγοντες τὸ μὲν τὸ ψυχῆς δεσπότης, τὸ δὲ τὸ σώματος, ἐτέλειον λέγουσιν. ὁ γὰρ ψυχῆς
ἐξουσία ἔχων, Σώματος δὲ ἐξουσία μὴ ἔχων, πῶς παντοκράτωρ, καὶ ὁ δεσπότης Σωμάτων μὴ ἐξουσίαζων ὁ πνέματων,
πῶς παντοκράτωρ; S. Cyril. Catech. 8. Theodorus apud Cl. Alex. p. 804. Ὡς γὰρ τὸ πῦρ ἐξουσίαζον τῷ στοιχείῳ, καὶ πάν-
των Κράτος, ὅτι καὶ ὁ Θεὸς παντοδυναμὸς καὶ παντοκράτωρ, ὁ δυνάμει Κρατῆσαι, ποιῆσαι, τρέφειν, αὔξειν, σῶζειν,
Σώματος, καὶ ψυχῆς ἐξουσία ἔχων. Unus est Dominus Jesus Christus per quem Deus Pater dominatum omnium tenet;
unde & sequens sermo Omnipotentem pronunciat Dominum. Omnipotens autem ab eo dicitur, quod omnium teneat po-
testatem. Ruffin. in Symb.

* Ἐξουσία.

Luke 12. 5.

Acts 1. 7.

Jude 25.

Revel 5. 13.

|| Ὡς ὁ κύριος, δεσπο-

της ἐν μὲν τὸ
κυεῖν καὶ πρώ-

τως ὄν, ἐν τῇ
χρηστέᾳ, καὶ
ὅς πάντων δε-

σπότης τὰ γὰρ
σύμμετρα δέ-

λασα. Phot.

Ep. 162.

the first they seem to signifie the Rule and Dominion which God hath over all; by the second, the strength, force, or power by which he is able to perform all things. ^a *The heavens and the earth were finished, saith Moses, and all the host of them:* and he which begun them, he which finished them, is the Ruler and Commander of them. Upon the right of Creation doth he justly challenge this dominion. ^b *I have made the earth, and created man upon it; I, even my hands have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded.* And on this dominion or command doth he raise the title of * *the Lord of hosts;* which, though preserved in the || original language both by S. Paul and S. James, yet by S. John is turned into that word which we translate *Almighty*. Wherefore from the use of the sacred Writers, from the * notation of the word in Greek, and from the testimony of the ancient || Fathers, we may well ascribe unto God the Father, in the explication of this Article, the dominion over all, and the rule and government of all.

This authority or power properly potestative is attributed unto God in the sacred * Scriptures: from whence those || names or titles which most aptly and fully express dominion are frequently given unto him; and the rule, empire, or government of the world is acknowledged to be wholly in him, as necessarily following that natural and eternal right of dominion.

What the nature of this authoritative power is, we shall the more clearly understand, if we first divide it into three degrees or branches of it: the first whereof we may conceive, a right of making and framing any thing which he willeth, in any manner as it pleaseth him, according to the absolute freedom of his own will; the second, a right of having and possessing all things so made and framed by him, as his own, properly belonging to him, as to the Lord and master of them, by virtue of direct dominion; the third, a right of using and disposing all things so in his possession, according to his own pleasure. The first of these we mention only for the necessity of it, on the dependence of the other two upon it. God's actual dominion being no otherways necessary, than upon supposition of a precedent act of Creation; because nothing, before it hath a being, can belong to any one, neither can any propriety be imagined in that which hath no entity.

But the second branch, or absolute dominion of this *Almighty*, is farther to be considered in the Independency and Infinity of it. First, it is independent in a double respect, in reference both to the original, and the use thereof. For God hath received no authority from any, because he hath all power originally

originally in himself, and hath produced all things by the act of his own will, without any Commander, Counsellor, or Coadjutor. Neither doth the use or exercise of this dominion depend upon any one, so as to receive any direction or regulation, or to render any account of the administration of it; as being illimited, absolute, and supreme, and so the fountain from whence all dominion in any other is derived. Wherefore he being the ^a God of Gods, is also the Lord of Lords and King of Kings, the only Potentate; because he alone hath all power of himself, and whosoever else hath any, hath it from him, either by donation or permission.

The Infinity of God's Dominion, if we respect the Object, appears in the amplitude or extension; if we look upon the Manner, in the plenitude or perfection; if we consider the Time, in the eternity of duration. The amplitude of the Object is sufficiently evidenced by those appellations which the holy Writ ascribeth unto the Almighty, calling him the ^b Lord of heaven, the Lord of the whole earth, the Lord of heaven and earth; under which two are comprehended all things both in heaven and earth. This Moses taught the distrustful Israelites in the Wilderness: ^c Behold the heaven and the heaven of heavens is the Lord's thy God, the earth also with all that is therein. With these words David glorifieth God: ^d The heavens are thine, the earth also is thine; so acknowledging his dominion: as for the world and the fulness thereof, thou hast founded them; so expressing the foundation or ground of that dominion. And yet more fully, at the dedication of the Offerings for the building of the Temple, to shew that what they gave was of his own, he saith, ^e Thine, O Lord, is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the Majesty: for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is thine. Thine is the kingdom, O Lord, and thou art exalted as head above all. Both riches and honour come of thee, and thou reignest over all. If then we look upon the Object of God's Dominion, it is of that amplitude and extension, that it includeth and comprehendeth all things; so that nothing can be imagined which is not his, belonging to him as the true owner and proprietor, and subject wholly to his will as the sole governour and disposer: in respect of which universal power we must confess him to be Almighty.

If we consider the manner and nature of this Power, the Plenitude thereof or perfection will appear: for as in regard of the extension, he hath power over all things; so in respect of the intension, he hath all power over every thing, as being absolute and supreme. This God challenged to himself, when he catechised the Prophet *Jeremy* in a Potter's house, saying, ^f O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the Lord. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in my hand, O house of Israel. That is, God hath as absolute power and dominion over every person, over every Nation and Kingdom on the Earth, as the Potter hath over the pot he maketh, or the clay he mouldeth. Thus are we wholly at the disposal of his will, and our present and future condition framed and ordered by his free, but wise and just, decrees. Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? And can that earth-artificer have a freer power over his brother potsherd, (both being made of the same metal) than God hath over him, who by the strange fecundity of his omnipotent power, first made the clay out of nothing, and then him out of that?

The duration of God's dominion must likewise necessarily be eternal, if any thing which is be immortal. For, being every thing is therefore his, because it received its being from him, and the continuation of the creature is as much from him as the first production; it followeth that so long as it is continued it must be his, and consequently, being some of his Creatures are im-

^a Deut. 10. 17.

Psal. 136. 3.

¹ Tim. 6. 15.

μόνῳ θεῷ δυνά-

της. Sap. Syr. 46.

6. 34. 15. 6. 21.

2 Mac. 15. 29.

ὁ δυνάστης.

23. 24. 25. 26.

3. 24. 6. 24. 25. 26.

τῶν πάντων, καὶ

πάντων τῶν ἐν τῇ

γῇ. 24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

24. 25. 26.

^a 1 Tim. 1. 17.
Τὸ βασίλειόν σου
αἰώνιον.

^b Pſal. 145. 13.
יְיָ כִּדְבָר
לְעוֹלָמִים
LXX. βασιλεία
ταύτων σου
αἰώνιον.

^c Exod. 15. 18.
יְיָ לְעוֹלָמִים
LXX. ἐπὶ αἰῶ-
να καὶ ἔτι.

^d Hier. in secu-
lum & ultra So
Aquila, Theod.
and the fifth E-
dit. in Pſal. 21.
4. So the LXX.
again, Dam. 12.
7. καὶ τὸ αἰ-
ὼν καὶ ἔτι and
Mich. 4. 5. καὶ
τὸ αἰὼν καὶ ἐ-
πὶ αἰῶνα.

^e Pſal. 16. 2.
Ille nostra ser-
vitus non in-
digeret, nos verò

dominatione illius indigemus, ut operetur & custodiat nos: & ideo verus & solus est Dominus, quia non illi ad suam, sed
ad nostram utilitatem salutemque servimus. Nam si nobis indigeret eo ipso non verus Dominus esset, cum per nos ejus ad-
juvaretur necessitas, sub qua & ipse serviret. S. Aug. de Gen. ad lit. l. 8. c. 11. Dixi Domino, Deus meus es tu, quare? quoniam
bonorum non eges Ille non eget nostri, nos egemus ipsius; ideo verus Dominus. Nam tu non valde verus Dominus servi
tui; ambo homines, ambo egentes Deo. Si verò putas egere tui servum tuum, ut des panem, eges & tu servi tui, ut ad-
juvet labores tuos. Uterque vestrum altero vestrum indiget: itaque nullus vestrum verè dominus, & nullus vestrum verè
servus. Audi verum Dominum, ejus verus servus, Dixi Domino, Deus meus es tu: quare tui dominus? quoniam bonorum
meorum non eges. Id. ad Pſal. 69. * Τιμὴ ποιῆται τὸ ἀνευδὲς τὸ ἥδ' ἀπ' ἐμῆς πλεονουσίαν ἀγαθῶν ἡσυχάζει.

^f Hierocl. in Auea Car. And again, "Ὅστις τιμᾷ τὸν Θεὸν ὡς προσδεόμενον, εὖ καὶ λελήθεν εἰς μὲν τὸ ἑαυτὸν τὰ Θεοῦ
κέρματα.

But though the universal Cause made all things for the benefit of some crea-
tures framed by him, yet hath he made them ultimately for himself; and
God is as universally the final as the efficient cause of his operations. The
Apostle hath taught us, that not only ^a of him, and by him, as the first Author,
but also ^b to him, and for him, as the ultimate end, are all things. And 'tis
one of the proverbial sentences of Solomon, ^c The Lord hath made all things
for himself, yea even the wicked for the day of evil. For though he cannot re-
ceive any real benefit or utility from the creature, yet he can and doth in a
manner receive that which hath some similitude or affinity with it. Thus
God ^d rejoiceth at the effects of his wisdom, power and goodness, and taketh
delight in the works of his hands. Thus doth he order and dispose of all
things unto his own glory, which redoundeth from the demonstration of his
Attributes.

An explicit belief of this authoritative power and absolute dominion of
the Almighty is necessary, first for the breeding in us an awful reverence of his
Majesty, and entire subjection to his will. For to the highest excellency the
greatest honour, to the * supreme authority the most exact obedience is no
more than duty. If God be our absolute Lord, we his servants and vassals,
then is there a right in him to require of us whatsoever we can perform, and
an || obligation upon us to perform whatsoever he commandeth. Whosoever
doth otherwise, while he confesseth, denieth him; while he acknowledgeth
him with his tongue, he sets his hand against him. ^d Why call ye me Lord,
Lord, saith our Saviour, and do not the things which I say?

Secondly, this belief is also necessary to breed in us equanimity and pati-
ence in our sufferings, to prevent all murmuring, repining, and objecting
against

^a Rom. 11. 36.
Heb. 2. 11.
^b 1 Cor. 8. 6.
^c Prov. 16. 4.

^d Pſal. 104. 31.

* Hm. Ia. μ'.
Ἡμεῖς ὃ μὲν
γάλοισιν διδ-
ασκῶμεθα. ὅτι
ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ
ἐκείνου ἐστὶν
ἡ ἀνάστασις ἡ-
μῶν.

|| Εὐοὶ τίλεις
ὅτι καὶ καλῶς
γὰρ καὶ νύμω
καὶ τὴν ἀνάστα-
σιν ἡμῶν ἐκεί-
νου ἐστὶν ἡ ἀνά-
στασις ἡμῶν.

Lord, saith our Saviour, and do not the things which I say?

Secondly, this belief is also necessary to breed in us equanimity and pati-
ence in our sufferings, to prevent all murmuring, repining, and objecting
against

Lord, saith our Saviour, and do not the things which I say?

Secondly, this belief is also necessary to breed in us equanimity and pati-
ence in our sufferings, to prevent all murmuring, repining, and objecting
against

Lord, saith our Saviour, and do not the things which I say?

Secondly, this belief is also necessary to breed in us equanimity and pati-
ence in our sufferings, to prevent all murmuring, repining, and objecting
against

Lord, saith our Saviour, and do not the things which I say?

Secondly, this belief is also necessary to breed in us equanimity and pati-
ence in our sufferings, to prevent all murmuring, repining, and objecting
against

Lord, saith our Saviour, and do not the things which I say?

Secondly, this belief is also necessary to breed in us equanimity and pati-
ence in our sufferings, to prevent all murmuring, repining, and objecting
against

against the actions or determinations of God, as knowing that he, who is absolute Lord, cannot abuse his power; he, whose will is a law to us, cannot do any thing unwisely or unjustly. ^a *Let the potsherd strive with the potsherd of the earth: shall the clay say to him that fashioneth it, What makest thou?* But let the man after God's own heart rather teach us humble and religious silence. ^b *I was dumb, saith he, and opened not my mouth, because thou didst it.* When *Shimei* cast stones at him, and cursed him, let us learn to speak as he then spake; ^c *The Lord hath said unto him, Curse David: who shall then say, Wherefore hast thou done so?*

^a *Isai. 45. 9.*

^b *Psal. 39. 9.*

^c *2 Sam. 16. 10.*

Thirdly, the belief of God's absolute dominion is yet farther necessary to make us truly and sufficiently sensible of the benefits we receive from him, so as by a right value and estimation of them to understand how far we stand obliged to him. No man can duely prize the blessings of Heaven, but he which acknowledgeth they might justly have been denied him: nor can any be sufficiently thankful for them, except it be confessed that he ought him nothing who bestowed them.

But as the original word for *Almighty* is not put only for the *Lord of Hosts*, but often also for the *Lord Shaddai*: so we must not restrain the signification to the power authoritative, but extend it also to that power which is properly operative and executive. In the title of the *Lord of Sabaoth* we understand the rule and dominion of God, by which he hath a right of governing all: in the name *Shaddai* we apprehend an infinite force and strength, by which he is able to work and perform all things. For whether we take this word in * composition, as signifying the *All-sufficient*; whosoever is able to suppeditate all things to the sufficing all, must have an infinite power: or whether we deduce it from the || Root denoting *vastation* or *destruction*; whosoever can destroy the being of all things, and reduce them unto nothing, must have the same power which originally produced all things out of nothing, and that is infinite. Howsoever, the first notion of *Almighty* necessarily inferreth the second, and the infinity of God's dominion speaketh him infinitely * powerful in operation. Indeed in earthly dominions, the strength of the Governour is not in himself, but in those whom he governeth: and he is a powerful Prince whose Subjects are numerous. But the King of kings hath in himself all power of execution, as well as right of dominion. Were all the force and strength of a Nation in the person of the King, as the authority is, obedience would not be arbitrary, nor could rebellion be successful: whereas experience teacheth us that the most puissant Prince is compelled actually to submit, when the stronger part of his own people hath taken the boldness to put a force upon him. But we must not imagine that the Governour of the world ruleth only over them which are willing to obey, or that any of his Creatures may dispute his commands with safety, or cast off his yoke with impunity. And if his dominion be unconquerable, it is because his power is irresistible. For man is not more inclinable to obey God than man, but God is more powerful to exact subjection, and to vindicate rebellion. In respect of the infinity, and irresistibility of which active power we must acknowledge him *Almighty*; and so, according to the most vulgar acception, give the second explication of his || *Omnipotency*.

* So R. Solomon will have it compounded of the pronoun, *די שיעדי* באל חותי לכך בריה because in God there is sufficiency, that is, sufficient power over every creature: from whence the LXX. *Ruth. 1. 20, 21. Job 21. 15. & 31. 2. translate it* *inavde*, as *Sym. Job 22. 3. and Aquila with him, Ezek. 1. 24. || שרר* *vastavit, destruxit, perdidit; from whence שרר the destroyer and because utter destruction requireth power equivalent to production, the Omnipotent; from whence the LXX. Job 8. 3.*

translate it *πάλιν ποιῶν*. And this Etymology rather than the former seemeth to be confirmed by the Prophet *Isai. 13. 6.* How ye, for the day of the Lord is at hand, *בשר משרי יבוא*. It shall come as a destruction from the Almighty (*destroyer*) * *Himer* hath well joyned these two. *1a. 8. 9. Ω παῖς ἡμετέρος κερύειν, ὑπὸ τῆς κρημνίστου, Εὐ τοῦ καὶ ἡμῶν ἰσχυροῦς ὁ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐκ ἐκείνου.* || Hoc nisi credamus, periclitatur ipsum nostræ fidei Confessionis initium, quā nos in Deum Patrem Omnipotentem credere cōstitimur. Neque enim veraciter ob aliud vocatur Omnipotēns, nisi quia quicquid vult potest, nec voluntate cuiuspiam creaturæ voluntatis omnipotentis impeditur effectus. *S. Aug. Enchir. c. 96.*

* But

* Article 1.

Πιστεύω ἐν
Θεῷ πατρί
παντοκράτο-
ρι. Αἰ. 5. κα-
θ' ἑαυτὸν ἐν
ἑξῆς Θεὸς πα-
τερ τὰ το
ῦ αἰῶνος. as it
is in the ancient
Copy of the Creed
taken out of the
Library of Ben-
net College, and
set forth by the
Archbishop of
Armagh.

As Theophi-
lus Bishop of An-
tioch, giving
account of those
words which
are attributed
unto God, as
Θεὸς καὶ
ὁ Θεὸς καλεῖται
he is called παν-
τοκράτωρ, ὅτι
αὐτὸς τὰ πάν-
τα κρείσσει καὶ
ἐμμένει. καὶ τὰ
γὰρ ὅσα ἡμεῖς
ἐσμεν, καὶ τὰ
βλάστησας
καὶ τὰ πεί-
ρα. αἰ. 5. οἰκ-
ωμένους ἐν τῇ
Χρυσ. αὐτὸν ὁ
Ad Ant. l. 1.

^a Prov. 30. 4.

^b Job. 40. 12.

* As Greg. Nyss.

Οὐκ ἔστι τὸν
παντοκράτω-
ρος αὐτοῦ
αὐτοῦ, τὰ το
ῦ αἰῶνος
τὰ πάντα
τὰ Θεὸν ἐν τῷ
ᾧ. Cuius est
Neither says he,
would God be
termed παντο-

κράτωρ, καὶ μὴ πᾶσι
καὶ ἡμῖν καὶ τοῖς
ἄλλοις. contra Eunom. l. 1.

Creatoris Omni-
potentia, & Omnipotentis atque omnipotentis virtus, est causa subsistendi omni creaturæ. Quæ virtus ab eis quæ creata sunt
regendi si aliquando cessaret, simul & illorum cessaret species, omnisq; natura concideret. S. Aug. in Genes. l. 4. c. 12. ^c Acts
17. 25, 28. ^d Wisd. 11. 25. ^e Neh. 9. 5.

* But because this word *Almighty* is twice repeated in the Creed, once in this first Article, and again in the sixth, where *Christ* is represented *sitting at the right hand of God the Father Almighty*; and although in our *English* and the *Latin* the same word be expressed in both places, yet in the ancient *Greek* Copies there is a manifest distinction; being the word in the first Article may equally comprehend God's power in operation, as well as authority in dominion, whereas that in the sixth speaketh only infinity of power, without relation to authority or dominion: I shall therefore reserve the explication of the latter unto its proper place, designing to treat particularly of God's infinite power where it is most peculiarly expressed; and so conclude briefly with two other interpretations which some of the Ancients have made of the original word, belonging rather to Philosophy than Divinity, though true in both. For || some have stretched this word *Almighty*, according to the *Greek* notation, to signify that God holdeth, incircleth, and containeth all things. ^a *Who hath gathered the wind in his fists; who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? who but God?* ^b *Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure? who but he?* Thus then may he be called *Almighty*, as holding, containing, and comprehending all things.

* Others extend it farther yet, beyond that of containing or comprehension, to a more immediate influence of sustaining or preservation. For the same power which first gave Being unto all things, continueth the same Being unto all. ^c *God giveth to all life, and breath, and all things. In him we live, move, and have our being*, saith the strangest Philosopher that ever entered *Athens*, the first expositor of that blind inscription, *To the unknown God*. ^d *How could any thing have endured, if it had not been thy will? or been preserved, if not called by thee?* as the wisdom of the *Jews* confesseth. Thus did the *Levites* stand and blest: ^e *Thou even thou, art Lord alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth and all things that are therein, the sea and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all*. Where the continual conservation of the creature is in an equal latitude attributed unto God with their first production. Because there is as absolute a necessity of preserving us from returning unto nothing by annihilation, as there was for first bestowing an existence on us by creation. And in this sense God is undoubtedly *Almighty*, in that he doth sustain, uphold, and constantly preserve all things in that Being which they have.

From whence we may at last declare what is couched under this Attribute of God, how far this Omnipotency extends it self, and what every Christian is thought to profess, when he addeth this part of the first Article of his Creed, *I believe in God the Father ALMIGHTY*.

As I am perswaded of an infinite and independent essence, which I term a God, and of the mystery of an eternal generation by which that God is a Father: so I assure my self that Father is not subject to infirmities of age, nor is there any weakness attending on the *Ancient of days*; but, on the contrary, I believe Omnipotency to be an essential attribute of his Deity, and that not only in respect of operative and active power, (concerning which I shall have occasion to express my faith hereafter) but also in regard of power authoritative, in which I must acknowledge his antecedent and eternal right of making

king what, and when, and how he pleased, of possessing whatsoever he maketh by direct dominion, of using and disposing as he pleaseth all things which he so possesseth. This dominion I believe most absolute in respect of its Independency, both in the Original, and the Use or exercise thereof: this I acknowledge Infinite for amplitude or extension, as being a power over all things without exception; for plenitude or perfection, as being all power over every thing without limitation; for continuance or duration, as being eternal without end or conclusion. Thus *I believe in God the Father Almighty,*

Maker of Heaven and Earth.

Although this last part of the First Article were not expressed in the * ancient Creeds, yet the sense thereof was delivered in the || first Rules of Faith, and at last these particular words inserted both in the Greek and Latin Confessions. And indeed the work of Creation most properly followeth the Attribute of Omnipotency, as being the foundation of the first, and the demonstration of the second explication of it. As then we believe there is a God, and that God Almighty; as we acknowledge that same God to be the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and in him of us: so we also confess that the same God the Father made both heaven and earth. For the full explication of which operation, it will be sufficient, first, to declare the latitude of the Object, what is comprehended under the terms of *heaven and earth*; secondly, to express the nature of the action, the true notion of creation, by which they were made; and thirdly, to demonstrate the Person to whom this operation is ascribed.

* For we find it not mentioned by S. Augustine de Fide & Symbolo; neither hath Rufinus expounded it in the Aquileian, or noted it to be found in the Roman or Oriental Creeds. Leo, reciting the three first Articles in his Epistle to Flavianus, maketh no mention of it. Epist. 10. Ma-

ximus Taurinensis hath it not in Traditione Symboli, nor Petrus Chrysologus in his Sermon, amongst six several expositions. It is not in the Homilies of Eusebius Gallicanus, or the Exposition of Venantius Fortunatus. Marcellus Bishop of Ancyra left it not at Rome with Julius: Nor did Arius in his Catholick Confession unto Constantine acknowledge it. Neither are the words to be found in the Latin or Greek Copy of the Creed written about the beginning of the eighth Century, and published out of the MSS. by the most Reverend and Learned Archbishop of Armagh; or in that which Etherius and Beatus produced against Elipandus Archbishop of Toledo, towards the end of the seventh Century. || As in that delivered by Irenæus, Εἰς ἓνα θεὸν πατέρα παντοκράτορα, ὃ ποιητὴν τῆς οὐρανόθεν καὶ τῆς γῆς καὶ τὰς θαλάσσας, καὶ πάντα τὰ ἐν αὐτοῖς. Adv. Hæc. l. 1. c. 2. And that by Tertul. Unum omnino Deum esse, nec alium præter mundi conditorem, qui universa de nihilo produxerit. De præscr. adv. Hæc. c. 13. And that under the name of Novatian, not in formal words, but with an (id est) by way of explication. Regula exigit veritatis ut primo omnium credamus in Deum Patrem & Dominum Omnipotentem, id est, rerum omnium perfectissimum conditorem, qui cælum alta sublimitate suspenderit, terram dejecta mole solidavit, maria soluto liquore diffudit, & hæc omnia propriis & condignis instrumentis & ornata & plena digessit. De Trin. c. 1. It was also observed by Origen, that the Christians were wont most frequently to mention God under that as the most common title. Ἡ ὑποδοχὴς ὁμολογεῖται τὸ κοινὸν ὄνομα, τὸ Θεός, ἢ καὶ ὁ πατριάρχης, ὁ δημιουργὸς ὁ δὼν, ὁ ποιητὴς οὐρανοῦ καὶ γῆς. Adv. Celsum, l. 1. Eusebius delivered the first Article thus in his Confession to the Nicene Council: Πιστεύω εἰς ἓνα θεὸν πατέρα παντοκράτορα, ὃ ἡ ἀπάντων ὁρατῶν τε καὶ ἀόρατων ποιητὴν. and that Council expressed the same without alteration in their Creed. But after the Nicene Council, we find added τοῦτων οὐρανοῦ καὶ γῆς, by S. Cyril of Jerusalem in his Catechism, and Epiphanius in Ancorato: which addition was received, confirmed and transmitted to us by the Council of Constantinople. By which means at last we find this Article thus expressed in the Western Confessions, Credo in Deum Patrem omnipotentem, creatorem cœli & terræ.

For the first, I suppose it cannot be denied as the sense of the Creed, that under the terms of *heaven and earth* are comprehended all things; because the first Rules of Faith did so express it, and the most ancient Creeds had either instead of these words, or together with them, *the maker of all things visible and invisible*, which being terms of immediate contradiction, must consequently be of universal comprehension; nor is there any thing imaginable which is not visible, or invisible. Being then these were the words of the Nicene Creed; being the addition of *heaven and earth* in the Constantinopolitan could be no diminution to the former, which they still retained together with them, saying, *I believe in one God the Father Almighty, maker of heaven and earth, and of all things visible and invisible*; it followeth, that they which in the Latin Church made use only of this last addition, could not choose but take it in the full latitude of the first expression.

And

But as the Apostle hath taught us to reason, *When he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him*; so when we say, all things were made by God, it is as manifest that he is excepted who made all things. And then the Proposition is clearly thus delivered; All beings whatsoever beside God were made. As we read in S. John concerning the Word, that *the world was made by him*; and in more plain and exprefs words before, *All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made*. Which is yet farther illustrated by S. Paul: *For by him were all things created that are in heaven and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers; all things were created by him*. If then there be nothing imaginable which is not either in heaven or in earth, nothing which is not either visible or invisible, then is there nothing beside God which was not made by God.

This then is the unquestionable doctrine of the Christian Faith, That the vast capacious frame of the World, and every thing any way contained and existing in it, hath not its essence from or of it self, nor is of existence absolutely necessary; but what it is, it hath not been, and that being which it hath was made, framed and constituted by another. And as *every house is builded by some man*; for we see the Earth bear no such creature of it self; Stones do not grow into a wall, or first hew and square, then unite and fasten themselves together in their generation; Trees sprout not cross like dry and sapless beams, nor do spars and tyles spring with a natural uniformity into a roof, and that out of stone and mortar: these are not the works of Nature, but superstructions and additions to her, as the supplies of Art, and the testimonies of the understanding of Man, the great Artificer on earth: So if the World it self be but an* house, if the Earth, which^a *hangeth upon nothing*, be the foundation, and the glorious spheres of Heaven the roof, (which hath been delivered as the most universal Hypothesis) if this be the habitation of an infinite Intelligence, the || Temple of God; then must we acknowledge the world was built by him, and, consequently, that *he which built all things is God*.

From hence appears the truth of that distinction, Whatsoever hath any being is either made or not made: whatsoever is not made, is God; whatsoever is not God, is made. One uncreated and independent essence; all other depending on it, and created by it. One of eternal and necessary existence; all other indifferent, in respect of actual existing, either to be or not to be, and that indifferency determined only by the free and voluntary act of the first Cause.

Now because to be thus made includes some imperfection, and among the parts of the world some are more glorious than others; if those which are most perfect presuppose a maker, then can we not doubt of a creation where we find far less perfection. This house of God, though uniform, yet is not all of the same materials, the footstool and the throne are not of the same mould; there is a vast difference between the heavenly expansions. This first aerial Heaven, where God setteth up his pavilion, where^b *he maketh the clouds his chariot, and walketh upon the wings of the wind*, is not so far inferior in place as it is in glory to the next, the seat of the Sun and Moon, the two great lights, and Stars innumerable, far greater than the one of them. And yet that second Heaven is not so far above the first as beneath the^c *third*, into which S. Paul was caught. The brightness of the Sun doth not so far surpass the blackness of a wandering cloud, as the glory of that Heaven of presence surmounts the fading beauty of the starry firmament. For in this great Tem-

2 Cor. 1. 27.

Joh. 1. 10 3.

Col. 1. 16.

Heb. 3. 4.

*Ο οὐρανός
ἐστὶν οὐρανός
καὶ ἡ γῆ ἀπὸ οὐρανοῦ
καὶ τῆς γῆς οὐρανός
ἐστὶν. Philo de
sinn.

Κόσμος ἐν
πνεύματι, καὶ ἐν
τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, καὶ ἐν
τῇ γῇ. Id. de
Plant. Noe.

Θεὸς τὸ μέγιστον
ὅς ἐστιν οὐρανός,
καὶ ἡ γῆ, καὶ οὐρανός,
καὶ ἡ γῆ. Id. de
Mundi Incorr.

^a Job 26. 7.
|| Lucianus calls
the Heavens
mundi magni
num & versa-
tile templum,
l. 5.

Τὸ ἀνωτάτω
καὶ πρὸς ἀλή-
θειαν ἐστὶν
ἐννοούμενον
ὅτι οὐρανός
καὶ ἡ γῆ.
D. Philo de
Mmarch.

^b Psal. 104. 3.

^c 2 Cor. 12. 2.

ple of the world, in which the Son of God is the High Priest, the Heaven which we see is but the Veil, and that which is above, the Holy of Holies. This Veil indeed is rich and glorious, but one day to be rent, and then to admit us into a far greater glory, even to the Mercy-seat and Cherubins. For this third Heaven is the ^a proper habitation of the blessed Angels, which constantly attend upon the Throne. And if those most glorious and happy spirits, those ^b morning stars which sang together, those sons of God which shouted for joy when the foundations of the earth were laid, if they and their habitation were made; then can we no ways doubt of the production of all other creatures, so much inferiour unto them.

^a Ἰδὲν ἐν κλη-
ροῖς.
Jude v. 6.
Job 38. 7, 4.

Psal. 104. 4.

Amos 4. 13.
Job 28. 25.

Forasmuch then as the Angels are termed the *sons of God*, it sufficiently denoteth that they are from him, not of themselves; all filiation inferring some kind of production: And being God hath but one proper and only-begotten Son, whose propriety and singularity consisteth in this, that he is of the same increated essence with the Father, all other off-spring must be made, and consequently even the Angels created sons; of whom the Scripture speaking saith, *Who maketh his Angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire*. For although those words, as first spoken by the Psalmist, do rather express the nature of the wind and lightning: yet being the Authour of the Epistle to the Hebrews hath applied the same to the Angels properly so called, we cannot but conclude upon his authority, that the same God who created the wind, and made a way for the lightning of the thunder, hath also produced those glorious spirits; and as he furnished them with that activity there expressed, so did he frame the subject of it, their immaterial and immortal essence.

If then the Angels and their proper habitation, the far most eminent and illustrious parts of the World, were made; if only to be made be one character of imperfection; much more must we acknowledge all things of inferiour nature to have dependence on their universal Cause, and consequently this great Universe, or, all things, to be made, beside that one who made them.

This is the first part of our Christian Faith, against some of the ancient Philosophers, who were so wildly fond of those things they see, that they imagined * the Universe to be infinite and eternal, and, what will follow from it, to be even God himself. 'Tis true that the most ancient of the Heathen were not of this opinion, but || all the Philosophy for many Ages delivered the World to have been made.

* Mundum, &
hoc quod no-
mine alio coe-
lum appellare
libuit, cujus
circumflexu re-
guntur cuncta,

numen esse credi par est aeternum, immensum, neque genitum, neque interitum unquam. *Plin. Nat. Hist. l. 2. c. 1.* || Ἰερὸν μὲν ἔνταυτες εἶναι φασιν, says Aristotle, *De Caelo, l. 1. c. 10.* confessing it the general opinion, that the World was made. Which was so ancient a Tradition of all the first Philosophers, that from Linus, Musaeus, Orpheus, Homer, Hesiod and the rest, they all mentioned the Original of the world, entitling their Books Κοσμογονία, or Θεογονία, or the like. Εἰσὶ γὰρ τινες οἱ φασιν εἶναι ἀρχὴν τῆς κόσμου, ἀλλὰ πάντα γίνεσθαι ἡρώδου, ἢ τὰ μὲν ἀρχαῖα διακρίνει, τὰ δὲ πάλιν φησὶν εἶναι μάλιστα μὲν οἱ παῖδες Ἡσίοδου, ὅτι, ἢ καὶ ἄλλων οἱ πρῶτοι φυσιολογισταί, says Aristotle, *de Caelo, l. 3. c. 1.* In which words he manifestly attributes the doctrine of the Creation of the World not only to Hesiod, but to all the first natural Philosophers: which learning, beginning with Prometheus the first Professor of that Science, continued in that family amongst the Atlantiads, who all successively delivered that truth. After them the Ionian Philosophy did acknowledge it, and the Italian received it by Pythagoras, whose Scholars all maintained it beside Ocellus Lucanus, the first of them that fancied the World not made, whom Plato, though he much esteemed him, yet followed not; for there is nothing more evident than that he held the world was made. Λέγουσιν δὲ, διὰ τὴν αἰτίαν ᾗ ἔστιν καὶ τὸ πᾶν τόδε ὁ θεὸς αἰετῶς ὡρίσθην, ἀγαθὸς ὢν. In which words he delivers not only the generation of the Universe, but also the true cause thereof, which is the goodness of God. For he which asks this plain and clear question, πότερον ὢν αἰετῶς, ἢ οὐκ αἰετῶς ἐγένετο, καὶ ἀρχὴν τῆς κόσμου, ἢ γένεσθαι; and answers the question briefly with a γένεσθαι. He which gives this general rule upon it, πᾶσι δ' αὖ ἡρώδου φασὶν ὅτι αἰτίαν τινὲς ἀνέχουσιν τῆς γένεσθαι, and then immediately concludes, τὸν μὲν ἔνταυτες καὶ παλαιὰ πᾶσι τὰ πάντες ἀρῶν τι ἔργον, καὶ ἀρῶν αἰετῶς πάντας ἀδωκῶν λέγειν. cannot, (notwithstanding all the shifts of his Greek Expositors) be imagined to have conceived the world not made. And Aristotle, who best understood him, tells us clearly his opinion ἐν τῷ Τιμαίῳ, from whence I cited the precedent words, ἐπεὶ γὰρ φησι καὶ ἐξ ἀνάγκης (where by the way observe that in Plato's *Timaeus* ἐξ ἀνάγκης and κόσμος are made synonymous) καὶ οὐκ ἐκ βλαπτείν.

When this tradition of the Creation of the world was delivered in all places down successively by those which seriously considered the frame of all things, and the difference of the most ancient Poets and Philosophers from
Moses

petty generations, or that the World was not some other way actually produced, this Argument doth not endeavour to infer, nor can any other prove it.

The next Foundation upon which they cast off the constant doctrine of their Predecessors, was that general Assertion, That it is * impossible for any thing to be produced out of nothing, or to be reduced unto nothing: from whence it will inevitably follow, that the matter of this World hath always been, and must always be. The clear refutation of which difficulty requires an explication of the manner how the World was made: the second part before propounded for the exposition of this Article.

Now that the true nature and manner of this Action may be so far understood as to declare the Christian Faith, and refute the errors of all opposers, it will be necessary to consider it first with reference to the Object or Effect; secondly, in relation to the Cause or Agent; thirdly, with respect unto the Time or Origination of it.

The Action by which the Heaven and Earth were made, considered in reference to the effect, I conceive to be the production of their total Being; so that whatsoever entity they had when made, had no real existence before they were so made. And this manner of production we usually term *Creation*, as excluding all concurrence of any material cause, and all dependence of any kind of subject, as presupposing no privation, as including no motion, as signifying a production out of nothing; || that is, by which something is made, and not any thing preceding out of which 'tis made. This is the proper and peculiar sense of the word *Creation*: not that it signifies so much by virtue of its origination or vulgar use in the * *Latine* tongue; nor that the *Hebrew* word used by *Moses*, *In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth*, hath of it self any such peculiar acception. For it is often used || synonymously with words which signify any kind of production or formation, and by it self it seldom denotes a production out of nothing, or proper creation, but most frequently the making of one substance out of another preexisting, as the ^a fishes of the water, and ^b man of the dust of the earth; the ^c renovating or restoring any thing to its former perfection, for want of *Hebrew* words in composition; or, lastly, the doing some new or * wonderful work, the producing some strange and admirable effect, as the ^d opening the mouth of the earth, and the signal ^e judgments on the people of *Israel*.

1. So I conceive
it best expressed
by Anselm Arch-
bishop of Canter-
bury: Dicitur a-
liquod esse ta-
ctum de nihilo
cum intelli-
gimus esse qui-
dam tactum,
sed non esse a-
liquod unde sit
factum. *De con-
tinentia*, c. 2.

* Creatio apud
nos generatio
vel nativitas
dicitur, apud
Graecos vero
sub nomine
creationis ver-
bum, factura & conditionis accipitur. *S. Hieron. ad Eph. 4.* || ברא is promiscuously used with עשה, which is of the greatest
latitude, denoting any kind of action; and with יצר, which rather implies a formation out of something, from whence יצר
a potter. For the first, we read Gen. 2. 3. that God rested from all his work לעשות אלהים אלהים: not that
on the sixth day he did the work of two days, that he might rest on the seventh, as Rabbi Solomon; nor that in six days he made
the parts of things, that they might afterward produce the like, as Aben Ezra; nor these or any other Fancies of the Rabbines: as
it ברא signified one work and עשה another; for they both express the production, as appears clearly in the following verse,
These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth, בהברא when they were created, ביום עשה in the
day that the Lord God made the heaven and the earth. So Isa. 45. 12. I have made the earth, and created man upon it:
where the first expresseth the proper, the second the improper creation. Which indifferent acception appeareth in collating Psal. 115. 15.
and 121. 2. with Isa. 42. 5. and 45. 18. or also Isa. 17. 7. with Eccl. 12. 1. From whence the LXX. translate ברא indiffe-
rently with both κτίσσει. For the second, יצר is usually rendered by the Targum ברא, and by the LXX. though generally παρά-
τετα, but sometimes κτίσσει. And that it hath the same signification will appear by conferring Gen. 2. 7. with Isa. 45. 12. and
Matth. 6. but by that single verse, Isa. 42. 1. Now thus saith the Lord ברא that created thee, O Jacob, ויצר and he
that created thee, O Israel. Lastly, all these are jointly used in the same validity of expression, Isa. 43. 7. Every one that is
called by my name: for ברא I have created him for my glory, יצור I have formed him, yea עשיתי I have
made him. ^a *As Gen. 1. 21.* ^b *Gen. 1. 27. and 2. 7.* ^c *Psal. 51. 10. Isa. 65. 17.* * Creatio atque conditio nunquam nisi
in magnis operibus nominatur: verbi causa, mundus creatus est, urbs condita est, domus verò, quamvis magna sit, adifi-
cata potius dicitur, quam condita vel creata. In magnis enim operibus atque facturis verbum creationis assumitur. *S. Hier.*
ad Eph. c. 4. * *Numb. 16. 30.* * *Isa. 45. 7.*

We must not therefore weakly collect the true nature of Creation from the force of any word which by some may be thought to express so much, but we must collect it from the testimony of God the Creator, in his word, and

and of the world created, in our reason. The opinion of the Church of the Jews will sufficiently appear in that zealous mother to her seventh and youngest son; *I beseech thee, my son, look upon the heaven and the earth, and all that is therein, and consider that God made them of things that were not*: which is a clear description of *Creation*, that is, production out of nothing. But because this is not by all received as Canonical, we shall therefore evince it by the undoubted testimony of S. Paul, who expressing the nature of Abraham's faith, propoundeth him whom he believed as God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were. For as to be called in the language of the Scripture is to be, (*Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God*, saith S. John in his Epistle, who in his Gospel told us, *he had given us power to become the sons of God*;) so to call is to make, or cause to be. As where the Prophet Jeremy saith, *Thou hast caused all this evil to come upon them*, the original may be thought to speak no more than this, *thou hast called this evil to them*. He therefore calleth those things which be not, as if they were, who maketh those things which were not, to be, and produceth that which hath a being out of that which had not, that is, out of nothing. This reason, generally persuasive unto Faith, is more peculiarly applied by the Apostle to the belief of the Creation: for *through faith*, saith he, *we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear*. Not as if the earth, which we see, were made of air, or any more subtle body, which we see not; nor as if those things which are seen were in equal latitude commensurable with the worlds which were framed: but that those things which are seen, that is, which are, were made of those which * did not appear, that is, which were not.

2 Macc. 7. 28.

1 John 3. 1.

Jer. 32. 23.
נִקְרָא

Heb. 11. 3.

* For I take $\alpha\lambda\lambda\epsilon$ $\epsilon\kappa$ $\sigma\upsilon\nu\omicron\upsilon\lambda\alpha\nu$ in this place to

be equivalent unto $\alpha\lambda\lambda\epsilon$ $\delta\upsilon\tau\alpha\nu$ in the Maccabees, and that of the same sense with $\delta\epsilon$ $\alpha\lambda\lambda\epsilon$ $\delta\upsilon\tau\alpha\nu$, as the Syriack Translation, $\text{ܐܠܝܢܐ ܕܝܠܝܢܐ ܕܝܠܝܢܐ ܕܝܠܝܢܐ}$ ex his quæ non conspiciuntur. Which manner of speech may be observed even in the best Greek Authors: as in Aristotle, $\mu\epsilon\lambda\alpha\beta\alpha\lambda\lambda\alpha\iota\ \delta\epsilon\ \tau\omicron\ \mu\epsilon\lambda\alpha\beta\alpha\lambda\lambda\omicron\nu\ \tau\epsilon\lambda\epsilon\chi\eta\omega\varsigma$ $\eta\ \gamma\alpha\rho\ \epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma$, $\epsilon\iota\varsigma\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\nu$, $\eta\ \alpha\lambda\lambda\epsilon\ \epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma\ \epsilon\iota\varsigma\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\nu$, $\eta\ \mu\eta\ \epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma\ \epsilon\iota\varsigma\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\nu$, $\eta\ \epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma\ \epsilon\iota\varsigma\ \mu\eta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\nu$. Where $\alpha\lambda\lambda\epsilon\ \epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma$ is the same with $\epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma$, and $\mu\eta\ \epsilon\zeta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma$ with $\epsilon\kappa\ \mu\eta\ \psi\omicron\kappa\epsilon\iota\mu\epsilon\lambda\omicron\varsigma$.

Vain therefore was that opinion of a real matter coæval with God as necessary for production of the world by way of subject, as the eternal and Almighty God by way of efficient. For if some real and material Being must be presupposed by indispensable necessity, without which God could not cause any thing to be, then is not he independent in his actions. nor of infinite power and absolute activity; which is contradictory to the divine perfection. Nor can any reason be alledged why he should be dependent in his operation, who is confessed independent in his Being.

And as this coeternity of matter opposeth God's Independency, the proper notion of the Deity, so doth it also contradict his All-sufficiency. For if without the production of something beside himself he cannot make a demonstration of his Attributes, or cause any sensibility of his power and will for the illustration of his own glory; and if without something distinct wholly from himself he cannot produce any thing, then must he * want something external: and whosoever wanteth any thing is not all-sufficient. And certainly he must have a low opinion and poor conception of the infinite and eternal God, who thinks he is no otherwise known to be Omnipotent than by the || benefit of another. Nor were the Framers of the Creed so wise in prefixing

* Nemo enim non eget eo de cuius utitur; nemo non sub-jicitur ei cuius eget ut possit uti. Sic & nemo de alieno uren-

do, non minor est eo de cuius utitur; & nemo qui præstat de suo uti, non in hoc superior est eo cui præstat uti. Tertul. adv. Hermog. c. 8. || Grande revera beneficium contulit, ut haberet hodie per quem Deus cognosceretur & omnipotens vocaretur: nisi quod jam non omnipotens, si non & hoc potens, ex nihilo omnia proferre. Ibidem. Quomodo ab homine divina illa vis differet, si, ut homo, sic etiam Deus ope indigeat aliena? Indiget autem si nihil moliri potest, nisi ab altero illi materia ministraretur. Lactan. l. 2. c. 9.

the Almighty before maker of heaven and earth, if, out of a necessity of material concurrence, the making of them left a mark of impotency rather than omnipotency.

The supposition then of an eternal Matter is so unnecessary where God works, and so derogatory to the infinity of his power, and all-sufficiency of himself; that the later * Philosophers, something acquainted with the truth which we profess, though rejecting Christianity, have reprov'd those of the School of *Plato* who deliver'd, as the doctrine of their Master, an eternal Companion, so injurious to the Father and Maker of all things.

Wherefore to give an answer to that general position, That out of nothing nothing can be produced, which || *Aristotle* pretends to be the opinion of all natural Philosophers, I must first observe, that this Universal Proposition was first framed out of particular considerations of the works of art and nature. For if we look upon all kinds of * artificers, we find they cannot give any specimen of their art without materials. Being then the beauty and uniformity of the world shews it to be a piece of art most exquisite, hence they concluded that the maker of it was the most exact || Artificer, and consequently had his matter from all eternity prepared for him. Again, considering the works of nature and all parts of the world subject to generation and corruption, they also * observed that nothing is ever generated but out of something preexistent, nor is there any mutation wrought but in a subject, and with a presupposed capability of alteration. From hence they presently collected, that if the whole world were ever generated, it must have been produced out of some subject, and consequently there must be a matter eternally preexisting.

[illegible]

Now what can be more irrational, than from the weakness of some creature to infer the same imbecillity in the Creator, and to measure the arm of God by the finger of man? Whatsoever speaketh any kind of excellency or perfection in the Artificer may be attributed unto God : whatsoever signifieth any infirmity, or involveth any imperfection, must be excluded from the notion of him. That wisdom, prescience, and preconception, that order and beauty of operation which is required in an Artist, is most eminently contained in him, who hath *ordered all things in measure, and number, and weight* : but if the most absolute *Idea* in the Artificer's understanding be not sufficient to produce his design without hands to work, and materials to make use of, it will follow no more that God is necessarily tied unto preexisting Matter, than that he is really compounded of corporeal parts.

Again, 'tis as incongruous to judge of the production of the world by those parts thereof which we see subject to generation and corruption, and thence to conclude, that if it ever had a cause of the Being which it hath, it must have been generated in the same manner which they are ; and if that cannot be, it must never have been made at all. For nothing is more certain than that this manner of generation cannot possibly have been the first production even of those things which are now generated. We see the Plants grow from a seed ; that is their ordinary way of generation : but the first plant could not be so generated, because all seed in the same course of nature is from the preexisting plant. We see from spawn the fishes, and from eggs the fowls receive now the original

* These words of Aristotle are very observable, in which he disputes against Specusippus and the Pythagoreans, who thought the rudiments of things first made, out of which they grew unto perfection :
 Ὅσοι δ' ὑπολαμβάνουσιν, ὡς περ εἰς Πυθαγόραν καὶ Σπεύσιππον.

^h Gen. 2. 19.

345

But for their number of years nothing is more certain than their forgery; for the *Egyptians* did preserve the antiquities of other Nations as well as their own, and by the evident fallacy in others have betrayed their own vanity. When *Alexander* entred *Egypt* with his victorious army, the Priests could shew him out of their sacred Histories an account of the *Persian* Empire, which he gained by conquest, and the *Macædonian*, which he received by birth, of each for * 8000 years: whereas nothing can be more certain out of the best Historical account, than that the *Persian* Empire, whether begun in *Cyrus* or in *Medus*, was not then 300 years old, and the *Macædonian*, begun in *Coranus*, not 500. They then which made so large additions to advance the antiquity of other Nations, and were so bold as to present them to those which so easily might refute them (had they not delighted to be deceived to their own advantage, and took much pleasure in an honourable cheat) may without any breach of charity be suspected to have extended the Account much higher for the honour of their own Country. Beside, their Catalogues must needs be ridiculously incredible, when the *Egyptians* make their first Kings reigns above || 1200 years apiece, and the *Assyrians* theirs above 40000: except ye take the *Egyptian* years for * months, the *Assyrians* for days; and then the Account will not seem so formidable.

* This fault appears to be an Epistle which Alexander wrote to his mother Olympias, mentioned by Athenagoras, Minutius Felix, S. Cyprian, and S. Augustine. Persarum autem & Macedonum imperium usque ad ipsum Alexandrum, cui loquebatur, plus quam octo milium annorum

ille constituit; cum apud Græcos Macedonum usque ad mortem Alexandri quadringenti octoginta quinque reperiantur anni, Persarum verò, donec ipsius Alexandri victoriæ finirentur, ducenti & triginta tres computantur. S. Aug. de Civ. Dei, l. 12. c. 10. || As Diodorus Siculus takes notice of the *Egyptians*, and Abydenus of the Chaldeans, whose ten first Kings reigned 120 Sari. Ὡς τοὶ πάντες ἐν βασιλείᾳ δεκά ὧν ὁ χρόνος ἡ βασιλεία συνήζε σέξας ἑκατὸν εἰς. Now this word σέξας was proper to the Babylonian or Chaldean account. Helych. Σάρθ ἀειμήδης τις παρὰ Βαβυλωνίους, but what this number was he tells us not. In the Fragment of Abydenus preserved by Eusebius, Σάρθ δὲ ὅταν ἐξακόσῃ καὶ τετρακίσῃ ἦν, every Σάρθ is 3600 years, and consequently the 120 σάρες belonging to the Reign of the ten Kings 432000 years. Neither was this the account only of Abydenus, but also of Eerofus; neither was the Interpretation only of Eusebius, but also of Alexander Polyhistor, who likewise expresseth ὁ χρόνος τῆς βασιλείας αὐτῶν σέξας ἑκατὸν ἑλοσι, ἥτοι ἐπὶ μυριάδας τεσσαράκοντα πέντε καὶ δύο χιλιάδας. This seemed so highly incredible, that two ancient Monks, Anianus and Panodorus, interpreted those Chaldaean years to be but days, so that every σάρθ should consist of 3600 days, that is, 9 years, 10 months and a half, and the whole 120 σάρες for the ten Kings 1183 years, 6 months, and odd days. This is all which Jos. Scaliger, or Jacobus Goar of late could find concerning this Chaldean Computation: and the first of these complains that none but Helychius makes mention of this account. I shall therefore supply them not only with another Authour, but also with a diverse and distinct interpretation. Σάρες μέγας καὶ ἀειμήδης παρὰ Χαλδαίους. οἱ γὰρ ἐκ' σάρες ποιεῖν ἐνιαυτὸν βσκή, οἱ γίνονται ἐν ἐνιαυτοῖ καὶ μύωες ἑξ. that is, according to the Translation of Portus, Sari apud Chaldaeos est mensura & numerus: nam 120 Sari faciunt annos 2222, qui sunt anni 18 & sex menses. Well might he fix his N. L. or, non liquet, to these words; for as they are in the printed Books there is no sense to be made of them; but by the help of the MS. in the Vatican Library we shall both supply the defect in Suidas, and find a third valuation of the σάρες. Thus then that MS. represents the words: Οἱ γὰρ ἐκ' σάρες ποιεῖν ἐνιαυτὸν βσκή καὶ τὴν Χαλδαίων ἡμέραν, ἅπαρ ὁ σάρθ ποιεῖ μύωας σελλωιακῶν σκῆ, οἱ γίνονται ἐν ἐνιαυτοῖ καὶ μύωες ἑξ. And so the sense is clear. Σάρθ, according to the Chaldee account, comprehends 222 months, which come to 18 years and six months; therefore 120 σάρες make 2220 years; and therefore for βσκή, I read, leaving out the last β, βσκή, that is, 2220. * Εἰ γὰρ ὁ χρόνος Εὐδοξοῦ ἀληθὴς, ὅτι Αἰγύπτιοι τὸν μύωα ἐνιαυτὸν ἐκάλεον, καὶ ἂν ἡ ἡμέρα πολλῶν τέτων ἐνιαυτῶν ἀπαέθμησης ἔχοι τὴν δαυμαζόν. Proclus in Timæum 31. 50.

Again for the calculation of Eclipses, as it may be made for many thousand years to come, and be exactly true, and yet the world may end to morrow; because the calculation must be made with this tacite condition, If the bodies of the Earth and Sun and Moon do continue in their substance and constant motion so long: so may it also be made for many millions of years past, and all be true, if the world have been so old; which the calculating doth not prove, but suppose. He then which should in the *Egyptian* Temples see the description of so many Eclipses of the Sun and Moon, could not be assured that they were all taken from real observation, when they might be as well described out of proleptical supposition.

Besides, the motions of the Sun, which they mention together and with authority equal to that of their other observations, are so incredible and palpably fabulous, that they take off all credit and esteem from the rest of their narrations. For with this wild account of years, and seemingly accurate observations of the heavens, they left it written to posterity, that the whole course of the celestial motions were four times changed: so that

as fertile, as populous as any. The *Hercynian* trees, in the time of the *Cæsars*, occupying so great a space, as to take up a journey of * 60 days, were thought even then || coæval with the World. We read without any shew of contradiction, how this Western part of the world hath been peopled from the East; and all the pretence of the *Babylonian* antiquity is nothing else, but that we all came from thence. Those eight persons saved in the Ark, descending from the *Gordiean* Mountains, and multiplying to a large collection in the Plain of *Sinaar*, made their first division at that place; and that dispersion, or rather dissemination, hath peopled all other parts of the world, either never before inhabited, or dispeopled by the Flood.

These Arguments have always seemed so clear and undeniable, that they have put not only those who make the world eternal, but them also who confess it made, (but far more ancient than we believe it) to a strange answer, to themselves uncertain, to us irrational.

For to this they replied, * That this World hath suffered many alterations, by the utter destructions of Nations and depopulations of Countries, by which all monuments of antiquity were defaced, all Arts and Sciences utterly lost, all fair and stately Fabricks ruined, and so mankind reduced to paucity, and the world often again returned into its infancy. This they conceived to have been done oftentimes in several Ages, sometimes by a deluge of Water, sometimes by a torrent of Fire; and lest any of the elements might be thought not to conspire to the destruction of mankind, the Air must sweep away whole Empires at once with infectious plagues, and earthquakes swallow up all ancient Cities, and bury even the very ruins of them. By which answer of theirs they plainly afford two great advantages to the Christian Faith. First, because they manifestly shew that they had an universal tradition of *Noah's* Flood, and the overthrow of the old world: Secondly, because it was evident to them, that there was no way to salve the eternity or antiquity of the World, or to answer this argument drawn from History and the appearances of things themselves, but by supposing innumerable deluges and conflagrations. Which being merely feigned in themselves, not proved, (and that || first by them which, say they, are not subject themselves unto them, as the *Egyptians* did, who by the * advantage of their peculiar situation feared neither perishing by fire nor water) serve only for a confirmation of *Noah's* Flood so many Ages past, and the surer expectation of *S. Peter's* fire, we know not how soon to come.

* Sylvarum, Hercynia die-rum sexaginta iter occupans, ut major alii, ita & notior. *Mela*, l. 3. c. 2. || Hercyniæ syl-væ roborum vastitas intacta avis & conge-nita mundo, prope immor-tali sorte mira-cula excedit. *Plin.* l. 16. c. 2.

* Thus Ocellus, who maintain-ed the world was never made, answers the Argument brought from the Greek Histories which began with Inachus, as the first sub-ject, not author of History, (as Negarola in his Annotations mistakes Ocel-lus) Διὸ καὶ τοῖς λέγουσι ὅτι Ἑλληνικῆς ἱστορίας ἀρχὴν ἔχει τὸ Ἰνὰχος ἢ τὸ Ἀργεῖον, περὶ τῶν ἑσπερίων ἑ- τῶς, ἔχ' ὥς ἀπὸ τινος ἀρ- χῆς πρῶτης, ἀλλὰ τὸ γενό- μενον μεταβο- λῆς καὶ αὐ- τῷ. So that he will have Ina-

chus to be the first not absolutely, but since the last great alteration made in Greece: and then he concludes that Greece hath often been, and will often be, barbarous, and lose the memory of all their actions. Πολλὰς γὰρ καὶ γέγονε καὶ ἔστι βαρβαροῦ ἢ Ἑλλὰς, ἔχ' ὥς ἀνθρώπων μόνον γινώσκῃ μεταβολῇ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὥς αὐτῆς ὁ φύσεως ἢ μέλλοντος ἢ ἐκείνου αὐτῆς γινώσκῃ, ἀλλὰ γὰρ νεώτερας αἰὲς καὶ περὶ ἡμᾶς ἀρχὴν λαμβανούσης. Ocellus de Universo, c. 3. Thus Plato, who asserted the creation of the world, but either from eternity, or such antiquity as does not much differ from it, brings in Solon inquiring the age of the Greek Histories, as of Phoroneus and Niobe, Deucalion and Pyrrha; and an Egyptian Priest answering, that all the Greeks were Boys, and not an old man amongst them, that is, they had no ancient monuments, or history of any antiquity, but rested contented with the knowledge of the time since the last great mutation of their own Country. Πολλὰ γὰρ καὶ πολλὰ φθόρα γέγοναν ἀνθρώπων καὶ ἔσονται, πρὶν καὶ ἡ ἰδία μετρίσαι, μνησὶς ὅ ἄλλοις ἑτέροις βραχυτέροι. in *Timæo*. Origen of Celsus. Τὸ πολλὰς ἐν παγ- τὸς αἰῶνος πυρώσεις γιγνέσθαι, πόλλας δ' ὀπκλύσεις, καὶ νεώτερον εἶναι τὸν ὅτι Διὸ καὶ ἄλλων καὶ ἀκκυσμὸν ἔναρχον καὶ ἡμῶν, οὕτως τοῖς ἀνθρώποις διωκυμένοις παρὲς τὸ καὶ αὐτὸν τὴν κόσμον ἀφύπντον, l. 1. And Lucretius the Epi- curean, who thought the world but few thousand years old, as we believe, and that it should at last be consumed, as we also are perswa- ded, thinks this answer of theirs so far from being a refutation of the former, that he admits it as a confirmation of the latter part of his opin. on. De rerum natura, l. 5.

Quod si fortè fuisset antehac eadem omnia credis,
Sed periisse hominum torrenti secla vapore,
Aut cecidisse urbes magno vexamine mundi,
Aut ex imbris affluvis exisse rapaces
Per terras, unnes atque oppida cooperuisse:
Tanto quippe magis victus tacere necesse est,
Exitium quoque terrarum cœlique futurum.

|| Εἶπον οὖν ὁ τὸ Κέλσος τὸ ὅτι αὐτὸς αὐτὸς καὶ οἱ ἄλλοι ἀπὸ τῆς πυρώσεως καὶ τῆς ἀφύπντου καὶ τῆς ἀκκυσμὸν ἔναρχου. Orig. adv. Celsum, l. 1. * So that Egyptian Priest in Plato's *Timæus* tells Solon, that the Fable of Phæacthon did signify a real Conflagration of the world; but so as all they which lived in mountains or dry parts of the earth were scorched and consumed, but of this:

those which lived near the seas or rivers in the valleys, some were preserved: ἡμῖν δὲ, saith he, ὁ Νεῖλος οἷς τε τὰλλα σωθῆναι, καὶ τότε ἐκ τῶντος ἡ Σπερία ἀπὸ ζῆ λυδοῦσθαι. Thus the Egyptians pretend Nilus saved them from the flames of Phaethon. Nor were they only safe from Conflagrations, but from Inundations also. For when in Greece or other parts a Deluge happened, then all their Cities were nept away into the Sea: Κατὰ δὲ τὴν δὲ ἡ Χόρην, says the Priest, ὅτι τότε, ὅτε ἀλλοτε ἀναθῆν ὅτι τὰς ἀφ' ἑξῆς ὕδωρ ἐπὶ ἡμῖν· τὸ δὲ ἀναθῆν καὶ τὸθεν ἐπανέναι τέρευνεν· ἔθεν καὶ δι' αἰτίας τὰνθάδε Καζιῦρα λέγεσαι παλαιότερα. So Egypt receiving not their waters from above by clouds, but from below by Springs filling the river Nile, was out of danger in a Deluge, and thereby preserved the most ancient monuments and records. But, alas, this is a poor shift to them which believe that in the great and universal Flood all the fountains of the great deep were broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened, Gen. 7. 11.

It remaineth then that we stedfastly believe, not only that the heavens and earth and all the host of them were made, and so acknowledge a Creation, or an actual and immediate dependence of all things on God; but also that all things were created by the hand of God, in the same manner, and at the same time, which are delivered unto us in the Books of Moses by the Spirit of God, and so acknowledge a novity, or no long existence of the Creature.

Neither will the novity of the World appear more plainly unto our conceptions, than if we look upon our own successions. The vulgar accounts, which exhibit about 5600 years, though sufficiently refusing an eternity, and allaying all conceits of any great antiquity, are not yet so properly and nearly operative on the thoughts of men, as a reflexion upon our own generations. The first of men was but six days younger than the being, not so many than the appearance, of the earth: and if any particular person would consider how many degrees in a direct line he probably is removed from that single person Adam, who bare together the name of man and of the earth from whence he came, he could not choose but think himself so near the original fountain of mankind, as not to conceive any great antiquity of the World. For though the ancient Heathens did imagine * innumerable ages and generations of men past, though || Origen did fondly seem to collect so much by some misinterpretations of the Scriptures; yet if we take a sober view, and make but rational collections from the Chronology of the Sacred Writ, we shall find no man's pedigree very exorbitant, or in his line of generation descent of many score.

* So Cicero indeed speaks, innumerabilia secula, in his Book of Divination: and Socrates in Plato's Theætetus, brings this argument a-

gainst the pride of great and noble Families, that they which mention a succession of their Ancestors which have been rich and powerful, do it merely ὡς ἀπαιδιδόσας, ὡς δὲ αὐτῶν εἰς τὸ πᾶν αἰεὶ βλέπειν, ὡς δὲ λογίζεσθαι, ὅτι πάντων καὶ περιόντων μυριάδες ἐκάστω γενόνασιν ἀναριθμητοί, ἐν αἷς πλείοι καὶ ἡγετοί, καὶ βασιλεῖς καὶ δούλοι, βάρβαροι τε καὶ Ἕλληες πολλαῖς μυρίοι γενόνασιν ἐταῖροι· as if every person were equally honourable, having innumerable Ancestors, rich and poor, servants and Kings, learned and barbarous. || Origen did not only collect the eternity of the world from the coexistence of all God's Attributes, as because he is παλαιότατος καὶ ἀναιρέτος, therefore he was always so, (for how could he be ἀναιρέτος ἀνὰ ἀναιρέτημα, or παλαιότατος ἀνὰ ἡμῶν κατεύθυν;) but also from the 90 Psalm, From everlasting to everlasting, thou art God. For a thousand years in thy sight are but as yesterday; and that at the beginning of Ecclesiasticus, Who can number the fund of the sea, and the drops of the rain, and the days of eternity? But Methodius, Bishop and Martyr, hath well concluded that disputation: Ταῦτα ἐρησι ὁ Θεός, ὡς ἀπαιδιδόσας, καὶ ὅσα οἷα πάσαι.

When the age of man was long, in the infancy of the World, we find ten generations extend to 1656 years, according to the shortest, which is thought, because the Hebrew, therefore the best account, according to the longest, which, because the Septuagints, is not to be contemned, 2262, or rather 2256. From the Flood brought at that time upon the earth for the sins of men which polluted it, upon the birth of Abraham, the Father of the faithful, not above ten generations, if so many, took up 292 years, according to the least, 1132, according to the largest account. Since which time the ages of men have been very much alike proportionably long; and it is agreed by all that there have not passed since the birth of Abraham 3700 years. Now by the experience of our Families which for their honour and greatness have been preserved, by the genealogies delivered in the sacred Scriptures, and thought necessary to be presented to us by the blessed Evangelists, by the observation and concurrent judgment of former Ages, three

* genera-

* generations usually take up a hundred years. If then it be not yet 3700 years since the birth of *Abraham*, as certainly it is not; if all men which are or have been since have descended from *Noah*, as undoubtedly they have; if *Abraham* were but the tenth from *Noah*, as *Noah* from *Adam*, which *Moses* hath assured us: then is it not probable that any person now alive is above 130 generations removed from *Adam*. And indeed thus admitting but the *Greek* account of less than 5000 years since the Flood, we may easily bring all sober or probable accounts of the *Egyptians*, *Babylonians*, and *Chineses*, to begin since the Dispersion at *Babel*. Thus having expressed at last the time, so far as is necessary to be known, I shall conclude this second Consideration of the nature and notion of *Creation*.

* By the *Greeks* called *ῥαεαί* which are successions of generations from Father to Son: as in *St. Mat. 1. 17*. Indeed sometimes they take it for other spaces of time: as *Artemidorus* observes, for seven years. *Κ' ἴ'* ενίς μ' ἐστὶν ἔ'

οὖν οἱ ἰαλεῖκοι, ἥ δὲ ῥαεαί (not πρὸς ἥσ' as *Wolphius* and *Portus* would correct it) μηδὲν (not μὴ δέιν, as *Suidas*) εἰς ἑκατομῆτα, ἥ τριακονταεκάτη (not τριακονταεκατατον, as *Suidas* transcribing him negligently) λ' ἡνέκε. Sometimes they interpret it 20, 25, or 30 years, as appears by *Hesychius*. And by that last account they reckoned the years of *Nestor*, *Κ' ἴ' ἐνίς ἔ' λ'*. ὅθεν καὶ ἡ Νέστορα βέλονται οἱ ἐννεμήκοντα ἔτη γηρονέαι. So *Artemidorus* and the *Grammarians*. Although I cannot imagine that to be the sense of *Homer*. *Il. δ.*

Τῷ δ' ἥδη δὲ μ' ῥαεαί μετ' ἄνθρωπων
'Ερβία', οἱ οἱ πρὸθεν ἄμα τέτρην ἡδ' ἑξήκοντα.

And I conceive that gloss in *Hesychius*. 'Επὶ διασημάτων χρόνων ἥ μὴ κατ' αὐτὸ βεβαιώτων, to be far more properly applicable to that place. But, in the sense of which now we speak, it is taken for the third part ordinarily of an hundred years: as *Herodotus*, mentioning the *Egyptians* feigned Genealogies; Καίτοι τετρακόντα μ' ἀνδρῶν ῥαεαί διωξάται μυρία ἑτα. 300 generations equalize 10000 years, ῥαεαί γὰρ τρεῖς ἀνδρῶν ἑκάδην ἑτα δέσσι. And after him *Clemens Alex. Strom. l. 2.* Εἰς τὰ ἑκάδην ἔτη τρεῖς καταλέγονται ῥαεαί.

Now being under the terms of *heaven and earth*, we have proved all things beside God to be contained, and that the making of all these things was a clear production of them out of nothing; the third part of the explication must of necessity follow, that he which made all things is God. This truth is so evident in it self, and so confessed by all men, that none did ever assert the World was made, but withal affirmed that it was God who made it. There remaineth therefore nothing more in this particular, than to assert God so the Creator of the World as he is described in this Article.

Being then we believe in God the Father maker of *heaven and earth*, and by that God we expressed already a singularity of the Deity; our first assertion which we must make good is, That the one God did create the World. Again, being whosoever is that God cannot be excluded from this act of Creation, as being an emanation of the Divinity, and we seem by these words to appropriate it to the Father, beside whom we shall hereafter shew that we believe some other persons to be the same God; it will be likewise necessary to declare the reason why the Creation of the World is thus signally attributed to God the Father.

The first of these deserves no explication of it self, it is so obvious to all which have any true conception of God. But because it hath been formerly denied, (as there is nothing so senseless, but some kind of Hereticks have embraced, and may be yet taken up in times of which we have no reason to presume better than of the former) I shall briefly declare the Creation of the World to have been performed by that one God, the Father of our Lord *Jesus Christ*.

As for the first, there is no such difference between things of the world, as to infer a diversity of makers of them, nor is the least or worst of creatures in their original any way derogatory to the Creator. *God saw every thing that he had made, and behold it was very good,* and consequently like to come from the fountain of all goodness, and fit always to be ascribed to the same. Whatsoever is evil, is not so by the Creator's action, but by the creature's defection.

* Inde Manichæi, ut Deum à conditione malorum liberet, alterum mali inducit autorem.

S. Hier. in Nahum, c. 2.

¶ I r we must not look upon Manes as the first Author of

the Heresie, though they which followed him were called from him Manichæans. Nor must we be satisfied with the relation of Socrates, who calls the beginning of that heresie *μικρὸν ἔμπροσθεν τοῦ Κωνσταντίνου*, a little before Constantine; being Epiphanius asserts the first Author of it, *ἐκείνου δὲ ποιεῖν ἐπὶ τὰ ἑρесьματα τοῦ ἑσπέρου*, to have gone to Jerusalem even about the Apostles times. Manes then, formerly called Cubricus, (not Urbicus, as S. Aug.) who disseminated this Heresie in the days of Aurelianus or Probus the Emperour, about the year 277, had a Predecessour, though not a Master, called first Terebinthus, after Buddas. For this Buddas left his Books and Estate to a Widow, who, saith Epiphanius, *ἐμεινε παρ' αὐτοῦ τὸ ἑσπέρου ἔργον*, continued with his Estate and Books a long time, and at last bought Cubricus for her servant. This Buddas had a former Master called Scythianus, the first Author of this Heresie. Beside these, between Scythianus and Cubricus there was yet another teacher of the doctrine, called Zaranas. *Ἦν δὲ περὶ τούτου (Μάρτιος) καὶ ἕτερος ὁ καλῶς διδάσκαλος ταύτης, Ζαράνης ὀνόματι, ὁμοῦσαν αὐτῷ ἑσπέρου.* If then we insert this Zaranas into the Manichæan Pedigree, and consider the time of the Widow between Buddas and Cubricus, and the age of Cubricus, who was then but seven years old, as Socrates testifies, when she resolved to buy him, and discover the Heresie to him; there will be no reason to doubt of the relation of Epiphanius, that Scythianus began about the Apostolical times. Nor need we any of the abatements in the Animadversions of Petavius, much less that redargution of Epiphanius, who cites Origen as an assessor of the Christian Faith against this Heresie; for though he certainly died before Manes spread his doctrine, yet it was written in several Books before him, not only in the time of Buddas, to whom Socrates and Suidas attribute them, but of Scythianus, whom S. Cyril and Epiphanius make the author of them. Neither can it be objected that they were not Manichæans before the appearance of Manes; for I conceive the name of Manes (thought by the Greeks to be a name taken up by Cubricus, and proper to him) nor to be any proper or peculiar name at all, but the general title of Heretick in the Syriack tongue. For I am both to think that Theodoret or the Author in Suidas were so far mistaken, when they call Scythianus, Manes, as to conceive Cubricus and he were the same person: when we may with much better reason conclude that both Scythianus and Cubricus had the same title. For I conceive Manes at first rather a title than a name, from the Hebrew *מְדַבֵּר* or *מְדַבְּרִים* signifying a Heretick. And although some of the Rabbins derive their *מְדַבֵּר* from Manes, yet others make it more ancient than he was, referring it to Zadok and Bajethos, called *מְדַבְּרִים* the first or chief Hereticks, who lived 100 years before Christ. Wherefore it is far more rational to assert, that he which began the Heresie of the Manichæes was called *מְדַבֵּר* as an Heretick in the Oriental tongues, and from thence *Μάνης* by the Greeks (to comply with *μανία* or Madness in their language) than that *Μάνης* was first the name of a man counted an Heretick by the Christians; and then made the general name for all Hereticks, and particularly for the Christians by the Jews. Which being granted, both Scythianus and Cubricus might well at first have the name of Manes, that is Heretick. However, the antiquity of that Heresie will appear in the Marcionites, who differed not in this particular from the Manichæes. *Duos Ponticus Deos assert tanquam duas Symplegadas naufragii sui: quem negare non potuit, id est, creatorem, id est, nostrum; & quem probare non potuit, id est, iustum.* Pallas intellexit huius præsumptionis instinctum de simplici capitulo Dominica pronunciationis, in homines non in Deos disponentis exempla illa bonæ & malæ arboris, quod neque bona malos neque mala bonos proferat fructus. Tertul. l. 1. c. 2. This Marcion lived in the days of Antoninus Pius, and as Eusebius testifieth, Justin Martyr wrote against him. Hist. li. 4. c. 11. Irenæus relates how he spoke with Polycarpus Bishop of Smyrna, who was taught by the Apostles, and conversed with divers which saw our Saviour, l. 3. c. 3. Neither was Marcion the first which taught it at Rome, for he received it from Cerdon. Hæbuit & Cerdonem quendam informatorem scandali huius, quo facilius duos Deos creari existimaverunt. This Cerdon succeeded Heraclon, and so at last this Heresie may be reduced to the Gnosticks, who derived it from the old Gentile Philosophers, and might well be embraced by Manes in Persia, because it was the doctrine of the Persian Magi, as Aristotle testifieth. *Ἀριστοτέλης ἐν πρῶτῳ μετεωρολογίας καὶ περὶ οὐράνης* (τοῦ Μάνους) ἔδ' αὐτὸν Αἰγυπτίαν, καὶ Νόκκ' αὐτοῦ ἔδ' ἀρχαί, ἀγαθὴν δαίμονα καὶ κακὴν δαίμονα. Laert. in proximo. And this derivation is well observed by Timotheus Presbyter of Constantinople, speaking thus of Manes: *Πατρις δὲ Μανιχæίων καὶ ἡ περὶ ἐκείνου ἀρχαιοποσίων καὶ δυνατεῶν καὶ ἡ κατὰ Περσίδα μάγων ἀπορροαζαδὼν διζματικὴ διὸ ἀρχαία.*

Isa. 45. 7, 5.

Whereas there is no Nature originally sinful, no substance in it self evil, and therefore no Being which may not come from the same fountain of goodness. *I form the light, and create darkness; I make peace, and create evil; I the Lord do all these things,* saith he who also said, *I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God besides me.* Vain then is that conceit which framed two Gods, one of them called Light, the other Darkness; one good, the other evil; refuted in the first words of the Creed, *I believe in God, maker of heaven and earth.*

But as we have already proved that one God to be the Father, so must we yet farther shew that one God the Father to be the Maker of the World. In which there is no difficulty at all: the whole Church at Jerusalem hath sufficiently declared this truth in their devotions; *Lord, thou art God which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is: against thy holy child*

child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate with the Gentiles and the people of Israel were gathered together. Jesus then was the child of that God which made the Heaven and the Earth, and consequently the Father of Christ is the Creator of the World.

We know that Christ is the light of the Gentiles, by his own interpretation; we are assured likewise that his Father gave him, by his frequent assertion: we may then as certainly conclude that the Father of Christ is the Creator of the World, by the Prophet's express prediction: *For thus saith God the Lord, Isa. 42. 5, 6. he that created the heavens and stretched them out, he which spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles.*

And now this great facility may seem to create the greater difficulty: for being the Apostles teach us that the Son made all things, and the Prophets, that by the Spirit they were produced, how can we attribute that peculiarly in the Creed unto the Father, which in the Scriptures is assigned indifferently to the Son and to the Spirit? Two reasons may particularly be rendered of this peculiar attributing the work of creation to the Father. First, in respect of those Heresies arising in the infancy of the Church, which endeavoured to destroy this truth, and to introduce another Creator of the World, distinguished from the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. An Errour so destructive to the Christian Religion, that it raseth even the foundations of the Gospel, which refers it self wholly to the promises in the Law, and pretends to no other God but that God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob; acknowledgeth no other speaker by the Son, than him that spake by the Prophets; and therefore whom Moses and the Prophets call Lord of Heaven and Earth, of him our blessed Saviour signifies himself to be the Son, rejoicing in spirit, and saying, *I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth.* Secondly, in respect of the Paternal priority in the Deity, by reason whereof that which is common to the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, may be rather attributed to the Father, as the first Person in the Trinity. In which respect the Apostle hath made a distinction in the phrase of emanation or production: *To us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.* And our Saviour hath acknowledged, *The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do;* which speaketh some kind of priority in action, according to that of the Person. And in this sense the Church did always profess to believe in God the Father, * Creator of Heaven and Earth.

Luke 10. 21.

1 Cor. 8. 6.

* Stabat fides semper in Creatore & Christo ejus. Tertul. adv. Marcion. l. 1. Non alia agnoscenda erit traditio Apostolorum, quam que hodie apud ipsorum Ecclesias editur. Nullam autem Apostolici census Ecclesiam invenias que non in Creatore Christianizet. Id. Rom. 1. 20. Jer. 10. 12. and 51. 15. Psal. 104. 24.

The great necessity of professing our faith in this particular appeareth several ways, as indispensably tending to the illustration of God's glory, the humiliation of mankind, the provocation to obedience, the aversion from iniquity, and all consolation in our duty.

God is of himself infinitely glorious, because his perfections are absolute, his excellencies indefective: and the splendour of this glory appeareth unto us in and through the works of his hands. ^a *The invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead.* ^b *For he hath made the earth by his power, he hath established the world by his wisdom, and hath stretched out the heavens by his discretion.* After a long enumeration of the wonderful works of the Creation, the Psalmist breaketh forth into this pious meditation. ^c *O Lord, how manifold are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all.* If then the glory of God be made apparent by the Creation, if he have ^d *made all things for himself,* that is, for the manifestation of his glorious Attributes, if the ^e *Lord rejoyceth*

^d Prov. 16. 4.

^e Psal. 104. 31.

in his works, because his glory shall endure for ever; then is it absolutely necessary we should confess him Maker of heaven and earth, that we may sufficiently praise and glorify him. Let them praise the name of the Lord, saith David, for his name alone is excellent, his glory is above the earth and heaven. Thus did the Levites teach the Children of Israel to glorify God: Stand up and bless the Lord your God for ever and ever: and blessed be thy glorious name, which is exalted above all blessing and praise. Thou even thou art Lord alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their hosts, the earth and all things that are therein. And the same hath S. Paul taught us: For of him, and through him, and to him are all things, to whom be glory for ever, Amen. Furthermore, that we may be assured that he which made both Heaven and Earth will be glorified in both, the Prophet calls upon all those celestial hosts to bear their part in his Hymn: Praise ye him all his Angels, praise ye him all his hosts. Praise ye him Sun and Moon, praise him all ye Stars of light. Praise him ye heavens of heavens, and ye waters that be above the heavens. Let them praise the name of the Lord, for he commanded, and they were created. And the 24 Elders in the Revelation of S. John fall down before him that sitteth on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their Crowns, the emblems of their borrowed and derived glories, before the Throne, the seat of infinite and eternal Majesty, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour; and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. Wherefore, if the heavens declare the glory of God, and all his works praise him; then shall his Saints bless him, they shall speak of the glory of his kingdom, and talk of his power. And if man be silent, God will speak; while we through ingratitude will not celebrate, he himself will declare it, and promulgate. I have made the earth, the man and the beast that are upon the ground, by my great power, and by my out-stretched arm.

Psal. 148. 13.
Neb. 9. 5, 6.
Rom. 11. 36.
Psal. 148. 2, 3, 4, 5.
Rev. 4. 10, 11.
Psal. 15. 1.
Psal. 145. 10, 11.
Jer. 27. 5.

Secondly, the Doctrine of the World's Creation is most properly effectual towards man's Humiliation. As there is nothing more destructive to humanity than Pride, and yet not any thing to which we are more prone than that; so nothing can be more properly applied to abate the swelling of our proud conceptions, than a due consideration of the other works of God, with a sober reflexion upon our own original. *When I considered the heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars which thou hast ordained; when I view those glorious apparent bodies with my eye, and by the advantage of a glass find great numbers before, beyond the power of my sight, and from thence judge there may be many millions more which neither eye nor instrument can reach; when I contemplate those far more glorious spirits, the inhabitants of the Heavens, and attendants on thy Throne; I cannot but break forth into that admiration of the Prophet, What is man, that thou art mindful of him? what is that off-spring of the earth, that dust and ashes? what is that son of man, that thou visitest him? what is there in the progeny of an ejected and condemned Father, that thou shouldest look down from Heaven, the place of thy dwelling, and take care or notice of him? But if our Original ought so far to humble us, how should our Fall abase us? That of all the creatures which God made, we should comply with him who first opposed his Maker, and would be equal unto him from whom he new received his Being. All other works of God, which we think inferiour to us, because not furnished with the light of understanding, or endued with the power of election, are in a happy impossibility of sinning, and so offending of their Maker: The glorious Spirits which attend upon the Throne of God, once in a condition of themselves to fall, now by the grace of God preserved, and placed beyond all possibility of sinning, are entered upon the greatest happiness of which the workmanship of God*

Psal. 8. 3.

God is capable : But men, the sons of fall'n Adam, and sinners after the similitude of him, of all the creatures are the only companions of those *Angels* Jude v. 6. which left their own habitations, and are delivered into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment. 2 Pet. 2. 4. How should a serious apprehension of our own corruption, mingled with the thoughts of our creation, humble us in the sight of him, whom we alone of all the creatures by our unrepented sins drew unto Repentance? How can we look without confusion of face upon that monument of our infamy, recorded by Moses, who first penned the original of Humanity, *It repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it* Gen. 6. 5. *grieved him at his heart?*

Thirdly, this Doctrine is properly efficacious and productive of most cheerful and universal Obedience. It made the Prophet call for the Commandments of God, and earnestly desire to know what he should obey. *Thy hands have* Psal. 119. 73. *made me and fashioned me : give me understanding, that I may learn thy commandments.* By virtue of our first production, God hath undeniably absolute dominion over us, and consequently there must be due unto him the most exact and compleat obedience from us. Which reason will appear more convincing, if we consider, of all the creatures which have been derived from the same fountain of God's goodness, none ever disobeyed his voice but the Devil and Man. *Mine hand, saith he, hath laid the foundation of the earth, and my right* Isa. 48. 13. *hand hath spann'd the heavens ; when I call unto them they stand up together.* The most loyal and obedient servants which stand continually before the most illustrious Prince are not so ready to receive and execute the commands of their Sovereign Lord, as all the Hosts of Heaven and earth to attend upon the will of their Creator. *Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath* Isa. 40. 26. *created these things, that bringeth out their hosts by number : he calleth them all by names, by the greatness of his might, for that he is strong in power, not one faileth, but every one maketh his appearance, ready prest to observe the designs of their Commander in chief.* Thus the Lord commanded, and *they fought* Judg. 5. 20. *from heaven, the stars in their courses fought against Sisera.* He commanded the 1 King. 17. 4, 5. *Ravens to feed Elias, and they brought him bread and flesh in the morning, and bread and flesh in the evening ; and so one Prophet lived merely upon the obedience of the Fowls of the air.* He spake to the devouring Whale, and Jonah 2. 10. *it vomited out Jonah upon the dry land ; and so another Prophet was delivered from the jaws of death by the obedience of the Fishes of the Sea.* Do we not read of *fire and hail, snow and vapour, stormy wind fulfilling his word?* Psal. 148. 8. Shall there be a greater coldness in man than in the snow? more vanity in us than in a vapour? more inconstancy than in the wind? If the universal obedience of the creature to the will of the Creator cannot move us to the same affection and desire to serve and please him, they will all conspire to testify against us and condemn us, when God shall call unto them, saying, *Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth, for the Lord hath spoken : I have nourished and* Isa. 1. 2. *brought up children, and they have rebelled against me.*

Lastly, the Creation of the World is of most necessary meditation for the Consolation of the servants of God in all the variety of their conditions. *Hap-* Psal. 145. 5, 6. *py is he whose hope is in the Lord his God, which made heaven and earth, the sea and all that therein is.* This happiness consisteth partly in a full assurance of his power to secure us, his ability to satisfy us. *The earth is the Lord's, and* Psal. 24. 1, 2. *the fulness thereof, the world and they that dwell therein.* For he hath sounded it upon the seas, and established it upon the foulds. By virtue of the first production he hath a perpetual right unto and power to dispose of all things : and he which can order and dispose of all, must necessarily be esteemed able to secure and satisfy any Creature. *Hast thou not known, hast thou not heard that the* Isa. 40. 28.

everlasting God, the Lord, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? There is no external resistance or opposition where Omnipotency worketh, no internal weakness or defection of power where the Almighty is the Agent; and consequently there remaineth a full and firm perswasion of his ability in all conditions to preserve us. Again, this happiness consisteth partly in a comfortable assurance, arising from this Mediation, of the will of God to protect and succour us, of his desire to preserve and bless us. *My help cometh from the Lord, who made heaven and earth: He will not suffer thy foot to be moved,* saith the Prophet David; at once expressing the foundation of his own expectancy and our security. God *will not despise the work of his hands*, neither will he suffer the rest of his Creatures to do the least injury to his own image. *Behold, saith he, I have created the smith that bloweth the coals in the fire, and that bringeth forth an instrument for his work. No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper. This is the heritage of the servants of the Lord.*

Wherefore to conclude our explication of the first Article, and to render a clear account of the last part thereof, that every one may understand what it is I intend, when I make confession of my faith in the *Maker of heaven and earth*, I do truly profess, that I really believe, and am fully perswaded, that both Heaven and earth and all things contained in them have not their being of themselves, but were made in the beginning; that the manner by which all things were made was by mediate or immediate creation; so that antecedently to all things beside, there was at first nothing but God, who produced most part of the World merely out of nothing, and the rest out of that which was formerly made of nothing. This I believe was done by the most free and voluntary act of the will of God, of which no reason can be alledged, no motive assigned, but his goodness; performed by the determination of his will at that time which pleased him, most probably within one hundred and thirty generations of men, most certainly within not more than six, or at farthest seven, thousand years. I acknowledge this God Creator of the World to be the same God who is the Father of our Lord *Jesus Christ*: and in this full latitude, *I believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth.*

ARTICLE II.

And in *Jesus Christ his only Son, our Lord.*

THE second Article of the *Creed* presents unto us, as the object of our Faith, the second Person of the blessed Trinity; that as in the Divinity there is nothing intervening between the Father and the Son, so that immediate union might be perpetually expressed by a constant conjunction in our Christian Confession. And that upon no less authority than of the *Author and Finisher of our Faith*, who in the persons of the Apostles gave this command to us, *Ye believe in God, believe also in me.* Nor speaketh he this of himself, but from the Father which sent him: *for this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ.* According therefore to the Son's prescription, the Father's injunction, and the Sacramental institution, as we are baptized, so do we * believe in the name of the Father, and the Son.

Our blessed Saviour is here represented under a threefold description: first, by his Nomination, as *Jesus Christ*; secondly, by his Generation, as the *only Son* of God; thirdly, by his Dominion, as *our Lord*.

But

^a *Joh. 14. 1.*

^b *1 Joh. 3. 23.*

* Eadem regula veritatis docet nos credere post Patrem etiam in Filium Dei, Christum Jesum, Dominum Deum nostrum, sed Dei Filium; huius Dei qui & unus & solus est, conditor scilicet rerum omnium. *Novat. de Trinit. c. 9.*

But when I refer *Jesus Christ* to the Nomination of our Saviour, because he is in the Scriptures promiscuously and indifferently sometimes called *Jesus*, sometimes *Christ*, I would be understood so as not to make each of them equally, or in like propriety, his name. ^a *His name was called Jesus, which was so named of the Angel before he was conceived in the womb:* ^b *who is also called Christ*, not by * name, but by office and title. Which observation, seemingly trivial, is necessary for the full explication of this part of the Article: for by this distinction we are led unto a double notion, and so resolve our Faith into these two Propositions. I believe there was and is a man, whose name was actually, and is truly in the most high importance, *Jesus*, the Saviour of the world. I believe the man who bare that name to be the *Christ*, that is, the *Messias* promised of old by God, and expected by the *Jews*.

^a Luke 2. 21.
^b Matt. 1. 16.
* Si ramen nomen est Christi, & non appellatio potius; Unctus enim significatur. Unctus autem non magis nomen est quam vestitus, quam calceatus, acci-

dens nomini res. Tertul. adv. Prax. c. 28. Quorum nominum alterum est proprium, quod ab Angelo impositum est; alterum accedens, quod ab unctione convenit. Ibid. Christus commune dignitatis est nomen, Jesus proprium vocabulum Salvatoris. S. Hieron. in Matt. 16. 20. Jesus inter homines nominatur; nam Christus non proprium nomen est, sed nuncupatio potestatis & regni. Laſtan. de Falsa Sap. l. 4. c. 7. Dum dicitur Christus, commune nomen dignitatis est; dum Jesus Christus, proprium vocabulum Salvatoris est. Isidor. Orig. l. 7. c. 2. Ἰησοῦς καλεῖται φερωνύμας. S. Cyril. Catech. 10.

For the first, it is undoubtedly the proper name of our Saviour given unto him, according to the custom of the *Jews*, at his Circumcision: and as the Baptist was called *John*, even so the *Christ* was called *Jesus*. Beside, as the imposition was after the vulgar manner, so was the name it self of ordinary use. We read in the Scriptures of ^a *Jesus which was called Justus, a fellow-worker* with S. Paul; and of a certain Sorcerer, a Jew, whose name was *Barjesus*, that is, the Son of *Jesus*. Josephus in his History mentioneth one *Jesus* the Son of *Ananus*, another the Son of *Saphates*, a third the Son of *Judas*, slain in the Temple: and many of the high Priests, or Priests, were called by that name; as the Son of *Dammeus*, of *Gamaliel*, of *Onias*, of *Phabes*, and of *Thebuth*. Ecclesiasticus is called the Wisdom of *Jesus* the Son of *Sirach*, and that *Sirach* the Son of another *Jesus*. ^b S. Stephen speaks of the *Tabernacle of witness brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles*: and the Apostle in his explication of those words of David, *To day if you will hear his voice*, observeth, that, ^c *if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterwards have spoken of another day*. Which two Scriptures being undoubtedly understood of *Joshua*, the Son of *Nun*, teach us as infallibly that *Jesus* is the same name with *Joshua*. Which being at the first * imposition in the full extent of pronunciation *Jehoshuah*, in process of time contracted to *Jeshuah*, by the omission of the last letter, (strange and difficult to other languages) and the addition of the Greek termination, became *Jesus*.

Wherefore it will be necessary, for the proper interpretation of *Jesus*, to look back upon the first that bare that name, who was the Son of *Nun*, of the tribe of *Ephraim*, the successor of *Moses*, and so named by him, as it is written, ^d *And Moses called Oshea the son of Nun Jehoshua*. His first name then imposed at his Circumcision was *Oshea*, or *Hoseah*; the same with the name of the ^e *son of Azaziah, ruler of Ephraim*, of the ^f *son of Elah, king of Israel*, of the ^g *son of Beer, the Prophet*: and the interpretation of this first name || *Hoseah* is

by the Greek Translation, 1 Chron. 7. 27. where Ὠσηὴ is rendred in the Roman and Alexandrian Copy Ἰησοῦς, in the Aldus and Complutentian Editions Ἰωσὴφ, and by Eusebius, who expresseth it truer than these Copies, Ἰωσὴφ. At last Y was totally left out both in the pronunciation, and the writing, and the whole name of *Joshuah* contracted to Ἰω. ^d Numb. 13. 16. ^e 1 Chron. 27. 20. ^f 2 Kings 17. 1. ^g Hos. 1. 1. || *Osee* in lingua nostra Salvatorem sonat, quod nomen habuit etiam Josue filius Nun, antequam ei à Deo vocabulum mutaretur. S. Hier. in Osee, c. 1. v. 1. & l. 1. adv. Jovinianum. I read indeed of other interpretations among the Greeks, no good expositors of the Hebrew names: as in an ancient MS. of the LXX. Translation of the Prophets, now in the Library of Cardinal Barberini, at the beginning of Hoseah. Ὠσηὴ, λυτρώμενος. and again, Ὠσηὴ, ἱεροσολομικός, ἢ σωτήρ. (Of which the first and last are far from the Original: and the middle agreeable with the root, not with the conjugation, as being deduced from Ὠ, not in Niphath, but in Hiphil) And in another MS. of the Prophets in the King's Library at S. James's, Ὠσηὴ, σωτήρ, ἢ ἱεροσολομικός. and again, Ὠσηὴ, ἱεροσολομικός. which is the interpretation inserted into Hesychius; in whom for Ὠσηὴ we must read Ὠσηὴ. and so I suppose Salmatius intended it, though the Holland Edition hath made his emendation Ὠσηὴ.

Saviour,

* At the same time, the same name, which he was first named and which he had afterwards; as in Num. 13. 16. Duni Moyfi successor destinaretur Aſes filius Nave, transfertur certe de pristino nomine, & incipit vocari Jefus, Tertul. adv. Jud. 8. adu. Marcion. l. 3. S. 16. Igitur Moyſes his adminiſtratis Aufem quendam nomine præponens populo, qui eos revocaret ad patriam terram. Clem. l. 1. Recognit. Qui cum primi- mum Aules vocaretur, Moſes juſſit cum Jeſum vocari. Laſtan. de vera ſap. c. 17. Οὐ πρὸς τὴν γὰρ (Μωϋσῆς) τὴν αὐτὴν διδόντων τὴν τῶν Ἰσραὴλ γεννηθῶν προσηγορίαν, ὀνόμαζεν ἡ ἐκείνη τὴν Αὐτῆς, ὅπως εἰ Ἰουδαῖοι αὐτὴν τέθεικον, καλέμωρον, Ἰησοῦν αὐτὸς ἀνταρῶν. Euseb. Eccl. Hist. l. 1. c. 3. Thus was the Hosaiah something disguised by Aules, and was further estranged yet by those which frequently called him Ναυῶς, as Euseb. Demonst. Ev. l. 5. c. 17. thrice. * This Justin Martyr charges upon the Jews as neglected by them, and affirms the reason why they received not Jesus for the Christ, was their not observing the alteration of Hosaiah into Joshua or Jesus. Αὐτὴν καλέμωρον Ἰησοῦν Μωϋσῆς ἐκάλεσε, τὸτο σὺ ἐζητῶν. διὰ αὐτὴν ἐποίησαν, ἐκ ἀπρεῖς, ἐξ ἐπιλογισμοῦ. τοιαρὲν λίαν θὲ σὲ Χριστὸν, καὶ ἀναγινώσκων ἐ σωτῆρος. And whereas they speak much of the change made in the names of Abram and Sarai, which were but of a letter, they took no notice of this total alteration of the name: so he, διὰ τί τὸ ἐξ ἀβραμ πρῶτον περὶ σελήν τὸ Ἀβραμ ὀνόματι θεολογῆται, καὶ διὰ τί ἐν ῥῶ τὸ Σαράϊ ἐν ῥῶ ὁμοίως κομπολο- γῆται. διὰ τί τὸ παρὲν ὄνομα τὸ Αὐτῆς τὸ ὕμνον Ναὺν ὅλον μετανοήσας τὸ Ἰησοῦ, ἐζητῶν. Where, to pass by the vulgar mistake of the Greeks, who generally deliver the addition of a in the name of Abraham, and e in the name of Sarah, when the first was an addition of η, the second a change of ἰ into η, he would make that of Hosaiah into Jesus a far more considerable al- teration than that of Abraham or of Sarah.

הושיע *
יהושע

¶ For it may well be thought that י is added to make the name יהושע the same with the third person of the future in Hiphil, יהושע. For although ה the characteristic letter of the conjugation Hiphil be excluded in the future tense, and so the regular word be יהושע frequently in use; yet sometimes it is expressed, as it is used, 1 Sam. 17. 47.

לֹא בַחֲבִי
יְבַחֲנִי
יְהוֹשִׁעַ

Saviour. Now we must not imagine this to be * no mutation, neither must we look upon it as a || total alteration, but observe it as a change not trivial or * inconsiderable. And being Hosaiah was a name afterwards used by some, and Jehoshuah, as distinct, by others, it will necessarily follow, there was some difference between these two names; and it will be fit to inquire what was the addition, and in what the force of the alteration doth consist.

¶ So Justin Martyr speaks of Hosaiah as μετονομασθέντος τὸ Ἰησοῦ ὀνόματι. And comparing it with that alteration of Jacob's name; τὸ ἐπ' αὐτὸν Ἰακώβ τὸ Ἰσραὴλ ἐπικληθῆναι ἐδόθη, καὶ τὸ Αὐτῆς ὄνομα Ἰησοῦς ἐπεκλήθη. Where, to pass by his mistake in supposing him first named Israel, and after called Jacob, he makes the alteration of Hosaiah to Joshua equal to that of Jacob to Israel. The reason whereof was the Greek version of the name, who for Hosaiah translated it Αὐτῆς ἐπὶ Ναὺν τὸ Μωϋσῆς ἢ Αὐτῆς ὑμνον Ναὺν Ἰησοῦν, Num. 13. 16. Duni Moyfi successor destinaretur Aſes filius Nave, transfertur certe de pristino nomine, & incipit vocari Jefus, Tertul. adv. Jud. 8. adu. Marcion. l. 3. S. 16. Igitur Moyſes his adminiſtratis Aufem quendam nomine præponens populo, qui eos revocaret ad patriam terram. Clem. l. 1. Recognit. Qui cum primi- mum Aules vocaretur, Moſes juſſit cum Jeſum vocari. Laſtan. de vera ſap. c. 17. Οὐ πρὸς τὴν γὰρ (Μωϋσῆς) τὴν αὐτὴν διδόντων τὴν τῶν Ἰσραὴλ γεννηθῶν προσηγορίαν, ὀνόμαζεν ἡ ἐκείνη τὴν Αὐτῆς, ὅπως εἰ Ἰουδαῖοι αὐτὴν τέθεικον, καλέμωρον, Ἰησοῦν αὐτὸς ἀνταρῶν. Euseb. Eccl. Hist. l. 1. c. 3. Thus was the Hosaiah something disguised by Aules, and was further estranged yet by those which frequently called him Ναυῶς, as Euseb. Demonst. Ev. l. 5. c. 17. thrice. * This Justin Martyr charges upon the Jews as neglected by them, and affirms the reason why they received not Jesus for the Christ, was their not observing the alteration of Hosaiah into Joshua or Jesus. Αὐτὴν καλέμωρον Ἰησοῦν Μωϋσῆς ἐκάλεσε, τὸτο σὺ ἐζητῶν. διὰ αὐτὴν ἐποίησαν, ἐκ ἀπρεῖς, ἐξ ἐπιλογισμοῦ. τοιαρὲν λίαν θὲ σὲ Χριστὸν, καὶ ἀναγινώσκων ἐ σωτῆρος. And whereas they speak much of the change made in the names of Abram and Sarai, which were but of a letter, they took no notice of this total alteration of the name: so he, διὰ τί τὸ ἐξ ἀβραμ πρῶτον περὶ σελήν τὸ Ἀβραμ ὀνόματι θεολογῆται, καὶ διὰ τί ἐν ῥῶ τὸ Σαράϊ ἐν ῥῶ ὁμοίως κομπολο- γῆται. διὰ τί τὸ παρὲν ὄνομα τὸ Αὐτῆς τὸ ὕμνον Ναὺν ὅλον μετανοήσας τὸ Ἰησοῦ, ἐζητῶν. Where, to pass by the vulgar mistake of the Greeks, who generally deliver the addition of a in the name of Abraham, and e in the name of Sarah, when the first was an addition of η, the second a change of ἰ into η, he would make that of Hosaiah into Jesus a far more considerable al- teration than that of Abraham or of Sarah.

First therefore, we observe that all the original letters in the name * Hosaiah are preserved in that of Joshua: from whence 'tis evident that this alteration was not made by a verbal mutation, as when Jacob was called Israel, nor by any literal change, as when Sarai was named Sarah, nor yet by diminution or mutilation; but by addition, as when Abram was called Abraham. Secondly, it must be confessed that there is but one literal addition, and that of that letter, which is most frequent in the Hebrew names: but being thus solemnly added by Moses, upon so remarkable an occasion as the viewing of the land of Canaan was, and that unto a name already known, and after used; it cannot be thought to give any less than a || present designation of his person to be a Saviour of the people, and future certainty of salvation included in his name unto the Israelites by his means. Thirdly, though the number of the letters be augmented actually but to one, yet it is not improbable that another may be virtually added, and in the signification understood. For being the first letter of Hosaiah will not endure a duplication, and if the same letter were to be added, one of them must be absorpt; 'tis possible another of the same might be by Moses intended, and one of them suppressed. If then unto the name Hosaiah we join one of the titles of God, which is Jah, there will result from both, by the custom of the Hebrew tongue, Jehoshuah; and so not only the * instrumental, but also the original cause of the Jews deliverance will be found expressed in one word: as if Moses had said, This is the person by whom God will save his people from their Enemies.

And all the assembly shall know that the Lord saveth (or will save) not with sword and spear: and Psal. 116. 6. וְיָיָהוּשָׁע יְיָ וְיָיָהוּשָׁע I was brought low, and he helped me. And although there be another י in the future than in the name, yet being it is also found sometimes with the lesser Chiric, and so without the latter י, or without any Chiric at all, as frequently with the addition of י יהושע, there is no reason but יהושע, the name of the son of Nun, may be of the same force, as consisting of the same letters, with the third person of the future in Hiphil. Again, being י added to the Future, as formative thereof, stands in the place of י (for the avoiding of confusion with י conjunctive) which is nothing else than the abbreviation of יְיָ, we may well assign at least this Emphasis to the mutation which Moses made; that whereas before there was nothing but Salvation barely in his name, now there is no less than he shall save, in which the יְיָ or י is a peculiar designation of the person, and the shall or Tense a certainty of the future. Thus will the design of Moses appear to be nothing else but a prediction or confirmation of that which was not before, but by way of desire or omination; and this only by changing the Imperative into the Future, יהושע serva, the expectation of the people, into יהושע servabit, the ratification of Moses. * So did the Ancients understand it: to the Greeks Jesus is σωτηρ Θεῷ, to the Latines, Salvator Dei. So Euseb. Demonst. Ev. l. 4. ad finem. Επεὶ ὁ σωτήρ Θεὸς ἐς τὸν ἑλπίδα φέρει τὸ τὸ Ἰησοῦ μετακλήθην ὄνομα σημαίνει. Ἰσχυρὸν γὰρ παρ' Ἑβραίων σωτηρία, ὅς ὁ Ναὺν παρὰ τοῖς αὐτοῖς Ἰωσὴφ

Ἰωσὺς ὀνομαζέσθαι. Ἰωσὺς δὲ ὅτιν Ἰαὼ σωτηρία, τὸν ἔστι, Θεὸν σωτήριον. Where nothing can be more certain than that Ἰαὼ is taken for the name of God, and Ἰαὼ σωτηρία together, the Salvation of God. And yet Theophylact has strangely mistaken it, Mat. 1. 1. Τὸ Ἰησοῦς ὄνομα ἔχει Ἑλληνικὸν ὅτιν, ἀλλ' Ἑβραϊκόν, ἐρμηνεύεται ὁ Σωτὴρ, ἰαὼ δὲ ἡ σωτηρία παρ' Ἑβραίων λέγεται. which words seem plainly to signify that Jesus is interpreted Saviour, because ἰαὼ in the Hebrew tongue signifieth Salvation. I confess the words may be strained to the same sense with those of Eusebius, but not without some force, and contrary to what he seemeth to intend. Especially considering those which followed him in the same mistake, as Moschopolus οὗ γε δὲ Ἰησοῦς, Ἰησοῦς ἐπὶ τοῦ ἰαὼ γινέσθαι, ὃ δηλοῖ παρ' Ἑβραίων ὁ Σωτηριαν. Whereas Ἰαὼ in Eusebius is certainly no other than Ἰαὼ, and Ἰαὼ than Ἰαὼ, and so Ἰωσὺς contracted of Ἰαὼ Ἰωα, the salvation of God. Nor is this only the opinion of Eusebius, but of S. Hierome, a man much better acquainted with the Hebrew language; who on the first Chapter of Hoseah, shewing that Josuah had first the same name with that of the Prophet, saith, Non enim (ut malè in Græcis codicibus legitur & Latinis) Aufe dicti est, quod nihil omnino intelligitur; sed Osee, id est, Salvator: & additum est ejus nomini Dominus, ut Salvator Domini diceretur. What then was it but Ἰαὼ the Dominus added to his name? For as in the name of Elaias, S. Hierome acknowledges the addition of the name of God, Interpretatur autem Esaias Salvator Domini; in the same manner did he conceive it in the name of Josuah, only with this difference, that in the one it begins, in the other concludes the name.

Now being we have thus declared that Jesus is the same name with Josuah, being the name of Josuah was first imposed by Divine designation, as a certain prediction of the fulfilling to the Israelites, by the person which bare the name, all which was signified by the name, being Jesus was likewise named by a more immediate imposition from Heaven, even by the ministration of an Angel; it followeth, that we believe he was infallibly designed by God to perform unto the sons of men whatsoever is implied in his nomination. As therefore in Hoseah there was expressed Salvation, in Josuah at least was added the designation of that single person to save, with certainty of preservation, and probably even the name of God, by whose appointment and power he was made a Saviour; so shall we find the same in Jesus. In the first salutation, the Angel Gabriel told the blessed Virgin, she should conceive in her womb, and bring forth a son, and should call his name Jesus. In the Dream of Joseph the Angel of the Lord informed him not only of the nomination, but of the interpretation or * Etymology; Thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins. In which words is clearly expressed the designation of the person, He, and the futurity of Salvation certain by him, he shall save. Beside, that other addition of the name of God, propounded in Josuah as probable, appeareth here in some degree above probability, and that for two reasons. First, because it is not barely said that He, but as the Original raiseth it, || He himself shall save. Josuah saved Israel not by his own power, not of himself, but God by him; neither saved he his own people, but the people of God: whereas Jesus himself, by his own power, the power of God, shall save his own people, the people of God. Well therefore may we understand the interpretation of his name to be God the Saviour. Secondly, immediately upon the prediction of the name of Jesus, and the interpretation given by the Angel, the Evangelist expressly observeth, ^a All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Behold, a Virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which, being interpreted, is, God with us. Several ways have been invented to shew the fulfilling of that Prophecy, notwithstanding our Saviour was not called Emmanuel; but none can certainly appear more proper, than that the sense of Emmanuel should be comprehended in the name of Jesus: and what else is God with us, than God our Saviour? Well therefore hath the Evangelist conjoined * the Prophet and the Angel asserting Christ was therefore named Jesus, because it was foretold he should be called Emmanuel, the Angelical God the Saviour being in the highest propriety the Prophetical God with us.

However, the constant Scripture-interpretation of this name is Saviour. So said the Angel of the Lord to the amazed Shepherds, ^b Unto you is born this day in the City of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. So S. Paul to the Jews and Gentile Profelytes at Antioch, ^c Of this man's seed hath God, accord-

Luke 1. 31.

* Jesus Hebræo sermone Salvator dicitur. Etymologiam ergo nominis ejus Evangelista signavit, dicens, Vocabis nomen ejus Jesum, quia ipse salvum faciet populum suum. S. Hier.

|| Αὐτὸς, ipse.

^a Mat. 1. 22. 23.

* Βλέπετε ἰσχυροῦς Εὐαγγελιστὴς καὶ παρὰ πάντων ῥήσεων; μεθερμηνεύοντα ὅτι τὸ μεθ' ἡμῶν ὁ Θεὸς, ὃ ὅτι σωτήρια τὰ λαοῦ, τὸ μετὰ δαδων δεσποτῶν ἡμφοιλοχρεῖν. Andreas Cretensis in Circunc.

^b Luke 2. 11.

^c Acts 13. 23.

ing

* Jupiter the chief of them was most usually worshipped under this title Euripides makes Amphitrion sitting by his Altar, which Hercules had built, Εαμὶν καθίζω τὸν Διὸς Σωτῆρα. And Aristophanes introduces Bacchus swearing, Νῦν τὸν Δία τὸν Σωτῆρα as if it were the familiar Oath among the Athenians, as

ing to his promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus. Which explication of this sacred Name was not more new or strange unto the world, than was the Name it self so often used before. For the ancient Grecians usually gave it at first as a title to their * Gods, whom after any remarkable preservations they stiled Saviours, and under that notion built Temples and consecrated Altars to them. Nor did they rest with their mistaken piety, but made it stoop unto their baser flattery, calling those men their || Saviours for whom they seemed to have as great respect and honour as for their gods.

Nor does it always signifie so much as that it may not be attributed to man : for even in the Scriptures the Judges of Israel were called no less than their Saviours. ^a When the children of Israel cried unto the Lord, the Lord raised up a deliverer to the children of Israel, who delivered them, even Othniel the son of Kenaz. And again, When they cried unto the Lord, the Lord raised them up a deliverer, Ehud the son of Gera. Where though in our Translation we call Othniel and Ehud Deliverers, yet in the Original they are plainly termed * Saviours.

well it might be, he having his Temple in their Piræum, as Strabo testifieth, l. 5. (where Demosthenes by virtue of a Decree was to build him an Altar. Plut. in vita Demosth.) and his Porch in the City, which was called indeed vulgarly τὸ Ἐλευθερίου Διὸς σός, yet was it also named τὸ Σωτῆρος as Harpocration and Hesychius have observed. Ὅτι ὁ ἐπιγέγραπται μὲν Σωτῆρ, ὀνομάζεται δὲ Ἐλευθέριος, ὁμοῖοι δὲ Μένανδρος. so the first. Τὸν Μένανδρον ἐκκυρόεις ἰδρύσαντο τὸ Ἐλευθέριον Διά, πῶτον δὲ ἔτιοι δὲ Σωτῆρ, ὡς αὖτε. so the latter. As in their oaths, so in their feasts they mentioned him always at the third cup. Τὸν μὲν πρῶτον Διὸς Ὀλυμπίου καὶ δεῦν Ὀλυμπίαν ἔλεγον, τὸ δὲ τρίτον Ἐλευθέριον, τὸ δὲ τέτατον Σωτῆρα, sub. Διὸς which is omitted in Hesychius, as appears out of Athenæus, l. 2. and 15. And especially that of Alexis the Comedian : Ἀλλ' ἔρχομαι Αὐτῷ Διὶ γὰρ τῷ δὲ Σωτῆρι. δεῦν θιντοῖς ἀπάντων χρησιμώτατον πολὺ Ὁ Ζεὺς ὁ Σωτῆρ. Pausanias in Corinthiacis, Mellenicis, Laconicis & Arcadicis, mentions several Statues and Temples anciently dedicated to Jupiter, ὅτι κληθὲν Σωτῆρι. Of which title Cornutus in his Book De natura Deorum gives this account. Κατὰ τὴν ἑλληνικὴν ἰδέαν καὶ τὸ σῶζεν ἢ ῥυθύνει, καὶ τὸ Διὸς ἐντεῦθεν Σωτῆρ τὸ ἔχει λεγόμενον. And though this title was so generally given to Jupiter, as that Hesychius expounds Σωτῆρ, ὁ Ζεὺς, yet was it likewise attributed to the other gods : as Herodotus relates how the Grecians in their Naval War against the Persians made their vows Ποσειδάωνι Σωτῆρι, and that they preserved the title to Neptune in his days, l. 7. And Artemidorus takes notice that Castor and Pollux are taken for the θεοὶ Σωτῆρες, whom the Poem bearing the name of Orpheus to Museus calls μεγάλας σωτῆρας, οὓς Διὸς ἀδελφὰ τέκνα. as the Hymn of Homer, Σωτῆρας τέκε πάδας ἐπιχθονίων ἀνθρώπων, Ὀκυπέων τε ρεῶν—and Theocritus in the Idyllium on them, Ἀνθρώπων σωτῆρας ὅππῃ ἔσθ' ἡστέον. Hence Lucian in Alexandro useth it as their constant title, ἀλλ' ἔτι καὶ Ἡρόκλητος, καὶ Ζεὺς Σωτῆρ, καὶ Διόσκουρος Σωτῆρες. Neither have we mention of the title only, but of the original and occasion of it. For when Castor and Pollux thrust the sons of Theseus out of Athens, and made Menestheus King, he gave them first this name διὰ ταῦτα πρῶτον δὲ Μενεστεύς ἀνακλῆς τε καὶ Σωτῆρες ὀνόμασε. Alian. Var. Hist. l. 4. c. 5. Beside these, we read in the ancient Inscriptions, Ἀσκληπιῷ Θεῷ Σωτῆρι, and again, Ἀσκληπιῷ καὶ Ὑγίᾳ Σωτῆρι. For as they had their Female Deities, so did they attribute this title to their Goddesses, and that both in the Masculine and the Feminine Gender. As to Venus, Ἀρεσδίτῃ Θεῷ Παναγῇ καὶ Σατῆρι. to Diana, Ἀρτέμιδι Σωτῆρι, as the same collection of Inscriptions hath it. Thus Phierocrates, Ἡρώδῃ καὶ πόλει καὶ τῷ ταύταις Σωτῆρας and Sophocles, Τύχη γὰρ τῷ Σωτῆρι. Thus the Epigram extant in Suidas, Φωτεινῇ Θεῷ Σωτῆρι, ἐπὶ Πηλεΐδῃ Ἰσθμικῇ, Ἀρτεμίδι. Οὐδὲν ἦν ἢ κακῆρον Σωτῆρα καὶ ἀλλ' ἔτι κακῆρον περὶ σαρκεύον. Theodoret. Sermon. 8. 595. f. Hercules. The Bœotians, an ancient people in Peloponnesus, Ἀρτεμιν ὀνομάζουσι Σωτῆρα. Paul. in Laconicis. Her Temple and Statue in the City Træzen was built and named by Theseus at his safe return from Crete. The Megarenies preserved by her from the Persians, ὅτι τὸ δὲ Σωτῆρας ἀγαλμα ἐποίησαν Ὀρτέμιδον. and upon the same occasion another of the same signification set up at Page. l. d. But this title especially was given to Minerva. Σωτῆρα ἢ Ἀθηνᾶ πρὸς τοῖς Ἑλλησιν, Hesych. Ἐστὶ δὲ Ἀθηνᾶ Σωτῆρα λεγόμενη, ἢ καὶ θύουσι. Schol. Aristoph. in Ranas. Aristotle in his Will obliged Nicanor to a dedication διὰ Σωτῆρα καὶ Ἀθηνᾶ Σωτῆρα. Laert. in Vit. Arist. And in general they invoked God under the notion of Σωτῆρα, as Plato in Timæo, Θεὸν δὲ ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ ἀρχὴ τῶν λεγόμενων Σωτῆρα εἶς ἀτόν καὶ ἀθῆος διηνήπιος σὺν τὸ ἦν εἰκότων δόγμα διασκεῖν ἡμᾶς ἐκκαλεσάμενοι, πάλιν ἀρχὴν ἀγνῶν λέγουσι. || This was the constant title of the first Ptolemy, the son of Lagus, given to him by the Rhodians. Ὀνόμαζα μὲν δὲ καὶ τὰ αὐτὰ Πτολεμαῖοι Κρῖον, ἀλλὰ δὲ ὅτι κληθὲς ἄλλω. καὶ γὰρ Φιλομήτορα καλεῖται, καὶ Φιλάδελφον ἑτέρον, τὸ δὲ καὶ Λάγυν Σωτῆρα, πρὸς δόντων Ῥοδίων τὸ ὄνομα. Paul. Atticis. Which name first given him by the Rhodians was no way expressed in his usage of the Syrians, as is observed by Josephus, ὡς καὶ τὸ Σωτῆρα ἀπασαν σὺν Πτολεμαῖοις τὰ Λάγυν Σωτῆρα τὸ τότε χρηματίζοντο τὰ ἐκκλησία παθὲν αὐτῷ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ. This was so familiar, that Tertullian useth the title instead of the name. Post eum (sc. Alexandrum) regnavit illic in Alexandria Soter annis 35. Thus Antigonus was first called by the Greeks their Εὐεργέτης, or Benefactor, then Σωτῆρ, or Saviour : ὁ μόνον ἐκείνη παρ' αὐτὸν καὶ καλεῖται Εὐεργέτης, ἀλλὰ καὶ μετὰ αὐτῶν Σωτῆρ. Polyb. l. 5. Thus we read of Demetrius, who restored the Athenians to their liberty ; ἀνεκρίσαν, καὶ βεβῆντες ἐκείνου σπένδοντι τὸν Διμήτριον, Σωτῆρα καὶ Εὐεργέτην ἀναγερόντες. Plut. in Vita. And not only so, but numbered Demetrius and Antigonus among their Dii Soteres ; and instead of their annual Archon, whose name they used in their distinction of years, they created a Priest of these Dii Soteres, as the same Author testifieth : μόνος δὲ Σωτῆρας ἀνέγεγεν θένος καὶ τὸ ἐάντων καὶ πλείονος ἀρχόντα καὶ παύσαντες, ἐξέειρε Σωτῆρα ἐκείνου καὶ ἐκείνου ἐν αὐτοῖς. Appian relates of Demetrius that he received this title from the Babylonians. Τίμαρχον ἐπανιστάμενον ἀνελών, καὶ τὰλλα ποιησῶς τὸ βασιλεύον ἡγεμόνον, ἐστὶ δὲ Σωτῆρ ἀνέστη ἀπὸ τῶν Βαβυλωνίων ὀνομάσθη. De bell. Syriac. Lucian's mistake in his Saturation tells us of Ἀντισωτῆρ ὁ Σωτῆρ, and Appian gives us the routing of the Gauls as the cause of that title : δε καὶ Σωτῆρ ἐπεκλήθη Γαλάταις ἐν τῷ Εὐεργέτης ἐστὶ Ἀσπὴν ἐκκαλεῖνται εἶς ἑαυτοῦς. Ibid. And in process of time this title grew so customary and familiar, that the Sicilians bestowed it upon Verres their oppressor. Ita que illum non solum Paternum illius infule, sed etiam Sotera in scriptum vidi Caraculis. Sicut Cicero, Verrin. 2. 3. Judg. 2. 9. and 3. 15. + Heb. וְיִשְׁמַח וְיִשְׁמַח וְיִשְׁמַח וְיִשְׁמַח וְיִשְׁמַח וְיִשְׁמַח So the Septuagint clearly, καὶ ἡγερε καὶ Σωτῆρα τῷ Ισραὴλ, καὶ ἔσωσεν αὐτούς, τὸ Γοθονίη ἦν Κενέζ. Qui suscitavit eis Salvatorem, & liberavit eos, Othniel. Again, καὶ ἡγερε καὶ αὐτοῖς Σωτῆρα τὸ Ἀδὸν, ἦν Γερά. Qui suscitavit eis Salvatorem vocabulo Aloth, filium Gera, Ver. Transl. Upon which place S. Augustine notes, Animadvertendum est autem quod Salvatorem dicat etiam hominem, per quem Deus salves faciat. Quæst. l. 7. c. 13.

Now what the full import and ultimate sense of the Title of *Saviour* might be, seemed not easie to the Ancients: and the * best of the *Latins* thought the *Greek* word so pregnant and comprehensive, that the *Latin* tongue had no single word able to express it.

* So Cicero, in the place before cited, having said he saw Ver-

res inscribed Sotera, goes on, Hoc quantum est? ita magnuni, ut Latino uno verbo exprimi non possit. But though in Cicero's time there was no Latin word used in that sense; yet not long after it was familiar. For as in the *Greek* inscriptions we read often Dedications Δὲ Σωτήρι. so in the *Latin* we find often Jovi Servatori, or Conservatori, sometimes Jovi Salvatori, or Salutari: all which are nothing else but the *Latine* expressions of the *Greek* inscriptions. And without question Σωτήρ might have been rendred Sospitor; and even Sospes, as it was used in the days of Ennius. Sospes, salvus: Ennius tamen sospitem pro servatore posuit. Festus. Neither indeed could the Sicilians mean any more of Verres by the word Sotera, than Tully spake of himself, when he styled himself Servatorem recipub. At least Tacitus did conceive that Conservator is as much as Soter, when speaking of Milichus, who detected the conspiracies to Nero, he saith, Milichus pramiis ditatus Conservatoris sibi nomen, Græco ejus rei vocabulo, assumpsit. Annal. l. 15. He took to himself the Name of Conservator, in a *Greek* word which signifies so much: and without question that must be Σωτήρ. However, the first Christians of the *Latin* Church were sometimes in doubt what word to use as the constant interpretation of Σωτήρ, so frequent and essential to Christianity. Tertullian useth Salificator, or, as some books read it, Salvificator: Ergo jam non unus Deus, nec unus Salificator, si duo saluris artifices, & utrique alter altero indigens. De Carne Christi, c. 14. and shews it was so translated in the Philippians 3. 20. Et quidem de terra in cælum, ubi nostrum nuncicipant Philippenses quoque ab Apostolo discunt; unde & Salificatorem nostrum expectamus Jesum Christum. De Resur. Carnis, c. 47. S. Hilary thought Salutaris a sufficient interpretation. Est autem Salutaris ipso illo nomine quo Jesus nuncupatur. Jesus enim secundum Hebraicam linguam Salutaris est. in Psal. 118. S. Augustine is indifferent between that and Salvatore: Deus salvos faciendi Dominus est Jesus, quod interpretatur Salvator, sive Salutaris: and so Lactant. At last they generally used the word *Salvator*. First, Tertullian, Christus in illo significabatur, taurus ob utramque dispositionem; aliis ferus, ut iudex, aliis mansuetus, ut Salvator. adv. Marcion. l. 3. a. 18. Which word of his was rather followed by his Imitator S. Cyprian, after whom Arnobius used it, after him his Disciple Lactantius: and from thence it continued the constant language of the Church, till the late Innovators thrust it out of the *Latine* Translation.

But whatsoever notion the Heathen had of their Gods or Men which they styled *Saviours*, we know this name belongeth unto *Christ* in a more sublime and peculiar manner. Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved. Acts 4. 12.

It remaineth therefore that we should explain how and for what reasons *Christ* truly is and properly is called, our *Saviour*. First then, I conceive one sufficient cause of that appellation to consist in this, that he hath opened and declared unto us the only true way for the obtaining eternal Salvation, and by such patefaction can deserve no less than the name of *Saviour*. For if those Apostles and preachers of the Gospel, who received the way of Salvation from him, which they delivered unto others, may be said to save those persons which were converted by their preaching; in a far more eminent and excellent manner must he be said to save them, who first revealed all those truths unto them. S. Paul provoked to emulation them which were his flesh, that he might save some of them; and was made all things to all men, that he might by all means save some. He exhorted Timothy to take heed unto himself, and unto the doctrine, and continue in them; for in doing this, he should both save himself and them that heard him. And S. James speaks in more general terms; Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; Let him know, that he which converteth a sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death. Now if these are so expressly said to save the Souls of them which are converted by the doctrine which they deliver, with much more reason must *Christ* be said to save them, whose Ministers they are, and in whose name they speak. For it was he which came and preached peace to them which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. The Will of God concerning the Salvation of man was revealed by him. No man hath seen God at any time: the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him. Being then the Gospel of *Christ* is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth, being they which preach it at the command of *Christ* are said to save the Souls of such as believe their word, being it was *Christ* alone who brought life and immortality to light through the gospel; therefore he must in a most eminent and singular manner be acknowledged thereby to save, and consequently must not be denied, even in this first respect, the title of *Saviour*.

L

Secondly,

Secondly, this *Jefus* hath not only revealed, but also procured, the way of Salvation; not only delivered it to us: but also wrought it out for us: and so God sent his Son into the world, that the world through him might be saved. We were all concluded under sin, and, being the wages of sin is death, we were obliged to eternal punishment, from which it was impossible to be freed, except the sin were first remitted. Now this is the constant rule, that without shedding of blood is no remission. It was therefore necessary that Christ should appear to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And so he did, for he shed his blood for many, for the remission of sins, as himself professeth in the Sacramental institution: he bare our sins in his own body on the tree, as S. Peter speaks; and so in him we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins. And if while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us: much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath by him. Again, we were all enemies unto God, and having offended him, there was no possible way of Salvation, but by being reconciled to him. If then we ask the question, as once the *Philistines* did concerning *David*, *Wherewith should we reconcile our selves unto our Master?* we have no other name to answer it but *Jefus*. For God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them. And as under the Law the blood of the sin-offering was brought into the tabernacle of the congregation to reconcile withal in the holy place; so it pleased the Father through the Son, having made peace by the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself. And thus it comes to pals, that us who were enemies in our mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death. And upon this reconciliation of our persons must necessarily follow the Salvation of our Souls. For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled unto God by the death of his Son; much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. Furthermore, we were all at first enslaved by sin, and brought into captivity by Satan, neither was there any possibility of escape but by way of Redemption. Now it was the Law of *Moses*, that if any were able he might redeem himself: but this to us was impossible, because absolute obedience in all our actions is due unto God, and therefore no act of ours can make any satisfaction for the least offence. Another law gave yet more liberty, that he which was sold might be redeemed again; one of his brethren might redeem him. But this in respect of all the mere sons of men was equally impossible, because they were all under the same captivity. Nor could they satisfy for others, who were wholly unable to redeem themselves. Wherefore there was no other brother, but that Son of man which is the Son of God, who was like unto us in all things, sin only excepted, which could work this redemption for us. And what he only could, that he freely did perform. For the Son of man came to give his life a ransom for many: and as he came to give, so he gave himself a ransom for all. So that in him we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins. For we are bought with a price: for we are redeemed, not with corruptible things, as silver and gold; but with the precious blood of Christ, as a lamb without blemish and without spot. He then which hath obtained for us remission of sins, he who through himself hath reconciled us to God, he who hath given himself as a ransom to redeem us, he who hath thus wrought out the way of Salvation for us, must necessarily have a second and a far higher right unto the name of *Jefus*, unto the title of our Saviour.

Thirdly, beside the promulging and procuring, there is yet a farther act, which is, conferring of Salvation on us. All which we mentioned before was wrought by virtue of his death, and his appearance in the Holy of holies: but we must still believe, he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto

unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. For now being set down at the right hand of God, he hath received all power both in Heaven and Earth; and the end of this power which he hath received is, to confer Salvation upon those which believe in him. For the Father gave the Son *this power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as he hath given him*; that he should raise our bodies out of the dust, and cause our corruptible to put on incorruption, and our mortal to put on immortality: and upon this power we are to expect Salvation from him. For we must look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, from heaven, who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself. And unto them that thus look for him shall he appear the second time, without sin, unto salvation. Being then we are all to endeavour that our spirits may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus; being S. Peter hath taught us, that God hath exalted Christ with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour; being the conferring of that upon us which he promised to us, and obtained for us, is the reward of what he suffered; therefore we must acknowledge that the actual giving of Salvation to us is the ultimate and conclusive ground of the title *Saviour*.

Thus by the virtue of his precious blood Christ hath obtained remission of our sins, by the power of his grace hath taken away the dominion of sin, in the life to come will free us from all possibility of sinning, and utterly abolish death the wages of sin: wherefore well said the Angel of the Lord ^a *Thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins*; well did Zacharias call him ^b *an horn of salvation*; Simeon, ^c *the salvation of God*; S. Paul, ^d *the captain and author of eternal salvation*; S. Peter, ^e *a Prince and a Saviour*, correspondent to those Judges of Israel, raised up by God himself to deliver his people from the hands of their enemies, and for that reason called *Saviours*. ^f *In the time of their trouble*, say the Levites, *when they cried unto thee, thou heardest them from heaven, and according to thy manifold mercies thou gavest them Saviours, who saved them out of the hand of their enemies*.

The correspondency of Jesus unto those temporal Saviours will best appear, if we consider it particularly in Josuah, who bare that Salvation in his name, and approved it in his actions. For, as the son of Sirach saith, ^g *Jesus the son of Nave was valiant in the wars, and was the successor of Moses in prophecies, who, according to his name, was made great for the saving of the elect of God*. Although therefore Moses was truly and really ^h *a ruler and deliverer*, which is the ^{*} same with Saviour; although the rest of the Judges were also by their office Rulers and Deliverers, and therefore styled Saviours, as expressly Othniel and Ehud are; yet Josuah, far more particularly and exactly than the rest, is represented as a Type of our Jesus, and that typical singularity manifested in his || name. For first, He it was alone, of all which passed out of Egypt, who was design'd to lead the children of Israel into Canaan, the land of promise, flowing with milk and honey. Which land as it was a type of the Heaven of Heavens, the inheritance of the Saints, and eternal joys flowing from the right hand of God; so is the Person which brought the Israelites into that place of rest ^{*} a Type of him who only can bring us into the presence of God, and there prepare our mansions for us, and assign them to us, as Josuah divided the land for an inheritance to the Tribes. Besides, it is farther observable, not only what Josuah did, but what Moses could not do. The hand of Moses and Aaron brought them out of Egypt, but left them in the Wilderness, and could not seat them in Canaan. Josuah, the successor, only could effect that in which Moses failed. Now nothing is more frequent in the phrase of the Holy Ghost; than to take Moses for the doctrine delivered, or the books

John 17. 2.

Phil. 3. 20, 21.

Heb. 9. 28.

1 Cor. 5. 5.

Acts 5. 31.

^a Matt. 1. 21.^b Luke 1. 39.^c Luke 2. 30.^d Heb. 5. 9.^e Heb. 2. 10.^f Acts 5. 35.^g Nehem. 9. 27.^h Ecclus. 46. 1.ⁱ Acts 7. 35.^{*} Hefsch. Πρὸς

Σιν, πρὸς τὴν λυ-

τῆς ἡλίου. and a-

gain, Σαῦρ ὁ

Ζαΰς ὁ ἐλδὸς

εἰς τὴν λυγρῶ-

της.

|| Quantum acci-

net ad propheticum

apparatur, nec geri-

nec dici ali-

quid possit in-

signius, quan-

doquidem res

perducta est

usq; nominis

expressionem.

S. Aug. contra

Faust. 16. 19.

^{*} Ὁν τέρπον

ἐλδὸν τὸν ἡσὺν

ζαῦν εἰς τὸν

ἀγίαν γῆν τὴν

λαδὸν, ἐχὶ Μω-

σῆς. καὶ ὡς ἐ-

κὼν τὸν κλη-

ρω δὲ τὴν ἐλδὸν

αὐτὸν τοῖς ἐ-

σπασθῆσι μετ'

αὐτοῦ. ὅτι καὶ

Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χρι-

στὸς ἦν διὰ τὸν

ἐλδὸν τὴν λαδὸν

εἰσελθεῖν, καὶ

διὰ τὴν ἐλδὸν

ἀγαθὴν γῆν

ἐλκεσθαι. Justin.

Dial. cum Triph.

* As Luke 16.
23, 24.

and 24. 27.

Joh. 5. 45, 46.

Acts 5. 11.

collated with

the 13. vers.

Acts 15. 21.

and 21. 21.

2 Cor. 3. 15.

Μωϋσῆς ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

written by him, that is, the * Law; from whence it followeth, that the death of Moses and the succession of Josuah presignified the continuance of the Law till Jesus came, ^a by whom all that believe are justified from all things, from which we could not be justified by the Law of Moses. ^b The Law and the Prophets were until John: since that the kingdom of God is preached. Moses must die, that Josuah may succeed. ^c By the deeds of the Law there shall no flesh be justified, (for by the Law is the knowledge of sin;) but the righteousness of God without the Law is manifested, even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe. Moses indeed seems to have taken Josuah with him up into the || Mount: but if he did, sure it was to enter the cloud which covered the Mount where the glory of the Lord abode: for * without Jesus, in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge, there is no looking into the secrets of Heaven, no approaching to the presence of God. The command of Circumcision was not given unto Moses, but to Josuah; nor were the Israelites circumcised in the Wilderness, under the conduct of Moses and Airon, but in the land of Canaan, under their Successour. For ^d at that time the Lord said unto Josuah, Make thee sharp knives, and circumcise again the children of Israel the second time. Which speaketh || Jesus to be the true circumciser, the author of another circumcision than that of the flesh commanded by the Law, even ^e the circumcision of the heart in the spirit, and not in the Letter; that which ^f is made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, which is therefore called the circumcision of Christ.

Præm. Cum

successor Moyſi designaretur Ausus filius Nave, transferratur certè de pristino nomine, & incipit vocari Jesus. Certè, inquit, Hæc prius dicimus figuram futuri fuisse. Nam quia Jesus Christus secundum populum, quod sumus nos, nationes in sæculi deserto commorantes antea, introducturus esset in terram repromissionis melle & lacte manantem, id est, in vitam æternæ possessionem, quâ nihil dulcius, idque non per Moysen, id est, non per Legis disciplinam, sed per Jesum, id est, per novæ Legis gratiam, provenire habebat, circumcisis nobis petrina acie, id est, Christi præceptis, (petra enim Christus multis modis & figuris prædicatus est;) ideo is vir qui in hujus Sacramenti imagine parabatur, etiam hominis Dominici inauguratus est figura, ut Jesus nominaretur Tertul. adv. Judeos, c. 9. & adv. Marcion. l. 3. c. 15. Idcirco Moyſi etiam successit, ut ostenderet novam legem, per Jesum Christum datam, veteri legi successuram, quæ data per Moysen fuit. Laſtan. de Vera Sup. l. 4. c. 17. In cujus comparatione (Moyſes) improbatuſ est, ut non ipse introduceret populum in terram promissionis; ne videlicet Lex per Moysen, non ad salvandum, sed ad convincendum peccatorem, data, in regnum cælorum introducere putaretur, seu gratia & veritas per Jesum Christum facta. S. Aug. contra Faustum, l. 16. c. 19. Jesus dux qui populum eduxerat de Agypto, Jesus qui interpretatur Salvaror, Moſe mortuo & sepulto in Moab, hoc est, Legem mortuam, in Evangelium cupit inducere populum suum. S. Hieron. in Psal. 85. ^a Acts 13. 39. ^b Luke 16. 16. ^c Rom. 3. 20, 21. 22. || Exod. 24. 13. ^d Moyſes in nubem intravit, ut operata & occulta cognosceret, adhaerente sibi secio Jesu, quia nemo sine vero Jesu potest incerta sapientiar, & occulta comprehendere. Et ideo in specie Jesu Nave veri Salvaroris significabatur affutura præſentia, per quem fierent omnes docibiles Dei, qui Legem aperiret, Evangelium revelaret. S. Ambros. in Psal. 47. ^e Jof. 5. 2. || Non enim propheta sic ait, Et dixit Dominus ad me; sed ad Jesum: ut ostenderet quod non de se loqueretur, sed de Christo, ad quem tum Deus loquebatur. Christi enim figuram gerebat ille Jesus. Laſtan. l. 4. c. 17. ^f Rom. 2. 29. ^g Col. 2. 11.

¹ Exod. 24. 13.

Jof. 1. 1.

² Rom. 15. 8.

³ John 1. 17.

* Γύπον, ὁ

εὐαγγέλιον ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

νόμος ὁ νόμος, ὁ

Thus if we look upon Josuah as the ^a minister of Moses, he is even in that a type of Christ, the ^b minister of the circumcision for the truth of God. If we look on him as the successour of Moses, in that he representeth Jesus, inasmuch as ^c the Law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. If we look on him as now Judge and Ruler of Israel, there is scarce an action which is not clearly predictive of our Saviour. * He begins his office at the banks of Jordan, where Christ is baptized, and enters upon the publick exercise of his propheticall office. He chuseth there twelve men out of the people, to carry twelve stones over with them; as our Jesus thence began to chuse his || twelve Apostles, those foundation-stones in the Church of God, whose ^d names are in the twelve foundations of the wall of the holy City, the new Jerusalem. It hath been * observed, that the saving Rahab the Harlot alive foretold what Jesus once should speak to the Jews, ^e Verily I say unto you, that

aided the land by twelve men; Δώδεκα δὲ διαβῆναι τὴν κληρονομίαν καθίστησι ὁ τὰ Νεὴν Ἰερὺς, καὶ δώδεκα τῶν Ἀποστόλων καθίστανται τὰς ἀληθείας εἰς πᾶσαν τὴν οἰκουμένην ἀπεδείξει ὁ Ἰησοῦς. Ibid. ^d Rev. 21. 14. ^e By the same S. Cyril, Πιστεύουσιν ὅτι αὐτὴ τὴν πόλιν Ἰερουσαλὴμ ὁ τυτικὸς ὁ δὲ ἀληθὴς φησιν, ἰδὲ οἱ τελευτᾶν καὶ οἱ πόρνοι ἀποθήσονται ὑμῶν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ Θεοῦ. ^f Matth. 21. 31.

the Publicans and harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. ^a He said in the sight of Israel, *Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon: and the Sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day.* Which great miracle was not only wrought by the power of him whose name he bare, but did also * signify that in the latter days, toward the setting of the Sun, when the light of the world was tending unto a night of darkness, *the Sun of righteousness should arise with healing in his wings,* and, giving a check to the approaching night, become ^b *the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the World.*

But to pass by more particulars, *Josuah* smote the *Amalekites*, and subdued the *Canaanites*; by the first making way to enter the Land, by the second giving possession of it. And *Jesus* our *Prince and Saviour*, whose kingdom was not of this world, in a spiritual manner goeth in and out before us against our spiritual enemies, subduing sin and Satan, and so opening and clearing our way to Heaven; destroying the last enemy, Death, so giving us possession of eternal life. || Thus do we believe the man called *Jesus* to have fulfilled, in the highest degree imaginable, all which was but typified in him who first bare the name, and in all the rest which succeeded in his office, and so to be the Saviour of the world; ^c *whom God hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David, That we should be saved from our enemies, and the hands of all that hate us.*

ritatem. S. Ambros. Apoloz. David, poster. c. 4. Ille imperavit Soli ut staret; & stetit, & istius typo ille magnus erat. Ille imperabat, sed Dominus efficiebat. S. Hieron. in Psal. 76. ^b John 1. 9. || Τί λέγει τάλιν Μωσής πρὸς τὸν Ναυὴ ὁ υἱὸς Ναυὴ· ὅτι πάλιν ὁ πατήρ φανερώσει τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ. καὶ ὁ υἱὸς αὐτοῦ κατασκοπεύει τὴν γῆν. λαβὼν βιβλίον εἰς τὰς χεῖρας αὐτοῦ, καὶ γράφων αὐτὸν λέγει· ὅτι ἐκ τῶν ἐκκόψεων πάντων τῶν οἰκόντων τὴν Αὐαλίαν ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐπ' ἐχάτων ἡμερῶν. Οἱ 3 (12 idē) τάλιν Ἰησοῦς ὁ υἱὸς ἀνθρώπου, ἀλλ' ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, τὸν πῶς ἐν Γαζα φανερώσεις. Barnabæ Epist. c. 9. ^c Luke 1. 69, 71.

The necessity of the belief of this part of the Article is not only certain, but evident: because there is no end of Faith without a Saviour, and no other name but this by which we can be saved, and no way to be saved by him but by believing in him. For *this is his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ: and he that keepeth his commandment dwelleth in him, and he in him.* From him then, and from him alone, must we expect Salvation, acknowledging and confessing freely there is nothing in our selves which can effect or deserve it from us, nothing in any other creature which can promerit or procure it to us. For *there is but one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.* 'Tis only the beloved Son, in whom God is well pleased: *he is clothed with a vesture dyed in blood; he hath trod the wine-press alone.* We like sheep have gone astray, and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all. By him God hath reconciled all things to himself, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth or things in heaven. By him alone is our Salvation wrought: for his sake then only can we ask it, from him alone expect it.

Secondly, this Belief is necessary, that we may delight and rejoyce in the name of *Jesus*, as that in which all our happiness is involv'd. At his nativity an Angel from Heaven thus taught the Shepherds, the first witnesses of the blessed Incarnation; *Behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day, in the City of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.* And what the Angel delivered at present, that the Prophet *Isaiab*, that old Evangelist, foretold at distance. When the people which walked in darkness should see a great light; when unto us a child should be born, unto us a son should be given; then should they joy before God, according to the joy of harvest, and as men rejoyce when they divide the spoil. When God shall come with

* Steric Sol, quia in Jesu & typum futuri agnoscebat & nomen. Neque enim in sua virtute Jesu Nave, sed in Christi mysterio ecclestibus luminibus imperabar. Designabatur enim Dei filium in hoc seculum esse venturum, qui mundani luminis concidentis, & jam veritatis in rebras, virtute divina differret occidit, lucem redderet, invehret claritatem.

¹ John 3. 23, 24.

¹ Tim. 2. 5.

Isa. 53. 6.

Col. 1. 20.

Luke 2. 10, 11.

Isa. 9. 2, 6, 3.

Isa. 35. 4, 12.

with recompence, when he shall come and save us; then the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Sion with songs, and everlasting joy upon their heads.

Thirdly, the belief in Jesus ought to inflame our affection, to kindle our love toward him, engaging us to hate all things in respect of him, that is, so far as they are in opposition to him, or pretend to equal share of affection with him. *He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me, and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me*, saith our Saviour; so forbidding all prelation of any natural affection, because our spiritual union is far beyond all such relations. Nor is a higher degree of love only debarr'd us, but any equal pretension is as much forbidden. *If any man come to me*, saith the same Christ, *and hate not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brethren and sisters, yea and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple*. Is it not this Jesus in whom the love of God is demonstrated to us, and that in so high a degree as is not expressible by the pen of man? *God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son*. Is it not he who shewed his own love to us far beyond all possibility of parallel? *for greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends*: but while we were yet sinners, that is, enemies, Christ died for us, and so became our Jesus. Shall thus the Father shew his love in his Son? Shall thus the Son shew his love in himself? and shall we no way study a requital? or is there any proper return of love but love? The voice of the Church, in the language of Solomon, is, *My love*: nor was that only the expression of a Spouse, but of * Ignatius, a man, after the Apostles, most remarkable. And whosoever considereth the infinite benefits to the sons of men flowing from the actions and sufferings of their Saviour, cannot choose but conclude with S. Paul, *If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maran-atha*.

Lastly, the confession of faith in Jesus is necessary to breed in us a correspondent esteem of him, and an absolute obedience to him. That we may be raised to the true temper of S. Paul, who counted all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus our Lord, for whom he suffered the loss of all things, and counted them but dung, that he might win Christ. Nor can we pretend to any true love of Jesus, except we be sensible of the readiness of our obedience to him: as knowing what language he used to his Disciples, *If ye love me, keep my commandments*; and what the Apostle of his bosom spake, *This is the love of God, that we keep his commandments*. His own Disciples once marvelled, and said, *What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him*? How much more should we wonder at all disobedient Christians, saying, *What manner of men are these, who refuse obedience unto him whom the senseless creatures, the winds and the sea, obeyed*? Was the name of Jesus at first sufficient to cast out devils? and shall man be more refractory than they? Shall the Exorcist say to the evil spirit, *I adjure thee by the name of Jesus*, and the devil give place? Shall an Apostle speak unto us in the same name, and we refuse? Shall they obey that name, which signifieth nothing unto them; for he took not on him the nature of Angels, and so is not their Saviour? and can we deny obedience unto him, who took on him the seed of Abraham, and became obedient to death even the death of the Cross, for us, that we might be raised to full power and absolute dominion over us, and by that power be enabled at last to save us, and in the mean time to rule and govern us, and exact the highest veneration from us? For God hath highly exalted him, and given him a Name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth.

Having thus declared the Original of the name Jesus, the means and ways by

by which he which bare it expressed fully the utmost signification of it; we may now clearly deliver, and every particular Christian easily understand what it is he says, when he makes his confession in these words, *I believe in Jesus*: which may be not unfitly in this manner described. I believe not only that there is a God who made the World; but I acknowledge and profess that I am fully perswaded of this, as of a certain and infallible truth, that there was and is a man, whose name by the ministry of an Angel was called *Jesus*, of whom, particularly *Josuah*, the first of that name, and all the rest of the Judges and Saviours of *Israel*, were but types. I believe that *Jesus*, in the highest and utmost importance of that name, to be the Saviour of the world; inasmuch as he hath revealed to the sons of men the only way for the salvation of their Souls, and wrought the same way out for them by the virtue of his Blood, obtaining remission for sinners, making reconciliation for enemies, paying the price of redemption for captives; and shall at last himself actually confer the same salvation, which he hath promulged and procured, upon all those which unfeignedly and stedfastly believe in him. I acknowledge there is no other way to Heaven beside that which he hath shewn us, there is no other means which can procure it for us but his blood, there is no other person which shall confer it on us but himself. And with this full acknowledgment, *I believe in Jesus*.

And in Jesus Christ.

HAVING thus explained the proper Name of our Saviour, *Jesus*, we come unto that Title of his Office usually joyned with his name, which is therefore the more diligently to be examined, because the * *Jews* who always acknowledged him to be *Jesus*, ever denied him to be *Christ*, and agreed together, ^a that if any man did confess that he was *Christ*, he should be put out of the Synagogue.

* *Ἰησοῦς ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου*
καὶ λέγουσιν αὐτὸν
τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου
καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου.
S. Cyril. Cat. 10.
^a *John 9. 22.*

For the full explication of this Title, it will be necessary, first, to deliver the signification of the word; secondly, to shew upon what grounds the *Jews* always expected a *Christ* or *Messias*; thirdly, to prove that the *Messias* promised to the *Jews* is already come; fourthly, to demonstrate that our *Jesus* is that *Messias*; and fifthly, to declare in what that *Unction*, by which *Jesus* is *Christ*, doth consist, and what are the proper effects thereof. Which five particulars being clearly discussed, I cannot see what should be wanting for a perfect understanding that *Jesus is Christ*.

For the first, we find in the Scriptures two several names, *Messias* and *Christ*, but both of the same signification; as appeareth by the speech of the woman of *Samarita*, *I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ*; and *John 4. 25.* more plainly by what *Andrew* spake unto his brother *Simon*, *We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ*. *Messias* in the Hebrew tongue, *Christ* in the || Greek. * *Messias*, the language of *Andrew* and the woman of *Samarita*, who spake in *Syriack*; *Christ*, the interpretation of S. *John*, who wrote his Gospel in the Greek, as the most general language in those days: and the signification of them both is, the Anointed. S. *Paul* and the rest of the Apostles, writing in that language, used the Greek name, which the *Latins* did retain, calling him constantly *Christus*; and we in *English* have retained the same, as universally naming him *Christ*.

|| *Μεσσίας*,
Μεσσίας (Co-
σὸν δὲ *Χριστός*,
ὅς ἐστιν υἱὸς
θεοῦ καὶ υἱὸς
ἀνθρώπου)
καὶ οὐκ ἔστιν υἱὸς
ἀνθρώπου.
S. Cyril. Cat. 10.
^a *John 9. 22.*

* From *משיח*
unxit, in the

Hebrew *משיח* and *משיח* unctus, in the Syriac *ܡܫܝܚܐ*: in the Greek, by changing *ψ* into *ω*, by omitting *τ* a guttural not fit for their pronunciation, and by adding *ς* as their ordinary termination, *Μεσσίας* is turned into *Χριστός*. That this was the Greek *Χριστός*; and the Latin *Christus*, is evident; and yet the *Latins* living at a distance, strangers to the customs of the *Jews*, and the doctrine of the Christians, mistook this name, and called him *Chrestus* from the Greek *Χρηστὴς*. So *Suetonius* in the life of *Claudius*, c. 25. *Judeos in pulvere Chrestus assidue tumultuantes Roma expulsi*. Which was not only his mistake, but generally the *Romans* at first, as they named him *Chrestus*, so they called us *Chrestiani*, *Tertul. adv. Gentes*. Sed & cum perperam *Chrestianus* pronuntiatur

That there was among the *Jews* an expectation of such a *Christ* to come, is most evident. The woman of *Samaria* could speak with confidence, *I know that Messias cometh.* And the unbelieving *Jews*, who will not acknowledge that he is already come, expect him still. Thus we find *all men musing in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not.* When *Jesus* taught in the Temple, those which doubted said, *When Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is;* those which believed said, *When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?* Whether therefore they doubted, or whether they believed in *Jesus*, they all expected a *Christ* to come; and the greater their opinion was of him, the more they believed he was that *Messias.* Many of the people said, *Of a truth this is the Prophet:* others said, *This is the Christ.* As soon as *John* began to baptize, the *Jews* sent Priests and Levites from *Jerusalem*, to ask him, *Who art thou?* that is, whether he were the *Christ*, or no, as appeareth out of his answer, *And he confessed and denied not, but confessed, I am not the Christ.* For as they asked him after, *What then? Art thou Elias?* and he said, *I am not:* *Art thou that Prophet?* and he answered, *No:* So without question their first demand was, * *Art thou the Christ?* and he answered, *I am not.* From whence it clearly appeareth that there was a general expectation among the *Jews* of a *Messias* to come; nor only so, but it was always counted among them an Article of their Faith, which all were obliged to believe who professed the Law of *Moses*, and whosoever denied that, was thereby interpreted to deny the Law and the Prophets. Wherefore it will be worth our enquiry to look into the grounds upon which they built that expectation.

It is most certain that the *Messias* was promised by God, both before and under the Law. God said unto *Abraham*,^a *In Isaac shall thy seed be called:* and we know that was a promise of a *Messias* to come, because *S. Paul* hath taught us, ^b *Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, unto seeds, as of many, but as of one, and to thy seed, which is Christ.* The Lord said unto *Moses*, *I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren like unto thee.* And *S. Peter* hath sufficiently satisfied us, that this Prophet promised to *Moses* is *Jesus the Christ.* Many are the Prophecies which concern him, many the promises which are made of him: but yet some of them very obscure; others, though plainer, yet have relation only to the person, not to the notion or the word *Messias.* Whosoever he is spoken of as the Anointed, it may well be first understood of some other person; except one place in *Daniel*, where *Messiah* is foretold to be cut off: and yet even there the Greek Translation hath not the *Messias*, but the *Unction.* It may therefore seem something strange, how so universal an expectation of a Redeemer under the name of the *Messias* should be spread through the Church of the *Jews.*

But if we consider that in the space of seventy years of the *Babylonish* Captivity the ordinary *Jews* had lost the exact understanding of the old *Hebrew* language before spoken in *Judea*, and therefore when the Scriptures were read unto them, they found it necessary to interpret them to the people in the *Chaldee* language, which they had lately learned: As when *Ezra* the Scribe brought the book of the Law of *Moses* before the Congregation, the *Levites* are said to have caused the people to understand the Law, because they read in the book, in the Law of God, distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading. Which constant interpretation begat at last a *Chaldee* Translation of the Old Testament to be read every Sabbath in the Synagogues: And that being not exactly made word for word with the *Hebrew*, but with a liberty of a brief exposition by the way, took in, together with the Text, the general opinion of the learned *Jews.* By which means it

John 4. 25.

Luke 3. 15.

John 7. 27.

Verse 31.

Verse 40, 41.

John 1. 19.

Verse 20.

Verse 21.

* So Nonnus hath expressed, what in the Evangelist is to be understood; *Μυστήριον δ' ἔρεσκον ὁ μὴ λυδὲς δὲ αὐτὸν, τίς ὁ πέλας; μὴ Χριστὸς ἔσται;* || *Auctor Sepher Ikharim, l. 4. c. ult. Blaimon. Traict. de Regibus, c. 11. Gen. 21. 12. Gal. 3. 16.*

Ait 3. 22.

Dan. 9. 26.

Nehem. 8. 8.

* Celsus the Epicurean acknowledged that both the Jews and Christians did confess that the Prophets did foretel a Saviour of the world. Οἱ τὰ μυστὴν ἑμὴ ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ καὶ Χριστιανῶν περὶ ἀλλήλους ζητήσαν· πιστεύοντες μὲν ἀμφοτέρων ὅτι τὸν θεὸν Πνεύματι ὁ περὶ ἐπισημειῶν Σωτὴρ πᾶν γένει ἦν ἀνθρώπων. Orig. adv. Celsum, l. 3. And this Saviour, saith Origen, was to be called, χρί τὰ Ἰουδαίων πᾶντα, Χριστός.

came to pass that not only the doctrine, but the Name also, of the *Messias* was very frequent and familiar with them. Insomuch that even in the *Chaldee* Paraphrase now extant there is express mention of the *Messias* in above seventy places, beside that of *Daniel*. The * *Jews* then informed by the plain words of *Daniel*, instructed by a constant interpretation of the Law and the Prophets read in their Synagogues every Sabbath-day, relying upon the infallible predictions and promises of God, did all unanimously expect out of their own Nation, of the Tribe of *Judah*, of the Family of *David*, a *Messias*, or a *Christ*, to come.

Now this being granted, as it cannot be denied, our next consideration is of the Time in which this promise was to be fulfilled: which we shall demonstrate out of the Scriptures to be past, and consequently that the promised *Messias* is already come. The prediction of *Jacob* on his death-bed is clear and pregnant, ^a *The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a law-giver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and to him shall the gathering of the people be.*

^a Gen. 49. 10.

* For instead of כִּי יָבֵא שִׁילֹה

onkelos renders עַד רוּחִי מְשִׁיחָא

and Jonathan and the Jerusalem Targum.

עַד וְכִי יָבֵא מְשִׁיחָא

Beside, the Chablishts did generally so interpret it, because

according to their computation, make the same Number with the Letters of מְשִׁיחָא: and in the Talmud, cod. Sanhedrim,

Rabbi Johanan asking what was the name of the *Messias*, they of the School of R. Schila answer, שִׁילֹה

his name is Shiloh, according to that which is written, until Shiloh come.

^b Isa. 11. 10.

^c Mic. 4. 1.

^d Gen 49. 8.

^e Mal. 3. 1.

הוא מלך המשיח

Kimchi on the place.

In the same manner the Prophet *Malachy* hath given an express signification of the coming of the *Messias* while the Temple stood. ^e *Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me; and the Lord whom ye seek shall*

But the Scepter is departed from *Judah*, neither is there one Law-giver left between his feet. Therefore *Shiloh*, that is, the *Messias*, is already come. That the *Jewish* government hath totally failed, is not without the greatest folly to be denied: and therefore that *Shiloh* is already come, except we should deny the truth of Divine predictions, must be granted. There remains then nothing to be proved, but that by *Shiloh* is to be understood the *Messias*: which is sufficiently manifest both from the consent of the ancient *Jews*, and from the description immediately added to the name. For * all the old Paraphrasts call him expressly the *Messias*, and the words which follow, *to him shall the gathering of the people be*, speak no less; as giving an explication of his Person, Office, or Condition, who was but darkly described in the name of *Shiloh*. For this is the same character by which he was signified unto *Abraham*; *In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed*: by which he is decyphered in *Isaiah*; ^b *In that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek, and his rest shall be glorious*: and in *Micah*, ^c *The mountain of the House of the Lord shall be established on the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills, and people shall flow unto it.* And thus the blessing of *Judah* is plainly intelligible: ^d *Judah thou art he whom thy brethren shall praise; thy hand shall be in the neck of thine enemies, thy father's children shall bow down before thee.* Thou shalt obtain the primogeniture of thy brother *Reuben*, and by virtue thereof shalt rule over the rest of the Tribes: the government shall be upon thy shoulders, and all thy brethren shall be subject unto thee. And that you may understand this blessing is not to expire until it make way for a greater, know that this government shall not fail, until there come a son out of your loins who shall be far greater than your self: for whereas your dominion reacheth only over your brethren, and so is confined unto the Tribes of *Israel*; his kingdom shall be universal, and all nations of the earth shall serve him. Being then this *Shiloh* is so described in the text, and acknowledged by the ancient *Jews* to be the *Messias*, being God had promised by *Jacob* the government of *Israel* should not fail until *Shiloh* came; being that government is visibly and undeniably already failed: it followeth inevitably, that the *Messias* is already come.

In the same manner the Prophet *Malachy* hath given an express signification of the coming of the *Messias* while the Temple stood. ^e *Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me; and the Lord whom ye seek shall*

shall suddenly come to his Temple, even the messenger of the Covenant whom ye delight in. And Haggai yet more clearly; Thus saith the Lord of hosts, *Tet once it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land; And I will shake all nations; and the desire of all nations shall come: and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts. The glory of this latter house shall be greater than the glory of the former, saith the Lord of hosts.* It is then most evident from these predictions, that the *Messias* was to come while the second Temple stood. It is as certain that the second Temple is not now standing. Therefore except we contradict the Veracity of God, it cannot be denied but the *Messias* is already come. Nothing can be objected to enervate this argument, but that these Prophecies concern not the *Messias*; and yet the ancient Jews confessed they did, and that they do so cannot be denied. For, first, those titles, *the Angel of the Covenant, the delight of the Israelites, the desire of all nations*, are certain and known characters of the *Christ* to come. And, secondly, it cannot be conceived how the glory of the second Temple should be greater than the glory of the first, without the coming of the *Messias* to it. For the Jews themselves have observed that five signs of the Divine glory were in the first Temple, which were wanting to the second: as the Urim and Thummin, by which the High Priest was miraculously instructed of the will of God; the Ark of the Covenant, from whence God gave his answers by a clear and audible voice; the Fire upon the Altar, which came down from Heaven, and immediately consumed the Sacrifice; the Divine presence or habitation with them, represented by a visible appearance, or given, as it were, to the King and High Priest by anointing with the oyl of unction; and, lastly, the Spirit of Prophecy, with which those especially who were called to the prophetic office were indued. And there was no comparison between the beauty and glory of the structure or building of it, as appeared by the tears dropt from those eyes which had beheld the former, (*For many of the Priests and Levites, and chief of the Fathers, who were ancient men, that had seen the first House, when the foundation of this House was laid before their eyes, wept with a loud voice;*) and by those words which God commanded Haggai to speak to the people for the introducing of this Prophecy, *Who is left among you that saw this House in her first glory? and how do ye see it now? is it not in your eyes in comparison of it as nothing?* Being then the structure of the second Temple was so far inferior to the first, being all those signs of the Divine glory were wanting in it with which the former was adorned; the glory of it can no other way be imagined greater, than by the coming of him into it in whom all those signs of the Divine glory were far more eminently contained: and this Person alone is the *Messias*. For he was to be the glory of the people *Israel*, yea even of the God of *Israel*; he was the Urim and Thummin, by whom the will of God, as by a greater Oracle, was revealed; he the true Ark of the Covenant, the only Propitiatory by his blood; he which was to baptize with the Holy Ghost and with fire, the true Fire which came down from Heaven, he which was to take up his habitation in our flesh; and to dwell among us, that we might behold his glory; he who received the Spirit without measure, and from whose fulness we do all receive. In him were all those signs of the Divine glory united, which were thus divided in the first Temple; in him they were all more eminently contained than in those: therefore his coming to the second Temple was, as the sufficient, so the only, means by which the glory of it could be greater than the glory of the first. If then the *Messias* was to come while the second Temple stood, as appeareth by God's prediction and promise; if that Temple many Ages since hath ceased to be, there being not one stone left upon a stone; if it certainly were before the destruction of it in

Hag. 2. 6, 7, 9.

Ezra 3. 12.

Hag. 2. 3.

greater glory than ever the former was; if no such glory could accrue unto it but by the coming of the *Messias*: then is that *Messias* already come.

Having thus demonstrated out of the Promises given to the Jews, that the *Messias* who was so promised unto them must be already come, because those events which were foretold to follow his coming are already past; we shall proceed unto the next particular, and prove that the man *Jesus*, in whom we believe, is that *Messias* who was promised. First, it is acknowledged both by the Jew and Gentile, that this *Jesus* was born in *Judæa*, and lived and died there, before the Commonwealth of *Israel* was dispersed; before the second Temple was destroyed, that is, at the very time when the Prophets foretold the *Messias* should come. And there was no other beside him, that did with any shew of probability pretend to be, or was accepted as, the *Messias*. Therefore we must confess he was, and only he could be, the *Christ*.

Secondly, all other Prophecies belonging to the *Messias* were fulfilled in *Jesus*, whether we look upon the Family, the Place, or the manner of his Birth; neither were they ever fulfilled in any person beside him: he then is, and no other can be, the *Messias*. That he was to come out of the Tribe of *Judah* and Family of *David*, is every where manifest. * The Jews, which mention *Messias* as a Son of *Joseph* or of *Ephraim*, do not deny, but rather dignifie, the Son of *David* or of *Judah*, whom they confess to be the greater *Christ*. There shall come forth a ^a rod out of the stem of *Jesse*, and a branch shall grow out of his roots, and the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, saith the Prophet *Isaiah*. And again, || In that day there shall be a root of *Jesse*, which shall stand for an ensign of the people: to it shall the Gentiles seek, and his rest shall be glorious. Now who was it but *Jesus* of whom the Elders spake, Behold the Lion of the tribe of *Judah*, the root of *David*? who but he said, ^b I am the root and offspring of *David*, and the bright and morning star? The Jews did all acknowledge it, as appears by the question of our Saviour, ^c How say the Scribes that *Christ* is the Son of *David*? ^d What think ye of *Christ*? whose son is he? They say unto him, the son of *David*: and that of the people, amazed at the seeing of the blind, and speaking of the dumb, ^e Is not this the son of *David*? The blind cried out unto him, *Jesus*, thou son of *David*, have mercy on us; and the multitude cried, ^f Hosanna to the son of *David*. The Genealogy of *Jesus* shews his Family: the first words of the Gospel are, ^g The book of the generation of *Jesus Christ* the son of *David*. The Prophecy therefore was certainly fulfilled in respect of his lineage; ^h for it is evident that our Lord sprang out of *Judah*.

Beside, if we look upon the Place where the *Messias* was to be born, we shall find that *Jesus* by a particular act of Providence was born there. When ⁱ Herod gathered all the chief Priests and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where *Christ* should be born. And they said unto him, In *Bethlehem* of *Judæa*. The people doubted whether *Jesus* was the *Christ*, because they thought he had been born in *Galilee*, where *Joseph* and *Mary* lived; wherefore they said, ^k Shall *Christ* come out of *Galilee*? Hath not the Scripture said, that *Christ* cometh of the seed of *David*, and out of the town of *Bethlehem*, where *David* was? That place of Scripture which they meant was cited by the Scribes to *Herod*, according to the interpretation then current among the Jews, and still preserved in the * *Chaldee Paraphrase*. ^l For thus it is written in the Prophet, And thou *Bethlehem* in the land of *Judah* art not the least among the princes of

* The Jews have invented a double *Messias*: to one they attribute all those places which mention his low estate and sufferings; to the other such as speak of his power and glory. The one they style

משיח בן יוסף, the other משיח בן דוד

The son of *Joseph* they name also the son of *Ephraim*, and the son of *David* the son of *Judah*: as the Targum Cant.

4. 5. Thy two breasts are like two young roes, תרין מריקות

משיח בן דוד ומשיח בן אפרים

Two are thy redeemers, *Messias* the son of *David*, and *Messias* the son of *Ephraim*.

* *Isa.* 11. 1, 10. || Which the

Chaldee Paraphrase thus translates, ויפוך מלכא מבנוהי רישו ומשיחא מבני בנוהי יתדבי, A king shall come out of the sons of *Jesse*, and the *Messias* out of his sons sons. So Rabbi *Solomon* and *Kimchi*. ^b *Rev.* 5. 5. and 22. 16. ^c *Mar.* 12. 35. ^d *Matt.* 22. 42. ^e *Matt.* 12. 23. ^f *Matt.* 21. 9. ^g *Matt.* 1. 1. ^h *Heb.* 7. 14. ⁱ *Matt.* 2. 4, 5. ^k *John* 7. 41, 42. * Which expressly translateth it thus, מנך קדמי יפוק משיחא למהוי עביר שולטן על ישראל, Out of thee shall come before me the *Messias*, that he may exercise domination in *Israel*. So R. *Solomon*, מסך לי יצא משיח בן דוד, and *Kimchi* and *Abarbanel* הוא מלך המשיח. ^l *Matt.* 2. 5, 6

Judah,

Judah, for out of thee shall come a governour that shall rule my people Israel. This prediction was most manifestly and remarkably fulfilled in the Birth of Jesus, when by the providence of God it was so ordered that Augustus should then tax the world, to which end every one should go up into his own City. Whereupon Joseph and Mary his espoused Wife left Nazareth of Galilee, their habitation, and went into Berklehem of Judaea, the City of David, there to be taxed, because they were of the house and lineage of David. And while they were there, as the days of the Virgin Mary were accomplished, so the prophecy was fulfilled; for there she brought forth her first-born Son; and so unto us was born that day in the City of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. Luke 2. 4.
Luke 2. 11.

But if we add unto the Family and Place, the manner of his Birth, also foretold, the argument must necessarily appear conclusive. The Prophet Isaiah spake thus unto the house of David; The Lord himself shall give you a sign: Behold, a Virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and shall call his name Immanuel. What nativity could be more congruous to the greatness of a Messias than that of a Virgin, which is most miraculous? what name can be thought fitter for him than that of Immanuel, God with us, whose Land Judaea is said to be? The Immanuel then thus born of a Virgin was without question the true Messias. And we know Jesus was thus born of the blessed Virgin Mary, that it might be fulfilled which was thus spoken of the Lord by the Prophet. Wherefore being all the prophesies concerning the Family, Place and manner of the Birth of the Messias were fulfilled in Jesus, and not so much as pretended to be accomplished in any other; it is again from hence apparent that this Jesus is the Christ. Isa. 7. 14.
Isa. 8. 8.
Mat. 1. 22.

Thirdly, he which taught what the Messias was to teach, did what the Messias was to do, suffered what the Messias was to suffer, and by suffering obtained all which a Messias could obtain, must be acknowledged of necessity to be the true Messias. But all this is manifestly true of Jesus. Therefore we must confess he is the Christ. For first, it cannot be denied but the Messias was promised as a Prophet and Teacher of the people. So God promised him to Moses; I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren like unto thee. So Isaiah, Ezekiel and Hoseah have expressed him, as we shall hereafter have farther occasion to shew. And not only so, but as a greater Prophet, and more perfect Doctor, than ever any was which preceded him, more universal than they all. I have put my spirit upon him, saith God: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles, and the Isles shall wait for law. Now it is as evident that Jesus of Nazareth was the most perfect Prophet, the * Prince and Lord of all the Prophets, Doctors and Pastors, which either preceded or succeeded him. For he hath revealed unto us the most perfect will of God both in his precepts and his promises. He hath delivered the same after the most perfect manner, with the greatest authority; not like Moses and the Prophets, saying, Thus saith the Lord, but ^a I say unto you; nor like the Interpreters of Moses, for ^b he taught them as one having authority, and not as the Scribes: with the greatest perspicuity, not, as those before him, under types and shadows, but plainly and clearly; from whence both he and his Doctrine is frequently called Light: with the greatest universality, as preaching that Gospel which is to unite all the Nations of the earth into one Church, that there might be one Shepherd and one Flock. Whatsoever then that great Prophet the Messias was to teach, that Jesus taught; and whatsoever works he was to do, those Jesus did. Isa. 42. 1, 4.
* Αρχι ποι-
μην 1 Pet. 5. 4.
ὁ ποιμὴν τοῦ
πρωτοῦτον ὁ
μεγας,
Heb. 13. 20.
ὁ ποιμὴν καὶ ὁ
πισκοπος τῆς
ψυχῆς,
1 Pet. 2. 25.
^a Mat. 5. 27.
^b Mat. 7. 29.

When John the Baptist had heard the works of Christ, he sent two of his Disciples with this message to him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another? And Jesus returned this answer unto him, shewing the ground of that

that message, *the works of Christ*, was a sufficient resolution of the question sent; *Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, and the dead are raised up.* And as Jesus alledged the works which he wrought to be a sufficient testimony that he was the *Messias*; so did those *Jews* acknowledge it, who said, *When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man doth?* And *Nicodemus*, a Ruler among them, confessed little less: *Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God; for no man can do these miracles that thou dost, except God be with him.* Great and many were the miracles which *Moses* and the rest of the Prophets wrought for the ratification of the Law, and the demonstration of God's constant presence with his people; and yet all those wrought by so many several persons, in the space of above three thousand years, are far short of those which this one *Jesus* did perform within the compass of three years. The ambitious diligence of the *Jews* hath reckoned up seventy six miracles for *Moses*, and seventy four for all the rest of the Prophets: and supposing that they were so many, (though indeed they were not) how few are they in respect of those which are written of our Saviour! how inconsiderable, if compared with all which he wrought! when *S. John* testifieth with as great certainty of truth as height of Hyperbole, that *there are many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, he supposed that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written.* Nor did our Saviour excel all others in the number of his miracles only, but in the power of working. Whatsoever miracle *Moses* wrought, he either obtained by his prayers, or else, consulting with God, received it by command from him; so that the power of miracles cannot be conceived as immanent or inhering in him. Whereas this power must of necessity be in *Jesus*, in whom dwelt all the fulness of the Godhead bodily, and to whom the Father had given to have life in himself. This he sufficiently shewed by working with a word, by commanding the winds to be still, the Devils to fly, and the dead to rise: by working without a word or any intervenient sign; as when the woman which had an issue of blood twelve years touched his garment, and straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up by the virtue which flowed out from the greater fountain of his power. And lest this example should be single, we find that the men of *Genesaret*, the people out of all *Judaea* and *Jerusalem*, and from the sea-coast of *Tyre* and *Sidon*, even the whole multitude sought to touch him; for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all. Once indeed *Christ* seemed to have prayed, before he raised *Lazarus* from the grave; but even that was done because of the people which stood by: not that he had not power within himself to raise up *Lazarus*, who was afterward to raise himself; but that they might believe the Father had sent him. The immanency and inherency of this power in *Jesus* is evident in this, that he was able to communicate it to whom he pleased, and actually did confer it upon his Disciples: Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy. Upon the Apostles: Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils; freely ye have received, freely give. Upon the first Believers: These signs shall follow them that believe; in my name they shall cast out devils. He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do. He then which did more actions divine and powerful than *Moses* and all the Prophets ever did, he which performed them in a manner far more divine than that by which they wrought, hath done all which can be expected the *Messias*, foretold by them, should do.

Nor hath our *Jesus* only done, but suffered, all which the *Messias* was to suffer. For we must not with the *Jews* deny a suffering *Christ*, or fondly of our

^a *Ijā.* 52. 13.

* For first, in-
stead of those
words Behold
my servant
shall deal pru-
dently, the Tar-
gum hath it
plainly ה' י
יצלח עבדו
משיחו

Iarchi on the place, **מקמי לה רבותינו** Our Rabbins understand this of the Messiah. And the reason which he renders of their interpretation is very observable. For they say, says he, that the Messiah is stricten, as it is written, He took our infirmities and bare our griefs; which are the words of the 4. verse of the 53. Chapter. From whence we may perceive how the ancient Jews did joyn the latter part of the 52. Chapter with the 53. and expound them of the same person. Besides, he cites a certain Midrash or Gloss, which attributes the same verse to the Messiah, and that is to be found in Berefshir Rabba upon Gen. 28. 10. where falling upon that place in Zach. 4. 7. What art thou, O great mountain, before Zerubbabel? he answers, **הר הנדול וה משיח** that great Mountain is the Messiah. Then asking again, Why doth he call the Messiah a great mountain? he gives this answer, שחוא גדול מן האבות שנ הנה ישכיל עבדי ויה משיח Because he is greater than the Fathers, as it is written, Behold, my servant shall understand, that is, the Messiah; which are the words of the verse before cited. And the same Berefshir Rabba, upon Gen. 24. 67. saith, Messiah the King was in the generation of the wicked; that he gave himself to seek for mercies for Israel, and to fasting and humbling himself for them, as it is written; and so produceth the words of Isa. 53. 5. From whence it appears again, that the Author thereof interpreted both the chapters of the same Messiah. And further it is observable, that the Midrash upon Ruth 2. 14. expounds the same verse in the same manner. And Rabbi Moses Alshech speaks yet more fully of the consent of the ancient Jewish Doctors upon this place, **הנה דוד פה אחד קיי מוקבדו כי ער מלך המשיח וז בר** Behold our Doctors of happy memory conclude with one mouth, as they have received from their ancestors, that this is spoken of the Messiah. From hence it appears that it was originally the general sense of the Jews, that all that piece of Isaiah is a description of the Messiah, and consequently that the Apostles cannot be blamed by them now for applying it to Christ; and that the modern Jews may well be suspected to frame their contrary expositions out of a wilful opposition to Christianity. * Isa. 53. 2, 3. ¶ The first **רו חאר לו** seems to signifie no less, as being from the root **חרר** which signifieth to form, figure, fashion or delineate; from whence e the Nun attributed to any person signifieth the feature, complexion, shape, or composition of the body: as Rachel was **יפרה חרא** formæ pulchra, Gen. 9. 17. and so Joseph, **יפרה חרא** Gen. 36. 6. so Abigail and Esther, and in general, Deut. 21. 11. with an addition of fair added to **חרא** whereas David is called, without such addition, **יפא יסא**, but with the full signification, ὁ ἀνὴρ ἐλάσδης τῆς αἰσῆς. In Judges 8. 18. **חד כתר בני המך** εἰς θυμὸν αὐτοῦ καὶ βασιλείας, so the Roman; but the Aldus and Complut. better, ὡς εἶπ' οὖν βασιλείας according to that verse of Euripides cited by Athenæus and Porphyrius, Πρωτον δὲ εἶπ' αἷον τετραγώνη. The Messiah was to be a King, whose external form and composition spake no such Majesty, * As Justin Martyr, p. 232. Οἱ μὲν ἐρελταί εἰς τὴν πρώτῃ παρυσίαν τῆς Χειρὸς, ἐν ᾗ ἡ ἀτιμία, καὶ ἀμείδις, καὶ θνητὸς φανίσκοι κεκρηγμένω ὄντι. Ἐλθόντι δὲ τῇ Ἱουδῇ ὅτι τῇ Ἰορδάνει, καὶ νομιζομένη Ἰωσήφ τοῦ τέκνου τοῦ ὑψάρχην, καὶ ἀμείδης. ὡς ἀγαγεῖται ἐκέρυσσον, φανομένης. Dial. cum Tyrh. Ἐπειδὴν γὰρ οἱ ἐν εὐαγγέλιῳ ἀρχοντες ἐφόρον αἰεὶ καὶ ἀτιμον τὸ εἶδος καὶ ἀδόξον ἔχοντα αὐτῶν. καὶ γνωρίζουσιν αὐτὸν ἐπιστάδων. Τίς δὲν εἶπ' ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν ὀδῶν; Ibid. And Clem. Alex. Τὸν δὲ κτενον αὐτὸν τῶν ὀδῶν αἰσχρὸν γινώσκοντα διὰ τῆς αἰσῆς τοῦ πνεύματος μαρτυροῦν. Καὶ εἶδον αὐτὸν, καὶ ἐκίχεν εἶδος &c. Ped. c. 1. "Οπως, καὶ αὐτὸς ἡ ἐπαλλή τῆς Ἐκκλησίας ἐν σαρκὶ μὲν αἰεὶ δὲ ἀμελὴς διελήλυθε καὶ αἰσοφορ. Strom. 3. And Cellsius, impiously as u ng against the descent of the Holy Ghost upon our Saviour, lays, it is impossible that any body in which something of the Divinity were should not differ from others. Τὸ το γ, the body of Christ, εἰδὲν ἄλλα διαφέρειν ἄλλῳ ὡς φασ, μικρὸν, καὶ δυσαιδέες, καὶ ἀχρυνές λῶ: Τὸν which Cellsius by his δ φασ seems to take from the common report of Christians in his age, Origen will have him take it out of Isaiah, and upon that acknowledgeth τὸ δυσαιδέες, but the other two, μικρὸν καὶ ἀχρυνές, he denies. Ὁμολογημένων τοίνυν γένεσθαι τὰ σὰ τὰ δυσαιδέες γινώσκοντα τὸ Ἱουδῶ σῶμα, ἐ μὲν ὡς ἐκλήθεισαν, καὶ ἀχρυνές, ἐ δὲ σαφῶς δηλοῦται ὅτι μικρὸν λῶ. ἔχει δὲ ἡ λέξις ὕπο παρὰ τὸ ἵσταναι ἀγορεύουσα, &c. and then cites this place, and so returns it as an answer to the argument of Cellsius, that because he was fnehold to be as he was, he must be the Son of God. Μεγάλη καλασκηὶ ὅτι τὰ ἂ μορφὴν δοκεῖν αὐτῷ Ἱστον εἶναι εἰς θεόν, τὸ περὶ - αὐτῶν εἶδος τὸ γινώσκουσιν αὐτὸν πεπερασμένον καὶ σελ τὸ εἶδος αὐτοῦ. Orig. contra Celsum. l. 6. In the same sense did S. Cyril take these words of the Prophet; who, speaking of that place of the Psalmist, speciosus forma præ filiis hominum, o dres this must be understood of his Divinity, Κένωσις γὰρ σώματος καὶ ταπείνωσις τῆς σαρκὸς οικονομία ὅλον ὅτι τὸ μυστήριον γέσσει αἰνάς καὶ ὁ Πατριάρχης Ἡσαΐας σελ αὐτοῦ, Οὐκ ἔχεν εἶδος, εἰδὲ κάλλος, &c. and again, Εὐ ὁδε πέφανεν ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ λίαν ἀκαλλογήτου. Tertullian speaks plainly as to the prophecy, and too freely in his way of expression : Sed carnis terrene non mira conditio ipsa erat quæ cætera ejus miranda faciebat, cum dicerent, Unde huic dolerina hæc et signa ista ? adeo nec humane honestatis corpus fuit, nedum ecclesiæ claritatis. Tacentibus apud nos quoque prophetis (Isa. 53. 2.) de ignobili aspectu ejus, ipse passionibus ipseque contumeliæ loquuntur. Passiones quidem humanam carnem, contumeliæ vero inhonestam probaverunt. An ausus esset aliquis ungue fumino perfringere corpus novum, sputaminibus contaminare faciem nisi mercentem? De carne Christi, c. c. And that we may be sure he pointed at that place in Isaiah, he says, that Christ was ne aspectu quidem honestas : Annunciavit enim, inquit, de illo sicut puerulus, sicut radix in terra scienti, & non est species ejus neque gloria. Adv. Marcion. l. 2. c. 17. Et adv. Judæos, c. 14. This humility of Christ, in taking upon him the nature of man without the ordinary ornaments of man at just acknowledged, was afterwards denied, as appears by S. Hierome, on Isaiah 56. Inglorius erat inter hominū aspectus ejus, non quo formæ significat fecditatem, sed quod in humilitate venerit & paupertate. And Epiph. 140. Abique passionibus crucis universis pulchrior est virgo de virgine, qui non ex voluntate Dei, sed ex Deo natus est. Nisi enim habuisset & in vultu quiddam oculisque sidereum, nunquam eum statim secuti fuissent Apostoli, nec qui ad comprehendendum eum venerant corruerunt. So S. Chrysostome interprets the words of Isaiah of his Divinity, or Humility, or his Passion; but those of the Psalmist, of his native corporal beauty. Οὐδὲ γὰρ θαυμαστὸν μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ φανόμην· ἀπλῶς πολλὰς ἔγκας χρίει· καὶ τοὺς ὁ περιήτης δηλώνει λαόν, Ὁραῖ καλλιπὰς τὰς ὑδὲς τῶν ἀνθρώπων. Homil. 28. in Mat. Afterwards they began to magnify the external beauty of his body, and confined themselves to one kind of picture or portraiture, with a zealous pretence of a likeness not to be depicted.

denied, which 800. years since was known by none, every several Country having a several Image. Whence came that argument of the Iconoclasts by way of Cure, which of those Images was the true : Πότεςιν ἡ παρὰ Ῥωμαίοις, ἢ τῷ ὄντι Ἰνδοὶ γεγόνησιν, ἢ ἡ παρὰ Ἑλλήνων, ἢ ἡ παρὰ Αἰγυπτίων; ἢ ὁμοίαι ἀλλήλων αὐταί. And well might none of these be like another, when every nation painted our Saviour in the nearest similitude to the people of their own Country. Ἕλληνας μὲν αὐτοῖς ὁμοίον ὄντι γῆς εὐαγγέλιον τὸ Χριστὸν νομίζουσιν, Ῥωμαῖοι δὲ μάλλον ἑαυτοῖς ὅμοιον. Ἰνδοὶ δὲ πάλιν μορφῇ τῇ αὐτῇ, καὶ Αἰθίοπες ὅλον ὡς ἑαυτοῖς. Phorius, Epist. 64. And the difference of opinions in this kind is sufficiently apparent out of those words in Suidas, Ἰστοῖον δὲ ὅτι παρὰ οἱ ἀρχαῖοι ἑκάστη ἰστορικόν, ὡς τὸ ὅλον καὶ ὁλοκατέχον οἰκονομεῖν ἐπὶ γεγραμμένῳ τῷ κέντρῳ τοῦ Χριστοῦ.

confessed the fulfilling of it in the body of our Saviour. But what the aspect of his outward appearance was, because the Scriptures are silent, we cannot now know : and it is enough that we are assured, the state and condition of his life was in the eye of the Jews without honour and inglorious. For though, *being in the form of God, he thought it not robbery to be equal with God : yet he made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant.* For thirty years he lived with his mother Mary and Joseph his reputed father, of a mean profession, and was subject to them. When he left his mother's house, and entered on his prophetic office, he passed from place to place, sometimes received into a house, other times lodging in the fields : for while the foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests, the Son of man had not where to lay his head. From this low estate of life and condition, seemingly inglorious, arose in the Jews a neglect of his works, and contempt of his Doctrine. *Is not this the Carpenters son ?* nay farther, *Is not this * the Carpenter, the son of Mary ?* and they were offended at him. Thus was it fulfilled in him, *he was despised and rejected of men, and they esteemed him not.*

This contempt of his personage, condition, doctrine and works, was by degrees raised to hatred, detestation, and persecution to a cruel and ignominious death. All which if we look upon in the gross, we must acknowledge it fulfilled in him to the highest degree imaginable, that he was *a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief.* But if we compare the particular predictions with the Historical passages of his sufferings, if we joyn the Prophets and evangelists together, it will most manifestly appear the Messiah was to suffer nothing which Christ hath not suffered. If Zachary say *they weighed for my price thirtypieces of Silver* ; S. Matthew will shew that Judas sold Jesus at the same rate : for the chief Priests *covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.* If Isaiah say *that he was wounded*, if Zachary, *they shall look upon me whom they have pierced*, if the Prophet David yet more particularly, *they pierced my hands and my feet* ; the Evangelist will shew how he was fastened to the Cross, and Jesus himself *the print of the nails.* If the Psalmist tell us, *they should laugh him to scorn, and shake their head, saying, He trusted in the Lord that he would deliver him ; let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him ;* S. Matthew will describe the same action, and the same expression : *For they that passed by reviled him, wagging their heads, and saying, He trusted in God, let him deliver him now, if he will have him ; for he said, I am the son of God.* Let David say, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?* and the Son of David will shew in whose person the Father spake it, *Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani.* Let Isaiah foretel, *he was numbred with the transgressours ;* and you shall find him crucified between two thieves, *one on his right hand, the other on his left.* Read in the Psalmist, *In my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink ;* and you shall find in the Evangelist, *Jesus, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, said, I thirst : And they took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.* Read farther yet, *They part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture ;* and, to fulfil the prediction, the Souldiers shall make good the distinction, *who took his garments, and made four parts, to every souldier a part, and also his coat : now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.* They said therefore among themselves, *Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be.*

Lastly,

Lastly, let the Prophets teach us, that *he shall be brought like a lamb to the slaughter, and be cut off out of the land of the living*; all the Evangelists will declare how like a Lamb he suffered, and the very Jews will acknowledge that he was cut off. And now may we well conclude, *Thus it is written, and thus it behoved the Christ to suffer*; and what it so behoved him to suffer, that he suffered. Isa. 53. 7, 8. Luke 24. 46.

Neither only in his Passion, but after his death all things were fulfilled in *Jesus* which were prophesied concerning the *Messias*. *He made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death*, saith the Prophet of the *Christ* to come: and as the thieves were buried with whom he was crucified, so was *Jesus*, but laid in the Tomb of *Joseph of Arimathæa*, an honourable Counsellor. *After two days will he revive us, in the third day he will raise us up*, saith *Hoseah* of the people of *Israel*: in whose language they were the * type of *Christ*; * and the third day *Jesus* rose from the dead. *The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou at my right hand. Now David is not ascended into the heavens*, and consequently cannot be set at the right hand of God; but *Jesus* is already ascended, and set down at the right hand of God: and so all the house of *Israel* might know assuredly, that God hath made that same *Jesus*, whom they crucified, both Lord and *Christ*. For, he who taught whatsoever the *Messias*, promised by God, foretold by the Prophets, expected by the people of God, was to teach; he who did all which that *Messias* was by virtue of that office to do; he which suffered all those pains and indignities which that *Messias* was to suffer; he to whom all things happened after his death, the period of his sufferings, which were according to the Divine predictions to come to pass; he, I say, must infallibly be the true *Messias*. But *Jesus* alone taught, did, suffered and obtained all these things, as we have shewed. Therefore we may again infallibly conclude that our *Jesus* is the *Christ*. Isa. 53. 9. Hos. 6. 2. * Hos. 11. 1. Psal. 110. 1. Acts 2. 34. Acts 2. 36.

Fourthly, if it were the proper note and character of the *Messias*, that all Nations should come in to serve him; if the Doctrine of *Jesus* hath been preached and received in all parts of the world, according to that character so long before delivered; if it were absolutely impossible that the Doctrine revealed by *Jesus* should have been so propagated as it hath been, had it not been Divine; then must this *Jesus* be the *Messias*: and when we have proved these three particulars, we may safely conclude he is the *Christ*.

That all Nations were to come in to the *Messias*, and so the distinction between the *Jew* and *Gentile* to cease at his coming, is the most universal description in all the Prophecies. God speaks to him thus, as to his Son; *Ask of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession*. It was one greater than *Solomon* of whom these words were spoken, *All kings shall fall down before him, and all nations shall serve him*. *It shall come to pass in the last days*, saith *Isaiah*, *that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills, and all nations shall flow unto it*. And again, *In that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek*. And in general, all the Prophets were but instruments to deliver the same message, which *Malachy* concludes, from God: *From the rising of the Sun, even to the going down of the same, my name shall be great among the Gentiles, and in every place incense shall be offered unto my name, and a pure offering: for my name shall be great among the heathen*, saith the Lord of hosts. Now being the bounds of *Judea* were settled, being the promise of God was to bring all nations in at the coming of the *Messias*, being this was it which the Jews so much opposed, as loth to part from their ancient and peculiar privilege; he which actually wrought this work must certainly be the *Messias*: and that *Jesus* did it; is most evident. Psal. 2. 8. Psal. 72. 11. Isa. 2. 2. Ch. 11. 10. Mal. 1. 11.

That all nations did thus come in to the Doctrine preached by *Jesus*, cannot be denied. For although he ^a were not sent but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel; although of those many *Israelites* which believed on him while he lived, very few were left immediately after his death: yet when the Apostles had received their Commission from him to ^b go teach all nations, and were ^c endued with power from on high by the plentiful effusion of the holy Ghost; the first day there was an accession of ^d three thousand souls; immediately after we find ^e the number of the men, beside women, was about five thousand; and still ^f believers were more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women. Upon the persecution at Jerusalem, they went through the ^g regions of Judea, Galilee and Samaria, and so the Gospel spread; inso much that *S. James* the Bishop of Jerusalem spake thus unto *S. Paul*, ^h Thou seest, brother, how many thousands (or rather, how many myriads, that is, ten thousands) of the Jews there are which believe. Beside, how great was the number of the believing Jews strangers, scattered through Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, Bithynia, and the rest of the Roman Provinces, will appear out of the Epistles of *S. Peter*, *S. James*, and *S. John*. And yet all these are nothing to the fulness of the Gentiles which came after. First, those which were before Gentile-worshippers, acknowledging the same God with the Jews, but not receiving the Law: who had before abandoned their old Idolatry, and already embraced the true Doctrine of one God, and did confess the Deity which the Jews did worship to be that only true God; but yet refused to be circumcised, and so to oblige themselves to the keeping of the whole Law. Now the Apostles preaching the same God with *Moses*, whom they all acknowledged, and teaching that Circumcision and the rest of the legal Ceremonies were now abrogated, which those men would never admit, they were with the greatest facility converted to the Christian Faith. For being present at the Synagogues of the Jews, and understanding much of the Law, they were of all the Gentiles readiest to hear, and most capable of the Arguments which the Apostles produced out of the Scriptures to prove that *Jesus* was the *Christ*. Thus many of the ⁱ Greeks which came up to worship at Jerusalem, ^k devout men out of every nation under heaven, not men of Israel, but yet fearing God, did first embrace the Christian Faith. After them the rest of the Gentiles left the idolatrous worship of their Heathen gods, and in a short time in infinite multitudes received the Gospel. How much did *Jesus* work by one *S. Paul* to ^l the obedience of the Gentiles by word and deed? how did he pass from Jerusalem round about through Phœnice, Syria and Arabia, through Asia, Achaia and Macedonia, even to Illyricum, fully preaching the Gospel of *Christ*? How far did others pass beside *S. Paul*, that he should speak even of his time, that the ^m Gospel was preached to every creature under heaven? Many were the Nations, innumerable the people, which received the Faith in the Apostles days: and in not many years after, notwithstanding millions were cut off in their bloody persecutions, yet did their ⁿ numbers equalize half the Roman Empire: and little above two Ages after the death of the last Apostle, the Emperours of the world gave in their names to *Christ*, and submitted their scepters to his laws, that the ^o Gentiles might come to his light, and Kings to the brightness of his rising; that ^p Kings might become the nursing fathers, and Queens the nursing mothers, of the Church.

^a *Matt.* 15. 24.
^b *Matt.* 28. 19.
^c *Luke* 24. 49.
^d *Acts* 2. 41.
^e *Acts* 4. 4.
^f *Acts* 5. 14.
^g *Acts* 9. 31.
^h *Acts* 21. 20.
ⁱ *John* 12. 20.
^k *Acts* 2. 5.
^l *Rom.* 15. 18, 19.
^m *Coloss.* 1. 23.
ⁿ *Vita est nihil res digna consultatione maxime propter periclitantium numerum. Multi enim omnis ætatis, omnis ordinis, utriusque sexus erant, vocantur in periculum & vocabantur. Neque enim civitates tantum, sed vicos etiam atque agros, superstitionis istius contagio pervagata est. Plin. Epist. ad Trajanum.*
^o *Tanta hominum multitudo, pars pene major civitatis cujusque, in silentio & modestia agimus. Tertul. ad Scapul. c. 3.*
^p *Si hostes exercitos, non tantum vindices occultos, agere vellemus, deesset nobis vis numerorum & copiarum? Plures nimirum Mauri & Marcomanni, ipsique Parthi, vel quantuncumque; unius tamen loci & suorum finium gentes, quam totius orbis? Nostri sumus, & vestra omnia implevimus, urbes, insulas, castella, municipia, conciliabula, castra ipsa, tribus, decurias, palatium, senatum, forum. Id. Apolog. c. 35.* Potuimus & incrimare, nec rebelles, sed tantummodo discordes, solius invidia adversus vos dominicasse. Si enim tanta vis hominum in aliquem orbis remoti sinum abruptissemus à vobis, suffudisset utique dominationem vestram tot qualiumcumque; amissionem civium, imo etiam & ipsa destituiturione punisset: proculdubio expavissetis ad solitudinem vestram, ad silentium rerum, & stuporem quendam quasi mortuæ urbis; quævissetis quibus in ea imperassetis. Id. ibid. And *Irenæus*, who wrote before *Tertullian*, and is mentioned by him, speaks of the Christians in his time living in the Court of Rome: Quid autem & hi qui in regali aula sunt fideles? nonne ex eis quæ Cæsaris sunt habent utensilia, & hi qui non habent uniuscuique secundum suam virtutem præstat? ^a *Ista.* 60. 3. ^b *Ista.* 49. 23.

From hence it came to pass, that according to all the predictions of the Prophets, the one God of *Israel*, the Maker of Heaven and Earth, was acknowledged through the World for the only true God: that the Law given to *Israel* was taken for the true Law of God, but as given to that people, and so to cease when they ceased to be a people; except the moral part thereof, which, as an universal rule common to all people, is still acknowledged for the Law of God, given unto all, and obliging every man: that all the Oracles of the Heathen Gods, in all places where Christianity was received, did presently cease, and all the Idols or the Gods themselves, were rejected and condemned as spurious. For the Lord of Hosts had spoken concerning those times expressly; *It shall come to pass in that day, that I will cut off the names of the Idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land.* Zach. 13. 2.

Now being this general reception of the Gospel was so anciently, so frequently, foretold, being the same was so clearly and universally performed, even this might seem sufficient to persuade that *Jesus is Christ*. But lest any should not yet be fully satisfied, we shall further shew, that it is impossible *Jesus* should have been so received for the true *Messias*, had he not been so; or that his Doctrine, which teacheth him to be the *Christ*, should be admitted by all nations for divine, had it not been such. For whether we look upon the Nature of the Doctrine taught, the Conditions of the Teachers of it, or the manner in which it was taught, it can no way seem probable that it should have had any such success, without the immediate working of the hand of God, acknowledging *Jesus* for his Son, the Doctrine for his own, and the fulfilling by the hands of the Apostles what he had foretold by the Prophets.

As for the Nature of the Doctrine, it was no way likely to have any such success. For, first, it absolutely condemned all other Religions, settled and corroborated by a constant succession of many Ages, under which many nations and kingdoms, and especially at that time the *Roman*, had signally flourished. Secondly, it contained Precepts far more ungrateful and troublesome to flesh and blood, and contrariant to the general inclination of mankind; as the abnegation of our selves, the mortifying of the flesh, the love of our enemies, and the bearing of the Cross. Thirdly, it enforced those Precepts seemingly unreasonable, by such Promises as were as seemingly incredible and unperceivable. For they were not of the good things of this world, or such as afford any complacency to our Sense; but of such as cannot be obtained till after this life, and necessarily presuppose that which then seemed as absolutely impossible, the Resurrection. Fourthly, it delivered certain predictions which were to be fulfilled in the persons of such as should embrace it, which seem sufficient to have kept most part of the world from listening to it, as dangers, losses, afflictions, tribulations, and, in summ, *All that would live godly in Christ Jesus should suffer persecution.* 2 Tim. 3. 12.

If we look upon the Teachers of this Doctrine, there appeared nothing in them which could promise any success. The first Revealer and Promulger bred in the house of a Carpenter, brought up at the feet of no Professor, despised by the High-priests, the Scribes and Pharisees, and all the learned in the Religion of his Nation; in the time of his preaching apprehended, bound, buffeted, spit upon, condemned, crucified; betrayed in his life by one Disciple, denied by another; at his death distrusted by all. What advantage can we perceive toward the propagation of the Gospel in this Author of it, *Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling-block, and unto the Greeks foolishness?* 1 Cor. 1. 23. What in those which followed him, sent by him, and thence called Apostles,

men by birth obscure, by education illiterate, by profession low and inglorious? How can we conceive that all the Schools and Universities of the World should give way to them, and the Kingdoms and Empires should at last come in to them, except their Doctrine were indeed Divine, except that *Jesus*, whom they testified to be the *Christ*, were truly so?

If we consider the manner in which they delivered this Doctrine to the world, it will add no advantage to their persons, or advance the probability of success. For in their delivery they used no such rhetorical expressions, or ornaments of eloquence, to allure or entice the world; they affected no such subtilty of wit, or strength of argumentation, as thereby to persuade and convince men; they made use of no force or violence to compel, no corporal menaces to affright mankind unto a compliance. But in a plain simplicity of words they nakedly delivered what they had seen and heard, *preaching, not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in the demonstration of the Spirit*. It is not then rationally imaginable, that so many Nations should forsake their own Religions, so many Ages professed, and brand them all as damnable, only that they might embrace such precepts as were most unacceptable to their natural inclinations, and that upon such promises as seemed not probable to their reason, nor could have any influence on their sense, and notwithstanding those predictions which did assure them, upon the receiving of that Doctrine, to be exposed to all kind of misery: that they should do this upon the Authority of him who for the same was condemned and crucified, and by the persuasion of them who were both illiterate and obscure: that they should be enticed with words without eloquence, convinced without the least subtilty, constrained without any force. I say, it is no way imaginable how this should come to pass, had not the Doctrine of the Gospel, which did thus prevail, been certainly Divine; had not the light of the Word, which thus dispelled the clouds of all former Religions, come from Heaven; had not that *Jesus*, the *author and finisher of our faith*, been the true *Messias*.

To conclude this discourse. He who was in the world at the time when the *Messias* was to come, and no other at that time or since pretended; he who was born of the same family, in the same place, after the same manner, which the Prophets foretold of the birth of the *Messias*; he which taught all those truths, wrought all those miracles, suffered all those indignities, received all that glory, which the *Messias* was to teach, do, suffer, and receive; he whose Doctrine was received in all Nations, according to the character of the *Messias*; he was certainly the true *Messias*. But we have already sufficiently shewed that all these things are exactly fulfilled in *Jesus*, and in him alone. We must therefore acknowledge and profess that this *Jesus* is the promised *Messias*, that is, the *Christ*.

Having thus manifested the truth of this proposition, *Jesus is the Christ*, and shewed the interpretation of the word *Christ* to be *Anointed*; we find it yet * necessary for the explication of this Article, to enquire what was the end or immediate effect of his unction, and how or in what manner he was anointed to that end.

For the first, as the *Messias* was foretold, so was he typified: nor were the actions prescribed under the Law less predictive, than the words of the Prophets. Nay, || whosoever were then anointed, were therefore so, because he was to be anointed. Now it is evident that among the *Jews* they were wont to * anoint those which were appointed as Kings over them: So *Samuel said unto Saul*, *The Lord sent me to anoint thee to be King over his people, over Israel*. When *Saul* was rejected, and *David* produced before *Samuel*, *the Lord said, Arise, anoint him, for this is he*. And some || may have contented themselves

with

1 Cor. 2. 4.

* In Christi nomine subauditur qui unxit, & ipse qui unctus est, & ipsa unctio in qua unctus est.

Iren. l. 3. c. 20.

|| Οἱ βασιλεῖς πάντες καὶ ἡ χριστιανική ἐκκλησία τὸ μέτρον καὶ βασιλεῖς καὶ λαὸς καὶ χριστιανὸν. Just Mart. Dial.

* Christus à chrismate dicitur: quia sicur antiqui reges à sacerdotibus oleo sacro profangebantur, sic Christus Sp.S. infusione repletus est. Author Ser.

131. de Templ.

* 1 Sam. 15. 1.

* Chap. 15. 12.

|| Sicut nunc

Romanis indu-

mentam pur-

pure insigne

est regia dig-

nitatis assum-

pta: sic illis

unctionis sacri un-

guenti nomen

ac potestatem

regiam conse-

crabat. Lactan.

l. 4. c. 7.

* For though at the first the sons of Aaron were anointed as well as Aaron, as appears Exod. 40. 15. Thou shalt anoint them, as thou didst anoint their father, that they may administer to me in the Priests office: yet they were not after anointed, but the successors of Aaron only. For, saith the Text, their anointing shall surely be an everlasting Priesthood throughout their generations: and therefore after this first anointing they shall need no more, only the successors in the High-priesthood shall reiterate the unction: from whence the Priest that is anointed afterward signified

the High Priest, as Lev. 4. 3. **וְהָיָה הַמִּשְׁחָה** Lxx. ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς ὁ καὶ χειρισμὸς by way of explication : whereas verse the 5. and the 16. of the same chapter, and 6. 22. they render it by a bare translation, ὁ ἱερεὺς ὁ χειρὸς • which by the vulgar Latin is translated, Sacerdos qui iure patri succederet, because no other but the Son which succeeded the Father in the office of the High Priest was afterwards anointed : as the Arabick, & similiter Sacerdos successor de filiis suis. For in the anointing of Aaron and his Sons, **וַיִּשְׁחוּ כָל הַבָּנִים אַחֲרָיו לְהִיְוֹת כֹּהֲנִים וְלֹדוּ לֵאמֹר הוֹצֵרְנוּ לָמֶשֶׁחַ אֶחָד כִּי אוֹב כָּהֵן נִדְרָה** *Levi Ben Gersan* i Kings 1. || As *Lactant.* Erat Iudæis ante præceptum ut sacrum conficerent unguentum, quo perungi posset ii qui vocabantur ad sacerdotium vel ad regnum. l. 4. c. 7. And S. Aug. Prioribus Veteris Testamenti temporibus ad duas solas personas pertinuit unctio. *Enarr. 2. Psal. 21.* Christus vel Pontificale vel Regium nomen est. Nam prius & Pontifices unguento chrismatis consecrabantur & Reges. *Ruff. in Symb. a 1 King. 19. 15, 16.* * Τὸ τοῦ χρίσματος μὴ μόνον Ἀρχιερεῖς ἀπαρτίζονται, ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῖς μὲν ταῦτα Προφῆταις καὶ Βασιλεῦσιν, οἷς καὶ αὐτοῖς τὸ τοῦ χρίσματος μόνον ἔχον ὡς τοῦ μύρου. *Euseb. Demonst. Evang. l. 4. c. 15. & Hist. l. 1. c. 4.* Wherefore S. Augustine recollecting a place in his 83 Questions, in which he had taught, the two fishes in the Gospel, duas illas personas significare quibus populus ille regebatur, ut per eas consiliorum moderamen acciperet, regiam scilicet & sacerdotalem, ad quas etiam sacrosancta illa unctio pertinebat, makes this particular Retraction ; Dicendum potius fuit, maxime pertinebat, quoniam unctos aliquando legimus & Prophetas. *Retract. l. 1. c. 25.* || Οὐ μόνος ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς τοῦ ἀρχιερωσύνης τιμημένος τὸ τοῦ χρίσματος κατεκόσμηται παρ' Ἑβραίοις ὄνομα, ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῦ βασιλείας • ὅς καὶ αὐτοὶ νύμφῃ θεῷ προσήτοι χρίοντες, εἰκονικῶς τινὰς χρίσας ἀπεργάζοντο • ὅτι διὰ καὶ αὐτοὶ τῆς τοῦ μύρου καὶ ἀληθείας χρίσας, τὸ κατὰ πάντων βασιλεύοντες θεῶν λόγῳ, βασιλικῆς καὶ ἀρχικῆς ἐκείνης τοῦ τύπου δι' ἐαυτῶν ἐπεργάζοντο, ἵνα καὶ αὐτοὶ ᾗσαν προσήτοι τινὰς διὰ χρίσματος χρίσας ἐν τύπῳ μαρτυρούμενοι παραλήγουσιν ὡς τέτοις ἀπανταὶ ὅτι καὶ ἀληθῆς χρίσας, καὶ ἔνθεον καὶ ὑψίστον λόγον, ἀνασχετῶν ἔχοντες • μόνον ἀρχιερεὺς ἦν ἑλπίαν, καὶ μόνον ἀπάσης τῆς χρίσας βασιλείας, καὶ μόνον προσήτοι ἀχιπροφήτου ὡς πατέρες τοῦ γένους. *Hist. Eccl. l. 1. c. 3.*

Again, the Redemption or Salvation which the *Messias* was to bring, consisteth in the freeing of a sinner from the state of sin and eternal death into a state of righteousness and eternal life. Now a freedom from sin in respect of the guilt could not be wrought without a sacrifice propitiatory, and therefore there was a necessity of a Priest; a freedom from sin in respect of the dominion could not be obtained without a revelation of the will of God, and of his wrath against all ungodliness, therefore there was also need of a Prophet;

Prophet; a translation from the state of death into eternal life is not to be effected without absolute authority and irresistible power, therefore a King was also necessary. The *Messias* then, the Redeemer of *Israel*, was certainly anointed for that end, that he might become Prophet, Priest, and King. And if we believe him whom we call *Jesus*, that is, our Saviour and Redeemer, to be *Christ*, we must assert him by his unction sent to perform all these three Offices.

That *Jesus* was anointed to the Prophetical Office, though we need no more to prove it than the prediction of *Isaiah*, *The spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel to the poor*; the explication of our Saviour, *This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears*; and the confession of the Synagogue at Nazareth, who all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth: yet we are furnished with more ample and plentiful demonstrations: for whether we consider his Preparation, his Mission, or his Administration, all of them speak him fully to have performed it. To *Jeremiah* indeed God said, *Before thou comest forth out of the womb, I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a Prophet unto the Nations*; and of *John* the Baptist, *He shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb*. And if these became singular Prophets by their preparative sanctification, how much more eminent must his prophetic preparation be, to whose mother it is said, *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee*? If the *Levites* must be thirty years old, every one that came to do the service of the ministry; *Jesus* will not enter upon the publick administration of this Office till he begin to be about thirty years of age. Then doth the *Holy Ghost* descend in a bodily shape like a Dove upon him: then must a voice come from heaven, saying, *Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased*. Never such preparations, never such an inauguration of a Prophet.

As for his Mission, never any was confirmed with such letters of credence, such irrefragable testimonials, as the formal testimony of *John* the Baptist, and the more virtual testimony of his Miracles. Behold, *I will send you Elijah the Prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord*, saith God by *Malachy*. And *John* went before him in the spirit of *Elias*, saith another *Malachy*, even an Angel from Heaven. This *John*, or *Elias*, saw the Spirit descend on *Jesus*, and bare record that this is the Son of God. The Jews took notice of this testimony, who said unto him, *Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come unto him*; and *Jesus* himself puts them in mind of it, *Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth*; nay they themselves confessed his testimony to be undeniable, *John* did no miracle, but all things that *John* spake of this man were true. But though the witness of *John* were thus cogent, yet the testimony of Miracles was far more irrefragable. *I have greater witness than that of John*, saith our Saviour; *for the works which my Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me*. Notwithstanding the precedent record of *John*, *Jesus* requireth not an absolute assent unto his Doctrine without his Miracles: *If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not*. But upon them he challengeth belief: *But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works; that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him*. If then *Moses* and other Prophets, to whom God gave the power of Miracles, did assert their mission to be from God by the Divine works which they wrought; much more efficacious to this purpose must the Miracles of *Jesus* appear, who wrought more wonders than they all. Never therefore was there so manifest a Mission of a Prophet.

Now

Now the Prophetical Function consisteth in the promulgation, confirmation, and perpetuation of the Doctrine containing the will of God for the Salvation of Man. And the perfect Administration of the Office must be attributed unto Jesus. For *no man hath seen God at any time; the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.* He gave unto the Apostles the words which his Father gave him. Therefore he hath revealed the perfect will of God. The Confirmation of this Doctrine cannot be denied him, who lived a most innocent and holy life to perswade it, for *he did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth; who wrought most powerful and divine works to confirm it, and was thereby known to be a teacher from God; who died a most painful and shameful death to ratifie it, witnessing a good profession before Pontius Pilate; which in it self unto that purpose efficacious, was made more evidently operative in the raising of himself from death.* The Propagation and perpetual succession of this Doctrine must likewise be attributed unto Jesus, as to no temporary or accidental Prophet, but as to him who instituted and instructed all who have any relation to that Function. For *the Spirit of Christ was in the Prophets: and when he ascended up on high, he gave gifts unto men.* For he gave some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Pastors and Teachers; for the perfecting of the Saints, for the work of the Ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. It is then most apparent that Jesus was so far Christ, as that he was anointed to the Prophetical Office, because his Preparation for that Office was most remarkable, his Mission unto that Office was undeniable, his Administration of that Office was infallible.

Now as Jesus was anointed with the Unction of *Elizems* to the Prophetical, so was he also with the Unction of *Aaron* to the Sacerdotal Office. Not that he was called after the Order of *Aaron*; ^a *for it is evident, that our Lord sprang out of Judah, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood:* but after a more ancient Order, according to the prediction of the Psalmist, *The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchizedeck.* But though he were of another Order, yet whatsoever Aaron did as a Priest was wholly typical, and consequently to be fulfilled by the *Messias*, as he was a Priest. For the Priesthood did not begin in Aaron, but was translated and conferred upon his family before his consecration. We read of ^b *the Priests which came near the Lord; of c young men of the children of Israel which offered burnt-offerings, and sacrificed peace-offerings of oxen unto the Lord:* which without question were no other than the ^{*} first-born, to whom the Priesthood did belong. Jesus therefore, as the first begotten of God, was by right a Priest, and being anointed unto that Office, performed every function, by way of Oblation, Intercession and Benediction. ^d *Every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man, Jesus, if he be an High Priest, have somewhat also to offer.* Not that he had any thing beside himself, or that there was any peculiar Sacrifice allowed to this Priest; to whom, ^e *when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me: and, f by the offering of this body of Jesus Christ are we sanctified.* For he who is our Priest hath ^g *given himself an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savour.*

Now when Jesus had thus given himself a propitiatory Sacrifice for sin, he ascended up on high, and entered into the Holy of holies not made with hands, and there appeared before God as an atonement for our sin. Nor is he prevalent only in his own oblation once offered, but in his constant Intercession. *Who is he that condemneth?* saith the Apostle: *it is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God; who also maketh inter-*

John 1. 18.

John 17. 8, 14.

1 Pet. 2. 22.

John 3. 2.

1 Tim. 6. 13.

1 Pet. 1. 11.

Eph. 4. 8, 11, 12.

^a Heb. 7. 14, 21.^b Exod. 19. 22.^c Exod. 24. 5.^{*} For the Hebrew

נער נער

signifying juve-

nes, by all the

Targums is ren-

dred ביכר

that is, primo-

geniti: and so

the Arabick and

Persian Transla-

tions.

^d Heb. 8. 3.^e Heb. 10. 5.^f Heb. 10. 10.^g Eph. 5. 2.

Unus ipse erat

qui offerebat,

& quod offere-

bat. S. Aug.

Unum cum illo

manebat qui of-

ferebat, unum

in se fecit pro

quibus offere-

bat; unus ipse

erat qui offe-

rebat, & quod

offerebat. Id.

de Trinit.

Rom. 8. 34.

cession

Heb. 7. 25. *cession for us.* Upon this foundation he buildeth our persuasion, that he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. Nor must we look upon this as a * servile or precarious, but rather as an efficacious and glorious, Intercession, as of him to whom all power is given both in Heaven and Earth. Beside these offerings and intercedings, there was something more required of the Priest, and that is Blessing. ^a Aaron was separated, that he should sanctify the most holy things, he and his sons for ever, to burn incense before the Lord, to minister unto him, and to bless in his name for ever. We read of no other sacerdotal act performed by Melchizedek the Priest of the most High God, but only that of blessing, and that in respect both of God and man: First, ^b he blessed man, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most High God, possessor of heaven and earth: then, Blessed be the most High God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thine hand. Now it is observable what the Rabbins have delivered, that at the morning-sacrifice the Priests under the Law did bless the people with the solemn form of Benediction, but at the evening-sacrifice they blessed them not; to shew that in the evening of the world, the last days, which are the days of the *Messias*, the benediction of the Law should cease, and the blessing of the *Christ* take place. When *Zachariah* the Priest, the father of *John Baptist*, the forerunner of our Saviour, ^c executed his office before God in the order of his course, and the whole multitude of the people waited for him, to receive his benediction, he could not speak unto them, for he was dumb; shewing the power of benediction was now passing to another and far greater Priest, even to *Jesus*, whose Doctrine in the Mount begins with *Blessed*; who, when he left his Disciples, ^d lift up his hands, and blessed them. And yet this function is principally performed after his resurrection, as it is written, *Unto you first, God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning every one of you from his iniquities.* It cannot then be denied that *Jesus*, who offered up himself a most perfect sacrifice and oblation for sin, who still maketh continual intercession for us, who was raised from the dead, that he might bless us with an everlasting benediction, is a most true and most perfect Priest.

The third Office belonging to the *Messias* was the regal, as appeareth by the most ancient || tradition of the Jews, and by the express predictions of the Prophets. ^e Yet have I set my King, saith the Psalmist, upon my holy hill of *Sion*. ^f Unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder, saith the Prophet *Isaiah*, who calleth him the Prince of Peace, shewing the perpetuity of his power, and particularity of his seat. ^g Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end upon the throne of *David*, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice, from hence forth even for ever. All which most certainly belongs unto our *Jesus*, by the unerring interpretation of the Angel *Gabriel*, who promised the blessed Virgin that the Lord God should give unto her Son ^h the throne of his father *David*, and he shall reign over the house of *Jacob* for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end. He acknowledgeth himself this Office, though by a strange and unlikely representation of it, the riding on an *Ass*: but by that it was fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, Tell ye the daughter of *Sion*, Behold thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting on an ass. He made as strange a confession of it unto *Pilate*; for when he said unto him, Art thou a King then? *Jesus* answered, Thou sayest that I am a King. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. The solemn inauguration into this Office was at his ascension into Heaven, and his session at the right hand of God: not but that he was by right a King before, but the full and publick execution was deferred till then, when God raised him from

* Παράκλητον

ἐχούον Ἰησοῦν,

ὡς ὡς ἐπὶ ἡ-

μῶς περὶ καλιν-

δὲ μὲν τὸ πα-

τερος καὶ περὶ

πῶς τοῦτα δε-

λικῶς ἀπαγε-

ῖ δὲ λω ὄν-

τως ὡς νοίαν

καὶ ἀναΐαν τὸ

πῶς μὲν τὸ

ἔτε γὰρ τὸ πα-

τερος τὸ τοῦ ἐπ-

ζητήν, ἔτε τὸ

ἔτε παλαιόν, ἢ

ὡς οὗτο δεῦ-

διαφορῶς δι-

κομὸν ἀλλ' οἷς

πέποιθεν ὡς

ἀνθρώπων,

πῶς καὶ ἐ-

ξάν ὡς λόγῳ

καὶ παρενέτης.

τὸ τοῦ νοῦται

μοι ἢ παρὰ

κλησίας. S. Greg.

Naz. Orat. 36.

^a 1 Chron. 23.

13.

^b Gen. 14. 19.

20.

^c Luke 1. 8, 21.

22.

^d Luke 24. 50.

|| For the Chaldee Paraphrase in the most places where it mentioneth the *Messias*, doth it with the addition of King,

מֶלֶךְ

^e Psal. 2. 6.

^f Isai. 9. 6.

^g Ver. 7.

^h Luke 1. 32.

33.

Mat. 21. 4, 5.

John 18. 37.

Isai. 1. 26, 21.

from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion. Then he, whose name is called the word of God, had on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King of kings, and Lord of lords. Rev. 19. 13, 16.

This Regal Office of our Saviour consisteth partly in the ruling, protecting and rewarding of his people; partly in the coercing, condemning and destroying of his enemies. First, he ruleth in his own people, by delivering them a Law, by which they walk; by furnishing them with his grace, by which they are enabled to walk in it. Secondly, he protecteth the same, by helping them to subdue their lusts, which reign in their mortal bodies; by preserving them from the temptations of the world, the flesh and the Devil; by supporting them in all their afflictions; by delivering them from all their enemies. Thirdly, whom he thus rules and protects here, he rewards hereafter in a most royal manner, making them *Kings and Priests unto God and his Father*. On the contrary, he sheweth his Regal dominion in the destruction of his enemies, whether they were temporal or spiritual enemies. Temporal, as the *Jews* and *Romans*, who joined together in his Crucifixion. While he was on earth he told his Disciples, *There be some standing here which shall not taste of death till they see the Son of man coming in his Kingdom*: and in that Kingdom he was then seen to come, when he brought utter destruction on the *Jews* by the *Roman* Armies, not long after to be destroyed themselves. But beside these visible enemies, there are other spiritual, those which hinder the bringing in of his own people into his Father's Kingdom, those which refuse to be subject unto him, and consequently deny him to be their King; as all wicked and ungodly men, of whom he hath said, *These mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me*. Thus Sin, Satan, and Death, being the enemies to his Kingdom, shall all be destroyed in their order. For he *must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet*: and the last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. Thus is our *Jesus* become the *Prince of the Kings of the earth*; thus is the *Lamb* acknowledged to be *Lord of lords, and King of kings*. Rev. 1. 6. Matth. 16. 28. Luke 19. 27. 1 Cor. 15. 25, 26. Rev. 1. 5. and 17. 14.

Wherefore seeing we have already shewed that the Prophetical, Sacerdotal and Regal Offices were to belong unto the promised *Messias*, as the proper end and immediate effect of his Unction; seeing we have likewise declared how *Jesus* was anointed to these Offices, and hath and doth actually perform the same in all the functions belonging to them: there remaineth nothing for the full explication of this particular concerning the *Christ*, but only to shew the manner of this Unction, which is very necessary to be explained. For how they were anointed under the Law, who were the types of the *Messias*, is plain and evident, because the manner was prescribed, and the materials were visible: God appointed an Oyl to be made, and appropriated it to that use; and the pouring that Oyl upon the body of any person was his anointing to that Office for which he was designed. But being that Oyl so appropriated to this use was lost many hundred years before our Saviour's birth, being the custom of anointing in this manner had a long time ceased, being howsoever we never read that *Jesus* was at all anointed with Oyl; it remaineth still worth our enquiry, how he was anointed, so as to answer to the former unctions; and what it was which answered to that Oyl, which then was lost, and was at the first but as a Type of this which now we search for.

The * *Jews* tell us, that the anointing Oyl was hid in the days of *Josiah*, and

the *Messias* God will restore unto his people the oyl of unction which *Moses* made, which was hidden with the Ark; and the Kings and High Priests shall be anointed with it in those days. *Abarbanel* Comment. ad 30. Exodi. Now the loss of that oyl, which they call the hiding of it, may well be thought to foretel the period of the *Mysical* Administration, being they confess that after that they never had any Priests anointed, because they had no power to make the same oyl. So plainly confesseth the same. *Abarbanel*: In the days of

* בימור
המשיח
עתיד
הקדוש
ברוך הויה
להחיות
לעמו
אותו שמן
המשהח
שעשה
משה
שננועם
הארץ ובו
זמנו
המלכים
והכהנים
חגגו יום
כיום ההם

that it shall be found and produced again when the *Messias* comes, that he may be anointed with it, and the Kings and High Priests of his days. But though the loss of that Oyl bespake the destruction of that Nation, yet the *Christ* which was to come needed no such unction for his Consecration; there being as great a difference between the Typical and correspondent Oyl, as between the representing and represented *Christ*. The Prophet *David* calleth it not by the vulgar name of Oyl of unction, but the ^a *oyl of gladness*. For though that place may in the first sence be understood of *Solomon*, whom when *Zadoc* the Priest anointed ^b *they blew the Trumpet, and all the people said, God save king Solomon. And all the people came up after him, and the people piped with pipes, and rejoiced with great joy, so that the earth rent with the sound of them*; though from thence it might be said of him, *Thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladness above thy fellows*: yet being those words are spoken unto God, as well as of God, (^{*} *therefore God thy God,*) the Oyl with which that God is anointed must in the ultimate and highest sence signifie a far greater gladness than that at *Solomon's* Coronation was, even the fountain of all joy and felicity in the Church of God.

^a *Psal.* 45. 7.

^b *1 King.* 1. 39.
40.

* Duas personas, ejus qui unctus est Dei, & qui unxit, intellige. Unde & Aquila Elohaim *עֲלֵימָי* verbum Hebraicum non nominativo casu, sed vocativo, interpretatur, dicens *דֵּי* & nos propter intelligentiam Dei posuimus, quod Latina Lingua non accipit, ne quis perversè putet Deum dilecti & amantissimi & regis his Patrem nominari, S. Hieron. Epist. 104. Quod sequitur, *Unxit te, Deus tuus*, primum nomen Dei vocativo casu intelligendum est, sequens nominativo; satis miror cur Aquila non, ut cœperat in primo versiculo, vocativo casu interpretatus sit, sed nominativo, his nominans Deum qui supradictum unxit Deum. *Lt. Ib.* || So Greg. Naz. expounds the place: *Ὁν ἔχειον ἔλαιον ἀγαλλιάσεως παρὰ τοῦ μετόχου αὐτοῦ, χρίσας τὸν ἀνθρώπου τῇ θεότητι. ὡς ποιεῖται τὰ ἀμφοτέρωθεν. ἔν.* And again, *Χρίσας ὃ διὰ τοῦ θεότητος*: (not that his Divinity was anointed, or Christ anointed in respect of his Divinity; but that he was anointed in his Humanity by his Divinity) *χρίσας ὃ αὐτὰ τῆς ἀνθρώπου θεότητος ἐκ ἐνέργειας, καὶ ποὶ ἄλλως χρίσας ἀναίσχυντα, παρὰ τὴν ὅλην τὴν χρίοντες, ὡς ἔργον ἀνθρώπου ἀκύνει τὸ χρίον, καὶ ποιεῖται δεῖν τὸ χρίοντες.* Orat. 2. de Filio. * *Χρίσας ἐχρίσθη ὡς βασιλεὺς καὶ ἱερεὺς τῷ χρίσματι τῆς σαρκώσεως.* Germanus Constant. *Καὶ χρίσας ὃ ἐχέτωρ σαρκαὶ τὸν υἱόν, ὃ ὅτι καὶ σάρκα ἡρώδου, διόλοντι καὶ ἡμῶς, καὶ ἀνθρώπων πάντα.* Titus Brevens. Deus est qui ungit, & Deus qui secundum carnem ungitur Dei filius. Denique quas habet unctionis sue *Christus* nisi in carne participes? Vides igitur quia Deus à Deo unctus, sed in assumptione nature unctus humane Dei Filius designatur. S. Ambros. de Fide, l. 1. c. 2. Hæc omnia carni conveniunt, cum piissimum & gloriosissimum verbum unicum est pro salute cunctorum. Cassiodorus in *Psal.* 44. || S. Hierome, mentioning that place of the *Psalms*, Quando consortes nominantur, naturam carnis intellige, quia Deus consortes substantiæ suæ non habet. Et quia erat unctio spiritalis & nequaquam humani corporis, (ut fuit in sacerdotibus Judæorum) idcirco præ consortibus, id est, cæteris sanctis, unctus esse memoratur. Cujus unctio illo expleta est tempore quando baptizatus est in Jordane, & Spiritus Sanctus in specie Columbæ descendit super eum, & mansit in illo. Comment. in *Ephesiam*, c. 6. 1. In illa columba quæ super ipsum post baptismum descendit, cum sacramento Baptismatis, & veri sacerdotii jura suscepit, fuso videlicet super eum oleo exultationis, de quo Psalmista canit; Unxit te, inquit Deus, Deus tuus. Petrus Damianus, Opuscul. 6. c. 4. ^a *1 Sam.* 16. 13. ^c *Psal.* 89. 20.

The || Ancients tell us that this Oyl is the Divinity it self, and in the language of the Scriptures it is the Holy Ghost. S. Peter teacheth us *how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power*. Now though there can be no question but the Spirit is the Oyl, yet there is some doubt, when *Jesus* was anointed with it. For we know the Angel said unto the blessed Virgin, ^c *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God*. From whence it appeareth that from the Conception, or at the Incarnation, *Jesus* was sanctified by the Holy Ghost, and the power of the Highest; and so consequently, as S. Peter spake, he was ^{*} *anointed then with the Holy Ghost and with power*. Again, being we read that after he was thirty years of age, the Spirit like a Dove descended and lighted upon him, and he, descending in the power of the Spirit into *Galilee*, said unto them of *Nazareth*, *This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears*, meaning that of *Isaiah*, *The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel*; hence || hath it been also collected, that his Unction was performed at his Baptism. Nor need we to contend which of these two was the true time of our Saviour's Unction, since neither is destructive of the other, and consequently both may well consist together. *David*, the most undoubted type of the *Messiah*, was anointed at *Bethlehem*; for there ^d *Samuel took the horn of oyl, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the Spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward*. Of which unction those words of God must necessarily be understood, ^e *I have found David my servant; with my holy oyl have I anoin-*

ted him. And yet he was again anointed at *Hebron*; first over the house of *Judah*, then over all the tribes of *Israel*. As therefore *David* at his first Unction received the Spirit of God, and a full right unto the Throne of *Israel*, which yet he was not to exercise till the death of *Saul* and acceptance of the Tribes; and therefore when the time was come that he should actually enter upon his Regal Office, he was again anointed: So our *Jesus*, the Son of *David*, was first sanctified and anointed with the Holy Ghost at his Conception, and thereby received a right unto, and was prepared for, all those Offices which belonged to the Redeemer of the world; but when he was to enter upon the actual and full performance of all those Functions which belonged to him, then doth the same Spirit which had sanctified him at his Conception visibly descend upon him at his Inauguration. And that most properly upon his Baptism, because, according to the customs of those ancient Nations, washing was wont to * precede their Unctions: wherefore * *Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a Dove.* As *David* sent *Solomon* to be anointed at *Gihon*: from whence arose that ancient observation of the Rabbins, that || *Kings were not to be anointed but by a fountain*:

2 Sam. 2. 4.
and 5. 3.

* As appears by these entertainments so frequently mentioned by Homer in his *Odyssees*: as when *Tele-*

machus is entertained by *Nestor*; Τόρρα ἧ Τηλέμαχον λῆσεν καλλὴ Πολυδάσῃ, Νέστορ δ' ὁπλοῖσιν ἐδυάτηρ Νηλεΐδου. Αὐτὰρ ἐπεὶ λῆσεν τε καὶ ἔχεισιν λίπ' ἐλαίῳ. *Od. Γ.* And *Telemachus* and *Pisistratus* are invited to the Court of *Menelaus*;

Ἔς δ' ἀσπαίνθης βάντες ἐϋζέστες λῶσιν. *Od. Δ.*

Τὲς δ' ἐπὶ ἐν δμῶνι λῶσιν καὶ χεῖσαν ἐλαίῳ. *Od. Δ.*

Thus *Ulysses* is entertained, *Od. Θ.* thus *Pyraus* and *Telemachus*, *Od. Ρ.* and *Venus*, returning to *Paphus*, is so ordered by the *Charires*;

Ἐνθα δέ μιν Χείρες λῶσιν καὶ χεῖσαν ἐλαίῳ

Ἀμβρότω, οἷα θεὸς ἐπενένοθεν αἶν ἐόντις. *Od. Θ.*

So *Helena* speaks of her entertaining *Ulysses* in a disguise;

Ἀλλ' ὅτε δὴ μιν ἐγὼν ἐλόδον καὶ χεῖον ἐλαίῳ.

It is apparent that this was the custom of the ancient Greeks. Of which *Eustathius* gives this reason: Ἐλαίῳ ἐχρίοντο οἱ λαοὶ ἀπὸ ἐμπλάτοις καὶ ῥομαίικας πύρας, ὡς ἀν' αὐτῶν λέγουσιν τινὲς Ἰνία. This custom was so ancient and general, that the Greeks had one way to express this anointing with oyl after washing with water, which they called χύτλα, and χυτλάσαι. *Etymol. χυτλάσαι, ἔχασπλως τὸ ἀλείφαι, ἀλλὰ τὸ ὅτι λυγρὸ ἀλείφας. Schol. Aristoph. χύτλα ἧ κυρίως, τὸ ὕγρ' ἔτι πρὸ ὕδατος ὄντι τῇ σώματι ἀλείφας. Hesych. χύτλα, τὸ ἐφ' ὕδατος ἐλαίου. and χυτλάσαι, τὸ ἀλείφαι μὴ τὸ λῶσαι. Hence, when *Nausicaa* went unto the pools to wash, her Mother gave her a box of oyl. Ὅδ' Ζ.*

Δῶκε δ' ἧ χροσίν ἐν λυγρῷ ὕγρ' ἐλαίου.

Εἰως χυτλάσαισιν σὺν ἀμριπόλοις γυναιξίν.

where the old Scholiast, χυτλάσαισιν, λαοὶ ἀπὸ ἐμπλάτοις. and *Eustathius*, Εἰως χυτλάσαισιν, ἀντὶ τῆς ὕπας μὴ λεγέσθαι χυτλάσθαι ἀλείφασθαι. which exposition is warranted by the performance after mentioned,

Αἱ δ' ἡσασσάμεναι καὶ ἀλείψαμεν λίπ' ἐλαίῳ.

And as this was the ancient custom of the Greeks, so was it also the common custom of the Jews, as appears by the words of *Naomi* to *Ruth*, wash thy self therefore, and anoint thee, and put thy rayment upon thee, *Ruth* 3. 3. * *Matt.* 2. 16. || They say in the Gemara; that this is a Maxime of the Doctors, משיחין ארבעה עשר ימים לפני מלכותן אמרי בנמר רבנן. *Abarbanel* in 30. *Exod.* The end of which ceremony was to shew the prolonging of his kingdom who was so anointed; and the original is referred to the anointing of *Solomon*, 1 *King.* 1. 33. For so it followeth in the Talmud, כרי שתימשך מלכותו שנה וזהו נתינת אבותיה. *Abarbanel* ibid.

Now as we have shewed that *Jesus* was anointed with the Holy Ghost, lest any should deny any such descension to be a proper or sufficient Unction, we shall farther make it appear, that the Effusion, or Action of the Spirit, eminently containeth whatsoever the Jews have imagined to be performed or signified by those legal Anointings. Two very good reasons they render why God did command the use of such anointing Oyl, as in respect of the action. First that it might signify the Divine Election of that person, and designation to that Office: from whence it was necessary that it should be performed by a Prophet, who understood the will of God. Secondly, that by it the person anointed might be made fit to receive the Divine influx. For the first, it is evident there could be no such infallible sign of the Divine designation of *Jesus* to his Offices, as the visible descent of the Spirit, attended with a voice from heaven, in stead of the hand of a Prophet, saying, *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.* For the second, this spiritual Unction was so far from giving less than an aptitude to receive the Divine influx, that it was

Matt. 3. 17.

that divine influx, nay, the Divinity it self, the Godhead dwelling in him bodily.

Judg 9 9.

Unguenta o-
primè servan-
tur in alaba-
stris, odores in
oleo. *Plin. Hist.*
l. 13. c. 2.
Exist matur &
ebori vindican-
do à carie utile
esse. Certè si-
mulacrum Sa-
turni Roma in-
tus oleo reple-
tum est. *Id. l. 15. c. 7.* And whoever made that Statue at Rome, seems to have had his Art out of Greece, from that fact is
Ivory Statue made by Phidias. Οὗτος γὰρ μὲν τὸ καλὰ σκευάσαι Πισσῶν ἑθελον, (ὅς ἐλεφαντίνῃ ἢ ἄλλοις ὕλοις) ἔλαυνεν κα-
χῆδος τρεπεταξεν ἀμφὶ τοῦ πόδα, ἔμπεδον τὸ ἀγάλματι, ἀθάνατον εἰς δωδεκαμην φυλάσσαν αὐτό. Proclus apud Epi-
phan. *Her. 14. §. 12.* ^a Heb. 7. 24, 16.

In respect of the matter, they give two causes why it was Oyl, and not any other liquour. First, because of all other it signifies the greatest glory and excellency. The Olive was the first of Trees mentioned as fit for Sovereignty, in regard of its *fatness*, *wherewith they honour God and man*. Therefore it was fit that those persons which were called to a greater dignity than the rest of the *Jews*, should be consecrated by Oyl, as the best sign of election to Honour. And can there be a greater honour than to be the Son of God, the *beloved Son*, as *Jesus* was proclaimed at this Unction, by which he was consecrated to such an Office as will obtain him a Name far above all names? Secondly, they tell us that Oyl continueth uncorrupted longer than any other liquour. And indeed it hath been observed to preserve not only it self, but || other things, from corruption. Hence they conclude it fit, their Kings and Priests, whose succession was to continue for ever, should be anointed with Oyl, the most proper emblem of Eternity. But even by this reason of their own, their Unction is ceased, being the succession of their Kings and Priests is long since cut off, and their eternal and eternizing Oyl lost long before. And only that one *Jesus*, who was anointed with the most spiritual Oyl, ^a *continueth for ever*; and therefore *hath an unchangeable Priesthood*, as being made *not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life*.

Beside, they observe, that simple Oyl without any mixture was sufficient for the Candlestick; but that which was designed for Unction must be compounded with principal Spices, which signify a good name, always to be acquired by those in places of greatest dignity by the most laudable and honourable actions. And certainly never was such an admixture of Spices as in the Unction of our Saviour, by which he was endued with all variety of the Graces of God, by which he was enabled to *offer himself a sacrifice for a sweet-smelling savour*. For as ^b *he was full of grace and truth*; so of his fulness have we all received, *grace for grace*: and as we ^c *have received anointing of him*; so we ^d *are unto God a sweet savour of Christ*.

^b Joh. 1. 14, 16.

^c Joh. 2. 27.

^d 2 Cor. 2. 15.

Again, it was sufficient to anoint the Vessels of the Sanctuary in any part; but it was particularly commanded that the Oyl should be poured upon the Head of the Kings and Priests, as the seat of all the animal Faculties, the fountain of all Dignity, and *original of all the members of the body. This was more eminently fulfilled in *Jesus*, who by his Unction, or as *Christ*, became the *head of the Church*; nay, the ^e *head of all principality and power, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God*.

* According to the Etymology in the Hebrew Language, of which Abarhanel here takes notice;

נָקַד ראש
כי הוה
ראשית
דכל
האברי
והיכל
מעלה
שבת

^e Col. 2. 10, 19.

^f Lev. 8. 12.

Lastly, they observe, that though in the Vessels nothing but a single Unction was required; yet in the Kings and Priests there was commanded, or at least practised, both Unction and Effusion, (as it is written, ^f *He poured of the anointing oyl upon Aaron's head, and anointed him to sanctify him*;) the first to signify their Separation, the second to assure them of the falling of the Spirit upon them. Now what more clear than that our *Christ* was anointed by Affusion, whether we look upon his Conception, *the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee*; or his Inauguration, *the Spirit descended and lighted upon him*? And thus, according unto all particulars required by the *Jews* themselves to compleat their legal Unctions, we have sufficiently shewed that *Jesus* was, as most eminently, so most properly, anointed with the Spirit of God.

Where-

Wherefore being we have shewn that a *Messias* was to come into the World; being we have proved that he is already come, by the same predictions by which we believe he was to come; being we have demonstrated that *Jesus* born in the days of *Herod* was and is that promised *Messias*; being we have farther declared that he was anointed to those Offices which belonged to the *Messias*, and actually did and doth still perform them all; and that his anointing was by the immediate effusion of the Spirit, which answereth fully to all things required in the Legal and Typical Unction: I cannot see what farther can be expected for explication or confirmation of this Truth, that *Jesus is the Christ*.

The necessity of believing this part of the Article is most apparent, because it were impossible he should be our *Jesus*, except he were the *Christ*. For he could not reveal the way of Salvation, except he were a Prophet; he could not work out that Salvation revealed, except he were a Priest; he could not confer that Salvation upon us, except he were a King; he could not be Prophet, Priest, and King, except he were the *Christ*. This was the fundamental doctrine which the Apostles not only testified, as they did that of the Resurrection, but argued, proved, and demonstrated out of the Law and the Prophets. We find *S. Paul* at *Thessalonica* three Sabbath-days reasoning with them out of the Scriptures, opening and alledging that *Christ* must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this *Jesus* whom I preach unto you, is *Christ*. We find him again at *Corinth* pressed in spirit, and testifying to the *Jews*, that *Jesus* was *Christ*. Thus *Apollos*, by birth a *Jew*, but instructed in the Christian Faith by *Aquila* and *Priscilla*, mightily convinced the *Jews*, and that publickly, shewing by the Scriptures, that *Jesus* was *Christ*. This was the Touchstone by which all men at first were tried whether they were Christian or Antichristian. For whosoever believeth, saith *S. John*, that *Jesus is the Christ*, is born of God. What greater commendation of the assertion of this Truth? Who is a liar, saith the same Apostle, but he that denied that *Jesus is the Christ*? This man is the *Antichrist*, as denying the Father and the Son. What higher condemnation of the negation of it?

Secondly, as it is necessary to be believed as a most fundamental Truth, so it hath as necessary an influence upon our conversations; because except it hath so, it cannot clearly be maintained. Nothing can be more absurd in a disputant, than to pretend to demonstrate a Truth as infallible, and at the same time to shew it impossible. And yet so doth every one who professeth Faith in *Christ* already come, and liveth not according to that profession: for thereby he proveth, as far as he is able, that the true *Christ* is not yet come, at least that *Jesus* is not he. We sufficiently demonstrate to the *Jews* that our Saviour, who did and suffered so much, is the true *Messias*; but by our lives we recal our arguments, and strengthen their wilful opposition. For there was certainly a Promise, that when *Christ* should come, the wolf should dwell with the lamb, and the leopard should lie down with the kid, and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together, and a little child should lead them; that is, there should be so much love, unanimity and brotherly kindness in the Kingdom of *Christ*, that all ferity and inhumanity being laid aside, the most different natures and inclinations should come to the sweetest harmony and agreement. Whereas if we look upon our selves, we must confess there was never more bitterness of spirit, more rancour of malice, more heat of contention, more manifest symptoms of envy, hatred, and all uncharitableness, than in those which make profession of the Christian Faith. It was infallibly foretold, that when the law should go forth out of *Zion*, and the word of the Lord from *Jerusalem*, they should beat their swords into plough-shares, and their spears into

into pruning-hooks: nation should not lift up sword against nation, neither should they learn war any more. Whereas there is no other Art so much studied, so much applauded, so violently asserted, not only as lawful, but as necessary. Look upon the face of Christendom divided into several Kingdoms and Principalities; what are all these but so many publick Enemies, either exercising or designing War? The Church was not more famous, or did more encrease, by the first blood which was shed in the Primitive times through the external violence of ten Persecutions, than now 'tis infamous, and declines through constant violence, fraud and rapine, through publick engagements of the greatest Empires in Arms, through civil and intestine Wars, and, left any way of shedding Christian blood should be unassayed, even by Massacres. It was likewise prophesied of the days of the *Messias*, that all Idolatry should totally cease, that all false Teachers should be cut off, and unclean spirits restrained. And can we think that the *Jews*, who really abhor the thoughts of worshipping an Image, can ever be persuaded there is no Idolatry committed in the Christian Church? Or can we excuse our selves in the least degree from the plague of the Locusts of *Egypt*, the false Teachers? Can so many Schisms and Sects arise, and spread, can so many Heresies be acknowledged and countenanced, without false Prophets and unclean spirits? If then we would return to the bond of true Christian Love and Charity, if we would appear true lovers of Peace and Tranquillity, if we would truly hate the abominations of Idolatry, false Doctrine and Heresie, let us often remember what we ever profess in our Creed, that *Jesus* is the *Christ*, that the Kingdom of the *Messias* cannot consist with these Impieties.

Thirdly, the necessity of this Belief appeareth in respect of those Offices which belong to *Jesus* as he is the *Christ*. We must look upon him as upon the Prophet anointed by God to preach the Gospel, that we may be incited to hear and embrace his Doctrine. Though *Moses* and *Elias* be together with him in the Mount, yet the Voice from Heaven speaketh of none but *Jesus*, *Hear ye him.* He is that Wisdom, the *delight of God*, crying in the *Proverbs*, *Blessed is the man that heareth me, watching daily at my gates, waiting at the posts of my doors.* There is one thing needful, saith our Saviour; and *Mary chose that good part, who sate at Jesus feet, and heard his words.* Which devout posture teacheth us, as a willingness to hear, so a readiness to obey: and the proper effect which the belief of this Prophetical Office worketh in us, is our *Obedience of Faith.* We must farther consider him as our High Priest, that we may thereby add Confidence to that Obedience. For we have *boldness to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus*; yea, *having an High-priest over the house of God, we may draw near with a true heart in full assurance of Faith.* And as this breedeth an adherence and assurance in us, so it requireth a resignation of us. For if *Christ* have redeemed us, we are his; if he died for us, it was that we should live to him: if we be *bought with a price*, we are no longer our own; but we must *glorifie God in our body and in our spirit, which are God's.* Again, an apprehension of him as a King is necessary for the performance of our true and entire allegiance to him. *Send the lamb of the Ruler of the earth*, do him homage, acknowledge him your King, shew your selves faithful and obedient subjects. We can pretend, and he hath required, no less. As soon as he let the Apostles understand that *All power was given unto him in heaven and in earth*, he charged them to *teach all nations, to observe all things whatsoever he commanded them.* Can we imagine he should so strictly enjoin subjection to higher powers, the highest of whom are here below, and that he doth not expect exact obedience to him who is exalted *far above all principalities and powers, and is set down at the right hand of God?* It is observable, that in the

Descri-

Description of the coming of the Son of man, it is said, *The King shall say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you*: which title as it secures hope, in respect of his power; as it magnifies our reward by the excellency of our inheritance; so also it teacheth us the indispensable condition of Obedience.

Fourthly, the belief of *Jesus the Christ* is necessary to instruct us what it is to be a Christian, and how far we stand obliged by owning that name. Those who did first embrace the Faith were styled * *Disciples*, (as when *the number of Disciples was multiplied*;) or *Believers*, or *Brethren*, or || *men of the Church*, or *Callers upon the name of Christ*, or * *men of the way*; or by their Enemies, *Nazarens*, and *Galileans*. But in a short time they gained a Name derived from their Saviour, though not from that name of his which signifieth Salvation; for from *Christ* they were called *Christians*. A title so honourable, and of such concernment, that S. Luke hath thought fit to mention the City in which that name first was heard. || *And the Disciples were called Christians first at Antioch*, as the Scriptures assure us; so named by *Euodius* the Bishop of that place, as Ecclesiastical History inform us. A name no sooner invented, but embraced by all Believers, as bearing the most proper signification of their Profession, and relation to the Author and Master whom they served. In which the Primitive Christians so much delighted, that before the face of their enemies they would acknowledge * no other Title but that, though hated, reviled, tormented, martyred for it. Nor is this Name of greater honour to us, than obligation. There are two parts of the Seal of the foundation of God, and one of them is this, ^a *Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity*. It was a common answer of the Ancient Martyrs, || *I am a Christian, and with us no evil is done*. The very name was thought to speak something of * emendation; and whosoever put it on, became the better man. Except such Reformation accompany our Profession, there is no || advantage in the appellation; nor can we be honoured by that title, while we dishonour him that gives it. If he be therefore called *Christ*, because anointed; as we derive the name of *Christian*, so do we receive our * *Unction*, from him. For as ^b *the precious ointment upon the head ran down upon the beard, even Aaron's beard, and went down to the skirts of his garments*: so the Spirit, which without measure was poured upon *Christ* our head, is by him diffused through all the members of his || body. For ^c *God hath established and anointed us in Christ*: ^d *We have an unction from the Holy One, and the anointing which we have received from him abideth in us*. Necessary then it cannot chuse but be, that we should know *Jesus* to be the *Christ*: because as he is *Jesus*, that is, our Saviour, by being *Christ*, that is, anointed; so we can have no share in him as *Jesus*, except we become truly *Christians*, and so be in him as *Christ*, * anointed with that *Unction* from the Holy One.

Acts 6. 1, 7.
* For when our Saviour gave that command to his Apostles, πορεύεσθες ες μαθητεύετε πάντα τὰ ἔθνη, go make all nations disciples, they which delivered the Gospel were μαθητεύοντες, they which were taught it and received it were at that time μαθητεύητες, and after by a name habitual μαθηταί, translated by Tertul. Discipulantes, ordinarily Discipuli. Μαθητὴς οὐκ ἔστιν, ὡς μανθάνομεν παρ' αὐτοῦ τὸ Κεῖναι, τὰς δὲ τοῦ Κεῖναι προσερχόμενοι, ὡς ἀκολουθεῖν αὐτῷ, τὰς δὲ εἰσὶν, ἀκούειν αὐτοῦ λόγων αὐτοῦ, πισδεῖν τε καὶ πεποιθεῖν αὐτῷ ὡς δεσποτῇ, καὶ βασιλεῖ καὶ ἱατροῦ, καὶ διδασκαλοῦ ἀληθείας, ἐπ' ἐλπίδι ζωῆς αἰώνιας. Thus then, in the language of the Scriptures

μαθητεύειν τινὰ is to make a Disciple; as μαθητεύσαντες ἱκανός, Acts 14. 21. μαθητεύειν τινὰ, to be a Disciple; as Joseph of Arimathæa ἐμαθήτευσεν τὸν Ἰησοῦ, Mat 27. 57. μαθητεύσεν αὐτὸν the same; as χαρμαῖος μαθητὴς εἰς τὸ βασιλεῖν αὐτοῦ, Mat. 13. 52. Thus μαθητεύσεν τὸν Κεῖναι, is often used by S. Basil de Baptismate, whose title is, *Ὅτι δὲ πρῶτον μαθητεύσεν τὸν Κεῖναι, καὶ τότε καταβιβαστὴς τῷ ἁγίῳ βαπτίσματι*, according to our Saviour's method. Hence those which were first converted to the Faith were called μαθηταί, as the Disciples of *Christ* their Doctor and Master. || Οἱ δὲ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, as when Herod stretched forth his hand κακῶς αὐτὸν τινὰ αὐτῷ τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, to mischief some of those which were of the Church. * As when Saul went down to Damascus with a Commission, ὅπως εἴη τινὰς εὐεχὴ τῆς ὁδοῦ ἄνδρας τε καὶ γυναικας, δεδιδωκὸς ἀγάπην εἰς Ἱερουσαλὴμ, Acts 9. 2. we translate it, any of this way; when there was no way mentioned to which the Pronoun this should have relation; nor is ἡ ὁδὸς in Greek any more than the way. So when S. Paul went to the Synagogue at Corinth, divers were hardened and believed not, κακολογῶντες ὅτι ἔσθιν ἐνώπιον τοῦ πλῆθους, Acts 19. 9. here we translate it, spake evil of that way; but Beza has left his Articulus pronominis vice tungitur, which he had from Erasmus, and hath otherwise supplied it, male loquentes de via Dei: and the Old Translation, which in the former had huius via, in this hath simply maledicentes via: and certainly ἡ ὁδὸς is nothing but the way. Again, at Ephesus ἐγώ το ὅ καὶ ἡ κατὰ ἐκκλησίαν τὴν ἐκείνην ἀκρίβειαν καὶ ἀλήθειαν, Acts 19. 23. de via, V. Transl. Beza again ob viam Dei, but it is nothing but, the way. Thus Foxell put off S. Paul, ἀκρίβειαν εἰδὼς τὰ ὅτι καὶ ὁδὸς, till he had a more exact knowledge of the way, V. Transl. de via hac; Beza, ad lectam istam. Whereas then the phrase is so simply and so frequently the same, it can be nothing else but the word then in use to signify the

the Religion which the Christians professed. And so some also of the Ancients seem to have spoken, as appears by the language of the Melchizideans, *Χριστὸς ἐξ ἐλἐν, ἵνα ἡμᾶς καλῶσιν ἐν πολλῶν ὁδῶν εἰς μίαν ταύτην ἡ γυνῶν, ἐπεὶ δὲ ἀπέστρεψεν ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ εὐδωλίας, καὶ ἐπέστρεψεν ἡμῖν ἡ δόξα, and that in the description of the Gallican Persecution, Ῥμειναν ὃ ἐξω οἱ μὲν ἴχνη παπο-
τε τίς ποτε, καὶ δὲ αὐθιγὸν ἐν δόματι τοῦ κυρίου, καὶ ἐννοῶν φέρεται ὅτι ὁ ἴδιος ἀναστρέφει αὐτὸν βλασφημίας ἢ ὁδόν. Euseb. Hist. l. 5. c. 1. || S. Luke noteth the place, but neither the time when, nor person by whom this name was given. Tertul-
lian seems to make it as ancient as the reign of Tiberius, Apolog. c. 5. Tiberius ergo, cujus tempore nomen Christianum in se-
culum introivit. But I scarce see indeed he speaks not of the name, but of the Religion: for so he may well be thought to expound him-
self, saying then after, Censuris illius disciplinæ, ut jam edidimus, à Tiberio est, c. 7. However, the name of Christian is not so
ancient as Tiberius, nor, as I think, as Caius. Some ancient Author in Suidas assures us, that it was first named in the reign of
Claudius, when S. Peter had obtained Euodius Bishop of Antioch. Ἰστέον ὅτι ἐπὶ Κλαυδίου βασιλέως Ῥώμης, Πέτρος τῷ ἀποστόλῳ
χρῆσται ὡσανύθη Ἐυδοίον, μετὰ τὸν ἀποστόλῳ, οἱ πάσαις λεγούσιν Ναζωραῖοι καὶ Γαλιλαῖοι. Χριστιανοί. Suid. in Ναζωρεῖς
and in Χριστιανοί. And Johannes Antiochenus confirms not only the time, but tells us that that Euodius the Bishop was the Author of the
name. Καὶ ἐπὶ αὐτοῦ (Κλαυδίου) Χριστιανοὶ ὠνομάσθησαν, τῷ αὐτῷ ἐπιτρεπόμενος Εὐδοῖος προσομιλήσανύθη αὐτοῖς καὶ ἐπιθήσανύθη
αὐτοῖς τὸ ὄνομα τῷ τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ Ναζωρεῖς καὶ Γαλιλαῖοι ἐκαλέσθησαν οἱ Χριστιανοί. Thus the name of Christian was first brought
into use at Antioch, by Euodius the Bishop of the place, and hath ever since been continued as the most proper appellation which could
be given unto our Profession, being derived from the Author and Finisher of our Faith. At nunc Secta orditur in nomine utique
Ei Autoris. Quid novi si aliqua disciplina de Magistro cognomentum Sectatoribus suis inducit? Nonne Philosphi de Au-
toribus suis nuncupantur Platonici, Epicurci, Pythagorici? Etiam à locis conventiculorum & stationum suarum Stoici, Acade-
mici? Neque Medici ab Erasistrato, & Grammatici ab Aristarcho, Cocci etiam ab Apicio? Neque tamen quenkum offendit
professio nominis cum institutione transmissa ab institutore. Tertul. Apolog. c. 3. * As we read of Sanctus, a Deacon at Vienna, in
a hot persecution of the French Church, who, being in the midst of tortures, was troubled with several Questions, which the Gentiles
usually then asked, to try if they could extort any confession of any wicked actions practised secretly by the Christians; yet would not
give any other Answer to any question, than that he was a Christian. Τὸ αὐτὸ πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀντιπαρεβέβητο αὐτοῖς, ὅτι μὴτε
τὸ ἵσον κατὰ τὸν ὄνομα, μὴτε ἕθνος μὴτε πόλεως ὅθεν ὡς, μὴτε εἰ δούλῳ ἢ ἐλεύθερῳ εἴη· ἀλλὰ πρὸς πάντα τὰ ἐρω-
τώμενα ἀπεκρίνατο τῷ Ῥωμαϊκῷ θανάτῳ, Χριστιανός εἰμι· τῷ τοῦ καὶ ἀντὶ ὀνόματι, καὶ ἀντὶ τόλως, καὶ ἀντὶ γένους, καὶ ἀντὶ
παντὸς ἐπακλήσας ὀμολόγη. Euseb. Hist. Eccl. l. 5. c. 1. The same doth S. Chrysostome testify of S. Lucian: Ποῖός ἐστι παλαιοῦς;
Χριστιανός εἰμι, καὶ τί ἕχων ἐπιτήδευμα; Χριστιανός εἰμι· τίνας περγόνους; ὃ ὃ πρὸς ἀπαντα ἐλεῖται, ὅτι Χριστιανός
εἰμι. * 2 Tim. 2. 19. || So Blandina in the French Persecution: ὡς αὐτὴ ἀναλήψις καὶ ἀνάπαυσις καὶ ἀναλυσίς καὶ συμβιβασμός.
τῶν. τὸ λέγειν ὅτι Χριστιανή εἰμι, καὶ παρ' ἡμῖν ἐδὲν θάλλον γίνεσθαι. Euseb. Hist. Eccl. l. 5. c. 1. * Alii quos ante hoc nomen
vagos, viles, improbos noverant, ex ipso denotant quod laudant, cecitate odii in suffragium impingunt. Quæ mulier! quam
lasciva! quam festiva! qui juvenis! quam lascivus! quam amatus! facti sunt Christiani: ita nomen emendationis imputatur.
Tertull. || Torum in id revolvitur, ut qui Christiani nominis opus non agit, Christianus non esse videatur. Nomen enim sine
actu atque officio suo nihil est. S. Basil. ad Provid. l. 4. Ἐάν τις τὸ ὄνομα λαβὼν τῷ Χριστιανισμῷ ἐνυβεῖται ἢ Χριστῶν, ἢ δὲ
ὁρελθῶ αὐτῷ δὲ τῷ σπέρματι. S. Basil. ad Amphilocho. * Christianus vero, quantum interpretatio est, de unctione deducitur.
Tertull. Apolog. c. 3. * Psal. 133. 2. || Inde apparet Christi corpus nos esse, qui omnes unguimur, & omnes in illo & Christi &
Christus sumus, quia quodammodo corpus Christi caput & corpus est. S. August. in Psal. 25. * 2 Cor. 1. 21. * 1 Joh. 2. 20, 27. * Τὸ
ἰστέον ἡμεῖς τὰ ταῦτα ἐννοοῦμεν καλόμεθα Χριστιανοί, ὅτι χειρόμεθα λαβὼν τοῦ Θεοῦ. Theophilus ad Autol. l. 1.*

Thus having run through all the Particulars at first designed for the expli-
cation of the title *Christ*, we may at last clearly express, and every Christian
easily understand, what it is we say when we make our Confession in these
words, *I believe in Jesus Christ*. I do assent unto this as a certain truth, that
there was a man promised by God, foretold by the Prophets to be the *Messias*,
the Redeemer of *Israel*, and the expectation of the Nations. I am fully assured
by all those predictions that the *Messias* so promised is already come. I am as
certainly perswaded, that the man born in the days of *Herod* of the Virgin
Mary, by an Angel from Heaven called *Jesus*, is that true *Messias*, so long, so
often promised: that, as the *Messias*, he was anointed to three special Offices,
belonging to him as the Mediator between God and man: that he was a Pro-
phet, revealing unto us the whole will of God for the Salvation of man;
that he was a Priest, and hath given himself a Sacrifice for sin, and so hath
made an atonement for us; that he is a King, set down at the right hand of
God, far above all Principalities and Powers, whereby, when he hath sub-
dued all our enemies, he will confer actual, perfect and eternal Happiness
upon us. I believe this unction by which he became the true *Messias* was
not performed by any material Oyl, but by the Spirit of God, which he re-
ceived as the Head, and conveyeth to his Members. And in this full ac-
knowledgment, *I believe in Jesus Christ*,

His Only Son.

After our Saviour's Nomination immediately followeth his Filiation: and justly, after we have acknowledged him to be *the Christ*, do we confess him to be the *Son of God*; because these two were ever inseparable, and even by the *Jews* themselves accounted equivalent. Thus *Nathanael*, that true *Israelite*, maketh his confession of the *Messias*; *Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel.* Thus *Martha* makes expression of her Faith; *I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.* Thus the High-priest maketh his inquisition; *I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be Christ, the Son of God.* This was the famous Confession of *S. Peter*; *We believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.* And the Gospel of *S. John* was therefore written, that we might believe that *Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God.* Certain then it is that all the *Jews*, as they looked for a *Messias* to come, so they believed that *Messias* to be the Son of God: (although since the coming of our Saviour they have *denied it) and that by reason of a constant interpretation of the second Psalm, as appropriated unto him. And the Primitive Christians did at the very beginning include this filial Title of our Saviour together with his names into the compass of || one word. Well therefore, after we have expressed our Faith in *Jesus Christ*, is added that which had so great affinity with it, *the only Son of God.*

John 1. 49.

John 11. 27.

Matth. 26. 63.

John 6. 69.

John 20. 31.

*For when Celsus, in the person of a Jew, had spoken these words, ἡ ἀπερ ἐμὸς περσφῆτης ἐν ἱεροσολύμοις ποτὲ, ὅτι ἦν Θεὸς υἱός,

ὅτι ὅσων χειρὶς, καὶ ὅσων ἀδικῶν καλασθῆναι, Origen says they were most improperly attributed to a Jew, who did look indeed for a *Messias*, but not for the Son of God, i. e. not under the notion of a Son. Ἰησοῦς ὃ ἐν αὐτῷ ὁμολογῆσαι ὅτι περσφῆτης τις εἶπεν ἦν Θεὸς υἱόν· ὃ δὲ λέγουσιν ὅτι, ὅτι ἦν Θεὸς καὶ υἱός· καὶ πολλὰ καὶ ἄλλα περὶ ἡμῶν ἐνθάδε· οὗτοι οὖν Θεοὶ, ὡς ἐδεδόξεν ὁ κύριος τοιούτους ἐκεῖ περσφῆται ἀθέτησεν. Adv. Cels. l. 1. || That is, ΙΧΘΥΣ. Nos pisciculi secundum I. Ch. nostrum Jesum Christum in aqua nascimur. Tertul. de Bapt. c. 1. which is thus interpreted by Optatus, Cujus piscis nomen secundum appellationem Græcam in uno nomine per singulas literas turbam sanctorum nominum continet, ἰχθῦς, quod est Latine, Jesus Christus Dei Filius Salvator, lib. 3.

In these words there is little variety to be observed, except that what we translate the **only Son*, that in the phrase of the Scripture and the Greek Church is, the *only begotten*. It is then sufficient for the explication of these words, to shew how *Christ* is the Son of God, and what is the peculiarity of his Generation; that when others are also the sons of God, he alone should so be his Son, as no other is or can be so; and therefore he alone should have the name of the *only begotten*.

* The Latines, indeed, generally use the word Unicum. So Rufinus, Et in unico filio ejus: which is so far from being in his appre-

hension the same with unigenitus, that he refers it as well to Lord as Son. Hic ergo Jesus Christus, filius unicus Dei, qui est & Dominus noster unicus, & ad filium referri & ad dominum potest. So St. August. in Enchiridion, c. 24. and Leo, Epist. 10. Which is therefore to be observed, because in the ancient Copies of those Epistles, the word unicum was not to be found; as appears by the discourse of Vigilantius, who, in the fourth Book against Eutyches, hath these words: Illa primitus uno dilucens volumine quæ Leonis obijciuntur Epistolæ, ejus hoc sibi primo capitulum iste nescio quis proposuit; Fidelium Universitas proficetur credere se in Deum Patrem omnipotentem, & in Jesum Christum, filium ejus, Dominum nostrum. That which he aims at is the tenth Epistle of Leo, in which those words are found, but with the addition of unicum, which, as it seems, then was not there; as appears yet further by the words which follow: Miror tamen quomodo hunc locum ille notavit, & illum prætermisit, ubi unici filii commemorationem idem Beatus Leo tacit, dicens, Idem verò sempiterni genitoris unigenitus sempiternus, natus de Spiritu S. ex Maria Virgine; which words are not to be found in the same Epistle. However it was in the first Copies of Leo; both Rufinus, and St. Augustine, who were before him, and Maximus Taurinensis, Chrysostomus, Eucherius and Beatus, who were later, read it, & in Jesum Christum, filium ejus unicum. But the word used in the Scriptures, and kept constantly by the Greeks, is μονογενής, the only-begotten.

First then, it cannot be denied that *Christ* is the *Son of God*, for that reason, || For the Original is τὸ ἐν αὐτῇ γεννηθῆναι. and 'tis the observation of S. Basil, ἐκ ἀρν-

ται, τὸ γεννηθῆναι, ἀλλὰ, τὸ γεννηθῆναι. Indeed the Vulgar Translation renders it, quod in ea natum est, and in S. Luke, quod natus est sanctum; and it must be confessed this was the most ancient Translation. For St. Tertullian read it, Per virginem dicitis natum,

rum, non ex virgine, & in vulva, non ex vulva, quia &c. Angelus in somnis ad Joseph, *Nam quod in ea natum est, inquit, de Sp. S. est. De Carne Christi, c. 19. and of that in S. Luke, Hæc & ab Angelo exceperat secundum nostrum Evangelium, Propterea quod in te nascetur vocabitur sanctum, filius Dei. adv. Marcion. l. 4. c. 7. Yet quod in ea natum est cannot be proper, while it is yet in the womb; nor can the child first be said to be born, and then that the mother shall bring it forth. 'Tis true indeed, ἡ γεννηθήσεται signifies not always to beget but sometimes to bear or bring forth; as ἡ γυνὴ τοῦ Ἐλισάβετ γεννησάτω τὸν υἱόν σου, Luke 1. 13. and v. 57. καὶ ἡ γεννηθήσεται υἱόν σου. So τὸ ἐν αὐτῇ γεννηθήσεται ἐν Βηθλεὲμ, Matth. 2. 1. must necessarily be understood of Christ's nativity for it is most certain that he was not begotten or conceived at Bethlehem. And this without question must be the meaning of Herod's inquisition, πῶς ὁ Χριστὸς γεννηταί, where the Messias was to be born. But though γενναί have sometime the signification of bearing or bringing forth; yet τὸ ἐν αὐτῇ γεννηθήσεται cannot be so interpreted, because it speaks of something as past, when as yet Christ was not born; and though the conception was already past, and we translate it so, which is conceived; yet S. Basil rejects that interpretation, γενναί is one thing, συλλαμβάνειν another. Seeing then the Nativity was not yet come, and γεννηθήσεται speaks of something already past, therefore the old Translation is not good, quod in ea natum est. Seeing, though the Conception indeed were past, yet γενναί significeth not to conceive, and so is not properly to be interpreted, that Which is conceived; seeing γενναί is most properly to beget, as ἡ γεννητὴ τὴν γενετικὴν facultatem: therefore I conceive the fittest interpretation of those words, τὸ ἐν αὐτῇ γεννηθήσεται, that which is begotten in her. And because the Angel in S. Luke speaks of the same thing, therefore I interpret τὸ γεννηθήσεται ἐν αὐτῇ, in the same manner, that which is begotten of thee.*

gel to the Virgin; *The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: Therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee (or, which is begotten of thee) shall be called the Son of God.* And the reason is clear, because that the Holy Ghost is God. For were he any Creature, and not God himself, by whom our Saviour was thus born of the Virgin, he must have been the Son of a Creature, not of a God.

John 10. 34.
35, 36.

Secondly, it is undoubtedly true, that the same *Christ*, thus born of the Virgin by the Spirit of God, was designed to so high an Office by the special and immediate will of God, that by virtue thereof he must be acknowledged the *Son of God*. He urgeth this argument himself against the Jews; *Is it not written in your Law, I said, Ye are Gods? Are not these the very words of the eighty second Psalm? If he called them Gods, if God himself so spake, or the Psalmist from him, if this be the language of the Scripture, if they be called Gods unto whom the word of God came, (and the Scripture cannot be broken, nor the authority thereof in any particular denied;) Say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, whom he hath consecrated and commissioned to the most eminent and extraordinary Office, say ye of him, Thou blasphemest, because I said I am the Son of God.*

Acts 13. 33.

Thirdly, *Christ* must therefore be acknowledged the *Son of God*, because he is raised immediately by God out of the earth unto immortal life. For *God hath fulfilled the promise unto us, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second Psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.* The grave is as the womb of the earth; *Christ*, who is raised from thence, is as it were begotten to another life; and God, who raised him, is his Father. So true it must needs be of him, which is spoken of others, who are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. Thus was he defin'd, or constituted, and appointed the *Son of God* with power by the resurrection from the dead: neither is he called simply the first that rose, but with a note of generation, the first-born from the dead.

Luke 20. 36.

Rom. 1. 4.

Col. 1. 18.

Fourthly, *Christ*, after his resurrection from the dead, is made actually heir of all things in his Father's House, and Lord of all the Spirits which minister unto him, from whence he also hath the title of the *Son of God*. *He is set down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Being made so much better than the Angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.* For unto which of the Angels said he at any time, *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?* From all which testimonies of the Scriptures it is evident, that *Christ* hath this fourfold right unto the Title of the *Son of God*: by generation, as begotten of God; by commission, as sent by him; by resurrection, as the first-born; by actual possession, as heir of all.

Heb. 1. 3, 4, 5.

But beside these four, we must find yet a more peculiar ground of our Saviour's Filiation, totally distinct from any which belongs unto the rest of the Sons of God, that he may be clearly and fully acknowledged the *only-begotten Son*.

Son. For although to be born of a Virgin be in it self miraculous, and justly entitles *Christ* unto the *Son of God*; yet it is not so far above the production of all mankind, as to place him in that singular eminence which must be attributed to the only-begotten. We read of *Adam the Son of God*, as well as *Seth* Luke 3. 38. the *Son of Adam*: and surely the framing *Christ* out of a Woman cannot so far transcend the making *Adam* out of the Earth, as to cause so great a distance as we must believe between the first and second *Adam*. Beside, there were many while our Saviour preached on earth who did believe his doctrine, and did confess him to be the *Son of God*, who in all probability understood nothing of his being born of a Virgin; much less did they foresee his rising from the dead, or inheriting all things. Wherefore supposing all these ways by which *Christ* is represented to us as the *Son of God*, we shall find out one more yet, far more proper in it self, and more peculiar unto him, in which no other Son can have the least pretence of share or of similitude, and consequently in respect of which we must confess him the *Only-begotten*.

To which purpose I observe, that the actual possession of his inheritance, which was our fourth title to his Sonship, presupposes his Resurrection, which was the third: and his commission to his Office, which was the second, presupposeth his generation of a Virgin, as the first. But I shall now endeavour to find another generation, by which the same *Christ* was begotten, and consequently a Son, before he was conceived in the Virgin's womb. Which that I may be able to evince, I shall proceed in this following Method, as not only most facile and perspicuous, but also most convincing and conclusive. First, I will clearly prove out of the holy Scriptures, that *Jesus Christ*, born of the Virgin *Mary*, had an actual being or subsistence before the Holy Ghost did come upon the Virgin, or the power of the Highest did overshadow her. Secondly, I will demonstrate from the same Scriptures, that the being which he had antecedently to his conception in the Virgin's womb was not any created being but essentially Divine. Thirdly, we will shew that the Divine essence which he had, he received as communicated to him by the Father. Fourthly, we will declare this communication of the Divine nature to be a proper generation, by which he which communicateth is a proper Father, and he to whom it is communicated, a proper Son. Lastly, we will manifest that the Divine essence was never communicated in that manner to any person but to him, that never any was so begotten besides himself, and consequently, in respect of that Divine generation, he is most properly and perfectly *the only begotten Son of the Father*.

As for the first, that *Jesus Christ* had a real being or existence, by which he truly was, before he was conceived of the Virgin *Mary*, I thus demonstrate. He which was really in Heaven, and truly descended from thence, and came into the world from the Father, before that which was begotten of the Virgin ascended into Heaven or went unto the Father, he had a real being or existence before he was conceived in the Virgin, and distinct from that being which was conceived in her. This is most clear and evident, upon these three suppositions not to be denied. First, that *Christ* did receive no other being or nature after his Conception before his Ascension, than what was begotten of the Virgin. Secondly, that what was begotten of the Virgin had its first being here on Earth, and therefore could not really be in Heaven till it ascended thither. Thirdly, that what was really in Heaven, really was; because nothing can be present in any place, which is not. Upon these suppositions, certainly true, the first proposition cannot be denied. Wherefore I assume; *Jesus Christ* was really in Heaven, and truly descended from thence, and came into the World from the Father, before that which was begotten of

the Virgin ascended into Heaven, or went unto the Father ; as I shall particularly prove by the express words of the Scripture. Therefore I conclude, that *Jesus Christ* had a real being or existence before he was conceived in the Virgin, and distinct from that being which was conceived in her. Now that he was really in Heaven before he ascended thither, appeareth by his own words to his Disciples ; *What and if you shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before ?* For he speaketh of a real ascension, such as was to be seen or looked upon , such as they might view as Spectators. The place to which that ascension tended was truly and really the Heaven of heavens. The Verb substantive, not otherwise used, sufficiently testifieth, not a figurative, but a real, being, especially considering the opposition in the word *before*. Whether we look upon the time of speaking, then present, or the time of his ascension, then to come, his being or existing in Heaven was *before*. Nor is this now at last denied, that he was in Heaven before the ascension mentioned in these words, but that he was there before he ascended at all. We shall therefore farther shew that this ascension was the first ; that what was born of the Virgin was never in Heaven before this time of which he speaks : and being in Heaven before this ascension, he must be acknowledged to have been there before he ascended at all. If Christ had ascended into Heaven before his death, and descended from thence, it had been the most remarkable action in all his life, and the proof thereof of the greatest efficacy toward the disseminating of the Gospel. And can we imagine so Divine an action of so high concernment could have passed, and none of the Evangelists ever make mention of it ? Those which are so diligent in the description of his Nativity and Circumcision, his oblation in the Temple, his reception by *Symeon*, his adoration by the Wise men ; those which have described his descent into *Aegypt* ; would they have omitted his ascent into Heaven ? Do they tell us of the wisdom which he shewed when he disputed with the Doctors ? and were it not worthy our knowledge whether it were before he was in Heaven or after ? The diligent seeking of *Joseph* and *Mary*, and her words when they found him, *Son, why hast thou dealt so with us ?* shew that he had not been missing from them till then, and consequently not ascended into Heaven. After that he went down to *Nazareth*, and *was subject unto them* : and I understand not how he should ascend into Heaven, and at the same time be subject to them ; or there receive his Commission and Instructions as the great Legate of God, or Embassador from Heaven, and return again unto his old subjection ; and afterwards to go to *John* to be baptized of him, and to expect the descent of the Spirit for his Inauguration. Immediately from *Jordan* he is carried into the Wilderness to be tempted of the Devil : and 'twere strange if any time could then be found for his Ascension : for *he was forty days in the wilderness*, and certainly Heaven is no such kind of place ; he was all that time *with the beasts*, who undoubtedly are none of the celestial Hierarchy ; and *tempted of Satan*, whose dominion reacheth no higher than the Air. Wherefore in those forty days *Christ* ascended not into Heaven, but rather Heaven descended unto him ; for *the Angels ministred unto him*. After this *he returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee*, and there exercised his Prophetical Office : after which there is not the least pretence of any reason for his Ascension. Beside, the whole frame of this antecedent or preparatory Ascension of *Christ* is not only raised without any written testimony of the Word, or unwritten testimony of Tradition , but is without any reason in it self, and contrary to the revealed way of our Redemption. For what reason should *Christ* ascend into Heaven to know the will of God, and not be known to ascend thither ? Certainly the Father could reveal his will unto the Son as well on earth as in Heaven.

John 6. 62.
 θεωρεῖτε. as
 it came to pass,
 βλέποντες αὐ-
 τόν ἐπιδέσθαι.
 Acts 1. 9.
 οὐρα λω.

Luke 2. 48.

Mark 1. 13.

Mark 1. 13.
 Luke 4. 14.

ven. And if men must be ignorant of his ascension, to what purpose should they say he ascended, except they imagine either an impotency in the Father, or dissatisfaction in the Son? Nor is this only asserted without reason, but also against that rule to be observed by *Christ* as he was anointed to the Sacerdotal Office. For the Holy of holies *made with hands* was the figure of the true, (that is, *Heaven it self*) into which the *High-priest alone went once every year*: and *Christ* as our High-priest *entred in once into the holy place*. If then they deny *Christ* was a Priest before he *preached the Gospel*, then did he not enter into Heaven, because the High-priest alone went into the type thereof, the Holy of holies. If they confess he was, then did he not ascend till after his death, because he was to enter in but *once*, and that not without blood. Wherefore being *Christ* ascended not into Heaven till after his death, being he certainly was in Heaven before that ascension, we have sufficiently made good that part of our Argument, that *Jesus Christ* was in Heaven before that which was begotten of the Virgin ascended thither. Now that which followeth will both illustrate and confirm it; for as he was there, so he descended from thence before he ascended thither. This he often testifieth and inculcath of himself: *The bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven*; and, *I am the living bread which came down from heaven*. He opposeth himself unto the Manna in the Wilderness, which never was really in Heaven, or had its Original from thence. *Moses gave you not that bread from heaven*: but the Father gave *Christ* really from thence. Wherefore he saith, *I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me*. Now never any person upon any occasion is said to descend from Heaven, but such as were really there before they appeared on earth, as the Father, the Holy Ghost, and the Angels: but no man, however born, however sanctified, sent, or dignified, is said thereby to descend from thence; but rather when any is opposed to *Christ*, the opposition is placed in this very origination. *John* the Baptist was filled with the holy Ghost even from his mother's womb; born of an aged father and a barren mother, by the power of God: and yet he distinguisheth himself from *Christ* in this; *He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthy, and speaketh of the earth; he that cometh from heaven is above all*. *Adam* was framed immediately by God, without the intervention of man or woman; and yet he is so far from being thereby from Heaven, that even in that he is distinguished from the second *Adam*. For the first man is of the earth earthy, the second man is the Lord from heaven. Wherefore the descent of *Christ* from Heaven doth really presuppose his being there, and that antecedently to any ascent thither. For that he ascended, what is it, but that he also descended first? So *S. Paul*, asserting a descent as necessarily preceding his ascension, teacheth us never to imagine an ascent of *Christ* as his first motion between heaven and earth; and consequently, that the first being or existence which *Christ* had, was not what he received by his conception here on earth, but what he had before in heaven, in respect whereof he was with the Father, from whom he came. His Disciples believed that he *came out from God*: and he commended that Faith, and confirmed the object of it by this assertion; *I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world*: again, *I leave the world and go to the Father*. Thus having by undoubted testimonies, made good the latter part of the Argument, I may safely conclude, that being *Christ* was really in Heaven, and descended from thence, and came forth from the Father, before that which was conceived of the Holy Ghost ascended thither; it cannot with any shew of reason be denied, that *Christ* had a real being and existence antecedent unto his conception here on earth, and distinct from the being which he received here.

Secondly, we shall prove not only a bare priority of existence, but a pre-existence

existence of some certain and acknowledged space of duration. For whosoever was before *John* the Baptist and before *Abraham*, was some space of time before *Christ* was man. This no man can deny, because all must confess the blessed Virgin was first saluted by the Angels six months after *Elizabeth* conceived, and many hundred years after *Abraham* died. But *Jesus Christ* was really existent before *John* the Baptist, and before *Abraham*, as we shall make good by the testimony of the Scriptures. Therefore it cannot be denied but *Christ* had a real being and existence some space of time before he was made man. For the first, it is the express testimony of *John* himself; *This is he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me; for he was before me.* In which words, First, he taketh to himself a priority of time, speaking of *Christ*, *he that cometh after me*: for so he came after him into the womb, at his Conception; into the world, at his Nativity; unto his Office, at his Baptism; always after *John*, and at the same distance. Secondly, he attributeth unto *Christ* a priority of dignity, saying, *he is preferred before me*, as appeareth by the reiteration of these words; *He it is who, coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to unloose.* The addition of which expression of his own unworthiness sheweth, that to be preferred before him is the same with being *worthier than he*, to which the same expression is constantly added by all the other three Evangelists. Thirdly, he rendreth the reason or cause of that great dignity which belonged to *Christ*, saying, *for, or rather, because he was before me.* And being the cause must be supposed different and distinct from the effect, therefore the priority last mentioned cannot be that of dignity. For to assign any thing as the cause or reason of it self, is a great absurdity, and the expression of it a vain tautology. Wherefore that priority must have relation to time or duration, (as the very tense, *he was before me*, sufficiently signifieth) and so be placed in opposition to his coming after him. As if *John* the Baptist had thus spoke at large: This man *Christ Jesus*, who came into the world, and entred on his Prophetical Office six months after me, is notwithstanding of far more worth and greater dignity than I am; even so much greater, that I must acknowledge my self unworthy to stoop down and unloose the latchet of his shoes: and the reason of this transcendent dignity is from the excellency of that nature which he had before I was; for though he cometh after me, yet he was before me.

Now as *Christ* was before *John*, which speaks a small, so was he also before *Abraham*, which speaks a larger time. *Jesus* himself hath asserted this pre-existence to the Jews; *Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was I am.* Which words, plainly and literally expounded, must evidently contain this truth. For first, *Abraham* in all the Scriptures never hath any other signification than such as denotes the person called by that name; and the question to which these words are directed by way of answer, without controversy, spake of the same person. Beside, *Abraham* must be the subject of that proposition, *Abraham* was; because a proposition cannot be without a subject, and if *Abraham* be the predicate, there is none. Again, as we translate *Abraham was*, in a tense signifying the time past; so it is most certainly to be understood, because that which he speaks unto, is the pre-existence of *Abraham*, and that of long duration; so that whatsoever had concerned his present estate or future condition had been wholly impertinent to the precedent question. Lastly, the expression, *I am*, seeming something unusual or improper to signify a priority in respect of any thing past, because no present instant is before that which precedeth, but that which followeth: yet the * use of it sufficient-

* So Nensus
here more briefly
and plainly than
usual: Αβρααμ

τὸν Ἰησοῦ ἐξέειπεν, ἐγὼ πέλεον. So Joh. 14. 9. τοσῶτον χρόνον μεθ' ὑμῶν εἰμι, καὶ οὐκ ἔγνωκαί με; Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me? and Joh. 15. 27. ὅτι αὐτ' ἀρχῆς μετ' ἐμοῦ ἔσται, because ye have been (or continued)

tinued) with me from the beginning. Thus Nonnus, Ἐξ ἀρχῆς μετὰ τοὺς ὁλῶν θητόρες ἔργων. John 6. 24. "Οτε δὲ ἦν ἔδεν ὁ ὄχλος ὅτι ἦν οὐκ ἔστιν ἐκεῖ. When the people saw that Jesus was not there. Nor only doth S. John use thus the present tense for that which is past, but as frequently for that which is to come. For as before, τοσούτων χρόνον μετ' ὑμῶν εἰμι, John 7. 33. and ὅπου εἰμι ἐγὼ, ἐκεῖ καὶ ὁ διάκονος ὁ ἐμὸς ἔσται, John 12. 26. 14. 3. 17. 24. Wherefore it is very indifferent whether (John 7. 34.) we read, ὅπου εἰμι ἐγὼ, or ὅπου εἰμι. For Nonnus seems to have read εἰμι by his translation, εἰς ἀπερχόμενον ὡς ὁ δόσων. and the question, πῶς εἶπεν μέλλει πορεύεσθαι; shews they understood it so for this εἰμι, though of a present form, is of a future signification. Helych. Εἰμι, πορεύσομαι. And so it agreeth with that which follows, John 8. 21. ὅπου ἐγὼ ἔσθω, ὑμεῖς δὲ διώκατε ἐλθεῖν. If we read εἰμι, as the old Translation, ubi ego sum, it will have the force of ἔσομαι, and agree with the other; ἵνα ὅπου εἰμι ἐγὼ, καὶ ὑμεῖς ἦτε. Howsoever it is clear, S. John useth the present εἰμι either in relation to what is past, or what is to come, and is therefore to be interpreted as the matter in hand requircth. And certainly the place now under our consideration can admit no other relation but to the time already past, in which Abraham lived. And we find the present tense in the same manner joyned with the Aorist elsewhere: as Psal. 90. 2. πρὸ τοῦ ὅτι γεννηθῶμαι, καὶ πλάσθηναι ἔγωγε καὶ οὐκ οὐκ ἐκ κούρου, καὶ πρὸ αἰῶνος ἕως τοῦ αἰῶνος, σὺ εἶ. What can be more parallel than, πρὸ τοῦ ὅτι γεννηθῶμαι, το πλεῖν Ἀβραάμ. ἡμῶν, and σὺ εἶ, το, ἐγὼ εἰμι; In the same manner, though by another word, πρὸ τοῦ ὅτι ἐδεδούνηται, πρὸ τοῦ πάντων γενῶν, ἡμῶν, καὶ, Prov. 8. 25.

ly maintaineth, and the nature of the place absolutely requireth, that it should not here denote a present being, but a priority of existence, together with a continuation of it till the present time. And then the words will plainly signify thus much: Do you question how I could see Abraham, who am not yet fifty years old? Verily, verily, I say unto you, || Before ever Abraham, the person whom you speak of, was born, I had a real being and existence, (by which I was capable of the sight of him) in which I have continued until now. In this sense certainly the Jews understood our Saviour's answer, as pertinent to their question, but in their opinion blasphemous; and therefore they took up stones to cast at him.

This literal and plain explication is yet farther necessary; because those which once recede from it, do not only wrest and pervert the place, but also invent and suggest an answer unworthy of and wholly misbecoming him that spake it. For (setting aside the addition, of the *light of the world*, which there can be no * shew or reason to admit;) whether they interpret the former part (*before Abraham was*) of something to come, as the calling of the Gentiles, or the latter (*I am*) of a pre-existence in the Divine foreknowledge and appointment; they represent Christ with a great asseveration highly and strongly asserting that which is nothing to the purpose to which he speaks, nothing to any other purpose at all: and they propound the Jews senselessly offended and foolishly exasperated with those words, which any of them might have spoken as well as he. For the first interpretation makes our Saviour thus to speak: Do ye so much wonder how I should have seen Abraham, who am not yet fifty years old? Do ye imagine so great a contradiction in this? I tell you, and be ye most assured that what I speak unto you at this time is most certainly and infallibly true, and most worthy of your observation, which moves me not to deliver it without this solemn asseveration, (*Verily, verily, I say unto you*) Before Abraham shall perfectly become that which was signified in his name, the father of many Nations, before the Gentiles shall come in, *I am*. Nor be ye troubled at this answer, or think in this I magnifie my self: for what I speak is as true of you as 'tis of me; before Abraham be thus made Abraham, ye are. Doubt ye not therefore, as ye did, nor ever make that question again, whether I have seen Abraham. The second explication makes a sense of another nature, but with the same impertinency. Do ye continue still to question, and that with so much admiration? Do ye look upon my age, and ask, *Hast thou seen Abraham?* I confess 'tis more than eighteen hundred years since that Patriarch died, and less than forty since I was born at Bethlehem: but look not on

|| So the Aethiopic Version, Amen dico vobis, priusquam Abraham nasceretur, fui ego; and the Persian, Vere, vere vobis dico, quod nondum Abraham factus erat, cum ego eram.

* This is the shift of the Socinians, who make this speech of Christ elliptical, and then supply it from the 12. verse. I am the light of the world. Quod vero ea verba, Ego sum, sint ad eum modum supplenda, ac si ipse subiecisset eis, Ego sum lux mundi, superius ἐπὶ principio eius orationis, v. 12. & hinc quod Christus his se ipsum inidem, Ego sum, lucem mundi vocaverit, v. 24. & 28. deprehendi potest. Catech. Racov. Whereas there is no ground for any such connexion. That discourse of the light of the

world was in the Treasury, v. 20. that which followeth was not, at least appeareth not to be so. Therefore the ellipsis of the 24. and 28. verses is not to be supplied by the 12, but the 24, from the 23. ἐγὼ ἐκ τοῦ ἔσθ' ἀνθρώπου εἰμι, and the 28. either from the same, or that which is most general, his Office, ἐγὼ εἰμι ὁ χριστός. Again, v. 31. 'tis very probable that a new discourse is again begun, and therefore if there were an ellipsis in the words alledged, it would have no relation to either of the former supplies, or if to either, to the latter; but indeed it hath to neither.

this computation, for before *Abraham* was born, I was. But mistake me not, I mean in the foreknowledge and decree of God. Nor do I magnifie my self in this, for ye were so. How either of these answers should give any reasonable satisfaction to the question, or the least occasion of the *Jews* exasperation, is not to be understood. And that our Saviour should speak any such impertinences as these interpretations bring forth, is not by a Christian to be conceived. Wherefore being the plain and most obvious sense is a proper and full answer to the question, and most likely to exasperate the unbelieving *Jews*; being those strained explications render the words of *Christ*, not only impertinent to the occasion, but vain and useless to the hearers of them; being our Saviour gave this answer in words of another language, most probably uncapable of any such interpretations: we must adhere unto that literal sense already delivered, by which it appeareth *Christ* had a being as before *John*, so also before *Abraham*, (not only before *Abram* became *Abraham*, but before *Abraham* was *Abram*) and consequently that he did exist two thousand years before he was born, or conceived by the Virgin.

Thirdly, we shall extend this pre-existence to a far longer space of time, to the end of the first world, nay, to the beginning of it. For he which was before the Flood, and at the Creation of the world, had a being before he was conceived by the Virgin. But *Christ* was really before the Flood, for he preached to them that lived before it; and at the Creation of the world, for he created it. That he preached to those before the Flood, is evident by the words of *S. Peter*, who saith, that *Christ was put to death in the Flesh, but quickned by the Spirit; By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison, Which sometimes were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing.* From which words it appeareth, that *Christ* preached by the same Spirit by the virtue of which he was raised from the dead: but that Spirit was not his Soul, but something of a greater power. Secondly, that those to whom he preached were such as were disobedient. Thirdly, that the time when they were disobedient was the time before the Flood, while the Ark was preparing. It is certain then that *Christ* did preach unto those persons which in the days of *Noah* were disobedient all that time *the long-suffering of God waited*, and, consequently, so long as repentance was offered. And it is as certain that he never preached to them after they died; which I shall not need here to prove, because those against whom I bring this Argument deny it not. It followeth therefore, that he preached to them while they lived, and were disobedient; for in the refusing of that mercy which was offered to them by the preaching of *Christ*, did their disobedience principally consist. In vain then are we taught to understand *S. Peter* of the promulgation of the Gospel to the Gentiles after the Holy Ghost descended upon the Apostles, when the words themselves refuse all relation to any such times or persons. For all those of whom *S. Peter* speaks, were disobedient in the days of *Noah*. But none of those to whom the Apostles preached, were ever disobedient in the days of *Noah*. Therefore none of those to which the Apostles preached were any of those of which *S. Peter* speaks. It remaineth therefore that the plain interpretation be acknowledged for the true, that *Christ* did preach unto those men which lived before the Flood, even while they lived, and consequently that he was before it. For though this was not done by an immediate act of the Son of God, as if he personally had appeared on earth, and actually preached to that old world; but

by

1 Pet. 3. 18,
19, 20.

Ἀπὸ τῆς αἰ-
πὸς, ὅτε ἂ-
πὸς ὁ Ἰη-
σοῦς ὁ Θε-
ὸς ἡμῶν
ἐν ἡμέραις
Νῶε.

by the * ministry of a Prophet, by the sending of Noah, ^a the eighth preacher of righteousness: yet to do any thing by another not able to perform it without him, as much demonstrates the existence of the principal cause, as if he did it of himself without any intervening instrument.

* Prophetæ ab ipso habentes donum in illum propheta verunt. Barnabæ Epist.

^a 2 Pet. 2. 5. I have thus translated this place of S. Peter, because it may add some advantage to the argument: for if Noah were the eighth Preacher of righteousness, and he were sent by the Son of God; no man, I conceive, will deny that the seven before him were sent by the same Son: and so by this we have gained the pre-existence of another 1000 years. However these words, ἀλλ' ὄγδοον Νῶε δικαιοσύνης κήρυκα ἠρξάμενος, may be better interpreted than they are, when we translate them, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness. For, first, if we look upon the Greek phrase, ὄγδοον Νῶε may be not the eighth person, but one of eight, or Noah with seven more; in which it signifieth not the order in which he was in respect of the rest, but only signifieth the number which were with him. As when we read in the Supplices of Æschylus, Τὸ γὰρ τεκόντων τέρας, Τείτων τόδ' ἐν θεοῖσι Δίνας γέγραπται μετὰ τῆς, we must not understand it, as if Honour due to Parents were the third Commandment at Athens, but one of the three remarkable Laws left at Eleusis by Triptolemus. So Porphyrius, Φασι δὲ καὶ Τειτλόλεμον Ἀθηνάων νομοθέτησαν, καὶ αὐτὸν νόμον αὐτῷ τρεῖς ἐπὶ Ξενοκράτους ὁ φιλόσοφος λέγει διαμῆναι ἑλθόντι τὰς δε' ἑνῶν. Οὗτος καὶ πρὸς ἀγαλλεῖν. Ζῶα μὴ σίνεσθαι. De Abstin. l. 4. Which words are thus translated by S. Hierome, who hath made use of most part of that fourth Book of Porphyrius: Xenocrates Philosophus de Triptolemi legibus apud Athenienses tria tantum præcepta in Templo Eleusina residere scribit; Honorandos Parentes, Venerandos Deos, Carnibus non vescendum. Adv. Jo. in. l. 2. Where we see Honour due to Parents the first precept, though by Æschylus called the third, not in respect of the order, but the number. Thus Dinarchus the Orator, Καὶ τὰς Σεμνὰς θεὰς ὡς ἐκείνῃ ἐξ ἑσποῖς καὶ ἀσπὶς δέσας ἐστὶν. From whence we must not collect that the person of whom he speaks was the tenth in order of that Office, so that nine were necessarily before or above him, and many more might be after or below him: but from hence it is inferred, that there were ten ἐξ ἑσποῖς waiting on the Σεμνὰς θεὰς, and no more, of which number that man was one. After this manner speak the Attick Writers, especially Thucydides. And so we may understand S. Peter, that God preserved Noah (a preacher of righteousness) with seven more, of which he deserveth to be named the first, rather than the last or eighth. But, secondly, the Ordinal ὄγδοον may possibly not belong to the name or person of Noah, but to his title or office; and then we must translate, ὄγδοον Νῶε δικαιοσύνης κήρυκα. Noah the eighth preacher of righteousness. For we read at the birth of Enos, that men began to call upon the name of the Lord, Gen. 4. 26. which the ancients understood peculiarly of his person: as the LXX, ἐπὶ ἡλπίσεν ἐπικαλεῖσθαι τὸ ὄνομα Κυρίου τῷ Οὐρ, and the vulgar Latine, Ille cœpi invocare nomen Domini. The Jews have a tradition, that God sent in the Sea upon mankind in the days of Enos, and destroyed many. From whence it seems Enos was a Preacher, or Prophet, and so the rest that followed him; and then Noah is the eighth.

The second part of the Argument, that Christ made this world, and consequently had a real being at the beginning of it, the Scriptures manifestly and plentifully assure us. For the same Son, by whom in these last days God spake unto us, is he by whom also he made the worlds. So that, as through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so must we * also believe that they were made by the Son of God. Which the Apostle doth not only in the entrance of his Epistle deliver, but in the sequels prove. For shewing greater things have been spoken of him than ever were attributed to any of the Angels, the most glorious of all the creatures of God; amongst the rest he saith, the Scripture spake ^a unto the Son, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever. And not only so, but also, Thou Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the work of thine hands. They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they shall wax old as doth a garment; And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail. Now whatsoever the person be to whom these words were spoken, it cannot be denied but he was the Creator of the world. For he must be acknowledged the maker of the earth, who laid the foundation of it; and he may justly challenge to himself the making of the Heavens, who can say they are the work of his hands. But these words were spoken to the Son of God, as the Apostle himself acknowledgeth, and it appeareth out of the order and series of the Chapter; the design of which is to declare the supereminent excellency of our Saviour Christ. Nay, the conjunction And refers this place of the Psalmist || plainly to the former, of which he had said expressly, but unto the Son, he saith. As sure then as thy Throne, O God, is for ever and ever, was said unto the Son: so certain it is, Thou, Lord, hast laid the foundation of the earth, was said unto the same. Nor is it possible to avoid the

Heb. 1. 2.

Heb. 11. 3.

* It being in both places expressed in the same phrase by the same Author, δι' ἧς καὶ τοὺς αἰῶνας ἐποίησεν; Heb. 1. 2. τίσει νοῦν καὶ καρδίαν τοῦ αἰῶνος ῥήματα σοφίας.

Heb. 1. 8, 10, 11, 12.

Comma after Καὶ in the Greek, and Et in the Latine. And whereas it is evident that there are distinctions in the Latine and Greek Copies after that conjunction, he flies to the ancientest Copies, which all men know were most careful of distinctions, and urgeth that there is no addition of cursum or the like after Et; whereas in the Syriack Translation we find expressly that addition ܕܡܝܢ.

Q.

Apostle's

Apostle's connexion by attributing the Destruction of the Heavens, out of the last words, to the Son, and denying the Creation of them, out of the first, to the same. For it is most evident that there is but one person spoken to, and that the Destruction and the Creation of the Heavens are both attributed to the same. Whosoever therefore shall grant that the Apostle produced this Scripture to shew that the Son of God shall destroy the Heavens, must withal acknowledge that he created them: whosoever denieth him to be here spoken of as the Creatour, must also deny him to be understood as the Destroyer. Wherefore being the words of the Psalmist were undoubtedly spoken of and to our Saviour, (or else the Apostle hath attributed that unto him which never belonged to him, and consequently the spirit of S. Paul mistook the spirit of David;) being to whomsoever any part of them belongs, the whole is applicable, because they are delivered unto one; being the literal exposition is so clear that no man hath ever pretended to a metaphorical: it remaineth as an undeniable truth, grounded upon the profession of the Psalmist, and the interpretation of an Apostle, that the Son of God created the world. Nor needed we so long to have insisted upon this testimony, because there are so many which testify as much, but only that this is of a peculiar nature and different from the rest. For they which deny this truth of the Creation of the world by the Son of God, notwithstanding all those Scriptures produced to confirm it, have found two ways to avoid or decline the force of them. If they speak so plainly and literally of the work of Creation, that they will not endure any figurative interpretation, then they endeavour to shew that they are not spoken of the Son of God. If they speak so expressly of our Saviour *Christ*, as that by no machination they can be applied to any other person, then their whole design is to make the Creation attributed unto him appear to be merely metaphorical. The place before alledged is of the first kind, which speaketh so clearly of the Creation or real production of the world, that they never denied it: and I have so manifestly shewed it spoken to the Son of God, that it is beyond all possibility of gain-saying.

Col. 1. 14.

Col. 1. 15, 16, 17.

Thus having asserted the Creation acknowledged real unto *Christ*, we shall the easier persuade that likewise to be such which is pretended to be metaphorical. In the Epistle to the *Colossians* we read of the Son of God, *in whom we have redemption through his blood*; and we are sure those words can be spoken of none other than *Jesus Christ*. He therefore it must be who was thus described by the Apostle; *Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature. For by him were all things created that are in heaven and that are in earth, visible and invisible; whether they be thrones or dominions, or principalities or powers: all things were created by him, and for him. And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.* In which words our Saviour is expressly styled the *first-born of every Creature*, that is, begotten by God, as the * *Son of his love*, antecedently to all other emanations, before any thing proceeded from him, or was framed and created by him. And that precedency is presently proved by this undeniable Argument, that all other emanations or productions came from him, and whatsoever received its being by Creation, was by him created. Which assertion is delivered in the most proper, full, and pregnant expressions imaginable. First, in the vulgar phrase of *Moses*, as most consonant to his description; *for by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth*; signifying thereby, that he speaketh of the same Creation. Secondly, by a division which *Moses* never used, as

|| The first born of every creature is taken by Origen for an expression declaring the Divinity of Christ, and used by him as a phrase in opposition to his Humanity to express the same.
 Ἐλέγεται δὲ ὁ Χρὶς ἐν τοῖς ἀνωτέρω, ὅτι αἰ μὲν τινες εἰσὶ φωναὶ τῶ ἐν τῷ Ἰησοῦ πρωτότοκον πάντας κτίσεις, ὡς ἡ, Ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ ἀρχὴ, καὶ ἡ ἀλήθεια, καὶ ἡ ζωὴ, καὶ αἱ τὰς πνευματικῶν αἰ δὲ τὰ κατ' αὐτὸν νομαὶς ἀνθρώπων, ὡς ἡ, Νῦν δὲ με ζητεῖτε ἀποκλῆσαι, ἀνθρώπων ὅς τινα ἀλήθειαν οὐκ ἔχει, λέγει ἀληκ. lib. 2. adu. Celsum. * In relation to the precedent words, τῶ ἐν τῷ ἀρχῆς αὐτῷ, for that ὁ ἀρχῆς αὐτῷ is the ἀρχῆς πρωτότοκος.

descri-

describing the production only of corporeal substances : lest therefore those immaterial beings might seem exempted from the Son's creation, because omitted in *Moses* his description, he addeth *visible and invisible* ; and lest in that invisible world, among the many degrees of the celestial Hierarchy, any Order might seem exempted from an essential dependence upon him, he nameth those which are of greatest eminence, *whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers*, and under them comprehendeth all the rest. Nor doth it yet suffice, thus to extend the object of his power by asserting all things to be made by him, except it be so understood as to acknowledge the sovereignty of his Person, and the authority of his Action. For lest we should conceive the Son of God framing the World as a meer instrumental cause which worketh by and for another, he sheweth him as well the final as the efficient cause ; for *all things were created by him, and for him*. Lastly, whereas all things first receive their being by creation, and when they have received it, continue in the same by virtue of God's conservation, *in whom we live, and move, and have our being* ; lest in any thing we should be thought not to depend immediately upon the Son of God, he is described as the Conservator, as well as the Creatour ; for *he is before all things, and by him all things consist*. If then we consider the two last cited verses by themselves, we cannot deny but they are a most compleat description of the Creatour of the World ; and if they were spoken of God the Father, could be no way injurious to his Majesty, who is no-where more plainly or fully set forth unto us as the Maker of the World.

Now although this were sufficient to persuade us to interpret this place of the making of the world, yet it will not be unfit to make use of another reason, which will compel us so to understand it. For undoubtedly there are but two kinds of Creation in the language of the Scriptures, the one literal, the other metaphorical ; one old, the other new ; one by way of formation, the other by way of reformation. *If any man be in Christ he is a new creature*, saith *S. Paul* ; and again, *In Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature*. In stead of which words he had before, *faith working by love. For we are the workmanship of God, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them*. From whence it is evident that a new creature is such a person as truly believeth in *Christ*, and manifesteth that faith by the exercise of good works ; and the new creation is the reforming or bringing man into this new condition, which by nature or his first creation he was not in. And therefore he which is so created is called a new man, in opposition to the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts : From whence the Apostle chargeth us to be renewed in the spirit of our mind, and to put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness ; and which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him. The new creation then is described to us as consisting wholly in * renovation, or a translation from a worse unto a better condition by way of reformation ; by which those which have lost the image of God, in which the first man was created, are restored to the image of the same God again, by a real change, though not substantial, wrought within them. Now this being the notion of the new creation in all those places which undoubtedly and confessedly speak of it, it will be necessary to apply it unto such Scriptures as are pretended to require the same interpretation. Thus therefore I proceed. If the second or new creation cannot be meant by the Apostle in the

2 Cor. 5. 17.

Gal. 6. 15.

and 5. 6.

Ephes. 2. 10:

Ephes. 4. 22,

23, 24.

Col. 3. 10.

* Ἀνανέωσις
or ἀνακαίνω-
σις. as the new
man νέος ἀν-
θρώπος, or
καὶνός ἀνθρώ-
πος. The first
ὁ ἀναγευμένος,
the last ὁ ἀνα-
καίνωτος,
both the same.
Suidas, Ἀνα-

καίνωσις, ἡ ἀνανέωσις ἡ ἀκαίνωσις. which is the language of the New Testament. This Renovation being thus called καὶνὴ κτίσις, the Ancients framed a proper word for it, which is, ἀνάκτισις. ἐν ᾗ γίνεσθαι παῖδαν ἥδη ἐν ἀνθρώποις χρί τὸ πνεῦμα καὶ τὸ ῥῶμα καὶ τὸν ἀνθρώπον ἀναίρεισι. Just. Qu. 5. Resp. ad Græcos. This new creation doth so necessarily infer an alteration, that it is called by S. Paul a Metamorphosis ; μεταμορφωθεὶς τῇ ἀνακαίνωσι τῶ νοὸς ἡμῶν. Rom. 12. 2.

place produced out of the Epistle to the *Colossians*, then it must be interpreted of the first. For there are but two kinds of Creation mentioned in the Scriptures, and one of them is there expressly named. But the place of the Apostle can no way admit an interpretation by the new Creation, as will thus appear; The object of the Creation, mentioned in this place, is of as great latitude and universality as the object of the first Creation, not only expressed, but implied, by *Moses*. But the object of the new Creation is not of the same latitude with that of the old. Therefore that which is mentioned here cannot be the new Creation. For certainly if we reflect upon the true notion of the new Creation, it necessarily and essentially includes an opposition to a former worse condition, as the new man is always opposed to the old; and if *Adam* had continued still in innocency, there could have been no such distinction between the old man and the new, or the old and new Creation. Being then all men become not new, being there is no new Creature but such whose faith worketh by love, being so many millions of men have neither faith nor love; it cannot be said that by *Christ* all things were created anew that are in heaven and that are in earth, when the greatest part of mankind have no share in the new Creation. Again, we cannot imagine that the Apostle should speak of the Creation in a general word, intending thereby only the new, and while he doth so, express particularly and especially those parts of the old Creation which are incapable of the new, or at least have no relation to it. The Angels are all either good or bad: but whether they be bad, they can never be good again, nor did *Christ* come to redeem the Devils; or whether they be good, they were always such, nor were they so by the virtue of *Christ's* Incarnation, for he took not on him the nature of Angels. We acknowledge in mankind a new Creation, because an old man becomes a new; but there is no such notion in the Celestial Hierarchy, because no old and new Angels: they which fell, are fallen for eternity; they which stand, always stood, and shall stand for ever. Where then are the regenerated thrones and dominions? where are the recreated principalities and powers? All those Angels of whatsoever degrees were created by the Son of God, as the Apostle expressly affirms. But they were never created by a new Creation unto true holiness and righteousness, because they always were truly righteous and holy ever since their first creation. Therefore except we could yet invent another Creation, which were neither the old nor the new, we must conclude, that all the Angels were at first created by the Son of God; and as they, so all things else, especially Man whose creation || all the first Writers of the Church of God expressly attribute unto the Son, asserting that those words, *Let us make man*, were spoken as by the Father unto him.

|| Ad hoc Dominus sustinuit pati pro anima nostra, cum sit orbis Terra-

rum Dominus, cui dixit die ante constitutionem Seculi, *Faciamus hominem ad imaginem et similitudinem nostram*. Barnabas Epist. c. 4. and again, *ἀρχὴ γὰρ ἡ γένεσις τοῦ ἡμῶν ὡς ἀρχὴ τοῦ τοῦ, Ποιήσωμεν κατ' εἰκόνα, &c.* c. 5. *Ἐγκαλεῶμεν ἐν Ἰσρααί τοις ἑτοίμοις νομίμασι Θεὸν ὡς τὸν πρῶτον πολλὰ καὶ μετὰ ἑαυτὸν ὡς μετὰ ἑαυτὸν ὡς δὲ αὐτὸν καὶ Θεὸν, καὶ τὸν ὅλον Θεὸν καὶ Πατέρα. τὸν γὰρ αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ καὶ Μωσὶ κοσμοποιεῖα περὶ τὴν Πατέρα ἡρκεῖται τὸ, Γενήθητω φῶς, καὶ Γενήθητω σέρεμα, καὶ τὰ λοιπὰ, ὅσα περὶ τὰς ἐν τῷ Θεῷ ἡμῶν καὶ τὰ τὰ ἡρκεῖται τὸ, Ποιήσωμεν ἄνθρωπον κατ' εἰκόνα καὶ ὁμοίωσιν ἡμετέραν.* Orig. adv. Celsum, l. 2.

Nor need we doubt of this Interpretation, or the Doctrine arising from it, seeing it is so clearly delivered by *S. John*: *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God, All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.* Whereas we have proved *Christ* had a being before he was conceived by the Virgin *Mary*, because he was at the beginning of the world; and have also proved that he was at the beginning of the world, because he made it; this place of *S. John* gives a sufficient testimony to the truth of both the

|| Ερως ὁ the
first word of Mo-
ses; whence the
Syriack translation,
ܒܪܝܬ, So Solomon,
מִבְּרֵית
אֶרֶץ
er' d'et pe-
ṣat, Prov. 8. 23.
In principio e-
rat Sermo; in
quo principio
fecit cælum &
terram. Tertull.
adv. Hermog. c.
20.
* Πέρι τῆ Θε-
οῦ, that is, πε-
ρὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ,
that is, by God.
As Nonnus, Πα-
λεῖς ἐν ἀμύ-
εισος, ἀλγευστος
λωδὸς εἰς ἑ-
ξον. As Wisdom
speakeeth, Prov.
8. 30. then I
was by him.
וְהָיָה
נִלְכַּד
par' alipho.
וְהָיָה
וְעָרָם
in latere ejus

Misphripulus ἡ δὲ ἡμεῖς πρὸς τὸ Θεὸν, τῆς ἡμετέρας As Mat. 13. 56. Αἱ ἀδελφαὶ αὐτῶν ἐγγὺς πάντων ἡμεῶν ἐσσι:
 Mat. 14. 49. καὶ ἡμεῖς ἡμῶν πρὸς ὑμᾶς, 1 Cor. 16. 6. πρὸς ὑμᾶς ὅτι τυγχόντες παρὰ ὑμῶν. Περὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ Παύλου Ἰησοῦ
 Χριστοῦ, ὅς ἐστις ὁ κύριος πάντων Παύλος λέγει, καὶ ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ. Ignat. ad Magnes. 1. Gen. 1. 26. 2. Gen. 3. 22. 3. Gen. 1. 3.
 4. Phil. 33. 6. 5. Heb. 11. 3. 2 Pet. 3. 5. || I conceive this Chaldee Paraphrase to represent the sense of the Jews of that Age, as
 being their publick interpretation of the Scripture. Wherefore what we find common and frequent in it, we cannot but think the
 vulgus and general opinion of that Nation. Now it is certain that this Paraphrast doth often use בְּיָמֵינוּ the word of
 God, for יְהוָה God himself, and that especially with relation to the creation of the world. As Isai. 45. 12. אֲנִי עָשִׂיתִי אֶרֶץ
וַאֲנִי בָרַאתִי 1 made the earth, and created man upon it, saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel; which the
 Chaldee translateth אֲנִי בְּיָמֵינוּ עָבַדְתִּי אֶרֶץ I by my word made the earth, and created man upon it. In the
 same manner, Jer. 27. 5. 1 made the earth, and men and beasts on the face of the earth: the Targum אֲנִי בְּיָמֵינוּ
אֲנִי בְּיָמֵינוּ And Isai. 48. 13. אֲפִי יְרִיסָהּ אֶרֶץ My hand also founded the earth: the Chaldee אֲפִי בְּיָמֵינוּ
אֲפִי בְּיָמֵינוּ Etiam in verbo meo fundavi terram. And most clearly Gen. 1. 27. we read, Et creavit Deus homi-
 nem; the Jerusalem Targum, Verbum Domini creavit hominem. And Gen. 3. 8. Audierunt vocem Domini Dei: the Chaldee
 Paraphrase וְשָׁמְעוּ יְהוָה קוֹל בְּיָמֵינוּ Et audierunt vocem verbi Domini Dei. Now this which the Chaldee Paraphrase
 called בְּיָמֵינוּ, the Hellenists named ἡμεῖς as appeareth by Philo the Jew, who wrote before S. John, and reckons, in his Divi-
 nity, first Πατέρας ἡμεῖς, then Πατέρας Θεὸν, &c. ὁ Θεὸς ἡμεῖς ὁ Θεὸς ἡμεῖς. Quest. 17. Solus. Whom he calls ἡμεῖς Θεὸς,
ἡμεῖς

τρεῖς ἄνθρωποι ἦν, De Agricult. He attributes the Creation of the World to this Λόγος, whom he terms ὁρίζων Θεός, ὁ δὲ κτισμὸς καὶ κατασκευαστὴς, De Flammeo gladio. Σκιά δὲ Θεοῦ ὁ Λόγος αὐτῷ ὄντι, ὃ καὶ ὁ Θεὸς ὁρίζων τρεῖς ἄνθρωποι ἐκαστοῦ μοῖρας Idem, Allegor. l. 2. Where we must observe, though Philo makes the Λόγος of whom he speaks as instrumental in the Creation of the World; yet he taketh it not for a bare expression of the will of God, but for a God, though in the second degree, and expressly for the Son of God. Nor ought we to look on Philo Judæus in this as a Platonist, but merely as a Jew, who refers his whole Doctrine of this Λόγος to the first chapter of Genesis. And the rest of the Jews before him, who had no such knowledge out of Plato's School, used the same notion. For as Iai. 48. 13. the hand of God, is by the Chaldee Paraphrast translated the Word of God: so in the Book of Wisdom, πᾶσι δὲ ἡμεῖς ὡς Χριστὸς καὶ κόσμον. Sap. 11. 17. is changed into ὁ παντοδυναμὸς ὡς ὁ Λόγος αὐτῷ ὄντι, 18. 15. and Siracides 43. 26. Ἐν λόγῳ αὐτῷ ὡς Χριστὸς καὶ πᾶν. Nay, the Septuagint hath changed Shaddai, the undoubted name of the Omnipotent God, into Λόγος the Word, Ezek. 1. 24. יְהוָה קוֹל יְהוָה דֵּי, quod Hebraice appellatur יְהוָה, & juxta LXX. φωνὴ τοῦ Λόγου, id est, vox Verbi, ut universa quæ prædicantur in mundo vocem Filii Dei esse dicamus. S. Hieron. and therefore Cellus, writing in the person of a Jew, acknowledgeth that the Word is the Son of God. Εἰ γὰρ ὁ Λόγος ὅτι αὐτῷ ὄντι ὡς ὁ Θεός, καὶ ἡμεῖς παύσωμεν. Orig. adv. Celsum, l. 2. And although Origen object that in this Cellus makes the Jew speak improperly, because the Jews which he had conversed with, did never acknowledge that the Son of God was the Word; yet Cellus his Jew did speak the Language of Philo: but between the time of Cellus and that of Origen, (I guess about threescore years,) the Jews had learnt to deny that notion of Λόγος, that they might with more colour reject S. John. If then all the Jews, both they which understood the Chaldee Exposition, and those which only used the Greek Translation, had such a notion of the Word of God; if all things by their confession were made by the Word; we have no reason to believe S. John should make use of any other notion than what they before had, and that by means whereof he might be so easily understood.

1 John 1. 1.

John 1. 31.

delivered so great a mystery in so few words, as speaking unto them who at the first apprehension understood him. Only that which as yet they knew not was, that this Word was made flesh, and that this Word made flesh was *Jesus Christ*. Wherefore this exposition being so literally clear in it self, so consonant to the notion of the Word, and the apprehension of the Jews; it is infinitely to be preferred before any such interpretation as shall restrain the most universals to a few particulars, change the plainest expressions into figurative phrases, and make of a sublime truth, a weak, useless, false discourse. For who will grant that *in the beginning* must be the same with that in S. John's Epistle, *from the beginning*, especially when the very interpretation involves in it self a contradiction? For *the beginning* in S. John's Epistle is that in which the Apostles saw, and heard, and touched the Word: *the beginning* in his Gospel was that in which *the Word was with God*, that is, not seen nor heard by the Apostles, but known as yet to God alone, as the new exposition will have it. Who will conceive it worthy of the Apostle's assertion, to teach that the Word had a being in the beginning of the Gospel, at what time John the Baptist began to preach, when we know the Baptist taught as much, who therefore *came baptizing with water, that he might be made manifest unto Israel*? When we are sure that S. Matthew and S. Luke, who wrote before him, taught us more than this, that he had a being thirty years before? when we are assured, it was as true of any other then living as of the Word, even of Judas who betrayed him, even of Pilate who condemned him? Again, who can imagine the Apostle should assert that the Word was, that is, had an actual being, when as yet he was not actually the Word? For if *the beginning* be when John the Baptist began to preach, and the Word, as they say, be nothing else but he which speaketh, and so revealeth the will of God; *Christ* had not then revealed the will of God, and consequently was not then actually the Word, but only potentially or by designation. Secondly, 'tis a strange figurative speech, *the Word was with God*, that is, was known to God, especially in this Apostles method. *In the beginning was the Word*; there *was* must signifie an actual existence: and if so, why in the next sentence (*the word was with God*) shall the same verb signifie an objective being only? Certainly though to be in the beginning be one thing, and to be with God, another; yet *to be* in either of them is the same. But if we should imagine this being understood of the knowledge of God, why we should grant that thereby is signified he was known to God alone, I cannot conceive. For the Proposition of it self is plainly affirmative, and the exclusive particle *only* added to the exposition, maketh it clearly negative. Nay more, the affirmative sense is certainly true, the negative as certainly false. For except *Gabriel* be God,

God, who came to the Virgin; except every one of the heavenly host which appeared to the Shepherds be God; except *Zachary* and *Elizabeth*, except *Si- meon* and *Anna*, except *Joseph* and *Mary* be God; it cannot be true that he was known to God only, for to all these he was certainly known. Thirdly, to pass by the third attribute, *and the Word was God*, as having occasion sud- denly after to handle it; seeing the Apostle hath again repeated the circum- stance of time as most material, *the same was in the beginning with God*, and im- mediately subjoyned those words, *all things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made*; how can we receive any expositi- on which referreth not the making of all these things to him in the beginning? But if we understand the latter part of the Apostles, who after the Ascension of our Saviour did nothing but what they were commanded and impowered to do by *Christ*, it will bear no relation to the beginning. If we interpret the former, of all which *Jesus* said and did in the promulgation of the Gospel, we cannot yet reach to the beginning assigned by the new Expositours: For while *John* the Baptist only preached, while in their sense the Word was with God, they will not affirm that *Jesus* did any of these things that here are spo- ken of. And consequently, according to their grounds, it will be true to say, In the beginning was the Word, and that Word in the beginning was with God, inasmuch as in the beginning nothing was done by him, but without him were all things done which were done in the beginning. Wherefore in all reason we should stick to the known interpretation, in which every word re- ceiveth its own proper signification without any figurative distortion, and is preserved in its due latitude and extension without any curtailing restriction. And therefore I conclude from the undeniable testimony of *S. John*, that in the beginning, when the Heavens and the Earth and all the hosts of them were created, all things were made by the Word who is *Christ Jesus* being made flesh; and consequently, by the method of Argument, as the Apostle antece- dently by the method of Nature, that in the beginning *Christ* was. He then who was in Heaven and descended from thence before that which was begot- ten of the Virgin ascended thither, he who was before *John* the Baptist and before *Abraham*, he who was at the end of the first world, and at the begin- ning of the same; he had a real being and existence before *Christ* was con- ceived by the Virgin *Mary*. But all these we have already shewed belong unto the Son of God. Therefore we must acknowledge, that *Jesus Christ* had a real being and existence before he was begotten by the Holy Ghost: Which is our first Assertion, properly opposed to the * *Photinians*.

* The Photini- ans were Here- tics, so called from Photinus,

Bishop of Sirmium, but born in Gallogræcia and Scholar to Marcellus Bishop of Ancyra. Photinus de Gallogræcia, Marcelli disci- pulus, Sirmii Episcopus ordinatus, Hebionis Hæresin instaurare conatus est. *S. Hieron. Catal. Eccl.* Photinus Sirmienfis Episcopus fuit à Marcello imbutus. Nam & Diaconus sub eo aliquandiu fuit. *Hilar. Fragm.* Wherefore when Epiphanius speaketh thus of him, ἔτι καὶ ὡμῶς τοῦτο ἐπὶ Σερμίου, it hath no relation to the original of his Person, but his Heresie; of which *S. Hilary*, Petu- fere, narum Jesum Christum ex Maria, Pannonia defendit, *De Trin.* He was a man of singular parts and abilities, φύσιτις ἐ- χων δὲ λόγον, καὶ πείθειν ικανός, says *Sozom.* l. 4. c. 6. Γέγονε ὁ φωτινὸς ἀλλοτὶ καὶ τρεῖς τοῦτον, καὶ ὡς ἐνυμνῶν καὶ γλωτίζων, πολλὰς δὲ διδάσκων ἀπαλὸν τῷ τοῦ λόγου περὶ ὧν καὶ ἐτοιμολογία. *Epiphanius. Her. 71.* Erat & ingenii viribus valens, & doctrina opibus excellens, & eloquio præpotens, quippe qui utroque sermone copiose & graviter disputaret & scriberet. *Vincent. Lirin. c. 16.* He is said by some to follow the Heresie of Ebion. Hebionis Hæresin instaurare conatus est, says *S. Hieron.* and *S. Hilary* ordinarily understands him by the name of Hebion, and sometimes expounds himself, Hebion, qui est Photinus. But there is no si- militude in their Doctrines, Hebion being more Jew than Christian, and teaching Christ as much begotten by Joseph, as born of Mary. Philaster will have him agree wholly with Paulus Samosatensis in omnibus. Epiphanius with an ἄπο μέρεος, and ἐτέρευα. Socrates and Sozomen, with him and with Sabellius: whereas he differed much from them both, especially from Sabellius, as being far from a Patripassian. Marcellus sabellianæ hæresis assertor existerat: Photinus vero novam hæresin jam ante proculerat, a Sabellio quidem in unione dissentiens, sed initium Christi ex Maria prædicabat. *Severus Hist. Sac.* Wherefore it will not be unnecessary to collect out of Antiquity what did properly belong unto Photinus, because I think it not yet done, and we find his Heresie in the propri- ety of it to begin and spread again. Photinus, mentis cæcitate deceptus, in Christo verum & substantiæ nostræ confessus est ho- minem, sed eundem Deum de Deo ante omnia secula genitum esse non credidit. *Leo de Natv. Christi. Serm. 4.* Ecce Photi- nus hominem tantum proficetur Dei Filium; dicit illum non fuisse ante beatam Mariam. *Lucifer Clarit.* Si quis in Christo se veritatem prædicat animæ & carnis, ut veritatem in eo nolit accipere Deitatis, id est, qui sic dicit Christum hominem ut Deum neger, non est Christianus Catholicus, sed Photinianus Hæreticus. *Fulg. ad Donat. l. 16.* Φωτινὸς δὲ ψιλὸν ἀνθρώπου λέγει καὶ τὸ θεογονημένον, οὐ μὴ λόγον ἔχει τὸ τὸν, καὶ τὸ ἐκ μητέρας γενεθλόντι ἀνθρώπου ὑποτίθεται ἀνθρώπον οὐκ εἶναι. *Irenæus. Adv. Hæres.*

de Natia. Ephes. Concil. p. 3 c. 10. Anathematizamus Photinum, qui Hebionis Hæresim instaurans, Dominum Jesum Christum tantum ex Maria Virgine confitetur. *Damasius Profess. Fidei.* Φάσκει ὅτι ὁ ἀρχὴς Χριστὸν μὴ ὅτι, ἀπὸ τῆς Μαρίας καὶ ἀπὸ αὐτῆς ἐκείνου, ἐξέτε, ἀλλὰ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον ἐπηλύθεν ἐπ' αὐτὸν, καὶ ἐγενήθη ἐκ τῆς Μαρίας ὁ υἱός. Epiphanius. Ἐλεγε ὁ υἱὸς Θεοῦ ὡς ἐπὶ παντοκράτορος ὡς ἐπὶ ἰδίου λόγου τὰ πάντα δημιουργήσας. ὅτι καὶ περὶ πάντων αἰώνων γενήσιν τε καὶ ὑπαρξῶν τε καὶ ἀφαιρεσῶν. αλλ' ἐκ Μαρίας γενήσιν ὁ Χριστὸν ἐκ γεννητοῦ. Sozomen. l. 4. c. 6. Photini ergo secta hæc est. Dicit Deum singulum esse & solitarium, & more Judaico confitendum. Trinitatis plenitudinem negat, neque ullam Dei Verbi, aut ullam spiritus Sancti purat esse personam. Christum vero hominem tantummodo solitarium asserit, cui principium adscribit, ex Maria; & hoc omnibus modis dogmatizat, solum nos personam Dei Patris, & solum Christum hominem colere debere. *Vinc. Lirinensis adv. Hæres. c. 17.* In the disputation framed by Vigilius out of the seventh Book of S. Hilary, as I conceive, Photinus rejecting the opinion of Sabellius (whom Socrates and Sozomen said he followed) as impious, thus declares his own: Unde magis ego dico, Deum Patrem Filium habere Dominum Jesum Christum, ex Maria Virgine initium sumentem, qui per sancta conversationis excellentissimum atque inimitabile beatitudinis meritum, à Deo Patre in Filium adoptatus & eximio Divinitatis honore donatus. And again, Ego Domino nostro Jesu Christo initium tribuo, purumque hominem fuisse affirmo, & per beatam vitam excellentissimum meritum Divinitatis honorem fuisse adeptum. *Vide eundem lib. 2. adv. Eutych.* Ignorat etiam Photinus imaginem pietatis, quod Apostolus memorat, sacramentum, qui Christi ex Virgine facitur exordium: Et propterea non credit sine initio substantialiter Deum natum ex Deo Patre, in quo carnis veritatem confitetur ex Virgine. *Fulg. ad Thrasim. l. 1.* Greg. Nazianzen, according to his custom, gives a very brief, but remarkable, expression; Φάσκει ὁ κατὰ Χριστὸν καὶ ἀπὸ Μαρίας ἀρχόμενος. Orat. 25. But the opinion of Photinus cannot be better understood than by the Condemnation of it in the Council of Sirmium; which having set out the Confession of their Faith in brief, addeth many and various Anathema's, according to the several Heresies then apparent, without mentioning their names. Of these the fifth aims clearly at Photinus. Siquis secundum præscientiam vel prædestinationem ex Maria dicitur filium esse, & non ante sæcula ex Patre natum, apud Deum esse & per eum facta esse omnia, Anathema sit. The 13, 14, and 15. also were particulars directed against him, as S. Hilary hath observed: but the last of all is most material. Siquis Christum Deum, Filium Dei, ante sæcula subsistentem, & ministrantem Patri ad omnium perfectionem, non dicat, sed ex quo de Maria natus est, ex eo & Christum & Filium nominatum esse, & initium accepisse ut sit Deus, dicat, Anathema sit. Upon which the observation of S. Hilary is this: Concludi damnatio ejus Hæresis propter quam conventum erat, (that is, the Photinian) expositione totius fidei cui adversabatur, oportuit, quæ initium Dei Filii ex partu Virginis mentiebat, S. Hilary. de Synod. contra Arianos. Thus was Photinus Bishop of Sirmium condemned by a Council held in the same City. They all agreed suddenly in the condemnation of him. Arians, Semi-Arians, and Catholics; καθ' ὅλον ἐκθύς, says Socrates, καὶ τὸ τοῦ αἵματος καὶ δικαίως ὑποβύθων πάντες ἐπὶ ἡνίκαν καὶ τότε καὶ μετὰ ταῦτα. l. 2. c. 29. And because his History is very obscure and intricate, take this brief Catalogue of his Condemnations. We read that he was condemned at the Council of Nice, and at the same time by a Council at Rome under Sylvester: but this is delivered only in a forged Epilogus Concilii Romani. He was then first condemned with Marcellus his master, as Sulpicius Severus relates, probably by the Synod at Constantinople; for in that Marcellus was deprived. Sozom. l. 2. 33. Socrat. l. 1. 35. Secondly, his Heresy is renounced in the second Synod at Antioch. Athanas. de Syn. Socrat. l. 1. 19. Thirdly, he was condemned in the Council of Sardes. Epiphanius and Sulpicius Severus. Fourthly, by a Council at Milan. S. Hilary. Fragm. Fifthly, in a Synod at Sirmium he was deposed by the Western Bishops; but by reason of the great opinion and affection of the people he could not be removed. S. Hilary. Fragm. Sixthly, he was again condemned and deposed at Sirmium by the Eastern Bishops, and being convicted by Basil Bishop of Ancyra, was banished from thence. S. Hilary. Epiph. Socr. Sozom. Vigil. Indeed he was so generally condemned not only then, but afterwards under Valentinian, as S. Hierome testifies, and the Synodic Epistle of the Aquileian Council, that his opinion was soon worn out of the world. Ἡ δὲ καὶ διεσκέδαθη εἰς ὀλίγον χρόνον ἢ τότε τῇ ἡπαρμονίᾳ εὐρεῖται, says Epiphanius, who lived not long after him. So suddenly was this opinion rejected by all Christians, applauded by none but Julian the Heretick, who railed at S. John for making Christ God, and commended Photinus for denying it; as appears by an Epistle written by Julian to him, as it is (though in a mean translation) delivered by Facundus. Tu quidem, O Phorine, veritumillis videtur & proximus salvare, bene faciens nequaquam in utero inducere, quem credidisti Deum. Facund. ad Justinian. l. 4.

Heb. 3. 4.

Prov. 8. 23.

The second Assertion, next to be made good, is that the being which *Christ* had before he was conceived by the Virgin was not any created, but the Divine essence, by which he always was truly, really and properly God. This will evidently and necessarily follow from the last demonstration of the first Assertion, the creating all things by the Son of God: from whence we inferred his pre-existence in the beginning assuring us as much that he was God, as that he was. For *he that built all things is God.* And the same Apostle which assures us *All things were made by him,* at the same time tells us, *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.* Where *In the beginning* must not be denied unto the third proposition, because it cannot be denied unto the second. Therefore *in the beginning, or ever the earth was, the Word was God,* the same God with whom he was. For we cannot with any shew of reason either imagine that he was with one God, and was another, because there can be no more supreme Gods than one; or conceive that the Apostle should speak of one kind of God in the second, and of another in the third proposition; in the second, of a God eternal and independent, in the third, of a || made and depending God. Especially, first considering that the eternal God was so constantly among the Jews called the

And that upon so poor a ground as the want of an Article, because in the first place it is *ὡς πρὸς τὸ Θεόν*, in the second, *Θεὸς ὡς ὁ λόγος*, not *ὁ Θεός*: from hence to conclude, *ὁ Θεός* is one God, that is, *καὶ ἑξ ὅλου*, the supreme God, *Θεός* another, not the supreme, but one made God by him. Indeed they are beholder to Epiphanius for this Observation, whose words are these: *Ἐὰν ἑπὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἀντὶ τοῦ ἀρεθῶς, τὸ τυχεῖν αἰποῦ Θεὸν ἢ ἐθνη, ἢ Θεὸν τὸν ὅλον (or rather ἕκ ὅλου) ἢ ἐπὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ, δέλον ὡς ἀπὸ τοῦ ἀρεθῶς, τὸν ὅλον Συναινοῦν ἀληθῆ τε καὶ γενναῖον.* Samaritan. Hæres. But Whosoever shall apply this rule to the sacred Scriptures will find it most fallacious. In the beginning

ἐπεὶ ἦν

Phil. 2. 6, 7.
 || In effigie Dei
 constitutus.
Tertull.
 In figura Dei
 constitutus.
Cyp.

Father and undoubted Mother. When he appeared in publick he lived after the manner of a Prophet, and a Doctour sent from God, accompanied with a Family, as 'twere of his Apostles, whose Master he professed himself, subject to the commands of no man in that Office, and obedient only unto God. The *form* then of a *servant* which he took upon him, must consist in something distinct from his sufferings, or submission unto men; as the condition in which he was when he so submitted and so suffered. In that he was *made flesh*, sent *in the likeness of sinful flesh*, subject unto all infirmities and miseries of this life, attending on the sons of men fallen by the sin of Adam: in that he was *made of a woman*, *made under the law*, and so obliged to perform the same; which Law did so handle the children of God, as that they differed nothing from servants: in that he was born, bred, and lived in a mean, low and abject condition; *as a root out of a dry ground*, he had *no form nor comeliness*, and *when they saw him, there was no beauty that they should desire him*; but *was despised and rejected of men*, *a man of sorrows*, and *acquainted with grief*: In that he was thus made man, he took upon him the *form of a servant*. Which is not mine, but the Apostle's explication; as adding it not by way of conjunction, in which there might be some diversity, but by way of apposition, which signifieth a clear identity. And therefore it is necessary to observe, that our translation of that verse is not only not exact, but very disadvantageous to that truth which is contained in it. For we read it thus; *He made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men*. Where we have two copulative conjunctions, neither of which is in the * original text, and three distinct propositions, without any dependence of one upon the other; whereas all the words together are but an expression of *Christ's* exinanition, with an explication shewing in what it consisteth: which will clearly appear by this literal translation, *But emptied himself, taking the form of a servant, being made in the likeness of men*. Where if any man doubt how *Christ* emptied himself, the text will satisfy him, by taking the form of a servant; if any still question how he took the form of a servant, he hath the Apostle's resolution, by being made in the likeness of men. Indeed after the expression of this exinanition, he goes on with a conjunction, to add another act of *Christ's* humiliation; ^a *And being found in fashion as a man*, being already by his exinanition in the form of a servant, or the likeness of men, he humbled himself, and became (or rather, || becoming) obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. As therefore his humiliation consisted in his obedience unto death, so his exinanition consisted in the assumption of the form of a servant, and that in the nature of man. All which is very fitly expressed by a strange interpretation on the Epistle to the *Hebrews*. For whereas these words are clearly in the Psalmist, ^b *Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire, mine ears hast thou opened*: the Apostle appropriateth the sentence to *Christ*; *When he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me*. Now being the ^c *boaring* of the ear under the Law was a note of perpetual servitude, being this was expressed in the words of the Psalmist, and changed by the Apostle into the preparing of a body; it followeth, that when *Christ's* body first was framed, even then did he assume the form of a servant.

* 'Αλλ' ἐαυτὸν ἐκένωσε, μερ-
 ὴν δὲ λα-
 βὼν, ἐν ὁμοι-
 ασί ἀνθρώ-
 πων ἡυ-
 ῶθη, which is
 also exactly ob-
 served by the
 Vulgar Latine,
 Sed semetip-
 sum exinanivit,
 formam servi
 accipiens, in
 similitudine
 hominum fa-
 ctus. where γε-
 νώθη is ad-
 ded by Opposi-
 tion to λαβὼν,
 and have both
 equal relation to
 ἐκένωσε or,
 which is alone,
 ἐκένωσε λα-
 βὼν, ἑλαβε
 ἡυώθη.
 Phil. 2. 8.

|| Ἐταπείνω-
 σεν ἐαυτὸν, γε-
 νώθη ὡς ἄν-
 θρωπος. For in
 both these verses
 there is but one
 Conjunction
 joining together

two Acts of our Saviour, his first exinanition, or ἐκένωσε, and his farther humiliation, or ἑταπείνωσεν: the rest are all Particles added for explication to the Verbs. ^b Psal. 40. 6. ^c Exod. 21. 6. Deut. 15. 17.

Again,

Again, it appeareth out of the same Text, that *Christ* was in the form of God before he was in the form of a servant, and consequently before he was made man. For he which is presupposed to be, and to think of that being which he hath, and upon that thought to assume, must have that being before that assumption: but *Christ* is first expressly said to be in the form of God, and, being so, to think it no robbery to be equal with God, and, notwithstanding that equality, to take upon him the form of a servant: therefore it cannot be denied but he was before in the form of God. Beside, he was not in the form of a servant, but by the emptying himself, and all exinanition necessarily presupposeth a precedent plenitude; it being as impossible to empty any thing which hath no fulness, as to fill any thing which hath no emptiness. But the fulness which *Christ* had, in respect whereof assuming the form of a servant, he is said to empty himself, could be in nothing else but in the form of God, in which he was before. Wherefore, if the assumption of the form of a servant be contemporary with his exinanition; if that exinanition necessarily presupposeth a plenitude as indispensably antecedent to it; if the form of God be also co-æval with that precedent plenitude: then must we confess, *Christ* was in the form of God before he was in the form of a servant: which is the second Proposition.

Again, it is as evident from the same Scripture, that *Christ* was as much in the form of God as the form of a Servant, and did as really subsist in the Divine nature, as in the nature of man. For he was so *in the form of God*, as thereby to be * equal with God. But no other form beside the essential, which is the Divine nature it self, could infer an equality with God. ^a *To whom will ye liken me, and make me equal? saith the Holy one.* There can be but one infinite, eternal and independent Being; and there can be no comparison between that and whatsoever is finite, temporal, and depending. He therefore who did truly think himself equal with God, as being in the form of God, must be conceived to subsist in that one infinite, eternal and independent nature of God. Again, the phrase, *in the form of God*, not elsewhere mentioned, is used by the Apostle with a respect unto that other, of the *form of a servant*, exegetically continued *in the likeness of man*; and the respect of one unto the other is so necessary, that if the form of God be not as real and essential as the form of a servant, or the likeness of man, there is no force in the Apostle's words, nor will his argument be fit to work any great degree of humiliation upon the consideration of *Christ's* exinanition. But by the *form* is certainly understood the true condition of a servant, and by the *likeness* infallibly meant the real nature of man: nor doth the *fashion*, in which he was found, destroy, but rather assert, the truth of his Humanity. And therefore, as sure as *Christ* was really and essentially man, of the same nature with us, in whose similitude he was made; so certainly was he also really and essentially God, of the same nature and being with him, in whose form he did subsist. Seeing then we have clearly evinced from the express words of *S. Paul*, that *Christ* was in the form of a servant as soon as he was made man, that he was

* Τὸ ἴσον
Θεῷ. Pariari
Deo, Ibrati.
Esse se aqua-
lem Deo, Cyp.
Esse æqualis
Deo, Leporius.
Thus all express
the notion of E-
quality, not of
Similitude: nor
can we under-
stand any less by
τὸ ἴσον, than
ἡ ἰσότης, ἴ-
σος and ἴσος, be-
ing indifferent-
ly used by the
Greeks, as Pin-
darus Olymp.
Ode 2.

Ἰσὸν ὅτι
κρίσιν αἰεὶ,
Ἰσὸν ὅτι ἀμεί-
εξις ἀλίου
χοίτης, Σπ-
ρίτου
Ἐσσοι νῆσος
ταυ βίονος.

So whom the Greeks call ἰσότηον. Homer ἴσον Θιῷ, Odys. O.

Τὸν νῦν ἴσον Θεῷ Ἰθακήσιος ἱσοπέσας.

where ἴσον has not the nature of an Adverb, as belonging to ἴσον-ἴσος, but of a Noun referred to the antecedent Τὸν, or including an Adverb added to a Noun, τὸν νῦν ὡς ἰσότηον. The collection of Grotius from this verse is very strange; ἴσον Θεῷ, est spectari tanquam Deum. As if he should have said ἱσοπέσας signifies spectant, therefore ἴσον signifies spectari. This he was forced to put off thus, because the strength of our interpretation, rendering an equality, lies in the Verb substantive τὸ ἴσον. As Dionysius of Alexandria very anciently, κενώσας ἑαυτὸν, καὶ ταπεινώσας ἑως θανάτου, θανάτου ὅτι αὐτοῦ, ἴσον Θεῷ ἐσαπέχετο. Epist ad Paulum Samosat. For we acknowledge that ἴσον by it self oft-times signifieth no more than instar, and so inferreth nothing but a similitude: as we find it frequently in the book of Job. Where it sometimes answereth to the inseparable particle ὡς; as ἴσον ὡς, quasi in nocte, ἴσον νυκτὶ, g. 14. ἴσον νυκτὶ, ἴσον

sicut caseum, ἵσα τυρόν, 10. 10. כֶּבֶד, quasi putredo, Sym. δαίμονες σαπιδόνες, LXX ἵσα ἀσκή, 13. 28. מִיָּדָי, sicut aquam, ἵσα πῶμα, 15. 16. יָעַב, tanquam lignum, ἵσα ξύλον, 24. 20. לִמְנוּחַי, sicut lutum, ἵσα πηλός, 27. 16. מִלְּבָשִׁי, sicut vestimento, ἵσα διτλολή, 29. 14. בֶּבֶר, quasi bos, ἵσα βούτη, 40. 15. Where we see the Vulgar Latin useth for the Hebrew ב, quasi, sicut, tanquam, the LXX. ἵσα. Sometime it answereth to no word in the Original, but supplieth a similitude understood, not expressed, in the Hebrew: as יָעַב, tanquam pullum, ἵσα ὄρεν, 11. 12. לִבְנֵי, & lapis, ἵσα λίθον, 28. 2. מִלְּמַחַד, luto, ἵσα πηλός, 30. 19. Once it rendereth an Hebrew word rather according to the intention, than the signification; אֶשֶׁר אֶשְׂרִי, comparabitur cineri, ad verbum, proverbial cineris, ἵσα ἀσκή, 13. 12. So that in all these places it is used adverbially for instar, and in none both the addition of τὸ ἵδ' to it. As for that answer of Socius, that Christ cannot be God, because he is said to be equal with God, Tantum abest ut ab eo quod Christus sit equalis Deo sequatur ipsum esse æternum & summum Deum, ut potius ex hoc ipso necessario concludatur non esse æternum & summum Deum. Nemo enim sibi ipsi equalis esse potest. Soc. ad 8. c. Wiek. as if there could be no predication of equality where we find a substantial identity: it is most certainly false, because the most exact speakers use such language as this is. There can be no expressions more exact and pertinent than those which are used by Geometricians, neither can there be any better judges of equality than they are; but they most frequently use that expression in this notion, proving an equality, and inferring it from identity. As in the fifth Proposition of the first Element of Euclid, two lines are said to contain an Angle equal to the Angle contained by two other lines, because they contained the same Angle, or γωνίαν κοινὴν. and the basis of one Triangle is supposed equal to the basis of another Triangle, because the same line was basis to both, or βάσις κοινή. In the same manner certainly may the Son be said to be equal to the Father in essence or power, because they both have the same essence and power, that is, ἐστὶν καὶ δυνάμει κοινὴ. Ocellus de Unitate, ἀλλ' αὐτὸ καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ καὶ ὁσαύτως διὰ τὴν αὐτὴν καὶ ἵσον καὶ ὁμοίον αὐτὸ ἐαυτῶ. p. 11. * Isa 40. 25. and 46. 5.

in the form of God before he was in the form of a servant, that the form of God in which he subsisted doth as truly signifie the Divine, as the likeness of man the humane nature; it necessarily followeth, that Christ had a real existence before he was begotten of the Virgin, and that the being which he had was the Divine essence, by which he was truly, really and properly God.

Thirdly, He which is expressly styled *Alpha* and *Omega*, the first and the last without any restriction or limitation; as he is after, so was before any time assignable, truly and essentially God. For by this title God describeth his own being, and distinguisheth it from all other. *I the Lord, the first, and with the last, I am he. I am he, I am the first, I also am the last. I am the first, and I am the last, and beside me there is no God.* But Christ is expressly called *Alpha* and *Omega*, the first and the last. He so proclaimed himself by a great voice, as of a trumpet, saying, *I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last.* Which answereth to that solemn call and proclamation in the Prophet, *Hearken unto me, O Jacob, and Israel my called.* He comforteth S. John with the Majesty of this title, *Fear not, I am the first and the last.* Which words were spoken by one like unto the Son of man, by him that liveth, and was dead, and is alive for evermore; that is, undoubtedly, by Christ. He upholdeth the Church of Smyrna in her tribulation by virtue of the same description, *These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive.* He ascertaineth his coming unto Judgment with the same assertion, *I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.* And in all these places this Title is attributed unto Christ absolutely and universally, without any kind of restriction or limitation, without any assignation of any particular in respect of which

he is the first or last; in the same latitude and * eminence of expression in which it is or can be attributed to the supreme God. There is yet another Scripture in which the same description may seem of a more dubious interpretation: *I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.* For being it is the Lord who so calls himself, which title belongeth to the Father and the Son, it may be doubted whether it be spoken by the Father or the Son; but whether it be understood of the one or of the other, it will sufficiently make good what we intend to prove. For if they be understood of Christ, as the precedent and the following words imply, then is he certainly that Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty; that is, the supreme eternal God, of the same Divine essence with the Father, who was

* With the Article, so much elsewhere stood upon, τὸ α καὶ τὸ ω, ὁ πρῶτος καὶ ὁ ἔσχατος, The Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last. For we must not take τὸ α at the Grammaticians do, by which they signify only the letter written in that figure, and called by that name. As appeareth by Eratosthenes, who was called Βῆτα, not τὸ βήμα, as Suidas corruptly. Hesychius Illustrius, from whom Suidas had that passage; Ἐρατοσθένης δὲ τὸ δάξασθαι πάντας εἶδει παιδείας τοῖς ἀκείροις ἐρίζων, Βῆτα ἐπλάθει. And Martianus Heracleota in Periplo, καὶ μετ' ἐκένεν Ἐρατοσθένης, ἐν Βῆτα ἐκάλειον οἱ τὸ Μισθὸν πρὸς αἰέτας.

* Rev. 1. 8.

before described by *him which is, and which was, and which is to come*, to whom the six-wing'd Beasts continually cry, *Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come*; as the familiar explication of that name which God revealed to *Moses*. If they belong unto the supreme God, the Father of our Lord *Jesus Christ*; then did he so describe himself unto *S. John*, and express his supreme Deity, that by those words, *I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending*, he might be known to be the one Almighty and eternal God: and consequently, whosoever should assume that title, must attribute as much unto himself. Wherefore being Christ hath so immediately, and with so great solemnity and frequency, taken the same style upon him by which the Father did express his Godhead; it followeth, that he hath declared himself to be the Supreme, Almighty, and Eternal God. And being thus the Alpha and the first, he was before any time assignable, and consequently before he was conceived of the Virgin; and the being which then he had was the Divine Essence, by which he was truly and properly the Almighty and Eternal God.

Fourthly, He whose Glory *Isaiah* saw in the year that King *Uzziah* died had a being before Christ was begotten of the Virgin, and that being was the Divine Essence, by which he was naturally and essentially God: For he is expressly called *the Lord, Holy, holy, holy, the Lord of Hosts, whose glory filleth the whole earth*; which titles can belong to none beside the one and only God. But Christ was he whose Glory *Isaiah* saw, as *S. John* doth testify, saying, *These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him*: and he whose Glory he saw, and of whom he spake, was certainly Christ: for of him the Apostle treateth in that place, and of none but him. *These things spake Jesus, and departed. But though he (that is, Jesus) had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him, that is, Christ who wrought those miracles.* The reason why they believed not on him was, *That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? And as they did not, so they could not believe in Christ, because that Esaias said again, He hath blinded their eyes and hardned their hearts; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their hearts, and be converted, and I should heal them.* For those who God foresaw, and the Prophet foretold should not believe, could not do it without contradicting the prescience of the one, and the predictions of the other. But the Jews refusing to assent unto the Doctrine of our Saviour were those of whom the Prophet spake: For *these things said Esaias when he saw his glory, and spake of him.* Now if the Glory which *Isaias* saw were the Glory of Christ, and he of whom *Isaias* in that Chapter spake were Christ himself; then must those blinded eyes and hardned hearts belong unto these Jews, and then their Infidelity was so long since foretold. Thus doth the fixing of that Prophecy upon that people, which saw our Saviour's miracles, depend upon *Isaias's* Vision, and the appropriation of it unto Christ. Wherefore *S. John* infallibly hath taught us, that the Prophet saw the Glory of Christ; and the Prophet hath as undoubtedly assured us, that he whose Glory then he saw was the one Omnipotent and Eternal God; and consequently both together have sealed this truth, that Christ did then subsist in that glorious Majesty of the Eternal Godhead.

Lastly, He who, being man, is frequently in the Scriptures called God, and that in such a manner, as by that name no other can be understood but the one only and eternal God, he had an existence before he was made man, and the being which then he had was no other than the Divine Essence; because all novelty is repugnant to the Deity, nor can any be that one God, who was

not

not so from all eternity. But *Jesus Christ*, being in the nature of man, is frequently in the sacred Scriptures called God; and that name is attributed unto him in such a manner, as by it no other can be understood but the one Almighty and Eternal God.

Which may be thus demonstrated. It hath been already proved, and we all agree in this, That there can be but one Divine Essence; and so but one supreme God. Wherefore were it not said in the Scriptures, there are *many Gods*; did not he himself who is supreme, call others so; we durst not give that name to any but to him alone, nor could we think any called God to be any other but that one. It had been then enough to have alledged that *Christ* is God, to prove his supreme and eternal Deity: whereas now we are answered, that there are Gods many, and therefore it followeth not from that name that he is the one eternal God. But if *Christ* be none of those many Gods, and yet be God, then can he be no other but that one. And that he is not to be numbred with them, is certain, because he is clearly distinguished from them, and opposed to them. We read in the Psalmist, *I have said ye are Gods, and all of you are children of the most High*. But we must not reckon *Christ* among those Gods, we must not number the only-begotten Son among those children. For *they knew not, neither would they understand, they walked on in darkness*: and whosoever were Gods only as they were, either did, or might so do. Whereas *Christ*, in whom alone dwelt all the fulness of the Godhead bodily, is not only distinguished from, but opposed to, such Gods as those, by his Disciples saying, *Now we are sure that thou knowest all things*; by himself proclaiming, *I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness*. S. Paul hath told us *there be gods many, and lords many*; but withal hath taught us, that *to us there is but one God, the Father, and one Lord Jesus Christ*. In which words, as the *Father* is opposed as much unto the *many Lords* as *many Gods*, so is the Son as much unto the *many Gods* as *many Lords*; the *Father* being as much Lord as God, and the Son as much God as Lord. Wherefore being we find in Scripture frequent mention of one God, and beside that one an intimation of many Gods, and whosoever is called God must either be that one, or one of those many; being we find our blessed Saviour to be wholly opposed to the many Gods, and consequently to be none of them, and yet we read him often stiled God: it followeth, that that name is attributed unto him in such a manner, as by it no other can be understood but the one Almighty and eternal God.

Again, those who deny our Saviour to be the same God with the Father, have invented rules to be the touchstone of the eternal power and Godhead. First, where the name of God is taken absolutely, as the subject of any proposition, it always signifieth the supreme power and Majesty, excluding all others from that Deity. Secondly, where the same name is any way used with an Article by way of excellency, it likewise signifieth the same supreme Godhead as admitting others to a communion of Deity, but excluding them from the Supremacy. Upon these two rules they have raised unto themselves this Observation, That whensoever the name of God absolutely taken is placed as the subject of any proposition, it is not to be understood of *Christ*: and wheresoever the same name is spoken of our Saviour by way of predicate, it never hath an Article denoting excellency annexed to it; and consequently leaves him in the number of those Gods who are excluded from the Majesty of the eternal Deity.

Now though there can be no kind of certainty in any such observations of the Articles, because the *Greeks* promiscuously often use them or omit them, without any reason of their usurpation or omission, whereof examples

are innumerable ;) though, if those rules were granted, yet would not their Conclusion follow, because the supreme God is often named (as they confess) without an Article, and therefore the same name may signifie the same God when spoken of *Christ*, as well as when of the Father, so far as can concern the omission of the Article: yet, to compleat my demonstration, I shall shew, first, that the name of God taken subjectively is to be understood of *Christ*; secondly, that the same name with the Article affixed is attributed unto him; thirdly, that if it were not so, yet where the Article is wanting, there is that added to the predicate which hath as great a virtue to signifie that excellency as the Article could have.

S. Paul, unfolding the mystery of Godliness, hath delivered six Propositions together, and the subject of all and each of them is God. *Without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.* And this God which is the subject of all these Propositions must be understood of *Christ*, because of him each one is true, and all are so of none but him, He was the Word which was God, and was made flesh, and consequently *God manifested in the flesh*. Upon him the Spirit descended at his Baptism, and after his Ascension was poured upon his Apostles, ratifying his Commission, and confirming the Doctrine which they received from him: wherefore he was *God justified in the Spirit*. His nativity the Angels celebrated, in the discharge of his Office they ministred unto him, at his Resurrection and Ascension they were present, always ready to confess and adore him: he was therefore *God seen of Angels*. The Apostles preached unto all Nations, and he whom they preached was ^a *Jesus Christ*. The Father ^b *separated S. Paul from his mothers womb, and called him by his grace, to reveal his Son unto him, that he might preach him among the heathen: therefore he was God preached unto the Gentiles.* John the Baptist spake ^c *unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.* ^d *We have believed in Jesus Christ*, saith S. Paul, who so taught the Gaolour trembling at his feet, ^e *Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved: he therefore was God believed on in the world.* When he had been forty days on earth after his Resurrection, he was taken visibly up into Heaven, and sat down at the right hand of the Father: wherefore he was *God received up into Glory*. And thus all these six Propositions, according to the plain and familiar language of the Scriptures, are infallibly true of *Christ*, and so of God, as he is taken by S. John, when he speaks those words, *the Word was God*. But all these cannot be understood of any other, which either is, or is called, God. For though we grant the Divine perfections and attributes to be the same with the Divine Essence, yet are they never in the Scriptures called God; nor can any of them with the least shew of probability be pretended as the subject of these propositions, or afford any tolerable interpretation. When they tell us that *God*, that is, the * Will of God, was manifested in the flesh; that is, was revealed by frail and mortal men, and received up in glory, that is, † was received gloriously on earth, they teach us a language which the || Scriptures know not, and the Holy Ghost never used. And as no

1 Tim. 3. 16:

^a Acts 8. 5, 35.

9. 20. 11. 20.

17. 3. 18. 19.

13.

Rom. 16. 25.

2 Cor. 1. 19.

11. 4.

Phil. 1. 18.

^b Gal. 1. 15, 16.^c Acts 19. 4.^d Gal. 2. 16.^e Acts 16. 31.

* Deus, i.e. voluntas ipsius de servandis hominibus, per homines infirmos & mortales perfectè pater-

refacta est, &c. Catech. Racov. ad Quest. 59. † Insignem in modum & summa cum gloria recepta fuit. 16. || For Oide is not ἀναλήθη, much less is ἀναλήθη received or embraced. Elias speaketh not of his reception, but his ascension, when he saith to Elisha, Τί ποιῶν σοι πρὶν ἢ ἀναληθῆναι σοὶ; 2 Kings 2. 9. and Ἐάν τις με ἀναλαβάνωμαι σοὶ; 2 Kings 2. 15. When he actually ascended, as the original ἔβη, it is no otherwise translated by the Septuagint, than ἀναλήθη Ἠλίας ἐν νεφέλῃ ὡς εἰς τὸ ἕραν. Which Language was preserved by the Hellenizing Jews: Ὁ ἀναληθεὶς ἐν λαίλατι πυρὸς, Sirac. 48. 9. and again, ἀναλήθη εἰς τὸ ἕραν, 1 Mac. 2. 58. Neither did they use it of Elias only, but of Enoch also. Οὐδὲ γὰρ ἐκλήθη εἰς τὸ ἕραν, καὶ οὐδὲ ἀναλήθη ἐν τῇ γῆ. The same Language is continued in the New Testament of our Saviour's Ascension, ἀναλήθη εἰς τὸ ἕραν. Mar. 16. 19. ὁ ἀναληθεὶς ἀπὸ νεφέλης εἰς τὸ ἕραν, Acts 1. 11. and singly, ἀναλήθη, Acts 1. 2. and ἀναλήθη ἀπὸ νεφέλης, Acts 1. 22. As therefore ἀναλήθη τῷ Μωσῶϊ, in the Language of the Jews, was not the reception of

Moses

Moses by the Israelites, but the assumption of his body; so ἀνάλυσις τοῦ Χριστοῦ is the Ascension of Christ, Luke 9. 51. Wherefore this being the constant notion of the word; it must so be here likewise understood, ἀνελήθη ἐν δόξῃ: as the Vulgar Latin, (whose authority is pretended against us,) assumptum est in gloria; rendering it here by the same word by which he always translated ἀνελήθη.

Attribute, so no person but the Son can be here understood under the name of God: not the Holy Ghost, for he is distinguished from him, as being justified by the Spirit; not the Father, who was not manifested in the flesh, nor received up in glory. It remaineth therefore that, whereas the Son is the only Person to whom all these clearly and undoubtedly belong, which are here jointly attributed unto God, as sure as the name of God is expressed universally in the * Copies of the Original Language, so thus absolutely and subjectively taken must it be understood of Christ.

* For being the Epistle was written in the Greek language,

it is enough if all these Copies do agree. Nor need we be troubled with the observation of Grotius on the place: *Suspectam nobis hanc lectionem faciunt Interpretes veteres, Latinus, Syrus, Arabs & Ambrosius, qui omnes legerunt ὁ ἐφανέρωθη. I confess the Vulgar Latin reads it otherwise than the Greek, Quod manifestatum est in carne; and it cannot be denied but the Syriac, however translated by Tremellius, agreeth with the Latin; and both seem to have read ὁ, instead of Θεός. But the joint consent of the Greek Copies and Interpreters are above the authority of these two Translators; and the Arabick set forth in the Biblia Polyglotta agreeth expressly with them. But that which Grotius hath farther observed is of far greater consideration: Addit Hincmarus opusculo 55. illud Θεός hic positum à Nestorianis. For if at first the Greeks read ὁ ἐφανέρωθη, and that ὁ were altered into Θεός by the Nestorians; then ought we to correct the Greek Copy by the Latin, and confess there is not only no force, but not so much as any ground or colour for our Arguments. But first, it is no way probable that the Nestorians should find it in the Original ὁ, and make it Θεός, because that by so doing they had overthrow their own Assertion, which was, that God was not incarnate, nor born of the Virgin Mary; that God did not ascend unto Heaven, but Christ by the Holy Ghost remaining upon him, καὶ ὁ ἀνάλυσιν αὐτοῦ χαρισάμενον. Concil. Ephes. part. 1. cap. 17. Secondly, it is certain that they did not make this alteration, because the Catholick Greeks read it Θεός before they were such Hereticks, so called. Nestoriani à Nestorio Episcopo, Patriarcha Constantinopolitano. Aug. Hæres. Nestorius, from whom this Heresie began, was Patriarch of Constantinople after Sisinnius, Sisinnius after Articus, Articus after Nestarius, who succeeded Joannes, vulgarly called Chrysostomus. But S. Chrysostome read not ὁ, but Θεός, as appears by his Commentaries upon the place; Θεός ἐφανέρωθη ἐν Καρρί, ταῖς ἐν, ὁ δὲ μυστήριον. And S. Cyril, who by all means opposed Nestorius upon the first appearance of his Heresie, wrote two large Epistles to the Queens Pulcheria and Eudocia, in both which he maketh great use of this Text. In the first, after the repetition of the words as they are now in the Greek Copies, he proceedeth thus; Τίς ὁ ἐν Καρρί φανερωθείς; ἢ δῆλον, ὅτι πᾶσι τῇ πᾶντος ὁ ἐκ Θεοῦ πατρός λόγος. ἔγω γὰρ ἔσμαι μέγα τὸ ὁ εὐσεβείας μυστήριον, Θεός ἐφανέρωθη ἐν Καρρί. Wherefore in S. Paul he read Θεός God, and took that God to be the Word. In the second, repeating the same Text verbatim, he maketh it thus against Nestorius; Εἰ Θεός ὃν ὁ λόγος ἐνανθρωπήσας λέγεται, καὶ ὁ δὲ πᾶσι μεθίς τὸ ὅτι Θεός, ἀλλ' ἐν οἷς τῷ αὐτῷ διαμένον, μέγα δὲ τότε καὶ ὁμολογούμενος μέγα ὅτι τὸ ὁ εὐσεβείας μυστήριον. οἱ δὲ ἄνθρωποι νοήται κοινῶς ὁ Χριστός, πῶς ἐν Καρρί ἐφανέρωται; καὶ τοι πῶς ἔχ' ἅπασιν ἐναργίς, ὅτι πᾶς ἄνθρωπος ἐν Καρρί τε ὅτι, καὶ ἐκ ἀνέτερας ὁράωται; And in the explanation of his second Anathematism he maketh use of no other Text but this to prove the Hypostatical Union, giving it this gloss or exposition. Τί ὅτι τὸ ἐφανέρωθη ἐν Καρρί; ταῖς ἐν, γάρ τὸ ἐκ Θεοῦ πατρός λόγος, &c. The same he urgeth in his Scholion de Unigeniti incarnatione. So also Theodoret contemporary with S. Cyril: Θεός γὰρ ὃν καὶ Θεός ἔσται, καὶ ἀόρατον ἔχον καὶ ὄν, δῆλον ἅπασιν ἐνανθρωπήσας ἐξήμετο, σαφῶς δὲ ἡμᾶς διὰ τούτων ἐδίδαξεν, ἐν Καρρί γὰρ τῷ Θεῷ ἐν φανερωθῆναι ὄν. Thirdly, Hincmarus does not say that the Nestorians put Θεός into the Greek Text, but that he which put it in was cast out of his Bishoprick for a Nestorian. His words are these: Quidam nimirum ipsas Scripturas verbis inlicitis imposituraverunt; sicut Macedonius Constantinopolitanus Episcopus, qui ab Anastasio imperatore ideo à Civitate expulsus legitur, quoniam falsavit Evangelia, et illum Apostoli locum ubi dicit, quod apparuit in carne, justificatum est in spiritu, per cognationem Græcarum literarum O in Θ hoc modo mutando falsavit. Ubi enim habuit Qui, hoc est OS monosyllabum Græcum, litera mutata O in Θ vertit; et fecit ΘΣ, id est ut esset, Deus apparuit per carnem. Quapropter tanquam Nestorianus fuit expulsus. Hincmar. Opusc. 55 c. 18. Now whereas Hincmarus says expulsus legitur, we read not in Euagrius, or the Excerpta of Theodorus, or in Joannes Malala, that Macedonius was cast out of his Bishoprick for any such falsation. It is therefore probable that he had it from Liberatus, a Deacon of the Church of Carthage, who wrote a Breviary, collected partly out of the Ecclesiastical Histories and Acts of the Councils partly out of the relations of such men as he thought fit to believe, extant in the fourth Tome of the Councils. In which, chap. 19. we have the same relation, only with this difference, that O is not turned into Θ, but into Ω; and so OS becomes not ΘΣ, but ΩΣ. So that first the Greek Copies are not said to have read it ὁ, but ὁς, and so not to have relation to the mystery, but to the person of Christ; and therefore this makes nothing for the Vulgar Latin. Secondly, whereas Hincmarus says there was but one letter changed, no such mutation can of OS make ΘΣ, it may ΩΣ, as we read in Liberatus; and then this is nothing to the Greek Text. Thirdly, Macedonius was no Nestorian, but Anastasius an Eutychian, and he ejected him not as he did other Catholick Bishops under the pretence of Nestorianism, but for other reasons. Howsoever Macedonius could not falsify all the Greek Copies, when as well those which were before his time, as those which were written since all acknowledge Θεός. And if he had been ejected for substituting Θεός, without question Anastasius would have taken care for the restoring ὁς, which we find not in any Copy. It remaineth therefore that the Nestorians did not falsify the Text by reading Θεός ἐφανέρωθη, but that the ancient Greek Fathers read it so; and consequently, being the Greek is the Original, this Lesson must be acknowledged Authentical.*

Acts 20. 28.

Again, S. Paul speaketh thus to the Elders of the Church of Ephesus; Take heed unto your selves, and to all the flock over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. In these words this doctrinal Proposition is clearly contained, God hath purchased the Church with his own blood. For there is no other word either in or near the Text which can by any Grammatical construction be joyned with the Verb, except the Holy Ghost, to whom the Predicate is repugnant, both in respect of the act, or our Redemption, and of the means, the Blood.

Blood. If then the Holy Ghost hath not purchased the Church; if he hath not blood to shed for our Redemption, and *without bloodshed there is no remission*; if there be no other word to which, according to the literal construction, the act of purchasing can be applied; if the name of God, most frequently joined to his * *Church*, be immediately and properly applicable by all rules of Syntax to the Verb which followeth it: then is it of necessity to be received as the subject of this Proposition, then is this to be embraced as infallible Scripture-truth, God hath purchased the Church with his own blood. But this God may and must be understood of *Christ*: it may, because he hath; it must, because no other person which is called God hath so purchased the Church. ^a *We were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, but with the precious blood of Christ.* With this price were we bought; and therefore it may well be said, that *Christ* our God hath purchased us with his own blood. But no other person which is, or is called, God, can be said so to have purchased us, because it is an act belonging properly to the Mediatorship; and *there is but one Mediatour between God and men*: and the Church is ^b *sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.* Nor can the expression of this act, peculiar to the Son, be attributed to the Father, because this blood signifieth death; and though the Father be omnipotent, and can do all things, yet he cannot die. And though it might be said that he purchased us, because he gave his Son to be a ransom for us, yet it cannot be said that he did it *by his own blood*; for then it would follow, that he gave not his Son, or that the Son and the Father were the same Person. Beside, it is very observable, that this particular phrase of *his own blood*, is in the Scripture put by way of opposition to the blood of || another: and howsoever we may attribute the Acts of the Son unto the Father; because sent by him; yet we cannot but acknowledge that the blood and death was of another than the Father. ^c *Not by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place*: and whereas ^d *the High-priest entered every year with the blood of others, Christ appeared once to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.* He then which purchased us wrought it by his own blood, as an High-priest opposed to the *Aaronical*, who made atonement by the blood of others. But the Father taketh no Priestly office, neither could he be opposed to the legal Priest, as not dying himself, but giving another. Wherefore wheresoever the Father and the Son are described together as working the Salvation of man, the blood by which it is wrought is attributed to the Son, not to the Father: as when S. Paul speaketh of the *redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness*; his, that is, *his own righteousness*, hath reference to God the Father; but his, that is, *his own blood*, must be referred to *Christ* the Son. When he glorifieth the God and Father of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, attributing unto him, that he hath blessed, elected, predestinated, adopted, accepted us, made known unto us the mystery of his will, and gathered us together in one; in the midst of this acknowledgment he brings in ^e *the beloved in whom we have redemption through his blood*, as that which cannot be attri-

* τὸ ἐκκλη-
σίαν τοῦ Θεοῦ.
For though the
Church be pro-
perly the Church
of Christ, Matt.
16. 18. Col. 1.
24. and in the
plural we read
once αἱ ἐκκλη-
σίαι τοῦ Χριστοῦ,
Rom. 16. 16. as
we do of the
Churches of
God, 1 Cor. 1. 1.
16. 2 Thess. 1. 4.
and 1 Thess. 2.
14. yet ἡ ἐκ-
κλησία τοῦ Θεοῦ
is frequently u-
sed; as 1 Cor.
1. 2. & 10. 32.
and 15. 9. and
11. 22. 2 Cor.
1. 1. 1 Tim. 3.
5. 15. but ἡ ἐκ-
κλησία τοῦ Χρι-
στοῦ not once na-
med. And there-
fore we have no
reason to alier it
in this Text, or
to phrase it first
written χριστοῦ,
and then made Θεοῦ,
when it is so
often written
Θεοῦ, not Χριστοῦ.
Some MSS. as
the Alexandri-
an, Cantabrigi-
an, and New
Coll. MSS. read
it τοῦ Κυρίου
and the Interpreter of
Irenæus regere
Ecclesiæ Domini,
1. 3. c. 14.
Others represent
Κυρίου & Θεοῦ,
followed by the
Arabick Inter-
preter; which
makes not at all
against our Ar-
gument; but, be-
cause in this par-
ticular unusual,

not like to be true. The Syriack translating it Christi, (ܕܡܝܢܕܡܝܢܐ not Domino, as it is in the Latine Translation) gives rather an Exposition than a Version. ^a 1 Pet. 1. 18, 19. ^b Heb. 10. 10. || ^c *Ἰδὼν αἷμα* is opposed to *αἷμα ἰλλότερον*. And therefore it is observable that the Author of the Racovian Catechism, in his Answer to this place of Scripture, doth never make the least mention of *ἰδὼν* or proprium, but only affirms that the blood of Christ may be called the blood of God the Father; & totidem verbis did Socinus answer to Wickus before, but in his whole Answer concealed the force of *ἰδὼν*, whereas the strength of our Argument lies in those words, *διὰ τοῦ ἰδὼν αἵματος*, or, as the Alexandrian MS. and one mentioned by Beza, *διὰ τοῦ αἵματος τοῦ ἰδὼν*. ^d Heb. 9. 12. ^e Verse 25, 26. ^f Rom. 3. 25. ^g *Ὁν παρὰ τὸ ὅτι Θεοῦ ἰλαστικόν διὰ τῆς πίστεως ὅτι τὰ αὐτοῦ αἷμα*, *ὡς ἔνδεον* *ζην τὸ δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ*. ^h Eph. 1. 6, 7.

buted to the Father. *Christ* hath blessed us; and the Apostle saith, the Fa-
 ther hath blessed us: which is true, because *he sent his Son to bless us*. *Christ*
 hath made known unto us the will of his Father; and the Apostle saith,
 the Father *hath made known unto us the mystery of his will*; because he sent
 his Son to reveal it. *Christ* hath delivered us; and the Father is said to
 deliver us from the power of darkness: not that we are twice delivered, but
 because the Father delivereth us by his Son. And thus these general acts are
 familiarly attributed to them both; but still a difference must be observed
 and acknowledged in the means or manner of the performance of these acts.
 For though 'tis true that the Father and the Son revealed to us the will of
 God; yet it is not true that the Father revealed it by himself to us; but
 that the Son did so, it is. They both deliver us from sin and death: but the
 Son gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us; the Father is not, can-
 not be, said to have given himself, but his Son: and therefore the Apostle
 giveth thanks unto the Father, who hath delivered us from the power of dark-
 ness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son, in whom we have
 redemption through his blood. Now this blood is not only the blood of the
 new Covenant, and consequently of the Mediator: but the nature of this
 Covenant is such, that it is also a Testament, and therefore the blood must
 be the blood of the Testator; for where a Testament is, there must also of ne-
 cessity be the death of the Testator. But the Testator which died is not, can-
 not be, the Father, but the Son; and consequently, the blood is the blood
 of the Son, not of the Father. It remaineth therefore that God, who pur-
 chased the Church with his own blood, is not the Father of our Lord *Jesus*
Christ, or any other which is called God, but only *Jesus Christ* the Son of
 God, and God. And thus have I proved the first of the three Assertions,
 that the name of *God* absolutely taken and placed subjectively, is sometimes
 to be understood of *Christ*.

The second, That the name of *God* invested by way of excellency with an
 Article is attributed in the Scriptures unto *Christ*, may be thus made good. He
 which is called *Emmanuel* is named *God* by way of Excellency; for that name,
 saith *S. Matthew*, being interpreted, is *God with us*, and in that interpretation
 the Greek || Article is prefixed. But *Christ* is called *Emmanuel*; ² that it might
 be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Behold, a Virgin
 shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name *Emma-
 nuel*. Therefore he is that *God with us*, which is expressed by way of Excel-
 lency, and distinguished from all other who are any way honoured with that
 name. For it is a vain imagination to think that *Christ* is called *Emmanuel*, but
 that he is not what he is called: as *Moses* built an Altar, and called the name
 of it *Jehovah Nissi*, and *Gideon* another called *Jehovah Shalom*; and yet nei-
 ther Altar was *Jehovah*: as *Jerusalem* was called the Lord our righteousness, and
 yet that City was not the Lord. Because these two notions, which are con-
 joined in the name *Emmanuel*, are severally true of *Christ*. First, he is *Em-
 manu*, that is, *with us*, for he hath dwelt among us: and when he parted from
 the earth, he said to his Disciples, *I am with you alway, even to the end of the*
world. Secondly, he is *El*, and that name was given him, as the same Pro-
 phet testified, For unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given; and his name
 shall be called Wonderful, Counsellour, the mighty God. He then who is both
 properly called *El*, that is, *God*, and is also really *Emmanu*, that is, *with us*, he
 must infallibly be that *Emmanuel* who is *God with us*. Indeed if the name
Emmanuel were to be interpreted by way of a proposition, *God is with us*, as
 the Lord our righteousness, and the Lord is there, must be understood where
 they are the names of *Jerusalem*; then should it have been the name not of
Christ,

Christ, but of his Church : and if we under the Gospel had been called so, it could have received no other interpretation in reference to us. But being it is not ours, but our Saviour's name, it bears no kind of similitude with those objected appellations, and is as properly and directly to be attributed to the *Messias* as the name of *Jesus*. Wherefore it remaineth that Christ be acknowledged God with us, according to the Evangelical Interpretation, with an expression of that excellency which belongeth to the Supreme Deity.

Again, He to whom S. *Thomas* said, *My Lord and my God*, or rather, *The Lord of me and the God of me*, he is that God before whose name the Greek Article is prefixed, which they require, by way of excellency. But S. *Thomas* spake these words * to Christ. For *Jesus* spake unto *Thomas*, and *Thomas* answered and said unto him, *My Lord and my God*. And in these || words he made confession of his Faith; for our Saviour replied, *Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed*. And let him be the Lord of me, and the God of me, who was the Lord and the God of an Apostle.

John 20. 23.

* Indeed it hath been answered, that these words are not to be referred to Christ, but to God the Father. So Theodor. Mopsuc-

sternus in his Commentary on S. *John*; Thomas quidem, cum sic credidisset, Dominus meus & Deus meus dicit, non ipsum Dominum & Deum dicens, (non enim resurrectionis scientia docebat & Deum esse eum qui resurrexit) sed quasi pro miraculoso facto Deum collaudat. Syn. V. Colat. 4. As if Thomas had intended only to have praised God for raising Christ. But first it is plain that Thomas answered Christ; secondly, that he spake unto him, that is, to Christ, and consequently that the words which he spake belong to Christ; thirdly, that the words are a Confession of his Faith in Christ, as our Saviour doth acknowledge. And whereas Francisus Davidis did object, that in a Latin Testament he found, not & dixit ei, but & dixit without ei, it is sufficiently discomfited by Socinus in his Epistle, affirming that all the Greek and Latin Copies had it, except that one which he had found: and therefore the omission must be imputed to the negligence of the Printer. || Ο κύριός μου & ὁ Θεός μου. Either in these words there is an Ellipsis of ἡ σὺ, Thou art my Lord, thou art my God; or an Antiptosis, the Nominative Case used for the Vocative, as Ἐλὰζ, Ἐλὰζ, ὁ Θεός μου. ὁ Θεός μου Mark 15. 34. Ἀλλὰ ὁ πατήρ, Mark 14. 36. and Χάρις ὁ βασιλεὺς ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς, John 19. 3. If it be an Ellipsis of the Verb εἶ, so frequent in the Scriptures, and of the Person sufficiently understood in the preceding Pronoun; then it is evident that ὁ Θεός is attributed unto Christ, for then S. Thomas said unto him, Thou art ὁ Θεός μου. If it be an Antiptosis, though the construction require not a Verb, yet the signification virtually requireth as much, which is equivalent: for he acknowledged him as much God while he calleth him so, as if he did affirm him to be so. Neither can it be objected that the Article ὁ serveth only in the place of εἶ, as signifying that the Nominative is to be taken for the Vocative case; because the Nominative may as well stand vocatively without an Article, as Ἰωάννης, ἡς Δαδ δ, Matt. 1. 20. and Ἐλέησον ἡμᾶς. Κύριε, ἡς Δ εἶδ, Matt. 20. 30. 31. and therefore when the Vocative is invested with an Article, it is as considerable as in a Nominative. And being these words were an expression of the Apostle's Faith, as Christ understood and approved them, they must contain in them, virtually at least, a Proposition; because no act of our Faith can be expressed, where the Object is not at least a virtual Proposition. And in that Proposition, ὁ Θεός must be the Predicate, and Christ, to whom these words are spoken, must also be the Subject. It cannot therefore be avoided, but that S. Thomas did attribute the name of God to our Saviour with an Article. Indeed to me there is no doubt but S. Thomas in these words did make as true and real a Confession of his Faith concerning the Person of Christ, as S. Peter did, when he answered and said, Thou art Christ, the Son of the living God, Matt. 16. 16. and consequently, that ὁ κύριός, and ὁ Θεός do as properly belong unto him, as S. Peter's ὁ Χριστός and ὁ ὕιός. As therefore Christ said to his Disciples, Vos vocatis me ὁ διδάσκαλος, & ὁ κύριός, & bene dicitis, sum etenim, John 13. 13. so he might have replied to Thomas, You call me ὁ κύριός and ὁ Θεός, and you say well, for I am so. As for the Objection of Socinus, that though Θεός be here spoken of Christ, and that with an Article ὁ, yet that Article is of no force because of the following Pronoun μου* it is most groundless: for the Article ὁ cannot have relation to the following Pronoun μου, ἐπὶ τοῦ ἡ ἀποκριθεὶς ἀνταποκρίσας ἡμῶν ἀφ' ὧν ἐν ἡλικίᾳ πᾶσι ἐν ἡλικίᾳ ἀφ' ὧν πᾶσι λέγεται, as that great Critick Apollonius Alexandrinus observes, l. 1. de Syntaxi. 30. And if for μου it were ὁ ἐμός, yet even that Article would belong to Θεός, for in these words, ὁ Θεός ὁ ἐμός, neither Article belongs to ἐμός, but both to Θεός: for, as the same Critick observes in the same case, τὸ δὲ ἀφ' ὧν λέγεται ὁ ἐμός ἀναρρέται· ὁ ἀφ' ὧν πᾶσι, ὁ πατήρ ὁ ἐμός, καὶ ὁ κύριός μου, τὸ ἐπ' ἐμῶν ἀφ' ὧν λέγεται ὁ ἐμός. So that if ὁ Θεός be the supreme God, then ὁ Θεός μου must be my supreme God: as when David speaks to God, ὁ Θεός, ὁ Θεός μου, πρὸς σὺ ὁρθεῖς, Psal. 62. 1. the latter is of great importance as the former. So again Psal. 42. 5. Ἐξομολογήσομαι ὁ καθαῖρος ὁ Θεός, ὁ Θεός μου and 49. 3. ὁ Θεός ἐμφανὴς ἦν, ὁ Θεός ἡμῶν and 70. 13. ὁ Θεός μὴ μακρυῖς ἐστὶ ἐμῶν, ὁ Θεός μου. I dare not therefore say to any person that he is ὁ Θεός μου, except I do believe that he is ὁ Θεός. Wherefore I conclude that the words of S. Thomas, ὁ κύριός μου & ὁ Θεός μου, are as fully and highly significative as those of David, Πρέσβεις τῇ φωνῇ τῇ θεῷ μου, ὁ βασιλεὺς μου & ὁ Θεός μου, Psal. 5. 2. or those, ὁ Θεός μου & ὁ κύριός μου, ἡς τῷ δούλω μου, Psal. 35. 23. or those, τὰ θυσιάζεις σὺ, κύριε ἡμῶν, ὁ βασιλεὺς μου & ὁ Θεός μου, Psal. 84. 3. or those of S. John in the Revelation, as they lie in the Alexandrian and Complutensian Copies, Ἀγία ἡ, ὁ κύριός & ὁ Θεός ἡμῶν ὁ ἀγιός, λαβὼν, &c. or that lastly in the most ancient Hymn, Κύριε ὁ Θεός, ὁ ἀμνὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ—ἐλέησον ἡμᾶς.

Nor have we only their acquired testimony of Christ's supreme Divinity, but also an addition of verity asserting that Supremacy. For he is not only termed *the God*, but, for a farther certainty, *the true God*: and the same Apostle, who said the Word was God, lest any cavil should arise by any omission of an Article, though so frequently neglected by all, even the most accurate Authors, hath also assured us that he is the true God. For, we know, saith he, *that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may*

1 John 5. 20

know him that is true : and we are in him that is true , even in his Son Jesus Christ. || This is the true God, and eternal life. As therefore we read in the Acts, of the ^a Word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ ; he is Lord of all ; where it is acknowledged that the Lord of all is by the Pronoun * he joynd unto Jesus Christ, the immediate, not unto God, the remote antecedent : so likewise here the true God is to be referred unto Christ, who stands next unto it, not unto the Father, spoken of indeed in the Text, but at a distance. There is no reason alledged why these last words should not be referred to the Son of God, but only this, that in Grammatical construction they may be ascribed to the Father. As, when ^b another King arose which knew not Joseph, the same dealt subtilly with our kindred ; the same referreth us not to Joseph, but to the King of Egypt. Whereas, if nothing else can be objected but a possibility in respect of the Grammatical construction, we may as well say that Joseph dealt subtilly with his kindred as the King of Egypt ; for whatsoever the incongruity be in History, it makes no Solæcism in the Syntax. Wherefore being Jesus Christ is the immediate Antecedent to which the Relative may properly be referred ; being the Son of God is he of whom the Apostle chiefly speaketh ; being this is rendred as a reason why we are in him that is true, by being in his Son, to wit, because that Son is the true God ; being in the language of S. John the constant Title of our Saviour is eternal life ; being all these reasons may be drawn out of the Text it self, why the Title of the true God should be attributed to the Son, and no one reason can be raised from thence why it should be referred to the Father : I can conclude no less, than that our Saviour is the true God, so styled in the Scriptures by way of eminency, with an Article prefixed, as the * first Christian Writers which immediately followed the Apostles did both speak and write.

* Δὲ ὁ ζῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἡμεῖς ἐν αὐτῷ. Ignat. Epist. ad Smyrn.

Ἐν θελήματι τοῦ Πατρὸς, καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἡμῶν. Id. Ep. ad Eph. Ὁ ὃς Θεὸς ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστὸς ἐκυφορήθη ὑπὸ Μαρίας. Ib. Ὁ ὃς Θεὸς ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς ἐν ἡμεῖς ὡς μάλλον φαίνεται. Ep. ad Rom. Τὸ Θεὸν Λόγον τὰ λογικά πλάσματα ἡμεῖς. Cl. Al. adv. Gentes. And it was well observed by the Author of the Μικρὰ Λαβύρινθος, written about the beginning of the third Century, that not only the ancient Fathers before him, as Justin, Miltiades, Tatianus, Clemens, Irenæus, Melito, &c. did speak of Christ as God, but that the Hymns also penned by Christians from the beginning did express Christ's Divinity. Παλμοὶ ὅσοι καὶ ὁδοὶ ἀδελφῶν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς ὑπὸ πνεύματι καὶ λόγῳ τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ Χριστοῦ ὑμνεῖσι θεολογούμενοι. And the Epistle of Pliny to Trajan testifies the same, Quod essent soliti stato die ante lucem convenire, carmenq; Christo quasi Deo dicere.

But, thirdly, were there no such particular place in which the Article were expressed, yet shall we find such Adjuncts fixed to the name of God when attributed unto Christ as will prove equivalent to an Article, or whatsoever may express the supreme Majesty. As when S. Paul doth magnifie the Jews out of whom, as concerning the flesh, Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever, Amen. First, It is evident that Christ is called || God, even he who came of the Jews, though not as he came of them, that is, according to the flesh, which is here * distinguished from his Godhead. Secondly, He is so called God, as not to be any of the many Gods, but the one supreme or most high God ; || for he is God over all. Thirdly, he hath also added the title of blessed ; which of it self

Rom. 9. 5.

|| Though some would leave God out of the Text, upon this pretence, because S. Cyprian, in lib. 2. adv. Ju-

deas, citing this place, leaves it out. But that must needs be by the negligence of some of the Scribes, as is evident. First, because Manutius and Morellius found the word Deus in their Copies, and both the MSS. which Pamelius used acknowledge it. Secondly, because S. Cyprian produceth the Text to prove quod Deus Christus ; and reckoneth it among the rest in which he is called expressly God. Thirdly, because Tertullian, whose disciple S. Cyprian professed himself, and both so read it, and so use it. Solum autem Christum potero Deum dicere, sicut idem Apostolus, Ex quibus Christus, qui est (inquit) Deus super omnia benedictus in ævum omne. Adv. Præeam. And again in the same Book ; Hunc & Paulus conspexit, nec tamen Patrem vidit. Nonne, inquit, vidi Jesum ? Christum autem & ipsum Deum cognovimus : Quorum Patres, & ex quibus Christus secundum carnem, qui est per (vel super) omnia Deus benedictus in ævum. Novatianus de Trinitate useth the same Argument. And another ancient Author very expressly ; Rogo te, Deum credis esse Filium, an non ? Sine dubio, responsurus es, Deum ; qui etsi negare volueris, sanctis Scripturis convinceris, dicente Apostolo, Ex quibus Christus secundum carnem, qui est super omnia Deus benedictus in secula. So also S. Aug. Non solum Pater Deus est, sicut etiam omnes Hæretici concedunt, sed etiam Filius ; quod, velint noli, coguntur fateri, dicente Apostolo, Qui est super omnia Deus benedictus in secula. De Trin. l. 2. c. 13. & contra

Faustum

Faustum l. 16. c. 15. As for the Objection, that S. Chrysostome doth not signifie in his Commentaries that he read $\Theta\epsilon\acute{o}\varsigma$ in the Text: I answer that neither does he signifie that he read $\delta\ \delta\theta\eta\ \pi\acute{\alpha}\nu\tau\omega\upsilon$, for in his exposition he passeth over wholly $\delta\ \delta\theta\eta\ \pi\acute{\alpha}\nu\tau\omega\upsilon\ \Theta\epsilon\acute{o}\varsigma$: but it doth not follow that he read not $\delta\ \delta\theta\eta\ \pi\acute{\alpha}\nu\tau\omega\upsilon$ in the Text. But when he repeats the words of the Apostle, he agrees wholly with the Greek Text, $\delta\ \omega\upsilon\ \delta\theta\eta\ \pi\acute{\alpha}\nu\tau\omega\upsilon\ \Theta\epsilon\acute{o}\varsigma\ \epsilon\upsilon\lambda\omicron\gamma\eta\tau\acute{o}\varsigma$: and Theodorer, who lived not long after him, doth not only acknowledge the words, but give a full Exposition of them: $\text{Ἡμεῖς ὡς τὸ καὶ σάρκα παρομένη παροδηλωταὶ τὸ δευτέρου Χριστὸν ἡ θεότης. ἀλλ' αὐτὸς ἐν τῷ περιμῶνι ἡμεῖς, τὸ ἡνωμένον ἐν ἀνθρώπῳ. Δαδίδ καὶ σάρκα, ἐπὶ ἡμεῖς, τὸ ἐκείνῳ. ὡς δεῖ ἐν δυνάμει. ὅτις ἐνταῦθα ὡπὼν τὸ καὶ σάρκα, περιεῖκε τὸ, ὡν ὅτι πάντων θεὸς εὐλογητὸς εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας.$ As for the omission of Deus in S. Hilary on the Psalms, it must of necessity be attributed to the negligence of the Scribe, not to the reading of the Father. For how he read it he hath clearly expressed in his books De Trinitate: Non ignorat Paulus Christum Deum, dicens, Quorum sunt Patres, & ex quibus Christus, qui est super omnia Deus. Non hic creatura in Deum deputatur, sed creaturarum Deus est, qui super omnia Deus est. The pretence therefore of Erasmus from the Fathers is vain; and as vain is that of Grotius from the Syriac Translation, which hath in it the name of God expressly, as well as all the Copies of the Original, and all the rest of the Translations, $\text{כִּי עַל כָּל הָאֱלֹהִים הוּא אֵלֵינוּ}$. * τὸ καὶ σάρκα opposed unto τὸ καὶ πνεῦμα : as Rom. 1. 3. where καὶ σάρκα is used without an Article, because καὶ πνεῦμα , to which it is opposed, followeth, and so the opposition is of it self apparent. But here being καὶ πνεῦμα is not to be expressed in the following words, the Article τὸ signifying of it self a distinction or exception, sheweth that it is to be understood. || Ὁ ὡν ὅτι πάντων . Not in omnibus, as Erasmus, nor super omnes, as Beza, with reference to the Fathers, which should have been ὅτι πάντων αὐτῶν : but, as the Vulgar Translation, and the ancient Fathers before that, super omnia, ὅτι for ἐπάνω , as John 3. 31. $\text{ὁ ἄνωθεν ἐρχόμενος ἐπάνω πάντων ὅτι}$, which signifieth no less than ἡ ὕψις , the ordinary name of God, ὁ ὑψίστος , the most high; as it is taken for the supreme God by it self, Acts 7. 48. and is described, Psal. 97. 9. $\text{Ὅτι σὺ εἰ, Κύριε, ὁ ὑψίστος ὅτι πᾶσαν τὴν γῆν, ὁ ὀρθρὸς ὑψωθῆς ὑπὲρ πάντα τοὺς θεούς.}$

elsewhere signifieth the *supreme God, and was always used by the Jews to express that one God of Israel. Wherefore it cannot be conceived S. Paul should write unto the Christians, most of which then were converted Jews or Profelytes, and give unto our Saviour not only the name of God, but also add that title which they always gave unto the one God of Israel, and to none but him; except he did intend they should believe him to be the same God whom they always in that manner and under that notion had adored. As therefore the Apostle speaketh of *the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore*, of the Creator, *who is blessed for ever, Amen*; and thereby doth signifie the supreme Deity, which was so glorified by the Israelites; and doth also testify that we worship the same God under the Gospel which they did under the Law: so doth he speak of Christ in as sublime a style, *who is over all, God blessed for ever, Amen*; and thereby doth testify the equality, or rather identity, of his Deity. If we consider the scope of the Apostle, which is to magnify the Israelites by the enumeration of such privileges as belonged peculiarly to that chosen Nation, (the most eminent of which was contained in the Genealogy of our Saviour) we shall find their glory did not consist in this, that Christ at first was born of them a man, and afterwards made a God; for what great honour could accrue to them by the nativity of a man, whose Godhead is referred not to his birth, but to his death? whereas this is truly honourable, and the peculiar Glory of that Nation, that the most High God blessed for ever should take on him the seed of Abraham, and come out of the Israelites as concerning the flesh. Thus every way it doth appear, the Apostle spake of Christ as of the one eternal God.

were wont to answer, Blessed be his name for ever. Inasmuch as the Blessed one did in their Language signifie as much as the Holy one, and both, or either of them, the God of Israel. Hence are so frequent in the Rabbins, $\text{הַקדוֹשׁ בְּרוּךְ הוּא}$ the Holy Blessed one, and הַיְיבֵן בְּרוּךְ , the Blessed one, that they are written by abbreviation, הַיְיבֵן or הַיְיבֵן ; and the infinite blessed one, בְּרוּךְ אֱלֹהִים , Blessed be God for ever, Amen, and Amen, בְּרוּךְ אֱלֹהִים , and בְּרוּךְ אֱלֹהִים . * 2 Cor. 11. 31. Rom. 1. 52.

He then who was the Word which in the beginning was with God, and was God; he whose Glory *Isaias* saw as the Glory of the God of Israel; he who is styled Alpha and Omega without any restriction or limitation; he who was truly subsisting in the form of God, and equal with him, before he was in the nature of man; he who being man is frequently called God, and that in all those ways by which the supreme Deity is expressed; He had a being before Christ was conceived by the Virgin Mary, and the being which he had was the one eternal and indivisible Divine Essence, by which he always was truly

* As Mark 14. 61. $\text{Σὺ εἶ ὁ Χριστὸς, ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ εὐλογητοῦ}$; Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? where the vulgar attribute is taken for God himself, which is usually added to the name of God; as 2 Cor. 11. 31. $\text{Ὁ θεός, ὁ ὡν εὐλογητὸς εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας}$; or to any description of him; as $\text{ἐλάττωσαν τὸν κλίσει παρὰ τὸ κλίσειν αὐτοῦ, ὅς ἐστιν εὐλογητὸς εἰς τοὺς αἰῶνας, Ἀμήν}$. And these expressions of S. Paul are consonant to the ancient custom of the Jews, who, when the Priest in the Sanctuary rehearsed the name of God;

* Δῆλον ὅτι
τὸ μᾶζον μὲν
ἐστὶ τῆς αἰτίας,
τὸ δ' ὅτι ἴσων τῆς
οὔσεως. S. Gr.
Naz. Orat. 2.
de Filio.
ⁱ John 7. 29.
| So S. August.
bath observed:
Abipso, inquit,
tuum, quia Fili-
us de Patre : &

s Deum de Deo,
antun lumen. Ad
d, Θεοῦ ἐκ Θεοῦ,
al Creeds before;
bi exer since his
τὸς, ὧς ἐκ
rtus & sapientia
ritæ apud Deum
finul una sapi-

* Ὁμοῖον ὅ, which is consubstantial, is not to be taken of a part of the Divine Essence, as if the Son were a part of the essence of the Father, and so of the same nature with him, which was the opinion of the Manichæans. Οὐκ ἔστι Ὁυαλεντῖν ὁ περὶ τοῦ τῶ ἡνιγμα τῶ Πατρὸς ἰδγ- μάτισιν· ἐστὶ δὲ Μανιχαιοί· μέρῳ οὐνοῦ.

the

the Council in opposition to them determined it, Quid est aliud cur Homousion Patri nōlunt Filium dici, nisi quia nolunt verum Dei Filium? sicut Author ipsorum Eusebius Nicomēdiensis Epistola sua prodidit, dicens, Si verum, inquit, Dei Filium & increatum dicimus, Homousion cum Patre incipimus cōfiteri. Hac cum lecta esset Epistola in Concilio Niceno, hoc verbum in Tractatu fidei posuerunt Patres, quod id viderunt adversariis esse formidini, ut tanquam evaginato ab ipsis gladio ipsorum nefandæ caput hæresis amputarent. S. Ambros. l. 3. de Fide, c. 7. De voce *ὁμοούσιον*, vide Dionys. Petav. de Trinit. l. 4. c. 6. ^a John 10. 30. * *Ἀδύνατον γὰρ τὸν θεὸν εἶπαι ἐρημον ἢ συνηκῆς ὡνιμότητι*. Damasc. l. 1. c. 8. || *Εἰ δὲ μὴ παρεργόνον ἔστιν αὐτῇ ἡ θεία εἰσα, ἀλλ' ἐρημον, καὶ αὐτοῦ, ὡς πῶς μὴ φωτίζον, καὶ πηγὴν ζωῆς*. πῶς δυνάμεθα λέγειν ἔργον αὐτὸν ἔχειν λόγον ὡς ἐκ ἀρχῆς γενέσθαι; S. Athan. Orat. 2.

The fourth Assertion followeth, That the Communication of the Divine Essence by the Father is the Generation of the Son; and Christ, who was eternally God, not from himself, but from the Father, is the eternal Son of God. That God always had a Son, appeareth by *Agur's* question in the Proverbs of Solomon; *Who hath established all the ends of the earth? what is his name? and what is his Son's name? if thou canst tell.* And it was the chief design of *Mahomet* to deny this truth, because he knew it was not otherwise possible to prefer himself before our Saviour. One Prophet may be greater than another, and *Mahomet* might perswade his credulous Disciples that he was greater than any of the sons of men; but while any one was believed to be the eternal Son of God, he knew it wholly impossible to prefer himself before him. Wherefore he frequently inculcates that blasphemy in his * Alcoran, that God hath no such Son, nor any equal with him: and his Disciples have || corrupted the Psalm of *David*, reading, (instead of, *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee*;) *Thou art my Prophet, I have educated thee.* The later * *Jews*, acknowledging the words, and the proper literal reading of them, apply them so unto *David*, as that they deny them to belong to *Christ*; and that upon no other ground, than that by such an exposition they may avoid the Christians Confession. But by the consent of the ancient *Jews*, by the interpretation of the blessed Apostles, we know these words belong to *Christ*, and in the most proper sense to him alone. ^a *For, unto which of the Angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?* as the Apostle argues. And if he had spoken them unto any other man, as they were spoken unto him, the Apostle's Argument had been none at all.

* This is often repeated there, and particularly in the last chapter but one, called Alechilas. Est ipse Deus unus Deus æternus, qui nec genuit, nec genitus est, & cui nullus est æqualis. And the Saracenic set forth by Sylburgius mention this as the first principle of Mahometanism, *Ὅτι ἑὸς θεός*

ὅτι, ποιητὴς τῆς ἑλάν, μήτε ἡγνῆθῆς, μήτε ἡγνῆσαι. And Joannes Siculus and Georgius Cedrenus relate how Mahomet gave command. *Ἐγὼ μόνον προσκυλῶν θεόν, καὶ τὸ θεῖον τιμᾶν ὡς λόγον τῷ θεῷ μὴ, ἐχὼ ὅν δέ.* And we read of his ridiculous History, that Christ, after his ascension into Heaven, was accused by God for calling himself his Son; and that he denied it, as being so named only by men without any authority from him. *Ὅτι ἀνεληνύτα τὸ θεῖον εἰς τὸν ἕραν ἡρώτησεν ὁ θεός, λέγων, Ὁ Ἰησοῦ, σὺ εἶπες τὸν λόγον τῶτον, ὅτι ὁὗς εἰμι τῷ θεῷ καὶ θεός καὶ ἀπεκρίθη Ἰησοῦς, ὅτι ἐκ ἀπονεύματι εἶδ' εὐλὸς σε. ἀλλ' εἰ ἀνθρώποις λέγουσιν ὅτι εἶπον τὸν λόγον τῶτον.* || Alfirozabadius in his Kamuz: Dictum Dei omnipotentis ad Jesum, (cui propicius sit & pacem concedat Deus) *Tu es Nabia Propheta meus, ego walladoca, fovi te; at dixerunt Christiani, Tu es Bonia, filius meus, ego walladoca, te genui.* Longe est supra hæc Deus. And to the same purpose Ebnol Allir: In Evangelio dixit Hæ, ego walladoca, i. e. educavi te; at Christiani, dcupra litera Lam altera, ipsum ei filium statuerunt. Qui longe elatus est super ea quæ dicunt. Whereas then the Apostles attributed those words of the Psalm to Christ, the Mahometans, who could not deny but they were spoken of the Messias, were forced to corrupt the Text: and for that they pretend the eminency and excellency of the Godhead, as if it were beneath the Majesty of God to beget a Son, or be a Father. And indeed whosoever would bring in another Prophet greater than Christ, as he was than Moses, must do so. * I say, the later *Jews* so attribute those words to David, as if they belonged not to the Messias; but the ancient *Jews* understood them of the Christ: as appeareth not only out of those places in the Evangelists where the Christ and the Son of God are synonymous; but also by the testimony of the later *Jews* themselves, who have confessed no less. So Rabbi David Kimchi in the end of his Commentaries on the second Psalm, *וְיִשׁ מְפָרְשִׁים וְהַבּוֹמֵר עַל נֹג וּמִנֹּג וְהַמְּשִׁיחַ הַיָּא מֶלֶךְ הַמְּשִׁיחַ וְכֵן פִּירֵשׁ רַבּוֹתֵינוּ וְרַבּוֹתֵינוּ* Some interpret this Psalm of Gog and Magog, and the anointed is Messias the King; and so our Doctors of happy memory have expounded it. And Rabbi Solomon Jarchi not only confesseth that the ancient Rabbins did interpret it of the Messias, but shews the reason why the later *Jews* understood it rather of David, that thereby they might the better answer the Argument of the Christians deduced from thence: *רַבּוֹתֵינוּ דְּרִשׁוּ אֶת הָעֵנִי עַל מֶלֶךְ הַמְּשִׁיחַ וּדְפִי מִשְׁטָו וְעוֹל תְּשׁוּבַת הַמִּינִים נִנֵּן לְפִתְרוֹ עַל* our Doctors have expounded it of the Messias: but as to the literal sense, and for the answering Hereticks, (that is, in their Language, Christians) it is rather to be interpreted of David in his own person. ^a Heb. 1. 5.

Now that the Communication of the Divine Essence by the Father (which we have already proved) was the true and proper Generation by which he hath begotten the Son, will thus appear: because the most proper Generation which we know, is nothing else but a vital production of another in the same nature,

nature, with a full representation of him from whom he is produced. Thus Man begetteth a son, that is, produceth another man of the same humane nature with himself; and this production, as a perfect generation, becomes the foundation of the relation of Paternity in him that produceth, and of Filiation in him that is produced. Thus after the prolific benediction, *Be fruitful and multiply, Adam begat in his own likeness, after his image*: and by the continuation of the same blessing, the succession of humane generations hath been continued. This then is the known * confession of all men, that a Son is nothing but another produced by his Father in the same nature with him. But God the Father hath communicated to the Word the same Divine essence by which he is God; and consequently he is of the same nature with him, and thereby the perfect image and similitude of him, and therefore his proper Son: In humane generations we may conceive two kinds of similitude; one in respect of the internal nature, the other in reference to the external form or figure. The former similitude is essential and necessary; it being impossible a man should beget a son, and that son not be by nature a man: the latter accidental; not only sometimes the child representing this, sometimes the other parent, but also oftentimes neither. || The similitude then, in which the propriety of generation is preserved, is that which consisteth in the identity of nature: and this Communication of the Divine essence by the Father to the Word is evidently a sufficient foundation of such a similitude; from whence *Christ* is called *a the image of God, the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person*.

παραχρᾶν. || Etiam si filius hominis, homo, in quibusdam similis, in quibusdam sit dissimilis patri; tamen quia ejusdem substantiæ est, negari verus filius non potest, & quia verus est filius, negari ejusdem substantiæ non potest. *Maximin. c. 13. 2 Cor. 4. 4. Heb. 1. 3.*

Nor is this Communication of the Divine essence only the proper generation of the Son, but we must acknowledge it far more proper than any natural generation of the Creature, not only because it is in a more perfect manner, but also because the identity of nature is most perfect. As in the Divine essence we acknowledge all the perfections of the Creature, subtracting all the imperfections which adhere unto them here in things below: so in the Communication we must look upon the reality without any kind of defect, blemish, or impurity. In humane generation the son is begotten in the same nature with the father, which is performed by derivation, or decision of part of the substance of the parent: but this decision includeth imperfection, because it supposeth a substance divisible, and consequently corporeal; whereas the essence of God is incorporeal, spiritual and indivisible; and therefore his nature is really communicated, not by derivation or decision, but by a total and plenary communication. In natural conceptions the father necessarily precedeth the son, and begetteth one younger than himself: for being Generation is for the perpetuity of the Species; where the Individuals successively fail, it is sufficient if the parent can produce another to live after him, and continue the existence of his nature, when his person is dissolved. But this presupposeth the imperfection of mortality, wholly to be removed, when we speak of him who inhabiteth eternity: the essence which God always had without beginning, without beginning he did communicate; being always Father, as always God: * Animals, when they come to the perfection of nature, then become prolific; in God eternal perfection sheweth his eternal fecundity. And that which is most remarkable,

Euseb. de Pr. p. Evang. ex Plotino. Ἀνθρώπων μὲν γὰρ ἴσον τὸ ἐκ χρόνου γινῆναι, διὰ τὸ ἀτελὲς τὸ φύσις. θεῶν δὲ ἄλθον τὸ γέννημα, διὰ τὸ ἀτελὲς τὸ φύσις. *S. Athan. Orat. 2.* This was it which so much troubled the Arians, when they heard the Catholics constantly asserting, ἀπὸ θεός, ἀπὸ υἱός. ἀμα πατὴρ, ἀμα υἱός.

Gen. 1. 28. and 5. 3.

* Κοινὸν ἡ ἀρχὴ
καὶ τὰ πᾶσι καὶ αὐτῷ
τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ
μολόγημα, ὡς
ἀπὸ αὐτοῦ τὸ αὐ-
τοῦ δὲ τὸ κα-
τασκευασθῆναι ἐκ
καὶ οὐσίας. *Phot.*
Ep. 1. This is
in the language
of Aristotle, τὸ
ποιῆσαι ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ
ὅτι αὐτὸς ζῶν,
καὶ ζῶν, οὐδὲν
ἢ οὐδὲν. *And*
S. Basil. lib. 2.
cont. Eunomi-
um; καὶ ἵνα μὴ
γὰρ δὲ τὸ ἐξ ἑ-
αυτοῦ τὸ κατὰ
τὸ φύσιν καὶ
οὐσίαν * ἀρχὴ καὶ
οὐσίαν. *S. Aug. contra*

* Πάντα ὅσα
ἦν τελέα καὶ
ἐκ τῶν καὶ
τέλειον ἀπὸ καὶ
ἀλθον καὶ οὐσίαν.

Socinians make very much of this Notion, and apply it so unto Christ, as that thereby they might avoid all necessity of an eternal generation. So the Racvian Catechism: Causa cur Christo ista attributa (sc. proprium & unigenitum Dei Filium esse) competant, hæc est; quod inter omnes Dei filios & præcipuus sit, & Deo Charissimus: quemadmodum Isaac, quia Abrahamo charissimus & hæc exstiterit, unigenitus vocatus est, Heb. 11. 17. licet fratrem Ismaelem habuerit; & Solomon unigenitus coram matre sua, licet plures ex eadem matre fratres fuerint, 1 Paral. 3. 1, 2, 3, &c. And that this might be applied to the interpretation of the Creed, Schlingius hath inserted it as a material Observation; Nam hic unicus seu unigena filius nominatur, qui ceteris longe charior est Patri, longeque præstantior; and confirms the Interpretation with those two testimonies concerning Isaac and Solomon. But certainly the Observation of theirs is vain, or what else they say is false. For if Christ be called the Son of God, because conceived by the Holy Ghost, and none else was ever so conceived, then is he the only-begotten by virtue of his generation. And if so, then is he not the Only-begotten as Isaac and Solomon were, that is, by the affection and prelation of their Parents. Or if Christ were the Only-begotten as Isaac and Solomon were, then was he not conceived after a singular manner, for the brethren of Solomon no way differed from him in their generation. It is plain therefore that this Interpretation was invented, that, when all the rest should fail, they might stick to this,

ticks, who take the *Only-begotten* to be nothing else but the most beloved of all the Sons; because Isaac was called the *only Son* of Abraham, when we know that he had Ishmael beside, and Solomon said to be the *only-begotten before his Mother*, when David had other Children even by the Mother of Solomon. For the *only-begotten* and the *most beloved* are not the same; the one having the nature of a cause in respect of the other, and the same cannot be cause and effect to it self. For though it be true, that the only Son is the beloved Son; yet with this order, that he is therefore beloved because the only, not therefore the only because beloved. Although therefore Christ be the *Only-begotten* and the beloved Son of God, yet we must not look upon these two Attributes as synonymous, or equally significant of the same thing, but as one depending on the other, Unigeniture being the foundation of his singular love. Beside, Isaac was called the only Son of Abraham for some other reason than because he was singularly beloved of Abraham; for he was the only Son of the free Woman, the only Son of the promise made to Abraham, which was first this, *Sarah shall have a Son*, and then, *In Isaac shall thy seed be called*. So that Isaac may well be called the only Son of Abraham in reference to the promise, as the Apostle speaks expressly; *By faith Abraham when he was tried offered up Isaac, and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten Son*. Avoiding therefore these two expositions, as far short of the true notion of the *only begotten*, we must look upon it in the most proper, full and significant sense, as signifying a Son so begotten as none other is, was, or can be: so as the term restrictive *only* shall have relation not only to the * Father generating, but also to the Son begotten, and to the manner of the Generation. 'Tis true, the Father spake from Heaven, saying, *Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased*: and thereby we are to understand, that whosoever of us are beloved by the Father are so beloved in and through the Son. In the same manner Christ is the *Only-begotten* Son of God; and as many of us as God hath bestowed his love upon, that we should be called the Sons of God, are all brought into that near relation by our fellowship with him, who is by a far more near relation the natural and eternal Son.

Gen. 23. 14,
and 21. 12.

Heb. 11. 17.

* Eunomius would have it only *παρὲς μόνον* us; in relation to the Father only. S. Basil shews that no way proper, and shews that *μονογενὴς* is not he which, *παρὲς μόνον*, but *μόνον*, *γενόμενος*. S. Cyril

adds these two *παρὲς μόνον* and *μόνον* together, in relation to the Father and the Son: *Μονογενὴς ἢ ὅτι μόνον ὁ ἐκ τοῦ πατρὸς ἀνέβη λόγος, ὅτι μόνον ἐκ μόνου γέννηται τὸ πᾶν*. Epist. 1. ad Regin. As Rufinus doth in Unicus: Ideo subiungit Unicum hunc esse Filium Dei, Unus enim de uno nascitur. Expos. Symb. S. Greg. Naz. adds to these two a third, in respect of the manner: *Μονογενὴς ἢ, ὅτι μόνον ἐκ μόνου καὶ μόνου, ἀλλ' ὅτι καὶ μονογενὴς ὡς τὰ πάγια*. So he somewhat obscurely and corruptly, but plainly enough in Damascene, who aims often to deliver himself in the words of Nazianzen: *Λόγος μονογενὴς, ὅτι μόνον ἐκ μόνου τὸ πᾶν ἐκ μόνου γέννηται*. ὅτι καὶ ὁμοῦται ἐπὶ τῇ γέννησι τῇ τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ γάρ ὅτι ἀλλ' ὅτι τὸ θεῶ.

Having thus declared the interpretation of the word, that, properly, as Primogeniture consisteth in Praelation, so Unigeniture in Exclusion; and that none can be strictly called the *Only-begotten* but he who alone was so begotten: we shall proceed to make good our Assertion, shewing that the Divine Essence was peculiarly communicated to the Word, by which he was begotten: he Son of God, and never any was so begotten beside that Son.

And here we meet with two difficulties : One shewing that there were other Sons of God said to be begotten of him, to whom either the Divine Essence was communicated ; and then the Communication of that to the Word made him not the *Only-begotten* ; or it was not communicated, and then there is no such Communication necessary to found such a Filiation : The other, alledging that the same Divine Essence may be communicated to another beside the Word, and not only that it may, but that it is so, to the Person of the Holy Ghost ; whence either the Holy Ghost must be the Son of God, and then the Word is not the *Only-begotten* ; or if he be not the Son, then is not the Communication of the Divine Essence a sufficient foundation of the relation of Sonship. These two Objections being answered, nothing will remain farther to demonstrate this last Assertion.

For the first, we acknowledge that others are frequently called the Sons of God, and that we call the same God *our Father* which *Christ* called his ; that both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one, for which cause he is not ashamed to call us brethren : we confess that those whom S. Paul ** hath begotten through the Gospel* may well be termed the *begotten of God*, whose seed remaineth in them : but withal, we affirm that this our Regeneration is of a nature wholly different from the Generation of the Son. We are first || generated, and have our natural being ; after that regenerated, and so receive a spiritual renovation, and by virtue thereof an inheritance incorruptible : whereas the Generation of *Christ* admits no Regeneration, he becoming at once thereby God and Son and Heir of all. The state of Sonship which we come into is but of Adoption, shewing the Generation by which we are begotten to be but metaphorical : whereas *Christ* is so truly begotten, so properly the natural Son of God, that his ** Generation* clearly excludeth the name of Adoption ; and not only so, but when he becometh the Son of man, even in his humanity refuseth the name of an adopted Son. For *a when the fulness of time was come God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the Law, To redeem them that were under the law*, (not that he, but) *that we might receive the adoption of sons*. He then whose Generation is totally different from ours whom he calleth Brethren ; he whom in the sacred Scriptures the Spirit nameth the true Son, the Father sometimes his own, sometimes his beloved, but || never his adopted Son ; he who by those proper and peculiar appellations is ** distinguished* from us, who can claim no higher filiation than that which we receive by the privilege of adoption ; he is truly the *Only-begotten Son* of God, notwithstanding the same God hath begotten us by his Word : and the reason why he is so is, because the Divine Essence was communicated unto him in his natural and eternal Generation, whereas only the grace of God is conveyed unto us in our Adoption. Indeed, if we were begotten of the Essence of God, as *Christ* was, or he were only by the grace of God || adopted, as we are, then could he by no priority of speech be called the *Only Son*, by reason of so many brethren : but being we cannot aspire unto the first, nor he descend unto the latter, it remaineth we acknowledge him, notwithstanding the first difficulty, by virtue of his natural and peculiar Generation to be the *Only-begotten Son*.

Heb. 2. 11.

* 1 Cor. 4. 15.

Εν τῷ Χριστῷ
Ἰησοῦ διὰ τῆς
εὐαγγελίας ἐγενήθη
ὑμᾶς ἐγγενήσαν.

1. John 3. 9.

Πᾶς ὁ γεννη-

μένος ἐν τῷ

Θεῷ ἀμάρτιαν

ὁ ποιῶν, ὅτι

σπέρμα αὐτοῦ

ἐν αὐτῷ μένει.

And more ex-

pressly 1 Joh. 5.

1. Πᾶς ὁ πι-

σδύων ὅτι Ἰη-

σοῦς ἐστιν ὁ Χρι-

στος, ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ

γεννηνται· καὶ

πᾶς ὁ ἀγαπῶν

τὸν γεννησάντα,

ἀγαπᾷ καὶ τὸν

γεννησάμενον

ἐξ αὐτοῦ. Quis-

quis credit Je-

sum esse Chri-

stum illum, ex

Deo genitus

est ; & quisquis

diligit eum qui

genuit, diligit

etiam eum qui

ex eo genitus

est.

|| Nos genuit

Deus, ut filii e-

jus simus, quos

fecerat ut ho-

mines essemus.

Unicum autem

genuit, non so-

lum ut filius ef-

ficeret, quod Pater

non est, sed e-

tiam ut Deus esset, quod & Pater est. S. Aug. de Conf. Evangel. l. 2. c. 3. In the Book of Cellus there was a Jew introduced speaking

thus to Christ ; Εἰ πατο λῆγεις, ὅτι πᾶς ἀνθρώπος καὶ θεῖον πνεῦμα γεννᾷς ὅς ἐστι θεός, τί ἂν σὺ ἄλλα διαφέρεις ; who

is thus answered by Origen ; Πρὸς ἐν ἐρεῶν, ὅτι πᾶς μὲν, ὡς ὁ Παῦλος ὠνόμασε, μιμητέτι ἀπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος, ἀλλὰ

δι' αὐτοῦ τὸ καλὸν ἀνθρώπου, ὅς ἐστι θεός· πᾶς ὅμως πολλὰ καὶ μακρῶς διαφέρει πάντως τῷ διὰ τῶν ἀρετῶν χημιατίζοντι ὡς

τῷ θεῷ. ὅστις ὡς περὶ τῆς γῆς καὶ ἀρχῆς ὅντων τοιούτων τυγχάνει. Orig. adv. Cellsum, l. 1. * First, it is most certain that the

Word of God, as the Word, is not the adopted, but the natural, Son of God. Non est Dei Filius Deus falsus, nec Deus adoptivus,

nec Deus nuncupativus, sed Deus verus. S. Hilar. de Trin. l. 5. Hic etiam Filius Dei natura est Filius, non adoptione.

Council Tolet. 11. 'Τίς δὲ θεὸς ἐστὶν εὐσεβὴς, καὶ εὐσεβὴς, γεννηθεὶς ἐκ πατρὸς. S. Cyril. Hierosol. Catech. 11. and ἡ ἀληθὴς φύς ἐκ

τοῦ μὴ ἐκ τοῦ εἰς τὸ εἶναι παρὴν, εἰδὲ τὸ μὴ οὐκ εἰς ὑποστάσειν ἦσαν· ἀλλ' αἰδιόθεν ὁ πατὴρ αἰδιότως ἐγεννησεν καὶ

ἀνεκτρέψεν

ἀνεκρεβζως ὅν ἐνα μόνον, ἀδελφὸν ἢ ἑχόντα. This hath been so generally confessed, that Felix and Elipandus, who were condemned for maintaining Christ as man to be the adopted son of God, did acknowledge it; as appeareth by the beginning of their Book, Confitemur & credimus Deum, Dei Filium, ante omnia tempora sine initio ex Patre genitum, coeternum & consubstantiallem, non adoptione sed genere. Secondly, it is also certain, that the Man Christ Jesus taken personally is the natural, not the adopted, Son of God: because the Man Christ Jesus is no other person than the Word, who is the eternal and natural Son, and by subsisting in the humane nature could not leave off to be the natural Son. The denial of this by Felix and Elipandus was condemned as Heretical in the Council of Francford; and their Opinion was thus expressed, partly in the words of S. Augustine, partly in their own additions: Confitemur & credimus eum factum ex nulliere, factum sub Lege; non genere esse filium Dei, sed adoptione, non natura, sed gratia, *Tris they maintained by forged testimonies of some Fathers, and by the Liturgy of the Church of Toledo, composed by Hildephonius, as the Roman by Gregory, in the Mass de Coena Domini, Qui per adoptivi hominis passionem, dum suo non indultit corpori; and in the Mass de Ascensione Domini, Hodie Salvator noster, per adoptionem carnis, sedem repetivit Deitatis. To this the Synod opposed their determination in Sacrosyllabo; Quod ex te nascetur sanctum vocabitur filius Dei, non adoptivus sed verus, non alienus sed proprius. And again; Porro adoptivus dici non potest qui alienus est ab eo a quo dicitur adoptatus; & gratia ei adoptio tribuitur, quoniam non ex debito, sed ex indulgentia tantummodo, ad ratio præstat: sicut pos aliquando cum essemus peccando filii iræ, alieni eramus à Deo, per proprium & verum Filium, qui non eguit adoptione, adoptio nobis filiorum donata est. And of this they give us the true ground in the Synodic Epistle; Unitas personæ quæ est in Dei filio & filio Virginis adoptionis tollit injuriam. Gal. 4. 4, 5. ¶ Legi & relegi Scripturas, Jesum Filium Dei nusquam adoptione inveni. Ambrosiaster Com. in Ep. ad Rom. Dices mihi, Cur times adoptivum Christum Dominum nominare? Dico tibi, Quia nec Apostoli eum sic nominarunt, nec sancta Dei & Catholica Ecclesia consuetudinem habuit sic eum appellare. Synod. Epist. Concil. Francford. From whence they charge all those to whom they write that Synodic Epistle, that they should be satisfied with such expressions as they found in the Scriptures: Intelligite, fratres, quæ legitis, & nolite nova & incognita nomina fingere, sed quæ in S. Scriptura inveniuntur tenete, &c. * S. Aug. hath observed that S. Paul made use of ὁ θεός, that he might distinguish the filiation of Christ from ours. At vero etiam nos, quibus dedit Deus potestatem filios ejus fieri, de natura atque substantia sua non nos genuit, sicut unicum Filium, sed utique dilectione adoptavit. Quo verbo Apostolus hæc vel non ob aliud intelligitur, nisi ad discernendum Unigenitum. De consens. Evang. l. 2. c. 3. And S. Ambrose takes notice, that the name of true destroyeth that of adopted: Adoptivum filium non dicimus filium esse naturæ, sed eum dicimus naturæ esse filium qui verus est filius. De Incarn. Sacr. c. 8. ¶ Si unicus, quomodo adoptivus, dum multi sunt adoptivi filii? Unicus itaque de multis non potest dici. Concil. Francos. Quod si etiam Unigenitus Filius factus dicitur ex gratia, non vere genitus ex natura, proculdubio nomen & veritatem Unigeniti perdidit, postquam fratres habere jam cepit: privatur enim hujus veritate nominis, si in Unigenito non est de Patre veritas naturalis. Fulgentius ad Thrasim. l. 3. c. 3. Si divina illa Filii sempiternaque natiuitas non de natura Dei Patris, sed ex gratia, creditur substituisse, non debet Unigenitus vocari, sed tantummodo genitus. Quoniam sicut ei nomen geniti largitas adoptionis paternæ contribuit, sic eum ab Unigeniti nomine nobis quoque tributa communicatio paternæ adoptionis excludit. Unigenitus enim non vocatur, quamvis genitus possit vocari, cum genitis. Ib. c. 4.*

But though neither Men nor Angels be begotten of the substance of God, or by virtue of any such natural Generation be called Sons; yet one person we know, to whom the Divine Essence is as truly and really communicated by the Father as to the Son, which is the third Person in the blessed Trinity, the Holy Ghost. Why then should the Word by that Communication of the Divine Essence become the Son, and not the Holy Ghost by the same? or if, by receiving the same nature, he also be the Son of God, how is the Word the Only Son? To this I answer, That the Holy Ghost receiveth the same Essence from the Father which the Word receiveth, and thereby becometh the same God with the Father and the Word: but though the Essence be the same which is communicated, yet there is a difference in the communication; the Word being God by Generation, the Holy Ghost by Procession: and though * every thing which is begotten proceedeth, yet every thing which proceedeth is not begotten. Wherefore in the Language of the sacred Scriptures and the Church, the Holy Ghost is never said to be begotten, but to proceed from the Father; nor is he ever called the Son, but the Gift of God. Eve was produced out of Adam, and in the same nature with him, and yet was not born of him, nor was she truly the Daughter of Adam; whereas Seth proceeding from the same person, in the similitude of the same nature, was truly and properly the Son of Adam. And this difference was not in the nature produced, but in the manner of production; Eve descending not from Adam, as Seth did, by way of generation, that is, by natural fecundity. The Holy

* Non omne id quod procedit, nascitur, sicut omne id quod nascitur procedit. S. Aug. contra Max. l. 3. c. 14. who gives the same solution to the same argument. Quærit à me, si de substantia Patris est Filius, de substan-

tia Patris est etiam Spiritus Sanctus, cur unus Filius sit, & alius non sit Filius. Ego respondeo, sive capias, sive non capias; De Patre est Filius, de Patre est Spiritus S. sed ille genitus est, iste procedens. Πολλὰ τὰυτὴ πεινῶτα ἐν τῷ ὁδῶν, ἐξ ἐκείνου γὰρ τὸ ἀγεννῆται ἐξ αὐτοῦ ὁ Λόγος καὶ τὸ Ἄγιον Πνεῦμα. ὁ μὲν, ὡς Λόγον, ἐκ τῆς οὐκ ἀγεννῶμεν τὸ δὲ, ὡς Πνεῦμα, ἐκ τοῦ ἀπορρέουσαν. Συμπεριεσθὶ τὸ Λόγῳ τὸ Πνεῦμα, ὁ συγγεννώμενος, ἀλλὰ ἑωθεν, καὶ παρὰ ὡς ἑωθεν, ἢ ἐκ τοῦ ἀπορρέουσαν. Theopodoret. Sermon. 2. p. 504. ¶ Nunquam fuit non Pater, à quo Filius natus, à quo Spiritus Sanctus non natus, quia non est Filius. Gemad. De Eccles. Dog. Deus Pater innascibilis non ex aliquo, Deus Filius unigenitus ex aliquo, hoc est, ex Patre, Spiritus S. innascibilis ex aliquo, hoc est, ex Patre. Isaac. lib. Fidei. Quod neque natum neque factum est, Spiritus S. est, qui à Patre & Filio procedit. S. Ambr. in Symb.

Ghost

Ghost proceedeth from the Father in the same nature with him, the Word proceedeth from the same Person in the same similitude of nature also; but the Word proceeding is the Son, the Holy Ghost is not, because the first procession is by way of Generation, the other is not. As therefore the Regeneration and Adoption of man, so the Procession of the Holy Ghost doth no way prejudice the eternal Generation, as pertaining solely to the Son of God.

Seeing then our Saviour *Jesus Christ* had a real being and existence before he was conceived by the Virgin *Mary*; seeing the being which he had antecedently to that Conception was not any created, but the one and indivisible Divine, Essence; seeing he had not that Divinity of himself originally, as the Father, but by communication from him; seeing the communication of the same Essence unto him was a proper Generation; we cannot but believe that the same *Jesus Christ* is the begotten Son of God: and seeing the same Essence was never so by way of Generation communicated * unto any, we must also acknowledge him the *Only-begotten*, distinguished from the Holy Ghost, as Son, from the Adopted Children, as the Natural Son.

* Ως ἐν ᾧ, ὁ
φυσικῶς κέκ-
ηται τὸ πᾶ-
ν ὅς ἐστι ὁ
υἱος, ὁ λα-
ὸς ἐν ἑαυτοῦ
συλλαβὼν, ὁ
υἱὸς καὶ ἀμε-
ζομένης πρὸς
τὸν πατέρα. S. Basil
Hom. de Fide.

The necessity of the belief of this part of the Article, that *Jesus Christ* is the proper and natural Son of God, begotten of the substance of the Father, and by that singular way of Generation the *Only Son*, appeareth first in the confirmation of our Faith concerning the Redemption of mankind. For this doth shew such an excellency and dignity in the person of the Mediator as will assure us of an infinite efficacy in his Actions, and value in his sufferings.

† Heb. 10. 4.

We know ^a it is not possible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins: and we may very well doubt how the blood of him who hath no other nature than that of man, can take away the sins of other men; there appearing no such difference as will shew a certainty in the one, and an impossibility in the other. But since we may be ^b bought with a price, well may we believe the blood of *Christ* sufficiently ^c precious, when we are assured that it is the ^d blood of God: nor can we question the efficacy of it in ^e purging our conscience from dead works, if we believe *Christ* offered up himself through the eternal Spirit. If we be truly sensible of our sins, we must acknowledge that in every one we have offended God; and the gravity of every offence must needs increase proportionably to the dignity of the party offended in respect of the offender; because the more worthy any person is, the more reverence is due unto him, and every injury tendeth to his dishonour: but between God and man there is an infinite disproportion; and therefore every offence committed against him must be esteemed as in the highest degree of injury. Again, as the gravity of the offence beareth proportion to the person offended; so the value of reparation ariseth from the dignity of the person satisfying: because the satisfaction consisteth in a reparation of that honour which by the injury was eclipsed; and all honour doth increase proportionably as the person yielding it is honourable. If then by every sin we have offended God, who is of infinite eminency, according unto which the injury is aggravated; how shall we ever be secure of our reconciliation unto God, except the person who hath undertaken to make the reparation be of the same infinite dignity, so as the honour rendred by his obedience may prove proportionable to the offence and that dishonour which arose from our disobedience? This scruple is no otherwise to be satisfied than by a belief in such a Mediator as is the *Only-begotten Son* of God, of the same substance with the Father, and consequently of the same power and dignity with the God whom by our sins we have offended.

† 1 Cor. 6. 20.

and 7. 23.

† 1 Pet. 1. 19.

† Acts 20. 28.

† Heb. 9. 14.

Secondly, The belief of the eternal Generation of the Son, by which he

is the same God with the Father, is necessary for the confirming and encouraging a Christian in ascribing that honour and glory unto Christ which is due unto him. For we are commanded to give that Worship unto the Son which is truly and properly Divine; the same which we give unto God the Father, who *hath committed all judgment unto the Son, that all men should honour the Son even as they honour the Father.* As it was represented to S. John in a Vision, when he *heard every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, saying, Blessing, honour, glory, and power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb, for ever and ever.* Again, we are commanded to *fear the Lord our God, and to serve him*; and that with such an emphasis, as by him we are to understand him alone, because *the Lord our God is one Lord.* From whence, if any one arose among the Jews teaching under the title of a Prophet to worship any other beside him for God, the judgment of the * Rabbins was, that notwithstanding all the Miracles which he could work, though they were as great as Moses wrought, he ought immediately to be strangled, because the evidence of this truth, that One God only must be worshipped, is above all evidence of sense. Nor must we look upon this Precept as valid only under the Law, as if then there were only one God to be worshipped, but since the Gospel we had another; for our Saviour hath commended it to our observation, by making use of it against the Devil in his temptation, saying, *Get thee hence, Satan, for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.* If then we be obliged to worship the God of Israel only, if we be also commanded to give the same Worship to the Son which we give to him; it is necessary that we should believe that the Son is the God of Israel. ^b When the Scripture *bringeth in the first begotten into the world, it saith, Let all the Angels of God worship him*; but then the same Scripture calleth that first begotten ^c *Jehovah, and the Lord of the whole earth.* For a man to worship that for God which is not God, knowing that it is not God, is affected and gross Idolatry; to worship that as God which is not God, thinking that it is God, is not the same degree, but the same sin; to worship him as God who is God, thinking that he is not God, cannot be thought an act in the formality void of Idolatry. Lest therefore, while we are all obliged to give unto him Divine worship, we should fall into that sin which of all others we ought most to abhor, it is no less necessary that we should believe that Son to be that eternal God, whom we are bound to worship, and whom only we should serve.

Thirdly, Our belief in Christ as the eternal Son of God is necessary, to raise us unto a thankful acknowledgment of the infinite love of God appearing in the sending of his only begotten Son into the world to die for sinners. This love of God is frequently extolled and admired by the Apostles. ^d *God so loved the world,* saith S. John, *that he gave his only-begotten Son.* ^e *God commendeth his love towards us,* saith S. Paul, *in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us*; in that he spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all. ^f In this, saith S. John again, *was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.* Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins. If we look upon all this as nothing else, but that God should cause a man to be born after another manner than other men, and when he was so born after a peculiar manner, yet a mortal man should deliver him to die for the sins of the world; I see no such great expression of his love in this way of redemption, more than would have appeared if he had redeemed us any other way. 'Tis true indeed, that the reparation of lapsed man is no act of absolute necessity in respect of God, but that he hath as freely de-

Joh. 3. 22, 23.

Rev. 5. 13.

Dent. 6. 13, 14.

|| The emphasis appears in this, that it is not barely וְתַעֲבֹדוּ & serves ei, but וְאֵתִי תַעֲבֹד & ipsi serves, with such a peculiar restriction as is expressed by the Chaldee Paraph.

וְקִרְבָּנִי וְקִרְבָּנִי & in conspectu ejus serves, by the LXX. ὡς αὐτῷ μόνῳ λατρεύετε and that restriction approved by our Saviour, Matt. 4. 10.

* Moses Maim. Praef. in Seder Zeraim.

^a Mat. 4. 10.

^b Heb. 1. 6.

^c Psal. 97. 5.

Εἰς μακροχρόνιον, ὡς ὅτι ἔσθ' ὅτιν. ὡς αὐτῷ λατρεύετε. ὡς αὐτῷ λατρεύετε. ὡς αὐτῷ λατρεύετε. Theod. Hæret. Fab. l. 5. c. 2.

^d John 3. 16.

^e Rom. 5. 8. and 8. 32.

^f 1 John 4. 9, 10.

signed

designed our Redemption as our Creation ; considering the misery from which we are redeemed, and the happiness to which we are invited, we cannot but acknowledge the singular love of God even in the act of Redemption it self : but yet the Apostles have raised that consideration higher, and placed the choicest mark of the love of God in the choosing such means and performing in that manner our reparation, by sending his *Only begotten* into the World ; by not sparing his own Son, by giving and delivering him up to be scourged and crucified for us : and the estimation of this act of God's love must necessarily increase proportionably to the dignity of the Son so sent into the World ; because the more worthy the person of Christ before he suffered, the greater his condescension unto such a suffering condition ; and the nearer his Relation to the Father, the greater his love to us for whose sakes he sent him so to suffer. Wherefore to derogate any way from the Person and nature of our Saviour before he suffered, is so far to undervalue the love of God, and consequently, to come short of that acknowledgement and thanksgiving which is due unto him for it. If then the sending of Christ into the World were the highest act of the love of God which could be expressed ; if we be obliged unto a return of thankfulness some way correspondent to such infinite love ; if such a return can never be made without a true sense of that infinity, and a sense of that infinity of love cannot consist without an apprehension of an infinite dignity of nature in the Person sent : then it is absolutely necessary to believe that Christ is so the *Only-begotten Son* of the Father, as to be of the same substance with him, of Glory equal, of Majesty co-eternal.

By this discourse in way of explication every Christian may understand what it is he says, and express his mind how he would be understood, when he maketh this brief Confession, I believe in *Christ the only Son* of God. For by these words he must be thought to intend no less than this ; I do profess to be fully assured of this Assertion as of a most certain, infallible and necessary truth, That *Jesus Christ*, the Saviour and *Messias*, is the true proper and natural Son of God, begotten of the substance of the Father ; which being incapable of division or multiplication, is so really and totally communicated to him, that he is of the same Essence with him, *God of God, light of light, very God of very God*. And as I assert him so to be the Son, so do I also exclude all other persons from that kind of Sonship, acknowledging none but him to be begotten of God by that proper and natural Generation ; and thereby excluding all which are not begotten, as it is a Generation ; all which are said to be begotten, and are called Sons, but are so only by adoption, as 'tis natural. And thus I believe in God the Father, and in *Jesus Christ* his *Only Son*,

Our Lord.

After our Saviour's Relation founded upon his eternal Generation, followeth his Dominion, || in all ancient Creeds, as the necessary consequent of his Filiation. For as we believe him to be the Son of God, so must we acknowledge him to be *our Lord*, because the only Son must of necessity be Heir and Lord of all in his Father's house ; and all others which bear the name of Sons, whether they be Men or Angels, if compared to him, must not be looked upon as Sons of God, but as Servants of Christ.

|| For though in the first Rules of Faith mentioned by Irenaeus and Tertullian we find not Dominum nostrum, yet in all the Creeds afterwards we find these words ; probably inserted because denied by the Valentinians, of whom Irenaeus, Δια τὸ τοῦ τοῦ Σωτῆρος λέγειν, ἔδει γὰρ Κύριον ὀνομαζέσθαι, αὐτὸν θελάουσιν. l. 1. c. 1.

Three things are necessary, and more cannot be, for a plenary explication of this part of the Article. First, the proper notation of the word *Lord* in the Scripture-phrase, or language of the Holy Ghost: Secondly, the full signification of the same in the adequate latitude of the sense, as it belongs to Christ: Thirdly, the application of it to the person making confession of his Faith, and all others whom he involves in the same condition with himself, as saying, not *my*, nor *their*, but, *Our Lord*.

First then, we must observe that not only Christ is *the Lord*, but that this title doth so properly belong unto him, that *the Lord* alone absolutely taken is || frequently used by the Evangelists and Apostles determinately for *Christ*, insomuch that the Angels observe that Dialect, *“Come, see the place where the Lord lay.”* Now for the true Notation of the word, it will * not be so necessary to inquire into the use or origination of the *Greek*, much less into the Etymology of the correspondent *Latin*, as to search into the Notion of the *Jews*, and the language of the Scriptures, according unto which the Evangelists and Apostles spake and wrote.

And first, it cannot be denied but that the word which we translate *the Lord*, was used by the Interpreters of the Old Testament sometimes for * men; with no relation unto any other than humane Dominion. And as it was by the Translators of the Old, so is it also by the Pen-men of the || New. But it is most certain that Christ is called *Lord* in another notion than that which signifies any kind of humane Dominion; because, as so, *there are many Lords*, but He is in that notion *Lord* which admits of no more than one. They are only *masters according to the flesh*; He *the Lord of glory, the Lord from heaven, King of kings, and Lord of all other lords.*

ancient Greeks. In our Sacred writ it is the frequent name of God, whereas I imagine it is not to be found so used by any of the old *Greek* Authors. Julius Pollux, whose business is to observe what words and phrases may be properly made use of in that Language, tells us the Gods may be called Θεοὶ or Δαίμονες, but mentions not Κύριος, as neither proper, nor any name of God with them at all. Nor did they anciently use it in their Oeconomicks; where their constant terms were not Κύριος, but Δεσπότης, and Δεσπότης, and they had then another kind of notion of it, as appears by the complaint of the servant in Aristophanes, Τὸν Κύριον τὸν δὲ ἐκ τῆς κούρης κερταίνω ὁ δαίμων, ἀλλὰ τὸν ἐωνυμίζον. In which words, if they were interpreted by the Scripture usage, κύριος would signify the Master, and ἐωνυμίζον the person bought, that is, the Servant; whereas the place requires an interpretation wholly contrary: for ἐωνυμίζον is not here ὑποεργαζόμενος, but ἀποεργαζόμενος, or ἀνυποεργαζόμενος, as the Scholiast, Suidas and Moschopolis have observed, that it, not the Servant, but the Master who bought him. And though those Grammarians bring no other place to prove this allive signification beside this of Aristophanes, by which means it might be still questionable whether they had rightly interpreted him without any Authority; yet Phrynichus will sufficiently secure us of this sense. Ἐν τῷ ἑωνυμίζοντι κύριον ἢ ἀγορεύοντι ἐν τῷ ἐργαζόμενῳ. Ἐωνυμίζον then here is he which buyeth, that is, the master; and consequently κύριος not the Master, but the Servant bought, whom he supposeth originally to have power over his own body. Indeed it was not only distinguished, but in a manner opposed to Δεσπότης, as appears by that observation of Ammonius thus delivered by Eustathius in Odyss. 3. Κύριος γυναικὸς καὶ ὕψος ἀνδρὸς καὶ πατρὸς, Δεσπότης δὲ ἀργυρονομῶν. * As Ἰσραὴל is generally translated κύριος, when it signifieth Lord or Master in respect of a servant or inferior. So Sarah called her husband, Gen. 18. 12. 1 Pet. 3. 6. so Eleazer his Master Abraham, Gen. 24. frequently. Thus Rachel saluted her Father Laban, Gen. 31. 35. and Jacob his Brother Esau, Gen. 33. 8. Potiphar is the κύριος of Joseph whom he bought, Gen. 39. 2, &c. and Joseph in power is so saluted by his Brethren, Gen. 42. 10. and acknowledged by his servant, 44. 5. The general name in the law of Moses for servant and Master is παῖς and κύριος, Exod. 21. 2, 4. It is indeed so plain that the ancient Jews used this word to signify no more than humane power, that we find אֲדֹנָי the name of man so translated, as 1 Sam. 17. 32. אֲדֹנָי מִיָּדָי וְאֲדֹנָי מִיָּדָי, Acts 15. 16. in the sense which the later, not the ancient, Greeks used it: Παιδίσκον, τὸ τοῦ δεσποτῆτος οὐ τοῦ θεοῦ. οἱ δὲ ἀρχαῖοι δὲ τὸν νεώτερον, as Phrynichus observes, as it is opposed to οἰκέτης, Luke 15. 13. (according to that of Etymol. Κύριος ἢ παῖς τι εἶναι, ἢ καὶ ὁ παῖς ὁ οἰκέτης) to δούλος, Matt. 10. 24. and 18. 25, &c. And in the Apostolical rules pertaining to Christian Oeconomicks, the Master and Servant are δούλος and κύριος. As also by way of addition κύριος τὸ δεσπομεν, Matt. 9. 38. κύριος τὸ ἀμπελῶν, Matt. 20. 8. κύριος τὸ εἰκόν, Mark 13. 35. Insomuch as κύριος is sometimes used by way of address or salutation of one man to another, (as it is now generally among the later Greeks, and as Dominus was anciently among the Latins, Quomodo obvis, si nomen non occurrat, Dominos salutamus. Sen.) not only of Servants to Masters, as Matt. 12. 27. or Sons to Parents, as Matt. 21. 30. or inferiours to men in authority, as Matt. 27. 63. but of strangers; as when the Greeks spake to Philip, and desired him, saying, Κύριε, θέλωμεν τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἰδεῖν, Joh. 12. 21. and Mary Magdalen speaking unto Christ, but taking him for a Gardener, Κύριε, εὖ σὺ ἐλάσσεις αὐτὸν, Joh. 20. 15. And it cannot be denied but this title was sometimes given to our Saviour himself in no higher or other sense than this: As when the Samaritan woman saw him alone at the well, and knew no more of him than that he appeared to be one of the Jews, she said, Κύριε, ἀντιμαρτυρεῖς ἡμεῖς καὶ τὸν πατέρα σου βαβυλῶν, Joh. 4. 11. And the infirm man at the pool of Bethesda, when he will not who it was, said unto him, κύριε, ἀνθρώπων ἐκ ἔχου, Joh. 5. 7. The blind man, to whom he had restored his sight, with the same salutation maketh confession of his ignorance, and his faith, Τίς σὺ, κύριε; and, πῶς οὖν, κύριε, Joh. 9. 36, 38. 1 Cor. 8. 5. 1b. v. 6. and Eph. 4. 5. Col. 3. 22. 1 Cor. 2. 8. and 15. 47. Rev. 19. 16.

|| It is acknow-
ledged by all
that יהוה is
from יהוה or
היה, and

Ζηλω σ' ὅθ' ἔνακ' ἐκλῶς αἰτίας κυρεῖς,

Ταύτῳ ἐπαυγῶν πάντοθεν πληθύνομαι,

Ωὖν, τίς ἐν πύλαισι δωμάτων κυρεῖ;

V 2

Being

Being then this title *Lord* thus signifieth the proper name of God *Jehovah*; being the same is certainly attributed unto *Christ* in a notion far surpassing all other Lords, which are rather to be looked upon as Servants unto him: it will be worth our inquiry next, whether as it is the Translation of the name *Jehovah* it belong to *Christ*; or whether, though he be Lord of all other Lords, as subjected under his authority, yet he be so inferiour unto him whose name alone is *Jehovah*, as that in that propriety and eminency in which it belongs unto the supreme God it may not be attributed unto *Christ*.

This doubt will easily be satisfied, if we can shew the name *Jehovah* it self to be given unto our Saviour; it being against all reason to acknowledge the original name, and to deny the interpretation in the sense and full importance of that original. Wherefore if *Christ* be the *Jehovah*, as so called by the Spirit of God; then is he so the *Lord*, in the same propriety and eminency in which *Jehovah* is. Now whatsoever did belong to the *Messias*, that may and must be attributed unto *Jesus*, as being the true and only *Christ*. But the *Jews* themselves acknowledge that *Jehovah* shall be known clearly in the days of the *Messias*, and not only so, but that it is the * name which properly belongeth to him. And if they cannot but confess so much who only read the Prophecies, as the Eunuch did, without an interpreter; how can we be ignorant of so plain and necessary a truth, whose eyes have seen the full completion, and read the infallible interpretation of them? If they could see *Jehovah the Lord of hosts* to be the name of the *Messias*, who was to them for a *stone of stumbling and rock of offence*, how can we possibly be ignorant of it, who are taught by S. Paul, that in *Christ* this prophecy was fulfilled, ^a *As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling-stone and rock of offence, and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed?* It was no other than *Jehovah* who spake those words, ^b *I will have mercy upon the house of Judah, and will save them by the Lord (Jehovah) their God, and will not save them by bow nor sword.* Where not only he who is described as the original and principal cause, that is, the Father who gave his Son, but also he who is the immediate efficient of our Salvation, and that in opposition to all other means or instrumental causes, is called *Jehovah*; who can be no other than our *Jesus*, because ^c *there is no other name under heaven given unto men whereby we must be saved.* As in another place he speaketh, ^d *I will strengthen them in the Lord (Jehovah) and they shall walk up and down in his name, saith the Lord (Jehovah);* where he which strengtheneth is one, and he by whom he strengtheneth is another, clearly distinguished from him by the personal Pronoun, and yet each of them is *Jehovah*, and ^e *Jehovah our God is one Jehovah.* Whatsoever || objections may be framed against us, we know *Christ* is the ^f *righteous branch raised unto David, the King that shall reign and prosper, in whose days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely;* we are assured that *this is his name whereby he shall be called, The Lord our Righteousness: the Lord*, that is, *Jehovah*, the expression of his Supremacy; and the addition of *Our righteousness* can be no diminution to his Majesty. If those words in the Prophet, ^g *Sing and rejoice, O daughter of Sion; for lo, I come, and I dwell in the midst of thee, saith the Lord (Jehovah),* did not sufficiently of themselves denote our Saviour who dwelt amongst us, as they certainly do; yet the words which follow would evince as much, *And many nations shall be joined to the Lord in that day, and shall be my people; and I will dwell in the midst of thee, and thou shalt know that the Lord of hosts hath sent me unto thee:* for what other Lord can we conceive dwelling in the midst of us, and sent unto us by the Lord of hosts, but *Christ*?

* As Midrash Tillim on 21. Psal. Echa Rabbati Lam. 1.6.

Isa. 8. 13, 14.

^a Rom. 9. 33.

^b Hof. 1. 7. where it is further observable, that the Chaldee Paraphrase hath ביהוה דני for יהוה by the word of Jehovah, for Jehovah.

^c Acts 4. 12.

^d Zach. 10. 12.

^e Deut. 6. 4.

|| Two Adversaries we have to the exposition of this place, the Jew, and the Socinian; only with this difference, that we find the less opposition from the Jew, from whom indeed we have so ample a concession as will destroy the other's contradiction. First Socinus answers, the name belongeth not to

Christ, but unto Israel; and that it so appears by a parallel place in the same Prophet, Jer. 33. 15, 16. Socin. refut. Jac. Wiick. cap. 6. Catech. Racov. de Pers. Christi, cap. 1. Crellius de Deo & Atribut. lib. 1. cap. 11. To this we first oppose the constant interpre.

interpretation of the Jews, who attribute the name Jehovah to the Messiah from this one particular Text. As in the Sepher Ikkarim, l. 2. c. 8. ויקרא הכתוב נכ המשיח יי עדן. The Scripture calleth the name of the Messiah Jehovah our righteousness. And in Midrash Tillim on Psal. 21. ויקרא המשיח בשמי ואלו שמו יהוה שני יהוה. God calleth the Messiah by his own name, and his name is Jehovah; as it is said (Exod. 15. 3.) The Lord is a man of war, Jehovah is his name. And it is writen of the Messiah. (Jer. 23. 6.) And this is the name which they shall call him, Jehovah our righteousness. Thus Echa Rabati, Lam. 1. 6. וזה שמו אשר יקראו יהוה עדן. What is the name of the Messiah? R. Abba said, Jehovah is his name; as it is said (Jer. 23. 6.) And this is the name which they shall call him, Jehovah our righteousness. The same he reports of Rabbi Levi. The Rabbins then, though enemies to the truth which we reduce from thence, constrained by the literal importance of the Text, did acknowledge that the name Jehovah did belong to the Messiah. And as for the collection of the contrary from the parallel place pretended, there is not so great a similitude as to enforce the same interpretation. For whereas in the 23. 6. of Jeremiah it is expressly said, וזה שמו, this is the name, in the 33. it is only וזה, without any mention of a name; and surely that place cannot prove Jehovah to be the name of Israel, which speaketh not one word of the name of Jerusalem: for where we read in Crellius, hoc scilicet nomen est, all but hoc is not Scripture, but the gloss of Crellius, and hoc it self cannot be warranted for the interpretation of וזה nor quo for אשר; the simplest interpretation of those words וזה אשר יקרא יהוה being, iste qui vocabit eam, he which calleth Jerusalem is the Lord our righteousness, that is, Christ. And thus the first answer of Socinus is invalid: which he easily foreseeing, hath joyned with the Jewish Rabbins in the second answer, admitting that Jehovah our righteousness is the name of the Messiah, but without denying that the Christ is that Jehovah. To which purpose they assert those words, Jehovah our righteousness, to be delivered by way of proposition, not of apposition: and this they endeavour to prove by such places of Scripture as seem to infer as much. As Moses built an Altar, and called the name of it Jehovah Nissi, Exod. 17. 15. Gideon built an Altar unto the Lord, and called it Jehovah Shalom, Judg. 6. 24. And the name of the City in the last words of Ezekiel is Jehovah Shammah. In all which places it is most certain that the Jehovah is not predicated of that of whose name it is a part; but is the Subject of a Proposition, given by way of nomination, whose Verb substantive or copula is understood. But from thence to conclude, that the Lord our righteousness can be no otherwise understood of Christ than as a Proposition, and that we by calling him so, according to the Prophet's prediction, can understand no more thereby than that God the Father of Christ doth justify us, is most irrational. For first, it is therefore necessary to interpret those names by way of a proposition of themselves, because Jehovah cannot be the Predicate of that which is named; it being most apparent that an Altar or a City built cannot be God: and whatsoever is not Jehovah without addition, cannot be Jehovah with addition. But there is no incongruity in attributing of that name to Christ, to whom we have already proved it actually given: and our Adversaries, who teach that the name Jehovah is sometimes given to the Angels representing God, must acknowledge that it may be given unto Christ, whom they confess to be above all Angels, and far more fully and exactly to represent the Father. Secondly, that which is the addition in those names cannot be truly predicated of that thing which bears the name. Moses could not say that Altar was his Exaltation, nor Gideon that it was his Peace. And if it could not so be predicated by it self, it could neither be by apposition, and consequently, even in this respect it was necessary to make the name a Proposition. But our Righteousness may undoubtedly be predicated of him who is here called by the name of the Lord our righteousness; for the Apostle hath expressly taught us that he is made righteousness unto us, 1 Cor. 1. 30. And if it may be in it self, there can be no repugnancy in its predication by way of apposition. Thirdly, that addition of our righteousness doth not only truly belong to Christ, but in some manner properly and peculiarly, so as in that notion it can belong to no other person called Jehovah but to that Christ alone. For he alone is the end of the Law for righteousness to every one that believeth, Rom. 10. 4. and when he is said to be made unto us righteousness, 1 Cor. 1. 30. he is thereby distinguished from God the Father. Being then Christ is thus peculiarly called our Righteousness under the Gospel, being the place of the Prophet forementioned speaketh of this as a name to be used under the Gospel, being no other person called Jehovah is ever expressly called our righteousness under the Gospel; it followeth not only that Christ may be so called, but that the Prophecy cannot otherwise be fulfilled, than by acknowledging that Christ is the Lord our righteousness: and consequently that is his name, not by way of proposition, but of apposition and appropriation; so that being both Jehovah and our righteousness, he is as truly Jehovah as our righteousness. Jer. 23. 5, 6. Zach. 2. 10, 11.

And as the original Jehovah was spoken of Christ by the holy Prophets; so the title of Lord, as the usual interpretation of that name, was attributed unto him by the Apostles. In that signal prediction of the first Age of the Gospel God promised by Joel, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord (Jehovah) shall be delivered: and S. Paul hath assured us that Christ is that Lord, by proving from thence, that whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed, and inferring from that, if we confess with our mouth the Lord Jesus, we shall be saved. For if it be a certain truth, that whosoever confesseth the Lord Jesus shall be saved; and the certainty of this truth depend upon that foundation, that whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed; and the certainty of that in relation to Christ depend upon that other promise, Whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved: then must the Lord in the thirteenth verse of the tenth Chapter to the Romans be the same with the Lord Jesus in the ninth verse; or else S. Paul's Argument must be invalid and fallacious, as containing that in the Conclusion which was not comprehended in the Premises. But the Lord in the ninth verse is no other than Jehovah, as appeareth by the Prophet Joel from whom that Scripture is taken. Therefore our Saviour in the New Testament is called Lord, as that name or title is the interpretation of Jehovah.

If we consider the Office of John the Baptist peculiar unto him, we know it was he of whom it is written in the Prophet Malachi, I will send my messenger, Mat. 11. 10, and

and he shall prepare the way before me: we are sure he which spake those words was (Jehovah) the Lord of hosts; and we are as sure that Christ is that Lord before whose face John the Baptist prepared the way. The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, saith Isaiah, prepare ye the way of the Lord (Jehovah:) and this is he that was spoken of by the Prophet Isaiah, saith S. Matthew: this is he of whom his Father Zachariah did Divinely presage, Thou child shalt be called the Prophet of the Highest, for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways. Where Christ is certainly the Lord, and the Lord * undeniably Jehovah.

ed translation of the name יהוה in the Prophet, (which of it self were sufficient;) but also is delivered in that manner which is (though unreasonably) required to signify the proper name of God, περὶ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ περὶ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ θεοῦ, not τὸ θεοῦ that is, without, not with, an Article. For now our Saviour's Deity must be tried by a new kind of School-Divinity, and the most fundamental Doctrine maintained as such ever since the Apostles times by the whole Catholick Church, must be examined, censured and condemned, by ὁ, ἰ, τὸ. Socinus first makes use of this observation against Wickius; and after him Crellius hath laid it as a grave and serious foundation, and spread it out into its several corners, to uphold the Fabrick of his superstructions. First, Vox Jehovah magis quam cetera Dei nomina propriorum naturam sequitur; ideo etiam Græca κῦεῖς, cum pro illa ponitur, propriorum indolem, quā licet, amulatur. Secondly, Propriis nominibus articulus libentius subtrahitur, licet eum etiam sæpe concinnitatis potius quam necessitatis causā admittant. Idem fit in voce κῦεῖς cum pro Jehovah ponitur. Thirdly, Hac est causa cur in novo Testamento maxime apud Lucam & Paulum, vox κῦεῖς, cum Deum summi designat, articulo libentius careat; at cum de Christo subiective usurpatur, raro articulus omittitur. What strange uncertainties are these to build the denial of so important an Article as Christ's Divinity upon? He does not say absolutely Jehovah is the proper name of God, but only that it doth more follow the nature of proper names than the other names of God. And indeed it is certain that sometimes it hath the nature of an appellative, as Deut. 6. 4. יהוה יהוה אחד the Lord our God is one Lord, and yet if it be not always and absolutely a proper name, though all the rest were granted to be true, the Argument must be of no validity. Again, he cannot say an Article is never affixed to a proper name, but only that libentius subtrahitur, it is rather omitted than affixed: which yet is far from a certain or a true rule, especially in the Language of the New Testament. For no man can deny Jesus to be the proper name of Christ, given him according to the Law at his Circumcision, καὶ ἐκλήθη τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦς, Luke 2. 21. and yet whosoever shall read the Gospel of S. Matthew, will find it ten times ὁ Ἰησοῦς with an Article, for once Ἰησοῦς, without it. And in the Acts of the Apostles, written in a more Attic style, S. Paul is oftner styled ὁ Παῦλος than simply Παῦλος. So Balaam, Gallio, &c. Some persons we find in the New Testament, whom, if we should stay till we found them without an Article, we should never call by their names at all; as Apelles, Balak, &c. Thirdly, ὁ κῦεῖς is so often used for that God who is the Father with an Article, and κῦεῖς for the Son without an Article, (For the Father, Mat. 1. 22. 2. 15. 5. 33. 22. 44. Mark 12. 35. Luke 1. 6. 9. 15. 25. 45. 2. 15. 22. 23. 10. 2. Acts 2. 25. 3. 4. 3. 19. 17. 27. Rom. 15. 11. 1 Cor. 10. 26. 16. 7. 2 Cor. 5. 11. Eph. 5. 17. 19. Col. 3. 16. 20. 23. 2 Thess. 3. 3. 2 Tim. 1. 16. Heb. 8. 2. 11. 12. 14. Jam. 4. 10. 15. 1 Pet. 2. 3. For the Son, Mat. 3. 3. 22. 43. 45. Mark 1. 3. Luke 1. 76. 2. 11. 3. 4. 20. 44. John 1. 23. Acts 2. 36. 10. 36. 11. 16. 21. 15. 11. Rom. 1. 7. 10. 9. 12. 14. 6. 8. 14. 16. 2. 8. 11. 12. 13. 22. 1 Cor. 1. 3. 4. 17. 7. 22. 25. 39. 9. 1. 2. 10. 21. 11. 11. 12. 3. 14. 37. 15. 58. 16. 10. 19. 2 Cor. 1. 2. 2. 12. 4. 5. 10. 17. 11. 17. 12. 1. Gal. 1. 3. 5. 10. Eph. 1. 2. 2. 21. 4. 1. 5. 17. 5. 8. 6. 4. 10. 21. 23. Phil. 1. 2. 14. 2. 11. 19. 24. 29. 3. 1. 20. 4. 1. 2. 10. Col. 1. 3. 3. 17. 18. 24. 4. 7. 17. 1 Thess. 1. 1. 3. 8. 4. 1. 15. 17. 5. 2. 12. 2 Thess. 1. 1. 2. 13. 3. 4. 1 Tim. 1. 1. 2 Tim. 2. 24. Tit. 1. 4. Philem. 3. 16. 20. Jam. 1. 1. 2 Pet. 3. 8. 10. 2 John 3. Jude 24. Rev. 14. 13. 19. 16. I say, they are thus so often used) that though they equal not the number of their contrary acceptions, yet they come so near, as to yield no ground for any such observation, as if the Holy Ghost intended any such Article-distinction. Nay, it is most evident that the sacred Pen-men intended no such distinction, because in the same place speaking of the same person, they usually observe the indifferency of adding or omitting the Article. As Jam. 5. 11. τὴν ὑπομονὴν Ἰδοὺ ἰκέταίς, καὶ τὸ τέλος κῦεῖς ἔσται, ὅτι πολλὰ λαχόντες ὄντι ὁ κῦεῖς καὶ οὐκ ἴσμεν. 2 Tim. 1. 18. Δὲν αὐτὸς ὁ κῦεῖς ἀρετὴν ἔχει παρὰ Κουεῖς ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ. 1 Cor. 7. 17. Ἐλάσθω ὡς ἐκέκληκεν ὁ κῦεῖς, ὅτι ὁ κῦεῖς ἔσται. 22. Ὁ δὲ ἐν κῦεῖς κληθεὶς δούλος, ἀπαλλάξεται κῦεῖς ὄντι. See Rom. 14. 6. 7. 8. Wherefore being, Jehovah is not affirmed absolutely to be a proper name; being, if it were, yet it appears that it is not the custom of the New Testament to use every proper name oftner without an Article than with one; being, ὁ κῦεῖς is so often taken for him whom they acknowledge God, and κῦεῖς for him whom they cannot deny to be the Christ: it followeth that Christ, acknowledged to be the Lord, cannot by any virtue of an Article be denied to be the true Jehovah. We must not then think to decide this Controversie by the Articles, of which the Sacred Pen-men were not curious, and the Transcribers have been very careless: nor is there so great uncertainty of the ancient MSS. in any thing as in the words and Articles of κῦεῖς and Θεός. The vulgar Edition, Rev. 1. 8. hath λέγει ὁ κῦεῖς only, the Complutensis λέγει κῦεῖς ὁ Θεός, Plantine λέγει ὁ κῦεῖς ὁ Θεός against the Socinian Rule, who will have an accession by ὁ to Θεός, and a diminution by ὁ from κῦεῖς. As Rev. 4. 11. Ἀλλ' ὁ Θεός, κῦεῖς, λαβὼν τὸ ἄζαν: in other MSS. Ἀλλ' ὁ Θεός καὶ ὁ Θεός ἡμῶν ὁ Θεός, λαβὼν τὸ ἄζαν. 1 Cor. 11. 27. τὸ ποιεῖν τὸ κῦεῖς ἀναξίως: others with an addition, τὸ ποιεῖν τὸ κῦεῖς ἀναξίως τὸ κῦεῖς. 1 Cor. 14. 37. The vulgar Edit. ὅτι τὸ κῦεῖς ἐστὶν ἐξολά. the Complut. ὅτι κῦεῖς. So where we usually read Θεός, divers ancient MSS. have κῦεῖς. Lastly, it is observable that even in these words of the Creed, which we now expound, κῦεῖς is taken expressly of Christ without an Article; for so we read it, Καὶ ἐν Ἰησοῦ Χριστῷ, τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸ μονογενοῦς, κῦεῖς ἡμῶν.

Nor is this the only Notation of the Name or Title *Lord* taken in a sense Divine, above the expression of all mere humane power and dominion; for as it is often used as the interpretation of the name *Jehovah*, so is it also for that of *Adon* or *Adonai*. *The Lord said unto my Lord*, saith *David*, that is, in the Original, *Jehovah* unto *Adon*; and that *Adon* is the || *Word*, that *Lord* is *Christ*. We know the Temple at *Jerusalem* was the Temple of the most High God, and the Lord of that Temple in the emphasis of an *Hebrew* Article was *Christ*, as appeareth by that Prophet; *The Lord whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his Temple*, even the messenger of the Covenant, whom ye delight in.

Now

Now this Notation, as it is the interpretation of *Adon*, signifieth immediately and properly *dominion* implying a right of possession, and power of disposing. Which doth not only agree with that other notion of *Jehovah*, but presupposes it, as following and flowing from it. For he who alone hath a being or existence of himself, and thereby is the fountain of all things beside himself, must be acknowledged to have full power and dominion over all: because every thing must necessarily belong to him from whom it hath received what it is. Wherefore being *Christ* is the *Lord*, as that title is taken for *Jehovah*, the name of God, expressing the necessary existence and independence of his single being, and consequently the independency of all others upon him; it followeth that he be acknowledged also the *Lord*, as that name expresseth *Adon*, signifying power authoritative and proper dominion. Thus having explained the Notation of the word *Lord*, which we propounded as the first part of our exposition; we come next to the second, which is, to declare the nature of this Dominion, and to shew how and in what respect *Christ* is the *Lord*.

Now for the full and exact understanding of the Dominion seated or invested in *Christ* as the *Lord*, it will be necessary to distinguish it according to that diversity which the Scriptures represent unto us. As therefore we have observed two Natures united in his Person, so must we also consider two kinds of Dominion belonging respectively to those natures; one inherent in his Divinity, the other bestowed upon his Humanity; one as he is the Lord the maker of all things, the other as he is made Lord of all things.

For the First, we are assured that the *Word* was God, that by the same Word *John 1. 1, 3.* *all things were made, and without him was not any thing made that was made*; we must acknowledge, that whosoever is the Creator of all things must have a direct Dominion over all, as belonging to the possession of the Creator who made all things. Therefore the *Word*, that is, *Christ* as God, hath the supreme and universal Dominion of the world. Which was well expressed by that famous confession of no longer doubting, but believing *Thomas, my Lord John 20. 28.* *and my God.*

For the Second, it is also certain that there was some kind of Lordship given or bestowed on *Christ*, whose very *Unction* proves no less than an imparted Dominion; as *S. Peter* tells us that he was *made both Lord and Christ. What Acts 2. 36.* *David* spake of man, the Apostle hath applied peculiarly unto him, *Thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands: Heb. 2. 7, 8.* *Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet.*

Now a Dominion thus imparted, given, derived or bestowed, cannot be that which belongeth unto God as God, founded in the Divine Nature, because whatsoever is such is absolute and independent. Wherefore this Lordship thus imparted or acquired appertaineth to the humane nature, and belongeth to our Saviour as the Son of man. The right of Judicature is part of this Power; and *Christ* himself hath told us, that the Father *hath given him authority to execute judgment, because he is the Son of man: and by virtue of this delegated authority, the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, and reward every man according to his works. Part of the same Dominion is the power of forgiving sins; as pardoning, no less than punishing, is a branch of the supreme Magistracy: and Christ did therefore say to the sick of the palsy, thy sins be forgiven thee, that we might know that the Son of man had power on earth to forgive sins. Another branch of that Power is the alteration of the Law, there being the same authority required to abrogate or alter, which is to make a Law: and Christ asserted himself to be greater than the Temple, shewing that the Son of man was Lord even of the Sabbath-day.* *John 5. 27.* *Mat. 16. 27.* *Mat. 9. 2, 6.* *Mat. 12. 6, 8.*

This

This Dominion thus given unto *Christ* in his humane nature was a direct and plenary power over all things, but was not actually given him at once, but part while he lived on earth, part after his death and resurrection. For though it be true *that Jesus knew, before his death, that the Father had given all things into his hands*; yet it is observable that in the same place it is written that he likewise knew *that he was come from God, and went to God*: and part of that power he received when he came from God, with part he was invested when he went to God; the first to enable him, the second, not only so, but also to reward him. *For to this end Christ both died, rose, and revived; that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.* After his resurrection he said to the Disciples, *All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. He drunk of the brook in the way, therefore he hath lift up his head.* Because he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross: Therefore God hath also highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name; That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. Thus for and after his death he was instated in a full power and dominion over all things, even as the Son of man, but exalted by the Father, who raised him from the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come; And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be head over all things to the Church.

Now as all the power given unto *Christ* as man had not the same beginning in respect of the use or possession; so neither, when begun, shall it all have the same duration. For part of it being merely Oeconomical, aiming at a certain end, shall then cease and determinate, when that end for which 'twas given shall be accomplished: part, being either due upon the union of the humane nature with the Divine, or upon covenant, as a reward for the sufferings endured in that nature, must be coeval with that union and that nature which so suffered, and consequently must be eternal.

Of the first part of this Dominion did *David* speak, when by the spirit of Prophecy he called his Son his Lord; *The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool*: where the continuation of *Christ's* Dominion over his enemies is promised to be prolonged until their final and total subjection. *For he must reign till he hath put all things under his feet.* And as we are sure of the continuation of that Kingdom till that time, so are we assured of the resignation at that time. *For when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority and power, then shall he deliver up the Kingdom to God, even the Father. And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.* Thus he which was appointed to rule in the midst of his enemies during their rebellion, shall resign up his Commission after their subjection.

But we must not look upon *Christ* only in the nature of a General, who hath received a Commission, or of an Ambassadour, with perfect Instructions; but of the only Son of God, impowered and employed to destroy the enemies of his Father's Kingdom: and though thus impowered and commissioned, though resigning that authority which hath already had its perfect work, yet still the only Son, and the heir of all things in his Father's house, never to relinquish his dominion over those whom he hath purchased with his own blood, never to be deprived of that reward which was assigned him for his sufferings: for if the prize which we expect in the race of our imperfect obedience

dience be an immarcesible crown, if the weight of glory which we look for from him be eternal; then cannot his perfect and absolute Obedience be crowned with a fading power; or he cease ruling over us, who hath always reigned in us. We shall for ever reign with him, and he will make us priests and kings; but so that he continue still for ever High Priest and King of kings.

The certainty of this eternal Dominion of *Christ*, as Man, we may well ground upon the promise made to *David*, because by reason of that promise *Christ* himself is called *David*. For so God speaketh concerning his People; *I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; he shall feed them; and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and my servant David a Prince among them. I the Lord have spoken it.* Ezek. 34. 23. 24. Now the promise was thus made expressly to *David*, *Thy house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee, thy throne shall be established for ever.* 2 Sam. 7. 16. And although that term *for ever* in the Hebrew language may signifie oft-times no more than a certain duration so long as the nature of the thing is durable, or at the utmost but to the end of all things; and so the Oeconomical Dominion or Kingdom of *Christ* may be thought sufficiently to fulfil that promise, because it shall certainly continue so long as the nature of that Oeconomy requireth, till all things be performed for which *Christ* was sent; and that continuation will infallibly extend unto the end of all things: yet sometimes also the same term *for ever* signifieth that absolute eternity of future duration which shall have no end at all: and that it is so far to be extended particularly in that promise made to *David*, and to be fulfilled in his Son, is as certain as the Promise, For the Angel *Gabriel* did give that clear exposition to the blessed Virgin, when in this manner he foretold the glory of him who was then to be conceived in her womb; *The Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end.* Luk. 1. 32, 33. Nor is this clearer in *Gabriel's* explication of the promise, than in *Daniel's* prevision of the performance; who saw in the night-visions, and behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven; And came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion and glory, and a kingdom, that all people and languages should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. Dan. 7. 13, 14.

Thus *Christ* is Lord both by a natural and independent Dominion: as God, the Creator, and consequently the owner, of the works of his hands; and by a derived, imparted and dependent right, as man, sent, anointed, raised and exalted, and so made Lord and *Christ*: which authority so given and bestowed upon him is partly Oeconomical, and therefore to be resigned into the hands of the Father, when all those ends for which it was imparted are accomplished; partly so proper to the union, or due unto the passion, of the humane nature, that it must be co-æval with it, that is, of eternal duration.

The third part of our Explication is, the due consideration of the Object of *Christ's* Dominion; enquiring whose Lord he is, and how *ours*. To which purpose first observe the latitude, extent, or rather universality, of his Power, under which all things are comprehended, as subjected to it. For he is Lord of all, saith *S. Peter*, of all things, and of all persons; and he must be so, who made all things as God, and to whom all power is given as man. To him then all things are subjected whose subjection implieth not a contradiction. For he hath put all things under his feet: but when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him. God only then excepted, whose original Dominion is repugnant to the least sub-

Feb 1. 6.
1st. 2. 8.

jection, all things are subject unto *Christ*, whether they be things in Heaven, or things on Earth. In Heaven he is far above all principalities and powers, *and all the Angels of God worship him*; on earth *all nations are his inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth are his possession*. Thus *Christ* is certainly *our Lord*, because he is the Lord of all; and when all things were subjected to him, we were not excepted.

But in the midst of this Universality of *Christ's* Regal Authority, it will be farther necessary to find some propriety of Dominion, by which he may be said to be peculiarly *our Lord*. 'Tis true, he made us, and not we our selves, we are the work of his hands; but the lowest of his Creatures can speak as much. We are still preserved by his power, and as he made us, so doth he maintain us; but at the same time he feedeth the ravens and cloatheth the lilies of the field. Wherefore beside his original right of Creation, and his continued right of Preservation, we shall find a more peculiar right of Redemption, belonging properly to the sons of men. And in this Redemption, though a single word, we shall find a || double title to a most just Dominion, one of Conquest, another of Purchase.

¶ For the right
understanding
of this double ti-
tle involved in

the word Redemption, it will be necessary to take notice of the ways by which Humane Dominion is acquired, and Servitude introduced. Servi aut nascuntur, aut fiunt, saith the Civilian, Inst. l. 1. tit. 3. but in Theology we say more, Servi & nascuntur, & fiunt. Man is born the servant of God his Maker, man is made the servant of his Redeemer. Two ways in general they observed, by which they came to serve who were not born Slaves. Fiunt aut jure gentium, id est, captivitate; aut jure civili cum liber homo major viginti annis ad pretium participandum sese vendundari passus est. Two ways then also there were by which Dominion over these servants was acquired, by Conquest or by Purchase, and both these were always accounted just. Dionysius Halicarnassus, an excellent Historian, a curious Observer of the Roman Customs, and an exact Judge of their Actions, being a Grecian, justifieth the right which the Masters in Rome claimed over their servants upon these two grounds. Εὐρύχανον δὴ τοῖς Ῥωμαίοις αἱ ἦν διεξιπύνησιν κήσεις καὶ τοῖς δικαιοῦς γινώσκουσι τούτους. ἢ γὰρ ἀνιστάμενοι παρὰ τῷ δημοσίῳ τοῦ νόθου δόρυ παλιμύκεις ἐκ ἡβλὰς εὐραν, ἢ τῷ στρατηγῇ συγκαταστήντες· ἀλλὰ καὶ ἄλλαις ὁρεσίαις καὶ δουρατάσι τοῖς λαβέσθον ἔχον, ἢ πειρώμενοι παρ' ἑτέρον, καὶ τοῖς ἀπὸ τούτων κυρίαν χρυσίδαν ἐκείλωσιν τοῖς δούλοις. Hist. l. 4. Where it is also farther to be observed, that the same persons were made slaves by Conquest, and possessed by Purchase; by Conquest to the City of Rome, by Purchase to the Roman Citizen. The General first took and saved them, and so made them his, that is, reduced them to the Will and Power of the State from which he received his Commission, and in whose name and for whose interest he fought: This State exposed their interest to sale, and so what-ever right had been gained by the conquering sword was devolved on the Roman Citizen for a certain sum of Money paid to the State to defray the charges of that war. Thus every Lord or Master of a slave so taken had full power over him, and possession of him, by right of Purchase, unto which he was first made liable by Conquest. And though not exactly in that manner, yet by that double right, is Christ become our Lord, and we his servants.

Rom 6 16.
Hcb. 2. 14.
Col. 2. 15.

We were first servants of the enemy of God ; for him we obeyed, and his servants we are whom we obey : when Christ through death destroyed him that had the power of death, that is, the Devil, and delivered us ; He spoiled principalities and powers, and made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them. But contrary to the custom of triumphing Conquerours, he did not sell, but buy us ; because while he saved us, he died for us, and that death was the price by which he purchased us ; even so this dying Victor gave us life : upon the Cross, as his triumphant chariot, he shed that precious blood which bought us, and thereby became our Lord by right of Redemption, both as to Conquest and to Purchase.

Ats 3. 15.
1 Cor. 2. 8.
2 Thess 2. 14.

Beside, he hath not only bought us, but provideth for us ; what-ever we have, we receive from him as the Master of the Family ; we hold of him all temporal and eternal blessings, which we enjoy in this, or hope for in another life. He is the *Prince of life*, and by him we live ; he is the *Lord of glory*, and we are *called by his Gospel to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord*. Wherefore he hath us under his dominion, and becomes our Lord by right of *Promotion*.

Nov. 5. 6, 13,
14.

Lastly, Men were not anciently sold always by others, but sometimes by themselves; and whosoever of us truly believe in *Christ*, have given up our names unto him. In our Baptismal vow we bind our selves unto his service, that *henceforth we will not serve sin; but yield our selves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and our members*

as instruments of righteousness unto God: that, as we have yielded our members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity; even so we should yield our members servants to righteousness, unto holiness. And thus the same Dominion is acknowledged by Compact, and confirmed by Covenant; and so Christ become our Lord by right of Obligation.

The necessity of believing and professing our faith in this part of the Article appeareth, first, in the discovery of our condition; for by this we know that we are not our own, neither our persons nor our actions. Know ye not, saith S. Paul, that ye are not your own? for ye are bought with a price. And ancient servitude, to which the Scriptures relate, put the servants wholly in the * possession of their Master; so that their persons were as properly his as the rest of his goods. And if we be so in respect of Christ, then may we not live to our selves but to him; for in this the difference of || service and freedom doth properly consist: we cannot do our * own wills, but the will of him whose we are. Christ took upon him the form of a servant: and to give us a proper and perfect example of that condition, he telleth us, ^a I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. First therefore we must conclude with the Apostle, reflecting upon Christ's Dominion and our Obligation, that ^b none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.

Δούλος δούλου. Id. Eth. 4.8.c.9. And again more expressly, Τίς μὲν ἢ τοῦτο τὸ δούλος, καὶ τίς ἡ διαφορά, ἐκ τούτων διήλθεν. Ὁ γὰρ μὴ αὐτὸν οὖσαι, ἀλλ' ἄλλου ἀνθρώπου, ὅς ἐστι οὖσαι δούλος ὅταν ἄλλος δ' ὅταν ἀνθρώπος, ὅς ἐστιν κτήμα δ' ἀνθρώπου ὢν. So that the definition of a servant according to Aristotle is, he, who being a man, is notwithstanding the possession of a man. And although all Relatives be predicated of each other in obliquo, as pater est filii pater, & filius patris filius; dominus est servi dominus, & servus domini servus: yet he observes a difference in this, that a servant is not only servus domini, but simply domini, but the master is not simply servi, but dominus servi. Ὁ μὲν δεσπότης τῶν δούλων δεσπότης μόνον, ἀπὸ τοῦ ὅτι ἐκ ἐστὶν ὁ δ' δούλος ὁ μόνον δεσπότης δούλος ὅταν, ἀλλ' ὅς ὁ δούλος ἐκείνου. The servant then is so wholly in the possession and for the use of his master, that he is nothing else but a living tool or instrument; inasmuch, says he, that if all tools were like those of Dædalus, or the Tripods of Vulcan, which the Poets feign'd to move of themselves, Artificers would need no under workmen, nor Masters servants. || So Arist. Ethic. 4. πρὸς ἄλλον ζῶν δαλίκον. and in the first of his Rhetoricks on the contrary, ἐλδοθεὶς τὸ μὴ πρὸς ἄλλον ζῶν. * Τὸ ζῶν ὡς βέλεια τις, ἢ ἐλδοθείας ἔργον εἶναι τὸ δούλος ὄν. τὸ, τὸ ζῶν μὴ ὡς βέλεια. Arist. Pol. 6. 2. Quid est libertas? potestas vivendi ut velis. Cic. Par. ^a Job. 3. 33. ^b Rom. 14. 7, 8.

Secondly, the same is necessary both to inforce and invite us to obedience; to inforce us, as he is the Lord, to invite us, as Christ the Lord. If we acknowledge our selves to be his servants, we must bring into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ. He which therefore died, and rose and revived, that he might become the Lord both of the dead and living, maketh not that death and resurrection efficacious to any but such as by their service acknowledge that Dominion which he purchased. He, though he were a Son, yet learned obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect he is become the Author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him. Thus the consideration of the power invested in him, and the necessity of the service due unto him, should force us to obedience; while the consideration of him whom we are thus obliged to serve should allure and invite us. When God gave the Law with fire and thunder, the affrighted Israelites desired to receive it from Moses, and upon that receipt promised obedience. Go thou near, said they to him, and hear all that the Lord our God shall say; and speak thou unto us, and we will hear it and do it. If they interpreted it so great a favour to receive the Law by the hands of Moses; if they made so ready and chearful a promise of exact obedience unto the Law so given; how should we be invited to the same promise, and a better performance, who have received the whole will of God revealed to us by the Son of Man, who are to give an account of our performance to the same Man set down at the right hand of the Father? He first took our nature to become our Brother, that with so near a Relation he might be made our Lord. If then the Patriarchs

did cheerfully live in the land of *Goshen* subject to the power and command of *Egypt*, because that power was in the hand of *Joseph* their exalted brother; shall not we with all readiness of mind submit our selves to the Divine dominion now given to him who gave himself for us? Shall all the Angels worship him, and all the Archangels bow down before him? and shall not we be proud to join with them?

Col. 4. 1.

Lev. 25. 42.

Col. 3. 22, 23,
24.

Thirdly, the belief of Christ's Dominion is necessary for the regulation of all power, authority and dominion on earth, both in respect of those which rule, and in relation to those that obey. From hence the most absolute Monarchs learn, that the people which they rule are not their own, but the Subjects of a greater Prince, by him committed to their charge. Upon this *S. Paul* doth ground his admonition to Masters, *Give unto your servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.* God gave a power to the *Israelites* to make hired Servants of their brethren, but not slaves; and gives this reason of the interdiction, *For they are my servants which I brought forth out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as bondmen.* What tenderness then should be used towards those who are the servants of that Lord who redeemed them from a greater bondage, who bought them with a higher price? From hence those which are subject learn to obey the powers which are of humane ordination, because in them they obey the Lord of all. Subjects bear the same proportion, and stand in the same relation to their Governours, with servants to their Masters: and *S. Paul* hath given them this charge, *Obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.* Neither do we learn from hence only whom, but also how, to obey. For while we look upon one Lord in Heaven, while we consider him as the Lord of lords, we regulate our obedience to them by our service due to him, and so are always ready to obey, but *in the Lord.*

Rom. 12. 12.

Lastly, this Title of our Saviour is of necessary belief for our comfort and encouragement. For being Lord of all, he is able to dispose of all things for the benefit of those which serve him. He who commanded the unconstant winds, and stilled the raging seas, he who multiplied the loaves and fishes, and created wine with the word of his mouth, hath all creatures now under exact obedience; and therefore none can want whom he undertaketh to provide for. *For the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him.* Many are the enemies of those persons who dedicate themselves unto his service; but our enemies are his, and part of his dominion is therefore given him, and to continue in him until all his enemies be made his footstool. Great is the power of the lusts of our flesh which war in our members; but his grace is sufficient for us, and the power of that spirit by which he ruleth in us. Heavy are the afflictions which we are called to undergo for his sake: but if we suffer with him, we shall reign together with him: and blessed be that Dominion which makes us all Kings, that he may be for ever Lord of lords and King of kings.

After this explication, every Christian may perceive what he is to believe in this part of the Article, and express himself how he would be understood, when he maketh this profession of his Faith, *I believe in Christ our Lord.* For thereby we may and ought to intend thus much; I do assent unto this as a certain and infallible truth, taught me by God himself, that *Jesus Christ*, the only Son of God, is the true *Jehovah*, who hath that being which is originally and eternally of it self, and of which all other beings do essentially depend: that, by the right of emanation of all things from him, he hath an absolute,

solute, supreme and universal Dominion over all things, as God : That as the Son of man he is invested with all power in Heaven and Earth : partly Oeconomical, for the compleating our Redemption, and the destruction of our enemies, to continue to the end of all things, and then to be resigned to the Father ; partly consequent unto the union, or due unto the obedience of his Passion, and so eternal, as belonging to that Kingdom which shall have no end. And though he be thus Lord of all things by right of the first creation and constant preservation of them, yet is he more peculiarly the Lord of us who by Faith are consecrated to his service : for through the work of our Redemption he becomes our Lord both by the right of Conquest and of Purchase ; and making us the Sons of God, and providing heavenly Mansions for us, he acquires a farther right of Promotion, which, considering the Covenant we all make to serve him, is at last compleated in the right of a voluntary obligation. And thus I believe in *Christ our Lord*,

ARTICLE III.

Which was conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary.

These words, as they now stand, clearly distinguish the Conception of Jesus from his Nativity, attributing the first to the Holy Ghost, the second to the blessed Virgin : whereas the ancient Creeds made no such distinction, but, without any particular express mention of the Conception, had it only in this manner, * *who was born by the Holy Ghost of the Virgin Mary* ; or *of the Holy Ghost and the Virgin Mary* ; understanding by the word *born*, not only the Nativity, but also the Conception and Generation. This is very necessary to be observed, because otherwise the addition of a word will prove the diminution of the sense of the Article. For they which speak only of the operation of the Holy Ghost in Christ's Conception, and of the manner of his Birth, leave out most part of that which was anciently understood under that one term of being *born* of the Holy Ghost and of the Virgin Mary.

That therefore nothing may be omitted which is pertinent to express the full intent and to comprehend the utmost signification of this Article, we shall consider three Persons mentioned, so far as they are concerned in it. The first is He who was conceived and born ; the second, He by whose energy or operation he was conceived ; the third, She who did conceive and bear him.

and 38. Natus de Spiritu S. & Maria Virgine, *as also the Council of Franckford in Sacrosyllabo. S. Aug. de Fide & Symb. Natus est per Spiritum S. ex Virgine Maria. Nonne de Spiritu S. & Virgine Maria Dei filius unicus natus est ? S. Aug. de Prædest. Sanct. c. 15. & paulo post, quia natus est de Spiritu S. ex Maria Virgine. S. Leo Epist. 10. c. 2. Maximus Taurin. Chrysost. Eucherius Oxon. Author Symbol. ad Catechum. Qui natus est de Spiritu S. ex Maria Virgine. So also Venantius Fortunatus. From whence Fulgentius de Fide ad Petrum Diaconum ; Natus de Spiritu S. ex Maria Virgine, in Symbolo acceptum, & corde ad justitiam eredit, & ore ad salutem S. Ecclesia confitetur. Item prædicandum est quomodo Filius Dei incarnatus est de Spiritu S. ex Maria semper Virgine. Capitul. Caroli 82. And Aleuinus l. 3. de Trinit. c. 1. Dicitur in Symbolo Catholice fidei, quod Christus de Spiritu S. & ex Maria Virgine sit natus. In the ancient MS. transcribed by the learned Archbishop of Armagh, & Συμβόλιον ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ Μαρίας τῆς παρθένου. So Paulus Samosatenus in his fifth Proposition ; Ἰησοῦς ὁ Συμβόλιον ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ Μαρίας τῆς παρθένου. These, omitted in the Nicene Creed, were put in by the Council of Constantinople, upon the occasion of the Apollinarian Heresie, as was observed by Diogenes Bishop of Cyzicum in the Council of Chalcedon ; Οἱ γὰρ ἄγιοι πατέρες οἱ μὲν ταῦτα, τὸ ἱερῶς ὁμῶς, ὃ ἔστιν ὁ ἄγιος ἐν Νίκαιᾳ πατέρες, ἐσφραδίσαν ἐπὶ τούτοις, ἐκ πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ Μαρίας τῆς παρθένου. In the several expositions among the Sermons de Tempore, falsely attributed to S. Aug. Qui conceptus est de Spiritu S. natus ex Virgine Maria. So Eusebius Gallicanus Homil. de Symbolo. And from thence it hath so continued, as we now read it, Which was conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin Mary.*

* Deum Judæi sic prædicant solum, ut negent filium ejus ; negent simul cum eo unum esse qui natus est de Spiritu Sancto ex Maria Virgine. Notatianus. Qui natus est de Spiritu Sancto ex Maria Virgine. Rufinus in Symbolum S. Aug. Ench. ad Laurent. c. 34, 37.

For the first, the Relative in the front of this carries us clearly back unto the former Article, and tells us that he which was thus conceived and born

was

¶ Hunc quem dudum de Patre natum ineffabiliter didicisti, nunc à Spiritu S. templum fabricatum intra scereta uteri Virginalis intellige. *Kuff.*

was *Jesus Christ*, the only Son of God. And being we have already demonstrated that this only Son is therefore called so, because he was begotten by the Father from all eternity, and so of the same substance with him; it followeth that this Article at the first beginning, or by virtue of its connexion, can import no less than this most certain, but miraculous, truth, that ¶ He which was begotten by the Father before all worlds, was now in the fulness of time *conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the Virgin Mary.* Again, being by the Conception and Birth is to be understood whatsoever was done toward the production of the humane nature of our Saviour; therefore the same Relative considered with the words which follow it can speak no less than the Incarnation of that Person. And thus even in the entry of the Article we meet with the Incarnation of the Son of God; that great mystery wrapt up in that short sentence of *S. John, The word was made flesh.*

Indeed the Pronoun hath relation not only unto this but to the following Articles, which have their necessary connexion with and foundation in this Third; for He who was *conceived and born*, and so made man, did in that humane nature suffer, die, and rise again. Now when we say this was the Word, and that Word was God, being whosoever is God cannot cease to be so; it must necessarily follow, that he was made man by joyning the humane nature with the Divine. But then we must take heed lest we conceive, because the Divine nature belongeth to the Father, to which the humane is conjoynd, that therefore the Father should be incarnate, or *conceived and born.* For as certainly as the Son was crucified, and the Son alone; so certainly the same Son was incarnate, and that Son alone. Although the humane nature was conjoynd with the Divinity, which is the nature common to the Father and the Son; yet was that union made only in the person of the Son. Which Doctrine is to be observed against the Heresie of the * *Patripassians*, which was both very ancient and far diffused, making the Father to be incarnate, and becoming man to be crucified. But this very Creed was * always thought to be a sufficient confutation of that fond Opinion, in that the Incarnation is not subjoynd to the first, but to the second, Article; we do not say, *I believe in God the Father Almighty, which was conceived*, but, *in his only Son, our Lord, which was conceived by the Holy Ghost.*

* The Heresie of the Patripassians seems only to have relation to the suffering of our Saviour, because the word signifies no more than the Passion of the Father.

But it is founded in an error concerning the Incarnation, it being out of question that he which was made man did suffer. Epiphanius observes, Noctus was the first which taught this Heresie, who lived 130 years before him, more or less, and when he was questioned for it he denied it: διὰ τὸ οὐδένα πρὸ αὐτοῦ ἐξημέσαι ταύτῃ τῷ πικρίαν. But certainly this Heresie was antecedent than Noctus; for the Patripassiani are named by S. Cyprian, Epist. 73. and Tertullian his Master chargeth it upon Praxeas: Duo negotia Diaboli Praxeas Romæ procuravit, Prophetiam expulit, & Hæresim intulit; Paracletum fugavit, & Patrem crucifixit. Adv. Prax. c. 1. And expressing the absurdity of that opinion; Itaque post tempus Pater natus & Pater passus, ipse Deus Dominus Omnipotens Jesus Christus pradicatur. c. 2. And De Præsc. adv. Hæret. Post hos omnes etiam Praxeas quidem Hæresim introduxit, quam Victorinus corroborare curavit. Hic Deum Patrem Omnipotentem Jesum Christum esse dicit, hunc crucifixum passumque contendit; mortuum præterea seipsum sibi sedere ad dextram suam, cum profana & sacrilega temeritate proponit. c. 53. After Praxeas Noctus taught the same. Ἐτόλμασε λέγειν ὅτι πατέρα πεπονθέναι, says Epiphanius: and being questioned for it, he answered, τί γὰρ κακὸν πεποίηκα; ἐγὼ θεὸν δόξαζω, ἐγὼ ὀψάμαι, καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις πολλοῖς αὐτὸς ἡγομένην πεπονθέναι, ἀποθνήσκειν. He thought the Father and the Son to be the same Person, and therefore if the Son, the Father to be incarnate. Ὑποτάξαται ὁ Χριστὸς ἐδιδάξε, ὅτι αὐτὸν ἦν πατέρα καὶ ὕδιν καὶ ἄριον πνεῦμα. Epiph. Anaceph. After the Noctiani followed the Sabelliani. So Philastrius: Sabellius Discipulus ejus, qui similitudinem sui Doctoris itidem secutus est, unde & Sabelliani postea sunt appellati, qui & Patripassiani, & Praxeani à Præxæ, & Hermogeniani ab Hermogene, qui tuerunt in Africa, qui & ista sentientes abjecti sunt ab Ecclesia Catholica. So S. Aug. Sabelliani dicti sunt quidem Hæretici, qui vocantur & Patripassiani, qui dicunt ipsum Patrem passum esse. Tract. 36. in Joh. This I confess is denied by Epiphanius, who acknowledged Sabellius to have followed Noctus in many things, but not in the Incarnation or Passion of the Father. Σαβελλιανὸς οἱ τὸ δμοῖα ἀνοήτως (i. ἀνοήτως, id est, Nonήτως, vel ἀνοήτως, id est, Nonήτως, as S. Aug. Novato) δόξαζοντες παρὰ τὸ το μόνον λέγουσι γὰρ καὶ πεπονθέναι ὁ πατέρα. This S. Augustine wonders very much at in Epiphanius: Sabelliani, inquit, similia Nocto dogmatizantes, præter hoc quod dicunt Patrem non esse passum; quomodo de Sabellianis intelligi potest, cum sic innotuerint dicere Patrem passum, ut Patripassiani quam Sabelliani sapius nuncupentur? Aug. Hæ. 41. Indeed the Latin Fathers generally call the Sabellians Patripassians; and not only so, but Theodoret doth so describe them as professing one Person, ἐν ᾧ τῇ παλαιᾷ, ὡς πατέρα νομοθετήσαν, ἐν ᾧ τῇ καινῇ, ὡς ὕδιν ὁργανωσάμενον. l. 2. c. 9. After the Sabelliani succeeded in the same Heresie the Priscillianists, as appeareth by Pope Leo, who shews they taught but one person of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost: Quod blasphemice genus de Sabellii opinione sumperunt, cujus discipuli etiam Patripassiani merito nuncupantur; quia si ipse est Filius qui & Pater, crux Filii patris est passio, & quicquid in forma servi Filius Patri obediendo, auscultavit, totum in se Pater ipse suscepit. Ep. 93. c. 1. Thus the Patripassian Heresie, beginning from Praxeas and Hermogenes,

was continued by Noctus, Sabellius and Priscillianus, and mingled with all their several Heresies, the sum and substance of which is thus well set down by Victorinus: *Patipassiani Deum solum esse dicunt quem nos Patrem dicimus; ipsum solum existentem & effectorem omnium, & venisse non solum in mundum, sed & in carnem, & alia omnia quæ nos Filium fecisse dicimus.* * It appeareth plainly that Tertullian confuted Praxeas, by reducing him to these words of the Creed. For when he had first declared, *Nos unicum quidem Deum credimus (which was the objection of Praxeas) sub hac tamen dispensatione, quam οἰκονομίαν dicimus. ut unici Dei sit & Filius sermo ipse, qui ex ipso processerit, per quem omnia facta sunt, & sine quo factum est nihil.* Then he subjoyneth, *Hunc missum à Patre in Virginem, & ex ea natum hominem, & Deum, filium hominis, & filium Dei, & cognominatum Jesum Christum. Hunc passum, hunc mortuum, & sepultum, secundum Scripturas, & resuscitatum à Patre, & in cælos resurrectum, sedere ad dextram Patris, venturum judicare vivos & mortuos.* And that we may be assured that he used these words out of the Creed, it followeth, *Hanc Regulam ab initio Evangelii decurrerit, &c.* This is yet further evident out of Epiphanius, who tells us the Eastern Doctors confuted Noctus in the same manner, by reducing him to the words of the Creed. *Εὐα. δεῦν δὲ δὲ αὐτοῖς, (just as Tertullian, Nos unicum quidem Deum credimus) ἀλλ' ὡς οἰδαὺν δικαίως δὲ δὲ αὐτοῖς, ὡς οἰδαὺν ἐν τῇ Χριστῷ ἵδν δεῦ παθὲν ὡς ἐπαθεν, σποθάνειν καὶ ὡς ἀπέθανεν, ἀναστῆναι, ἀναλῶναι εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν, ὅσα ἐν δεῦτῃ τῇ παλαιῇ, ἐκ χόδωρον κείνων ζῶνται, νεκρῶν.* And when the Argument of Tertullian against Praxeas and the Greeks against Noctus drawn from the Creed did not sufficiently convince the Patipassians, the Church of Aquileia, to exclude them wholly, added these two words to the first Article *Invisibilem, and Impassibilem.* *Invisibilem, to shew he was not incarnate; Impassibilem, to shew he was not crucified.* So Rufinus in the conclusion of his exposition upon these words, *Credo in Deum Patrem Omnipotentem, addeth, His additur Invisibilem & Impassibilem: and then gives the reason, Sciendum quod duo isti sermones in Ecclesie Romane Symbolo non habentur.* Constat autem apud nos additos Hæreseos causâ Sabellii, illius profecto quæ à nostris Patipassiana appellatur, id est, quæ Patrem ipsum vel ex Virgine natum dicit, & visibilem factum, vel passum affirmat in carne. Ut ergo excluderetur talis impietas de Patre, videntur hæc addidisse majores, & invisibilem Patrem atque impassibilem dixisse. Constat enim Filium, non Patrem, in carne & ex carne natum, & ex nativitate carnis Filium visibilem & passibilem factum.

First then, we believe that he which was made flesh was the Word, that he which took upon him the nature of man was not the Father, nor the Holy Ghost, nor any other Person but the only-begotten Son. And when we say that Person was *conceived* and *born*, we declare he was made really and truly Man, of the same humane nature which is in all other men who by the ordinary way of generation are conceived and born. For the ^a *Mediator between God and man is the man Christ Jesus*: That since ^b *by man came death, by man also should come the resurrection of the dead.* As sure then as the first *Adam* and we who are redeemed are men, so certainly is the second *Adam* and our Mediator man. He is therefore frequently called the *Son of man*, and in that nature he was always promised. First ^c *to Eve, as her seed*, and consequently her Son. Then to *Abraham*, ^d *In thy seed shall all the Nations of the earth be blessed*; and that ^e *seed is Christ*, and so the Son of *Abraham*. Next to *David*, as his son to sit upon his throne; and so he is ^f *made of the seed of David according to the flesh*, ^g *the son of David, the son of Abraham*, and consequently of the same nature with *David* and with *Abraham*. And as he was their Son, so are we his Brethren, as descending from the same Father *Adam*; ^h *and therefore it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren.* For he ⁱ *laid not hold on the Angels, but on the seed of Abraham*, and so became not an Angel, but a man.

As then man consisteth of two different parts, Body and Soul, so doth *Christ*: He assumed a Body, at his Conception, of the blessed Virgin. ⁱ *Forasmuch as the children are partakers of the flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same.* The verity of his body stands upon the truth of his *Nativity*; and the actions and passions of his life shew the nature of his flesh.

He was first born with a body which was prepared for him, of the same appearance with those of other Infants; he grew up by degrees, and was so far from being sustained without accustomed nutrition of our bodies, that he was observed even by his enemies to *come eating and drinking*, and when he did not so, he suffered hunger and thirst. Those plowers never doubted of the true nature of his flesh, who *plowed upon his back and made long furrows*. The Thorns which pricked his sacred Temples, the Nails which penetrated through his Hands and Feet, the Spear which pierced his sacred Side, give sufficient testimony of the natural tenderness and frailty of his flesh. And lest his fasting forty days together, lest his walking on the waters and traversing the Seas, lest his sudden standing in the midst of his Disciples when the doors

^a 1 Tim. 2. 5.

^b 1 Cor. 15. 21.

^c Gen. 3. 15.

^d Gen. 22. 18.

^e Gal. 3. 16.

^f Rom. 1. 3.

^g Mat. 1. 1.

^h Heb. 2. 17, 16.

ⁱ Heb. 2. 14.

|| Marcion, ut carnem Christi negaret, negavit etiam nativitatem; aut, ut nativitatem negaret, negavit & carnem: scilicet, ne invicem tibi testimonium redderent & responderent nativitas & caro; quia nec nativitas sine carne nec carnis sine nativitate. Tertul. de Carne Christi, c. 1.

were shut, should raise an opinion that his body was not true and proper flesh he confirmed first his own Disciples, *Feel and see, that a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as you see me to have.* As therefore we believe the coming of Christ, so must we confess him to have come in the verity of our humane nature, even in true and proper flesh. With this determinate expression was it always necessary to acknowledge him: For *every spirit that confesseth Jesus Christ come in the flesh, is of God; and every spirit that confesseth not Jesus Christ come in the flesh, is not of God.* This spirit appeared early in opposition to the Apostolical Doctrine; and Christ, who is both God and Man, was as soon denied to be Man as God. || *Simon Magus*, the Arch-heretick, first began, and many after followed him.

Simon Magus first made himself to be Christ; and what he

feigned of himself, that was attributed by others unto Christ. Dixerat se in monte Sina Legem Mosi in Patris persona dedisse Judæis, tempore Tiberii in Filii persona putative apparuisse. S. Aug. So S. Cyril represents him *ἐν ἐν σαρκί, ἀλλὰ θεοῦ, ὡς Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦν παύσα.* Catech. 6. From this *ἄκησις* of his invention arose the Heresie of the *Δοκηταί*. For Saturnilus, or Saturninus, followed his Disciple Menander with his putative tantum hominem, as Irenæus; and in phantasmate tantum venisse, as Tertullian speaks. After him Valentinus and his followers, Epiphanes, Idorus and Secundus: then the Marcosians, Heraclonites and Ophites, Cerdon, Marcion, Lucanus, and generally the Manichees. These were the *Δοκηταί* or *Φαρισσαί*, all conspiring in this, that Christ was not really what he appeared, nor did truly suffer what he seemed to endure. This early Heresie appeareth by the opposition which S. Ignatius made unto it in his Epistles.

And certainly, if the Son of God would vouchsafe to take the frailty of our flesh, he would not omit the nobler part, our Soul, without which he could not be man. For *Jesus increased in wisdom and stature*; one in respect of his body, the other of his Soul. Wisdom belongeth not to the flesh, nor can the knowledge of God, which is infinite, encrease: he then whose knowledge did improve together with his years must have a subject proper for it, which was no other than a humane Soul. This was the seat of his finite Understanding and directed Will, distinct from the will of his Father, and consequently of his Divine Nature; as appeareth by that known submission, *Not my will, but thine, be done.* This was the subject of those Affections and Passions which so manifestly appeared in him: nor spake he any other than a proper Language, when before his suffering he said, *My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death.* This was it which on the Cross, before the departure from the body, he recommended to the Father; teaching us in whose hands the Souls of the departed are: For *when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.* And as his death was nothing else but the separation of the Soul from his Body; so the life of Christ as man did consist in the conjunction and vital union of that Soul with the Body. So that he which was perfect God, was also perfect man, of a reasonable soul and humane flesh subsisting. Which is to be observed and asserted against the * ancient Hereticks, who taught that Christ assumed humane flesh, but that the Word or his Divinity was unto that Body in the place of an informing Soul.

* Of this kind two several Sects were most remarkable, the Arians and the

Apollinarians. Arius taught that Christ had nothing of man but the flesh, and with that the Word was joined. Ἀρῆς ὁ σὰρκιν μόνον πρὸς σποκευρὼ τῆς θεότητος ὁμολογῇ· ἀντὶ τὸ τὰ ἄνθρωπον ἐν ἡμῖν ἀνθρώπου, τῆς τῆς ψυχῆς, ἢ λόγον ἐν τῇ σαρκὶ λόγον γεγενῆσθαι. Arian de adv. Christi. So Felicianus the Arian, in Vigilius de Unitate Trin. c. 17. Ita enim à majoribus nostris seniper est traditum, quod Christi corpus ad vicem Animæ communis ipsius Filii Dei habitus animarum; nec accensione animalis spiritus indigens fuerit, cui inhabitans fons vitæ potuit conferre quod vixit. Eunomius followed him in this particular: Ἀρῆς ὁ ψυχὴν οὐκ αὐτὸν ἔφασαν οἰκνεῖν, θεότητα δὲ ψυχῆς ἐνεργεῖναι τὸν λόγον. Theod. l. 5. cont. Her. c. 11. Apollinarius distinguished between the Soul and the Mind, the ψυχή and the νῆς, and acknowledged that the word assumed the Body and Soul or ψυχή of man, but not the Mind or Spirit, or the νῆς, but the Word in self was in the place of that. Apollinarians Apollinarius instituit, qui de anima Christi ab Ecclesia Catholica disenserunt, dicentes, sicut Ariani, Deum Christum carnem sine anima suscepisse. In questione testimonio Evangelicis victi, mentem, quæ rationalis est anima hominis, non fuisse in anima Christi, sed pro hac ipsam Verbum in ea fuisse, dixerunt. This was then the clear difference between the Arian and Apollinarian Heresie: Apollinarians quidem carnem & animæ naturam sine mente assumpsisse Deum credunt, Ariani vero carnis tantummodo. Facundus l. 9. So that two things are to be observed in the Apollinarians, their Philosophy, and their Divinity: their Philosophy, in making man consist of three distinct parts, the Body, the Soul and the Mind; their Divinity, in making the humane nature of Christ to consist but of two, the Body and the Soul, and the third to be supplied by the Word. Which is excellently expressed by Nemesius de Nat. Hom. in respect of his Philosophy: Τινες μὲν, ὧν ἓτι καὶ Παλῆστινός, ἀλλὰ ἐν τῷ ψυχῇ, καὶ ἄλλον δὲ νῆν, δογματίζονται. ἐν

τειών τὸν ἀνθρώπον ζωοποιῶν βίοντα, σώματα, καὶ ψυχῆς, καὶ νῦν. Οὗτος ἠκολούθησε καὶ Ἀπολλινάριος ὁ τῆς Λαοδικείας ὑπομύσει ὁπίσκει· πῶτον γὰρ πηξάμενος τὸν θεμέλιον τῆς οἰκίας δόξης, καὶ τὰ λοιπὰ περικυβερνήσει καὶ τὸ οἰκίον δόγμα. and by Theodoret in respect of his Divinity: Σαρκωθῶν καὶ τὸν θεὸν ἐποίησε λόγον, σῶμα καὶ ψυχὴν ἀνθρώπου· ὅσα καὶ τῆς λογικῆς, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀσώτων, ἢν φυσικῶν, ἢ γενεῶν ζωικῶν, τινὲς ὀνομάζουσιν. τὸν δὲ νῦν ἀλλό τι παρὰ τὴν ψυχὴν ἔειπεν, ἐκ ἐξήρπεν ἀνθρώπου, ἀλλὰ ἀρέσαι τὴν θείαν φύσιν εἰς τὸ πληρωσάμεν καὶ νῦν τὴν χάριν.

Thus the whole perfect and || complete nature of Man was assumed by the Word, by him who was *conceived and born* of a woman, and so made a Man. And being the Divine nature which he had before could never cease to be what before it was, nor ever become what before it was not; therefore he who was God before by the Divine Nature which he had, was in this Incarnation made man by that humane nature which he then assumed; and so really and truly was *both God and man. And thus this third Article from the conjunction with the second, teacheth us no less than the two natures really distinct in *Christ* incarnate.

For if both natures were not preserved complete and distinct in *Christ*, it must be either by the conversion and transubstantiation of one into the other, or by commixtion and confusion of both into one. But neither of these ways can consist with the Person of our Saviour, or the Office of our Mediator. For if we should conceive such a mixtion and confusion of substances as to make an union of natures, we should be so far from acknowledging him to be both God and man, that thereby we should profess him to be neither God nor Man, but a Person of a nature as different from both, as all mixt bodies are distinct from each element which concurs unto their composition. Besides, we know there were in *Christ* the Affections proper to the nature of man, and all those Infirmities which belong to us; and cannot be conceived to belong to that nature of which the Divine was but a part. Nor could our Humanity be so commixed or confounded with the Divinity of our Saviour, but that the Father had been made Man as much as the Son, because the Divine nature is the same both of the Father and the Son. Nor ought we to have so || low an esteem of that infinite and independent Being, as to think it so commixed with, or immersed in, the creature.

arbitremur redactas esse substantiam; hujusmodi enim commixtio partis utriusque corruptio est. Deus enim qui capax est, non capibilis, penetrans, non penetrabilis, implens, non implebilis, qui ubique simul totus, & ubique diffusus est per infusionem potentia suæ, misericorditer naturæ mixtus est humanæ, non humana natura naturæ est mixta Divinæ. *Leptorium Libel. Emend.*

Again, as the confusion, so the conversion of natures is impossible. For, first, we cannot with the least shew of probability conceive the Divine nature of *Christ* to be transubstantiated into the humane nature; as those whom they call * *Flandrian Anabaptists* in the *Low-Countries* at this day maintain. There is a plain repugnancy even in the supposition: for the nature of Man must be made, the nature of God cannot be made, and consequently cannot become the nature of Man. The immaterial, indivisible and immortal Godhead cannot be divided into a spiritual and incorruptible Soul, and a carnal and corruptible Body; of which two Humanity consisteth. There is no other Deity of the Father than of the Son; and therefore if this was converted into that Humanity, then was the Father also that Man, and grew in knowledge, suffered, and died. We must not therefore so far stand upon the propriety of speech, when it is written, || *The Word was made flesh*, as to destroy the propriety both of the *Word* and of the *flesh*.

strange force used by men of contrary judgments, and for contrary ends, as to the word ἔσθ'· το. The Socinians endeavouring to prove it can have no other sense than simply suit, the word was flesh. The Flandrian Anabaptists stretching it to the highest sense of tactum est, the Word was made flesh. It is confessed that the Verb ζῶντες in the use of the Greek Language is capable of either interpretation: it is also acknowledged that the most ancient Interpreters were divided in their renditions. For the Syriack rendered it:

|| Quid à Patre Christus acceperat, nisi quod & induerat; hominem sine dubio, carnis animæque texturem. *Titul. de Resurrect. carn. c. 34.* Hoc toto credente jam mundo, puro quod & Demones confiteantur Filium Dei natum de Maria Virgine, & carnem naturæ humanæ atque animam suscepisse. *S. Hier. Apol. 2. advers. Rufinum.* * Νῦν δὲ ἑπεφάνη ἀνθρώποις αὐτὸς Θεὸς ὁ Λόγος· ὁ μόνος ἀμύμων, Θεὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. *Cl. Alexand. adv. Gentes.*

|| Absit ita credere, ut conflabili quodam genere duas naturas in unam

* Teste Episcopo, Instit. Theol. l. 4. c. 8.

|| In this proposition, ὁ λόγος ἐγένετο, there hath been

ומלתא בסרנה הוה Et verbum caro fuit; the ancient Latine, Et verbum caro factum est. It cannot be denied but in the Scriptures it hath been used indifferently in either sense. And the same old Vulgar Translation in some places renders it, as the Syriack doth here, *Matth. 10. 16.* *γινεσθε ὡς οἱ ὄφεις*, *Estote ergo prudentes sicut serpentes*; and 25. *Ἀπε- τὸν τὸν μαθητὴν ἵνα ᾔσκηται ὡς ὁ διδάσκαλος αὐτοῦ*, *Suſcite discipulo ut sit sicut magister ejus*. From whence it is evident that they placed not the force in the signification of the word *γινεσθαι*, but in the circumstance of the matter in which 'twas used. Howsoever, neither of these Interpretations prove either of these Opinions. For if it be acknowledged that the Word was flesh, and it hath been already proved, and presupposed by S. John in his precedent discourse, that the Word had a former being antecedent to his being flesh; it followeth, that he which was before the Word, and was not flesh, if after he were flesh, must be made such. And so the Socinian observation falls. Again, If he which was made flesh was the Word, and after he was made such was still the Word, as certainly he was, and is still the same; then his being made or becoming flesh can in no way evacuate that nature in which he did before subsist. And so the Flandrian Interpretation is of no validity.

¶ This was the proper Opinion of Eutyches, as appeareth by his own Confession in the Council of Chalcedon: *Ὁμολογῶ ἐκ δύο φύσεων γενηθῆναι τὸν Κύριον ἡμῶν τῆς ἐνσώσεως. μὴ δ' ἔξωσαν μίαν εἶναι ὁμολογῶ.* *Ath. 1.* Two distinct natures he confessed at first, but when the Union was

once made he acknowledged but one. But when that Union was made he expressed not, nor could his Followers agree; some attributing it to the Conception, some to the Resurrection, others to the Ascension. Howsoever, when they were united, his Opinion clearly was, that the humane nature was so absorpt into the Divine, so wholly made the same, that it ceased wholly to be what it was, and so there was but one, that is, the Divine, nature remained. This is sufficiently expressed by S. Leo, who was the strongest opposer of him, and speaketh thus of his Opinion, *Serm. 8. de Nativ.* *Hic autem recentioris sacrilegii profanus assertor unionem quidem in Christo duarum confessus est naturarum; sed ipsa unione id dixit effectum, ut ex duabus una remaneret, nullatenus alterius existere substantiā.* And Eranistes in the Dialogue of Theodoret arguing for that Opinion, being urged to declare whether in that Union one nature was made of them both, or one remaining, the other did not so, answered plainly, *Ἐγὼ τὴν θεότητα λέγω μεμνημέναι, κατὰ τοσοῦτον δ' ὑπὸ ταύτης ἢ ἀνθρωπότητα.* * There can be no time in which we may observe the Divine of the Ancients so clearly, as when they write professedly against an Heresie evidently known, and make use generally of the same Arguments against it. Now what the Heresie of Eutyches was is certainly known, and the nature of the Sacrament was generally made use of as an Argument to confute it. Gelatius Bishop of Rome hath written an excellent Book against Eutyches, *De duabus naturis in Christo, in which he propoundeth their Opinion thus*; Eutychiani dicunt unam esse naturam, id est, Divinam; and, solā existentē Deitate, Humanitas illie esse jam destitit. That then which he disputes against is the Transubstantiation of the humane nature into the Divine. The Argument which he makes use of against it is drawn from the Eucharist: *Certe Sacramenta quæ sumimus corporis & sanguinis Christi Divina res est, propter quod & per eadem Divinæ efficimur confortes naturæ: & tamen esse non desinit substantia vel natura Panis & Vini.* Et certe imago & similitudo corporis & sanguinis Christi in actione mysticorum celebrantur. Satis ergo nobis evidenter ostenditur, hoc nobis ipso Christo Domino sentiendum, quod in ejus imagine proficemur, celebramus, & sumimus, ut sicut in hanc, scilicet, in Divinam, transeant, S. Spiritu perficiente, substantiam, permanentes tamen in sua proprietate naturæ; sic illud ipsum mysterium principale, cujus nobis efficientiani virtutemque veraciter representant, ex quibus constat proprie permanentibus, unum Christum, quia integrum verumque, permanentem demonstrant. In which words 'tis plain he affirms the union of the Humane nature of Christ to be the principal mystery, the representation of that mystery to be in the Sacrament of the Eucharist: he concludes from thence, that as in the representation the substance of the Bread and Wine remaineth in the propriety of their own nature, so the humane nature of Christ in the greater mystery doth still remain. In the margin of this place in the Bibliotheca Patrum there is printed *Cautē*, as if there could be any danger in observing the sense of the Fathers, when they speak so expressly and considerately. In the same manner we find a Disputation between an Heretick and a Catholick in the second Dialogue of Theodoret, where Eranistes, as an Heretick, asks Orthodoxus by what names he calls the Bread and Wine after Consecration; who answers, the Body and Blood of Christ: From whence Eranistes argues, *Ὡς περ τοῦτω τὰ σύμβολα τοῦ σωτηρίου σώματος τι καὶ αἵματος ἀλλὰ μὴ οὕτως τῆς ἱερουργίας ὁπτασίως, μὴ δὲ καὶ τὴν ὁπτασίω μεταβάλλεται καὶ ἔτι καὶ γίνεται. ἔτω τὸ σωτήριον σῶμα καὶ ἡ ἀνθρωπίνης τῆς εἰσὶν μετεβλημένη τῶ θανάτῳ.* As the Symbols of the Body and Blood of Christ are one thing before Consecration, and

after that change their name, and become another; so the Body of Christ after his ascension is changed into the Divine substance. To this Orthodoxus answers, 'Εάλως αἱς ὕστερος ἀρκεσιν, You are taken in your own nets. Οὐδὲ γὰρ μὲν ἔχοντες τὰ μυστικά συμβολὰ τ' οὐκ αἰῶς ἔξιστάσαι φύσεως, μήτις γὰρ ὅτι τ' περιέρας ὑσίας, καὶ τὸ σχῆμα, καὶ τὸ εἶδος καὶ οὐκ ἔστι καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν οὐκ αἰῶς περιέρας τῶν. The Bread and Wine even after Consecration leave not their own nature, but remain in their former substance, shape, and form. In the same manner, καὶ ἡμεῖς τὸ σῶμα τὸ μὲν πρότερον εἶδον ἔχον καὶ σχῆμα καὶ περιέρας, καὶ ἀπαλλάττοντες αὐτὸν, τ' τὸ σῶμα, καὶ ὑσίαν: the body of Christ hath the same form, figure and shape, and, indeed, the same bodily substance. And when Eranistes still objects, that the Bread is called the Body, and not Bread, Orthodoxus answers that he is mistaken; Οὐ γὰρ σῶμα μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ σῶμα ζῶντος ὀνομάζεται, ὅπως αὐτὸς ὁ Κύριος περιεσημασμένος. καὶ αὐτὸς τὸ σῶμα θῶον ὀνομάζομεν σῶμα. For it is not only called the Body, but also Bread of life, and the Body it self we call the Divine Body. Who sees not then that Theodoret believed no more that the Bread is converted into the Body, than that the Body is converted into the Divinity of Christ? Who perceives not that he thought the Bread to be as substantially and really Bread after the Consecration, as the Body of Christ is really a Body after his Ascension? The same Argument is used by S. Chrysostome upon the same occasion against the Apollinarians in his Epistle ad Cæsarium, not yet published in Greek, and by Ephraïmus in Photii Bibliotheca against the Eutychians. As therefore all the μεμελετημένους of the Sacramental elements maketh them not cease to be of the same nature which before they were; so the humane nature of Christ, joined to the Divine, loseth not the nature of Humanity, but continueth with the Divinity as a substance in it self distinct; and so Christ doth subsist not only ex, but in, duabus naturis, as the Council of Chalcedon determined against Eutyches.

Being then he which is *Conceived* was the *only Son of God*, and that *only Son* begotten of the substance of the Father, and so always subsisted in the Divine nature; being by the same Conception he was made truly Man, and consequently assumed an humane nature; being these two natures cannot be made one either by commixtion or conversion, and yet there can be but one *Christ* subsisting in them both, because that only Son was he which is conceived and born: it followeth, that the Union which was not made in the nature, was made in the person of the Word; that is, it was not so made, that out of both natures one only should result, but only so, that to one Person no other should be added.

Nor is this Union only a scholastick speculation, but a certain and necessary truth, without which we cannot have one *Christ*, but two *Christs*, one Mediator, but two Mediators; without which we cannot join the second Article of our Creed with the third, making them equally belong to the same person; without which we cannot interpret the sacred Scriptures, or understand the History of our Saviour. For certainly he which was before *Abraham* was in the days of *Herod* born of a woman; he which preached in the days of *Noah*, began to preach in the reign of *Tiberius*, being at that time about thirty years of age; he was demonstrated the Son of God with power who was the seed of *David* according to the flesh; he who died on the Cross raised him from the dead who died so, being put to death through the flesh, and quickened by the Spirit; he was of the fathers according to the flesh who was God over all blessed for ever. Being these and the like actions and affections cannot come from the same nature, and yet must be attributed to the same Person; as we must acknowledge a diversity of natures united, so must we confess the identity of the Person in whom they are conjoined, against the ancient Heresie of the || *Nestorians*, condemned in the Council of *Ephesus*.

2 Pet. 3. 18.
Rom. 9. 5.

|| This Heresie doth most formally contradict these words of

the Creed, because it immediately denies this truth, that the eternal Son of God was conceived and born. And in vain did Nestorius seek not only to avoid it in the Nicene Creed, but to make use of the words of the Creed even against the Unity of the Person of Christ. S. Cyril had well objected the series, order and consequence of that confession: 'Εφ' ἡ ἀρχὴ καὶ μετὰ τὴν αἰώνιον, αὐτὸν τὸν Θεὸν Πατέρα καὶ υἱὸν ὁμολογῶν, τὸν Θεὸν ἀληθινὸν Θεὸν ἀληθινόν, τὸν ὅς ἐστιν τὸν Θεὸν ὅς ἐστιν τὸν Θεὸν, τὸν δὲ τὰ πάντα πεποινην ὁ Πατήρ, καὶ ἐκ τῶν, σαρκωθῆναι τε καὶ ἐνανθρωπήσαι, παθεῖν, ἀναστῆναι τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ, καὶ ἀνελθῆναι εἰς οὐρανόν. The strength of this objection lies in this, that Christ, the only-begotten Son, begotten of the Father before all Worlds, was incarnate. The answer of Nestorius, was in this manner: Πιστεύομεν εἰς τὸν Κύριον ἡμεῖς Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν, τὸν ὅν αὐτὸν τὸν μονογενῆ, σαρκωθῆναι ὅπως Ἰησοῦς, Χριστὸς, καὶ μονογενῆς, καὶ υἱὸς, πρότερον θέντες, τὰ κοινὰ τ' θεότητι καὶ ἀνθρωπότητι, ὡς δευτέρως, ὀνομάζονται, τότε τ' ἐνανθρωπήσας, καὶ τὰ πάθος, καὶ τὰ ἀνάστασις, ἐποικοδομήσει παράδοξον. And the strength, or rather the weakness, thereof is this: that first the Council placed the name of *Jesui*, Christ, and the only-begotten Son, names common to the Divinity and Humanity of Christ; and then upon them built the doctrine of his Incarnation. Whereas it is evident that, supposing the Only-begotten a term common to the Humanity and Divinity, yet the Council clearly expounds it of the eternal generation, adding immediately, begotten of his Father before all Worlds; neither is there any word between that exposition and the Incarnation, but such as speak wholly of Christ as God. Therefore that only-begotten Son, who was begotten of his Father before all Worlds, descended from Heaven, and was incarnate. Thus S. Cyril in his second Epistle to Nestorius, and Nestorius in his second to him. Which mistake of his seems yet more strange to me, when I consider in the same Epistle of Nestorius that fundamental truth asserted, which of it self sufficiently, nay fully, confutes his Heresie: For he acknowledgeth the name of Christ to be ἀπαθὴς καὶ παθητὴς ὑσίας ἐν μοναδικῷ προσώπῳ τοῦ σπουδαίου

ονυοειαν ονπερνικω, and consequently Christ himself to be a single Person in a double nature, passible and impassible: which once granted, it evidently followeth, that he which was born from eternity was also born in time, for by those several natures he had those several natures; that he which was impassible as God, might, and did suffer as Man, because the same Person was of an impassible and a passible nature; impassible as God, passible as Man. Wherefore by that which Nestorius hath confessed, and notwithstanding that which he hath objected, it is evident out of the Nicene Creed, that the Son of God, begotten of his Father before all Worlds, was incarnate and made Man; and as evident out of the Apostles Creed, especially expounded by the Nicene, that the same only-begotten Son was conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the Virgin Mary.

By the holy Ghost.

HAVING thus dispatched the consideration of the first Person concerned in this Article, and the Actions contained in it so far as distinctly from the rest they belong to him, we descend unto the other two concerned in the same; and first to him whose operation did precede in the Conception, the Holy Ghost. Which second part some may think to require a threefold consideration; first, of the Conception, secondly, of the Person, thirdly, of the Operation. But for the Person or existence of the Holy Ghost, that is here only mentioned obliquely, and therefore to be reserved for another Article where it is propounded directly. And for the Conception it self, that belongeth not so properly to the Holy Ghost, of whom the Act cannot be predicated. For though Christ *was conceived by the Holy Ghost*, yet the Holy Ghost did not conceive him, but said unto the Virgin, *Thou shalt conceive*. There remaineth therefore nothing proper and peculiar to this second part, but that Operation of the Holy Ghost in Christ's Conception, whereby the Virgin was enabled to conceive, and by virtue whereof Christ is said to be *conceived by him*.

Now when we say the Conception of our Saviour was wrought by the operation of the Spirit, it will be necessary to observe, first, what is excluded by that attribution to the Spirit; secondly, what is included in that operation of the Spirit.

For the first of these we may take notice in the Salutation of the Angel, when he told the blessed Virgin she should conceive and bring forth a son, she said, *How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?* By which words she excludeth first all men, and then her self: all men, by that assertion, *I know not a man*; her self, by the question, *How shall this be, seeing it is so?* First, our Melchizedek had no father on earth, in general; not any man, in particular, not Joseph. 'Tis true, *his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph*: but 'tis as true, *before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost*. We read in S. Luke, that *the parents brought up the child Jesus into the Temple*: but these Parents were not the Father and the Mother, but as it followeth, *Joseph and his Mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him*. 'Tis true, Philip calleth him *Jesus of Nazareth the son of Joseph*; and, which is more, his Mother said unto him, *Behold, thy Father and I have sought thee sorrowing*: but this must be only the reputed Father of Christ, he being only, *as was supposed, the son of Joseph, which was the son of Eli*. Whence they must needs appear without all excuse who therefore affirm our Saviour to have been the proper son of Joseph, because the Genealogy belongs to him; whereas in that very place where the Genealogy begins, Joseph is called the supposed Father. How can it then therefore be necessary Christ should be the true son of Joseph, that he may be known to be the son of David, when in the same place

where it is proved that Joseph came from David, it is denied that Christ came from Joseph? And that not only in S. Luke, where Joseph begins, but also in S. Matthew, where he ends the Genealogy. ^a *Jacob begat Joseph the husband*

^a Math. 1. 16.
Indeed in our
Translation
whom may re-
late to both, as well as one, and to Joseph as well as Mary; but in the Original it evidently belongs to Mary: τὸν Ἰωσήφ τὸν ἀνδρὸς
Μαρίας, ὃς ἦν ἐξ οὐνόθεν Ἰησοῦς.

of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. Howsoever then the Genealogies are described, whether one belong to Joseph, the other to Mary, or both to Joseph, it is from other parts of the Scriptures infallibly certain, not only that Christ descended lineally from David according to the flesh, but also that the same Christ was begotten of the Virgin Mary, and not by Joseph.

Secondly, as the blessed Virgin excluded all mankind, and particularly Joseph, to whom she was then espoused, by her assertion; so did she exclude her self by the manner of the question, shewing that of her self she could not cause any such Conception. Although she may be thought the root of Jesse, yet could she not germinate of her self; though Eve were the Mother of all living, yet generation was founded on the Divine benediction which was given to both together: For God blessed them, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth. Though Christ was promised as the seed of the Woman; yet we must not imagine that it was in the power of Woman to conceive him. When the Virgin thinks it impossible she should conceive because she knew not a man, at the same time she confesseth it otherwise as impossible, and the Angel acknowledgeth as much in the satisfaction of his answer, For with God nothing shall be impossible. God then it was who immediately and miraculously enabled the blessed Virgin to conceive our Saviour; and while Mary, Joseph, and all men are denied, no person which is that God can be excluded from that operation.

But what is included in the conception by the Holy Ghost, or how his Operation is to be distinguished from the Conception of the Virgin, is not so easily determined. The words by which it is expressed in Scripture are very general: First, as they are delivered by way of promise, prediction, or satisfaction to Mary; The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: Secondly, as they suppose the Conception already past; When his Mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost; and give satisfaction unto Joseph, Fear not to take to thee Mary thy Wife, for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. Now being the expressions in the Scriptures are so general, that from thence the operation of the Spirit cannot precisely be distinguished from the concurrence of the Virgin; much less shall we be able exactly to conclude it by that late distinction made in this Article, conceived by the Holy Ghost, born of the Virgin; because it is certain that the same Virgin also conceived him according to the Prophecy, Thou shalt conceive and bear a Son: and therefore, notwithstanding that distinction, the difficulty still remains, how he was conceived by the Spirit, how by the Virgin. Neither will any difference of * Propositions be sufficient rightly to distinguish these operations. Wherefore there is no other way to bound or determine the Action of the Holy Ghost, but by that concurrence of the Virgin which must be acknowledged with it. For if she were truly the Mother of Christ, (as certainly she was, and we shall hereafter prove) then is there no reason to deny to her in respect of him whatsoever is given to other Mothers in relation to the fruit of their womb; and

* As conceptus de Spiritu S. natus ex Maria Virgine. S. Aug. indeed hath delivered a distinction between De and Ex, after this manner, speaking in those words of the A-

postle, Quoniam ex ipso, & per ipsum, & in ipso, sunt omnia. Ex ipso non hoc significat quod de ipso. Quod enim de ipso est potest dici ex ipso, non autem omne quod ex ipso est recte dicitur de ipso. Ex ipso enim celum & terra, quia ipse fecit ea; non autem de ipso, quia non de substantia sua. Sicut aliquis homo si gignat filium, & faciat domum, ex ipso filius, ex ipso domus; sed filius de ipso, sicut domus de terra & ligno. De Nat. Boni adv. Manich. c. 27. This distinction, having no foundation in the Latin Tongue, is ill made use of for the illustration of this Article, because in the Greek Language of the Testament there is no such diversity of Prepositions: for as we read of Mary ἡ ἑνὴν ὁ Ἰησοῦς, so also of the Holy Ghost, ἐν ἑνὴν ἐν τῷ ἁγίῳ, ἡ ἐν τῷ ἁγίῳ, and τὸ ἐν αὐτῇ ἡ ἐν τῷ ἁγίῳ. It is therefore said as well ἐν τῷ ἁγίῳ, as ἐν Μαρίᾳ. Again, the Vulgar observeth no such difference, as rendering for the one, de qua natus est Jesus, and for the other, in utero habens de Spiritu S. Correspondently in the Greek Creeds, ἐν τῷ ἁγίῳ, ἡ ἐν Μαρίᾳ, or, as in the Nicene, ἐν τῷ ἁγίῳ καὶ Μαρίᾳ. And the Latin not only de Spiritu S. ex Maria Virgine, but sometimes de Sp. S. & Maria

Maria Virgine, and de Maria Virgine. Chrysol. and S. Aug. often de Trinitate. Wherefore in vain have the Schools first accepted of S. Augustine's distinction, and then applied it to Christ's conception; first taking the Preposition *de* to signify no less than a procession from the substance of the cause, and then acknowledge Christ so begotten of the Holy Ghost, because the eternal Son who was so begotten was of the same substance with the Holy Ghost. Thus Thomas Aquinas has delivered the subtilty, Sum. p. 3. q. 32. a. 2. In Spiritu S. duplex habitudo consideratur respectu Christi. Nam ad ipsum filium Dei, qui dicitur esse conceptus, habet habitudinem consubstantialitatis; ad corpus autem ejus habet habitudinem cause efficientis. Hæc autem præpositio *De* utramque habitudinem designat, sicut cum dicimus hominem aliquem esse de suo patre. Et ideo convenienter dicere possumus Christum esse conceptum de Spiritu S. hoc modo, quod efficientia Sp. S. referatur ad corpus assumptum, consubstantialitas verò ad personam assumptam. But this distinction of Consubstantiality and effective Causality can make nothing for the propriety of the Phrase; for the Preposition *De* signifieth the material cause as well as the efficient, it must do so in respect of that which is the effect, if it require that the thing which is made be made of the substance of that *de quo est*: then must Christ, according unto that which is made, be made of the substance of the Holy Ghost; or, to speak in the words of the Scripture, Quod in ea natum est, de Spiritu Sancto est. Where either that which was conceived in the Virgin must be acknowledged of the substance of the Holy Ghost, or else the Preposition *De* must not be taken in S. Augustine's sense. Howsoever, being there is but one Preposition, *ἐκ*, common to both in the Original Greek; being the Vulgar Translation useth *De* indifferently for either; being where they have distinguished *De* and *Ex*, they have attributed *Ex*, which doth not signify Consubstantiality, to the Virgin, of whom they confess he did assume the substance of his Body, and *De*, which signifieth (as they say) Consubstantiality, to the Holy Ghost, of whose substance he received nothing: it followeth, that the difference in the Prepositions can no way declare the different concurrence of the Spirit and the Virgin in Christ's Conception.

consequently, no more is left to be attributed to the Spirit, than what is necessary to cause the Virgin to perform the actions of a Mother. When the Scripture speaketh of Regeneration, or the second birth, it denieth all which belongeth to natural procreation, describing the *sons of God* as *begotten not of bloods, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God*: And in the Incarnation of our Saviour, we remove all will or lust of the flesh, we deny all will of man concurring; but as the *bloods* in the Language of the *Hebrews* did signify that substance of which the flesh was formed in the womb, so we acknowledge in the generation of *Jesus Christ*, that he was made of the substance of his Mother.

John 1. 13.

But as he was so made of the substance of the Virgin, so was he not made of the substance of the Holy Ghost, whose essence cannot at all be made. And because the Holy Ghost did not beget him by any communication of his essence, therefore he is not the Father of him, though he were conceived by him. And if at any time I have said, Christ was begotten by the Holy Ghost of the *Virgin Mary*, if the Ancients speak as if he generated the Son, it is not so to be understood, as if the Spirit did perform any proper act of generation, such as is the foundation of Paternity.

¶ As Chrysologus Sermon. 57. Ubi Spiritus generat, Virgo parit, totum divinum geritur, nihil humanum. Et Sermon. 62. Strepenti mundo solus aperit quid est, quod Spiritus generat, Virgo concipit, Virgo parit.

* Deus ipse met ad sanguinem Mariæ addidit aliam materiam, ex quibus deinde Christi

Again, as the Holy Ghost did not frame the humane nature of Christ out of his own substance; so must we not believe that he formed any part of his flesh of any other substance than of the Virgin. For certainly he was of the Fathers according to the flesh, and was as to that truly and totally the Son of *David* and of *Abraham*. The *Socinians*, who will acknowledge no other way before Christ's Conception by which he could be the Only-begotten Son of God, have been forced to invent a strange conjunction in the nature of *Christ*: one part received from the Virgin, and so consequently from *David* and from *Abraham*, from whom that Virgin did descend; another * framed by the Spirit, and conjoynd with it: by the one part of which Humanity he was the Son of man, as by the other part he was the Son of God.

flus conceptus & natus est. Smalcus, De Vero & Naturali Dei Filio, c. 2. Verum manet generationem & hanc dici posse, quatenus in Deum ea cadere potest, si ad sanguinem Mariæ addita sit ex parte Dei materia, ex qua cum sanguine Mariæ junctus natus sit Christus. Ib. c. 3. What this was thus added to the substance of the Virgin, he elsewhere explains: Nos Dei virtutem in Virginis utero aliquam substantiam creatam vel immisit aut ibi creasse affirmamus, ex qua, juncto eo quod ex ipsius Virginis substantia accessit, verus homo generatus fuit. This he doth not only without any authority affirm, but ground upon it the Sonship of Christ. For so it follows; Alias enim homo ille Dei Filius à conceptione & nativitate propriè non fuisset. And again; Necessitas magna fuit ut Christus ab initio viæ suæ esset Deo Filius, qualis futurus non fuisset, nisi Dei virtute aliquid creatum fuisset quod ad constituendum Christi corpus una cum Mariæ sanguine concurrir. Thus while they deny the eternal generation of the Son, they establish a temporal in such manner as it is not consonant with that Word which they pretend wholly to follow, and have made a body of Christ partly descending from the Father, partly not: and whereas as man he is like to us in all things, sin only excepted; they have invented a body, partly like ours, partly not: and so in no part totally like. Indeed some of the Ancients did speak so as to make the Holy Ghost the semen Dei: as Tertullian; Ergo jam Dei filius ex Patris Dei semine, i. e. Spiritu, ut esset hominis filius, caro ei sola erat ex hominis carne sumenda sine viri semine. Vacabat enim viri semen apud habentem Dei semen. De carne Christi, c. 18. And S. Hilary calls it Sementivam incunentis Spiritus efficaciam, l. 2. de Trin. But in this they

they only understood the Operation of the Spirit, loco seminis. And whoſoever ſpoke of any proper ſemen, they abhorred; as appears by the 191. Sermon de Tempore: Nec, ut quidam ſcleratiſſimi opinantur, Spiritum S. dicimus pro ſemine fuiſſe, ſed potentia & virtute Creatoris operatum. I know not whether be the greateſt folly; to make the Holy Ghoſt the Father, as theſe men have done, by creating part of his body by way of ſeminal conjunction; or to make the ſame Spirit Mother of Chriſt, as the Nazaræans did. In Evangelio Hebræorum quod leſſitant Nazaræi Salvator inducitur loquens, *Modo me arripuit Mater mea, Spiritus Sanctus.* There is only this difference, that one is founded upon no authority of Scripture, the other upon the authority of a pretended but no Scripture: the one maketh the Holy Ghoſt a partial, the other a total, mother.

The belief of this is neceſſary to prevent all fear or ſuſpicion of ſpot in this Lamb, of Sin in this Jeſus. Whatſoever our original corruption is, howſoever diſpleaſing unto God, we may be from hence aſſured there was none in him, in whom alone God hath declared himſelf to be well pleaſed. *Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? ſaith Job;* a clean and undefiled Redeemer out of an unclean and defiled nature? He whoſe name is Holineſs, whoſe operation is to ſanctifie, the Holy Ghoſt. Our Jeſus was like unto us in all things, as born of a Woman; ſin only excepted, as *conceived by the Holy Ghoſt.* This original and total ſanctification of the humane nature was firſt neceſſary, to fit it for the perſonal union with the Word; who, out of his infinite love, humbled himſelf to become fleſh, and at the ſame time, out of his infinite purity, could not defile himſelf by becoming ſinful fleſh. Secondly, the ſame ſanctification was as neceſſary in reſpect of the end for which he was made man, the redemption of mankind: that as the || firſt Adam was the fountain of our impurity, ſo the ſecond Adam ſhould alſo be the pure fountain of our righteouſneſs. ^a God ſending his own ſon in the likenes of ſinful fleſh, condemned ſin in the fleſh; which he could not have condemned, had he been ſent in ſinful fleſh. ^b The Father made him to be ſin for us, who knew no ſin, that we might be made the righteouſneſs of God in him; which we could not have been made in him, but that he ^c did no ſin, and knew no ſin. For whoſoever is ſinful wanteth a Redeemer; and he could have redeemed none who ſtood in need of his own redemption. We are redeemed ^d with the precious blood of Chriſt: therefore precious, becauſe of a Lamb without blemiſh and without ſpot. Our atonement can be made by no other High-prieſt than by him who is ^e holy, harmleſs, undefiled, and ſeparate from ſinners. We cannot ^f know that he was manifeſted to take away our ſins, except we alſo know that in him is no ſin. Wherefore, being it is ſo neceſſary to believe the original holineſs of our humane nature in the Perſon of our Saviour; it is as neceſſary to acknowledge that way by which we may be fully aſſured of that ſanctity, his conception by the Holy Ghoſt.

|| Illud unum peccatum, quod tam magnum in loco & habitu tanque ſcleritatis admiſſum eſt, ut in uno homine originaliter, acque, ut ita dixerim, radicaliter, totum genus humanum damnaretur, non ſolvitur ac diluitur niſi per unum Mediatorem Dei & hominum, hominem Chriſtum Jeſum, qui ſolus potuit ita naſci, ut ei opus non eſſet

renasci. S. Auguſt. Enchirid. cap. 48. ^a Rom. 8. 3. ^b 2 Cor. 5. 21. ^c 1 Pet. 2. 22. ^d 1 Pet. 1. 19. ^e Heb. 7. 26. ^f 1 Joh. 3. 5. in quo non eſt peccatum, ipſe venit auferre peccatum. Nam ſi eſſet in illo peccatum, auferendum eſſet illi, non ipſe auferret. S. Auguſt.

Again, it hath been * obſerved, that by this manner of Chriſt's conception is declared the freedom of the Grace of God. For as the Holy Ghoſt is God, ſo is he alſo called the Gift of God: and therefore the humane nature in its firſt original, || without any precedent merit, was formed by the Spirit, and in its formation ſanctified, and in its ſanctification united to the Word; ſo that the Grace was coexiſtent, and in a manner connatural with it. The Myſtery of the Incarnation is frequently attributed in the Scriptures to the love, mercy and goodneſs of God. ^a Through the tender mercy of our God the day-ſpring from on high hath viſited us: In this ^b the kindneſs and love of God our Saviour

* By S. Auguſt. Ex hoc, quod de Spiritu S. eſt ſecundum hominem nati- vitas Chriſti, quid aliud quam ipſa gratia demonſtratur? Ench. c. 27. || Modus iſte quo natus eſt Chriſtus deſp.

S. non ſicut filius, & de Maria Virgine ſicut filius, inſinuat nobis gratiam Dei, quâ homo, nullis præcedentibus meritis, in ipſo exordio naturæ ſuæ quo eſſe cœpit, verbo Dei copularetur in tantam Perſonæ unitatem, ut idem ipſe eſſet filius Dei qui filius hominis, & filius hominis qui filius Dei: ac ſic in humanæ naturæ aſſumptione fieret quadammodo ipſa gratia naturalis, quæ nullum peccatum poſſet admittere. Quæ gratia propterea per Spiritum S. fuerat ſignificanda, quia ipſe propriè ſic eſt Deus, ut etiam dicatur Dei Donum. Id. c. 40. ^a Luke 1. 78. ^b Tit. 3. 4.

* Cum ad naturam Dei non pertineat natura humana, ad personam tamen unigeniti Filii Dei per gratiam pertinet humana natura; & tantam gratiam, ut nulla sit major, nulla prorsus aequalis.

Neque enim illam susceptionem hominis ulla merita præcesserunt; sed ab illa susceptione merita ejus cuncta cœperunt. *S. Aug. Tract. 82. in Joan.*

toward man appeared. And though these and such other Scriptures speak properly of the love and incy of God to man alone, offered unto him in the Incarnation of our Saviour, and so directly exclude the merits of other men only; yet because they speak so generally with reference to God's mercy, they may well be thought to exclude all universally. Especially considering the impossibility of * merit in *Christ's* Humanity, in respect of his Conception; because all desert necessarily precedeth its reward, and *Christ* was not man before he was conceived, nor can that merit which is not.

John 1. 13.

¶ Ea gratia fit ab initio fidei suæ homo quicumq; Christianus, quâ gratiâ

homo ille ab initio suo factus est Christus. De ipso Spiritu & hic renatus, de quo est ille natus. Eodem Spiritu fit in nobis remissio peccatorum, quo Spiritu factum est ut nullum haberet ille peccatum. *S. Aug. de Prædest. Sanct. c. 15.* * Nolite desperare; quod semel natum est ex Maria, quotidie & in nobis nascitur. *Hieron. Comm. in Psal. 94. 17.*

Thirdly, whereas we are commanded to be holy, and that even as he is holy; by this we learn from what foundation this holiness must flow. We bring no such purity into the world, nor are we sanctified in the womb: but as he was sanctified at his Conception, so are we at our Regeneration. He was conceived not by man, but by the Holy Ghost; and we are *not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.* The same overshadowing power which formed his humane nature, reformeth ours; and the || same Spirit assureth us a remission of our sins, which caused in him an exemption from all sin. He which was born for us upon his Incarnation, is born * within us upon our Regeneration.

All which considered, we may now render a clear explication of this part of the Article, whereby every person may understand what he is to profess, and express what is the Object of his Faith, when he saith, I believe in *Jesus Christ, which was conceived by the Holy Ghost.* For hereby he ought to intend thus much; I assent unto this as a most necessary and infallible truth, that the only-begotten Son of God, begotten by the Father before all worlds, very God of very God, was conceived and born, and so made man, taking to himself the humane nature, consisting of a Soul and Body, and conjoyning it with the Divine in the unity of his person. I am fully assured that the Word was in this manner made flesh, that he was really and truly conceived in the womb of a Woman, but not after the manner of men; not by carnal copulation, not by the common way of humane propagation, but by the singular, powerful, invisible, immediate operation of the Holy Ghost, whereby a Virgin was beyond the Law of nature enabled to conceive, and that which was conceived in her was originally and compleatly sanctified. And in this latitude I profess to believe in *Jesus Christ, which was conceived by the Holy Ghost,*

Born of the Virgin Mary.

THE third Person considerable in this third Article is represented under a threefold description, of her *Name*, *Condition* and *Action*: The first telleth us who it was, it was *Mary*; the second informeth us what she was, a *Virgin*; the third teacheth us what she did, she conceived and bare our Saviour, and brought forth the Son of God: which was *Born of the Virgin Mary*.

The *Evangelist*, relating the Annunciation, taketh particular notice of this Name; for shewing how an Angel was sent unto a *Virgin espoused to a man*, Luke 1. 27. he first observeth that his name was *Joseph*; and then that the *Virgin's name was Mary*: Not for any peculiar Excellency in the Name it self, or any particular Application to the *Virgin* arising from the Origination of it, || as some have conceived; but only to denote that singular Person, which was then so well known to all men, being espoused unto *Joseph*, as appeareth by the question of his admiring Countrymen, *Is not this the Carpenter's Son? is not his Mother called Mary?* Otherwise the Name was common even at that time to many; to the *Sister of Lazarus*, to the *Mother of James and Joses*, to the *Wife of Cleophas*, to the *Mother of John* whose Surname was *Mark*, to her which was *of Magdal in Galilee*, to *her* who bestowed much labour on *S. Paul*: Nor is there * any original distinction between the Name of these and of the Mother of our Lord. For as the name of *Jesus* was the same with *Josuah*, so this of *Mary* was the same with * *Miriam*. The first of which Name recorded was the Daughter of *Amram*, the Sister of *Moses* and *Aaron*, a Prophetess; to whom the bringing of *Israel* out of *Aegypt* is attributed as well as to her Brethren. *For I brought thee up out of the land of Aegypt*, saith the Lord, *and redeemed thee out of the house of servants; and I sent before thee Moses, Aaron and Miriam*. As she was exalted to be one of them who brought the people of God out of the *Aegyptian bondage*; so was this *Mary* exalted to become the Mother of that Saviour, who through the red Sea of his Blood hath wrought a plenteous Redemption for us, of which that was but a Type: and even with the confession of the lowliness of an Handmaid she seems to bear that || Exaltation in her Name.

|| For some have thought the dignity of the Virgin to be denoted in her name. As Greg. Nyss. (or rather his interpolator). Hom. in Natal. Christi: Ἐπειδὴν ἐτέχθη τὸ παῖδιον, ἀνέμασε μὲν αὐτῷ Μαρίαν, ὡς ἀνὴρ διὰ τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τὸν διασημάνειν τῆς χάριτος. *Mirroring, as I conceive, the Origination of Mary for that of Anna, her Mother, &c. Thus he thought Grace, others Dominion, to be contained in*

her Name. Ἡ Μαρία ἐκλυμδεται κυρία, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐλπίς. Κύριον δὲ ἔτεκε τὴν ἐλπίδα τῶ παντὸς κόσμου Χριστόν. Author Hom. de Laud. B. Mariæ, sub nomine Epiphaniæ. Τίτλη τοιαυτοῦ ἡ χάρις (τὸτο δὲ ἡ Ἀννα ἐκλυμδεται) τὴν κυρίαν τὸτο γὰρ σημαίνει ἡ Μαρία τὸ ὄνομα. Damasc. Orthod. Fid. l. 4. c. 15. S. Hieron. de Nom. Hebraicis: Sciendum quod Maria sermone Syro Domina nuncupatur. So Chrysologus; Dignitas Virginis annunciator ex nomine: Nam Maria Hebræo sermone, Latine Domina nuncupatur. Vocat ergo Angelus Dominam, ut Dominatoris genitricem trepidario deferat servitutis, quam nasci & vocari Dominam ipsa sui genuinis fecit & impetravit autoritas. Serm. 142. Sermone Syro Maria Domina nuncupatur, & pulchre, quia Dominum genuit. Isidor. Hispal. Orig. l. 7. c. 10. The same Isidore with others gives another Etymology: Maria illuminatrix, sive stella maris; genuit enim lumen mundi. And Bernard. Homil. 2. super Missus est, Loquimur pauca & super hoc nomine, quod interpretatur maris stella dicitur, & maris Virgini valde convenienter aptatur. Ipsa namque aprissime fidei comparatur, quia sicut sine sui corruptione fidus suum emittit radium, sic absque sui latione Virgo parit filium. So far not amiss. But when from a bad Etymology he makes worse Divinity, calling her the Star of Jacob, and attributing unto her the Light of our Minds, the Life of our Graces, and Extirpation of our Vices, (the Work of the Spirit of Christ;) when in the midst of all our Temptations, Horrors of Conscience, and depths of Despair, he adviseth us immediately to a Respice Stellam, Mariam cogita, Mariam invoca; his Interpretation can warrant no such Devotion. This Etymology also descendeth from S. Hieron. who in his Interpretation of the Names in Exodus, as from Philo, Maria illuminatrix mea, vel, illuminans eos, aur smyrna maris, vel stella maris. And again, on the Names in S. Matthew, Mariam plerique existimant interpretari, illuminant me isti, vel illuminatrix, vel smyrna maris; sed mihi nequaquam videtur. Melius autem est ut dicamus sonare eam stellam maris, sive amarum mare. Ἐκλυμδεται γὰρ ἡ Μαρία ὡς ἀνὴρ διὰ τὴν ἐπαγγελίαν τὸν διασημάνειν τῆς χάριτος. Homil. de Laudibus B. Mariæ. Dicta sunt & ante Mariæ multæ: nam & Maria soror Aaron dicta fuit, sed illa Maria amaritudo maris vocabatur. S. Ambros. Instr. Virg. c. 5. Indeed that ab amaritudine, without the adjection of mare, is the Etymology observed by the Jews; as appears by the Author of the Life of Moses, who relating how Amram took Jochebed to wife, and of her begat a Daughter, addeth, ותקרא שמה מרי כי בעת ההיא נקרא שם בני ישראל מרים, she was called Miriam, because at that time the Egyptians, who were the Off-spring of Cham, made the lives of the Sons of Israel bitter. And in the like manner Seder Olam, נקרא שם מרים. * Matth. 13. 55. * John 11. 1. * Matth. 27. 56. * John 19. 25. * Acts 12. 12. * Luke 8. 2. * Rom.

5 Rom. 16. 6. * This is to be observed, by reason of some learned men, who make the name of the Virgin different from that of others called Mary in the Gospel, upon two grounds, in respect of the Accent, and the termination; the one being *Μαριάμ*, the other *Μαρία*: the first with an Hebrew termination, indeclinable, and the Accent in ultima; the latter with a Greek termination, declinable, and the Accent in penultima. As *ὄνομα τῆς παρθένου Μαριάμ*, Luk. 1. 27. in the Nominative; *παρθένον Μαριάμ*, Luk. 1. 30. in the Dative; *καὶ ποσὴν τὴν παρθένον Μαριάμ*, Matt. 1. 20. in the Accusative; and *καὶ ποθε*, Luk. 1. 30. in the Vocative case. All which belong to the Virgin, who is never named *Μαρία*: as none of the rest by any of the Evangelists is ever called *Μαριάμ*. But notwithstanding this observation, we find the same Virgin's name declined: as *παύσις ἡμεῶν τῆς ἁγίας αὐτῆς Μαρίας*, Matt. 1. 18. and, *καὶ ἐλπίσωμεν ἡμῶν Μαρία*, τῇ μητρὶ τῆς Ἰησοῦ, Acts 1. 14. both which must come from the Greek termination *Μαρία* in recto. And on the contrary, that Mary which S. Paul mentions hath the same Hebrew termination with the Virgin, *καὶ αὐτὴ Μαριάμ*, ἡ τὴν πολλὰ ἀγαπᾷσθαι εἰς ἡμᾶς, Rom. 16. 6. Beside, the Syriack Translation makes no difference between the name of these and the Virgin; as *מרים מנריותא ומרים אמר ריעקוב* Mar. 15. 40. So again, *מרים מנריותא* Matt. 21. 1. And therefore there can be no sufficient foundation for any such distinction. For whereas we first read *Exod. 15. 20.* *מרים חנניה*, the LXX. translate it, *Μαριάμ ἡ παρθένος*, and the Vulgar Lat. *Maria prophetissa*. The Hebrew first was *מרים* Mirjam; the Syriack altering the pronunciation, not the letters, *מרִים* Marjam, as for *מנר* מנר, *מנר* מנר. And because the Greek language admitteth no Jod Consonant, they pronounced it *Μαριάμ*. Though sometimes indeed even the Greeks did use this barbarous pronunciation in the barbarous words, as Lucian with the Latins makes *Ἰνδῶν* of three Syllables,

According to this first Evangelical Promise followed that Prediction of the Prophet, *The Lord hath created a new thing on the earth, a woman shall compass a man.* That new creation of a man is therefore *new*, and therefore a *creation*, because wrought in a woman only, without a man, compassing a man. Which interpretation of the Prophet is ancient, || literal and clear; and whatsoe're the *Jews* have invented to elude it, is frivolous and forced. For while they force the Phrase of *compassing a man* in the latter part of the Prediction to any thing else than a Conception, they do not only wrest the Scripture, but contradict the former part of the Promise, making the new creation neither new, as being often done, nor a creation, as being easie to perform.

|| For it is not to
be deried that
the proper signi-
fication of צרר
is circundare,
or cingere. R.
Judah has ob-
served but one
interpretation
of this Verb.

of this Verb, and Kimchi testifieth, that all words which come from the root כסב signifie compassing, or circuition. Therefore those words, נקברה חסובב נכר, must literally import no less than that a woman shall compass, or enclose, a man, which, with the addition of a new creation, may well bear the interpretation of a miraculous Conception. Especially considering that the ancient Jews did acknowledge this sense, and did apply it determinately to the Messias: as appeareth in Bereschit Rabba Parash. 89. where shewing that God doth heal with that with which he woundeth, he saith, as he punished Israel in a Virgin, so would he also heal them with a Virgin, according to the Prophet, The Lord hath created a new thing on the earth, a woman shall compass a man. By the testimony of R. Huna, in the name of R. Idi, and R. Joshua the Son of Levi, זה מלך ה' שיה שני היום, This is Messiah the King, of whom it is written, (Psal. 2. 7.) This day have I begotten thee. And again in Midrash Tillin, upon the 2. Psal. R. Huna in the name of R. Idi, speaking of the sufferings of the Messiah, saith, That when his hour is come, God shall say, וכן הוה אומר אני עלי לבר אתו בירת חדשה היום ורתוך, I must create him with a new creation. And so (by virtue of that new creation) he saith, This day have I begotten thee. From whence it appeareth that this sense is of it self literally clear, and that the ancient Rabbins did understand it of the Messiah; whence it followeth that the later Interpretations are but to avoid the Truth which we profess, that Jesus was born of a Virgin, and therefore is the Christ.

But if this Prophecy of *Jeremy* seem obscure, it will be sufficiently cleared by that of *Isaiah*; **Behold, a Virgin shall conceive, and bear a Son, and shall call his name Emmanuel.* The ancient *Jews* || immediately upon the promulgation of the Gospel, understanding well how near this place did press them,

* Isa. 7. 14.

|| How soon these
Objections were
made use of by
the Jews, will
appear by Ju-

line Martyr, the first writer which made any considerable Explanation and Defence of the Christian Religion; who, in his Dialogue with Trypho the Jew, shews us what were the Objections of the Rabbins: Ἐπεὶ δὲ ὑμεῖς καὶ οἱ διδασκαλοὶ οὐκ ἐπὶ τοῖς λόγοις, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τοῖς ἔργοις ἐν τῇ περὶ τῆς θεότητος ἱστορίᾳ, ἰδὲ ἢ παρ' ἐν ἑαυτοῖς, ἀλλ', ἰδὲ ἢ νεανίαν ἐν γαστρὶ ἀναίεσθαι, καὶ τέκνους ὄν. And Tertullian, whose works are full of the Divinity of Justice: Si quando ad deiciendos aliquos ab hac divina prædicatione, vel convertere singulos simplices quosque gestitis, mentiri audetis, quasi non virginem, sed juvenculam, contineatur Scriptura continet. *Advers. Judæos, c. 9. & adv. Marcionem, lib. 3. cap. 13.*

¶ And as they
soon began, &
did not go on
with this Ob-
jection: Hodie,
terro jam cre-
dente mundo,
argumentantur
Judæi, Eia
docente de
Maria & virgi-
nitate ejus, Ec-
ce ego in utero
concepisti, & pa-
riest filium, in
Hebræo juven-
e law scriptum
esse, non vir-
ginem, id est
kalma, non be-
thala.

* Dicunt Ju-
dæi, Provoce-
mus istam præ-
dicationem E-
saiæ, & facia-
mus compara-
tionem, an
Christo, qui
jam venit com-
petat illi primò
nomen quod
Esaias prædi-
cavit, & inlig-
nia ejus quæ de eo nuntiavit. Equidem Esaias prædicat eum Emmanuel vocari oportere, dehinc virtutem sumpturum Da-
masci & spolia Samariæ adversus regem Assyriorum. Porro, inquit, iste qui venit neque sub ejusmodi nomine est dictus,
neque re bellica functus, Irrul. adv. Judæos. ¶ So Justine testifies of the Jews, speaking to Trypho, and in him to them:
ἐξήγησεν τῷ περὶ τὴν ὁρίαν ὡς εἰς Ἐζεκιάν τὸν ὑμῶν βασιλέα. And Trypho replies again to Justine; Ἰδὼν ὡς
ἐκείνους εἰς Χριστὸν τὸν ὑμῶν ἀποσταλὲν εἰρήνῃ, ἡμῶς δὲ εἰς Ἐζεκιάν αὐτῶν ἀγέμενον περὶ τὴν ὁρίαν. * The LXX. Ἰδὼν
ὁ περὶ τὴν ὁρίαν ἐν γαστρὶ ἀνέψαι. In time, the rest of the Interpreters, concurring with the Objection of the Jews, translated it,
Ἰδὼν ἡ νεανίς, i. e. adolescentula, or juvenula. But as their antiquity, so their authority is far short of the LXX. especially
in this case. I shall not need to shew how the Origination of עַלְמָה from עַלְמָה proves no life. We know the affinity of the
Punic tongue with the Hebrew; and by the testimony of S. Hierome, Linguâ Punicâ, quæ de Hebræorum fontibus manare di-
citur, proprie virgo a'ima appellatur. * 2 King. 16.2 * 2 King. 18.2. It is the known saying of Hillel, recorded in Sanhe-
drin, e. cvelik, בימי חזקתו שכבר אכלהו ביום חזקתו. There is no Messiah to the Is-
raelites, because they have already enjoyed him in the days of Hezekiah. Divers of the later Rabbins endeavour to mollify these
words of Hillel by their several expositions, but in vain. And R. Joseph understood him better, who thought he took away all
expectation of a Messiah, and therefore fairly prayed for him, Condone Dominus hoc R. Hillel. Howsoever it appears that
from two principles, wherof one was false, he gathered that false conclusion. For first, he thought those words in Isaiah were spoken
of the Messiah: which proposition was true. Secondly, he conceived that those words were spoken of Hezekiah, and fulfilled in
him: which proposition was false. From hence he inferred, that the Israelites were not to expect a Messiah after Hezekiah:
which conclusion was also false.

gave three several answers to this Text: First, denying that it spake of a Virgin at all; secondly, asserting that it could not belong to * *Jesus*; thirdly, affirming that it was fully compleated in the person of *Ezekias*. Whereas the Original word was translated a *Virgin*, by such * Interpreters as were *Jews* themselves, some hundred years before our Saviour's birth. And did not the notation of the word and frequent use thereof in the Scriptures persuade it, the wonder of the sign given by the Lord himself would evince as much. But as for that conceit, that all should be fulfilled in *Hezekiah*, it is so manifestly and undoubtedly false, that nothing can make more for the confirmation of our Faith. For this sign was given and this promise made (*A Virgin shall conceive and bear a son*;) at some time in the reign of *Abaz*. This *Abaz* reigned but sixteen years in Jerusalem; and *Hezekiah* his son, who succeeded him, was twenty and five years old when he began to reign, and therefore born several years before *Abaz* was King, and consequently not now to be conceived when this sign was given. Thus while the ancient *Jews* name him only to fulfil the prophecy in whom it is impossible it should be fulfilled, they plainly shew that, for any knowledge which they had, it was not fulfilled till our Saviour came: and therefore they cannot with any reason deny but that it belonged unto the *Messias*, as divers of the ancient Rabbins thought and confessed; and is yet more evident by their monstrous error, who therefore expected * no *Messias* in *Israel*, because they thought whatsoever was spoken of him to have been completed in *Hezekiah*. Which is abundantly enough for our present purpose, being only to prove that the *Messias* promised by God, and expected by the people of God before and under the Law, was to be conceived and born of a Virgin.

Luke 1. 27.

Matth. 1. 18.

Secondly, as we are taught by the predictions of the Prophets, that a Virgin was to be Mother of the promised *Messias*; so are we assured by the infallible relations of the Evangelists, that this *Mary*, the Mother of *Jesus*, whom we believe to be *Christ*, was a Virgin when she bare him, when she brought forth her first-born Son. That she was a Virgin when and after she was espoused unto *Joseph*, appeareth by the narration of S. *Luke*: For the Angel *Gabriel* was sent from God to a Virgin espoused to a man whose name was *Joseph*. After the Salutation of that Angel, that she still was so, appeareth by her question, *How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?* That she continued so after she conceived by the Holy Ghost, is evident from the relation of S. *Matthew*: For when she was espoused unto *Joseph*, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. That she was a Virgin not only while she was with child, but even when she had brought forth,

is also evident out of this application of the Prophecy: *Behold, a Virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son.* For by the same || prediction it is as manifest that a Virgin should *bring forth*, as *conceive a Son*. Neither was her act of Parturition more contradictory to Virginity, than that former of Conception.

Matth. 1. 23.

|| Hæc est Virgo quæ in utero concepit, virgoque peperit filium. Sic enim scriptum

est, *Eccæ, Virgo in utero concepit, & pariet filium.* Non enim concepturam tantummodo Virginem, sed & parituram Virginem dixit. S. Ambrosij. *Epist. 7. ad Siricium.* So he argueth from the Prophecy, and S. Aug. from the Creed: Si vel per nascentem corrumpetur ejus integritas, non jam ille de Virgine nasceretur; eumque falso, quod absit, de Virgine natum tota confiteretur Ecclesia, quæ, imitans ejus matrem, quotidie parit membra, & Virgo est. *Encher. c. 24.* As also S. Ambrose in the same *Epistle*: Quæ potuit Virgo concepere, potuit Virgo generare; quum semper conceptus precedat, partus lequatur. Sed si doctrinis non creditur sacerdotum, credatur oraculis Christi, credatur monitis Angelorum, credatur Symbolo Apostolorum, quod Ecclesia Romana intemeratam semper custodit & servat. And S. Basil upon occasion of the same Prophecy: ἡ ὡς ἡ γυνὴ καὶ παρθένος καὶ μήτηρ. καὶ ἐν τῷ ἀγιασμῷ τῇ παρθενίας ὑπόστασις, καὶ τῷ τῇ τεκνογονίας εὐλογίᾳ κληρονομήσα. Rom. 25. Virgo peperit, quia Virgo concepit. *Vigil. de Unitate Trinit. c. 10.*

Thirdly, we believe the Mother of our Lord to have been not only before and after his Nativity, but also for ever, the most immaculate and blessed Virgin. For although it may be thought sufficient || as to the mystery of the Incarnation, that when our Saviour was conceived and born, his Mother was a Virgin; though whatsoever should have followed after could have no reflective operation upon the first fruit of her womb; though there be no farther mention in the Creed, than that he was *born of the Virgin Mary*: yet the peculiar eminency and unparallel'd privilege of that Mother, the special honour and reverence due unto that Son, and ever paid by her, the regard of that Holy Ghost who came upon her, and the power of the Highest which overshadowed her, the singular goodness and piety of Joseph, to whom she was espoused, have persuaded the Church of God in all Ages to believe that she still continued in the same Virginity, and therefore is to be acknowledged the * *Ever Virgin Mary*. As if the Gate of the Sanctuary in the Prophet Ezekiel were to be understood of her; ^a *This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it: because the Lord the God of Israel hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut.*

|| Μέχρις οὗ τῇ τῷ ὁικονομίᾳ ὑπερεστέον ἀναστασία ἡ παρθενία, τὸ δ' ἐρεσῆς ἀπολυτρεψιμότητον τῷ λόγῳ τῷ μυστηρίου κατὰ τὸν αἰῶνα. S. Basil. Hom. de Nativ.

* For so the Greek Church always called her ἀειπαρθένος, and from them the Latine Semper-Virgo.

^a Ezek. 44. 2.

|| First we read in the time of Origen, that some did maintain the Virginity of Mary no longer than to Christ's Nativity. In tantum

nescio quis prorupit infaniam, ut assereret negatam fuisse Mariam à Salvatore, eo quod post natiuitatem illius juncta fuerit. Joseph. Homel. 7. in Lucan. Tertullian himself was produced as an Asserter of the same Opinion; nor does S. Hierome deny it, though I think he might have done it. Apollinarius, or at least his Followers, delivered the same, says Epiphanius; and Eunomius with him, τὸν Ἰωσήφ καὶ τῷ ἀρχιερεὶ κυροποιᾷ συνάψαντες ἡ πεφύκεται τῇ παρθενίᾳ. Photius out of Philostorgius. Not that the words in Photius were the words of Philostorgius, for he was clearly an Eunomian, and therefore would never express their Opinions with an ἐπεφύκεται. And as he always commended Eunomius, so was he not commended but by an Eunomian, that is, a man of his own Sect. As that Epigram,

Εὐνομία.

Ἰσοεὶμ ἐτέλεσα Θεὸν χαίρειν Κοῦσι.

in which I therefore mention, because Gotofred hath made an unnecessary Emendation in the Verse ἐτέλεσα ἄδεν, and a worse Interpretation in the Inscription, taking the Eunomian to be a Catholic, and the name of the Sect for the name of a Man; and confirming this Error by a greater mistake, saying Eunomianus was the name of a Man, twice spoken of in Suidas, once in Εὐνομίανδρος, and again in ἑλῶσι. 'Tis true indeed Suidas saith expressly, Εὐνομίανδρος, ὄνομα κύριον, and immediately adds these words, τῷ ἑλῶσι Βελισαρίου τὸ θῆον λέγοντες, as if Belisarius had baptized one whose name was Eunomianus. But the words are taken out of Procopius in Hist. Arcana, pag. 2. from whence it appears that he who was baptized was by name Theodosius, and by Sect an Eunomian. And whatsoever his name was who wrote that Epigram on the History of Philostorgius, he was certainly by Sect an Eunomian, and that was intended in the Inscription, written without question by some Catholic, who thought no man could commend the History of Philostorgius but one of his own opinion. These Contradictors of the perpetual Virginity of the Mother of our Lord afterwards interlarded to a greater number, whom Epiphanius calls by a general name Antidicomarianæ. And from S. Aug. Antidicomarianæ appellati sunt Hæretici, qui Mariæ Virginitati usque adeo contradicunt, ut affirmant eam post Christum natum viro suo fuisse commixtam, de Hæres. Condemned under that name by the sixth General Council, Act. 11. The same were called by the Latines, Helvidiani, from Helvidius, (a Disciple of Auxentius the Arrian) whose name is most made use of, because refuted by S. Hierome. He was followed by Jovinian a Monk of Millan, as S. Hierom testifieth; though S. Augustine delivereth his opinion otherwise, Virginitatem

Mariæ

habet juxta Patrum, aut ex libro Jacobi) filios Joseph ex priorē uxore, quæ convixerat ipsi antequam duceret Mariam, in Mat. 13. 55. *This Jacobus mentioned by Origen, is the same with him whom Eulathius mentions in Hexamero, Ὁ Ἰακώβος ὁ πατὴρ τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ τοῦ κυρίου, ὁ ὅστις ἐστὶν ὁ πατὴρ τοῦ κυρίου, ὁ ὅστις ἐστὶν ὁ πατὴρ τοῦ κυρίου.* where he reckons Joseph inter totos γυναικας, and Epiphanius calls Ἰακώβος ὁ πατὴρ τοῦ κυρίου. S. Hieron therefore observing that the former Opinion of Joseph's Sons was founded merely upon an Apocryphal writing, and being ready to assert the Virginity of Joseph as well as Mary, first intended the other Solution in the kindred of Mary, as founded not only in the Language but also Testimony of the Scriptures: Quidam fratres Domini de alia uxore Josephi filios suspicantur, sequentes deliramenta Apocryphorum, & quandam Escham mulierem contingentes. Nos autem, sicut in libro quem contra Helvidium scripsimus continetur, fratres Domini non filios Joseph, sed conobrinos Salvatoris, Mariæ liberos intelligimus matertera Domini, quæ esse dicitur mater Jacobi minoris & Joseph & Judæ, quos in alio Evangelii loco fratres Domini legimus appellatos. Fratres autem conobrinos à ceteris Scriptura demonstrat. S. Hieron. in Matth. 12. 46. After S. Hieron S. Aug. embraced this Opinion: Consanguinei Virginis Mariæ fratres Domini dicebantur. Erat enim consuetudinis Scripturarum appellare fratres quoslibet consanguineos & cognationis propinquos, in Job. Tract. 28. item Tract. 10. & contra Faustum 1. 22. 35. Although therefore he seem to be indifferent in his Exposition of the Epistle to the Galatians, Jacobus Domini frater, vel ex filiis Joseph de alia uxore, vel ex cognatione Mariæ matris ejus, debet intelligi: yet because this Exposition was written whilst he was a Presbyter, and those before mentioned after he was made a Bishop; therefore the former was taken for his undoubted Opinion, and upon his and S. Hieron's Authority hath been generally since received in the Latin Church.

And yet this difficulty, though usually no farther considered, is not fully cleared: for they which impugned the perpetual Virginity of the Mother of our Lord urged it farther, pretending that as the Scriptures called them the *Brethren of Christ*, so they also shewed them to be the Sons of *Mary the Mother of Christ*. For first the *Jews* express them particularly by their Names, *Is not his Mother called Mary? and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?* * Therefore *James* and *Joses* were undoubtedly the brethren of *Christ*, and the same were also as unquestionably the Sons of *Mary*: For among the Women at the Cross we find *Mary Magdalene*, and *Mary the Mother of James and Joses*. Again, this *Mary* they think can be no other than the Mother of our Lord, because they find her early in the morning at the Sepulchre with *Mary Magdalene* and *Salome*; and it is not || probable that any should have more care of the Body of the Son than the Mother. She then who was certainly present at the Cross, was not probably absent from the Sepulchre: Wherefore they conclude, she was the Mother of *Christ*, who was the Mother of *James* and *Joses*, the Brethren of *Christ*.

Matth. 13. 55. *Is not his Mother called Mary? and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?* * From this place Helvidius argued, Hæc eadem vocabula in alio loco nominari, & eodem esse fratres Domini, filios Mariæ. S. Hier. advers. Helv. And from the next he concluded, Ecce Jacobus & Joses, filii Mariæ, Quos Judæi fratres appellarunt. b Matth. 27. 56. c Mark 16. 1. || Here Helvidius exclaiming triumphed, Quam miserum erit & impium de Maria hoc sentire, ut cum alia femina curam sepulchræ habuerint, matrem ejus dicamus absentem!

And now the urging of this Argument will produce a greater clearness in the solution of the question. For if it appear that *Mary the Mother of James and Joses* was different and distinguished from *Mary the Virgin*; then will it also be apparent that the Brethren of our Lord were the Sons of another Mother, for *James* and *Joses* were so called. But we read in S. John, that there stood by the Cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, *Mary the wife of Cleophas*, and *Mary Magdalene*. In the rest of the Evangelists we find at the same place *Mary Magdalene*, and *Mary the mother of James and Joses*; and again at the Sepulchre, *Mary Magdalene* and the other *Mary*: wherefore that other *Mary* by the conjunction of these Testimonies appeareth to be *Mary the wife of Cleophas*, and the mother of *James* and *Joses*; and consequently *James* and *Joses*, the Brethren of our Lord, were not the Sons of *Mary* his Mother, but of the || other *Mary*, and therefore called his Brethren, according to the language of the *Jews*, because that the other *Mary* was the Sister of his Mother.

John 19. 25. *stood by the Cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.*

Matth. 27. 56. *Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses;*

Mark 15. 40. *and the other Mary:*

Matth. 28. 1. *Mary Magdalene and the other Mary:*

|| Jacobus qui appellatur frater Domini, cognomento Justus, ut nonnulli existimant, Joseph ex alia uxore, ut autem mihi videtur, Mariæ sororis Mariæ Domini, cujus Joannes in libro suo meminit, filius. S. Hieron. in Catalogo. Sicut in sepulchro ubi positum est corpus Domini, nec antea nec postea mortuus jacuit: sic uterus Mariæ nec antea nec postea quicquam mortale suscepit. S. Aug. in Job. Tract. 28.

Notwithstanding therefore all these Pretensions, there can be nothing found to raise the least suspicion of any interruption of the ever-blessed *Mary's* perpetual Virginity. For as she was a Virgin when she conceived, and after

after she brought forth our Saviour; so did she continue in the same state and condition, and was commended by our Saviour to his beloved Disciple, as a mother only now of an adopted son.

The third Consideration belonging to this part of the Article is, how this Virgin was a Mother, what the foundation was of her maternal relation to the Son of God, what is to be attributed unto her in this sacred Nativity beside the immediate work of the power of the Highest, and the influence of the Holy Ghost. For we are here to remember again the most ancient form of this Article, briefly thus delivered, *Born of the Holy Ghost and the Virgin Mary*; as also that the word ^a *Born* was not taken precisely for the Nativity of our Saviour, but as comprehending in it whatsoever belonged to his humane Generation: and when after ward the Conception was attributed to the Spirit, the Nativity to the Virgin; it was not so to be understood, as if the Spirit had conceived him, but the blessed Virgin by the power and operation of the Spirit.

First therefore we must acknowledge a true, real and proper Conception, by which the Virgin did conceive of her ^b own substance the true and real substance of our Saviour, according to the prediction of the Prophet, *Behold, a Virgin shall conceive*, and the Annunciation of the Angel, *Behold, thou shalt* ^c *conceive in thy womb*. From whence our Saviour is expressly termed by *Elizabeth*, ^d *the fruit of her womb*.

impendunt. S. Hilar. l. 10. de Trinit. ^c That is, by a proper Conception, συλλαβὴν ἐν γαστρὶ the Syriack in one word (ܐܘܪܐܝܬܐ) ac si diceret, ventrescere. So the LXX. translated the simple ἄρτι, ἐν γαστρὶ λήψεται. As therefore ἐν γαστρὶ ἔχον expresses a proper Gravitation, so doth ἐν γαστρὶ συλλαβὴν a proper Conception. According to that expression of Gregory Nazianzen, ὁμοιωὺς τῷ, ὅτι χροὺς ἀνδρὸς ἀνδρωπικῶς ὅ, ὅτι νόμος κυήσεως. Ep. 1. ad Cledon. ^d Luke 1. 42. ^e Heb. ܐܘܪܐܝܬܐ.

^a Γεννηθῆναι

^b Tantum ad nativitatem carnis ex se dedit, quantum ex se semine descendendum corporum susceperis originibus

Secondly, as she did at first really and properly conceive, so did she also nourish and increase the same body of our Saviour, once conceived, by the true substance of her own; by which ^e *she was found with child of the Holy Ghost*, and is described going with Joseph to be taxed, ^f *being great with child*, and pronounced happy by that loud cry of the woman in the Gospel, ^h *Blessed is the womb that bare thee*.

Thirdly, when Christ was thus conceived and grew in the womb of the Blessed Virgin, she truly and really did bring forth her Son by a true and proper Parturition; and Christ thereby was properly born by a ⁱ true Nativity. For as we read, ^k *Elizabeth's full time came that she should be delivered, and she brought forth a son*; so in the like simplicity of expression, and propriety of speech, the same Evangelist speaks of Mary, ^l *The days were accomplished that she should be delivered, and she brought forth her first-born son*.

Wherefore from these three, a true Conception, Nutrition and Parturition, we must acknowledge that the blessed Virgin was ^m truly and properly the Mother of our Saviour. And so is she frequently stiled the Mother of Jesus in the language of the Evangelists, and by Elizabeth particularly the mother of her Lord, as also by the general consent of the Church (ⁿ because he which was so born of her was God,) the ^o *Deipara*; which being a compound title begun in the Greek Church, was resolved into its parts by the Latines, and so the Virgin was plainly named the || Mother of God.

proprie esse matrem? Facundus l. 1. c. 4. Hoc & ad credendum difficile, & dignum controversiā videbatur, utrum Deum illa Virgo genuerit: ceterum quod vere & proprie genuerit, quicquid est ille quem genuit, nulli dignum disceptationis apparet. Ibid. ^a ἡ δὲ Θεοτόκος ἡ δὲ δὲν ὑδὲν ἔχουσα. Theod. Abucara. ^a This name was first in use in the Greek Church, who, delighting in the happy compositions of that language, called the blessed Virgin Θεοτόκος. From whence the Latins in imitation stiled her Virginem Deiparam & Dei genitricem. Meursius in his Glossary sets the Original of this Title in the time of Justinian. Inditum hoc nomen est matri Domini ac Servatoris nostri Jesu Christi à Synodo V. Constantinopolitana tempore Justiniani. Whence this was not the Original, but the confirmation, of that Title. In hac Synodo Catholice est institutum, ut Beata Maria semper-virgo Θεοτόκος diceretur: quia, sicut Catholica fides habet, non hominem solum, sed vere Deum & Ho-

minum, genuit. Paul Barnes, de Gest. Longobard. l. 6. c. 14. So speaketh he of the same Synod: and 'tis true, for the seventh Canon of the same Council saith thus, Εἰ τις κατ' ἀνατολὴν ἢ κατὰ χριστιανικὴν Θεοτόκον λέγει ἢ Ἀρίαν, ἢ Διόσκωρον, αἰσπαρόμενον Μαρίαν... ἀλλὰ μὴ κυρίου καὶ κατ' ἀλήθειαν Θεοῦ οὐτὼ ὁμολογῇ... ὁ τοιαῦτα ἀνάθεμα ἔστω. Otherwise in this Council was but confirmed what had been determined and settled long before: and therefore Photius says thereof, Αὐτὴ ἡ Σύνοδος Νεστορίαν πάλιν τὰ μισροπαρεσβύματα δόγματα εἰς τὸ πανήλικες ἐξέθειρε, that it utterly cut off the Heresie of Nestorius which then began to grow up again. Now part of the Heresie of Nestorius was the denial of this Θεοτόκος, and the whole was nothing else but the ground of that denial. And therefore being he was condemned for denying of it, that Title must be acknowledged authentick which he denied from the time of the Council of Ephesus; in which those Fathers, saith Photius expressly, τὴν πανάχαλον καὶ αἰσπαρόμενον (καὶ ἐκ) μητρὸς κυρίου καὶ ἀληθῶς καλεῖται καὶ ἀδελφικῶς Θεοῦ παρὰ δόξασι. Epist. 1. And that it was so then is manifest, because by the denial of this the Nestorian Heresie was first discovered, not in Nestorius himself, but in his Presbyter Anastasius, who first in a Sermon παριστάμενος ἀνέστη, Θεοτόκον τὴν Μαρίαν καλεῖται μητέρας, Soc. Eccl. Hist. l. 7. c. 31. and Liberat. brev. c. 4. as also Euthymius and Nicephorus. Upon which words arising a Tumult, Nestorius took his Presbyter's part, teaching the same Doctrine constantly in the Church, καὶ παρὰ τὴν λέξιν τοῦ Θεοτόκου ἐκείνων. And hereupon the tumult grew so great, that a general Council for that reason was called by Theodosius Jun. τῷ Νεστορίῳ τὴν Ἀρίαν Μαρίαν ἢ Θεοτόκον ἀρνούμενος, as Justinian testifieth, Ep. ad P. Synodum. In which, when all things seemed clearly to be carried against Nestorius and his faction, he hoped to have reconciled all by this feigned acknowledgment, Ἀντιόχῳ καὶ Θεοτόκῳ ἢ Μαρίᾳ, καὶ παρὰ τὸν τὰ λυπηρά. Soc. l. 7. c. 34. Liber. brev. c. 6. It is plain then that the Council of Ephesus, which condemned Nestorius, confirmed this Title Θεοτόκος. I say confirmed it, for 'tis evident that it was before used in the Church, by the tumult which arose at the first denial of it by Anastasius; and so confirmed it as received before, because they approved the Epistles of S. Cyril, who proved it by the usage of those Fathers which preceded him. Where by the way it is observable, that while S. Cyril produceth nine several Fathers for the use of this word, and both before and after he produceth them, affirmeth that they all did use it, there are but three of them who expressly mention it, Athanasius, Antiochus and Ammon, Epist. ad Regenos. And it is something to be admired that he should so name the other six, and recite those places out of them which had it not, when there were before him so many beside them that used it. As Gregory Nazianzen, Εἰ τις ὁ Θεοῦ τὴν Μαρίαν ὡς ἀνθρώπου, ὡς οὐκ ἔστι Θεοῦ. Epist. ad Cledonium: and in his first Oration de Filio, speaking of the difference of his generation from that of others, πῶ γὰρ ἐν τοῖς τοῖς ἔργοις Θεοτόκον παρθένον; And S. Basil asserteth, μὴ καλεῖται καὶ φιλιορθεῖον τὴν ἀδελφὴν, οἷον ποτὲ ἐπαύσατο ἢ παρθένον ἢ Θεοτόκον. Hom. de nat. Christi. And that in the time of S. Basil and S. Gregory two terms was usual, appeareth by the objection of Julian, who derided the Christians for thinking God could be born of a woman; Θεοτόκον ὃ ὑμεῖς ἐπαύσατε Μαρίαν καλεῖσθαι. S. Cyr. tom. 6. Before both these Eusebius speaketh of Helena, who built a Church at Beihlehem; Ἡ βασιλὶς ἡ Θεοσεβέστατη τὴν Θεοτόκον τὴν κύριον μνήμασι θαυμαστῶς καλεῖσθαι. de vita Const. l. 2. And before Eusebius, Alexander Bishop of Alexandria; ἀπαρχὴν γένονεν ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστός, σῶμα φορέσας ἀληθῶς, καὶ ἐγενήθη, καὶ τὴν Θεοτόκον Μαρίαν. Ep. ad Alex. apud Theod. l. 1. c. 4. Before him Dionysius Alex. calls our Saviour τὸν σωτῆρα ἡμῶν καὶ τὴν Ἀρίαν παρθένον καὶ Θεοτόκον Μαρίαν. Epist. ad Paulum Samosat. And speaking of the words of Isaiah, a Virgin shall conceive, Δείκνυνται ὅτι ἡ Θεοτόκος τινὲς συνέλαβεν, ἢ παρθένον ὁμολογῶν. Resp. ad Quell. 5. And in the Answer to the same Question, περιμαρτυροῦν ἡ δόξα, καὶ σκεπτεται τῇ δυνάμει τῷ ὑψίστῳ ἀέμυντος σκηνῇ τοῦ Θεοῦ, Μαρία ἡ Θεοτόκος, καὶ παρθένον. and again, ἐτασὶν λέγει καὶ οὗ τὸ ἡνιχθῆναι ἐκ τῆς Θεοτόκου. In the answer to the 7th Question, διὰ τὸ γεννηθῆναι αὐτὸν τὸν Ἰωάννην ἀπὸ τῆς Θεοτόκου Μαρίαν ἐν ἀγκύλῳ γενέσθαι τὴν κατὰ γενεὴν ἡμῶν. and so often. Nay yet before him Origen did not only use, but expound at large the meaning of that title Θεοτόκος, in his first Tome on the Epistle to the Romans; as Socrat. and Liberat. testify. Well therefore did Antiochus Bishop of Antioch urge the ancient Fathers against Nestorius, calling it πρόσθεν ὄνομα καὶ τελεμνῶν πολλοῖς τῶν Πατέρων. and again, πολλοῖς τῶν πατέρων καὶ σωτηρέων, καὶ ῥηθέν. Τὸ τὰρτὸ ὄνομα, says he, ἐδείξεν ἡ Ἐκκλησιαστικὴ διδασκαλία παρήκον. οἷον τὰ γὰρ χριστιανοὶ αὐτὴν πολλοὶ ὀνόμαζον, οἷον τὴν κατὰ γενεὴν καὶ ἐπελάβοντο τῆς χριστιανικῆς. Concil. Ephes. p. 1. c. 25. || Although Θεοτόκος may be extended to signify as much as the Mother of God, because τίς τινος doth sometimes denote as much as γενεάν, and therefore it hath been translated Dei Genitrix, as well as Deipara; yet those ancient Greeks which called the Virgin Θεοτόκος, did not call her μητέρα τοῦ Θεοῦ. But the Latins translating Θεοτόκος, Dei genitrix, and the Greeks translating Dei genitrix Θεὸς μήτηρ, they both at last called her plainly the Mother of God. The first which the Greeks observed to stile her so was Leo the Great, as was observed by Ephraim Patriarch of Theopolis; whose words have been very much mistaken by two learned men, Dionysius Petavius and Leo Allatius, who have produced them to prove that he thought Leo Magnus was the first man which ever used the word Θεοτόκος. A strange error this must needs appear in so great a Person as a Patriarch, and that of the Greek Church; and indeed not imaginable, considering how well he was versed in those Controversies, and how he compared the words of Leo with those of the ancient Greek Fathers, and particularly of S. Cyril. His words are these in his Epistle ad Zenobium; Πρῶτος ἐν ἀγίοις Λέων ἰδικῶς ἐπεμνήστω τῆς λέξεως, ὡς μήτηρ Θεοῦ ὅτι ἡ ἀγία Θεοτόκος, ἥτις πρὸ αὐτῆς πάντων διαπευστοῖς ῥύμασι μὴ τὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ. That is, Leo was the first who in plain terms called the Θεοτόκος, that is Mary, the Mother of God, whereas the Fathers before him spake not the same in express words. Petavius and Allatius have clearly mistaken the Proposition, making the Subject the Predicate, and the Predicate the Subject, as if he had first called the Mother of God Θεοτόκος, whereas he is said first to call the Θεοτόκος Mother of God, as appeareth by the article added to the Subject, not to the Predicate. But if that be not sufficient, his meaning will appear by another passage to the same purpose, in his Epistle ad Synclericum; Ὅτι μητέρα Θεοῦ πρῶτον μὲν ἡ Ἐλισάβετ ἀνέστη, ἐν οἷς λέγει, Καὶ πόθεν μοι τὸτο, ἵνα ἡ μήτηρ τοῦ Κυρίου με ἐλθῇ πρὸς με; σαρρέσειν γὰρ ἄλλον μὲν ταῦτα τὴν λέξιν πρῶτος ὁ ὅσιος Λέων ὁ Πάπας περὶ ἡμετέρας. Therefore as he took the Lord and God to be synonymous; so he thought Elizabeth first stiled Mary the Mother of God, because she called her the mother of her Lord; and after Elizabeth, Leo was the first who plainly stiled her so, that is, the Mother of God. And that we may be yet farther assured of his mind, he produceth the words of Leo the Pope in his Epistle to Leo the Emperour; Ἀναθεματίζω Νεστορίον, ὁ τὴν μακαρίαν καὶ Θεοτόκον Μαρίαν ἐκ τῆς Θεοῦ, ἀνθρώπου ὡς μόνον, πιστῶν ἢ μητέρας. The sentence which he translates is this, Anathematizetur ergo Nestorius, qui beatam Virginem Mariam non Dei, sed hominis tantummodo, credidit genitricem. Epist. 97. c. 1. where plainly genitrix Dei is translated μήτηρ Θεοῦ, and Θεοτόκος is added by Ephraim out of custom in the Subject, being otherwise not at all in Leo's words. It is therefore certain that first in the Greek Church they termed the blessed Virgin Θεοτόκος, and the Latins from them Dei genitrix, and mater Dei, and the Greeks from them again μήτηρ Θεοῦ, upon the authority of Leo, not taking notice of other Latins who stiled her so before him.

The necessity of believing our Saviour thus to be *born of the Virgin Mary*, will appear both in respect of her who was the Mother, and of him who was the Son.

In respect of her it was therefore necessary, that we might perpetually preserve an esteem of her person proportionable to so high a dignity. It was her own

own prediction, ^a *From henceforth all generations shall call me blessed*; but the obligation is ours, to call her, to esteem her so. ^b *If Elizabeth cried out with so loud a voice, Blessed art thou among women*, when *Christ* was but newly conceived in her womb; what expressions of Honour and Admiration can we think sufficient now that *Christ* is in Heaven, and that Mother with him? *Far be it from any Christian to derogate from that special privilege granted her, which is incommunicable to any other. We cannot bear too reverend a regard unto the *Mother of our Lord*, so long as we give her not that worship which is due unto the Lord himself. Let us keep the language of the Primitive Church: || Let her be honoured and esteemed, let him be worshipped and adored.

^a Luke i. 48. : Non aquanda est mulieribus cunctis, quæ genuit majestatem. Author lib. de singular. Clericorum.

^b Heliſabet & Zacharias nos docere poſſunt quanto inferiores ſunt B. Mariæ matri Domini ſanctitate, quæ conſecra

in ſe habitantis Dei liberè proclamat, Ecce ergo ex hoc beatam me dicem omnes generationes. S. Hier. adv. Pelag. l. 1. * Abſit ut quifquam S. Mariam divinæ gratiæ privilegiis ut ſpeciali gloriâ fraudare conetur. || Ἡ Μαρία ἐν τιμῇ, ὁ Κύριος ἐν περσκημῶ. Ἐν τιμῇ ἔσται Μαρία, ὁ δὲ Παῖς, καὶ τὸν Πνεῦμα περσκημῶ. Τὴν Μαρίαν μὲν οἱ περσκημῶται. Epiph. Hæref. 79. Εἰ καλλίστη ἡ Μαρία, καὶ ἁγία, καὶ τετιμημῶνη, ἀλλ' οὐκ εἰς τὸ περσκημῶ. Ib. Ἡμεῖς δὲ ἡμεῖς μὴ ὁρῶμεν θεολογῶμεν ὅτιν' ἡμεῖς δὲ ἀνθρώπων τῶν ἐν ἀρετῇ διατρέψαντες ὡς ἀνθρώπους ἀγίους γεραίρομεν. μόνον δὲ τῆς ἡμεῖς ὅλον περσκημῶν θεὸν καὶ πατέρα, καὶ τὸν ἐκείνου καὶ λόγον, καὶ τὸ πανάγιον πνεῦμα. Theod. Therapeut. 2. pag. 302.

In respect of him it was necessary, first, that we might be assured he was *made*, or *begotten*, of a woman, and consequently that he had from her the true nature of man. For he took not on him the nature of Angels, and therefore saved none of them, who, for want of a Redeemer, are reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. And man once fallen had been, as deservedly, so irrevocably, condemned to the same condition, but that he took upon him the seed of Abraham. For being we are partakers of flesh and blood, we could expect no Redemption but by him who likewise took part of the same. We could look for no Redeemer, but such a one who by consanguinity was our || Brother. And being there is but one Mediatour between God and man, the Man *Christ Jesus*, we cannot be assured that he was the *Christ*, or is our *Jesus*, except we be first assured that he was a Man. Thus our Redeemer, the Man *Christ Jesus*, was born of a woman, that he might *redeem both men and women; that both Sexes might rely upon him, who was of the one, and from the other.

Heb. 2. 16.

Heb. 2. 14.

|| Under that nation did the ancient Jews expect him, as appeareth by the Targum, Cantic. 8. 1.

וְיָבִיט
וְיִבְנֶה
אֶת־בְּנוֹ
מִלֵּכָה
מִשִּׁיחָה
דְּבִנֵּי שְׂדֵה
דִּישְׁדָּאָר
וְיִמְרוּ
לִוְיָהּ
יִשְׂרָאֵל
אֶת־חַה
עֲמֻנָה
לְאַחֵי

When the Messiah shall reveal himself, the sons of Israel shall say unto him, Thou shalt be unto us a Brother.

Secondly, it was necessary we should believe our Saviour conceived and born of such a woman as was a most pure and immaculate Virgin. For as it behoved him in all things to be made like unto us; so in that great similitude a dissimilitude was as necessary, that he should be ^c *without sin*. Our Passover is slain, and behold the Lamb that taketh away the sins of the World; but the Lamb of the Passover must be without blemish. Whereas then we draw something of corruption and contamination by our seminal traduction from the first Adam; our Saviour hath received the same nature without any culpable inclination, because born of a Virgin without any seminal traduction. Our High-Priest is *separate from sinners* not only in the actions of his life, but in the production of his nature. For as || *Levi* was in the loins of *Abraham*, and paid tithes in him, and yet *Christ*, though the Son of *Abraham*, did not pay tithes in him, but receive them in

* Hominis liberatio in utroque sexu debuit apparere. Ergo, quia virum oportebat suscipere, qui sexus honorabilior est, conveniens erat ut foeminei sexus liberatio hinc appareret, quod ille vir de foemina natus est. S. August. Quest. l. 83. Nolite vos ipsos contemnere, viri, filius Dei virum suscepit: nolite vos ipsas contemnere, foeminae, filius Dei natus ex foemina est. Idem de Agone Christi. ^c Heb. 4. 15. Non cum in peccatis mater ejus in utero aluit, quem Virgo concepit, Virgo peperit. S. Augustin. Tract. 4. in Joham. Ergo ecce Agnus Dei. Non habet iste traducem de Adam; carnem tantum sumpsit de Adam, peccatum non assumpsit. Ibid. Verbum ergo factum in Similitudine carnis peccata omnia nostra suscepit, nullum reatus vitium ferens ex traduce pravariationis exortum. Joann. 4. Epist. ad Constantinum. || Levi in lumbis Abraham

Abraham fuit secundum concupiscentiam carnalem, Christus autem secundum solam substantiam corporalem. Cum enim se in semine & viribilis corpulentia & invisibilis ratio, utrumque cucurrit ex Abraham, vel etiam ex ipso Adam, usque ad corpus Mariæ, qui & ipsum eo modo conceptus & exortum est: Christus autem visibilem carnis substantiam de carne Virginis sumpsit; ratio verò conceptionis ejus non à semine virili, sed longè aliter ac desuper venit. S. August. de Gen. ad lit. l. 10. c. 19.

Melchizedeck: so though we being in the loins of *Adam* may be all said to sin in him; yet *Christ*, who descended from the same *Adam* according to the flesh, was not partaker of that sin, but an expiation for it. For he which is contained in the feminal virtue of his Parent is some way under his natural power, and therefore may be in some manner concerned in his actions: but he who is only from him by his natural substance, according to a passive or obediential power, and so receiveth not his propagation from him, cannot be so included in him as to be obliged by his actions, or obnoxious to his demerits.

Thirdly, it was necessary that we should believe *Christ* born of that person, that Virgin *Mary* which was espoused unto *Joseph*, that thereby we might be assured that he was of the family of *David*. For whatsoever Promises were made of the *Messias* were appropriated unto him. As the seed of the woman was first contracted to the seed of *Abraham*, so the seed of *Abraham* was next appropriated to the Son of *David*. He was to be called the son of the Highest, and the Lord God was to give unto him the throne of his father *David*. When *Jesus* asked the Pharisees, *What think ye of Christ? whose son is he?* they said unto him, *The son of David*. When *Herod* demanded of the chief Priests and Scribes where *Christ* should be born; they said unto him, *In Bethlehem of Judæa*, because that was the city of *David*, whither *Joseph* went up with *Mary* his espoused wife, because he was of the house and lineage of *David*. After *John* the Baptist, the forerunner of *Christ*, was born, *Zacharias* blessed the Lord God of *Israel*, who had raised up an horn of salvation for us in the House of his servant *David*. The woman of *Canaan*, the blind men sitting by the way, and those other blind that followed him, cried out, *Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou son of David*. The very children, out of whose mouths God perfected praise, were crying in the Temple, and saying, *Hosannah to the son of David*. And when the blind and dumb both spake and saw, all the people were amazed, and said, *is not this the son of David?* Thus by the publick and concurrent testimonies of all the Jews, the promised *Messias* was to come of the house and lineage of *David*; || for God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins according to the flesh he would raise up *Christ* to sit upon his throne. It was therefore necessary we should believe that our Saviour was made of the seed of *David* according to the flesh: of which we are assured, because he was born of that *Virgin Mary* who descended from him, and was espoused unto *Joseph*, who descended from the same, that thereby his Genealogy might be known.

|| *Acts* 2. 30.
Atquin hinc
magis Christi-
um intelligen-
re debebis ex
David deputa-
tum carnali ge-
nere, ob Mariæ
Virginis cen-
sum. De hoc
enim promisso
juratur in Psal-
mo ad *David*,
Ex fructu ven-
tristui collocabo
super thronum
tuum. Tertul.
l. 3. adv. Mar-
cionem, c. 20.
* *Rom.* 1. 3.

The consideration of all which will at last lead us to a clear explication of this latter Branch of the Article, whereby every Christian may inform himself what he is bound to profess, and being informed, fully express what is the object of his Faith in this particular, when he saith, I believe in *Jesus Christ* which was born of the *Virgin Mary*. For hereby he is conceived to intend thus much: I assent unto this as a most certain and infallible Truth, That there was a certain woman, known by the name of *Mary*, espoused unto *Joseph* of *Nazareth*, which before and after her Espousals was a pure and unspotted Virgin, and being and continuing in the same Virginity, did, by the immediate operation of the Holy Ghost, conceive within her Womb the only-begotten Son of God, and, after the natural time of other women, brought him forth as her first-born Son, continuing still a most pure and im-
maculate

maculate Virgin ; whereby the Saviour of the world was born of a Woman under the Law, without the least pretence of any original corruption, that he might deliver us from the guilt of sin ; born of that Virgin which was of the house and lineage of *David*, that he might sit upon his throne, and rule for evermore. And in this latitude I profess to believe in *Jesus Christ, born of the Virgin Mary*,

ARTICLE IV.

Suffered under Pontius Pilate, Was crucified, dead, and buried.

THis Article hath also received some accession in the particular expressions of *Christ's* Humiliation. For the first word of it, now generally speaking of his Passion, in the most ancient Creeds was no way distinguished from his Crucifixion ; for as we say, *suffered and crucified*, they only, || *Crucified under Pontius Pilate* : nor was his Crucifixion distinguished from his Death, but where we read, *crucified, dead, and buried*, they only, *crucified and buried*. Because the chief of his Sufferings were on the Cross, and he gave up the Ghost there ; therefore his whole Passion and his Death were comprehended in his Crucifixion.

|| Crucifixus sub Pontio Pilato, & sepultus. Ruffin. in Symb. Cassianus de incarn. Domini. Credimus in eum qui sub Pontio Pilato cru-

ifixus est & sepultus. S. August. de Fide & Symb. & de Trinitat. l. 1. c. 14. Caput nostrum Christus est, crucifixus & sepultus, resuscitatus ascendit in cœlum. Idem in Psal. 132. Qui sub Pontio Pilato crucifixus est & sepultus. Max. Taurin. Chrysol. Euseb. Gallie. Τὸν ὀν Ποντίῳ Πιλάτῃ σταυρωθέντα, ταφέντα. Qui sub Pontio Pilato crucifixus est & sepultus. MSs. Armach. And beside these, a witness without exception, Leo the Great ; Unigenitum Filium Dei crucifixum & sepultum, omnes etiam in Symbolo confitemur. Epist. 10. cap. 5. Afterwards the passion was expressed : Passus sub Pontio Pilato, crucifixus & sepultus. Etherius Uxam. And the Death : Passus sub Pontio Pilato, crucifixus, mortuus, & sepultus. Author lib. de Symb. ad Catechum. Not but both these were expressed before in the Rule of Faith by Tertullian, but without particular mention of the Crucifixion. Adv. Prax. c. 2. hunc passum, hunc mortuum, & sepultum : as Optatus, Passus, mortuus, & sepultus resurrexit. lib. 1. Passus, sepultus, & tertia die resurrexit. Capitul. Caroli 82. And generally the Ancients did understand determinately his Crucifying by that more comprehensive name of his Suffering. For as Marcellus and S. Cyril have σταυρωθέντα & ταφέντα, Eusebius and the Nicene Council to the same purpose have παθόντα only in their Creeds. As Clem. Alex. Pedag. l. 2. c. 3. τῶν εἰς Θεὸν τίσιν, τῶν εἰς παθόντα ὁμολογίαν. Which was farther enlarged afterwards by the Council of Constantinople into σταυρωθέντα, & παθόντα, & ταφέντα.

But again, being he suffered not only on the Cross ; being it was possible he might have been affixed to that cursed Tree, and yet not have died ; therefore the Church thought fit to add the rest of his Sufferings, as antecedent, and his death, as consequent, to his Crucifixion.

To begin then with his Passion in general. In those words, He *suffered under Pontius Pilate*, we are to consider part as Substantial, part as Circumstantial. The Substance of this part of the Article consisteth in our Saviour's Passion, He *suffered* : the Circumstance of Time is added, declared by the present Governour, *under Pontius Pilate*.

Now for the explication of our Saviour's *Passion* as distinct from those particulars which follow in the Article, more I conceive cannot be required than that we shew, *Who* it was that suffered, *How* he suffered, *What* it was he suffered.

First, If we would clearly understand him that suffered in his full relation to his *Passion*, we must consider him both in his Office, and his Person ; as *Jesus Christ*, and as the only-begotten Son of God. In respect of his Office, we believe that he which was the *Christ* did suffer ; and so we make profession to be saved by Faith in a suffering *Messias*. Of which that we may give a just account, First, we must prove that the promised *Messias* was to suffer :
for

for if he were not, then by professing that our *Jesus* suffered, we should declare he was not *Christ*. Secondly, we must shew that *Jesus*, whom we believed to be the *Messias*, did really and truly suffer: for if he did not, then while we proved the true *Messias* was to suffer, we should conclude our *Jesus* was not that *Messias*. Thirdly, it will farther be advantageous for the illustration of this truth, to manifest that the Sufferings of the *Messias* were determined and foretold, as those by which he should be known. And fourthly, it will then be necessary to shew that our *Jesus* did truly suffer whatsoever was determined and foretold. And more than this cannot be necessary to declare *Who* it was that suffered, in relation to his Office.

^a Mark 9. 12.

^b Luke 24. 25,

46.

^c Acts 17. 3.

For the first of these, that the promised *Messias* was to suffer, to all Christians it is unquestionable; because our Saviour did constantly instruct the Apostles in this truth, both ^a before his death, that they might expect it, and ^b after, that they might be confirmed by it. And one part of the Doctrine which S. Paul disseminated through the world was this, ^c *that the Christ must needs have suffered*.

Mark 9. 12.

^d Pet. 1. 11.

But because these Testimonies will satisfy only such as believe in *Jesus*, and our Saviour himself did refer the disbelieving *Jews* to the Law and the Prophets, as those who testified of him; we will shew from thence, even from the Oracles committed to the *Jews*, how it was written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things; and how the Spirit of *Christ* which was in the Prophets testified before-hand the sufferings of *Christ*.

The fifty third Chapter of *Ezay* is beyond all question a sad, but clear, description of a suffering person: *A man of sorrows and acquainted with grief, oppressed, and afflicted, wounded and bruised, brought to the slaughter, and cut off out of the land of the living*. But the person of whom that Chapter treateth was certainly the *Messias*, as we have || formerly proved by the confession of the most ancient *Jews*, and may farther be evidenced both from them, and from the place it self. For surely no man's soul can be made an offering for our sins, but our Saviour's: nor hath God laid on any man the iniquity of us all, but on our Redeemer. Upon no person but the *Messias* could the chastisement of our peace be; nor with any stripes could we be healed but his. It is sufficiently then demonstrated by the Prophet, that the suffering Person whom he describes was to be the *Christ*, in that he bare our griefs, and carried our sorrows.

|| Page 87. We showed by the Authority of the Targum, the Bereshith Rabbah, and the Midrash upon Ruth, and by the confession of Solomon Jarchi and Moses Alshech, that the ancient Rabbins did interpret that Chapter of the *Messias*; which might seem a sufficient acknowledgment. But because this is the most considerable controversy between us and the *Jews*, it will not seem unnecessary to prove the same truth by further Testimonies. In the Talmud, Cod. Sanhedrin, to the question, What is the name of the *Messias*? it is answered, *למורי* the Leper. And the reason of the name is there rendered; *למורי* because it is spoken in this, *Ezay* 53. 4. Surely he hath born our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, i. e. *למורי*. And because *למורי* is used of the Leprosie, *Levit.* 13. 13. therefore from *למורי* they concluded his name to be a Leper, and consequently did interpret that place of the *Messias*. In the *Pesikta* it is written, *הושיענו ה' ונשמה נשמה* God produced the soul of the *Messias*, and said unto him, Wilt thou redeem my sins after 6000 years? He answered, I will. Wilt thou bear the chastisements to take away their sins, *נשמה דבתיב אבן חליניו* as it is written, *Isa.* 53. 4. Surely he hath born our griefs? And he answered, I will bear them with joy. Which is a clear testimony, considering the Opinion of the *Jews*, that all souls of men were created in the beginning, and so the soul of the *Messias* to suffer for the rest. The gist of the *Jews*, turning these expressions off from the *Messias*, and attributing of them to the People as to one, is something ancient: for we find that Origen was urged with that exposition in a disputation with the *Jews*. *Μένονμαι δὲ τότε ἐν τινὶ πρὸς τοὺς λεγόντας πρὸς Ἰουδαίους σὸς ἐκζητήσαι τὴν περὶ τούτων ἡμετέρας ἀπορίας. ἐπεὶ οἱς ἐλεγε ὁ Ἰουδαῖος, ταῦτα περὶ ἐν τῷ ὡς ἐκείνους τὸ ὅλον καὶ ἡμετέρας ἐν τῇ διαπορῇ καὶ πλησύνει, ἵνα πολλοὶ περὶ αὐτοῦ ἡρώδῃται τὴν περὶ τούτων τὴν ἐπεσφῆσαι αὐτῶν Ἰουδαίους τοῖς πολλοῖς ἔδωκεν. Thus the *Jews* interpreted those places, *Isa.* 52. 14. this village was so named more than any man; 52. 17. that which had not been told them shall they see; 53. 3. a man of sorrow, and acquainted with grief: and applied them to the people of Israel in their dispersions. But Origen did easily refute him, by retorting other places of the same Prophecy: in 53. 4. Surely he hath born our griefs and carried our sorrows; verse 5. He was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities, and with his stripes are we healed. *Σαφὲς γάρ, ὡς ἡμετέρας ἀπορίας, οἱ οὐ τὴν ἀμαρτίαν ἡμετέρας, καὶ ἐκείνους ἐκ τῆς Σωτήρος πνοῆς, ἔρ' ἀπὸ τῆς λαοῦ ἐκείνης, ἔτι καὶ οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς ἐθνῶν, ταῦτα λέγουσι. But especially he confounded the *Jew* with those words of the 2. verse, He was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgressions of my people was he stricken. *Μάλιστα τὸ ἐκζητῆσαι ἑλπίσαι ἀπὸ τῆς κατασκευῆς λέξεως τῆς, Ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνομίας ἐν τῇ λαοῦ ἡμετέρας ἐκείνης. Ἐπὶ γὰρ ὁ λαὸς κατ' ἐκείνης εἰσὶν οἱ τε φητέρας, καὶ οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνομίας τῆς λαοῦ τῆς Θεοῦ λεγόμενης ἡμετέρας ἀνομίας, ἔτ' ὅτι, καὶ μὴ ἑτέρ' ὡς πρὸς τὴν λαοῦ τῆς Θεοῦ: τίς γὰρ ἐστὶν ἡμετέρας ἡμετέρας Χριστός; Origen ad. Celsam l. 1.***

interpret that Chapter of the *Messias*; which might seem a sufficient acknowledgment. But because this is the most considerable controversy between us and the *Jews*, it will not seem unnecessary to prove the same truth by further Testimonies. In the Talmud, Cod. Sanhedrin, to the question, What is the name of the *Messias*? it is answered, *למורי* the Leper. And the reason of the name is there rendered; *למורי* because it is spoken in this, *Ezay* 53. 4. Surely he hath born our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, i. e. *למורי*. And because *למורי* is used of the Leprosie, *Levit.* 13. 13. therefore from *למורי* they concluded his name to be a Leper, and consequently did interpret that place of the *Messias*. In the *Pesikta* it is written, *הושיענו ה' ונשמה נשמה* God produced the soul of the *Messias*, and said unto him, Wilt thou redeem my sins after 6000 years? He answered, I will. Wilt thou bear the chastisements to take away their sins, *נשמה דבתיב אבן חליניו* as it is written, *Isa.* 53. 4. Surely he hath born our griefs? And he answered, I will bear them with joy. Which is a clear testimony, considering the Opinion of the *Jews*, that all souls of men were created in the beginning, and so the soul of the *Messias* to suffer for the rest. The gist of the *Jews*, turning these expressions off from the *Messias*, and attributing of them to the People as to one, is something ancient: for we find that Origen was urged with that exposition in a disputation with the *Jews*. *Μένονμαι δὲ τότε ἐν τινὶ πρὸς τοὺς λεγόντας πρὸς Ἰουδαίους σὸς ἐκζητήσαι τὴν περὶ τούτων ἡμετέρας ἀπορίας. ἐπεὶ οἱς ἐλεγε ὁ Ἰουδαῖος, ταῦτα περὶ ἐν τῷ ὡς ἐκείνους τὸ ὅλον καὶ ἡμετέρας ἐν τῇ διαπορῇ καὶ πλησύνει, ἵνα πολλοὶ περὶ αὐτοῦ ἡρώδῃται τὴν περὶ τούτων τὴν ἐπεσφῆσαι αὐτῶν Ἰουδαίους τοῖς πολλοῖς ἔδωκεν. Thus the *Jews* interpreted those places, *Isa.* 52. 14. this village was so named more than any man; 52. 17. that which had not been told them shall they see; 53. 3. a man of sorrow, and acquainted with grief: and applied them to the people of Israel in their dispersions. But Origen did easily refute him, by retorting other places of the same Prophecy: in 53. 4. Surely he hath born our griefs and carried our sorrows; verse 5. He was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities, and with his stripes are we healed. *Σαφὲς γάρ, ὡς ἡμετέρας ἀπορίας, οἱ οὐ τὴν ἀμαρτίαν ἡμετέρας, καὶ ἐκείνους ἐκ τῆς Σωτήρος πνοῆς, ἔρ' ἀπὸ τῆς λαοῦ ἐκείνης, ἔτι καὶ οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς ἐθνῶν, ταῦτα λέγουσι. But especially he confounded the *Jew* with those words of the 2. verse, He was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgressions of my people was he stricken. *Μάλιστα τὸ ἐκζητῆσαι ἑλπίσαι ἀπὸ τῆς κατασκευῆς λέξεως τῆς, Ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνομίας ἐν τῇ λαοῦ ἡμετέρας ἐκείνης. Ἐπὶ γὰρ ὁ λαὸς κατ' ἐκείνης εἰσὶν οἱ τε φητέρας, καὶ οἱ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνομίας τῆς λαοῦ τῆς Θεοῦ λεγόμενης ἡμετέρας ἀνομίας, ἔτ' ὅτι, καὶ μὴ ἑτέρ' ὡς πρὸς τὴν λαοῦ τῆς Θεοῦ: τίς γὰρ ἐστὶν ἡμετέρας ἡμετέρας Χριστός; Origen ad. Celsam l. 1.***

This

This Prediction is so clear, ever since the *Serpent* was to *bruise the heel* of the Woman's *seed*, that the *Jews*, who were resolved to expect a *Messias* which should be only glorious, have been enforced to invent another, which should suffer. And then they answer us with a distinction of their own invention; That a *Messias* was to redeem us, and a *Messias* was to suffer for us: but the same *Messias* was not both to redeem us and to suffer for us. For they say that there are || two several persons promised under the name of the *Messias*; one of the Tribe of *Ephraim*, the other of the Tribe of *Judah*; one the son of *Joseph*, the other the son of *David*; the one to precede, fight, and suffer death, the other to follow, conquer, reign, and never to die. If then our Saviour were a *Christ*, we must confess he was a suffering *Messias*, and consequently, according to their Doctrine, not a Saviour. For if he were the son of *David*, then, say they, he was never to die; or if he ever died, he was not that *Messias* which was promised to sit upon the throne of *David*. And while we confess our Saviour died, and withal assert his descent from the house of *David*, we do, in their opinion, involve our selves in a Contradiction.

|| So indeed the Jews expect a double *Messias*, one משיח בן יוסף *Messias the son of Joseph*, the other משיח בן דוד *Messias the son of David*. So the Targum expressly upon Canticles 4. 5. תרין פריקים דעתירין

Two are thy deliverers which shall deliver thee, *Messias the son of David*, and *Messias the Son of Ephraim*: and in the same manner, Chap. 7. 3. This that Paraphrast, nothing so ancient as the rest, is conceived to have taken out of the Talmud in Massecheth Succa, where cap. 5. is inscribed הורליר, God saith to a *Messias* the son of *David*, שאר מזה אתה מבקש Ask what thou wilt, (according to the second Psalm) and I will give it thee. כיון שרואה למשיח בן יוסף שנהרג Who seeing *Messias* the son of *Joseph* which was slain, asked of God nothing but life. Thus from the Talmud and the later Targum the Rabbins have generally taught a double *Messias*, one the son of *David*, the other of *Joseph*. As Solomon Jarchi, Isa. 24. 18. Zach. 12. 10. Aben Ezra, Zach. 9. 9. Malach. 3. 1. Kimki, Zach. 12. 10. whom the later Jews constantly follow. And this Marcion the Heretick seems to have learned of the Jews, and to have taught with some alteration in favour of his own opinion. Constituit Marcion alium esse Christum, qui Tiberianis temporibus à Deo quondam ignoto revelatus sit in salutem omnium gentium; alium, qui à Deo creatore in restitutionem Judaici status sit destinatus, quandoque venturus. Tertul. adver. Marcion. l. 4. c. 6.

But this Distinction of a double *Messias* is far from prevailing over our belief: first, because it is in it self false, and therefore of no validity against us; secondly, because it was first invented to counterfeit the truth, and so very advantageous to us.

That it is in it self false, will appear, because the Scriptures never mention any *Messias* of the Tribe of *Ephraim*; neither was there ever any promise of that nature made to any of the sons or off-spring of *Joseph*. Besides, as we acknowledge but one Mediator between God and man, so the Scriptures never mention any *Messias* but one. Under whatsoever title he is represented to us, there can be no pretence for a double person. Whether the *seed of the woman*, or the *seed of Abraham*, whether *Shiloh*, or the *Son of David*, still one person promised: and the stile of the ancient *Jews* before our Saviour was, not they, but he || which is to come. The question which was asked him, when he professed himself to be *Christ*, was, whether it was he which was to come, or whether they were to look for another; not that they could look for him and for another also. The objection then was, that *Elias* was not yet come, and therefore they expected no *Messias* till *Elias* came. Nor can the difference of the *Messias's* condition be any true reason of imagining a double person, because in the same place the Prophets, speaking of the same person, indifferently represent him in either condition. Being then, by the confession of all the *Jews*, one *Messias* was to be the son of *David*, whom *Elias* was to precede; being by the tenure of the Scriptures there was never promise made of more *Christs* than one, and never the least mention of the Tribe of *Ephraim* with any such relation; it followeth that that distinction is in it self false.

|| משיח בן יוסף

Zach. 9. 2
Isa. 9. 6

Again, that the same Distinction, framed and contrived against us, must needs

needs be in any different person's judgment advantageous to us, will appear, because the very invention of a double person is a plain confession of a twofold condition; and the different relations, which they prove not, are a convincing argument for the distinct æconomies, which they deny not. Why should they pretend to expect one to die, and another to triumph, but that the true *Messias* was both to triumph and to die, to be humbled and to be exalted, to put on the rags of our infirmity before the robe of Majesty and Immortality? Why should they tell us of one Mediator to be conquered, and the other to be victorious, but that the Serpent was to bruise the heel of the Seed of the Woman, and the same Seed to bruise his head; Thus even while they endeavour to elude, they confirm, our Faith; and as if they were still under the cloud, their error is but as a shadow to give a lustre to our truth. And so our first Assertion remaineth firm, the *Messias* was to suffer.

Secondly, that *Jesus*, whom we believe to be *Christ*, did suffer, we shall not need to prove, because it is freely confessed by all his enemies. The Gentiles acknowledged it, the *Jews* triumphed at it. And we may well take that for granted, which is so far from being denied, that it is objected. If hunger and thirst, if revilings and contempt, if sorrows and agonies, if stripes and buffetings, if condemnation and crucifixion, be sufferings, *Jesus* suffered. If the infirmities of our nature, if the weight of our sins, if the malice of man, if the machinations of Satan, if the hand of God could make him suffer, our Saviour suffered. If the Annals of times, if the writings of his Apostles, if the death of his Martyrs, if the confession of the Gentiles, if the scoffs of the *Jews*, be testimonies, *Jesus* suffered. Nor was there ever any which thought

¶ Those which were called by the Greeks Δοκίμα and Φαντασμά,

who taught that *Christ* was man only putative, and came into the world only in phantasmate, and consequently that he did only putative pati. These were called Δοκίμα, not from their Author, but from their Opinion, that *Christ* did all things only εν δοκίμα, in appearance, not reality. As Clemens Alexandrinus, Τῶν αἰρέσεων αἱ μὲν ἀπὸ δογματικῶν ἰδανόντων προσηγορεύονται, ὡς ἡ τοῦ Δοκίμου. Strom. l. 7. viz. αἱ δοκίμαί Χριστὸν προσηγορεύουσιν ὡς ἰλαζόντων. Id. l. 6. Neque in Phantasia, id est, absque carne, sicut Valentinus asserit, neque de thesi, putative imaginatum, sed verum corpus. Gennad. de Eccl. Dogm. cap. 2. Where for de thesi, I suppose we should read δοκίμα. The original of this train of Hereticks is to be fetched from Simon Magus, whose assertion was, Christum nec venisse, nec à Judæis quicquam percussisse. S. Aug. de Hæres. Wherefore making himself the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, he affirmed, se in Filii persona putative apparuisse, and so that he suffered as the Son amongst the *Jews*: ἀληθεῖα οὐκ πεπονθέναι ὅ ἀλλὰ δοκίμα μόνον. Damasc. de Hæres. Now what Simon Magus said of himself, when he made himself the Son, that those who followed affirmed of *Christ*. As Saturninus, who taught *Christum* in substantia non fuisse, & phantasmate tantum quasi passum fuisse. Tertul. de Præsc. adv. Hæret. cap. 46. Vide Epiph. mutilum, Hæret. 23. c. 1. And Basilides, who delivered, Ἦν ὁ Χριστὸν παντασίαν ἐν τῷ καινῷ, μὴ Ἦν ὁ ἄνθρωπον, μηδὲ σάρκα ἐκλήρεναι... ἢ χι Ἰησοῦν ἐδάσκων πεπονθῆναι ἀλλὰ Σίμωνα τὸν Κυρηνεῖον. Epiph. Hæret. 24. c. 3. A Judæis non credunt *Christum* crucifixum, sed Simonem Cyrenensem, qui angariarius sustulit crucem ejus. S. Aug. Hæret. 4. Thus the Valentinians, particularly Marcus, the Father of the Marcsonian Hereticks: Marcus etiam nescio quis Hæresim condidit, negans resurrectionem carnis, & *Christum* non verè, sed putative, passum asseverans. S. Aug. Hæret. 14. Thus Cerdon: *Christum* in substantia carnis negat, in phantasmate solo fuisse pronunciat, nec omnino passum, sed quasi passum. Tertul. Præsc. c. 51. *Christum* ipsum natum ex femina, neque habuisse carnem, nec verè mortuum vel quicquam passum, sed simulasse passionem. S. Aug. Hæret. 21. And the Manichees, who taught *Christum* non fuisse in carne veram, sed simulatam speciem carnis ludificandis humanis sensibus præbuisse; ubi non solum mortem, verum etiam resurrectionem, mentiretur. Idem Hæret. 46. Whom therefore Vincentius Lirinensis calls Phantasiæ prædicatores, cap. 20.

he did not really and truly suffer, but || such as withal rationally pretended he was not really and truly man.

Thirdly, to come yet nearer to the particular acknowledgment of this truth, we shall farther shew that the promised *Messias* was not only engaged to suffer for us, but by a certain and express agreement betwixt him and the Father, the measure and manner of his sufferings were determined, in order to the Redemption it self which was thereby to be wrought; and what was so resolved, was before his coming in the flesh revealed to the Prophets, and written by them, in order to the reception of the *Messias*, and the acceptance of the benefits to be procured by his sufferings.

That what the *Messias* was to undergo for us was predetermined and decreed, appeareth by the timely acknowledgment of the Church unto the Father: Of a truth, against thy holy child *Jesus*, whom thou hast anointed, both
Hæred

Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together; For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done. For as when the two Goats were presented before the Lord, that Goat was to be offered for a Sin-offering upon which the lot of the Lord should fall; and that lot of the Lord was lift up on high in the hand of the High-priest, and then laid upon the head of the Goat which was to die: so the *hand* of God is said to have *determined* what should be done unto our Saviour, whose Passion was typified by that Sin-offering. And well may we say that the *hand* of God as well as his *counsel* determined his Passion, because he was *delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God.* Lev. 16. 2.
Acts 2. 23.

And this determination of God's Counsel was thus made upon a Covenant or Agreement between the Father and the Son, in which it was concluded by them both what he should suffer, what he should receive. For beside the Covenant made by God with man, confirmed by the blood of Christ, we must consider and acknowledge another Covenant from eternity made by the Father with the Son: which partly is expressed, *If he shall make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days;* partly by the Apostle, *Then said I, Loe, I come, (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.* Isa. 53. 10.
Heb. 10. 7. In the Condition of *making his soul an offering for sin*, we see propounded whatsoever he suffered; in the acceptance, *Loe, I come to do thy will, O God*, we see undertaken whatsoever was propounded. The determination therefore of our Saviour's Passion was made by Covenant of the Father who sent, and the Son who suffered.

And as the Sufferings of the *Messias* were thus agreed on by consent, and determined by the counsel of God; so they were revealed by the Spirit of God unto the Prophets, and by them delivered to the Church; they were involved in the Types, and acted in the Sacrifices. Whether therefore we consider the Prophecies spoken by God in the mouths of men, they clearly relate unto his Sufferings by proper prediction; or whether we look upon the Ceremonial performances, they exhibit the same by an active representation. S. Paul's Apology was clear, that he *said none other things but those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come, That Christ should suffer.* Acts 26. 22. The Prophets *said* in express terms that the *Messias*, whom they foretold, should suffer: *Moses said* so in those Ceremonies which were instituted by his Ministry. When he caused the Passover to be slain, he *said* that *Shiloh* was the Lamb slain before the foundations of the world. When he set the brazen Serpent up in the wilderness, he *said*, the Son of man should be lifted up upon the Cross. When he commanded all the Sacrifices for sin, he *said*, without effusion of blood there was no Remission, and therefore the Son of God must die for the sins of men. When he appointed *Aaron* to go into the Holy of holies on the day of Atonement, he *said*, *Christ*, our High-priest should never enter through the veil into the highest Heaven to make expiation for us, but by his own Blood. If then we look upon the fountain, the eternal Counsel of the will of God, if we look upon the Revelation of that counsel, either in express Predictions or Ceremonial Representations; we shall clearly see the truth of our third Assertion, That the Sufferings of the Promised *Messias*, were predetermined and foretold.

Now all these sufferings which were thus agreed, determined and revealed as belonging to the true *Messias*, were undergone by that *Jesus of Nazareth* whom we believe to be the true *Christ*. Never was there any suffering Type which he out-went not, never Prediction of any Passion which he fulfilled not, never any expression of grief and sorrow which he felt not. When the appointed time of his death approached, he said to his Apostles, *Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the Prophets concerning* Luke 13. 31.

Luk. 22. 22.
καὶ τότε ὁ κύριος
εὐχόμενος.

Luk. 24. 25,
26.

Acts 3. 18.

the Son of man shall be accomplished. When he delivered them the blessed Sacrament, the commemoration of his Death, he said, *Truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined.* After his Resurrection, he chastised the dulness of his Disciples, who were so overwhelmed with his Passion, that they could not look back upon the antecedent Predictions; saying unto them, *O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the Prophets have spoken! Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? After his Ascension, S. Peter made this profession before the Jews, who had those Prophecies, and saw his Sufferings; Those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.* Whatsoever therefore was determined by the Counsel of God, whatsoever was revealed by the Prophets concerning the Sufferings of the *Messias*, was all fulfilled by that *Jesus* whom we believe to be, and worship as the *Christ*. Which is the fourth and last Assertion propounded to express our Saviour's Passion in relation to his Office.

Having considered him that *suffered* in his Office, we are next to consider him in his Person. And being in all this Article there is no person expressly named or described, we must look back upon the former, till we find his description and his name. The Article immediately preceding leaves us in the same suspension; but for our satisfaction refers us to the former, where we find him named *Jesus*, and described *the only-begotten Son of God*.

Now this Son of God we have already shewed to be therefore truly called the *Only-begotten*, because he was from all eternity generated of the essence of the Father, and therefore is, as the eternal Son, so also the eternal God. Wherefore by the immediate coherence of the Articles, and necessary consequence of the Creed, it plainly appeareth that the eternal Son of God, God of God, very God of very God, *suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead, and buried.* For it was no other person which *suffered under Pontius Pilate* than he which was *born of the Virgin Mary*, he which was *born of the Virgin Mary*, was no other person than he which was *conceived by the Holy Ghost*, he which was *conceived by the Holy Ghost* was no other person than *our Lord*, and that *our Lord* no other than the *only Son of God*: therefore by the immediate coherence of the Articles it followeth, that *the only Son of God, our Lord, suffered under Pontius Pilate.* That Word which was in the beginning, which then was with God, and was God, in the fulness of time being made flesh, did suffer. For the *Princes of this world crucified the Lord of glory*; and *God purchased his Church with his own blood.* That person which was begotten of the Father before all worlds, and so was really the *Lord of glory*, and most truly *God*, took upon him the nature of Man, and in that nature, being still the same Person which before he was, did suffer. When our Saviour fasted forty days, there was no other Person hungry than that Son of God which made the World; when he sat down weary by the Well, there was no other person felt that thirst but he which was eternally begotten of the Father, the fountain of the Deity: when he was buffeted and scourged, there was no other person sensible of those pains than that eternal Word which before all worlds was impassible; when he was crucified and died, there was no other person which gave up the Ghost but the Son of him, and so of the same nature with him, *who only hath immortality.* And thus we conclude our first Consideration propounded, *viz.* Who it was which suffered; affirming that, in respect of his Office, it was the *Messias*, in respect of his Person, it was God the Son.

But the perfect probation and illustration of this truth requireth first a view of the second Particular propounded, *How, or, In what, he suffered.* For while

|| This is that
inseparabilis
connexio in the
Creed, which
Cassianus ur-
geth so much a-
gainst Nestori-
us, De Incarn.
l. 6.

1 Cor. 2. 8.
Acts 26. 28.
Dominum pas-
sum Symboli
rener authori-
tas, & Aposto-
lus tradidit, di-
cens, Si enim
cognovissent,
nunquam Do-
minum gloriæ
crucifixissent.
Vigl. advers.
Eretic. l. 2.

while we prove the Person suffering to be God, we may seem to deny the Passion, of which the Perfection of the Godhead is incapable. The Divine nature is of infinite and eternal happiness, never to be disturbed by the least degree of infelicity, and therefore subject to no sense of misery. Wherefore while we profess that the Son of God did suffer for us, we must so far explain our Assertion, as to deny that the Divine nature of our Saviour suffered. For being the Divine nature of the Son is common to the Father and the Spirit, if that had been the subject of his Passion, then must the Father and the Spirit have suffered. Wherefore as we ascribe the Passion to the Son alone, so must we attribute it to that Nature which is his alone, that is, the humane. And then neither the Father nor the Spirit will appear to suffer, because neither the Father nor the Spirit, but the Son alone, is Man, and so capable of suffering.

Whereas then the Humanity of *Christ* consisteth of a Soul and Body, these were the proper subject of his Passion; nor could he suffer any thing but in both or either of these two. For as the *Word was made flesh*, though the Word was || never made, (as being in the beginning God) but the flesh, that is, the Humanity, was made, and the Word assuming it became flesh; so saith *S. Peter*, *Christ suffered for us in the flesh*, in that nature of man which he took upon him: and so God the Son did suffer, not in that nature in which he was begotten of the Father before all Worlds, but in that flesh which by his Incarnation he became. For he was ^b *put to death in the flesh, but quickened in the spirit*; suffered in the weakness of his Humanity, but rose by the power of his Divinity. As he was made of the seed of David according to the flesh, in the language of *S. Paul*; so was he *put to death in the flesh*, in the language of *S. Peter*: and as he was declared to be the son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness; so was he quickened by the Spirit. Thus the proper subject and recipient of our Saviour's Passion, which he underwent for us, was that Nature which he took from us.

Far be it therefore from us to think that the Deity, which is immutable, could suffer; which only hath immortality, could die. The conjunction with Humanity could put no imperfection upon the Divinity: nor can that || infinite nature by any external acquisition be any way changed in its intrinsic and essential perfections. * If the bright raies of the Sun are thought to insinuate into the most noisome bodies without any pollution of themselves, how can that spiritual essence contract the least infirmity by any union with Humanity? We must neither harbour so low an estimation of the Divine nature, as to conceive it capable of any diminution; nor so mean esteem of the essence of the Word, as to imagine it subject to the sufferings of the flesh he took; nor yet so groundless an estimation of the great mystery of the Incarnation, as to make the properties of one nature mix in confusion with the other. These were the wild collections of the || *Arian* and *Apollinarian* Hereticks, whom the Church hath long since silenced by a sound and sober Assertion, that all the Sufferings of our Mediator were subjected in his humane nature.

|| Τὸ γὰρ οὗτοι ἀφάρστον καὶ ἀναλλοίωτον αἰ τοῦτόν ὄν, ἡ ὁμοιωμένη τῇ ταπεινῇ εὐσε, ὅταν ἐν ἐκείνῃ κατ' οἰκονομίαν ᾔσκηται. Greg. Nysien. Epist. * Ὡς ἐὰν ἡλιακὸς φωτὸς πάθοιεν τι ἀκλίνας τὰ πάντα πληροῦσαι, καὶ ὁμοιωμένων νεκρῶν καὶ καθαρῶν ἐραπτόμενοι. πολὺ πλεονὴ ἀσώματός τῃ Θεῷ ὁμοιωμένης ἔσ' ἀν' ἁπλοῦς τῷ ὄντι, ἐὰν βλαβὴν ὁμοιωμένης ἀσώματος ἐπαρῶμεν. Euseb. Demon. Evang. l. 4. c. 13. || This danger is the rather to be unfolded, because it is not generally understood. The Heresie of Arius, as it was condemned by the Council of Nice, is known to all. But that he made the nature of the Word to suffer in the flesh, is not so frequently or plainly delivered. This Phœbadius (the first of the Latine Church who wrote against the Arians) chargeth them with. Duplicem hunc statum, non conjunctum, sed confusum, vultis videri; ut etiam unius vestrum, id est Epistola Potami, quæ ad Orientem & Occidentem transmissa est, qua allerit, carne & spiritu Christi coagulatis per sanguinem Mariæ, & in unum corpus redactis, passibilem Deum factum. Hoc ideo, ne quis illum ex eo crederet, quem impassibilem satis constat. Lib. adv. Arianos, c. 7. And again: Non ergo est spiritus caro, nec caro spiritus, quod isti volunt egregii Doctores, ut factus sit scilicet Dominus & Deus noster ex hac substantiarum permutatione passibilis. Ideo autem passibilem volunt dici, ne ex impassibili credatur. Cap. 8. Μάτρω ἐν Ἀρειανοῖς παρὰ δόξαν. ὁμοιωμένη

|| Ὁ λόγος
σὰρξ ἐγένετο,
ὥς καὶ ὁ λόγος
αἰεὶ ἦ λόγος,
καὶ σὰρκα ἔχων
ὁ λόγος. ἐν
τῷ παθόντι
καὶ τῷ θανάτῳ
ἀνεδίκαστο, ἐν
μορφῇ τῇ ἀν-
θρώπινῃ μέ-
νει τὰς καὶ
θεοῦ ὁμοιωμένης.
S. Athanas. de
Incarn.

^a 1 Pet. 4. 1.

^b 1 Pet. 3. 18.

Adeo salva est
utriusque pro-
prietas substan-
tiæ, ut & Spi-
ritus res suas co-
gerit in illo,
id est, virtu-
tes & opera &
signa, & caro
passiones suas
functa sit, esu-
riens sub Dia-
bolo, sitiens
sub Samaritæ-
de, flens La-
zarum, anxius
usque ad mor-
tem, denique
& mortua est.
Tertul. advers.
Prax. c. 27.
Clement. Alex.
Pædag. l. 1. c.
5. 91. c.

Ἐπεὶ καὶ μὴν ὑποθέμενοι ἀνελθεῖν τὸ Σωτῆρα, πῶς ἢ τὰ πάθος νύκον ἐπὶ τῷ ἀπαθὴν θεότητι ἀναδείξουσιν ἀσεβῶς. S. Athan. lib. de Incarn. Of this S. Hilary is to be understood: Sed eorum omnis hic sensus, ut opinetur metum mortis in Dei Filium incidisse, qui asserunt non de aternitate prolatum, neque de infinitate patris substantiæ existisse, sed ex nullo illum qui omnia creavit effectum; ut assumptus ex nihilo sit, & ceptus ex opere, & confirmatus ex tempore. Et ideo in eo doloris anxietas, ideo spiritus passio cum corporis passione. Can. 31. in Matth. Where clearly he argues against the Arians. The right understanding whereof is the only true way to reconcile those harsh sayings of his, which troubled the Master of the Sentences, and the whole Schools ever since.

Per unum a
bile unitatem
Verbi & carnis,
omnia quæ
carnis sunt as-
cribuntur &
Verbo, quomo-
do & quæ Ver-
bi sunt prædi-
cantur in car-
ne. Orig. in Ep.
ad Rom. Διὰ
τὴν ἀρετὴν ἐ-
γένετο τῆς τε
παραθεθείσης
σάρκος καὶ τῆς
παραβου-
της θεότητος,
ἀντιμίσαισα
τὰ ὀνόματα
θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἀν-
θρώπου τῷ
θεῷ, καὶ τὸ
θεῖον τῷ ἀν-
θρώπινῳ καλο-
νομαζέσθαι.
Greg Nyl. Ep.
ad Theoph.
Χρὴ μὴ τοι ἐ-
δέναι ὡς ἡ ἐ-
ρώσις κοινὰ
ποιεῖ τὰ ὀνό-
ματα. Theo-
dor. Dial. 3.
> Called by the
Schools ordina-
rily Communi-
catio idioma-
tum, by the an-
cient Greek Di-
vines Ἀντίθε-
σις, and some-
times Ἀντιμε-
τάθεσις.

And now the only difficulty will consist in this, how we can reconcile the Person suffering with the Subject of his Passion; how we can say that God did suffer, when we profess the Godhead suffered not. But this seeming difficulty will admit an easie solution, if we consider the intimate conjuncti-
on of the Divine and humane nature, and their union in the Person of the Son. For || hereby those Attributes which properly belong unto the one, are given to the other; and that upon good reason. For being the same indi-
vidual person is, by the conjunction of the nature of God and the nature of man, really and truly both God and man; it necessarily followeth, that it is true to say, *God is man*, and as true, *A man is God*: because in this particular he which is man is God, and he which is God is man. Again, being by rea-
son of the Incarnation it is proper to say, *God is man*, it followeth, unavoid-
ably, that whatsoever necessarily belongeth to the humane nature may be spoken of God; otherwise there would be a man to whom the nature of man did not belong, which were a contradiction. And being by virtue of the
same Incarnation it is also proper to say, *A man is God*, by the same necessity of consequence we must acknowledge, that all the essential Attributes of the Divine nature may truly be spoken of that man; otherwise there would be one truly and properly God to whom the nature of God did not belong, which is a clear repugnancy. Again, if the properties of the Divine nature may be truly attributed to that man which is God, then may those actions which flow from those properties be attributed to the same. And being the
properties of the humane nature may be also attributed to the eternal Son of God, those actions or passions which did proceed from those properties may be attributed to the same Son of God, or God the Son. Wherefore as God the Son is truly man, and as man truly passible and mortal; so God the Son did truly suffer, and did truly die. And this is the only true * communicati-
on of Properties.

Not that the essential Properties of one Nature are really communicated to the other Nature, as if the Divinity of Christ were passible and mortal, or his Humanity of original Omnipotence and Omnipresence; but because the same God the Son was also the Son of man, he was at the same time both mortal and eternal: mortal, as the son of man, in respect of his Humanity; eternal, as the Son of God, in respect of his Divinity. The Sufferings there-
fore of the *Messias* were the Sufferings of God the Son: not that they were the Sufferings of his Deity, as of which that was incapable; but the Sufferings of his Humanity, as unto which that was inclineable. For although the hu-
mane nature was conjoined to the Divine, yet it suffered as much as if it had been alone; and the Divine as little suffered as if it had not been con-
joined: because each kept their respective Properties distinct, without the least confusion in their most intimate conjunction. From whence at last the Person suffering is reconciled to the Subject of his Passion: For God the Son being not only God, but also Man, suffered, though not in his Deity, by rea-
son of which he is truly God, yet in his Humanity, by which he who is truly God, is as truly Man. And thus we conclude our two first Disquisitions: Who it was that suffered; in respect of his Office, the *Messias*, in respect of his Person, God the Son: How it was he suffered; not in his Deity, which
is

is impassible, but in his Humanity, which he assumed cloathed with our infirmities.

Our next enquiry is, What this God the Son did suffer as the Son of man ; not in the latitude of all his sufferings, but so far as they are comprehended in this Article : which first prescindeth all the antecedent part by the expression of time *under Pontius Pilate*, who was not Governour of *Judaea* long before our Saviour's Baptism ; and then takes off his concluding Passion, by adding his Crucifixion and his Death. Looking then upon the Sufferings of our Saviour in the time of his preaching the Gospel, and especially before his Death, we shall best understand them by considering them in relation to the Subject or recipient of them. And being we have already shewed his Passion was wholly subjected in his humane nature, being that nature consisteth of two parts, the Soul and Body ; it will be necessary to declare what he suffered in the Body, what in the Soul.

For the first, As we believe the Son of God took upon him the nature of Man, of which the Body is a part ; so we acknowledge that he took a true and real Body, so as to become flesh of our flesh, bone of our bone. This Body of Christ, really and truly humane, was also frail and mortal, as being accompanied with all those natural properties which necessarily flow from the condition of a frail and mortal body : and though now the same body, exalted above the highest Heavens, by virtue of its glorification be put beyond all possibility of Passion ; yet in the time of his Humiliation it was cloathed with no such glorious perfection ; but as it was subject unto, so it felt, weariness, hunger and thirst. Nor was it only liable to those internal weakneses and natural infirmities, but to all outward injuries and violent impressions. As all our corporal pain consists in that sense which ariseth from the solution of that continuity which is connatural to the parts of our body ; so no parts of his sacred body were injuriously violated by any outward impression, but he was truly and fully sensible of the pain arising from that violation. Deep was that sense and grievous was that pain which those Scourges produced, *when the plowers plowed upon his back and made long their furrows* : the dilaceration of those nervous parts created a most sharp and dolorous sensation. The coronary Thorns did not only express the scorn of the imposers, by that figure into which they were contrived ; but did also pierce his tender and sacred temples to a multiplicity of pains, by their numerous acuminations. That Spear directed by an impertinent malice which opened his side, though it brought forth water and blood, caused no dolorous sensation, because the Body was then dead : but the Nails which pierced his hands and feet made another kind of impression, while it was yet alive and highly sensible. Thus did the Body of the Son of man truly *suffer* the bitterness of corporal pains and torments inflicted by violent external impressions.

And our Saviour took upon him both parts of the nature of man, so he suffered in them both, that he might be a Saviour of the whole. In what sense the Soul is capable of suffering, in that he was subject to animal Passion. Evil apprehended to come tormented his Soul with Fear, which was as truly in him in respect of what he was to suffer, as Hope in reference to the recompence of a reward to come after and for his Sufferings. Evil apprehended as present tormented the same with Sadness, Sorrow and Anguish of mind. So that he was truly represented to us by the Prophet, as *a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief* ; and the proper subject of that Grief he hath fully expressed who alone felt it, saying unto his Disciples, *My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death.*

Qui suscepit animam, suscepit animæ passionem. S. Ambrosii. de Fide l. 2. c. 3.

lips or eyes; the innumerable pores of all his Body must give a passage to more lively representations of the bitter anguish of his Soul: and therefore while he *prayed more earnestly*, in that agony *his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground*. As the Psalmist had before declared; *I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joynt: my heart is like wax, it is melted in the midst of my bowels*. Psal. 22. 14 The heart of our Saviour was as it were melted with fear and astonishment, and all the parts of his Body at the same time inflamed with anguish and agony; well then might that melting produce a Sweat, and that inflamed and rarified blood force a passage through the numerous pores.

And as the Evangelists expressions, so the Occasion, of the Grief will manifest the height and bitterness thereof. For God *laid on his own Son the iniquities of us all*; and as we are obliged to be sorry for our particular Sins, so was he grieved for the sins of us all. If then we consider the perfection and latitude of his Knowledge; he understood all the sins of men for which he suffered, all the evil and the guilt, all the offence against the Majesty, and ingratitude against the Goodness of God, which was contained in all those sins. If we look upon his absolute Conformity to the will of God; he was inflamed with most ardent Love, he was most zealous of his Glory, and most studious to preserve that Right which was so highly violated by those sins. If we look upon his Relation to the sons of men; he loved them all far more than any did themselves, he knew those sins were of themselves sufficient to bring eternal destruction on their Souls and Bodies, he considered them whom he so much loved as lying under the wrath of God whom he so truly worshipped. If we reflect upon those Graces which were without measure diffused through his Soul, and caused him with the greatest habitual detestation to abhor all sin: If we consider all these circumstances, we cannot wonder at that Grief and Sorrow. For if the true Contrition of one single sinner, bleeding under the sting of the Law only for his own iniquities, all which notwithstanding he knoweth not, cannot be performed without great bitterness of sorrow and remorse; what bounds can we set unto that Grief, what measures to that Anguish, which proceedeth from a full apprehension of all the transgressions of so many millions of sinners?

Add unto all these present apprehensions, the immediate hand of God pressing upon him all this load, laying on his shoulders at once an heap of all the Sorrows which can happen unto any of the Saints of God; that he, being *touched with the feeling of our infirmities*, might become a *merciful High-priest, able and willing to succour them that are tempted*. Thus may we behold *and see if there be any sorrow like unto that sorrow which was done unto him, wherewith the Lord afflicted him in the day of his fierce anger*. And from hence we may and must conclude, that the Saviour of man, as he took the whole Nature of man, so he suffered in whatsoever he took: in his Body, by internal Infirmities and external Injuries; in his Soul, by Fears and Sorrows, by unknown and inexpressible Anguishes. Which shews us fully (if it can be shewn) the third Particular propounded, What our Saviour suffered. Heb. 2. 17, 18. 4. 15. Lam. 1. 12.

That our Saviour did thus *suffer*, is most necessary to believe. First, that thereby we may be assured of the verity of his Humane Nature. For if he were not Man, then could not Man be redeemed by him; and if that nature in which he appeared were not truly humane, then could he not be truly Man. But we may be well assured that he took on him our nature, when we see him subject unto our infirmities. We know the Godhead is of infinite perfection, and therefore is exalted far above all possibility of molestation.

When

When therefore we see our Saviour truly suffer, we know his Divine Essence suffered not, and thence acknowledge the addition of his Humane Nature, as the proper subject of his Passion. And from hence we may infallibly conclude, Surely that Mediator between God and Man was truly Man, as we are men, who when he fasted was an hungry, when he travelled was thirsty and weary as we are, who being grieved wept, being in an agony sweat, being scourged bled, and being crucified died.

Secondly, it was necessary Christ should suffer for the Redemption of lapsed men, and their reconciliation unto God; which was not otherwise to be performed than by a plenary satisfaction to his will. He therefore was by all his sufferings made an Expiation, Atonement and Propitiation for all our sins. For Salvation is impossible unto sinners without Remission of sin; and Remission in the decree of God impossible without effusion of blood. Our Redemption therefore could not be wrought but by the blood of the Redeemer, but by a Lamb slain, but by a suffering Saviour.

*Psal. 110. 7.
Luke 24. 26.*

Thirdly, it behoved Christ to suffer, that he might purchase thereby eternal Happiness in the Heavens both for himself the Head, and for the members of his Body. *He drunk of the brook in the way, therefore hath he lift up his head. Ought not Christ to suffer, and so to enter into his own glory?* And doth he not by the same right by which he entered into it, confer that glory upon us? The recompence of the reward was set before him, and through an intuition of it he chearfully underwent whatsoever was laid upon him. He must therefore necessarily suffer to obtain that Happiness, who is therefore happy because he suffered.

Fourthly, it was necessary Christ should suffer, that we might be assured that he is truly affected with a most tender compassion of our afflictions. For this end was he subjected to Misery, that he might become prone unto Mercy: for this purpose was he made a Sacrifice, that he might be a compassionate High-priest: and therefore was he most unmerciful to himself, that he might be most merciful unto us.

Fifthly, it was necessary the Son of man should suffer, thereby to shew us that we are to suffer, and to teach us how we are to suffer. *For if these things were done to the green tree, what shall be done to the dry?* Nay, if God spared not his natural, his eternal, his only-begotten Son; how shall he spare his adopted sons, who are best known to be children because they are chastised, and appear to be in his paternal affection because they lie under his Fatherly correction? We are therefore Heirs only, because Co-heirs with Christ; and we shall be Kings only because we shall reign together with him. It is a certain and infallible consequence, *If Christ be risen, then shall we also rise*; and we must look for as strong a coherence in this other, *If Christ hath suffered, then must we expect to suffer*. And as he taught the Necessity of, so he left us the Direction in, our Sufferings. Great was the example of Job, but far short of absolute perfection: the pattern beyond all exception is alone our Saviour, who hath taught us in all our afflictions the exercise of admirable Humility, perfect Patience, and absolute Submission unto the will of God.

And now we may perceive the full importance of this part of the Article, and every Christian may thereby understand what he is to believe, and what he is conceived to profess, when he makes this confession of his Faith, *He suffered*. For hereby every one is obliged to intend thus much: I am really persuaded within my self, and do make a sincere profession of this as a most necessary, certain and infallible truth, That the only-begotten Son of God, begotten of the Father, and of the same Essence with the Father, did for the

Redemption of mankind really and truly suffer; not in his Divinity, which was impassible, but in his Humanity, which in the days of his Humiliation was subject unto our Infirmities: That as he is a perfect Redeemer of the whole man, so he was a complete Sufferer in the whole; in his Body, by such dolorous Infirmities as arise internally from humane frailties, and by such Pains as are inflicted by external injuries; in his Soul, by fearful Apprehensions, by unknown Sorrows, by Anguish unexpressible. And in this latitude and propriety I believe our Saviour suffered

Under Pontius Pilate.

After the substance of this part of the Article, consisting in our Saviour's Passion, *He suffered*, followeth the circumstance of time, declared by the present Governour, *under Pontius Pilate*. Which, though the name of a stranger to the Commonwealth of *Israel* and the Church of *Christ*, is well preserved to eternal memory in the sacred Articles of our Creed. For as the Son of God by his determinate counsel was sent into the world to die in the fulness of time: so it concerns the Church to be assured of the time in which he died. And because the ancient custom of the world was, to make their Computations by their Governours, and refer their Historical relations to the respective times of their Government: therefore, that we might be properly assured of the Actions of our Saviour which he did, and of his Sufferings, (that is, the Actions which others did to him,) the present Governour is named in that form of speech which is proper to such Historical or Chronological narrations, when we affirm that he suffered || *under Pontius Pilate*.

Ἐπὶ Ποντίῳ Πιλάτῳ which words are capa-

ble of a double construction. First, as they are used by S. Paul, 1 Tim. 6: 13. Ἰησοῦ, τοῦ μαρτυρήσαντος ὅτι Ποντίῳ Πιλάτῳ τὴν καλὴν ὁμολογίαν, Who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; that is, standing before him as before a Judge. As of the same person, Matt. 28. 14. Καὶ ἐὰν ἀναδῇ τὸτο ὅτι τὸ ἡγεμόν, If this come to be tried before the Procurator. Thus Festus propounded it to S. Paul, Acts 25. 9. Θέλεις κείνου ἐπ' ἐμοῦ; and S. Paul answered in the same propriety of speech, ὅτι τὸ βίματ' αἰσῶν ἐξ ὧς εἰμι. Thus Christ tells his Apostles, Mark 13. 9. ὅτι ἡγεμόνων καὶ βασιλέων σαθήσεται. And in this sense ὅτι is often used by the Greeks. Secondly, ὅτι Πιλάτῳ is under Pilate, that is, in the time of his Government; when and while he was Procurator of Judæa: as ἐπ' ἀρχιερέων Ἀννα καὶ Καϊάφα, Luke 3. 2. and ὅτι Ἀβιάθαρ τὸ ἀρχιερεὺς, Mark 2. 26. which is also according to the custom and language of the Greeks: As, Κατακλυσμὸς ὅτι Δουκαλίαν' ἐγένετο, Marm. Arundel. Οὗτοι ἦσαν ὅτι τὸ Λαομέδοντ' Ἰβανασάντων Τρώων, Plat. Epist. ad Archytan and ὅτι τέττα βασιλεύοντ', in this King's reign, is the common phrase of Pausanias. Thus the Athenians among their 9 ἄρχοντες had one who was called Ἐπόνομος, because his name was used for the denotation of that year; and the phrase was usually, ὅτι τὸ δαίνα, or ὅτι τὸ δαίνα ἀρχόντ'; as I find it thrice in one place, Ὁ μὲν δ' (Ἰσχυρῆς) ὅτι Λυσιστράτης, Πλάτων δ' ἐπὶ Ἀμεινίου γέγονεν ἐφ' ἑ Περικλῆς ἐτελεύτησεν. In the same manner did the Lacedæmonians make their Historical accounts by their Ephori, and the Argivi by the Priestesses of Juno: Ἐπὶ Χρυσίδ' ἐν Ἀργεὶ τότε πινυτήκοντα δύοιν δόντα ἐτη ἑξαμῶν καὶ Αἰνιόνης ἐφόρε ἐν Σπάρτῃ, καὶ Πυθοδώρ' ἐτι δύομῶν ἀρχόντ' Ἀθλωναίσις. Thucyd. l. 2. And as the Greeks thus referred all actions to the times of these Governours, so did the Jews under the Roman Government to the Procurators of Judæa; as appeareth by Iosephus, who mentioning the first of that Office, Coponius, presently relates the Insurrection of Judas Galilaus in this manner: ὅτι τέττα (Κοπονίῳ) τὸς ἐνὶ Γαλιλαίᾳ, ἰδὼν ὄνομα, εἰς Ἀπείραν ἐνῆγε τὸν ὀπίσθιον, de Bell. Jud. l. 2. c. 12. then names his successor Ambivius, ἐφ' ὃ Σαλώμην Ἰαμνιὸν κατέλαβεν: after him Rufus, ἐφ' ὃ δὴ καὶ τελευτᾷ Καϊάπαρ. Antiq. Jud. l. 18. c. 3. And in the same manner in the Creed, παθὼν ἐπὶ Ποντίῳ Πιλάτῳ, our Saviour suffered under Pontius Pilate, that is, at the time when he was Procurator of Judæa; as Ignatius fully, ἐν καιρῷ τῆς ἡγεμονίας Ποντίῳ Πιλάτῳ, Epist. ad Magnesios.

And because he not only suffered under him as the present Governour, but also was arraigned and condemned by him as a Judge; therefore it will be necessary for the illustration of the manner, and confirmation of the truth, of our Saviour's Sufferings, to declare what hath been left and derived to our knowledge both concerning his Person and his Office.

For the first, we find him described by two names; nor is any other name of his extant, although, according to the || general custom of the Romans,

|| Pausanias speaking of the

Romans, Τεῖα ὁπότε καὶ ὀλίγιστα, καὶ ἐτι πλεονα ὀνόμαζα ἰκῶσα τίθενται, And although Diomedes and Plurarch have observed, that even among the Romans there were some δῶνυμα, yet the Prænomine was never omitted, as Priscian affirmed, Ex illo tempore consuetudo tenuit, ut nemo Romanus sit absque prænomine. lib. 2.

* Pontius and Pilatus were his Nomen and Cognomen, in the same manner as Julius and Cæsar are described

he should have three. The first of these two is * *Pontius*, the name descended to him from the original of his Family, which was very ancient; the second *Pilatus*, as a cognominal addition distinguishing from the rest descending from the same Original.

by Suetonius: Non Cæsare & Bibulo, sed Julio & Cæsare, Coss. actum scriberent, his eundem præponentes, nomine atque cognomine. lib. 1. cap. 20. Thus without a Prænomen or Agnomen, he is only known to us by his Nomen properly called, and his Cognomen. The nature of which two is thus described by the Ancients: Nomen proprium est gentilitium, id est, quod originem gentis & familiæ declarat, ut Pontius, Cornelius; Cognomen est quod uniuscujusque proprium, & nominibus gentiliis subjungitur, ut Caro, Scipio. Diomides de Oratore l. 1. Nomen quod Familiæ originem declarat, ut Cornelius; Cognomen, quod nomini subjungitur, ut Scipio. Charisius. l. 2. The first of these Dionysius calls τὸ Συγγενικὸν καὶ παλαιονυμικόν. Plutarch οὐκ ἔστιν ὅτι καὶ κοινὸν, and κοινὸν ἐστὶν Συγγενικόν. the second he calls περὶ συγγενικὸν καὶ ἐπὶ ὀνόματι. Thus Pontius was his Nomen gentis or gentilitium, and Pilatus his Cognomen. As therefore Pontius Aquila, Pontius Cominius, Pontius Herennius, Pontius Paulinus, &c. so also Pontius Pilatus. Wherefore in vain have some of the Ancients endeavoured to give an Etymology of these names, as they do of Greek and Hebrew names in the Scripture, and think thereby to express the nature or actions of them that bare the names. As Isidorus Hispal. Orig. l. 7. c. 10. Pontius, Declinans concilium, utique Judæorum: accepta enim aqua lavit manus suas, dicens, Innocens ego sum à sanguine hujus justii. And Eutychius Patriarch of Alexandria deduced Pontius from an Island called Ponta, near to Rome. And S. Jerome, Quod significat nomen Pilati, i. e. Malleatoris, i. e. qui domas ferreas gentes. ad Matt. 15. Pilatus, Os malleatoris; quia dum Christum ore suo & justificat & condemnat, more malleatoris utrinque ferit, Isid. ib. Pontus, declinans concilium; Pilatus, Os malleatoris. S. Jer. de nom. Hebraicis, in Luca, & Rufus in Actis. Where he lets us understand that these Etymologies were made from the Hebrew language; and makes an excuse, because the letter P is here taken for the Hebrew פ, to which the Latin F more properly answers. Sed sciendum est quod apud Hebræos P licera non habetur, nec ullum nomen est quod hoc elementum sonet: abusive igitur accipienda, quasi per F liceram scripta sint. Thus did they vainly strive to find an Hebrew Original, and that such an one as should represent the conditions of Pilate; when these two names are nothing else but the Roman Nomen and Cognomen of that Person.

|| Τῆς Ἀρχῆ-
λας ἰθναρχί-
ας μετὰ πεισ-
σης εἰς ἱπαρ-
χίαν. Joseph.
de Bell. Jud. l.
2. c. 13 Τῆς δ'

Ἀρχιλαὸς χάρις ὡς τοῦ λαὸς περὶ σκευῆς τῆς Σύρας. in Antiq. Jud. l. 17. c. 15. Παρεῖν δὲ Κυρῶν ὅς ἐστιν Ἰουδαίων πρεσβύτερος Σουρίας γινώσκων. ibid. l. 18. c. 1.

* Tacitus speaking of the Christians, Author nominis ejus Christus, qui Tiberio imperitante per Procuratorem Pontium Pilatum supplicio affectus est. Annal. l. 15. And Tertullian, most skilful of their Laws and Customs, speaks thus of our Saviour; postremo oblatum Pontio Pilato, Syriam tunc ex

parte Romana procurant. Apolog. cap. 21. whom S. Cyprian follows: Hunc Magistrum eorum..... Pontio Pilato, qui tunc ex parte Romana Syriam procurabat, tradiderunt. advers. Demetr. Thus also Josephus for the Jews: Περὶ τοῦ ὅτι ἐστὶν Ἰουδαίων ὁπότερον ἐστὶν τοῦ Πιλάτου. de Bell. Jud. l. 2. c. 14. And Philo, Πιλάτος ὡς ἂν ὁ ἀρχὸν ὁπότερον ἐστὶν τοῦ Πιλάτου. de legat. ad Caium. And therefore those words of S. Luke, c. 3. 1. ἡμεῖς δὲ ἐν τῇ Προτίᾳ Πιλάτου τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ,

He was by birth a Roman, by degree of the Equestrian Order, sent by Tiberius the Emperour to be a Governour of Judæa. For about threescore years before our Saviour's birth the Jews by Pompey the Great were made tributary to the Romans. And although during the life of Hircanus the High-Priest, the reign of Herod and his son Archelaus, the Roman State suffered the Jews to be ruled by their own Laws and Governours; yet when Archelaus was banished by Augustus, they received their Governours from the Roman Emperour, being made a part of the || Province of Syria belonging to his care. In the life of Augustus there was a Succession of three, Coponius, Ambivivius, and Rufus. At the beginning of the reign of Tiberius they were governed by Valerius Gracchus, and at his departure by Pontius Pilate.

The Office which this Pilate bare was the Procuratorship of Judæa, as is most evident out of the History both of the * Romans, from whom he received his authority, and of the Jews, over whom he exercised his dominion. But what was the Office of a || Procurator in those times, though necessary for our present purpose, is not so easie to determine, because it was but newly introduced into the Roman Government. For before the Dominion of that City was changed from a Commonwealth into an Empire, there was no such publick Office in any of the Provinces, and particularly in Judæa none till after the Banishment of Archelaus, some years after our Saviour's birth. When Augustus divided the Provinces of the Empire into two parts, one of which he kept for his own care, and left the other to the inspection of the Senate, he sent, together with the President of each Province, as the Governour in chief of the Province, a Procurator, whose Office was, to take an account of all the Tribute, and whatsoever was due to the Emperour, and to order and dispose of the same for his advantage. Neither was there at the first institution of this Office any other act belonging properly to their Jurisdiction, but

were properly translated by the old Interpreter, procurante Pontio Pilato Judæam. Τὸν Lucius Dexter ad annum Christi 28. Pontius Pilatus procurator Judææ à Tiberio mittitur in Judæam. And Justin Martyr most properly; Τὸν αὐτοκράτορα δὴ Πενθίου Πιλάτου, τὸν ἡγεμόνα ἐν Ἰουδαίᾳ δὴ ἡγεμόνι Τιβερίῳ Κεῖσαρ' ἐπέστειλε. Apol. 2. And again, speaking to the Emperors, by whom the Procurators were sent; Καὶ Πιλάτου τὸν ἐμὲν παρ' Ἰουδαίῳ ἡγεμόνι ἐπέστειλε. And again, καὶ τὸν ἐμὲν παρ' Ἰουδαίῳ ἡγεμόνι ἐπέστειλε. Dial. cum Tryph. As also Eusebius, Δωδεκάτη ἐν ἑαυτοῖς τῆς Τιβερίῳ Καίσαρος, ἐπέστειλε τὸν Ἰουδαίᾳ ἐπὶ Τιβερίῳ καθίσταται Πιλάτ'· Hist. l. 1. c. 10. And S. Jerom's translation of his Chronicle; Pilatus procurator Judææ à Tiberio mittitur. Thus it appears that Pilate of the Equestrian Order was properly Procurator, as that Office was ordinarily given to men of that Order, as Tacitus testifies: Cn. Julius Agricola utrumque avum procuratorem Caesarum habuit, quæ equestris nobilitas est. in vit. Jul. Agr. Which is to be understood concerning the Imperial Provinces: for into those which were of the Provinces of the People, the Procurators sent by Caesar were of the Liberti. For the Emperor sent into all the Provinces his Procurators, but with this difference, as Dio observes; εἰς πάντα ὁμοίως τὰ ἔθνη, τὰ τε ἑαυτοῦ καὶ τὰ τῶν ἄλλων, τοὺς μὲν ἐκ τῆς ἰσότητος, τοὺς δὲ ἐκ τῆς ἀπελευθέρων, πέμπει. Hist. l. 53. || The Roman Procurator is ordinarily in Greek Authors expressed by their Ἐπίτροπος, as the Glossa Latin. Græc. Procurator, Ἐπίτροπος. But yet they are not of the same latitude in their use; Ἐπίτροπος comprehending the notion of Tutor, as well as Procurator. Hefych. Ἐπίτροπος, ὁ περὶ ἄλλου χυλίων, καὶ ὅλης τῆς οἰκίας, καὶ ὁρραγῶν. Gloss. Vet. Ἐπίτροπος, Procurator, tutor. Ἐπίτροπος therefore was used by the Greeks in both notions, whereof Procurator of the Latins is but one. And in the language of the Romans he is a Procurator which undertakes to manage the business of another man. Procurator si negotium suscipit, saith Alconius in Divin. and Sex. Pompeius, Procurator absentis nomine actor fit; he to whom the care of another man's estate or affairs was committed. Gloss. Vet. Ἐντολὴ, commissum, ὅτι Ἐντολὴς, procurator. In correspondence to these Procurators of the affairs and estates of private persons, there were made such as did take care in every Province of the Imperial Revenue: who, in respect of the Person whom they served, were called Procuratores Caesaris, or Augustales; in respect of the Countries where they served, were termed Procuratores provinciales. Their Office is best described by Dion. Hist. l. 53. Τὸς ἐπιτρόπους, ἕτω καὶ τὰς τε κοινὰς περὶ τοὺς ἐκκλησίαις, καὶ περὶ τὰς κοινὰς ἀνάγκαις, ὁνομαζομένους. We call, says he, these Ἐπιτρόπους, that is Procuratores, which receive the publick Revenues, and dispose of them according to the commands received from the Emperour. For they acted in his name, and what was done by them was accounted as done by the Emperour himself. Quæ acta gesta sunt à Procuratore Caesaris, sic ab eo comprobari ac si à Caesare gesta essent, Ulpian. l. 1. ff. As we read in Tacitus of the Emperour Claudius; Sæpius audita vox Principis, parem vim rerum habendam à Procuratoribus suis judicatarum, ac si ipse statuisset. Annal. l. 12. And in Suetonius; Ut rata essent quæ Procuratores sui in judicando statuerent à Senatu precario exegit. The proper Office therefore of the Provincial Procurator was, to receive the Imperial Revenue, and dispose of it as the Emperour commanded, and to all intents and purposes to do such things as were necessary thereunto, with such authority as if the Emperour himself had done them.

such a care and disposal of the Imperial Revenue: which they exercised as inferior and subordinate to the President, always supreme Provincial Officer.

Now Judæa being made part of a Province of Syria, and consequently under the care of the President of that Province, according to this institution, a particular Procurator was assigned unto it for the disposing of the Emperour's Revenue. And because the Nation of the Jews were always suspected of a rebellious disposition against the Roman State, and the President of Syria, who had the power of the Sword, was forced to attend upon the other parts of his Province; therefore the Procurator of Judæa was furnished with || power of life and death, and so administered all the power of the President, which was, as to the Jews, supreme. Which is very observable, as an eminent act of the Providence of God, by which the full power of Judicature in Judæa was left in the hands of the Resident Procurator.

|| This appeareth by Coponius, the first proper Procurator of Judæa, who was brought in by Quirinus Præ-

ses of Syria, when he came to dispose of the goods of Archelaus, and to reduce Judæa into the form of a Province, and adjoin it to Syria. Of this Coponius Josephus writeth after this manner, Κωπώνιος τε αὐτὸς (Κυρῶν) σωματοπέμπεται, τὰ γὰρ καὶ τῆς ἰσότητος ἡγεμόνι ἐπέστειλε τὸν Ἰουδαίᾳ τῇ ἐπὶ τῇ τῇ ἐξουσίᾳ· that being of the Equestrian order, he was sent with Quirinus to govern the Jews with the supreme power. Antiq. l. 18. c. 1. And yet more expressly as to the time, occasion, and extent of his power: Τὸς δὲ Ἀρχελαῷ χάρις εἰς ἐπαρχίαν ἀπελευθέρων, ἐπὶ τοὺς τοὺς ἰσότητος περὶ τὰς κοινὰς ἀνάγκαις, ὁνομαζομένους, πέμπει. Id. de Bell. Jud. l. 2. c. 11. When these parts which were under the command of Archelaus were reduced into a Province, Coponius was sent thither by the Emperour, and furnished with power of life and death. For although in the Proconsular Provinces the Procurator of the Emperour had no power but in those things which belonged to the Exchequer; yet in those Provinces which were properly præsidiales the Procurator was often loco Præsidis. From whence in the ancient Inscriptions we read of the same person, Procurator & Præses Alpium, Procurator & Præses provinciarum per Orientem, Procurator & Præses provinciarum Sardinie. It was often therefore so, that the Procurator did Præsidis partibus fungi: as Ulpian. l. 8. de officio Proconsulis; In provinciam enim Præsidium provinciarum, nec aliter Procuratori Caesaris, hæc cognitio injungitur, quam Præsidis partibus in provincia fungatur. And this is very necessary to be observed, because a Procurator barely such, not armed with the power of the Præses provinciarum, had not the power of the Sword. As Antoninus to Valerius, Procurator meus, qui vice Præsidis non fungebatur, exsilii tibi poenam non potuit irrogare. l. 9. Cod. de penis. And to Heliodorus; Procurator meus, qui vice Præsidis provinciarum non fungitur, sicut exigere poenam de ferre accusationis non potest, ita judicare ut ea inferatur sententiâ suâ non potest. l. 3. C. Ubi causæ. This was plain in the case of Lucilius Capito, Procurator of Asia minor, who was called in question for exceeding his power, and deserted therein by Tiberius. Procurator Antæ Lucilius Capito, accusatione provincia, causam dixit magna cum adlevatione Principis, non se jus nisi in servitia & pecunias familiaris dedisse. Quod si vim Prætoris usurpasset, manibus; militum usus foret, spreta in eo mandata sua, audirent socios. Tacit. Annal. And Dio upon the said example observes in general, that the Procurators had no such power. Οὐ γὰρ ἐξέλει τὸτε τοῖς τὰ αὐτοκράτορα καὶ ἡγεμόνα διοικῶσι πλὴν ἑδὼν ποιεῖν, ἢ τὰς νεομισθίας περὶ τοὺς ἐκκλησίαις, καὶ τοὺς τὰς διαφορῶν ἐν τῇ ἀγορᾷ καὶ καὶ τοὺς νέμους ἐξ ἰσῶς τοῖς ἰδιώταις διὰ τὸν νόμον. But although the ordinary Procurators had no other power but to dispose of the Revenue, and determine private causes; yet he which was vice Præsidis had the power of the Præses: and such a Procurator was Pontius Pilate in Judæa, in the others who preceded him also were.

Mark 14. 64.
John 12. 30,
31.

¶ I say therefore the Jews answered that it was not lawful for them to put any Man to death, because that power was taken out of their hands. For although S. Augustine think they thought it not lawful in respect of the Passover, Intel-

ligendum est eos dixisse, non sibi licere interficere quendam, propter diei festi sanctitatem, quem celebrare jam cœperant, *Tract. 14.* in Joan. and S. Cyril be of the same opinion; yet others of the Ancients deliver the true cause why they applied themselves to Pilate to be their want of power; as Ammonius most expressly, Τίνος ἕνεκεν αὐτὸν ἐκ ἀνείλον, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τὸν Πιλάτον ἤγαγον; μάλιστα μὲν τὸ πολὺ τῆς ἀρχῆς αὐτοῦ καὶ τῆς ἐξουσίας ἀπετέμνετο, λοιπὸν ὑπὸ Ῥωμαῖς ἤντι περὶ γράμματα κειμένων. and upon these words in S. John, Ὡς ἐπετίθει τῆς ἀρχῆς, ἦσαν γὰρ ὑπὸ Ῥωμαῖς, ἔπον τετο. So Theophylact, Ἀγασσεν αὐτὸν ὡς τὸ πρᾶξιόν, ἔχον γὰρ αὐτοὶ ἐξουσίαν ἀνελόν, ὅτι ἤντι περὶ γράμματα ὑπὸ Ῥωμαῖς κειμένων. and before him S. Chrysostome.

Matt. 27. 18.
Luke 23. 14,
22.

Matt. 27. 12.
John 19. 7, 8.

¶ S. Philo testifi-
eth of him: ὡς
γὰρ ἦ φύσις α-
ραιότερος, καὶ ὡς
σαυθίστατος α-
μύλητος. de
Legat. ad Cai-
um. And again:
Οἷα ἐν ἐργά-
σις ἔχων καὶ
βαρυνούσης αὐ-
τοῦ.

For by this means it came to pass that Christ, who by the determinate counsel of God was to die, and by the prediction of the Prophets was to suffer in a manner not prescribed by the Law of *Moses*, should be delivered up to a foreign power, and to suffer death after the customs of that Nation to whose power he was delivered. The malice of the obstinate Jew was high to accuse and prosecute him, but the power of the Jews was not so high as judicially to condemn him. For although the chief Priests and the Elders and the Scribes *condemned him guilty of death*; yet they could not condemn him to die, or pronounce the sentence of death upon him, *but delivered him up unto Pilate*: and when he refusing said unto them, *Take ye him, and judge him according to your law*; they immediately returned, *It is not lawful for us to put any man to death*. The power of life and death was not in any Court of the Jews, but in the *Roman* Governour alone as supreme; and ¶ therefore they answered him, it was *not lawful*: not in respect of the Law of *Moses*, which gave them both sufficient power and absolute command to punish divers offenders with death; but in relation to the *Roman* Empire, which had taken all that dominion from them. Forty years before the destruction of *Jerusalem* the Jews themselves acknowledge that they lost their power; which is sufficient to shew that they had it not when our Saviour suffered: and it is as true that they lost it twenty years before, at the regulation of *Archelaus*, and the coming of *Coponius* the Procurator with full power of life and death. Wherefore our Saviour was delivered unto *Pilate* as the supreme Judge over the Nation of the Jews, that he might pronounce the sentence of death upon him.

But how this Judge could be perswaded to an act of so much injustice and impiety is not yet easie to be seen. The numerous controversies of the Religion of the Jews did not concern the *Roman* Governours, nor were they moved with the frequent quarrels arising from the different Sects. *Pilate* knew well it was for *envy* that the chief Priests *delivered him*; and when he had examined him, he found no fault touching those things whereof they accused him. Three times did he challenge the Nation of the Jews, *Why? what evil hath he done?* three times did he make that clear profession, *I have found no cause of death in him*. His own wife admonished in a dream, sent unto him, saying, *Have thou nothing to do with that just man*; and when he heard that he made himself the Son of God, he was more afraid: and yet notwithstanding these apprehensions and professions, he condemned and crucified him.

Here we must look upon the nature and disposition of *Pilate*, which inclined and betrayed him to so foul an Act. He was a man of an ¶ high, rough, untractable and irreconcilable spirit, as he is described by the Jews, and appeareth from the beginning of his Government, when he brought the Bucklers stamp with the pictures of *Cæsar* into *Jerusalem*, (which was an abomination to the Jews,) and could neither be moved by the blood of many, nor perswaded by the most humble applications and submiss intreaties of the whole Nation, to remove them, till he received a sharp reprehension and severe command from the Emperour *Tiberius*. After that he seized on the Corban, that sacred Treasury, and spent it upon an Aqueduct: nor could all their religious and importunate petitions divert his intentions, but his reso-

lution

lution went through their blood to bring in water. When the *Galilæans* came up to *Jerusalem* to worship God at his own Temple, *he mingled their blood with their sacrifices.* Add to this untractable and irreconcilable spirit, by which he had so often exasperated the *Jews*, an avaricious and rapacious disposition, which prompted him as much to please them; and we may easily perceive what moved him to condemn that person to death whom he declared innocent. The Evangelist telleth us that *Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus to be crucified.* They accused him at *Rome* for all the ^a insolencies and rapines which he had committed, and by this Act he thought to pacifie them.

Luke 13. 1.

Mark 15. 15.

^a For that which is observed by Philo upon the dedication of the

Shields at the first entrance into his Government, must needs be much more true at this time of our Saviour's Passion, when he had committed so many more insolencies, viz. that he feared the *Jews* should complain of him to Tiberius. Τὸ τελευτάσιον τοῦ μάστιγα αὐτὸν ἐξετεράχων, καὶ ἀδείσαντα μὴ τοῦ ὄντι πρεσβυτάτου καὶ τῆς ἀλλης αὐτῷ ἐπιτεταγῆς ἐξελέγξωσι τὰς ὕβρεις τὰς ἀρπαγὰς, τὰς αἰκίας, τὰς ἐπιχειρίας, τοῦ ἀκείτου καὶ ἐπαλλήλους φόβου, τὴν ἐνὶ θυμῷ καὶ ἀρπαλεωτάτῃ αὐμότητι δεικνύοντες. de Legat. ad Caium.

It was thus necessary to express the Person under whom our Saviour suffered, First, that we might for ever be assured of the ^b time in which he suffered. The enemies of Christianity began first to unsettle the time of his Passion, that thereby they might at last deny the Passion it self; and the rest of their Falshood was detected by the ^c discovery of their false Chronology. Some fixed it to the ^d seventh year of the reign of *Tiberius*: whereas it is certain *Pontius Pilate* was not then Procurator in *Judea*, and as certain that our Saviour was baptized eight years after, ^e in the fifteenth year of the reign of *Tiberius Caesar*. Some of the *Jews*, lest the destruction of *Jerusalem* might seem to follow upon, and for our Saviour's Crucifixion, have removed it near threescore years more backward yet, ^f placing his death in the beginning of *Herod's* reign, who was not born till toward the death of the same King. Others have removed it farther yet near ^g twenty years, and so vainly tell us how he died under *Aristobulus*, above fifty years before his birth in *Bethlehem*. This they do teach their Proselytes, to this end, that they may not believe so much as the least historical part of the blessed Evangelists. As therefore they deny the time of our Saviour's Passion, in design to destroy his Doctrine; so, that we might establish the substance of the Gospel depending on his death, it was necessary we should retain a perfect remembrance of the time in which he died. Nor need we be ashamed that the Christian Religion, which we profess, should have so known an *Epocha*, and so late an Original: Christ came not into the world in the beginning of it, but in the fulness of time.

^bCaustissime qui Symbolum tradiderunt, etiam tempus quo, hæc sub Pontio Pilato gesta sunt designarunt, nec ex aliqua parte velut vaga & incerta gestorum traditio vacillaret. *Ruffinus in Expos. Symb.* Credimus itaque in eum qui sub Pontio Pilato crucifixus est & sepultus. Addendum enim erat iudicis nomen propter temporum cognitionem. *S. Aug. de Fide & Symb.* Pilatus Iudex erat in illo tempore ab Imperatore positus in *Judea*, sub quo Domi-

nus passus est; cuius mentio ad temporis significationem, non ad personæ illius pertinet dignitatem. *Serm. 131. de Tempore.* Irenæus, speaking of *S. Paul*, Evangelizabat Filium Dei Christum Jesum, qui sub Pontio Pilato crucifixus est. *L. 5. c. 12.* And to make the more certain character of time, Ignatius added to the name of Pilate that of Herod: Ἀληθῶς ὅτι Ποντίῳ Πιλάτῃ καὶ Ἡρώδῃ τετράρχῃ καθ' ἡμετέραν ἡμῶν ἡμέραν. *Epist. ad Smyrn.* So Eusebius detected some of those which lived not long before him: Οὐκ ἄν σαφῶς ἀπελίκεν καὶ τὸ πλάσμα τῷ καὶ τῷ Σωτῆρι ἡμῶν ὑπομνήματι χθῆς καὶ τρωτῷ διαδεδοκότεν, ἐν οἷς πρῶτον αὐτὸς ὁ παρρησιώστους χεῖρον τῷ πεπρακτόν ἀελέγχει τὸ ψεύδος; *H. st. Eccles. l. 1. c. 9.* Ἐπὶ τῆς τετάρτης δ' ἡγ' ὑπατείας Γερμανίας, ἢ γέγονεν ἔτις ἐξ ὁμοῦ τῆς βασιλείας αὐτῆς, τὰ πρὶν τὸ σωτήριον αὐτοῖς πρὶν τὸ λυμνηντα πείχει, καὶ ὃν δεικνύσαι χεῖρον μὴδ' ἐπὶ τῇ πῶ τῇ Ἰαυδαίᾳ Πιλάτῃ. *Euseb. Eccl. Hist. l. 1. c. 10.* ^c Like 3. 1. ^d Divers of the Jews place the Passion of Christ in the year of their account 3724, which is 69 years before our common account of the year in which he truly suffered. This invention of their own, grounded upon no foundation, and backed with not so much as the least probability, they deliver as a Tradition amongst them, continued in this Rhythm,

בשנה ג' ארפ"ב חש"כ הנצרי נלכד
ובשנת חק"ד בעץ נצלב

i. e. In the year 3724 he of Nazareth was taken,
And in the year 532 he was crucified on a tree.

Not that they thought him taken in one year, and crucified in another; but those two unequal numbers signify the same year, the lesser number being a Period of years which seven times numbered equalleth the greater. So that their meaning is, that after seven periods consisting

consisting of 532 years, in the year of the world 3724, Jesus of Nazareth was crucified. ^b Others of the Jews pretend another account, viz. that Jesus was born in the year 3691, which was the fourth of Janneus, and crucified in the year 3707, which was the third of Aristobulus; making him the disciple of R. Josuah the Son of Perachiah; according to that usual Phrase of theirs, כרבי יושו בשרי ידיו *Vide* Sepher Juchasin.

^a Nota quod in Pilato & uxore ejus, justum Dominum confitentibus, Gentilis populi testimonium est. S. Hier. in Mat.

^b That Pontius

Pilate wrote unto Tiberius of

the death and resurrection of our Saviour, is testified by Tertullian, who was best acquainted with the Roman History: Ea omnia super Christo Pilatus, & ipse jam pro sua conscientia Christianus, Cafari tum Tiberio nunciavit. Apolog. c. 21. And again: Tiberius ergo, cujus tempore nomen Christianum in seculum introivit, annunciatum sibi ex Syria Palaestina, quæ veritatem illius (Christi) divinitatis revelarat, detulit ad Senatum cum prerogativa suffragii sui. cap. 5. This is related by Eusebius out of Tertullian in his Ecclesiastical History, l. 2. c. 2. and referred to the two and twentieth year of Tiberius in his Chron. Pilato de Christianorum dogmate ad Tiberium referente, Tiberius retulit ad Senatum, ut inter cætera sacra reciperetur. The authority of this Express is grounded on the great reputation of Tertullian, (as is observed also by the Author of the Chronicon Alexandrinum, who concludes the relation with these words, ὡς ἰσχυρῶς Τερτυλλιανὸς ὁ Ῥωμαῖος,) and the general custom by which all the Governours of the Provinces did give an account unto the Emperour of all such passages as were most remarkable: παλαιὰ κεκεῖται ἡ ἐξ ὧν τοῖς ἡμετέροις ἀρχαῖς, τὰ παρὰ σοὶ καινοτομήματα τῶν βασιλέων ἀρχαῖς ἐπικρατῆσι σημειώμενα, ὡς μηδὲν αὐτὸν διαβέβηκον ἢ γινώσκον. Euseb. Eccles. Hist. l. 2. c. 2. ^k The ancient Romans were desirous to preserve the memory of all remarkable passages which happened in the City: and this was done either in their Acta Senatûs, or Acta diurna populi; which were diligently made, and carefully kept at Rome. In the same manner the Governours in the Provinces took care that all things worthy of remark should be written in publick Tables, and preserved as the Acta in their Government. And agreeably to this custom Pontius Pilate kept the Memoirs of the Jewish Affairs, which were therefore called Acta Pilati, in which an account was given of our blessed Saviour; and the Primitive Christians did appeal unto them in their disputes with the Gentiles, as to a most undoubted testimony. Justin Martyr urged them even unto the Roman Emperours: Καὶ ταῦτα ὅτι γέροντες, διώκοις μαθεῖν ἐκ τῶν ὅτι Ποντίου Πιλάτου ἡγουμένων Ἀχίων. And again: "Ὅτι ἡ ταῦτα ἐποίησεν, ἐκ τῶν ὅτι Ποντίου Πιλάτου ἡγουμένων Ἀχίων μαθεῖν διώκοις. Apol. 2. And in the differences between the Christians, they were cited by both parties. As the Tessaresdecata alleged them for their custom of the observance of Easter, as Epiphanius testifieth of them: Ἐπὶ τῶν Ἀχίων δὲθεν Πιλάτου αὐχὺς ἢ ἀκρίβειαν εὐρηκίαν, ἐν οἷς ἐυέρεται, τῇ περὶ ὁρίων καλανδῶν Ἀπειλίαν ἢ Σωτήρα πεπονθέναι. And Epiphanius urgeth the same Acta against them, but according to other Copies: "Εἰ τὴν εὐερέω ἀνίγεται ἐκ τῶν (lege Ἀχίων) Πιλάτου, ἐν οἷς σημαίνει, περὶ δεκαπέντε καλανδῶν Ἀπειλίαν τὸ πάθος γέγονε. Hæres. 50. Though the Author of the 8 Homily in Pascha, under the name of S. Chrysostome, agreeth in this reading with the Tessaresdecata: ὁ μὲν γὰρ καθ' ὃν ἐπαθὲν ὁ Σωτὴρ ἐκ ἡγνότητος τὰ ὑπομνήματα τὰ ὑπὸ Πιλάτου παραχθέντα καὶ περὶ τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς πάσης ἰσχυρῶς γὰρ ὅτι τῇ περὶ ὁρίων καλανδῶν Ἀπειλίαν ἐπαθὲν ὁ Σωτὴρ. Tom. 5. p. 942. These were also mentioned in the Acta S. Turchi, Probi & Andronici, cap. 9. Frases dixit, Inique, non scis, quem invocas, Christum, hominem quidem fuisse factum, sub custodia Pontii Pilati & punitum, cujus exstant Acta Passionis? These Acta in the time of Maximinus were adulterated, and filled with many blasphemies against our Saviour; as appears by Eusebius, Hist. Eccles. l. 1. c. 9. ἐκὼν σαφῶς ἀπελήλεγται τὸ πλῆθος τῶν κατὰ τὸ Σωτήρα ἡμῶν ὑπομνήματα καὶ περὶ τὴν διαδοχὴν; ὅτι l. 9. c. 5. Πλασάμενοι δὲ τὰ Πιλάτου καὶ τὰ Σωτήρα ἡμῶν ὑπομνήματα πάσης ἐμπλεῖα καὶ τὰ καὶ βλασφημίας γινώμεν τὸ μείζον· ὅτι πάσαν διατίμωσιν τὴν ὑπὸ αὐτὸν ἀρχαῖ.

Thirdly, it beloveth us to take notice of the Roman Governour in the expression of our Saviour's Passion, that thereby we might understand how it came to pass that Christ should suffer according to the Scriptures. The Prophets had foretold his death, but after such a manner as was not to be performed by the Jews, according to whose Law and Custom no man amongst them ever so died. Being then so great a Prophet could not die but in Jerusalem, being the death he was to suffer was not agreeable to the Laws and Customs of the Jews; it was necessary a Roman Governour should condemn him, that so the counsel of the will of God might be fulfilled, by the malice of the one, and the customs of the other.

And now the advantage of this Circumstance is discovered, every one may express the importance of it in this manner. I am fully perswaded of this truth, as beyond all possibility of contradiction, that in the fulness of time God sent his Son, and that the eternal Son of God so sent by him did suffer for the sins of men, after the fifteenth year of Tiberius the Roman Emperour, and before his death, in the time of Pontius Pilate the Casarean Procurator

rator of *Judea*; who, to please the Nation of the *Jews*, did condemn him whom he pronounced innocent, and delivered him, according to the custom of that Empire, and in order to the fulfilling of the Prophecies, to die a painful and shameful death upon the Cross. And thus I believe in Christ that *suffered under Pontius Pilate*,

Was Crucified.

From the general consideration of our Saviour's Passion, we proceed to the most remarkable particular, his Crucifixion, standing between his Passion, which it concludeth, and his death, which it introduceth. For the explication whereof it will be necessary, first, to prove that the promised *Messias* was to be crucified, that he which was designed to die for our sins was to suffer upon the Cross; secondly, to shew that our *Jesus*, whom we worship, was certainly and truly crucified, and did suffer whatsoever was foretold upon the Cross; thirdly, to discover what is the nature of Crucifixion, what peculiarities of suffering are contained in dying on the Cross.

That the *Messias* was to be crucified, appeareth both by Types which did apparently foreshew it, and by Prophecies which did plainly foretel it. For though all those Representations and Predictions which the forward || zeal of some ancient Fathers gathered out of the Law and the Prophets cannot be said to signify so much; yet in many Types was the Crucifixion of Christ represented, and by some Prophecies foretold. This was the true and unremovable *stumbling-block to the Jews*; nor could they ever be brought to confess the *Messias* should * die that death upon a Tree to which the Curse of the Law belonged: and yet we need no other Oracles than such as are committed to those *Jews* to prove that Christ was so to suffer.

|| The ancient Fathers following the steps of the Apostles, to prove all the particulars of our Saviour's death out of the Old Testament, have made use of those Types and Prophecies which

did really and truly fore-shew it; but together with them, partly out of their own conceptions, partly out of too much credit to the translations, have urged those places which the *Jews* may most easily evade, and we can produce but with small or no pretence. As for the extending of the hands of Moses, they conceive it to be a perfect Type; and Barnabas tells us, the Spirit command'd Moses that he should make the similitude of a Cross; λέγει καὶ ἐκαστὸν Μωσὴ τὸ πνεῦμα, ἵνα ποιῇ τὸν σταυρὸν καὶ τὰ μέλλοντα παύει· but the Text assures us no more than that Moses held up his hand, which might be without any similitude of a Cross. And when both were lifted up by Aaron and Hur, the representation is not certain. And yet after Barnabas, Justin tells us that Moses represented the Cross, τὰς χεῖρας ἐκείνους ἐπέστρεψεν· and Tertullian calls it habitum Crucis. In the same manner with the strange Indian Statue, which is described by Bardisanes as ἀνδρείας ἑσῶς ὀρθῶς, ἔχων τὰς χεῖρας ὑπὸ λαβραῖς ἐν τύπῳ σταυροῦ. Porphyr. de Styge. With less probability did they gather both the name of *Jesus*, and the Cross of Christ, from the 318 servants of Abraham. Ἰᾶτα δὲ καὶ ἡτα ἑπτὰ, ἔχεις Ἰησοῦν· ἔτι δὲ σταυρὸς ἐν τῷ Τ ἡμετέρον ἔχειν ἔχον· λέγει γὰρ παῖς τετρακοσίων· δηλοῖ ἑπτὰ καὶ Ἰησοῦν ἐν τοῖς δυοῖν γράμμασι, καὶ ἐν ἐνὶ τῷ σταυρῷ. Epist. Barn. c. 7. As if I H stood for *Jesus*, and T for the Cross. And yet Clemens Alex. follows him: Φασὶν ἑνὲ Τ ὅς ἐστι Κρουακὴ σημεῖον τύπον χρίστος τὸ γράμμα τετρακοσίων στοιχείων· τὸ δὲ Ἰᾶτα καὶ τὸ ἡτα τὴν οὐκὴν σημεῖον τὸ σωτήριον. Stromat. l. 6. As also S. Ambrose; Nam & Abraham 318 duxit ad bellum, & ex innumeris trophæa hostibus reportavit, signoque Dominice crucis & nominis, &c. Prol. ad l. i. de Fide. Eos adsciscit quos dignos numero fidelium judicavit, qui in Domini nostri Jesu Christi Passione crederent. Trecentos enim T Græca litera significat; decem & octo autem summum I H exprimit nomen. Id. de Abrah. l. 1. c. 3. And S. Augustine of another 300: Quorum numerus, quia trecenti erant, signum insinuat Crucis, propter literam T Græcam, quia iste numerus significatur. And Clemens Alexandrinus again of the 300 cubits in the Ark: Εἰς δὲ οὐ τὸ τετρακοσίους πήχεις σύμβολον τῆς Κρουακῆς σημεῖον λέγουσι. Strom. l. 6. Sed sicut ille non multitudinem nec virtute legionum, sed jam tum in Sacramento Crucis, ejus figura per literam Græcam T namque trecentorum exprimitur, adversarios principes debellavit; ejus mysterii virtute trecentis in longum texta cubitis superavit Arca diluvium, ut nunc Ecclesia hoc seculum supernavigat. S. Paulinus Epist. 2. As unlikely a Type did they make Jacob's Ladder. Ego puto Crucem Salvatoris illam esse scalam quam Jacob vidit. Hieron. Scala usque ad cælum attingens Crucis figuram habuit; Dominus innixus scalæ, Christus crucifixus ostenditur. Aug. Toese, and many others, by the Writers of the succeeding Ages were produced out of the Old Testament as Types of the Cross, and may in some sense be applied to it being otherwise proved, but prove it not. * Trypho the Jew, in the Dialogue with Justin Martyr, when he had confessed many of the Christian Doctrines, would by no means be brought to this, Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἀπίστως ἔτος σταυρωθῆναι τὸν Χριστόν, (subaud. ἔδει) σταυρωθῆναι· ἀπί-κατάργηται γὰρ ὁ σταυρωθῆναι ἐν τῷ νόμῳ λέγεσθαι ἔδει ὥστε περὶ τοῦ αὐτοῦ διπτέως ἔχει. And afterwards, granting his Passion, urgeth him to prove his Crucifixion; Ἡμεῖς γὰρ εἰς τὴν ἑννοίαν ἐλθόντων διαμάχου. So Tertullian describes the *Jews*, negantes passionem Crucis in Christum prædicatam, & argumentantes insuper non esse credendum ut ad id genus mortis exponeretur Deus Filium suum, quod ipse dixit, Maledictus omnis homo qui pendit in ligno. Adv. Judæos c. 10.

A clearer Type can scarce be conceived of the Saviour of the world, in whom all the Nations of the earth were to be blessed, than *Isaac* was: nor can

can God the Father, who gave his only-begotten Son, be better expressed than by that Patriarch in his readiness to sacrifice his son, *his only son Isaac, whom he loved*. Now when that grand Act of Obedience was to be performed, we find *Isaac* walking to the mountain of *Moriah* with the wood on his shoulders, and saying, *Here is the wood, but where is the sacrifice?* while in the command of God, and the intention and resolution of *Abraham*, *Isaac* is the Sacrifice, who bears the wood. And the *Christ*, who was to be the most perfect Sacrifice, the person in whom all Nations were perfectly to be blessed, could die no other death in which the wood was to be carried; and being to die upon the Cross, was, by the formal * custom used in that kind of death, certainly to carry it. Therefore *Isaac* || bearing the wood did signify *Christ* bearing the Cross.

* This Custom is very considerable as to the explanation of this

Type; and is to be therefore confirmed by the testimonies of the Ancients, which are most express. Βασίζειν τινα ἢ δαυμόνων χθονίων κακέρων μὴ ἰδόντι σωεῖν αὐτοὺς σημαίνει. ἔοικε γὰρ ὁ σωεὺς θανάτῳ, καὶ ὁ μέλλων περὶ αὐτῶν πρὸς τὸν αὐτὸν βασιλεῖ. Artemid. l. 2. c. 41. Τῷ μὲν σώματι ἢ κολαζομένων ἐκαστοῦ ἢ κακέρων ἐκφέρει τὸ αὐτὸ σωεῖν. Plutarch. De his qui ferro puniuntur. So these not long after our Saviour's death: and much before it, Plautus in Carbonario, Patibulum ferat per urbem, deinde affigatur cruci. || This is not only the observation of the Christians, but the Jews themselves have referred this Type unto that Custom. For upon Gen. 22. 6. And Abraham took the wood of the burnt-offering, and laid it upon Isaac his son, the lesser Bereshith hath this note, כֹּרֶה שְׂטוּן צְלוֹבו כְּחָשׁוֹ as a man carries his Cross upon his shoulders.

When the fiery Serpents bit the *Israelites*, and much people died, *Moses*, by the command of God, made a serpent of brass, and put it upon a pole: and it came to pass that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived. Now if there were no expresser Promise of the *Messias* than the seed of the woman which should bruise the serpent's head; if he were to perform that Promise by the virtue of his Death; if no Death could be so perfectly represented by the hanging on the pole as that of Crucifixion: then was that manifestly foretold which *Christ* himself informed *Nicodemus*, As *Moses* lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the son of man be lifted up.

John 3. 14. The common phrase by which that death was expressed. In crucem tolli: Paul. 1. 5. Sentent. Tit. 22, 23. & 25. As in the Chaldee תְּלִיפָה by origination elevation, by use is particularly crucifixion.

Justin Martyr shows how the manner of the

The Paschal Lamb did plainly typify that Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world; and the preparing of it did not only ^b represent the Cross, but the Command or Ordinance of the Passover did foretel as much. For while 'tis said, ^c ye shall not break a bone thereof, it was thereby intimated, that the Saviour of the world should suffer that death to which the breaking of the bones belonged, (and that, according to the constant custom, ^d was the punishment of Crucifixion;) but only in that death should by the providence of God be so particularly preserved, as that not one bone of his should be touched. And thus the Crucifixion of the *Messias* in several Types was represented.

roasting of the Paschal Lamb did represent the affixing of a man unto the Cross, and thereby was a Type of *Christ*. τὸ κελδοῦν πρὸς τὸν ἑαυτοῦ ὄλον ζινεῖν, τὸ πάθος τῶ σωεῖ δι' ἐπ' ἀρχὴν ἐμελλεν ὁ Χρὶς σύμβολον ὡς τὸ γὰρ ὀπίσσω πρὸς τὸν ἑαυτοῦ ὄλον ζινεῖν ὁμοίως τῷ σώματι τῶ σωεῖ ὀπίσσω. Εἰς γὰρ ὁρεθὶ ὁ ἐξελίσκῃ διαπερνᾶται ἀπὸ τοῦ κατὰ τὸ μέτρον μετὰ τὸ κεφαλὴν καὶ εἰς πάλιν καὶ τὸ μετὰ τὸν ὄλον ζινεῖν, ὡς πρὸς τὸν ὄλον ζινεῖν. Dial. cum Tryphone. To which Arnoldus Carnotensis alludeth: In veru Crucis boni odoris afflatio excoquat carnalium sensuum cruditatem. De cena Domini, commonly attributed to S. Cyprian. Nor is this roasting of the Lamb any far-fetched figure of the Cross; for other roasting hath been thought a proper resemblance of it: where the body of the thing roasted hath limbs, as a Lamb, there it bears the similitude of a proper Cross, with an erect and transverse beam; where the roasted body is only of length and uniform, as a Fish, there the resemblance is of a straight and simple cross. As it is represented by Helychius: Σκόλοιν ὡς ὀπίσσω τὸ γὰρ παλαιὸν κακέρων ἀνεσκόλοπιζον ἐξυμνοῦντες εὐλοῦν διὰ τὸ ἐξελίσκῃ καὶ τὸ νῶτε, καθάπερ τὸς ὀπίσσω μένεις ὅτι ὁ ἐξελίσκων. 'Exod. 12. 46. ' Although indeed it must be confessed, that the Crucifixion and the Crucifixion were two several Punishments, and that they ordinarily made the Cross a lingering death: yet because the Law of *Moses* did not suffer the body of a man to hang upon a tree in the night, therefore the Romans, so far to comply with the Jews, did break the bones of those whom they crucified in Judaea constantly, whereas in other Countries they did it but occasionally.

Nor was it only thus prefigured and involved in these Typical Resemblances, but also clearly spoken by the Prophets in their particular and express Predictions. Nor shall we need the accession of any lost or additional Pro-

cites one of the
Prophets whom
we know not :

Ὁμοίως πά-

|| *Zach.* 12.10.,

These words of
Zachary are
clear in the Ori-
ginal. זכר

אלו אשר דקרו?
although the

LXX have:
made another
sense, ἐπὶ τῷ
λαῷ.

με ἀνθ' ὧν ἐξ-
ταρχήσονται,
by translating

אֶתְּ אֵשׁ
av' ē, eo
quod; as also
the Chaldean

as if they should
the person in the
it of grace, must

distinguish him
ainst the Hebrew
shift this place;

upon the place,
Sept. That they
ly denied and re-
it to our Saviour

question, Who
is the *Messias*
in grace and sup-

from the Hebrew
as now it is. For
בְּקֶצֶת סְפָרִי
לְיָמֵינוּ

Johannes Isaac
Margin. It was
federum, and

that the word

... it followeth
one of the 16 places

Matth. 26. 2.

John 19. 15.

Luke 23. 24.

¶ That the Soldiers did execute the Sentence of Death given by the Roman Magistrates in their Provinces, and not only in the Camp, is evident out of the Historians of that Nation.

^a Matth. 27. 31.

* Sciendum est, Romanis Pilatum legibus ministrasse, quibus sanctum est, ut qui crucifigitur prius flagellis verberetur. S. Hieron. ad Mat. 27. 27. To which Lucian alludes in his own con-

demnation: *Ἐμοὶ μὲν ἀνέσχομαι τὴν δολίαν αὐτῶν, καὶ διὰ μαρτυρίαν καὶ πρότερον.* Lucian in Piscatore. Multi occisi, multi capti, alii verberati crucibus affixi. Liv. l. 34. And l. 28. Ad palum deligatus, lacerato virgis tergo, cervicem cruci Romana subijciam. So Curtius reports of Alexander, Omnes verberibus affectos sub ipsis radicibus Petrar crucibus iussit affigi. Thus were the Jews themselves used, who caused our Saviour to be scourged and crucified: *μαρτυροῦντες, καὶ προκατασκευάζοντες* ὁ δαυὶδ παῖς ἀνέστη, ἀνέσχετο. Joseph. excid. l. 5. c. 32. ^b Matth. 27. 25. ^c John 19. 17. ¶ This was observed both by the Jews and Romans, that their capital punishments were inflicted without their Cities. And that particularly was observed in the punishment of Crucifixion. Plautus;

Credo ego isthuc, extemplo tibi

Esse eundem actum extra urbem discessis manibus,
Paribulum cum habebis.

Tully, Cum Mainerini more arque insituto suo crucem fississent post urbem in via Pompeia. * Thieves and Robbers were usually by the Romans punished with this death. Thus Cæsar used his Pirates, *καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν ἀνδρῶν ἀνέσχεσαν.* Plut. in Vita. Imperator Provincie iussit Latrones crucibus affigi. Petron. Sat. Latronem istum, miserorum pignorum meorum peremptorem, cruel affigatis. Apuleius de Aur. Assin. l. 3. Latrocinium fecit aliquis, quid ergo meruit? ut suspendatur. Sen. Epist. 7. Where suspendi is as much as crucifigi, and is so to be understood in all Latin Authors which wrote before the days of Constantine. Famulos latrones, in his locis ubi grassati sunt, furcâ figendos compluribus placuit. Callist. l. 38. de panis. Where furca figendos is put for crucifigendos, being so altered by Tribonianus, who, because Constantine had taken away the punishment, took also the Name out of the Law. ^d John 20. 25, 27. ¶ This was the peculiar Heresie of Basilides, a man so ancient, that he boasted to follow Glaucias as his Master, who was the Disciple of S. Peter. And Irenæus hath declared this particularity of his: Quapropter neque passum eum: & Simonem quendam Cyrenæum angariatum portasse crucem ejus pro eo; & hunc secundum ignorantiam & errorem crucifixum, transfiguratum ab eo, uti putaretur ipse esse Jesus; & ipsum autem Jesum Simonis accepisse formam, & stantem irrissile eos. Adv. Her. l. 1. c. 23. And Tertullian of the same Basilides: Hunc (Christum) passum à Judæis non esse, sed vice ipsius Simonem crucifixum esse: unde nec in eum credendum esse qui sit crucifixus, ne quis confiteatur in Simonem credidisse. De Præsc. adv. Her. c. 46. From these is the same delivered by Epiphanius, Her. 24. and by S. August. Her. 4.

Being thus fully assured that the *Messias* was to be, and that our *Christ* was truly crucified; it thirdly concerns us to understand what was the nature of Crucifixion, what the Particularities of suffering which he endured on the *Cross*. Nor is this now so easily understood as once it was. For being a *Roman* Punishment, it was continued in that Empire while it remained *Heathen*: but when the Emperours themselves received *Christianity*, and the tawring Eagles resigned the Flags unto the *Cross*, this Punishment was

was || forbidden by the ſupreme Authority, out of a due reſpect and pious Honour to the Death of *Chriſt*. From whence it came to paſs, that ſince it hath been diſuſed univerſally for ſo many hundred years, it hath not been ſo rightly conceived as it was before, when the general practice of the World did ſo frequently repreſent it to the Chriſtians Eyes. Indeed if the Word which is uſed to denote that Punishment did ſufficiently repreſent or expreſs it, it were enough to ſay that *Chriſt* was *crucified*: but being the moſt uſual or *Original Word doth not of it ſelf declare the Figure of the Tree, or Manner of the Suffering; it will be neceſſary to repreſent it by ſuch expreſſions as we find partly in the Evangelical Relations, partly in ſuch Representations as are left us in thoſe Authors whoſe Eyes were daily Witneſſes of ſuch Executions.

|| This is ob-
served by S. Au-
stin, Sermon 18
de Verbis Domini.
Quia ipse hon-
oraturus erat
fideles suos in
fine hujus se-
culi, prius hon-
oravit crucem
in seculo, ut ter-
rarum princeps
credentes
in eum prohi-
beret aliquem
nocentium cru-
cifigi. And

Tract. 36. in Joh: speaking of this particular punishment; *Modo in pœnis reorum non est apud Romanos: ubi enim Dominus crux honorata est, putatum est quod & reus honoraretur si crucifigeretur.* whence appears, first, that in the days of S. Augustin Crucifixion was disused: Secondly, that it was prohibited by the secular Princes. But when it was first prohibited, or by whom, he sheweth not. It is therefore to be observed, that it was first forbidden by the first Christian Emperour, Constantine the Great. *Sozomenus gives this relation; 'Ἀμέλιος τοις πρῶτοις γενόμενος βασιλεὺς Ῥωμαίων ἤ τ' αὐτοῦ τιμωρίαν Ῥώμῃ ἀνέλας τῆς ῥηθέντος ἑξ' Ἰουστινιαν. l. i. c. 8.* * The Original word in the New Testament for the Tree on which our Saviour suffered is *σταυρός*, and the *Act*ion or Crucifixion *σταύρωσις*, the active *σταυρῶν*, and the passive *σταυρῶναι*. Now *σταυρός* from which the verb mentioned are manifestly derived, hath of it self originally no other signification than of a Stake. As we find it first used by Homer, *Ὀδυσ. β.*

Σταυρὸς δ' ἑκτὸς ἔλασσε διαμπερές ἄνθα καὶ ἔνθα,

Πυκνὸς καὶ θαμέας, τὸ μέλαν δρυὸς ἀμφικέαισας.

And 'Ia. w'.

Ἄριστοι ὅ οἱ μεγάλοι αὐτὸν ποίησαν ἀνάγκη

Μταυροῖν πυκνοῖσ.

These are the same which Homer elsewhere calls *καίλοτες* and the ancient Grammarians render each by other. As Eustathius; *Σταυροί, ὅρθαι καὶ ἀπώθυμυθα ξύλα· οἱ δ' αὐτοὶ καὶ Κρόλοτες λέγονται, ἀφ' ὧν τὸ ἀνασκοπέζεσθαι, καὶ ἀναπαυεῖσθαι.* So he, expounding *σάυρες*. And in the same manner expounding *Κρόλοτες* λέγονται ὅ οἱ τοιοῦτοι Κρόλοτες καὶ σάυραι· ἐν ᾧ τέ-
 ταν τὸ ἀνασκοπέζην, καὶ ἀναπαυεῖν. As when Homer describes the Phæacian walls, *τείχεα μακρὰ, ἱγφινὰ, Κρολόπασιν*
ἀρρητὰ, he gives this exposition: *Κρόλοτες ἓ καὶ ἑνὶ ξύλῳ ὀρθῶ, οἱ καὶ σάυραι.* In the same manner Helychius; *Σταυροί, οἱ*
καταπεπηγότες Κρόλοτες, χάρακες· and Σκόλοτες, ὀρθαὶ (i. ὀρθῶ) καὶ ὀξεία ξύλα, σάυρες, χάρακες; and again, *Χάραξ,*
φραγμοῦς, ὃ ἔστι ξύλος· οἱ δὲ καλῶμεν, οἱ δὲ, σάυρες. Besides they all agree in the same Etymology, *ὡς Ἦ Ἰσαδ.* and there-
 fore always take it for a straight standing Stake, Pale, or Palisade. Thus *κελεύεις* in Antiphon are briefly rendered *ὀρθὰ ξύλα* but
 more expressly thus by Etymologus, *Κελεύεις, πυλῆες οἱ ἰσθόποδες, καταχρηστικῶς καὶ τὰ καταπεπηγότα ξύλα, αἳ καὶ σάυρες*
καλῶσι. This is the undoubted signification of *σάυρες*, in vain denied by Salmasius, who will have it first to signify the same with
furca, and then with *crux*; first the figure of T, and then of T. Whereas all Antiquity renders it no other than as a straight and sharp
 Stake. In which signification it came at first to denote this punishment, the most simple and prime *σάυρωσις*, or *ἀνασκολότισις*, being
 upon a single piece of wood, a deflexus & erectus stipes. And the Greeks which wrote the Roman History, used the word *σάυρης* as
 well for their palus, as their *crux*. As when Antony beheaded Antiochus the King of the Jews, Dion thus begins to describe his
 Execution: *Ἀντίονον ἐμασέλωσε σάυρῳ περὶ δέσσης* not that he crucified him, as Baronius mistakes; but that he put him to another
 Death after the Roman Custom, as those died in Livy, l. 28. *Deligati ad palum virgicque casti, & securi percussi,* so that *σάυρῳ περὶ*
δέσσει is, *ad palum deligare*. Thus were the heads of men said *ἀνασάυρωσθαι*, as of Niger and Albinus in Dio and Herodian;
 which cannot be meant but of a single palus: And we read in Ctesias how Amytis put Inarus to death, *ἀνέσάυρωσε μὲν ἑνὶ βίῳ σάυ-*
ραις. Not that he crucified him upon three crosses, but pierced his Body with three Stakes, fastened in the ground, and sharpened at the
 upper end. As appears by the like Persian punishment inflicted by Parysatis on Mefabares, delivered by Plutarch in Artaxerxes:
περὶ σταβὴν ἐκδύραυ ζώνη, καὶ τὸ μὲν σῶμα πλάγῳ διὰ βίων σάυρων ἀναπύξαι, τὸ δὲ δέσμα χαλεπὴ διαπαρακλύσαι
 which the Latin Translator renders, in tres sustolli cruces, (a thing impossible;) whereas it was to be transversely fastened to three
 Stakes piercing the Body lying, and thrust down upon them; which in the Excerpta of Ctesias is delivered only in the word *ἀναπύ-*
ξασθαι· *σάυρης* therefore is no more originally than *Κρόλος*, a single Stake, or an erect piece of wood, upon which many suffered who
 were said *ἀνασάυρεσθαι* and *ἀνασκοπέζεσθαι*. And when other transverse or prominent parts were added in a perfect Cross, it re-
 tained still the original name, not only of *σάυρης*, but also of *Κρόλος*; as, *ἀπείκεν εἰς ἑπτάκις δεσότητι*· *ὡς Ἦ Κρόλος*
ἑνὶ βίῳ δεινὴ φανείη, *ὡς. τὴν ἑνὶ Ἦ Κρόλος*· *ὡς φανείη ὅτι ἀπέπεχε*. Cellius apud Orig. l. 2. Thus in that long, or
 rather too long Verse, written by Audaux to S. Augulline, *Epist.* 39. *Exspectat quos plena fides Christi de stipite pendens.*

The Form then of the *Cross* on which our Saviour suffered was not a simple, but a compounded Figure, according to the custom of the *Romans*, by whose Procurator he was condemned to die. In which there was not only a straight and erected piece of Wood fixed in the Earth, but also a * transverse Beam fastned unto that towards the top thereof, and beside these two

* That the Figure and parts of a Roman Cross, such as

that was on which our Saviour suffered, may be known, we must begin with the first composition in the Frame or Structure of it. And that is the conjunction of the two Beams, the one erect, the other transverse; the first to which the Body was applied, the second to which the hands were fastned. These two, as the chief parts of the Cross, are several ways express'd. First, by the Jews, who had no one word in their Language particularly to express that punishment, (as being not mentioned in the Law, or at all in use among them) and therefore call it by a double name, expressing the conjunction of these Beams, צלצול ונש, *stamen* & *subtegmen*, the *stap* and the *roof*. The Greeks express the same by the latter Ταυ, as partly appears by what is already spoken of the number 500, and is yet more evident by the testimony of Lucian, who makes Mankind complain of the letter Ταυ, because Tyrants in imitation of that first made the cross. Τῷ δὲ τέτυκται ἡ φασὶν καὶ τυράννης ἀκολοθήσονται, καὶ μιμησάμενοι τὸ πλάσμα, ἐπὶ τὰ σχήματα τοιούτου ἔνθα τακτίζονται, ἀνθρώπους ἀνασκολοπίζουσιν ἐπ' αὐτά. *Jud. local. ipla est enim litera Græcorum Tau, nostris autem T, species crucis*

funt plantæ. * That which was written over the Head of our Saviour, is called simply by S. Luke *ἡ ἑξῆς*, by S. Matthew, *αὐτῆς*, by S. Mark *ἡ ἑξῆς τῆς αὐτῆς*, and by S. John *τίτλον*, making use of a Latin word, as is observed by Nonnus: *Καὶ Πιλάτῳ* *ἦν ἡ ἐξῆς ἡ μάρτυρ ῥόμφος Γεγμῆμα, τὸ πρὸ καλῆς Λατινῆς τίτλον ἰσῆ.* From all which we may collect, that this was an Inscription written over the Head of our Saviour, signifying the Accusation and pretended Crime for which he was condemned to that Death. Gloss. Vet. *Αἰτία*, causa, materia, titulus. As Ovid. Trist. 3. Eleg. 1.

Causa superposita scripto testata corona,

Servatos cives indicat hujus ope:

that is, OB GIVES SERVATOS, was *ἡ ἑξῆς τῆς αὐτῆς*, causa scripto testata. In the language of Suetonius, Titulus, qui causam poenæ indicavit. As Ovid. Fast. 6.

Vixit ut occideret damnatus crimine regni:

Hunc illi titulum longa senecta dabat.

This was done according to the Roman custom, as we read in Dio. l. 54. of the Son of Cæpio, τὸν δὲ λὸν τὸν περὶ οὐτα αὐτὸν δὲ τῆς αἰτίας μύσος μὲν γεγμῆματων, τὴν αἰτίαν τῆς θανάσεως αὐτοῦ ἀνέστη, διαμαρτυρίῃ, καὶ ταῦτα ἀνέστησαν. This Title was written upon a Table, and that Table fastned to the upper part of the Cross. The Synack, Arabick, and Persian Translations render τίτλον expressly a Table. And Helychius, τίτλον, πύχτιον ἐπὶ γεγμῆμα ἔχον, (not ἔχον as it is printed) not the Inscription it self, but that upon which the Inscription was written. Thus the Epistle of the French unto the Christians in Asia represents the Inscription of the Martyr Actalus in a Table: *ἑταχθεὶς κύκλῳ τῷ ἀμνηθεῖς, πύχτιον αὐτὸν περὶ οὐτα*, ἐν τῷ ἐπὶ γεγμῆματι. *Ρωμαίοι, Οὗτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος ἄσπαστος ὁ Χριστιανός.* Euseb. l. 5. c. 1. And Sozomen describing the invention of the Cross by Helena, says, there were three several Crosses in the same place: καὶ χυρὴς αἰλοῦς ἐν μέσῳ ἀδικημάτων ῥύμην καὶ γεγμῆμασιν Ἑβραίοις, Ἑλλήνοισι, τε καὶ Ῥωμαίοις. This Nicephorus calls ἀδικημάτων, which is the proper interpretation of ἀδικώμα. Suidas, ἀδικώμα, τοῦ χῶ (Etymol. πῖναξ) γύφω ἀλλήλων αὐτοῦ περὶ γεγμῆμα πολυῶν περὶ οὐτα ἐπὶ οὐτα. Helych. *Σαῖς, δὲ γε, ἀδικώμα, as Julius Pollux joins σαῖς and ἀδικώμα together,* ἐν δὲ αὐτοῖς ἀδύνατον ἐγγεῖναι περὶ τοῦ κακῆς. τίθειαι ὅτι καὶ ταῦτα, leg. σαῖς. His meaning is, that such a ἀδικώμα as contained the Accusation or Crime of Malefactors was placed upon the Cross on which they suffered, and without question he speaks this in reference to our Saviour's Cross, because he used in a manner the same words with S. John, τίθειαι ὅτι τῷ σαῖς, says Helych. *ἔθεν ὅτι τῷ σαῖς, saith S. John,* It was therefore a Table of wood whitened and fastned to the top of the Cross, on which the Accusation or Crime was written, as it is expressed by Nicephorus: *Σαῖς ἀδικημάτων ἑταχθεὶς ἡ ἑξῆς ἡ γεγμῆμα ὁ Πιλάτῳ ἡ κατὰ τὴν ἐπίστασιν βασιλεῖα ἡ ἑξῆς ἡ γεγμῆμα ἡ γεγμῆμα ἡ γεγμῆμα.* Hist. Eccl. l. 8. 29. And thus there were, as Xanthopulus observes, *ὁ σαῖς, ἡ κατὰ τὴν ἐπίστασιν ἡ γεγμῆμα.*

Thus by the propriety of the Punishment, and the titular Inscription, we know what Crime was then objected to the immaculate Lamb, and upon what Accusation Pilate did at last proceed to pass the Sentence of Death upon him. It was not any opposition to the Law of Moses, nor any danger threatened to the Temple, but pretended Sedition and affectation of the Crown objected, which moved Pilate to condemn him. The Jews did thus accuse him; *We found this fellow perverting the Nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying, that he himself is Christ a King.* And when Pilate sought to release him, they cried out, saying, *If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a King speaketh against Cæsar.* This moved Pilate to pass Sentence upon him, and because that Punishment of the Cross was by the || Roman custom used for that Crime, to crucifie him. Luke 23. 2. John 19. 12.

Two things are most observable in this Cross; the Acerbity, and the Ignominy of the Punishment: for of all the Roman ways of Execution it was * most painful, and most shameful. First, the exquisite Pains and Torments in that Death are manifest, in that the Hands and Feet, which of all the parts of the Body are most nervous, and consequently most sensible, were pierced through with Nails; which caused not a sudden dispatch, but a lingering and tormenting Death. Inasmuch that the Romans, who most used this Punishment, did in their Language deduce their expressions of pains and † cruciation from the Cross. And the Acerbity of this Punishment appears, in that those who were of any merciful disposition would * first cause such as were adjudged to the Cross to be slain, and then to be crucified.

|| Auctores seditionis aut tumultus, pro qualitate dignitate, aut in cruce tolluntur, aut bestis obijciuntur. Paulus l. 5. tit. 22.

* Illa morte pejus nihil fuit inter omnia genera mortium. S. Aug. in Joan. Tract. 36. Tully calls it, crudelissimum.

terribilimumque supplicium: and Aufonius, poenæ extremum. † Ubi dolores acerrimi exagitant, cruciatus vocatur, a cruce nominatus: pendentes enim in ligno crucifixi, clavis ad lignum pedibusque manibusque confixi, producta morte necabantur. Non enim crucifigi hoc erat occidi, sed diu vivebatur in Cruce: non quia longior vita eligebatur, sed quia mors ipsa protendebatur, ne dolor citius finiretur. S. Aug. Tract. in Joan. 36. To this Etymology did Terence allude in those words, & illis crucibus, quæ nos nostramque adolescentiam habent despicantur, & quæ nos semper omnibus cruciant modis. * As it is observed of Julius Cæsar: Piratus à quibus captus est, cum in didonem redeisset, quoniam suffixurum se cruce ante jactaverat; jugulari prius iussit, deinde suffigi. Suet. l. 1.

As this Death was most dolorous and full of Acerbity, so was it also most infamous and full of Ignominy. The Romans themselves accounted it a || servile

|| Vulcarius Gallicanus *re- lizeth of Avidius Cassius, in the case of some Centurions which had been prosperous, that in fighting without Orders given, Rapi eos iussit, & in crucem tolli, servilique supplicio affici: quod exemplum non exstabat. And Juvenal speaks with relation to this custom, Poene crucem servo. So Palastrio in Plautus; Nisi qui-*

|| servile punishment, and inflicted it upon their Slaves and Fugitives. It was a high Crime to put that dishonour upon any Free-man; and the greatest indignity which the most undeserving * Roman could possibly suffer in himself, or could be contrived to shew their detestation to such Creatures as were below * humane Nature. And because when a man is beyond possibility of suffering pain, he may still be subject to Ignominy in his Fame; when by other exquisite Torments some men have tasted the bitterness of Death, after that, they have in their * breathless Corps by vertue of this punishment suffered a kind of surviving shame. And the exposing the Bodies of the dead to the view of the people on the *Cross*, hath been thought a || sufficient Ignominy to those which died, and terrour to those which lived to see it. Yea, where the Bodies of the dead have been out of the reach of their surviving Enemies, they have thought it highly opprobrious to their Ghosts to take their Representations preserved in their * Pictures, and affix them to the *Cross*. Thus may we be made sensible of the two grand Aggravations of our Saviour's Sufferings, the bitterness of Pain in the Torments of his Body, and the indignity of Shame in the interpretation of his Enemies.

dem illa nos volt, q i servi sumus, Propter suum amorem omnes crucibus concubinales dari. And again, Noli minitari; scio crucem futuram mihi sepulchrum. Ibi majores mei sui sunt, pater, avus, proavus, abavus. So in Terence, Pam. Quid meritis es? Da. Crucem: and Horace, Si quis eum servum patinam qui tollere iussit, Semesos pisces tepidumque ligurierit jus, In cruce suffigat. So Capitolinus of Pertinax, in crucem sublati talibus servis; and Herodian of Macrinus, δολοι οσοι δεσποται καθ'ηγ' ελλον ανεσκολοιθισαν. This punishment of the *Cross* did so properly belong to the Slaves, that when Servants and Free-men were involved alike in the same Crime, they were very careful to make a distinction in their death, according to their condition: Ut quisque liber aut servus, suæ fortunæ à quoque sumptum supplicium est. Liv. l. 3. And then the Servants were always crucified. As Servius observes among the Lacedæmonians: Servos paribulis suffixerunt, filios strangulavere, nepotes fugaverunt. *Æneid.* 3. Novercæ quidem perpetuum indicitur exilium, servus vero paribulo suffigitur. *Apul. Metam.* l. 10. Thus in the combustion at Rome, upon the death of Julius Cæsar; Ἀμυνόμενοι ἀντ' ἐρήνησαν ἑνιοι, καὶ συλλογίζεσθαι ἐπεὶ ἐνεργεμέθισαν οσοι δεσποται εἶεν, οἱ δ' ἐλδοθεες καὶ ἑ κρημυς κατέρριθισαν. *Appian. de Bell. civil.* l. 2. Ea nocte speculatores prehensi servi erant, & unus ex legione vernacula: servi sunt in crucem sublati, militi cervices abscissæ. *Hirtius l. de Bell. Hispan.* So *Africanus*: Gravior in Romanos quam in Latinos transfugas animadvertit: illos enim, tanquam patriæ fugitivos, crucibus affixit; hos, tanquam perfidos socios, securi percussit. *Valer. Max.* l. 2. This punishment of the *Cross* was so proper unto Servants, that servile supplicium in the language of the Romans signifies the same: and though in the words of Vulcarius before cited they go both together, as also in Capitolinus, Nam & in crucem milites tulit, & servilibus suppliciiis semper affecit; yet either is sufficient to express Crucifixion: as in Tacitus, Malam potentiam servili supplicio expiavit, *Hist.* 4. and again, Sumptum de eo supplicium in servilem modum, *Hist.* 2. And therefore when any Servants were made free, they were put out of fear of ever suffering this punishment. An vero servos nostros horum suppliciorum omnium metu dominorum benignitas una vindicta liberavit; vos à verberibus, ab unco, crucis denique terrore, neque res gestæ, neque acta aras, neque nostri honores vindicabunt? *Cic. Orat. pro Rabir.* * Carnifex, & obductio capitis, & nomen ipsum Crucis absit, non modo à corpore civium Romanorum, sed etiam à cogitatione, oculis, auribus. Harum enim omnium rerum non solum eventus atque perceptio, sed etiam conditio, expectatio, mentio denique, indigna cive Romano atque homine libero est. *Cic. Orat. pro Rabir.* Facinus est vincere civem Romanum, scelus verberare, parricidium necare: quid dicam in crucem tollere, crudelissimum terriberrimumque supplicium? verbo satis digno tam nefaria res appellari nullo modo potest. *Idem.* 5. in *Verrem.* * As when the Capitol was betrayed by the silence of Dogs, but preserved by the noise of Geese, they preserved the memory by a solemn honouring of the one yearly, and dishonouring the other. Eadem de causa supplicia annua canes pendunt, inter ædem Junonis & Summani vivi in furca sambucea arbore fixi. *Plin.* l. 9. c. 4. Πομπὴς μέχει τῷ δὲ μνήμῃ τῇ τότε Συμπλημάτων ἡ τύχη, κύνων μὲ ἀνεστυγμένῳ, καὶ τῷ μάλα δὲ τραυμῆτι πολυτέλει καὶ φορέῃ καθήκον. *Plutarch. de Rom. Rom.* * As *Orcetes* the Persian, when he had treacherously and cruelly murdered Polycrates the Tyrant of Samos, ἀποκτείναν δὲ μιν ἐκ ἀξίως ἀνυγίσσας ἀνεστυγμένους. *Herod.* l. 3. So Antiochus first cut off the head of Achaus, and then fastened his body to a *Cross*. Ἐδὲ τὸν μὲ ἀκρωσινείδου τὸν ταλαίπωρον, καὶ τὰ ταῦτα τῷ κεφαλῇ ἀποσπείροντα αὐτῷ, καὶ καταρρίψαντα εἰς ὄνειον ἀσκόν, ἀνεστυγμένους τὸ ῥῆμα. || This was the design of Tarquinius Priscus, when the extremity of labour which he laid upon his Subjects made many lay violent hands upon themselves; Passim concita nece Quiritibus ædium fugientibus, novum & inexpectatum antea posteaque remedium invenit ille Rex, ut omnium ira defunctorum figeret crucibus corpora, spectanda civibus simul, & feris volucribus que laceranda. *Plin.* l. 36. 25. who makes this handsome Observation of it; Quamobrem pudor Romani nominis proprius, qui saepe res perditas servavit in præliis, tunc quoque subvenit: sed illo tempore imposuit, tum erubescens cum puderet vivos, tanquam pudicorum esset extinctos. * Thus they used *Cællus*, one of the 30 Tyrants of Rome, as *Trebellius Pollio testifies*: Novo injuriæ genere imago in crucem sublata, persultante vulgo, quasi paribulo ipse *Cællus* videretur affixus.

It is necessary we should thus profess Faith in *Christ Crucified*, as that Punishment which he chose to undergo, as that way which he was pleased to die. First, because by this kind of Death we may be assured that he hath taken upon himself, and consequently from us, the malediction of the Law. For we were all under the *Curse*; because it is expressly written, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the*

Law

|| Deut. 21. 22
If a man have
committed a
sin worthy of
death, and he
be put to death,
and thou hang
him on a tree.
In which words
being put to
death, preced-
eth being
hanged, But, I
confess, in our
Eng. Translat.
hath another

More vel intereas capti suspensus Achæi,
Qui miser aurifera, teste pependit aqua.

our

dulous persons to believe it. But that which would make his present life truly miraculous, must be the reality and certainty of his former death. The feigned Histories of *Pythagoras* and *Zamolxis*, of *Theseus* and *Hercules*, of *Orpheus* and *Protesilaus*, made no certain mention of their deaths, and therefore were ridiculous in the Assertion of their resurrection from death.

* Christ, as he appeared to certain witnesses after his Resurrection, so he died before his enemies visibly on the Cross, and gave up the ghost conspicuously in the sight of the World.

* This is excellently observed and expressed by Origen who returneth this answer to the Ob-

jection made by the Jew in Celsus, of those fabulous returns from the dead: *Φέρε παραστήτωμεν ὅτι ἡ δυνάμις τοῦ Χριστοῦ τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἱσχυρότερον, ἐκ νεκρῶν ἐγήγερθε, τέτοις παραβάλλεως. Ἐκαστος μὲν γὰρ ἡμῶν λεγόντων Χριστὸς τοῦ τόπου ἡρώων βεληθείς ἀνδρωθήσεται ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ ἡ δυνάμις αὐτοῦ ἀνθρώπων, καὶ πάλιν κείναις ἐπανελθεῖν πρὸς ἡμᾶς καλεῖται. Ἰησοῦς δὲ σωρῶν ἑνὶ ὅτι πάντων Ἰουδαίων, καὶ καθαρῶν ὡς τῶν Ῥωμαίων ἐν ὅφει τῶν δυνάμεων αὐτοῦ, πῶς οἷον παρὰ πλῆθος πλάσσει λέγειν αὐτὸν τοῖς ἱσχυροτέροις ἡρώων εἶναι καὶ ἀκαταβήκηναι, καὶ κείθεν ἀνελήλυθεν, καὶ οὐδὲν ἔτι μὴ ποτε πρὸς ἀπολογία, τῶν ἐσσωρῶν τὸν Ἰησοῦν καὶ τοῦτον λέγειν, ἀλλὰ διὰ τὰς αἰτίας ἡρώων ἱσχυρότερον ἢ εἰς ἀδικασίας βεβηκέναι βιαζομένων. ὅτι εἰ καθ' ὑπόθεσιν ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἐτεθνῆκε ἀσώμῳ θανάτῳ, ὅπως δὲ ἔλεγε ἡμεῖς ἀποθανόντων ὅλων τῶν δυνάμεων ἡμῶν Ἰουδαίων, ὅτι καὶ τὸ ἀληθὲς καὶ ἀγασαὶ ἐκ νεκρῶν, χάραν εἶχε ἀντὶ τὸ ἀπονοηθῆναι αὐτοῦ ἡρώων καὶ αὐτὸς τῶν λεχθέντων. μὴ ποτ' ἐν πρὸς ἀλλοῖς ἀντίοις τῶν σωρῶν αὐτοῦ τὸν Ἰησοῦν καὶ τὸτο δυνάμις συμβαλλεῖς τῶν αὐτῶν ὁπισθίως ὅτι τῶν σωρῶν ἀποβηκέναι, ἵνα μηδὲς ἔχῃ λέγειν ὅτι ἐκὼν ὑπεξέστη ἡ δυνάμις αὐτοῦ ἀνθρώπων, καὶ ἔδωκεν ἀποβηκέναι, ἐκ ἀποτέθηκεν, ὅτ' ἐβεβλήθη πάλιν ὁππῶς ἐτερεξίστατο τῶν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν. Adv. Celsum, l. 2.*

And now we have made this discovery of the true manner and nature of the Cross on which our Saviour suffered, every one may understand what it is he professeth when he declareth his Faith, and saith, I believe in *Christ crucified*. For thereby he is understood and obliged to speak thus much: I am really perswaded, and fully satisfied, That the only-begotten and eternal Son of God, *Christ Jesus*, that he might cancel the hand-writing which was against us, and take off the curse which was due unto us, did take upon him the form of a servant, and in that form did willingly and chearfully submit himself unto the false accusation of the *Jews*, and unjust sentence of *Pilate*, by which he was condemned, according to the *Roman* custom, to the Cross; and upon that did suffer servile punishment of the greatest acerbity, enduring the pain, and of the greatest ignominy, despising the shame. And thus I believe in *Christ crucified*,

Dead.

THough Crucifixion of it self involveth not in it certain Death, and he which is fastned to a Cross is so leisurely to die, as that he being taken from the same may live; though when the insulting *Jews* in a malicious derision called to our Saviour to *save himself*, and *come down from the Cross*, he might have come down from thence, and in saving himself have never saved us: yet it is certain that he felt the extremity of that punishment, and fulfilled the utmost intention of Crucifixion: so that, as we acknowledge him *crucified*, we believe him *dead*.

For the Illustration of which part of the Article, it will be necessary, First, to shew that the *Messias* was to die; that no Sufferings, howsoever shameful and painful, were sufficiently satisfactory to the determination and predictions Divine, without a full dissolution and proper death: Secondly, to prove that our *Jesus*, whom we believe to be the true *Messias*, did not only suffer Torments intolerable and inexpressible in this life, but upon and by the same did finish this life by a true and proper Death: Thirdly, to declare in what the nature and condition of the Death of a person so totally singular did properly and peculiarly consist. And more than this cannot be necessary to shew we believe that *Christ was dead*.

First then, we must consider what *S. Paul* delivered to the *Corinthians* first 1 Cor. 15: 3.

of all, and what also he received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; that the Messiah was the Lamb slain before the foundations of the world, and that his death was severally represented and foretold. For though the sacrificing Isaac hath been acknowledged an express and lively Type of the promised Messiah; though, after he was bound and laid upon the wood, he was preserved from the fire, and rescued from the religious cruelty of his Father's knife; though Abraham be said to have offered up his only-begotten Son, when Isaac died not; though by all this it might seem foretold that the true and great promised seed, the Christ, should be made a sacrifice for sin, should be fastned to the Cross, and offered up to the Father, but not suffer death: yet being without effusion of blood there is no remission, without death no sacrifice for sin; being the saving of Isaac alive doth not deny the death of the Antitype, but rather suppose and assert it, as presignifying his Resurrection from the dead, from whence Abraham received him in a figure; we may safely affirm the ancient and legal Types did represent a Christ which was to die. It was an essential part of the Paschal Law, that the Lamb should be slain: and in the Sacrifices for sin, which presignified a Saviour to sanctify the people with his own blood, the bodies of the beasts were burnt without the camp, and their blood brought into the sanctuary.

Nor did the Types only require, but the Prophecies also foretel, his Death. For he was brought, saith Isaiah, as a Lamb to the slaughter: he was cut off out of the land of the living, saith the same Prophet; and made his soul an offering for sin. Which are so plain and evident predictions, that the * Jews shew not the least appearance of probability in their evasions.

* That this place of Isaiah must be understood of the

Messias, I have already proved against the Jews out of the Text, and their own Traditions. Their objection particularly to these words is, that the land of the living is the land of Canaan. S. Solomon Jarchi, מֵהָאָרֶץ חַיִּים הִיאַ אֶרֶץ יִשְׂרָאֵל From the land of the living, that is, the land of Israel. And D. Kimchi endeavours to prove that exposition out of David, כִּי נִנְוָר מֵאֶרֶץ חַיִּים נֶאֱשָׁר נִרְאָה כְּאֶרֶץ שִׁנְקָרְאֵת אֶרֶץ חַיִּים נִמְו אֶתְהַלֵּךְ לִפְנֵי ה' בְּאֶרֶץ חַיִּים: as if the land of the living must be the land of Canaan, because David professeth he will walk before the Lord in the land of the living; whereas there is no more in that phrase, than that he will serve God while he liveth. As Psal. 27. 13. I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living; and Isa. 38. 11. I said, I shall not see the Lord, even the Lord in the land of the living; which is sufficiently interpreted by the words which follow, I shall behold man no more with the Inhabitants of the world. The land of the living then was not particularly the land of Canaan: nor can they persuade us that it could not refer to Christ, because he was never removed out of that land: but to be cut off out of the land of the living is, certainly, to be taken away from them which live upon the earth, that is, to die.

Being then the obstinate Jews themselves acknowledge one Messiah was to die, and that a violent death; being we have already proved there is but one Messiah foretold by the Prophets, and shewed by those places which they will not acknowledge that he was to be slain: it followeth by their unwilling confessions and our plain probations, that the promised Messiah was ordained to die: which is our first Assertion.

Secondly, we affirm, correspondently to these Types and Prophecies, That Christ our Passover is slain, that he whom we believe to be the true and only Messiah did really and truly die. Which affirmation we may with confidence maintain, as being secure of any even the least denial. Jesus of Nazareth upon his Crucifixion was so surely, so certainly dead, that they which wished, they which thirsted for his blood, they which obtained, which effected, which extorted his death, even they believed it, even they were satisfied with it: the chief Priests, the Scribes and the Pharisees, the Publicans and sinners, all were satisfied; the Sadduces most of all, who hugged their old opinion, and loved their error the better, because they thought him sure for ever rising up. But if they had denied or doubted of it, the very stones would cry out and confirm it. Why did the Sun put on mourning? why were the graves opened, but for a Funeral? Why did the Earth quake? why were the Rocks rent? why did the frame of Nature shake, but because the

the God of nature died? Why did all the people, who came to see him crucified, and love to feed their eyes with such Tragick spectacles, why did they beat upon their breasts and return, but that they were assured *it was finished*, there was no more to be seen, all was done? It was not out of compassion that the mercileſs Soldiers brake not his legs, but becauſe they found him dead whom they came to diſpatch; and being enraged that their cruelty ſhould be thus prevented, with an impertinent villany they pierce his ſide, and with a fooliſh revenge endeavour to kill a dead man; thereby becoming ſtronger witneſſes than they would, by being leſs the Authours than they deſired, of his death. For out of his ſacred, but wounded ſide, came blood and water, both as evident ſigns of his preſent death, as certain ſeals of our future and eternal life. Theſe are the two bleſſed Sacraments of the Spouſe of Chriſt, each aſſuring her of the death of her beloved. The Sacrament of Baptiſm, the water through which we paſs into the Church of Chriſt, teacheth us that he died to whom we come. *For know you not, ſaith S. Paul, that ſo many of us as are baptized into Jeſus Chriſt, are baptized into his death?* The Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, the Bread broken, and the Wine poured forth, ſignifie that he died, which inſtituted it; and *as often as we eat this bread and drink this cup, we ſhew forth the Lord's death till he come.*

Rom. 6. 3.

1 Cor. 11. 26.

Dead then our bleſſed Saviour was upon the Croſs; and that not by a feigned or metaphorical, but by a true and proper, death. As he was truly and properly man, in the ſame mortal nature which the ſons of *Adam* have; ſo did he undergo a true and proper death, in the ſame manner as we die. Our life appeareth principally in two particulars, Motion and Senſation; and while both or either of theſe are perceived in a body, we pronounce it lives. Not that the life it ſelf conſiſteth in either or both of theſe, but in that which is the original principle of them both, which we call the Soul; and the intimate preſence or union of that Soul unto the body is the life thereof. The real diſtinction of which Soul from the body in man, our bleſſed Saviour taught moſt clearly in that admonition, *Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the ſoul; but rather fear him which is able to deſtroy both body and ſoul in hell.* Now being Death is nothing elſe but the privation or *c* reſſion of Life, and we are then properly ſaid to die when we ceaſe to live; being Life conſiſteth in the Union of the Soul unto the Body, from whence, as from the fountain, flow Motion, Senſation, and whatſoever vital perfection; Death can be nothing elſe but the ſolution of that vital union, or the actual *d* ſeparation of the Soul, before united to the Body. As therefore when the Soul of man doth leave the habitation of its Body, and being the ſole fountain of vitality bereaves it of all vital activity, we ſay that body or that man is dead: ſo when we read that Chriſt our Saviour died, we muſt conceive that was a true and proper death, and conſequently that his body was bereft of his Soul, and of all vital influence from the ſame.

τὸ ἐμψυχον τὸ ἀψυχε δυνεῖν μάλιστα διαφέρειν δεῖ, κινήσει τε καὶ πρὸς ἀντιθέσει. παρρηλικόμαρ ὅ καὶ περὶ τοῦ πνεύματος διὰ τὸ αὐτὸ καὶ ψυχῆς. Arist. de Anim. l. 1. c. 2. ὁ διαφέρει τὰ ἀψυχα (leg. ἐμψυχα) καὶ ἀψυχον, τὸτο ἐστὶ ψυχῆ διαφέρει καὶ κινήσεως, αἰσθήσεως, ταντασία, νοήσεως. Salluſt. de Diis c. 8. Matt. 10. 28. At Secundus c. 11. καὶ ἀπὸ

κλήσεως βίαι. ^a As the Philoſophers have anciently expreſſed it, eſpecially Plato, who by the advantage of an error in the Original of Souls beſt underſtood the end of Life: *Τὸτό γε θάνατος ὀνομάζεται, λύσις καὶ χωριζόμενος ψυχῆς ἀπὸ σώματος.* in Phædone. Again; *Ὁ θάνατος τυγχάνει ὧν, ὡς ἐμοὶ δοκεῖ ἕδεν ἄλλο ἢ διὸν πραγμάτων διάλυσις, ἢ ψυχῆς καὶ τοῦ σώματος, ἀπ' ἀλλήλων* in Gorgia. And more plainly and fully yet: *Ἠγέμεθα τι ἢ θάνατον εἶναι; Πάνυ γ', ἐστὶν ὑπολαμβάνειν ὁ Σιμμίας, Ἄρα μὴ ἄλλο τι ἢ τὴν ψυχῆς ἀπὸ τοῦ σώματος ἀπαλλαγὴν; καὶ εἶπεν τὸτο τεθνήσκειν, χωρεῖς μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς ψυχῆς ἀπαλλαγὴν αὐτὸ καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ σῶμα γινόμεναι, χωρεῖς ἢ τὴν ψυχὴν τὸ σῶμα ἀπαλλαγῶσαν αὐτῷ καὶ αὐτῷ εἶναι; Ἄρα μὴ ἄλλο τι ἢ ὁ θάνατος ἢ τὸτο; Οὐκ, ἀλλὰ τὸτο, εἶπεν.* in Phædone. Thus with four ſeveral words, *λύσις, διάλυσις, χωριζόμενος, and ἀπαλλαγὴν*, doth Plato expreſs the ſeparation of the Soul from the Body, and maketh Death formally to conſiſt of that ſeparation. This ſolution is excellently expreſſed by Phocylides:

Οὐ καλὸν ἀρμονίῳ ἀναλύμεν ἀνθρώποις.
Ψυχαὶ γὰρ μέμνησιν ἀκήκοι ἐν σθιβάροισι.
Πνεῦμα γὰρ ὅτι θεῶν χηρῶν θνητοῖσι καὶ ἰκνών.
Σῶμα γὰρ ἐν γαίῃ ἔχομεν, καὶ πάρεστι ἐς αὐτὴν
Λυόμενοι κόνις ἐσόμεν. ἀλλ' ὁ ἀνὰ πνεῦμα δέδωκεν.

So Tertullian: Opus autem mortis in medio est, discretio corporis animæq; De Anim. c. 51. Si mors non aliud determinatur quam disjunctio corporis animæq; contrarium morti vita non aliud definitur quam conjunctio corporis animæq; ib. c. 27. *This description of Death is far more philosophical than the notion of Aristotle, who makes it to consist in the corruption of natural heat; (Πύριον τείνω ἀμὰ τὸ τε ζῆν ὑπὲρ χαλεπὸν) & τὸ θερμὸν οὐκ ὁμοιωμένην, καὶ τὸ καλὰ μὲν θάνατον ἴδ' τὴν τέρψιν θοοδόν, in Parv. Natur. in as much as the soul is not that natural heat, and the corruption of that heat followeth upon the separation of the Soul.*

Nor is this only our conception, or a doubtful truth; but we are as much assured of the propriety of his death, as of the death it self. For that the unspotted Soul of our Jesus was really and actually separated from his Body, that his Flesh was bereft of natural life by the secession of that Soul, appeareth by his own resignation, *Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit*, and by the Evangelists expression, *and having said thus, he gave up the ghost*. When he was to die, he resigned his Soul; when he gave it up, he died; || when it was delivered out of the body, then was the body dead: and so the eternal Son of God upon the Cross did properly and truly die.

Luke 23. 46.
* This is expressed three ways, all signifying the separation of his Soul from his body.

S. Mark and S. Luke ἐξέπνευσε, which is of the same force with ἐξέψυξε. But because ἐκψύχην doth not always signify an absolute expiration, but sometimes a lipthymie only: as Helychius, 'Εκψύχων, λιποθυμῶσι' so Hippocrates useth it, 'Εἰσὶ δὲ ὀξύτατοι (καὶ ἐξ) ὅσοις ἢ ἐκψύχων δὴ τι ἀπελῆσαι, l. i. de Morbis; and again, 'Εκψύχων δὲ διὰ τὴν ἀμαλῆν ἢ μετασταν ἐξαιτίας γινώσκω. lest therefore we should take ἐξέπνευσε in such an imperfect sense, S. Matthew hath it ἀφῆκε τὸ πνεῦμα, and S. John, παρέδωκε τὸ πνεῦμα. Which is a full expression of the secession of the Soul from the body, and consequently of death, which is, in the language of Secundus, πνεύματι δ' ὁρώμενος. || These three points or distinctions of time I have therefore noted, that I might occur to any objection which possibly might arise out of the ancient Philosophical utility, which Aulus Gellius reports to be agitated at the Table of Taurus. The Question was propounded thus, Quæsitum est, quando moriens moreretur, cum jam in morte esset, an tum etiam cum in vita foret. Where Taurus admonisheth the rest, that this was no light question; for, says he, gravissimi Philosophorum super hac re serio quæsierunt; & alii moriendi verbum atque monentium manente adhuc vitâ dici atque fieri putaverunt; alii nihil in illo tempore vitæ reliquerunt, totumque illud quod mori dicitur morti vindicarent. The ancienter Philosophers were divided; some saying a man died in the time of his life, others in the time of his death. But Plato observed a contradiction in both; for a man can neither be said to die while he is alive, nor when he is dead: & idecirco peperit ipse aliud quoddam novum in confinio tempus, quod verbis propriis atque integris τὴν ἐξαιτίας εὐσιν appellavit: which he thus describes in his Parmenides; Τὸ δὲ ἐξαιτίας τοῦτόν τι ὅστις σημαίνειν, ὡς ἐξ ἐκείνου μετὰ βάλον εἰς ἐκάτερον. So A. Gellius l. 6. c. 13. Thus when our Saviour commended his Soul into the hands of the Father, he was yet alive; when the soldier pierced his side, he was already dead: and the instant in which he gave up the ghost was the τὸ ἐξαιτίας when he died.

This reality and propriety of the Death of Christ is yet farther illustrated from the cause immediately producing it, which was an external violence and cruciation, sufficient to dissolve that natural disposition of the body which is absolutely necessary to continue the vital union of the Soul: the torments which he endured on the Cross did bring to that state in which life could not longer be naturally conserved, and death, without intervention of supernatural power, must necessarily follow.

For Christ, who took upon him all our Infirmities, Sin only excepted, had in his nature not only a possibility and aptitude, but also a necessity of dying; and as to any extrinsecal violence, able according to the common course of nature to destroy and extinguish in the body such an aptitude as is indispensably required to continue in union with the Soul, he had no natural preferative; nor was it in the power of his Soul to continue its vital conjunction unto his body bereft of a vital disposition.

John 10. 18.

It is true that Christ did voluntarily die, as he said of himself, *No man taketh away my life from me, but I lay it down of my self: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again*. For it was in his power whether he would come into the power of his enemies; it was in his power to suffer or not to suffer the sentence of Pilate, and the nailing to the Cross; it was in his power to have come down from the Cross, when he was nailed to it: but when by an act of his will he had submitted to that Death, when he had accepted and embraced those Torments to the last, it was not in the power of his Soul to continue any longer Vitality to the Body, whose Vigour was totally exhausted. So not by a necessary compulsion, but voluntary election, he took upon him a necessity of dying.

Mark 15. 44.

'Tis true that Pilate marvelled he was dead so soon, and the two thieves lived

ved longer to have their legs broken, and to die by the accession of another pain: but we read not of such long furrows on their backs as were made on his, nor had they such kind of Agony as he was in the night before. What though *he cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost?* What though *the Centurion, when he saw it, said, Truly this man was the Son of God?* The miracle was not in the death, but in the voice: the strangeness was not that he should die, but that at the point of death he should cry out so loud: he died not by, but with, a miracle.

Should we imagine Christ to anticipate the time of death, and to substract his Soul from future torments necessary to cause an expiration; we might rationally say the *Jews* and *Gentiles* were guilty of his death, but we could not properly say they slew him: guilty they must be, because they inflicted those torments on which in time death must necessarily follow; but slay him actually they did not, if his death proceeded from any other cause, and not from the wounds which they inflicted: whereas *S. Peter* expressly chargeth his enemies, ^a *Him ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain;* and again, ^b *The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew, and hanged on a tree.* Thus was the Lamb properly slain, and the *Jews* authors of his Death, as well as of his Crucifixion.

Wherefore being Christ took upon himself our mortality in the highest sense, as it includeth a necessity of dying; being he voluntarily submitted himself to that bloody Agony in the garden, to the hands of the Plowers who made long their furrows, and to the nails which fastned him to the Cross; being these Torments thus inflicted and continued did cause his death, and in this condition *he gave up the ghost*: it followeth, that the only-begotten Son of God, the true *Messias* promised of old, did die a true and proper death. Which is the second Conclusion in this Explication.

But thirdly, because Christ was not only Man, but also God, and there was not only an union between his Soul and Body while he lived, but also a conjunction of both Natures, and an union in his Person: it will be farther necessary for the understanding of his Death, to shew what Union was dissolved, what continued; that we may not make that Separation either less or greater than it was.

Whereas then there were two different substantial Unions in Christ, one of the parts of his humane nature each to other, in which his Humanity did consist, and by which he was truly Man; the other of his Natures Humane and Divine, by which it came to pass that God was Man, and that Man God: first, it is certain, as we have already shewed, that the union of the parts of his humane nature was dissolved on the Cross, and a real separation made between his Soul and Body. As far then as Humanity consists in the essential union of the parts of humane nature, so far the Humanity of Christ upon his death did cease to be, and consequently he ceased to be Man. But secondly, the union of the natures remained still as to the parts, nor was the Soul or Body separated from the Divinity, but still subsisted as they did before, by the subsistence of the second person of the Trinity.

The truth of this Assertion appeareth, first from the Language of this very ^c Creed. For as we proved before, that the only-begotten and eternal Son of God, God of God, very God of very God, was *concerned*, and *born*, and *suffered*, and that the truth of these Propositions relied upon the communion

of *Christum* unicum, *Dominum nostrum*. Modo totum dixi, in *Jesusum Christum filium ejus unicum, Dominum nostrum*; totum ibi intellige, & verbum, & animam, & carnem. Sed utique confiteris etiam illud quod habet eadem Fides, in eum Christum te credere qui crucifixus est & sepultus. Ergo etiam sepultum Christum esse non negas, & tamen sola caro sepulta est. Si enim erat ibi anima, non erat mortuus; si autem vera mors erat, & ejus vera sit resurrectio, sine anima fuerat in sepulchro, & tamen sepultus est Christus. Ergo Christus erat etiam sine anima caro, quia non est sepulta nisi caro. *S. August. in Joh. tract. 43.*

Mark 15. 37, 39.

^a *Acts 2. 23.*

^b *Acts 5. 30.*

In both which places the Original sheweth more expressly; that by their Crucifixion they slew him: in the former thus, διὰ χειρῶν ἀνόμων πρὸς πικρὰν αἰτίαν ἐν τῇ ἑσχάτῃ ἡμέρᾳ αὐτοῦ. In the latter thus, ὁ γὰρ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ υἱὸς τοῦ Πατρὸς ὁ ἀγαπῶν τὸν κόσμον ἑαυτὸν ὑποκατέστη ὑπὲρ τοῦ κόσμου.

^c *Credimus certe non in solum Deum Patrem, sed & in Jesum Christum filium e-*

of Properties, grounded upon the hypostatical union : so while the Creed in the same manner proceedeth speaking of the same person, that he *was buried* and *descended into hell*, it sheweth that neither his body, in respect of which he was buried, nor his Soul, in respect of which he was generally conceived to descend into hell, had lost that union.

Again, as we believe that God redeemed us by his own blood, so also it hath been the constant Language of the Church, that God died for us ; which cannot be true, except the Soul and Body in the instant of separation were united to the Deity.

Indeed, being all the gifts of God are without repentance, nor doth he ever substract his grace from any without their abuse of it, and a sinful demerit in themselves ; we cannot imagine the grace of union should be taken from Christ, who never offended, and that in the highest act of obedience, and the greatest satisfaction to the will of God.

'Tis true, Christ cried upon the Cross with a loud voice, saying, *My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?* * But if that dereliction should signify a solution of the former union of his Natures, the separation had been made not at his death, but in his life. Whereas indeed those words infer no more, than that he was bereft of such joys and comforts from the Deity, as should assuage and mitigate the acerbity of his present torments.

* Greg. Nyss.
Orat. 1. de Resur.
"Ολον τὸν
ἄνθρωπον τὸ
Θεὸν διὰ τῆς
πρὸς ἑαυτὸν ἀ-
νακράσεως εἰς

τὴν θάνατον οὖσιν μετασκληράσθη, ἐν τῷ καιρῷ δὲ καὶ τὸ πάθος οἰκονομία· ὁ πατήρ μέρους τὸ ἀπαξ ἐγχεθέν ἀνεχώρη-
σιν· ἀμεταμέλητα γὰρ τὸ Θεὸν τὰ χαρίσματα· ἀλλὰ τὴν μὴ ψυχὴν τῆ σώματος ἢ διότητος ἐκείνης διέλιξε, ἑαυτὴν
δὲ ἀμεροτέρεως μύσαντες ἐδείξει.

It remaineth therefore, that when our Saviour yielded up the ghost, he suffered only an external violence ; and what was subject to such corporal force did yield unto those dolorous impressions. Being then such is the imbecillity and frailty of our nature, that life cannot long subsist in exquisite torments ; the disposition of his Body failed the Soul, and the Soul deserted his Body. But being no power hath any force against Omnipotency, nor could any corporal or finite agent work upon the union made with the Word ; therefore that did still remain entire both to the Soul and to the Body. The Word was once indeed without either Soul or Body ; but after it was made flesh, it was never parted either from the one or from the other.

|| This is the
conclusion of S.
August. Ex
quo Verbum

caro factum est, ut habitaret in nobis, & susceptus est à Verbo homo, id est totus homo, anima & caro, quid fecit passio, quid fecit mors, nisi corpus ab anima separavit ? animam verò à Verbo non separavit. Si enim mortuus est Dominus.....sine dubio caro ipsius expiravit animam, (ad tempus enim exiguum anima deseruit carnem, sed redeunte animà resurrecturam) à Verbo autem animam separatam esse non dico. Latronis animæ dixit, *Hodie tecum eris in Paradiso*. Fidelem latronis animam non deserebat, & deserebat suam ? Absit : sed illius ut Dominus custodivit, suam verò inseparabiliter habuit. Si autem dixerimus, quia ipsa se anima posuit, & iterum ipsa se sumpsit, absurdissimus sensus est : non enim quæ à Verbo non erat separata à seipsa potuit separari. *Tract. in Joh. 47.*

This Christ did really and truly die, according to the condition of death, to which the nature of man is subject : but although he was more than man, yet he died no more than man can die : a separation was made between his Soul and Body, but no disunion of them and his Deity. They were disjoined one from another, but not from him that took them both together ; * rather by virtue of that remaining conjunction they were again united after their separation. And this I conceive sufficient for the third and last part of our explication.

* Ἐπειδὴ οὖν
μὴ τὸ ἀνθρώ-
πινον σύγκρη-
μα, ἀλλὰ καὶ
μοιρασθεὶς ἢ τῷ
θεῷ τῇ φύ-
σιν ἐν τῷ και-

ρῷ τῆς τοῦ σώματος διαλύσεως ἐκωστήθη τῷ σωτήρι τὸ ἀδιαίρετον, ἀλλὰ τὸ ἔμπαλιν γίνεται·
τῇ γὰρ ἐνόηται τῆς θεᾶς εὐσεύς, τῆς καὶ τὸ ἴσον ἐν ἀμεροτέρεσι ὄντι, πάλιν πρὸς ἄλλα τὰ διακῶτα συμμεύεται.
Greg. Nyss. Orat. 1. de Resurr. Tami velox incorruptæ carnis vivificatio fuit, ut major ibi esset corporis similitudo quam mor-
tis ; quoniam Deitas, quæ ab utraque suscepti hominis substantia non recessit, quod potestate divisit, potestate conjunxit.
Leo Serm. 1. de Resurr.

The necessity of this part of the Article is evident, in that the Death of Christ is the most intimate and essential part of the Mediatorship, and that which most intrinsically concerns every Office and Function of the Mediator, as he was Prophet, Priest, and King.

First, it was necessary, as to the Prophetical Office, that Christ should die, to the end that the truth of all the Doctrine which he delivered might be confirmed by his Death. He was ^a *the true and faithful witness*, ^b *who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession*. ^c *This is he that came by water and blood: and there are three that bare witness in earth, the spirit, the water, and the blood*. He preached unto us a new ^d *and better covenant, which was established upon better promises*, and that was to be ratified with his blood; which is therefore called by Christ himself the ^e *blood of the New Testament*, or ^f *everlasting Covenant*: for that Covenant was also a testament; and ^g *where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator*. Beside, Christ, as a Prophet, taught us not only by word, but by example; and though every action of his life, who came to fulfil the Law, be most worthy of our imitation; yet the most eminent example was in his death, in which he taught us much variety of Christian Vertues. What example was that of Faith in God, ^h *to lay down his life, that he might take it up again*; in the bitterness of his torments to ⁱ *commend his spirit into the hands of his Father*; and ^k *for the joy that was set before him, to endure the cross, and despise the shame*? What a Pattern of Meekness, Patience, and Humility, for ^l *the Son of man to come not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and give his life a ransom for many*; ^m *to be led like a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before the shearer, not to open his mouth*; to ⁿ *endure the contradictions of sinners against himself, and to humble himself unto death, even the death of the Cross*? What a precedent of Obedience, for the Son of God to learn obedience by the things that he suffered; to be made under the Law, and, though he never broke the Law, to become obedient unto death; to go with cheerfulness to the Cross upon this resolution, *as my Father gave me commandment, even so I do*? What exemplar of Charity, to die for us while we were yet sinners and enemies, when greater love hath no man than this, to lay down his life for his friends; to pray upon the Cross for them that crucified him, and to apologize for such as barbarously slew him, *Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do*? Thus Christ did suffer for us, leaving us an example that we should follow his steps; that as he suffered for us in the flesh, we should arm our selves likewise with the same mind. For he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin: That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God. And so his Death was necessary for the confirmation and completion of his Prophetical Office.

Secondly, it was necessary that Christ should die, and by his death perform the Sacerdotal Office. For every High-priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins. But Christ had no other Sacrifice to offer for our sins than himself. For it was not possible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins: and therefore when Sacrifice and offering God would not, then said he, *Loe, I come to do thy will, O God*; then did Christ determine to offer up himself for us. And because the Sacrifices of old were to be slain, and generally without shedding of blood there is no remission; therefore if he will offer Sacrifice for sin, he must of necessity die, and so make his Soul an offering for sin. If Christ be our Passover, he must be sacrificed for us. We were sold under sin, and he which will redeem us must give his life for our redemption: for we could not be redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, but only with the precious

precious blood of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish and without spot. We all had sinned, and so offended the Justice of God, and by an act of that Justice the sentence of death passed upon us: it was necessary therefore that Christ our surety should die, to satisfy the justice of God, both for that iniquity, as the propitiation for our sins, and for that penalty as he which was to bear our griefs. God was offended with us, and he must die who was to reconcile him to us. For when we were enemies, saith S. Paul, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son. We were sometimes alienated, and enemies in our mind by our wicked works; yet now hath he reconciled us in the body of his flesh through death. Thus the death of Christ was necessary toward the great act of his Priesthood, as the oblation, propitiation and satisfaction for the sins of the whole world: and not only for the act it self, but also for our assurance of the power and efficacy of it, (For if the blood of bulls and goats sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh; How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge our consciences from dead works?) and of the happiness flowing from it, (for he that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?) Upon this assurance founded on his Death, we have the freedom and boldness to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil that is to say, his flesh. Neither was the Death of Christ necessary only in respect of us immediately for whom he died, but in reference to the Priest himself who died, both in regard of the qualification of himself, and consummation of his Office. For in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful High-priest, and having suffered, being tempted, might be able to succour them that are tempted: so that passing through all the previous torments, and at last through the pains of Death, having suffered all which man can suffer, and much more, he became, as an experimental Priest, most sensible of our infirmities, most compassionate of our miseries, most willing and ready to support us under, and to deliver us out of, our temptations. Thus being qualified by his utmost suffering, he was also fitted to perfect his Offering. For as the High-priest once every year for the atonement of the sins of the people entered into the Holy of Holies not without blood; so Christ being come an High-priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, by his own blood entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. And this is the grand necessity of the Death of Christ in respect of his Sacerdotal Office.

Thirdly, there was a necessity that Christ should die in reference to his Regal Office. *O King, live for ever*, is either the loyal or the flattering vote for temporal Princes; either the expression of our desires, or the suggestion of their own: whereas our Christ never shewed more Sovereign Power than in his death, never obtained more than by his death. It was not for nothing that Pilate suddenly wrote, and resolutely maintained what he had written, *This is the King of the Jews*. That title on the Cross did signify no less than that his Regal Power was active even there: for having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it; and through his death destroyed him that had the power of death, that is, the Devil. Nor was his death only necessary for the present execution, but also for the affecution of farther Power and Dominion, as the means and way to obtain it. The Spirit of Christ in the Prophets of old testified before-hand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. He shall drink of the brook in the way, saith the Prophet David; therefore shall he lift up his head. He humbled him-

Rom. 5. 10.

Col. 1. 21.

Heb. 9. 13, 14.

Rom. 8. 32.

Heb. 10. 19, 20.

Heb. 2. 17, 18.

Heb. 9. 7, 11, 12.

Col. 2. 4.

Heb. 2. 14.

1 Pet. 1. 11.

Psal. 110. 7.

Phil. 2. 8, 9.

himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name. For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord of the dead and living. Rom. 14. 9.

Thus it is necessary to believe and profess our Faith in *Christ* who died: for by his Blood and the virtue of his Death was our Redemption wrought, as the price which was paid, as by the atonement which was made, as by the full satisfaction which was given, that God might be reconciled to us, who before was offended with us, as by the ratification of the Covenant made between us, and the acquisition of full power to make it good unto us.

After which exposition thus premised, every Christian is conceived to express thus much when he makes profession of Faith in *Christ Jesus* which was dead: I do really and truly assent unto this, as a most infallible and fundamental Truth, that the only-begotten and eternal Son of God, for the working out of our Redemption, did in our nature, which he took upon him, really and truly die, so as by the force and violence of those torments which he felt, his Soul was actually separated from his Body; and although neither his Soul nor Body was separated from his Divinity, yet the Body bereft of his Soul was left without the least vitality. And thus I believe in *Jesus Christ* which was crucified and dead,

And Buried.

WHen the most precious and immaculate Soul of *Christ* was really separated from his flesh, and that union in which his natural life consisted was dissolved, his sacred Body, as being truly dead, was laid up in the chambers of the Grave: so that as we believe him dead, by the Separation of his Soul, we also believe him buried, by the Sepulture of his Body.

And because there is nothing mysterious or difficult in this part of the Article, it will be sufficiently explicated when we have shewn, first, that the promised *Messias* was to be buried; and, secondly, that our *Jesus* was so buried as the *Messias* was to be.

That the *Messias* was to be buried, could not possibly be denied by those who believed he was to die among the *Jews*; because it was the universal custom of that Nation to || bury their dead. We read most frequently of the sepulchres of their Fathers: and though those that were condemned by their supreme power were not buried in their Fathers graves, yet publick sepulchres there were appointed even for them to lie in: and not only they, but all the Instruments which were used in the punishment were buried with them. And yet beside the general consequence of Death among the *Jews*, there was a perfect Type in the person of *Jonas*: for as that Prophet ^a was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so was the *Messias*, or the Son of man, to be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

ταφιδόρις, ῥωμαῖοι ἢ καίοντες, Πάριονες ἢ εἰς τὰς λίμνας ἐπιβύθους, Laert. Pyrrh. But the Jews received this custom no more from the Egyptians than from the Persians, whom they may be rather said to follow, because they used not the Egyptian ταφιδόρις: neither were they more distinguished from the Romans than from the Grecians, who also burned the bodies of the dead. Διελοῦντο καὶ τὰ ἔθνη τὰς ταφάς, ὁ αὐτὸς Ἑλλήνων ἔκαστον. ὁ δὲ Πέρσης ἔθαψεν· ὁ δὲ Ἰουδαὶς ἕτερον ἔθνος ἀπέχετο· ὁ δὲ Σκύθης κατέδιδε ταφιδόρις ἢ ὁ Αἰγύπτιοι. Lucian. ἀπὸ πένθος. Although therefore it be not true, that the Jews received their custom of burying their dead from the Egyptians, because Abraham at the first purchased a burying-place; yet it hath been observed, and is certainly true that their general custom was to inter. Philo, one of their own Writers, Ἀνθρώποις καὶ πάσι χερσαίοις οἰκιστέον ἢ ῥύσις χερσίων ἀπένειμε γυνῶ, ἢ μόνον ζῶσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ θοθανῶσιν, ἴν' ἢ αὐτῇ καὶ τῷ περὶ αὐτὴν ὑποδύχνηται ἡμῖν, καὶ τῷ ἐκ τῆς βίης τελευτῶν ἀνδρῶσιν. l. 1. in Flaccum. Math. 12. 40.

|| It is observed by Tacitus of the *Jews*, in opposition to the Roman Custom, Corpora condere, quā cremare ē more Aegyptio. Hist. l. 5. As of the Egyptians by others, ὁ ἀπὸ πένθος ἢ Αἰγύπτιοι ἢ

Nor was his burial only represented Typically, but foretold Prophetically both by a suppositive Intimation, and by an exprefs Prediction. The Psalmist intimated and supposed no less, when speaking in the person of the *Christ*, he said, *My flesh shall rest in hope, for thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.* That *flesh* is there supposed only such, that is, a body * dead, and that body *resting* in the grave, the common habitation of the dead; yet *resting* there *in hope* that it should never *see corruption*, but rise from thence before that time in which bodies in their graves are wont to putrefie. Beside this intimation there is yet a clear expression of the grave of the *Messias* in that eminent Prediction of *Isaiah*; *He was cut off out of the land of the living, and he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death.* For whatsoever the true interpretation of the Prophecy be, (of which we shall speak hereafter) it is certain that he which was to be *cut off*, was to have a grave: and being we have already shewn that he which was to be *cut off* was the *Messias*; it followeth, that by virtue of this Prediction the promised *Messias* was to be *buried*.

Ezra. 15. 5, 10.

* So the Midrash Tillimaciently expounded it, My flesh shall rest in hope מיתה אחר

אד יצחק מלמד שלא שלט בו רמה ותולעין.

that Rabbi Isaac said, he

raught by these words, that the moth and worm should have no power over him. Whence, by the Argument of *S. Peter*, it must be understood not of *David*, for his flesh saw corruption, nor of any other but the *Messias*. And although the Rabbins are wont to say, That the worm shall never eat the just, in opposition to the last words of *Ezay*; yet they must confess there is no difference in the grave: and therefore that worm must signifie something else than the corruption of the body. Well therefore are those words paraphrased by *Didymus*, ἐπ' ἀλπίδι καὶ σκηνώσεν ἡ σὰρξ, διὰ τὴν ἐνρίαν ἐσθλῶς ἀνάσσειν. *Isa. 53. 8, 9.*

Secondly, that our *Jesus*, whom we believe to be the true *Messias*, was thus buried, we shall also prove, although it seem repugnant to the manner of his death. For those which were sentenced by the *Romans* to die upon the Cross, had not the favour of a sepulchre, but their bodies were || exposed to the fowls of the air, and the beasts of the field, or if they escaped their voracity, to the longer injury of the * air and weather. A guard was also usually || set about them, lest any pitying hand should take the body from the cursed tree, and cover it with earth.

|| To this custom Horace alludes, *Epist. 16. l. 1.* Non hominem occidi: non pascies in cruce corvos. and Juvenal, Vultur,

jumento & canibus crucibusq; relictis, Ad fœtus properat, parietemq; cadaveris affert. So *Prudentius*, Crux illum tollat in auras, Viventemq; oculos offerat alticibus, *Ps. 118. Hymn 4.* This punishment did appear in the Mythology of *Prometheus*, who though he were by some represented simply as δεσμώτης, by others particularly he is described as ἀναστροφώτης, especially by *Lucian*, who delivers him πεισινδύμενον, κρεμνόμενον, πεσπατισσάμενον, ἀναστροφώμενον, ἀνασκολεσιζόμενον. And *Tertullian* speaking of *Pontus* from whence *Marcian* came; Omnia torpent, omnia rigent: nihil illic nisi feritas calet, quæ fabulas scenis dedit, de sacrificiis Taurorum, & amoribus Colchorum, & crucibus Caucaforum. *Adv. Marc. l. 1. c. 1.* He touches the subjects of three Tragedies, *Medea*, *Iphigenia in Tauris*, and *Prometheus Vincetus*, or rather *Crucifixus*. As therefore the Eagle there did feed upon his liver, so were the bodies of crucified persons left to the promiscuous rapacity of carnivorous fowls. So true it was of them what *Augustus* once said, Cuidam sepulturam petenti respondit, jam illam in volucrum esse potestate, *Suet. c. 13.* Nor were they only in the power of the fowls of the air, as *Prometheus* was, whom they durst not hang too low, lest men should succour him. ὅτε δὲ ταπεινὸν καὶ περὶ γῆμον ἐσαυρώθη ἁλὶ, says *Vulcan* in *Lucian* for that reason; but ordinarily they hung so low upon the Cross, that the ravenous beasts might reach them as *Apuleius* describes Patibuli cruciatum, cum canes & vultures intima protrahunt viscera.

* So the bodies were often left upon the Cross till the Sun and rain had putrefied and consumed them. As when the daughter of *Polycrates* did see her father's face in a dream, to be washed by *Jupiter*, and to be anointed by the Sun when he hung upon the Cross, it was performed. Πολυκράτης δὲ ἀτακτομένη ἐπέλεσε πᾶσαν τὴν ὄψιν τῆς θυγατρὸς, ἐλῶτο δὲ ὁ ὦν δὲ τοῦ Διὸς ὅπως βοῖ, ἐξήλθο δὲ ὦν δὲ τοῦ ἡλίου ἀντὶ αὐτῆς ἐν τῇ λαμπρότητι ἡμέρας. *Herod. Thalia.* Of which *Tertul. de Anim. c. 45.* Ut cum Poly-crati sanio filia crucem prospicit de solis unguine & lavacro Jovis. And which is farther thus expressed by *Valerius Maximus*: Putres ejus artus, & tabido cruore manantia membra, atque illam levam cui Neptunus annulum manu piscatoris restituerat, situ marcidam, Sanios latis oculis aspexit, *l. 6. c. 9.* Thus were the bodies of the crucified left: ut in sublimi putrescerent. Quid? *Cyrenæum Theodorum Philosophum non ignobilem nonne miramur?* cui cum *Lyfimachus* Rex crucem minaretur, *Istis*, quæso, inquit, ista horribilia mimitare purpuratis tuis, *Theodori* quidem nihil interest humine an sublimi putrescat. *Cicero l. 1. de Off. Quest.* And so they perished, as the *Scythians* generally did, according to the description of *Silius Italicus*, *l. 13.*

At gente in Scythica fustixa cadavera truncis
Lenta dies sepelit, putri liquentia tabo.

Thus, whether by the fowls or beasts, or by the injury of time or weather, the flesh of those which were crucified was consumed; as *Artemidorus* observed, who concluded from thence, That it was bad for the rich to dream of being crucified: Τὸ δὲ πλεῖστον βλάπτει τὸν πλούσιον ὃ δὲ σαυρώσθαι, καὶ τὰς ἁγίας ἀπολλύσθαι οἱ σαυρωθέντες. *Oneirocr. l. 2. c. 58.* || As appeareth by that Relation in *Petronius Arbitr*: Imperator Provinciarum latrones jussit crucibus affigi.... Proxima autem nocte, cum miles qui cruce afferebat, ne quis ad sepulturam corpora detraheret, &c. And when that soldier was absent, Itaq; cruciarii unius parentes, ut viderant laxatam custodiam, detrahere nocte pendentem, supremoq; mandaverunt officio. Where we see the soldier set for a guard, and the end of that custodia, (which the Greek Λαίωγράφοι do not well confine to the σελήδμα τῶ δαμοφειῶ ἐπικειμένον) to keep

keep the body of him which was crucified from being buried by his friends. Thus when Cleomenes was dead, his body was fastened to a Cross (another example of the ignominy of his punishment) by the command of Ptolemy: 'Ο ὁ Πτολεμαῖος, ὡς ἔγνω ταῦτα προσέταξε τὸ μὲν Σῶμα τῷ Κλεομένει κρεμάσαι καὶ ἀβυσσώσαναι. Where κρεμάσαι is again to be observed as taken for ἀνασταυρῶσαι: for not long after in the same Author it follows, 'Ολίγαις ὃ ὕστερον ἡμέραις, οἱ τὸ σῶμα τῷ Κλεομένει ἀνασταυρώσαντες παρεπλάθοντες εἶδον ἐπιμαρτυρεῖν δεξιὴν αὐτοῦ ἐν τῇ κεφαλῇ περιπελεγμένον, καὶ ἀποκρύπτουσαν τὸ πρόσωπον, ὡς μὴ εἶναι ὄρεον ἐκείνου τοῦ σαρκωδὸς. Where we see a guard set to keep him from burial, and the voracious fowls ready to seize on him, had they not been kept off by a serpent involving his head. Thus were soldiers, upon the crucifixion of any person, set as a guard, τὸν ἀνασταυρωμένον παρεπλάθοντες, or τηρεῖντες, & crucem asservantes, viz. ne quis ad sepulcrum corpus detraheret.

Under that custom of the *Roman Law* was now the body of our Saviour on the Cross, and the guard was set; there was the Centurion and they that were with him, watching Jesus. The Centurion returned as soon as Christ was dead, and gave testimony unto Pilate of his death: but the watch continueth still. How then can the ancient Predictions be fulfilled? how can this Jonas be conveyed into the belly of the whale? where shall ^a he make his grave with the wicked, or with the rich, in his death of crucifixion? By the providence of him who did foretel it, it shall be fulfilled. They which petitioned that he might be crucified shall intercede that he may be interred. For the || custom of the Jews required, that whosoever suffered by the sentence of their Law should be buried, and that the same day he suffered. Particularly they could not but remember the express words of Moses, ^b If a man have committed a sin worthy of death, and he be put to death, and thou hang him on a tree; His body shall not remain all night upon the tree, but thou shalt in any wise bury him that day. Upon this general custom and particular Law, especially considering the sanctity of the day approaching, ^c the Jews, that the bodies should not remain upon the Cross on the Sabbath-day, besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. And this is the first step to the Burial of our Saviour.

Math. 27. 54.

Isa. 53. 9.

מִצוֹת
עֲשֵׂה
לְקַבֹּר
אִתּוֹ
הַיּוֹמָה
בֵּין בָּיִם
הָהוּנָה

Maimon. Treat:
Sanhed. cap. 15:

So Josephus.

Το πῦρ τῶν Ἰουδαίων πρὸς τὰς
ταρὰς περὶ τὸν
αὐτοῦ ποταμὸν,
ὡς καὶ τὸν ἐν

καταδικῆς ἀνασταυρωμένους πρὸς δ' αὐτῶν ἡλίκ' ἀνελεῖν τε καὶ θάπτειν. De Bell. Jud. l. 24. c. 18. ^b Dent 21. 22, 23: ^c John 19. 31.

For though by the common rule of the *Roman Law*, those which were condemned to the Cross were to lose both Soul and Body on the tree, as not being permitted either sepulture or || mourning; yet it was in the power of the Magistrate to indulge * the leave of burial: and therefore Pilate, who crucified Christ because the Jews desired it, could not possibly deny him burial when they requested it; he which professed to find no fault in him while he lived, could make no pretence for an accession of cruelty after his death.

|| Non solent
autem lugeri
(ut Neratius
ait) hostes, vel
perduelliones
damnati, nec
suspendiosi,
nec qui manus
sibi intulerunt,

non tædio vitæ, sed mala conscientia. Digest. l. 3. tit. 2. l. Liberorum. * So Ulpianus, l. 9. de Officio Proconsulis: Corpora eorum qui capite damnantur cognatis ipsorum neganda non sunt; & id se observasse etiam Divus Augustus libro decimo de vita sua scribit. Hodie autem eorum in quos animadvertitur corpora non aliter sepeliuntur quam si fuerit petiti & permissum; & nonnunquam non permittitur, maxime majestatis causa damnatorum. So Paulus l. 1. Sententiarum: Corpora animadversorum quibuscumque petentibus ad sepulturam danda sunt. Obnoxios criminum digno supplicio subjectos sepulture tradi non vetamus, Cod. l. 3. tit. 43. l. 11.

Now though the Jews had obtained their request of Pilate, though Christ had been thereby certainly buried; yet had not the prediction been fulfilled, which expressly mentioned the rich in his death. For as he was crucified between two thieves, so had he been buried with them, because by the Jews, there was appointed a publick place of burial for all such as suffered as Malefactors.

Wherefore to rescue the body of our blessed Saviour from the malicious hands of those that caused his Crucifixion, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, an honourable counsellour, a good man and a just, who also himself waited for the kingdom of God, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for

Math. 27.
Mark. 15.
Luke 23.
John 19.

fear of the Jews: this Joseph came and went in boldly unto Pilate, and besought him that he might take away the body of Jesus. And Pilate gave him leave, and commanded the body to be delivered: he came therefore and took the body of Jesus.

John 3. 1, 10.
19. 39, 40.

Beside, there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, a man of the Pharisees, a ruler of the Jews, a Master of Israel; this Nicodemus came and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound weight. Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

And thus was the Burial of the Son of God performed, according to the custom of the people of God. For the understanding of which there are three things considerable: first, what was done to the body, to prepare it for the Grave; secondly, how the Sepulchre was prepared to receive the body; thirdly, how the persons were fitted by the interring of our Saviour to fulfil the Prophecy.

As for fulfilling the custom of the Jews as to the preparation in respect of his body, we find the spices and the linen clothes. When there came a woman

Mark 14. 3, 2. having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard, very precious, and she brake the box and poured it on his head; Christ made this interpretation of that action,

Mark 16. 1. she is come before-hand to anoint my body to the burying. When Christ was risen, Luke 24. 1. Mary Magdalen and the other Mary brought the spices which they had prepared, that they might come and anoint him. Thus was there an interpreted and an intended unction of our Saviour, but really and actually he was interred with the spices which Nicodemus brought. The custom of wrapping in the clothes

John 11. 44.

we see in Lazarus rising from the grave; for he came forth bound hand and foot with grave-clothes, and his face was bound about with a napkin. In the

John 20. 6, 7. same manner when our Saviour was risen, Simon Peter went into the sepulchre and saw the linen clothes lie, and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it self. Thus according

to the custom of the Jews, was the body of Christ bound in * several linen clothes with an aromatical composition, and so prepared for the sepulchre.

* There are four words in the Gospel expressing the linen clothes

in which the dead were buried, Σινδών, ὀθόνια, κειά, & Cudzeion. The Σινδών is used by three Evangelists, as what was brought by Joseph. Καὶ ἀγρεύσας σινδῶνα, καὶ καθίλων αὐτὸν ἐνέθηκε τῇ σινδῶνι, Mark 15. 46. and S. Matthew and S. Luke, ἐνέβληξεν αὐτὸ σινδῶνι. Ὀθόνια is used by S. Luke and S. John, ἔλαβον ἐν τῷ σῶμα Ἰησοῦ, καὶ ἔδωκαν αὐτὸ ὀθονίοις. Now both these words shew that the clothes were linen. Σινδών, tunica linea, Gloss. Φασώνιον, λινέν τι, ἥτοι σινδῶνιον, Etym. So Ὀθόνια, λινὰ ἱμάτια, Hefych. This was according to the custom of the Jews, amongst whom there was a kind of Law, That they should use no other Grave-clothes. As therefore the Egyptians in Herodotus, λέσαντες ἅ νεκρὸν καθιλιώσασιν πᾶν αὐτὸ τὸ σῶμα σινδῶνι· Eusabius, so the Jews. But it is farther to be observed, that S. John saith ἔδωκαν αὐτὸ ὀθονίοις, they bound up his body with several clothes, which signifies it was done fasciatim. As Herodotus in another case, σμύμενοι τε ἰάμβοι τὰ ἔλκεα, καὶ σινδῶνι· Eusabius τελαμῶσι καθιλιώσασιν. Whereas then Julius Pollux observes, ἑστῆαι δὲ πρὸ καὶ τελαμῶν σινδονίτης. I conceive these ὀθόνια in S. John were such τελαμῶνες σινδονίται, linea fasciæ, or insticæ, called in the case of Lazarus κειά for as he is described δεδευῖσθαι κειά, so it is said of the body of Christ, ἔδωκαν αὐτὸ ὀθονίοις, they bound him with linen bandages or swathes. These are the ἐλάφια δίσμα, as the Grammarians interpret κειά tanquam kneia. So the ancient MS. in the Library at St. James's reads it, δεδευῖσθαι τὰς χεῖρας καὶ τοῦ πύθους κειά. And so Hefychius read it, when he made that interpretation. Kneiaus (leg. Kneiaus) ὁ θανάτια ἐν τεταλιγυῖα. What anciently κειά was, will appear by the words of Julius Pollux: Καὶ μὲν τόξα τῇ κλινῇ ἢ τῷ σκίματι δι' ὧν τεταμῶν, αἱ εἰσὶν τὰ τυλιγὰ, παρτία, ἀπάρτα, τόνι, κειά, the bands or cords by which the beds or couches are fastened, and upon which the bedding lies. In this sense it is to be taken in that known place of Aristophanes, in Aulis,

Σπάρτω γδ' ἂν θείμω ἐγὼ τῇ μὲ πόλῳ,
Οὐδ' ἂν χαμῶλω πάνυ κειάαν ἔχων.

Of which Eustathius Iliad. B. gives us this account: Φησὶ μὲν ἂν δεθῆναι ἀπάρτης, κειάαν ἔχων· ἥτοι μὴ δεθῆναι ἀπάρτην πλὴν γυμνῶν, ἐὰν δὲ κειάαν ἔχῃ κειάαν, ἥτοι δεσυδὸν κλίνην. Hence the Grammarians give that interpretation of κειά. as Etymologus, Κειά Cημαίνει τὸ χεῖριον τὸ δεσμεῖον τὴν κλίνην, viz. in reference to that place of Aristophanes, otherwise it hath no relation to a bed, but indifferently signifieth any fasciæ or band. So the Scholiast of Aristophanes; Ἡ δὲ κειά αἰσθῶν ἐν σχορίῳ παρκοῦς ἱμάντι· δισκοῖς τὰς κλίνας, not the cord of a bed, but a fasciæ or girdle like unto it. With such linen fasciæ, swathes, or bandages, was the body of Lazarus involved. Ἐκ ποδὸς ἄρξιν καθύπερθε Στεφάνου πλεκίστην ἔλον δίμας ἔχει κειάας, says Nonnus. And Juvenius,

Nec mora, connexis manibus pedibusq; repente
Procedit tumulo, vultum cui linea texit,
Et totum gracilis connectit fasciæ corpus.

Hence

As for the preparation of the sepulchre to receive the body of our Saviour, the custom of the *Jews* was also punctually observed in that. *Joseph of Arimathea* had prepared a place of burial for himself, and the manner of it is expressed. For *in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre wherein never man was laid, which Joseph had hewn out of the rock for his own tomb: there laid they Jesus, and rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre.* And so *Christ* was buried after the manner of the *Jews*, in a Vault made by the || excavation of the rocky firm part of the earth, and that Vault secured from external injury by a great massy stone rolled to the mouth or door thereof. After which stone was once rolled thither, the whole funeral action was performed, and the Sepulture completed: so that it was not * lawful by the custom of the *Jews* any more to open the sepulchre, or disturb the interred body.

It is therefore no wonder that in a garden so near Jerusalem there should be found ground which was petrosa. It is said therefore of Joseph, that *μνημεῖον ἐλατόμουν ἐν τῇ πέτρᾳ* of the sepulchre, that ἦν λαλαομημεῖον ἐκ πέτρας and λαζωτὸν, which signifie no less than that it was cut out of a rock: and Nonnus makes a particular Paraphrase to that purpose of λαζωτὸν, only *ἔλω ἐν γείτονι κήπῳ Τύμβῳ ἀδωμήτῳ βαθυσωφύῳ ἀπὸ πέτρας Γλυπτῆς ἑλῶ νεότμῳ*. Where βαθυσωφύῳ signifies the excavation of the rock, and γλυπτῆς the manner by which that excavation was performed by incision or excelsurion. But Salmastius hath invented another way, making the earth to be digged, and a sepulchre built by art of stone, within it. And this interpretation he endeavours to prove out of the text: first alledging that πέτρα signifies, in the writers of that Age, a stone, not a rock; and therefore λαλαομημεῖον ἐκ πέτρας, ἢ ἐκ λίθου, made of stone: otherwise the Articles would have been added ἐκ τῆς πέτρας, if he meant the rock which was there. But this is soon answered; for in S. Matthew the Article is expressly added, *ἐλατόμουν ἐν τῇ πέτρᾳ*. S. Matthew therefore understood it of that rock which was in the garden: and the rest without question understood the same. Again, he objects that λατομεῖν signifies not only lapides ex lapidina cadere, but also polie & quadrare ad ædificandum; and λαζωεῖν signifies the last only. Wherefore being it is said not only λαλαομημεῖον, which may be understood of building, but also λαζωτὸν, which can be understood of no other; therefore he concludes that it was a Vault built of square stones within the ground. But there is no necessity of such a precise sense of λαζωεῖν, which may be extended to any sense of λαοεῖν, (as Origen indifferently λαομημεῖον ἢ λαζωεῖν μνημεῖον ἐν πέτρᾳ) and that, when it speaks of a Jewish custom, must be taken in that sense which is most congruous to their custom, and as they used the word. Now they rendered the word צפון by λατομεῖν, as 1 King. 5. 15. *כֹּה צָפְנוּ* λατομεῖον ἐν ὄρει, *Isai. 51. 1. צָפְנוּ צוֹר אֶל יוֹכָד*, ἰμβλέπετε εἰς τὴν σπεῖραν πέτραν ἣν ἐλ. ἵμειοσθε, unde excili. As therefore Deut. 6. 11. *λάκων λαλαομημεῖνος ὡς ἐκ ὕψους λαλομημεῖνος*, so *Isai. 22. 16. Ὅτι ἐλατομήσας πικρὴν ἔτι μνημεῖον, ὃ ἔγχεσθε σικκὸν ἐν πέτρᾳ σκληρῇ* in both places λαλοεῖν is nothing else but צָפְנוּ, and therefore μνημεῖον λαλαομημεῖον in the language of the Jews is to be taken in the same sense with λαοεῖν λαλαομημεῖον, that is, digged or hewn out of the ground. This is well expressed by Orig. *Ἡ ταρὶ ἔχει τὴν καθαρῶτην διατὴν συμβολικῶς δηλουμένην ἐν τῇ ἀπειροσφύῳ αὐτῆς τὸ σῶμα ἐν μνημῶ καὶν ὕφιστα* ἐκ ἐκ λοζάδων λίθων οἰκοδομηέντων, καὶ τὴν ἔνωσιν αὐτοσκληρῶ ἔχοντι ἀλλ' ἐν μιᾷ καὶ δι' ὅλων ἡγεμενὴ πέτρᾳ λατομητῇ καὶ λαζωτῇ. l. 2. adv. Celsum. And this cutting the sepulchre out of the rock, rather than building of it in the earth, is very material in the opinion of S. Jerome, who makes this observation on Matth. 27. In monumento novo, quod exitum fuerat Petra, conditus est, ne si ex multis lapidibus ædificatum esset, sustolis tunuli fundamentis, ablatum turbo diceretur; and

|| Strabo observeth of Jerusalem, that the ground about it, *ἐν τῷ ἐξήκοντα σταδίῳ*, was *ὑπὸ πέτρῃς*, for nine miles rocky underneath.

folā. It is said
λαζδωδον, only
ουαυδης signifies
lpton. But Sal-
and this interpre-
et p r r e g s, if be
τομασεν εν τη
derstood the same.
ificandum; and
buildit, but also
in the ground.
gen indifferently
nse which is myst
15. חצב
unde excisi. Et
le μνησθων, &
ομνησθων in the
ground. In the
δσμων εν μνη-
δων ηνωμων
of it in the earth,
od excitem fue-
diceretur; and
gru-

gives this interpretation of the Prophet Isaiah, Quod autem in sepulchro ponendus esset, Prophetæ testimonium est, dicentis, *He shall inhabit in excisa spelunca petra jussissima*: statimque post duos versiculos sequitur, *Regem cum gloria videbitis*. Another use of the same supposition is made likewise by S. Ambrose: Domini corpus tanquam per Apostolorum doctrinam interitur in vacuum & in novam requiem lapidis excisi; scilicet in pectus duritiæ gentilis quodam doctrinæ opere excisum Christus interitur, rude scilicet ac novum, & nullo antea ingressu timoris Dei pervium. in *Matth. cap. 27*. *This was the Sepulchre prepared for the body: and when Joseph had laid it there, πρὸς αὐτὸν λίθον μέγαν πρὸς τὴν θύραν*, he rolled a great stone to the door, the last part of that solemnity. For this great stone was said to be rolled, by reason of the bigness, as being not portable, (from whence arose the Womens doubt, *Mark 16. 3*. Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre?) and that very properly, for it had its name from that rolling, being called constantly by the Jews, *נוֹלָל* or *נוֹלָלָה*, הַנוֹלָל אֵבֶן נְדוּלָה וְהַחֲבִירָה שְׂתִיתִּים בָּרָה פִּי הַקֶּבֶר מִלְמַעְדָּהּ כִּלְשָׁן נִנְדָּלוּ from *נוֹלָל* volvere. *אֲסוּר לִפְתּוֹחַ הַקֶּבֶר אַחֵר, אֲסוּר לִפְתּוֹחַ הַקֶּבֶר אַחֵר* Obadiah de Bartenora * This hath been observed by the Jews themselves, by the Jews themselves, אֲסוּר לִפְתּוֹחַ הַקֶּבֶר אַחֵר, אֲסוּר לִפְתּוֹחַ הַקֶּבֶר אַחֵר. It is prohibited for any man to open the sepulchre after it is shut with the rolled stone.

|| So they are styled in the Scriptures, Joseph βαλδρις, & Nicodemus ἀρχαῖος, and these two powers ruled all them at Jerusalem under the Romans. As appeared when Agrippa prevented a war by the sudden raising of a tax: Εἰς ὃ τὰς κοῦμας οἱ τῆ ἀρχαῖος καὶ οἱ βαλδριῶν μετέστηλιν πόρεος Συμμετρεῖν. Joseph. l. 2. c. 20. * *Mat. 53. 9.* * *Mark 15. 44.* 45.

Thirdly, two eminent persons did concur unto the burial of our Saviour, a || Ruler and a Counsellor, men of those orders among the Jews as were of greatest authority with the people; Joseph of Arimathea, rich and honourable, and yet inferior to Nicodemus, one of the great Council of the Sanhedrim: these two, though fearful while he lived to acknowledge him, are brought by the hand of Providence to inter him; that so the prediction might be fulfilled which was delivered by Isaiah to this purpose. The counsel of his enemies, the design of the Jews, ^a made his grave with the wicked, that he might be buried with them which were crucified with him: but because he hath done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth; because he was no way guilty of those crimes for which they justly suffered; that there might be a difference after their death, though there appeared little distinction in it; the counsel of his Father, the design of Heaven put him with the rich in his death, and caused a Counsellor and a Ruler of the Jews to bury him.

The necessity of this part of the Article appeareth, first, in that it gives a testimony and assurance of the truth both of Christ's Death preceding, and of his Resurrection following. Men are not put into the earth before they die: Pilate was very inquisitive whether our Saviour ^b had been any while dead, and was fully satisfied by the Centurion, before he would give the body to Joseph to be interred. Men cannot be said to rise who never died; nor can there be a true Resurrection, where there hath not been a true Dissolution. That therefore we might believe in Christ truly rose from the dead, we must be first assured that he died: and a greater assurance of his death than this we cannot have, that his body was delivered by his enemies from the Cross, and laid by his Disciples in the grave.

^c *Cor. 15. 2.*

^d *R. m. 6. 4.*

^e Quicquid gestum est in cruce Christi, in sepultura, in resurrectione terro die, in ascensione in caelum, & in sede ad dextram Patris, ita gestum est, ut his rebus, non mysticè tantum dictis, sed etiam gestis, configuraretur vita Christiana quæ hic geritur. Nam propter ejus crucem dictum est, Qui autem Jesu Christo sunt, carnem suam crucifixerunt cum vitiis & concupiscentiis; propter sepulturam, Consepulti enim sumus cum Christo per baptismum in mortem; propter Resurrectionem, Ut quemadmodum Christus resurrexit à mortuis per gloriam Patris, ita & nos in novitate vitæ ambulemus; propter ascensionem in caelum, sedemque ad dextram Patris, Si autem Resurrexistis cum Christo, quæ sunt vestra querite, ubi Christus est ad dextram Dei sedens. S. August. Enchirid. ad Laur. And this was before observed by Origen. l. 2. adv. Cell. Τα Συμβεβηκέναι ἀναγερεσθαι τὸν Ἰησοῦν ἐν ψυχῇ τῇ ἀλῆει καὶ τῇ ἰσχύϊ τῷ πᾶσι ἔχει θεώσαν ἡ ἀληθεία. Ἐκαστος γὰρ αὐτῷ καὶ σύμβολόν τινος ἔστι πρὸς τοὺς σωζόμενους ἐν ἡμεῖς ὡς ἡμεῖς ἐν τῇ ζωῇ αὐτοῦ ἀναγερεσθαι, καὶ τὸ πᾶσι δικαίον λέγον, Συμμετρεῖν τὸν θάνατον αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ, Εἰ γὰρ Σωπτεθάνοντες, καὶ Σωζήσονται. ἔτω καὶ ἡ τὰ αὐτὸν θάνατον ἐπὶ τοῖς Συμμετρεῖς τὸ θάνατον αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὸ Συμμετρεῖν αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ Σωπτεθάνοντες, καὶ τὸ Πᾶσι λέγον, ταῦτα, Συμμετρεῖν γὰρ αὐτῷ, καὶ τὸ Σωπτεθάνοντες αὐτῷ.

Secondly, a profession to believe that Christ was buried is necessary, to work within us a correspondence and similitude of his burial. For we are ^c buried with him in Baptism, even ^d buried with him by Baptism into death; that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. That || nothing may be done or suffered by our Saviour in these great transactions of the Mediator, but may be acted in our Souls, and represented in our spirits.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, it was most convenient that those pious solemnities should be performed on the body of our Saviour, that his Disciples might for ever learn what honour was fit to be received and given at their Funerals. When *Ananias* died, though for his sin, yet they *wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him*: when *Stephen* was stoned, *devout men carried him to his burial, and made great lamentation over him*: and when *Dorcas* died, they *washed her, and laid her in an upper Chamber*. So careful were the Primitive Christians of the rites of Burial. Before, and at our Saviour's time, the *Greeks* did much, the *Romans* more, use the burning of the bodies of the dead, and reserved only their ashes in their urns: but when Christianity began to encrease, the funeral flames did cease, and after a few || Emperours had received Baptism, there was not a body burnt in all the *Roman Empire*. For the first Christians wholly abstained from consuming of the dead bodies with fire, and followed the example of our Saviour's funeral? * making use of precious ointments for the dead, which they refused while they lived, and spending the spices of *Arabia* in their graves. The description of the persons which interred *Christ*, and the enumeration of their Vertues, and the everlasting commendation of her who brake the box of precious ointment for his burial, have been || thought sufficient grounds and encouragements for the careful and decent sepulture of Christians. For as natural reason will teach us to give some kind of respect unto the bodies of men, though dead, in reference * to the Souls which formerly inhabited them: so, and much more, the followers of our Saviour while they looked upon our bodies as living *temples of the Holy Ghost*, and bought by *Christ*, to be made one day like unto his glorious body, they thought them no ways to be || neglected after death, but carefully to be laid up in the wardrobe of the Grave, with such due respect as might become the honour of the dead, and comfort of the living. And the decent custom of the Primitive Christians was so acceptable unto God, that by his providence it proved most * effectual in the conversion of the Heathens, and propagation of the Gospel.

Afts 5. 6.

Afts 8. 2.

Afts 9. 37.

|| *This appeareth by Macrobius, who lived in the time of Theodosius junior, and testifieth thus much; Licet urandi corpora defunctorum usus nostro seculo nullus sit, lectio tamen docet, eo tempore quo igni dari honor mortuis habebatur, &c. l. 7. c. 7. That this was done by the Christians is certain, because the Heathens anciently did object it to the Christians, Inde videlicet & execrantur rogos, & damnant ignium sepultura.*

ras. And the answer given to this objection was, Nec, ut creditis, ullum damnum sepulturae timemus, sed veterem & meliorem consuetudinem humandi frequentamus. *Minut. Felix in Octavio. And Tertull.* Ex hoc etiam in opinione querundam est; propterea nec ignibus funerandum aiunt, parentes superfluo animæ. Alia est autem ratio pietatis istius, non reliquiis animæ adulatrix, sed crudelitatis etiam corporis nomine averfatrix, quod & ipsum homo non utique mereatur pœnali exitu impendi. *De animæ. 51.* At ego magis ridebo vulgus tunc quoque, cum ipsos defunctos atrocissime exuerit, quos postmodum gulosissime nutrit, isdem ignibus & promerens & offendens. O pietatem de crudelitate ludentem! sacrificet, an insultet, cum crematis cremat? *Idem de Resur. Carn. c. 1.* * The Heathens objected it to the Primitive Christians; Reveratis unguenta funeribus. *Minutius Felix.* And Tertullian confessed it, Thura plane non emimus. Si Arabiæ queruntur, sciunt Sabæi plurius & cariores suas merces Christianis sepeliendis protligari, quam Diis fumigandis. *Apol. c. 42.* And speaking of spices, lib. de Idololat. Etiam hominibus pigmenta medicinalia, nobis quoque insuper ad solatia sepulturae usui sunt, *So Clem. Alex. Μυεῖζονται οἱ γὰρ νεκροί.* And again, *Αἱ γὰρ ὑπάρμετροι χρίσεις ἡς μύρων κηδείας, ἢ συμβίωστος ἀπὸ πνέουσι.* *Pedag. l. 2. c. 8.* || Ipse Dominus die tertio resurrecturus religioſe mulieris bonum opus prædicat, prædicandumque commendat, quod unguentum pretiosum super membra ejus effuderit, atque hoc ad eum sepeliendum fecerit. Et laudabiliter commemorantur in Evangelio, qui corpus ejus de cruce acceptum diligenter atque honorifice tegendum sepeliendumque curarunt. Verum istæ autoritates non hoc admonent, quod insit ullus cadaveribus sensus: sed ad Dei providentiam, cui placent etiam talia pietatis officia, corpora quoque mortuorum pertinere significant, propter fidem resurrectionis astruendam. *S. August de Civitate Dei, l. 1. c. 13.* * Οὐδὲν ἢ λυπεῖ ἡμᾶς εἰς τὸ ἀπὸ Ἑρακλῆτι λεγόμενον, ὃ ἄρ Κέλσος παρέφηκεν, ὅτι νέκυες εἰσι κοπέλων ἐκκλησίῳτες, καὶ τοιγὰ ἐποιοῦσι ἂν καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς, ὅτι τὰ μὲν κόπεια ἐκκλησίᾳ εἶναι, οἱ δ' ἐξ ἀνθρώπων νέκυες, διὰ τὴν ἐνοικήσαν ψυχὴν, καὶ μάλιστα ἐὰν ἢ ἀσπιοτέρᾳ, ἐκ ἐκκλησίᾳ. Καθὰ γὰρ τοῦ ἀσπιοτέρους ἡ νόμον, καὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίᾳς ὡς πρὸς τὰ τοιαῦτα τιμῆς ταχῆς ἀξίεται. ἵνα μὴ ὑβρίζωμεν τῇ δυνάμει τὴν ἐνοικήσαν ψυχὴν ἀπὸ ῥήτων, καὶ τὸ ἐξελθὼν αὐτῇ τὸ σῶμα, ὡς καὶ τὰ ἡς κτιῶν σώματα. *Orig. adv. Celsum. l. 5. Odyss. d'.*

Νεμεσώμαι γε μὲν εἶδεν
Κλαίειν δὲ καὶ θάνησι βροτῶν καὶ πότμον ὀπίσπῃ.
Τὸ τὸ νῦν καὶ γέρας εἶον εἰς οὐρανὸν βροτῶν
Κήρυξ δὲ καὶ κόμην, βαλεῖν τ' ἀπὸ δάκρυ παρηνῶν.

|| Nec ideo tamen contemnenda & abjicienda sunt corpora defunctorum, maximèque justorum atque fidelium, quibus tantum organis & vasis ad omnia bona opera Sanctus usus est Spiritus. Si enim paterna vestis & annulus, ac si quid hujusmodi tanto charius est posteris, quanto erga parentes major exsistit affectus; nullo modo ipsa spernenda sunt corpora, quæ utiq; multo familiarius atq; conjunctius quam qualibet indumenta gestamus. Hæc enim non ad ornamentum vel adjutorium quod

Quod adhibetur extrinsecus, sed ad ipsam naturam hominis, pertinent. *S. Aug. de Civit. Dei*, l. 1. c. 13. Ταῦτα τελέσαι ὁ ἱερέτης, ἀποτίθηεν ἐν οἴκῳ τιμὴν τὸ σῶμα μὴ ἑτέρων, ὁμοίων ἱερῶν σωμάτων. Εἰ γὰρ ἐν ψυχῇ καὶ σώματι τιμὴ θεοφιλοῦ ζωῆς ὁ κοιμηθεὶς ἔβίω, τίμιον ἔσται καὶ τῆς ὁσίας ψυχῆς καὶ τὸ σωθῆναι αὐτῇ σῶμα καὶ τὸ ἱερὸς ἰδρῶται, ἐνθεν ἡ θεία δικαιοσύνη καὶ τὸ σφέτερον (σώμα) αὐτῇ δορεῖται τὰς ἀμοιβαίας λήξεις, ὡς ἀμεπορῶν καὶ ζυμμεῖσθαι τῆς ὁσίας ἢ τῆς ἐναντίας ζωῆς. *Dionys. Eccl. Hierarch. c. 7.* Propter patrem militiam Christi deseram, cui sepulturam Christi causâ non debeo, quam etiam omnibus ejus causâ debeo? *S. Hieron. Epist. ad Heliodorum.* * This was observed by Julian the Apostate, who, writing to an Idolatrous High-Priest, puts him in mind of those things by which he thought the Christians gained upon the world, and recommends them to the practice of the Heathen Priests. Of these he reckons three; the gravity of their carriage, their kindness to strangers, and their care for the Burial of the dead. Τί ἔν ἡμῖς οἰόμεθα ταῦτα ἀρετῶν εἶναι ἀποκλίπομεν ὁ μάλιστα τὴν ἀρετὴν (so he calls Christianity, because they rejected all the Heathen Gods) ὡσηύξουσιν, ἢ καὶ τοῦ ξένου φιλοφροσύνη, καὶ καὶ τὰς ταράς αὐτῶν νεκρῶν περικύβει, καὶ ἡ πεπλάσμενη (κενότης) καὶ ἡ εἰς ὧν ἔλασεν οἶμαι χεῖνα παρ' ἡμῶν ἀληθῶς ἐπιδιδόμεθα. *Epist. 49. ad Arsacium.* And as Julian observed the care of Burial as a great encouragement to the Heathens to turn Christians, so Gregory Nazianzen did observe the same to the great dishonour of the Apostate, comparing his Funeral with his Predecessors. Ὁ μὲν γὰρ (that is Constantius) περὶ πέμπεται πανδημοῖς ἐνσημαίαις τε καὶ πομπαῖς, καὶ τέτοις ὅ τοῖς ἡμετέροις σιμνοῖς ὁ δαῖς παννύχοις καὶ δαδύχαις, αἷς χειρὶν τοῖς μετὰ μείλασιν εὐσεβῇ νομίζομεν, καὶ γίνεσθαι πανήγυρις καὶ παύσης ἡ ἐκκομιδὴ τῶν σωμάτων. But as for Julian, μῖμος γλοῖαν ἤγον αὐτὸν, καὶ τοῖς ἀπὸ τῆς Ἀλεξάνδρου αἰχλὸν ἐπομπάδετο..... ὡς ἡ Ταρσῶν αὐτὸν ἐποδύχεται πόλις..... ἐνθα ὅ οἱ τέμνεται ἄτιμον, καὶ τὰρ ἐξάριστος καὶ ἀπόπτυστος, καὶ εἰς δεατὸς ἐυσεβῶν ὄψισι. *Stelicut. 2.*

Thus I believe the only-begotten and eternal Son of God, for the confirmation of the truth of his death already past, and the verity of his resurrection from the dead suddenly to follow, had his body, according to the custom of the Jews, prepared for a funeral, bound up with linen clothes, and laid in spices; and after that accustomed preparation, deposited in a Sepulchre hewn out of a rock, in which never man was laid before, and by rolling of a stone unto the door thereof, entombed there. Thus I believe that *Christ was buried.*

ARTICLE V.

**He descended into Hell: the third day he rose again
from the dead.**

THE former part of this Article, of the *Descent into Hell*, hath not been so ^a anciently in the Creed, or so universally, as the rest. The first place we find it used in was the Church of *Aquileia*; and the time we are sure it was used in the Creed of that Church was less than 400 years after Christ. After that it came into the ^b Roman Creed, and ^c others, and hath been acknowledged as a part of the *Apostles Creed* ever since.

^a First, it is to be observed, that the Descent into Hell was not in the ancient Creeds or Rules of Faith. Some tell us that it

was not in the Confession of Ignatius, Epist. ad Magnes. But indeed there is no Confession of Faith in that Epistle; for what is read there was thrust in out of Clemens his Constitutions. In like manner, in vain is it objected that it was omitted by Polycarp, Clemens Romanus, and Justin Martyr, because they have not pretended any Rule of Faith or Creed of their times. But that which is material in this Cause, it is not to be found in the Rules of Faith delivered by Irenæus, lib. 1. cap. 2. by Origen. lib. *ἀπὸ ἀρχῶν*, in Proœm. or by Tertullian, adv. Praxeam, cap. 2. de Virg. veland. cap. 1. de Præscript. adv. Hæret. cap. 13. It is not expressed in those Creeds which were made by the Councils as larger Explications of the Apostles Creed: not in the Nicene or Constantinopolitane, not in that of Ephesus, or Chalcedon; not in those Confessions made at Sardica, Antioch, Seleucia, Sirmium, &c. It is not mentioned in several Confessions of Faith delivered by particular persons: not in that of Eusebius Cæsariensis, presented to the Council of Nice, Theodor. l. 1. c. 2. not in that of Marcellus Bishop of Ancyra, delivered to Pope Julius, Epiphani. Har. 72. not in that of Arius and Euzoius, presented to Constantine, Socras. l. 1. c. 19. not in that of Acacius Bishop of Caserea, delivered into the Synod of Seleucia, Socras. l. 2. c. 40. not in that of Eustathius, Theophilus and Silvanus, sent to Liberius, Socras. l. 4. c. 12. There is no mention of it in the Creed of S. Basil, Tract. de Fide in Asceticis; in the Creed of Epiphanius, in Ancorato, c. 120. Gelasius, Damasus, Macarius, &c. It is not in the Creed expounded by S. Cyril, (though some have produced that Creed to prove it:) it is not in the Creed expounded by S. Augustine de Fide & Symbolo; not in that De Symbolo ad Catechumenos, attributed to S. Augustine; not in that which is expounded by Maximus Taurinensis, nor that so often interpreted by Petrus Chr.ologus, nor in that of the Church of Antioch, delivered by Cassianus, de Incarn. l. 6. neither is it to be seen in the MSS. Creeds set forth by the learned Archbishop of Armagh. Indeed it is affirmed by Rufinus, that in his time it was neither in the Roman nor the Oriental Creeds: Sciendum sane est, quod in Ecclesiæ Romanæ Symbolo non habetur additum, descendit ad inferna; sed neq; in Orientis Ecclesiæ habetur hic sermo. Russ. in Exposit. Symboli. It is certain therefore (nor can we disprove it by any acknowledged Evidence of Antiquity) that the Article of the Descent into Hell was not in the Roman or any of the Oriental Creeds. ^b That the Descent into Hell came afterwards into the Roman Creed appeareth, not only because we find it there of late, but because we find it often in the Latin Church many Ages since. As in that produced by Etherius against Elipandus in the year 785, in the 113 S. rm. de Tempore, falsely ascribed to S. Augustine, where it is attributed to S. Thomas the Apostle: In the Exposition of the Creed falsely ascribed to S. Chrysostome. ^c As in the Creed attributed to Athanasius, which though we cannot say was his, yet we know was extant about the year 600. by the Epistle of Ildorns Hispanensis ad Claudium Ducem. It was also inserted into the Creed of the Council of Ariminum, Soc. l. 2. c. 37. and of the fourth Council of Toledo, held in the year 633, and of the sixteenth Council of the same Toledo, held in the year 693.

Indeed the *Descent into Hell* hath ^d always been accepted, but with a various Exposition; and the Church of England at the Reformation as it received the three Creeds, in two of which this Article is contained, so did it also make this one of the Articles of Religion, to which all who are admitted to any Benefice, or received into Holy Orders are obliged to subscribe. And at the first reception it was propounded with a certain Explication, and thus delivered in the fourth year of King Edward the Sixth, with reference to an express place of Scripture interpreted of this Descent: ^e *That the body of Christ lay in the Grave until his Resurrection; but his spirit, which he gave up was with the spirits which were detained in Prison, or in Hell, and preached to them, as the place in S. Peter testifieth.* So likewise after the same manner in the Creed set forth in Metre after the manner of a Psalm, and still remaining at the end of the Psalms, the same Exposition is delivered in this Staff;

*And so he died in the flesh,
But quickned in the spirit:
His body then was buried,
As is our use and right.*

five in inferno detinebantur, fuit, illisque predicavit, in resurrexit Petri locus, &c. Articuli ann. 1552. which place was also made use of in the Exposition of the Creed contained in the Catechism set forth by the Authority of King Edward, in the seventh year of his Reign.

^d Quis nisi infidelis negaverit fuisse apud inferos Christum? S. Aug. Epist. 99.

^e 1 Pet. 3. 19. Nam corpus usq; ad Resurrectionem in sepulchro jacuit; Spiritus ab illo emissus cum spiritibus qui in Carceribus

*His spirit did after this descend
Into the lower parts,
Of them that long in darkness were
The true light of their hearts.*

Article 3.
1562.

But in the *Synod* ten years after, in the days of Queen Elizabeth, the Articles, which continue still in force, deliver the same Descent, but without any the least explication or reference to any particular place of Scripture, in these words; *As Christ died for us and was buried, so also it is to be believed that he went down into Hell.* Wherefore being our Church hath not now imposed that Interpretation of *S. Peter's* words, which before it intimated; being it hath not delivered that as the only place of Scripture to found the *Descent into Hell* upon; being it hath alledged no other place to ground it, and delivered no other Explication to expound it: we may with the greater liberty pass on to find out the true meaning of this Article, and to give our particular judgment in it, so far as a matter of so much obscurity and variety will permit.

* Descendit in Inferna, or ad Inferna, is the general writing in the ancient MSS. as the learned Archbishop testifieth of

those in the *Benedictine* and *Cottonian Libraries*; to which I may add those in the Library at Westminster: we see the same likewise in that of *Elipandus*, Descendit ad inferna. which words are forecited in the Creed delivered in the Catechism set forth by the Authority of *Edw. VI. An. Dom. 1553.* * So the ancient MS. in *Beaune Colledge Library*, Κατελθόντα εἰς τὰ κατώτατα * and the Confession made at *Sirmium*, εἰς τὰ κατωθόνια κατελθόντα. Since that it is Descendit ad inferos, and κατελθόντα εἰς ἄδου, or Descendit ad infernum, as *Venantius Fortunatus*. For τὰ κατώτατα is a fit interpretation, if we take Inferna according to the vulgar Etymology; as *S. Augustine*, Inferi, eo quod infra sint, Latine appellantur, *De Gen. ad lit. l. 12. c. 34.* or as *Nonius Marcellus*, Inferum ab imo dictum, unde inferi, quibus inferius nihil. Again, inferna may well be translated ἄδης, if it be taken according to the true Origination, which is from the Greek ἔνεστι, with the Æolick digamma, from which Dialect most of the Latine Language came, * *ErFegesi*, Inferi. Now ἔνεστι, according to the Greek composition, is nothing else but ὑποχθόνιος. Etym. * *ἔνεστι*, of νεσσι, ἄδω τ' ἐν τῇ ἔρα κῆρυ, ὁ δῆν, ἐν τῇ γῇ * and *Suid.* * *ἔνεστι*, νεσσις, ἄδω τ' ἐν τῇ ἔρα κῆρυ. * *ἔρα* is anciently the earth, from whence ἔραζε, χαμαίζε, to the earth: ἔνεστι then are in the earth, as they supposed the Manes or Spirits of the dead to be; from whence *Homer. Iliad. o.* * *Ἄϊδης ἐνέεστον ἀνάντων*, of *Pluto*; and *Hesiod. Τέως Ἄϊδης ἐνέεστοι καλεσθιμάνων ἀνάνων* * and in imitation of them *Æschylus* in *Perſis*, γῆτε ἔ' *Ἐρμῆ, βασιλεῦ τ' ἐνέραν*, ἡέμ' *ἄτ' ἐνεσθεν* *Ἰουχάνεις* *ἄτ'.* * *ἔνεστι* are those which *Æschylus* elsewhere calls τῶν γῆς νέσθεν, & τῶν γῆς ἐνεσθεν. And as ἔνεστι, the Souls of the dead in the earth, so are Inferi in the first acception, that is, Manes. *Pomponius Mela*, *Augila* manes tantum Deos putant; which *Pliny* delivers thus, *Augila* inferos tantum colunt; and *Solinus*, *Augila* vero solos colunt inferos. Inferi were then first ἔνεστι, the Souls of men in the earth: and as Manes is not only that for the Souls below, but also for the place, as in the Poet;

————— Manesque profundi, and,
Hæc manes veniat mihi fama sub imos;

so Inferi is most frequently used for the place under ground where the Souls departed are: and the inferna must then be those Regions in which they take up their habitations. And so Descendit ad inferna, κατελθόντα εἰς ἄδου, and Descendit ad Inferos, are the same.

* *Acts* 2. 27. * *Ephes.* 4. 9.

Secondly, I observe that in the *Aquileian Creed*, where this Article was first expressed, there was no mention of *Christ's* Burial; but the words of their Confession ran thus, * *crucified under Pontius Pilate, he descended in inferna.* From whence there is no question but the Observation of *Ruffinus*, who first

* So are the words cited in *Ruffinus*, Crucifixus sub Pon-

tio Pilato, descendit in inferna. And his Observation upon them is this; Sciendum sane est, quod in Ecclesia Romanæ Symbolo non habetur additum, Descendit ad inferna; sed neque in Orientis Ecclesiis habetur hic sermo: vis tamen verbi eadem videtur esse in eo quod sepultus est. Expos. Symb. The same may also be observed in the *Athanasian Creed*, which has the Descent, but not the Sepulture; Who suffered for our Salvation, descended into Hell, rose again the third day from the dead. Nor is this only observable in these two, but also in the Creed made at *Sirmium*, and produced at *Ariminum*, in which the words run thus, ταυτα θεία, ἔ' παθόντα, ἔ' ἀπ' ὧν ἐβίβη, ἔ' εἰς τὰ κατωθόνια κατελθόντα. Where though the Descent be expressed, and the Burial be

be not mentioned; it is most certain, those men which made it (Hereticks indeed, but not in this) did not understand his Burial by that Descent: and that appears by addition of the following words, εἰς τὰ κατὰ ἄβυσσον καὶ ἐλθόντα, καὶ τὰ ἐκείνη οἰκονομήσαντα; ὃν πυλῶντι ἄδης ἰδόντες ἐρεῖσαν. For he did not dispose and order things below by his Body in the Grave: nor could the Keepers of the Gates of Hell be affrighted with any sight of his Corps lying in the Sepulchre.

expounded it, was most true, that though the *Roman* and *Oriental Creeds* had not their words, yet they had the sense of them in the word *buried*. It appear-eth therefore that the first intention of putting these words in the *Creed* was only to express the Burial of our Saviour, or the descent of his Body into the Grave. But although they were first put in the *Aquileian Creed*, to signify the Burial of *Christ*, and those which had only the Burial in their *Creed* did confess as much as those which without the Burial did express the *Descent*; yet since the *Roman Creed* hath added the *Descent* unto the *Burial*, and expressed that Descent by words signifying more properly *Hell*, it cannot be imagined that the *Creed* as now it stands, should signify only the Burial of *Christ* by his Descent into *Hell*. But rather, being the ancient Church did certainly believe that *Christ* did some other way descend beside his Burial; being though he interpreted those words of the Burial only, yet in the relation of what was done at our Saviour's Death, he makes mention of his Descent into *Hell*, beside, and * distinct from his Sepulture; being those who in after-Ages added it to the Burial, did actually believe that the Soul of *Christ* descended: it followeth that, for the Exposition of the *Creed*, it is most necessary to declare in what that Descent consisteth.

* For having produced many places of Scripture to prove the Circumstances of our Saviour's death, and

having cited those particularly which did bring out his Burial, he passes farther to his Descent, in these words; Sed & quod in infernum descendit, evidenter pronuntiatur in Platino, ubi dicit, Et in pulverem mortis deduxisti me; & iterum, Quae utilitas in sanguine meo dum descendo in corruptionem? & iterum, Descendisti in limum profundi, & non est substantia. Sed & Mattheus dicit, Tu es qui venturus es, an alium expectamus? Unde & Petrus dixit, Quia Christus mortificatus carne, vivificatus autem spiritu. In ipso, ait, & eis qui in carcere inclusi erant in diebus Noe: In quo etiam quid operis egerit in inferno declaratur. Sed & ipse Dominus per Prophetam dicit tanquam de futuro, Quia non derelinquis animam meam in inferno, nec dabis sanctum tuum videre corruptionem: quod rursus propheticè nihilominus ostendit impletum, cum dicit, Domine, eduxisti ab inferno animam meam, salvasti me a descendantibus in lacum. Hence it appeareth, that though Rufinus thought that the sense of descendit ad inferna was expressed in sepultus est; yet he did distinguish the Doctrine of *Christ's* Descent into *Hell* from that of his Burial.

Thirdly, I observe again, that whatsoever is delivered in the *Creed*, we therefore believe because it is contained in the Scriptures, and consequently must so believe it as it is contained there; whence all this Exposition of the whole is nothing else but an illustration and proof of every particular part of the *Creed* by such Scriptures as deliver the same, according to the true interpretation of them and the general consent of the Church of God. Now these words as they lie in the *Creed*, *He descended into Hell*, are no-where formally and expressly delivered in the Scriptures; nor can we find any one place in which the Holy Ghost hath said in express and plain terms that *Christ* as he died and was buried, so he descended into *Hell*. Wherefore being these words of the *Creed* are not formally expressed in the Scripture, our inquiry must be in what Scriptures they are contained virtually; that is, where the Holy Ghost doth deliver the same Doctrine, in what words soever, which is contained, and to be understood in this expression, *He descended into Hell*:

Now several places of Scripture have been produced by the Ancients as delivering this truth, of which some without question prove it not: but three there are which have been always thought of greatest validity to confirm this Article. First, that of *S. Paul* to the *Ephesians* seems to come very near the words themselves, and to express the same almost in || terms: * *Now*

|| For the first expression which we find in Rufinus, Descen-

dit in inferna, comes most near to this quotation; especially if we take the ancient Greek Translation of it: κατελθόντα εἰς τὰ κατώτατα. For if we consider that κατώτατα may well have the signification of the Superlative, especially being the LXX. hath so translated Psalm 63.9. ἐπελδοῦναι εἰς τὰ κατώτατα τῷ γῆς. and Psalm 139. 15. καὶ ἡ κοίτη μου ἐν τοῖς κατώτατοις τῷ γῆς; what can be nearer than these two, κατελθόντα εἰς τὰ κατώτατα, and κατεβὰς εἰς τὰ κατώτατα; or these two, κατελθόντα εἰς τὰ κατὰ ἄβυσσον, and κατεβὰς εἰς τὰ κατώτερα, μέρη τῷ γῆς; * Eph. 4. 9.

* This appeareth by their quotation of this place to prove, or express, the Descent into Hell; as Irenæus does l. 5. c. 26. Origen. Hom. 35. in Matt. Athanasius. Epist. ad Epistleum, Hilarius, in Psal. 67. S. Jerome upon the place, Inferiora autem terræ infernus accipitur, ad quem Dominus noster Salvatorq; descendit. So also the Commentary attributed to S. Ambrose, and S. Hilary, Si itaque hæc omnia Christus unus est, neque alius est Christus mortuus, alius sepultus, aut alius descendens ad inferna, & alius ascendens

that he ascended, what is it but that he descended first into the lower parts of the earth? This many of the ancient * Fathers understood of the Descent into Hell, as placed in the lowest parts of the earth: and this exposition must be confessed so probable, that there can be no Argument to disprove it. Those lower parts of the earth may signifie Hell, and Christ's descending thither may be, that his Soul went to that place when his Body was carried to the Grave. But that it was actually so, or that the Apostle intended so much in those words, the place it self will not manifest. For we cannot be assured that the descent of Christ, which S. Paul speaks of, was performed after his death; or if it were, we cannot be assured that the lower parts of the earth did signifie Hell, or the place where the Souls of men were tormented after the separation from their Bodies. For as it is written, ^a No man ascendeth up to heaven, but he that descended from heaven; so this may signifie so much, and no more, In that he ascended, what is it but that he descended first? And for the lower parts of the earth, they may possibly signifie no more than the place beneath: as when our Saviour said, ^b Ye are from beneath, I am from above; ye are of this world, I am not of this world: or as God spake by the Prophet, I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath. Nay, they may well refer to his Incarnation, according to that of David, ^c My substance was not hid from thee when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lower parts of the earth; or to his Burial, according to that of the Prophet, ^d Those that seek my soul to destroy it, shall go into the lower parts of the earth: and these two References have a great similitude according to that of Job, ^e Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither.

in cœlos, secundum illud Apostoli, Ascendit autem quid est, &c. Di Trinit. l. 10. ^a John 3. 13. ^b John 8. 23. ^c Psalm 139. 15. ^d Psal. 63. 9. ^e Job 1. 21.

The next place of Scripture brought to confirm the Descent is not so near in words, but thought to signifie the end of that Descent, and that part of his Humanity by which he descended. For Christ, saith S. Peter, was put to death in the flesh, and quickned by the spirit, by which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison; where the Spirit seems to be the Soul of Christ; and the spirits in prison, the Souls of them that were in Hell, or in some place at least separated from the joys of Heaven: whither because we never read our Saviour went at any other time, we may conceive he went in spirit then when his Soul departed from his body on the Cross. This did our Church first deliver as the proof and illustration of the Descent, and the ancient ^f Fathers did apply the same in the like manner to the proof of this Article. But yet those words of S. Peter have no such power of probation; except we were certain that the spirit there spoken of were the Soul of Christ, and that the time intended for that preaching were after his death, and before his resurrection. Whereas if it were so interpreted, the difficulties are so many, that they ^g staggered S. Augustine, and caused him at last to think that these words of S. Peter belonged not unto the doctrine of Christ's descending into Hell. But indeed the spirit by which he is said to preach was not the Soul of Christ, but that Spirit by which he was quickned; as appeareth by the coherence of the words, being

^f As Hermes, l. 3. Simil. 9. Irenæus, l. 4. c. 45. Clem. Alex. c. 1. Strom. l. 5. Orig. Hom. 35 in Matt. S. Athanas. l. de Incarn. & Epist. ad Epistleum, Epist. Hæretic. 7. S. Cyril. de recta fide ad Theodosium, l. 12. in Joann. Orat. Palch. & alibi

Seipius. Author. Comment. Ambros. ascript. ad Rom. 10. Nuss. in Explic. Symb. ^g For in his Answer to Enodius, Epist. 99. he thus begins; Quæstio quam mihi proposuisti ex Epistola Apostoli Petri solet eos, ut te latere non arbitror, vehementissimè commovere, quomodo illa verba accipienda sint tanquam de inferis dicta. Replico ergo tibi eandem quæstionem, ut, si ve ipse potueris si ve aliquem qui possit inveneris, auferas de illa atque finias dubitationem meam. Then setting down in order all the difficulties which occurred at that time in that Exposition of the Descent into Hell, he concludes with an Exposition of another nature: Considera tamen, ne forte totum illud quod de conclusis in carcere spiritibus qui in diebus Noe non crediderant Petrus Apostolus dicit, omnino ad intercos non pertineat, sed ad illa potius tempora quorum formam ad hæc tempora transtulit.

put to death in the flesh, but quickned by the spirit, by which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison. Now that Spirit by which Christ was quickned is ^f that by which he was raised from the dead, that is the power of his Divinity; as S. Paul expresth it, ^g *Though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God:* in respect of which he preached to those which were disobedient in the days of Noah, as we have ^h already shewn.

^f Quid est enim quod vivificatus est spiritu, nisi quod eadem caro quâ solâ fuerat

mortificatus, vivificante spiritu resurrexit? Nam quod fuerat animâ mortificatus Jesus, hoc est, eo spiritu qui hominis est, quis audeat dicere? cum mors animâ non sit nisi peccatum, à quo ille omnino immunis fuit cum pro nobis carne mortificaretur. S. Aug. Epist. 99. Et alibi. Certe anima Christi non solum immortalis secundum ceterarum naturam, sed etiam nullo mortificata peccatum vel damnatione punire est; quibus duabus causis mors animâ intelligi potest, & ideo non secundum ipsam dici potuit Christus *vivificatus spiritu*. In ea re quippe vivificatus est in qua fuerat mortificatus. Ergo de carne dictum est: ipsa enim revixit anima redeunte, quia ipsa erat mortua anima recedente. Mortificatus ergo carne dictus est, quia secundum solam carnem mortuus est: *vivificatus autem spiritu*, quia illo spiritu operante in quo ad quos (leg. eos) veniebat & prædicabat, etiam ipsa caro vivificata surrexit, in qua modo ad homines venit. ^g 2 Cor. 13. ^h Pag. 112.

The third, but principal, Text is that of David, applied by S. Peter. For David speaketh concerning him, *I foresaw the Lord always before my face; for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved. Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope. Because thou wilt not leave my Soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.* Thus the Apostle repeated the words of the Psalmist, and then applied them: *He being a Prophet, and seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.* Now from this place the Article is clearly and infallibly deduced thus: If the Soul of Christ were not left in Hell at his Resurrection, then his Soul was in Hell before his Resurrection: But it was not there before his Death; therefore upon or after his Death, and before his Resurrection, the Soul of Christ descended into Hell; and consequently the Creed doth truly deliver that Christ, being crucified, was dead, buried, and descended into Hell. For as his flesh did not see corruption by vertue of that promise and propheticall expression, and yet it was in the Grave, the place of corruption, where it rested in hope until his Resurrection: so his Soul, which was not left in Hell, by vertue of the like Promise or Prediction, was in that Hell, where it was not left, until the time that it was to be united to the Body for the performing of the Resurrection. We must therefore confesse from hence that the Soul of Christ was in Hell; and no Christian can deny it, saith S. Augustine, ⁱ it is so clearly delivered in this Prophecy of the Psalmist and Application of the Apostle.

ⁱ Dominum quidem carne mortificatum venisse in inferos

fernum satis constat. Neque enim contradici potest vel prophetiæ quæ dixit, *Quoniam non derelinques animam meam in Inferno,* (quod ne aliter quisquam sapere auderet, in Actibus Apostolorum idem Petrus exponit) vel ejusdem Petri illis verbis quibus cum asserit soluisse Inferni dolores, in quibus impossibile erat eum teneri. Quis ergo nisi infidelis negaverit fuisse apud inferos Christum? Epist. 99.

The only Question then remains, not of the truth of the Proposition, but the sense and meaning of it. It is most certain that *Christ descended into Hell*, and as infallibly true as any other Article of the Creed: but what that Hell was, and how he descended thither, being once questioned, is not easily determined. Different Opinions there have been of old, and of late more different still, which I shall here examine after that manner which our subject will admit. Our present design is an Exposition of the Creed as now it stands, and our endeavour is to expound it according to the Scriptures in which it is contained. I must therefore look for such an Explication as may consist with the other parts of the Creed and may withal be conformable unto that Scripture upon which the truth of the Article doth rely: And consequently, whatsoever Interpretation is either not true in it self, or not consistent with the body of the Creed, or not conformable to the Doctrine of the

Apostle

Apostle in this particular, the Expositor of that Creed by the Doctrine of the Apostle must reject.

First then, we shall consider the Opinion of *Durandus*, who, as often, so in this, is singular. He supposeth this Descent to belong *unto the Soul, and the name of *Hell* to signify the place where the Souls of dead men were in custody: but he maketh a Metaphor in the word *descended*, as not signifying any local motion, nor inferring any real presence of the Soul of Christ in the place where the Souls of dead men were; but only including a virtual motion, and inferring an efficacious presence, by which Descent the effects of the Death of Christ were wrought upon the Souls in Hell: and because the Merits of Christ's Death did principally depend upon the act of his Soul, therefore the effect of his Death is attributed to his Soul as the principal Agent; and consequently Christ is truly said at the instant of his Death to *descend into Hell*, because his Death was immediately efficacious upon the Souls detained there. This is the Opinion of *Durandus*, so far as it is distinct from others.

* Cum Articulus sit, Christum ad Inferos descendisse, & non possibile intelligi ratione Divinitatis, secundum quoniam est ubique; nec ratione corporis secundum quod fuit in sepulchro; restat quod intelligatur ratione animæ: quo supposito, videndum est qualiter anima

Christi descendit ad Infernum. *Durand. lib. 3. dist. 22. q. 3.*

But although a virtual influence of the Death of Christ may be well admitted in reference to the Souls of the dead, yet this Opinion cannot be accepted as the Exposition of this Article; being neither the Creed can be thought to speak a language of so great Scholastick subtilty, nor the place of *David* expounded by *S. Peter*, can possibly admit any such Explication. For what can be the sense of those words, *thou shalt not leave my soul in hell*, if his being in Hell was only virtually acting there? If the efficacy of his Death were his Descent, then is he descended still, because the effect of his Death still remaineth. The Opinion therefore of *Durandus*, making the Descent into Hell to be nothing but the efficacy of the Death of Christ upon the Souls detained there, is to be rejected, as not expositive of the Creed's confession, nor consistent with the Scripture's expression.

¶ Calvin. Instit. l. 2. c. 16. Sect. 10. Si Christus ad inferos descendisse dicitur, nihil mirum est, cum eam mortem pertulerit, quæ sceleribus ad irato Deo infligitur: ubi et expresse testatur, innotuit poenæ, cum diros in anima cruciatus dammati ac perditioni hominis pertulerit.

The next Opinion, later than that of *Durandus*, is, that the ¶ Descent into Hell is the suffering of the torments of Hell; that the Soul of *Christ* did really and truly suffer all those pains which are due unto the damned; that whatsoever is threatned by the Law unto them which depart this life in their sins and under the wrath of God, was fully undertaken and born by *Christ*; that he died a true and natural death, the death of *Gehenna*, and this dying the death of *Gehenna* was the *descending into hell*; that those which are now saved by vertue of his death, should otherwise have endured the same torments in Hell which now the damned do, and shall endure, but that he, being their surety, did himself suffer the same for them, even all the torments which we should have felt, and the damned shall.

This Interpretation is either taken in the strict sense of the words, or in a latitude of expression; but in neither to be admitted as the exposition of this Article. Not if it be taken in a strict, rigorous, proper and formal sense; for in that acception it is not true. It must not, it cannot, be admitted that *Christ* did suffer all those torments which the damned suffer; and therefore it is not, it cannot, be true, that by suffering them he descended into Hell. There is a Worm that never dieth, which could not lodge within his Breast; that is, a remorse of Conscience, seated in the Soul, for what that Soul hath done: but such a remorse of Conscience could not be in *Christ*, who though

Quid igitur? Christus personam suam secun-

dum humanitatem poenam gehennalem nobis debitam passus est, animam principaliter, corpore secundo, utroque casualiter ad merendum, ad nos suo ipsius merito liberandos. *Parkes de Descensu, l. 3. Sect. 48. Et statim Sect. 49.* Descendisse namque Servatorem, modo supra memorato, ad Haden mortis gehennalis, innumerus patet argumentis.

he took upon himself the sins of those which otherwise had been damned, yet that act of his was a most virtuous, charitable, and most glorious act, highly conformable to the will of God, and consequently could not be the object of remorse. The grief and horror in the Soul of *Christ*, which we have expressed in the Explication of his Sufferings antecedent to his Crucifixion, had reference to the sins and punishment of men, to the justice and wrath of God; but clearly of a nature different from the sting of Conscience in the Souls condemned to eternal Flames. Again, an essential part of the Torments of Hell is a present and constant sense of the everlasting Displeasure of God, and an impossibility of obtaining favour, and avoiding pain; an absolute and compleat despair of any better condition, or the least relaxation: But *Christ*, we know, had never any such resentment, who looked upon the reward which was set before him, even upon the Cross, and offered up himself a sweet-smelling Sacrifice; which could never be efficacious, except offered in Faith. If we should imagine any damned Soul to have received an express promise of God, that after 10000 years he would release him from those Torments, and make him everlastingly happy, and to have a true Faith in that Promise, and a firm hope of receiving eternal life; we could not say that man was in the same condition with the rest of the damned, or that he felt all that Hell which they were sensible of, or all that pain which was due unto his sins: because hope and confidence and relying upon God would not only mitigate all other pains, but wholly take away the bitter anguish of Despair. *Christ* then, who knew the beginning, continuance, and conclusion of his Sufferings, who understood the determinate minute of his own Death and Resurrection, who had made a Covenant with his Father for all the degrees of his Passion, and was fully assured that he could suffer no more than he had freely and deliberately undertaken, and should continue no longer in his Passion than he had himself determined, he who by those torments was assured to overcome all the powers of Hell, cannot possibly be said to have been in the same condition with the damned, and strictly and properly to have endured the pains of Hell.

Again, if we take the Torments of Hell in a Metaphorical sense, for those Terrours and Horrors of Soul which our Saviour felt, which may therefore be called infernal Torments, because they are of greater extremity than any other tortures of this life, and because they were accompanied with a sense of the wrath of God against the unrighteousness of men; yet this cannot be an Interpretation of the Descent into Hell, as it is an Article of the *Creed*, and as that Article is grounded upon the Scriptures. For all those pains which our Saviour felt (whether, as they pretend, properly infernal, or metaphorically such) were antecedent to his Death; part of them in the Garden, part on the Cross; but all before he commended his Spirit into the hands of his Father, and gave up the ghost. Whereas it is sufficiently evident that the Descent into Hell, as it now stands in the *Creed*, signifieth something commenced after his Death, contra-distinguished to his Burial; and, as it is considered in the Apostle's explication, is clearly to be understood of that which immediately preceded his Resurrection; and that also grounded upon a confidence totally repugnant to infernal pains. For it is thus particularly expressed: *I foresaw the Lord always before my face; for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved. Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope: because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell.* Where the faith, hope, confidence, and assurance of *Christ* is shewn, and his flesh, though laid in the Grave, the place of corruption, is said to *rest in hope*, for this very reason, because God would not leave his soul in hell. I conclude there-

כִּי אֵרֶד אֶל בְּנֵי אָדָם, "Οτι καὶ ἀβήσσομαι πρὸς τὸ ὕψος μου πένθον εἰς ἄδης, which we translate, For I will go down into the grave unto my son mourning, upon the authority of the ancient Targums. For although that of the Onkelos keep the Original word שְׁאוֹר; yet the Jerusalem Targum and that of Jonathan render it קְבוּרָתִי, in domum sepulchri; and the Persian Targum, to the same purpose, בְּנִי; as also the Arabick Translation, Imo descendam ad pulverem mœstus de filio meo, So Gen. 42. 38. הוֹרַדְתָּם אֶת שְׁנֵי בָנָיו שְׁאוֹרָה, καὶ καὶ ἀβήσσομαι πρὸς τὸ ὕψος μου πένθον εἰς ἄδης which we translate, Then shall ye bring down my grey hairs with sorrow to the grave: where the Jerusalem Targum and that of Jonathan have it again לְבִי קְבוּרָתִי; and the Persian again בְּנִי in sepulchrum; the Arabick, اَلْأَرْضِ ad pulverem, or ad terram. And it is observed by the Jewish Commentators, that those Christians are mistaken who interpret these words spoken by Jacob, I will go down into Sheol, of Hell, declaring that Sheol there is nothing else but the grave. 1 Gen. 37. 35. 42. 38. 1 Sam. 2. 6.

Now being the *Soul* is sometimes taken for the body deserted by the Soul, and *Hell* is also sometimes taken for the Grave, the receptacle of the Body dead; therefore it is conceived that the Prophet did intend these significations in those words, *Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell*; and consequently, the Article grounded on that Scripture must import no more than this, *Christ* in respect of his body bereft of his Soul, which was recommended into, and deposited in the hands of his Father, *descended into the grave*.

This Exposition hath that great advantage, that he which first mentioned this Descent in the Creed, did interpret it of the Burial; and where this Article was expressed, there that of the Burial was omitted. But notwithstanding those advantages, there is no certainty of this interpretation: First, because he * which did so first interpret it, at the same time, and in the tenure of that expression, did acknowledge a descent of the Soul of *Christ* into Hell; and those other || Creeds which did likewise omit the Burial, and express the Descent, did shew, that by that Descent they understood not that of the Body, but of the Soul. Secondly, because they which put these words into the *Roman Creed*, in which the Burial was expressed before, must certainly understand a Descent distinct from that; and therefore though it might perhaps be thought a probable interpretation of the words of *David*, especially taken as belonging to *David*, yet it cannot pretend to an exposition of the Creed, as now it stands.

* Ruffinus, who first mentioned this Article, did interpret it of the grave, as we have already observed; but yet he did believe a Descent distinct from that, in the Exposition of the Creed: Sed & quod in infernum descendit,

evidenter prænunciatur in Psalmis, &c. and then citing that of S. Peter, Unde & Petrus dixit, Quia Christus mortificatus carne, vivificatus autem spiritu, in ipso, ait, &c. eis qui in carcere inclusi erant in diebus Noe; in quo etiam quid operis egerit in inferno declaratur, as we before more largely cited the same place. || I shewed before, that in the Creed made at Sirmium there was the Descent mentioned, and the Burial omitted, and yet that Descent was so expressed that it could not be taken for the Burial: besides now I add, That it was made by the Arians, who in few years before had given in another Creed, in which both the Burial and the Descent were mentioned; as that of Nice in Thracia, καὶ ταφέντα, καὶ εἰς τὰ κατὰ χθονία κατελθόντα, ὃν αὐτὸς ὁ ᾄδης ἐτεβήμαζεν. Theodoret. Hist. l. 2. c. 21. and not long after gave in another at Constantinople to the same purpose, καὶ ταφέντα, καὶ εἰς τὰ κατὰ χθονία καταβύθοντα; ἐν τινι καὶ αὐτὸς ὁ ᾄδης ἐπῆλθεν, So-crat. lib. 2. c. 4.

The next Opinion is, That the Soul may well be understood either for the nobler part of Man distinguished from the Body; or else for the person of Man consisting of both Soul and Body, as it often is; or for the living Soul as it is distinguished from the immortal spirit: but then the term *Hell* shall signify no place, neither of the man, nor of the body, nor of the Soul; but only the state or condition of men in death, during the separation of the Soul from the Body. So that the Prophecy shall run thus, *Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell*, that is, Thou shalt not suffer me to remain in the common state of the dead, to be long deprived of my natural life, to continue without exercise, or power of exercising, my vital faculty; And then the Creed will have this sense, that *Christ* was crucified, dead, and buried, and descended into *Hell*; that is, he went unto the dead, and remained for a time in the state of death, as other dead men do.

But this interpretation supposeth that which can never appear, that *Hades* signifieth not Death it self, nor the place where Souls departed are, but the state and condition of the dead, or their permanſion in death; which is a

¶ *The Opinion of the ancient Greeks in this case is excellently expressed by Tertullian, who shews three kinds of men to be thought not to descend ad inferos when they die; the first Insepulti, the second Aori, the third Berothanari. Creditum est, insepultos non ante ad inferos redigi quam iusta perciperint. De Anim. c. 56. Aiumt & inmortuamorte praventas eouque vagari isthic, donec reliquatio cõpleatur atatis quacum pervixissent si non intempestive obiiissent. Ibid. Proinde extores inferum habebuntur, quas vi ereptas arbitrantur, præcipue per atrocitates suppliciorum; crucis dico & securis, & gladii, & sera. Ib. The Souls then of those whose bodies were unbied were thought to be kept out of Hades till their Funerals were performed, and the Souls of them who died an untimely or a violent death, were kept from the place until the time of their natural death should come. This he further expresses in the terms of the Magicians, whose Art was conversant about Souls departed. Aut optimum est hic retineri secundam achoros, (i.e. ἀχόρος) aut Pessinum, secundum Berothanatos, (βερωθανάτος) ut ipsis jam vocabulis utar, quibus auctrix opinionum istarum Magica sonat, Hostanes, & Typhon, & Dardanus, & Damageron, & Nectabis, & Bernice. Publica jam literatura est quæ animas etiam iusta ætate sopitas, etiam proba morte disjunctas, etiam prompta humatione disjunctas, evocaturam se ab inferum incolatu pollicetur. cap. 57. Of that of the Insepulti, he produceth the example of Patroclus: Secundum Homericum Patroclum funus in somniis de Achille flagrantem, quod non alias adire portas inferum posset, arcantibus cum longe animabus sepulorum. The place he intended is that, Iliad. ʒ.*

Θάπτεμε, ὅτι τὰ χίσα πύλαι ἀΐξω πρὸς.
Τὴν δὲ με ἔργον ψυχῆς, ἠδὲ καὶ καμίνων.
Οὐδὲ μὲ πᾶς μίσγεω ὡς ἐρ ποταμοῖο ἔσσιν.

In the same manner he describes Elpenor, Odyss. ʒ.

Πρώτη δὲ ψυχὴ Ἑλπενόρῳ ἦλθεν ἑταίρου.
Οὐ γάρ τοι ἐτίθαστο ὡς χθονὸς ἐρυομένης.

Where

Where it is the observation of Eustathius, Ὅτι δὴ αὖ τῷ τοῖς Ἑλλήσι, τὰς τῶν ἀθάπτων ψυχὰς μὴ ἀναιμίστους ἔχει παῖς. And the same Eustathius observes an extraordinary accurateness in that Question of Penelope concerning Ulysses, upon that same ground, Odys. δ'.

Εἶπε ἔτι ζῶει, καὶ ὅρα ῥά σ' ἡέλιος·
ἢ ἔτι τεθνήκει, καὶ ἂν εἶδω δόμοισι.

Τὸ δὲ, αὖ ὅρα ῥά σ' ἡέλιος, δὲ ὁ θεὸς τῆς ἐννοίας καί ται. ὡς διακρίνεται ἐν ζῶντι, μὴ βλέπων δέ. Οὕτω δὲ καὶ τὸ, ἐν αἰδαοδμοισι, πρὸς ἀκρίβειαν λόγου ἐρρήθη· καὶ ῥά τ' ἐν τοῖς ἐξῆς δηλοῖται ὁ μῦθος, ὅτι παῖς τεθνηκὸς καὶ ἐν αἰδαοδμοισι γίνεσθαι, εἰ μὴ καὶ πύρα δόμῃ, καθὰ καὶ ὁ Εὐεπίδης ἐμφανίζει Πολύδωρον· ὥστε τὸ, ἢ ἔτι τεθνήκει, καὶ ἂν εἶδω δόμοισιν ἀντὶ τούτου, ἢ ἔτι τεθνήκει, καὶ τεθνήκει. It is here very observable that, according to the opinion of the Greeks, to be dead is one thing, and to be in Hades is another; and that every one which died was not in Hades, & πᾶς τεθνηκὸς καὶ ἐν αἰδαοδμοισι, as Eustathius speaks. Legimus præterea in Sexto infepulcorum animas vagas esse, Serv. in Æneid. 3. The place which he intended I suppose is this,

Hæc omnis, quam cernis, inops inhumataq; turba est;
Portitor ille Charon; hī quos vehit unda sepulchri.
Nec ripas datur horrendas nec rauca fluentia
Transportare prius quam sedibus ossa quicquid.
Centum errant annos volitantq; hæc littora circum.

Thus he is to be understood in the description of the Funeral of Polydorus, Æneid. 3. Ergo instauramus Polydoro funus, & ingens Aggeritur tumulo tellus, animamq; sepulchro Condimus. Not that anima does there signify the body, as some have observed; but that the Soul of Polydorus was then in rest when his body had received funeral rites, as Servius, legimus præterea in Sexto infepulcorum animas vagas esse, & hinc constat non legitime sepulchrum fuisse. Rite ergo reddita legitima sepultura, redit ad quietem sepulchri, saith Servius; or rather, in the sense of Virgil, ad quietem inferni, according to the petition of Palinurus, Sedibus ut saltem placidis in morte quiescam. And that the Soul of Polydorus was so wandering about the place where his body lay unburied, appeareth out of Euripides in Hecuba, where he speaketh thus, Νῦν ἄρα μιν εἰς εἰλῆος Ἑκάδης αἶσιν. αἶμα' ἐρημώσας ἐμδν, Τελῶν ἢ δὲ ἐγγὺς αἰωρώμεθα. And in the Troades of the same Poet this ἀλν, or erratio vagabunda infepulcorum, is acknowledged by the Chorus in these words, ὦ εἰλῆος, ὦ πόσι μοι, Σὺ μὲν φθίμεθα ἀλάνης Ἀθαπί, ἀνυδρό. And when their bodies were buried, then their Souls passed into Hades, to the rest. So was it with Polydorus, and that Man mentioned in the History of the Philosopher Athenodorus, whose umbra or phasma walked after his death. Inveniuntur ossa inferta catenis & implicata, quæ corpus avo terraq; putrefactum nuda & exesa reliquerat vinculis: collecta publice sepeliuntur; domus postea rite conditis manibus caruit. Plin. l. 7. Epist. 27. This was the case of the Infepulchri. And for that of the Biothanati, it is remarkable that Dido threatneth Æneas,

—sequar atris ignibus absens,
Et cum frigida mors animā seduxerit artus,
Omnibus umbra locis adero.

Upon which place Servius observes, Dicunt Physici Biothanatorum animas non recipi in originem suam, nisi vagantes legitimum tempus sati compleverint; quod Poetæ ad sepulturam transferunt, ut. Centum errant annos. Hoc ergo nunc dicit Dido, Occisura me ante diem sum; vaganti mihi dabis pœnas: Nam te persequar, & adero quam diu erravero semper. * Ἀδης δὲ τὸ πᾶν ἡμῶν αἰδῆς, ἢ γὰρ ἀφανὲς καὶ ἀγνώστου, ὁ τὰς ψυχὰς ἡμῶν ἐν αἰδαοδμοισι δεχόμενος. Andreas Cæsar: in Apocal.

There is yet left another Interpretation grounded upon the general opinion of the Church of *Christ* in all Ages, and upon a probable exposition of the Prophecy of the Psalmist, taking the *Soul* in the most proper sense, for the spirit or rational part of *Christ*; that part of man which according to our Saviour's doctrine, the *Jews* could not kill, and looking upon *Hell* as a place distinct from this part of the world where we live, and distinguished from those Heavens whither *Christ* ascended, into which place the Souls of men were conveyed after or upon their death: and therefore thus expounding the words of the Psalmist in the person of *Christ*; Thou shalt not suffer that Soul of mine which shall be forced from my body by the violence of pain upon the Cross, but resigned into thy hands, when it shall go into that place below where the Souls of men departed are detained: I say, thou shalt not suffer that Soul to continue there as theirs have done; but shalt bring it shortly from thence, and re-unite it to my body.

For the better understanding of this Exposition, there are several things to be observed, both in respect to the matter of it, and in reference to the authority of the Fathers. First therefore, this must be laid down as a certain and necessary truth, that the Soul of man, when he dieth, dieth not, but returneth unto him that gave it, to be disposed of at his will and pleasure; according to the ground of our Saviour's counsel, *Fear not them which kill the body, but cannot kill the soul.* That better part of us therefore in and after death doth exist and live, either by virtue of its spiritual and immortal nature, as we believe; or at least the will of God, and his power upholding and pre-

serving it from dissolution, as many of the Fathers thought. This Soul thus existing after death, and separated from the body, though of a nature spiritual, is really and truly in some place; it not by way of circumscription, as proper bodies are, yet by way of determination and indistancy, so that it is true to say, this is really and truly present here, and not elsewhere.

Again, the Soul of man, which, while he lived, gave life to the body, and was the fountain of all vital actions, in that separate existence after death, must not be conceived to sleep, or be bereft and stript of all vital operations, but still to exercise the powers of understanding and of willing, and to be subject to the affections of joy and sorrow. Upon which is grounded the different estate and condition of the Souls of men during that time of separation; some of them by the mercy of God being placed in peace and rest, in joy and happiness, others by the justice of the same God left to sorrow, pains and misery.

As there was this different state and condition before our Saviour's death, according to the different kinds of men in this life, the wicked and the just; the elect and reprobate: so there were two societies of Souls after death; one of them which were happy in the presence of God, the other of those which were left in their sins and tormented for them. Thus we conceive the righteous *Abel*, the first man placed in this happiness, and the Souls of them that departed in the same Faith to be gathered to him. Whosoever it was of the sons of *Adam* which first died in his sins was put into a place of torment; and the Souls of all those which departed after with the wrath of God upon them were gathered into his sad society.

Now as the Souls at the hour of death are really separated from the Bodies; so the place where they are in rest or misery after death, is certainly distinct from the place in which they lived. They continue not where they were at that instant when the Body was left without life; they do not go together with the Body to the grave; but as the sepulchre is appointed for our flesh, so there is another receptacle, or habitation and mansion for our spirits. From whence it followeth, that in death the Soul doth certainly pass by a real motion from that place, in which it did inform the Body, and is translated to that place, and unto that society, which God of his mercy or justice hath allotted to it. And not at present to enquire into the difference and distance of those several habitations, (but for methods sake to involve them all as yet under the notion of the Infernal parts, or the Mansions below) it will appear to have been the general judgment of the Church that the Soul of *Christ* contradistinguished from his Body, that better and more noble part of his Humanity, his rational and intellectual Soul, after a true and proper separation from his flesh, was really and truly carried into those parts below where the Souls of men before departed were detained; and that by such a real translation of his Soul, he was truly said to have descended into Hell.

Many have been the Interpretations of the opinion of the Fathers made of late; and their differences are made to appear so great, as if they agreed in nothing which concerns this Point: whereas there is nothing which they agree in more than this which I have already affirmed, the real descent of the Soul of *Christ* unto the habitation of the Souls departed. The persons to whom, and end for which he descended, they differ in; but as to a local descent into the infernal parts, they all agree. Who were then in those parts, they could not certainly define; but whosoever were there, that *Christ* by the presence of his Soul was with them, they all determined.

That this was the general Opinion of the Church, will appear, not only by

by the testimonies of those || ancient Writers which lived successively, and wrote in several Ages, and delivered this exposition in such express terms as are not capable of any other interpretation; but also because it was generally used as an Argument against the *Apollinarian* Heresie: than which nothing can shew more the general opinion of the Catholicks and the Hereticks, and that not only of the present, but of the precedent Ages. For it had been little less than ridiculous to have produced that for an argument to prove a point in Controversie which had not been clearer than that which was controverted, and had not been some way acknowledged as a truth by both. Now the error of *Apollinarius* was, That *Christ* had no proper intellectual or rational Soul, but that the Word was to him in the place of a Soul: and the * Argument produced by the Fathers for the conviction of this error was, that *Christ* descended into Hell; which the *Apollinarians* could not deny; and that this descent was not made by his Divinity, or by his Body, but by the motion, and presence of his Soul, and consequently that he had a Soul distinct both from his Flesh and from the Word. Whereas if it could have then been answered by the Hereticks, as now it is by many, that his descent into Hell had no relation to his Soul, but to his body only, which descended to the grave; or that it was not a real, but only virtual, descent, by which his death extended to the destruction of the powers of Hell; or that his Soul was not his intellectual Spirit or immortal Soul, but his living Soul, which descended into Hell, that is, continued in the state of death: I say, if any of these senses could have been affixed to this Article, the *Apollinarians* answer might have been found, and the Catholicks Argument of no validity. But being those Hereticks did all acknowledge this Article: being the Catholick Fathers did urge the same to prove the real distinction of the Soul of *Christ* both from his Divinity and from his Body, because his Body was really in the grave when his Soul was really present with the Souls below: it followeth that it was the general Doctrine of the Church, that *Christ* did descend into Hell by a local motion of his Soul, separated from his body, to the places below where the Souls of men departed were.

|| *As Irenæus l. 5. c. 26. Cum enim Dominus in medio umbræ mortis abierit ubi animæ mortuorum erant, post deinde corporaliter resurrexit. manifestum est, quia & discipulorum ejus, propter quos & hæc operatus est Dominus, animæ abibant in invisibilem locum definitum eis à Deo.* *Gr. Clemens Alexandrinus was so clearly of that opinion, that he thought the Soul of Christ preached Salvation to the Souls in Hell. Strom. lib. 6. And Tertullian proves that the Inferi are a Cavity in the earth where the Souls of dead men are, because the Soul of Christ went thither. De Anima, cap. 55. Quod si Christus Deus, quia & homo mortuus secundum*

sepultus secundum eandem licet quoque legi satisfecit, forma humanæ mortis apud Inferos functus, nec ante ascendit in sublimiora celorum quam descendit in inferiora terrarum, ut illic Patriarchas & Prophetas compotes sui faceret; habes & regionem Inferum subterraneam credere. & illos cubito pellere qui satis superbe non putent animas fidelium inferis dignas. *Γεννήσας καὶ τὸ σῶμα καὶ τὴν ψυχὴν ἡ ζωὴν αἰώνιον καὶ τὴν ζωὴν αἰώνιον.* Orig. contra Celsum, lib. 2. Ipsa anima, etsi fuit in abyso, jam non est, quia scriptum est, Non derelinques animam meam in inferno. *S. Ambros. de incarn. cap. 5.* Si ergo secundum hominem quem Verbum Deus suscepit putamus dictum esse, *Hodie mecum eris in Paradiso*, non ex his verbis in cælo existimandus est esse Paradisus. Neque enim ipso die in cælo futurus erat homo Christus Jesus, sed in inferno secundum animam, in sepulchro autem secundum carnem. Et de carne quidem, quod eo die in sepulchro sit posita, manifestum est Evangelium. Quod vero illa anima in infernum descenderet, Apostolica doctrina prædicat. Quandoquidem B. Petrus ad hanc rem testimonium de Psalmis adhibet, *Quoniam non derelinques animam meam in inferno, neque dabis sanctum tuum videre corruptionem.* Illud de anima dictum est, quia ibi non est derelicta, unde tam cito remeavit; illud de corpore, quod in sepulchro corrumpti celeri resurrectione non potuit. *S. August. Epist. 57. ad Dardanum. Καταβὰς μέγας καὶ χθονὸς Ἐπίδημιον ἐραμέροισι, κατέβας δὲ καὶ τὰ τάρταρα, ψυχῶν ὅτι μυστα θάνατον ἰδὼν ἰδὼν. Φεῖν σὲ γάρ ὅταν τότε ἴδῃς ὁ παλαιός. Καὶ λαοὶ οὗτοι κύναν ἀρετὰς αὐτοῦ βηλῆ. Syncl. Hymn. 9. Ψυχὴ ἢ ἡ δὲ τὴν πρὸς αὐτὸν λαοῦσα συνδραμὴν τε καὶ ἐνοσίαν καταπεφοίτηκε μὲν εἰς ἅδην, δεομένη ἢ δυνάμει καὶ ὅλως αἰσθημένη καὶ τότε ἐκείσε πνύμασι καταφαίνεται. Cyril. Alex. Dial. de Incarn. Ὁ μὲν τὰς αὐτῆς σῶμα μόνον ὑπέβητο, ψυχὴν δὲ μέντω δὲ ἅδης. Anast. apud Euthy. Panopl. Postquam igitur exaltatus est, id est, à Judæis in cruce suspensus, & spiritum reddidit, unita suæ Divinitati Anima ad inferorum profunda descendit. Autor. *Serm. de tempore.* Corpore in sepulchro sepulto, Divinitas cum anima hominis ad inferna descendens vocavit de locis suis animas sanctorum. *Gaudens Briz. Tract. 10.* In hoc Divinitas Christi virtutem suæ impassibilitatis ostendit, quæ ubique semper & ineffabiliter præfens, & secundum carnem suam in inferno sine doloribus fuit, & secundum animam suam in sepulchro sine corruptione jacuit; quia nec carni suæ defuit, cum animam suam in inferno dolere non siceret; nec animam suam in inferno deseruit, cum in sepulchro carnem suam à corruptione servaret. *Fulgent. ad Transmund. l. 3. c. 31.* * What the *Apollinarian* Heresie was is certainly known: they denied that *Christ* had an humane Soul, affirming the Word was to him in the place of a Soul. *Apollinarius* instituit qui de anima Christi à Catholicis disenserunt, dicentes, sicut Ariani Deum Christum carnem sine anima suscepisse. In questione testimonij Evangelicis victi, mentem, qua rationalis est anima hominis, non fuisse in anima Christi, sed pro hac ipsum Verbum in ea fuisse, dixerunt. *S. Aug. de Hæres. Against this Heresie the Catholicks argued from the Descent into Hell, as that which was acknowledged by them all, even by the Arians, (with whom the Apollinarians in this agreed), as we have shewn before by three several Creeds of theirs in which they expressed this Descent. This is the Argument of Athanasius in his fourth Dialogue de Trinitate, which is particularly with an Apollinarian: Ὅπως ἐκ ἐδωκότο ὁ Θεὸς ἐν μνήματι καὶ**

ὡς ταῦτ' ἦν, εἰ μὴ ἔχεν τὸ τιθέμενον ῥῶμα· ὅπως ἐκ τῶν ἐλέγχων καὶ ἀποδείξεων τῶν σώματι, πανταχῶς ὧν καὶ τὰ πάντα φέρονται, εἰ μὴ ἔχει τὴν χωριζομένην ψυχὴν, ὥς καὶ τοῖς ἐν αὐτῇ εὐηγγελιστοῖς· διὰ τὸ αὐτὴν ἀναχαρῆν τῷ ῥῶμα· λέγειται καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ γενησὶ· καὶ τὸ τοῦτο ὅτι τὸ ὄψον ἡμῶν ἐν αὐτῇ γένεσιν διὰ τὴν ψυχὴν καὶ ἐν μοίᾳ τιθένται διὰ τὸ ῥῶμα. But because these Dialogues may be questioned as not genuine, the same Argument may be produced out of his Book de Incarnatione Christi, written particularly against Apollinarius: Πείθει δὲ, ὅτι ὁ ἰσχυρὸς ἀνθρώπος ὅταν ἡ ψυχὴ τῆτο καὶ τὴν πρώτην πλάττει δεικνύσας, καὶ τὴν δεύτεραν διαλύσας δηλῶσας, ὅτι μόνον ἐν ἡμῖν τέτων δεικνύσας, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ τῷ θανάτῳ τῷ Χριστῷ ἰδεῖται· τὸ μῦθος μένει τὰς εἰδήσεις, ἡ δὲ μένει αὐτῇ διαβάσαι· διαιρεῖται δὲ ὅρων τῇ τῶν πολλῶν μίτρω καὶ τῇ μὴ τὰς ῥωμαϊκῶν ὁμοειδέων τῶν ὁμοίων, ἐκείνη παρὴν τῷ ῥῶμα, τὴ δὲ αὐτῇ ἀπομακρῶν· πῶς ἐκεῖ παρὼν ὁ ἰσχυρὸς σώματος, ὡς ἀνθρώπου ἐνομιᾶν ὡς τῷ θανάτῳ ἵνα ψυχῆς τὴν ἐν δεσμοῖς καὶ χροῦσας μορῶν ἰδέσθαι ψυχῆς ἀνετιδιδόν τῇ δεσφῇ τῷ θανάτῳ παρῆσας παρῆσας παρῆσας, διὰ τὸν τῷ δεσμῷ καὶ ψυχῶν τῇ ἐν αὐτῇ καὶ χροῦσας. Thus Euthymius, in his Commentary upon the words of the Psalmist, Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell; Τίθη καὶ τὴν ἐλπίδα τὴν αἰτίαν· καὶ τὸ ἐκ ἐγκλίσεως, φησὶ, τὴν ψυχὴν μου εἰς αὐτὴν, ὅπως τῇ τελευτῇ καὶ τῇ ψυχῇ καὶ χροῦσας· τόπος δὲ ὁ αὐτῇ ὡς τῇ σκεκληρωμένῃ τῇ τῇ σκεκληρωμένῃ ψυχῆς. καὶ τοῖνυν ὁ λόγος Ἀπολλινάριου, ὅτι τὴν περὶ τὴν ῥωμαϊκῶν αὐτῶν καὶ αὐτῶν; ὡς ἀνθρώπου; And from hence we may understand the words of Theodorice, who at the end of his exposition of this Psalm thus concludes; Οὐτὸς ὁ δὲ λαλῶν καὶ τῷ Ἀρῷ καὶ τῷ Εὐνοίᾳ, καὶ Ἀπολλινάριου ὁμοειδέων ἐλέγχων. Which is in reference to those words, Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell. In the same manner, Leporius Presbyter (quod male fenserat de Incarnatione Christi corrigens, as Gennadius observeth, and particularly disavowing that of the Arians and Apollinarians, Deum hominem; commixtum, & tali confusione carnis & Verbi quasi aliquod corpus effectum) does thus express the reality and distinction of the Soul and Body in the same Christ: Tam Christus filius Dei nunc mortuus jacuit in sepulchro, quam idem Christus filius Dei ad inferna descendit; sicut beatus Apostolus dicit, Quod autem ascendit, quid est nisi quod descendit primum in inferiores partes terræ? Ipse utique Dominus & Deus noster Jesus Christus unicus Dei qui cum anima ad inferna descendit, ipse cum anima & corpore ascendit ad cælum. Libel. Emendationis. And Capreolus Bishop of Carthage, writing against the Nestorian Heresie, proveth that the Soul of Christ was united to his Divinity when it descended into Hell, and follows that Argument, urging it at large. In which discourse among the rest he hath this passage; Tantam abest, Deum Dei filium incommutabilem ab inferis potuisse concludi, ut nec ipsam adumptionis animam exitiabiliter susceptam aut tenaciter derelictam, sed nec carnem ejus credimus contagione alicujus corruptionis infectam. Ipsi namque vox est in Psalmo, sicut Petrus interpretatur Apostolus, Non derelinques animam meam apud inferos, neque dabis sanctum tuum videre corruptionem. Epist. ad Hispanos. Lastly, the true Doctrine of the Incarnation against all the enemies thereof, Apollinarians, Nestorians, Eutychians, and the like, was generally expressed by declaring the verity of the Soul of Christ really present in Hell, and the verity of his body at the same time really present in the grave; as it is excellently delivered by Fulgentius: Humanitas vera Filii Dei nec tota in sepulchro fuit, nec tota in inferno; sed in sepulchro secundum veram carnem Christus mortuus jacuit, & secundum animam ad infernum Christus descendit, & secundum eandem animam ab inferno ad carnem quam in sepulchro reliquerat rediit: secundum divinitatem vero suam, quæ nec loco teneretur nec fine concluditur, totus fuit in sepulchro cum carne, totus in inferno cum anima; ac pro hoc plenius fuit ubique Christus; quia non est Deus ab humanitate quam suscepit separatus, qui & in anima sua fuit, ut solus inferni doloribus ab inferno victrix rediret, & in carne sua fuit, ut celeri resurrectione corrumpi non posset. Ad Transmund. lib. 3. cap. 34.

|| At first indeed the Apollinarians did suppose, as they denied the humane Soul in both acceptations; but afterwards they clearly affirmed the Soul, and denied the verities alone. So So-

crates testifies of them: Πείθει δὲ ὅτι ὁ ἰσχυρὸς ἀνθρώπος ὅταν ἡ ψυχὴ τῆτο καὶ τὴν πρώτην πλάττει δεικνύσας, καὶ τὴν δεύτεραν διαλύσας δηλῶσας, ὅτι μόνον ἐν ἡμῖν τέτων δεικνύσας, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν αὐτῇ τῷ θανάτῳ τῷ Χριστῷ ἰδεῖται· τὸ μῦθος μένει τὰς εἰδήσεις, ἡ δὲ μένει αὐτῇ διαβάσαι· διαιρεῖται δὲ ὅρων τῇ τῶν πολλῶν μίτρω καὶ τῇ μὴ τὰς ῥωμαϊκῶν ὁμοειδέων τῶν ὁμοίων, ἐκείνη παρὴν τῷ ῥῶμα, τὴ δὲ αὐτῇ ἀπομακρῶν· πῶς ἐκεῖ παρὼν ὁ ἰσχυρὸς σώματος, ὡς ἀνθρώπου ἐνομιᾶν ὡς τῷ θανάτῳ ἵνα ψυχῆς τὴν ἐν δεσμοῖς καὶ χροῦσας μορῶν ἰδέσθαι ψυχῆς ἀνετιδιδόν τῇ δεσφῇ τῷ θανάτῳ παρῆσας παρῆσας παρῆσας, διὰ τὸν τῷ δεσμῷ καὶ ψυχῶν τῇ ἐν αὐτῇ καὶ χροῦσας. Hist. l. 2. c. 45. Nam & aliqui eorum fuisse in Christo animam negare non potuerunt. Videre absurditatem & insaniam non ferendam. Animam irrationalem cum habere voverunt, rationalem negaverunt: dederunt ei animam pecoris, subtraxerunt animam hominis. S. Aug. Tract. 47. in Joh. This was so properly indeed the Apollinarian Heresie, that it was thereby distinguished from the Arian. Nam Apollinaristæ quidem carnis & animæ naturam sine mente adsumpsisse Dominum credunt, Ariani vero carnis tantummodo. Facundus l. 2. c. 3.

The only question which admitted any variety of discrepance among the Ancients was, Who were the persons to whose Souls the Soul of *Christ* descended; and, that which dependeth on that question, What was the end and use of his Descent. In this indeed they differed much, according to their several apprehensions of the condition of the dead, and the nature of the place into which the Souls before our Saviour's death, were gathered. Some, looking on that name which we translate now *Hell*, *Hades* or *Infernus*, as the

* com-

* common receptacle of the Souls of all men, both the just and unjust, thought the Soul of *Christ* descended unto those which departed in the true faith and fear of God, the Souls of the Patriarchs and the Prophets, and the people of God.

* Some of the Ancient Fathers did believe that the word "αδης" in the Scriptures had the same signification which it hath among the Greeks, as comprehending all the Souls both of the wicked and the just; and so they took Infernus in the same latitude.

As therefore the ancient Greeks did assign one "αδης" for all which died, Πάντα ὁμοῦς θνήσκουσι αἰδὴς δέχεται. and Εἰς κοινὸν "αδην" πάντες ἵκωνται βεβηλότες. As they made within that one "αδης" two several receptacles, one for the good and virtuous, the other for the wicked and unjust; (according to that of Diphilus, Καὶ γὰρ καθ' "αδην" δύο τεύχεα νομίζομεν, Μίαν δικαίων, κατέχευ' ἀσεβῶν ὁδόν. and that of Plato, Οὗτοι δ' εἰς ἐπεὶ δὲν τλαδύτῃσιν, δικαστέον ὃν τῷ λαιώμῃ ἐν τῇ τελευτῇ, εἰς ἧς εἰσέλθον τὰ ὁδοί, ἢ μὲν εἰς μακάρων νήσους, ἢ δ' εἰς τὰ ἐξέλαυν. and that of Virgil.

Hic locus est paries ubi se via findit in ambas;
Dextrera quæ Ditis magni sub moenia tendit;
Hac iter Elysium nobis: at lava malorum
Exercet pœnas, & ad impia Tartara mittit.)

As they did send the best of men to "αδης", there to be happy, and taught rewards to be received there as well as punishment: (Λέγε-ται δ' ὅτι τὸ μετὰ τὴν Πενταστήριον ταύτην ἑρμηνείαν ἐστὶν ὅτι "αδης", τοῖσι λάμπει μὲν ῥῆς ἀεὶ τῶν ἐνθάδε τυττὰ κατὰ, φοι- νικοῦσθαι τε λυμῶν ἐστὶ περὶ αὐτοὺς αὐτῶν, ὥς. Plut. de consolat. ad Apollon. Ὁ τεσσάρτοι Κεῖνοι βεβηλότες, οἱ ταῦτα διερχ- θέντες τέλη Μολῶσ' ἐς "αδην". τοῖσδ' ὁ μόνος ἐκείνῃ Ζῆν ὄρεται. τοῖς δ' ἄλλοις πάντ' ἐκείνῃ κακὰ, Sophocles.) So did the Jews also before and after our Saviour's time. For Josephus says the Soul of Samuel was brought up ἐξ "αδης", and delivers the opinion of the Pharisees after this manner, Antiq. Jud. l. 18. c. 2. Ἀθανάσιον τε ἰσχυρὸν πίσις αὐτοῖς, ἔδ' ὁ καὶ χυθὼν δικαιοσύνης τε καὶ τιμῆς οἷς ἀρετῆς ἢ κακίας ἐπιβήσας ἐν τῷ βίῳ γέροντες. and of the Sadducees after this manner; Ψυχῆς τε δ' διαμονῆς, καὶ τὰς καθ' "αδην" τιμῆς καὶ τιμῆς ἀναρῶσι. Therefore the Jews which thought the Souls immortal did believe that the just were rewarded as well as the unjust punished ἐν τῷ χυθὼν, or καθ' "αδην". And so did also most of the ancient Fathers of the Church. There was an ancient Book written de Universi natura, which some attributed to Justin Martyr, some to Irenæus, others to Origen, or to Calus a Presbyter of the Roman Church in the time of Victor and Zephyrinus, a Fragment of which is set forth by David Hoesche- r in his Annotations upon Photius, delivering the state of "αδης" at large. Περὶ δ' "αδης", ἐν ᾧ ζωόχονται ψυχὰι δικαίων τε καὶ ἀδίκων, ἀναγκάσθαι εἰπεῖν. Here then were the just and unjust in Hades, but not in the same place: Οἱ δ' δίκαιοι ἐν τῷ "αδην" νῦν μὲν ζωόχονται, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ αὐτῷ τόπῳ καὶ οἱ ἀδικοί. Μία γὰρ εἰς τὸ τὸ χωρίον καθόδοι, &c. There was but one passage into the Hades, saith he; but when that gate was passed, the just went on the right hand to a place of happiness, (Τέτοιοι δ' ὄνομα κληίσκοι καὶ πόλιν Ἀβελῶν) and the unjust on the left to a place of misery. Οὗτοι δ' ὁ καὶ "αδης" λόγος, ἐν δ' ὅτι ψυχὰι πάντων κατέχονται ἀρχὴ καὶ ὅτι ὁ Θεὸς ὤρεται. Tertullian wrote a Treatise de Paradiso, now not extant, in which he expressed thus much: Habes etiam de Paradiso à nobis libellum, quo constituimus omnem animam apud Inferos sequestri in diem Domini. De Anima cap. 55. S. Jerome on the third chapter of Ecclesiastes; Ante adventum Christi omnia ad Inferos pariter ducebantur: Unde & Jacob ad inferos pariter descensum se dicit; & Job pios & impios in Inferno queritur retentari: & Evangelium, Chaos magnum interpositum apud Inferos; & Abraham cum Lazaro, & divitem in suppliciis, esse testatur. And in his 25 Epistle. Perfecilis ad ista responso est; Luxisse Jacob filium; quem putabar occisum, ad quem & ipse erat ad inferos descensurus, dicens, Descendam ad Filium meum lugens in infernum: quia necdum Paradisi januam Christus effregerat, necdum flammæ illam romphæam & veriginem præfidentium Cherubin sanguis ejus extinxerat. Unde & Abraham, licet in loco refrigerii, tamen apud inferos cum Lazaro fuisse scribitur. And again, Nequeo satis Scripturæ laudare mysteria, & divinum sensum in verbis licet simplicibus admirari: quod Moyses plangitur; & Jesus Nave, vir sanctus, sepulchro fertur, & tamen hucusque esse non scribitur. Nempe illud, quod in Moysè, id est, in lege veteri, sub peccato Adam omnes tenebantur elogio, & ad inferos descendentes consequenter lacrymæ prosequuntur. In Jesu vero, id est, in Evangelio, per quem Pa- radisus est apertus, mortem gaudia prosequuntur. Τὸ πρῶτον δ' ἐναντίον οἱ δ' "αδην" κατὰ τὴν ἐν τῷ δ' ἐναντίον πρὸς τὸ Χερσὶν περὶ πέμψαι. S. Chrys. Panagy. ad Sanctas Marr. And in his Treatise proving that Christ was not he makes this exposition of Isaiah 45. 2. Πύλαι χαλκῆς ζωοτάσας, καὶ μοχλὸς σιδηρὸς ζωοτάσας, καὶ ἀνοίξω θύρας, καὶ σκοτεινὰς, σκοτεινὰς, ἀσπερὺς, ἀσπερὺς ἀναδείξω σοὶ τὸν "αδην" τὸν καλόν. Εἰ γὰρ καὶ "αδης" ὡς, ἀλλὰ ψυχὰι ἐκείναι ἀνὰ τὴν σκάν τήμια, τὸν Ἀβελῶν, τὸν Ἰσαάκ, τὸν Ἰακώβ. διὰ καὶ θνητὸς ἐκείνους. This doctrine was maintained by all those who believed that the Soul of Samuel was raised by the Witch of Endor: for though he were so great a Prophet, yet they thought that he was in Hades; and not only so, but under the power of Satan. Thus Justin Martyr in his Dialogue with Trypho: Φαίνεται δ' καὶ τὸ πᾶσαι ψυχὰι τῶν ἁγίων δικαίων καὶ περὶ τῶν ἐν τῷ "αδην" ἐπιπτόντων τῶν δυνάμεων, ὅποια δὲ ἐν τῇ ἐγγαστριμῇ ἐκείνῃ ἐξ αὐτῶν περὶ τῶν ὁμολογεῖται. Who was followed in this by Origen, Anastasius, Antiochenus, and others.

But others there were who thought *Hades* or *Infernus* was never taken in the Scriptures for any place of happiness; and therefore they did not conceive the Souls of the Patriarchs or the Prophets did pass into any such infernal place; and consequently, that the Descent into Hell was not his going to the Prophets or the Patriarchs, which were not there. For as, if it had been only said that *Christ* had gone unto the bosome of *Abraham*, or to *Paradise*, no man would have ever believed that he had descended into Hell; so being it is only written, *Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell*, it seems incongruous to think that he went then unto the Patriarchs, who were not there.

|| S. Augustine began to doubt of that general re- as- sen ordinarily given of Christ's Descent into hell, to bring the Pa- triarchs and Prophets thence; upon this ground, that he thought the word Infer- nus was never

taken in the Scriptures with a good sense; Quanquam illud me nondum invenisse confiteor, Inferos appellatos ubi iustorum animæ acquiescunt; De Genesi ad literam, l. 12. c. 23. Proinde, ut dixi, nondum inveni, & adhuc quero; nec mihi occur- rit Inferos alicubi in bono posuisse Scripturam, duntaxat Canonicam. Ibid. Non facile alicubi Scripturarum Inferorum no- men possum invenire in bono, Epist. 57. Præsertim qui ne ipsos quidem Inferos usquam Scripturarum locis in bono appel- laros.

do go unto the bosom of Abraham, where the Patriarchs and Prophets were and are, and that both remain together till the general Resurrection, did not believe that Christ did therefore descend into Hell, that he might translate the Patriarchs from thence into Heaven.

But such as thought the place in which the Souls of the Patriarchs did reside could not in propriety of speech be called *Hell*, nor was ever so named in the Scriptures, conceived, that as our Saviour went to those who were included in the proper Hell, or place of torment, so the end of his Descent was to deliver Souls from those miseries which they felt, and to translate them to a place of Happiness and a glorious condition. They which did think that Hell was wholly emptied, that every Soul was presently released from all the pains which before it suffered, were branded with the names of *Hereticks*: but to believe that many were delivered, was both by them and many others counted Orthodox.

|| S. August. in his Book de Hereticis, reckens this as the seventy ninth Heresie.

heresie. Alia, descendente ad Inferos Christo credidisse incredulos, & omnes inde existimat liberatos. And though he gives the heresie without a name, as he found it in Philastrius, yet we find the opinion was not very singular. For Euodius propounded it to S. Augustine as a question in which he desired satisfaction, an descendens Christus omnibus evangelizavit, omnesq; a tenebris & penis per gratiam liberavit, ut à tempore resurrectionis Domini iudicium expectetur exinanitis inferis. And in his answer to that question he looks not upon the affirmative part as an Heresie, but as a doubtful Proposition. His resolution, first, is, that it did not concern the Prophets and the Patriarchs, because he could not see how they should be thought to be in Hell, and so capable of a deliverance from thence: Addunt quidam hoc beneficium antiquis etiam Sanctis fuisse concessum, Abel, Seth, Noe, & domui ejus, Abraam, Isaac, & Jacob, aliisque Patriarchis & Prophetis, ut cum Dominus in infernum venisset, illis doloribus solverentur. Sed quoniam modo intelligatur Abraam, in cujus sinum pius etiam pauper ille susceptus est, in illis fuisse doloribus, ego quidem non video: explicant fortasse qui possunt. Epist. 99. ad Euodiam. Et paulo post: Unde illis iustis qui in sinu Abrahæ erant cum ille in inferna descenderet nondum quid contulisset inveni, à quibus eum secundum beatificam præsentiam suæ Divinitatis nunquam video recessisse. And yet in another he will not blame them that believed the contrary, nor did he think their Opinion absurd. Si enim non absurde credi videtur, antiquos etiam Sanctos, qui venturi Christi converterent fidem, locis quidem à tormentis impiorum remotissimis, sed apud Inferos, fuisse, donec eos inde sanguis Christi ad ea loca descensus erueret, &c. De Civitate Dei, l. 20. c. 15. His second Resolution was, That Christ did by his descent relieve some out of the pains of Hell, taking Hell in the worst sense. Quia evidentia testimonia & Infernum commemorant & dolores, nulla causa occurrit cur illuc credatur venisse Salvator, nisi ut ab ejus doloribus salvos faceret. Epist. 99. Quamobrem teneamus firmiter quod fides habet fundatissimâ autoritate firmata, quia Christus mortuus est secundum Scripturas, & quia sepultus est, & quia surrexit tertia die secundum Scripturas; & cætera quæ de illo, testante veritate, conscripta sunt. In quibus etiam hoc est, quod apud inferos fuit, solutis eorum doloribus quibus eum erat impossibile teneri; à quibus etiam recte intelligitur solvisse & liberasse quos voluit. Ibid. His third Resolution was, That how many these were which were delivered out of Hell was uncertain, and therefore temerarious to define. Sed utrum omnes quos in eis invenit, an quosdam quos illo beneficio dignos judicavit, adhuc requiro, Ibid. Hoc scilicet quod scriptum est, Solutis doloribus Inferni, non in omnibus, sed in quibusdam; accipi potest, quos ille dignos ita liberatione judicabat: ut neque frustra illuc descendisse existimetur, nulli eorum profuturus qui ibi tenebantur inclusi; nec tamen sit consequens, ut quod Divina quibusdam misericordia justitiâq; concessit, omnibus concessum esse putandum sit. Ibid. Potest & sic; ut eos dolores eum solvisse credamus quibus teneri ipse non poterat, sed quibus alii tenebantur quos ille noverat liberandos. Verum quænam isti sunt temerarium est definire. Si enim omnes omnino dixerimus tunc esse liberatos qui illuc inventi sunt, quis non gratuletur, si hoc possumus ostendere? Ibid. Thus the Opinion of S. Augustine is clear, That those which departed in the Faith of Christ were before in happiness and the beatifical presence of God, and so needed no translation by the descent of Christ; and of those which were kept in the pains of Hell, some were loosed and delivered from them, some were not: and this was the proper end or effect of Christ's descent into Hell. Thus Capreolus: Ipse in homine est visitare Inferorum dignatus abstrusa, & præpositos mortis præsentia invicta majestatis exterruit, & propter liberandos quos voluit, Inferorum portas referari præcipit. Epist. ad Hispanos, S. Ambrose: Ipse autem inter mortuos liberationem in Inferno positis soluta mortis lege donabat. De Incarn. c. 5. Όλον γὰρ εὐθὺς σκυλῶται τὸ ἄδω, καὶ ταὶ ἀρδὲς τοῖς ἁγίοις κεκοιμημένοις πνεύμασιν ἀναπέλασαι πύλας, ἐρημόν τε καὶ μόνον ἀρετῆς ἐκείσε τὸ διάβολον ἀνέστη, S. Cyril. Homil. Pasch. 7. Who speaks full as high as those words of Euodius, or that Heretick, whosoever it was, which is mentioned, though not named, by Philastrius. For ἔρημος καὶ μόνος διάβολος is as much as Inferi exinaniti; and κεκοίματοι τῶ θανάτῳ μυχῶ (which he useth in another Manily) is the same.

The means by which they did conceive that Christ did free the Souls of men from Hell was the application of his death unto them, which was propounded to those Souls by || preaching of the Gospel there: That as he revealed here on earth the will of God unto the sons of men, and propounded himself as the object of their Faith, to the end that whosoever believed in him should never die; so after his death he shewed himself unto the Souls departed, that whosoever of them would yet accept of and acknowledge him should pass from death to life.

|| This preaching of the Gospel to the dead, was the general Opinion of the Fathers, as the end of his Descent, or means, by which that

good was wrought for the Souls below, which was effected by his death. Ea propter Dominum in ea quæ sub terra deleceant, evangelizantem & illis adventum suum, remissionem peccatorum existentem his qui credunt in eum. Crediturunt autem in eum omnes qui sperabant in eum, id est, qui adventum ejus prænuñciaverunt, & dispositionibus ejus servierunt, iusti, & Prophetæ, & Patriarchæ, quibus similiter ut nobis remisit peccata. Irenæus, l. 4. c. 45. Ἐνεργεῖ γὰρ, ὁ θεὸς, καὶ ὁ σωτὴρ, ἵνα

ἐπει τὸ σάχην ἔργον αὐτοῦ· ὅθεν ἐν καὶ πεποίκινεν, τοὺς εἰς αὐτὸν πιστεῦσαι βεβαλωμένους διὰ τὸ κηρύγματι, οἱ τοῖ
τύχουν μεριμνέτες ἐλευσας εἰ σωθῆναι. Εἰ γ' ἂν ὁ Κύριος δι' ἑν ἕτερον εἰς ἄλλο καθῆλθεν, ἢ διὰ τὸ εὐαγγελισαῖς, ὡς
κατήλθεν, ἥτοι τάνας εὐαγγελισαῖς, ἢ μόνως Ἑβραίων. Εἰ μὲν ἐν πάντας, πᾶσι θύειν πάντας οἱ πισδωσαντες, καὶ ἐξ ἐθ-
νῶν οἷες τύχουσιν, ὡς κορολογισαίμενοι ἤδη κεῖ· Clem. Alex. Strom. l. 6. Τελήμερος γὰρ ἀνεβίω κηρύξας καὶ τοῖς ἐν σαυ-
κῇ τιμάσει. Πληρεστάτη γὰρ ἔτασ ἡ ἑλισθηρίας διδιδίξις λόγῳ, πλὴν μὴ μόνον ἀνασώσαι φημι, τὰς τε ζώντας δὲ τῆς
ζῆς, ἀλλὰ καὶ τοῖς ἡ καλοῖσθε τοῖς, καὶ ἐν τοῖς τῆς ἀβύσσου μυχοῖς καθημένοις ἐν σκότῳ, καὶ τὸ γεγραμμένον, διακηρύξας
τῇ ἀφ' ἧς. S. Cyril. in Joan. l. 12. Πολλαχὲρ διαμνηστέται ἡ γραφή, ὃν τρέπον τοῖς τιμακαθίστασι τὸν αὐτὸν καὶ τοῖς ἐν
ἄλλοις διὰ χειρὸς τὴν ἀπολύτωση παρηγοῖ. Λέγει γὰρ ὁ θεὸς μαθητῶν κορυφαῖ. Εἰς τὸ ποτὶ ἀπέθανε καὶ ἀνέστη, ἵνα καὶ νε-
κρῶν καὶ ζωντανῶν κυριεύσῃ. καὶ πάλιν, τοῖς ἐν φυλάκιᾳ παραδοθείς κηρύξας παράματι, ἵνα κηρύξῃ καὶ λαοῖς, καὶ τῇ γεν-
μασί. ταῖς ἐν, ὅπως οἱ υἱοὶ τοῦ καὶ διὰ τὸ ἀμαρτωλοῖ, μεμνηκότες καταλειθύνται, ἅτε δι' ὀλοκήτως σαρξ γενό-
τες, καὶ δι' ὀλοκήντες τὴν τιμήν, οἱ καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις Χριστῷ τῇ δικαιοσύνῃ πεπισδωκαν, τῆς παράματις ἐστέρωσης
ἀπολαύσει. Jobius apud Phegium, lib. 2. cap. 38.

Thus did they think the Soul of *Christ* descended into Hell to preach the Gospel to the spirits there, that they might receive him who before believed in him, or that they might believe in him who before rejected him. But this cannot be received as the end, or way to effect the end, of *Christ's* Descent ; nor can I look upon it as any illustration of this Article , for many reasons. For first, I have already shewed that the place of *S. Peter*, so often mentioned for it, is not capable of that sense, nor hath it any relation to our Saviour after death. Secondly, The Ancients seem upon no other reason to have interpreted this place of *S. Peter* in that manner, but because other Apocryphal writings led them to that interpretation, upon the authority whereof this Opinion only can rely. A place of the Prophet *Jeremy* was first || produced, that the Lord God of Israel remembered his dead, which slept in the land of the grave, and descended unto them, to preach unto them his salvation. But being there is no such verse extant in that Prophet or any other, it was also delivered that it was once in the translation of the Septuagint, but rased out from thence by the *Jews* : which as it can scarce be conceived true, so, if it were, it would be yet of doubtful Authority , as being never yet found in the *Hebrew* Text. And *Hermes* in his Book, called the *Pastor*, was *thought to give sufficient strength to this Opinion ; whereas the Book it self is of no good authority, and in this particular is most extravagant : for he taught that not only the Soul of *Christ*, but also the Souls of the Apostles, preached to the spirits below ; that as they followed his steps here, so did they also after their death, and therefore descended to preach in Hell.

Justin Martyr, in his Dialogue with Trypho the Jew,
Καὶ σὺ τοῦ λό-
γων σὺ αὐτῷ
Ἰερειᾶς ἐμοί
ὡς ταῦτα ἀν-
έκωσαν. Εὐ-
νήσαν δὲ Κύρι-
ος ὁ Θεὸς τοῦ
Ἰσραὴλ τῇ ἐ-
κκλησίᾳ αὐτῇ, ἥτις
ἐκ κοινῆς πίστεως
εἰς γὰρ χαίμα-
τι, καὶ καθ' ἑν
πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἐν-
αγγέλιον ἀν-
αγγέλλει τὸ (α)

Hieron αὐτῶν. This place is first brought by Irenæus, to prove that he which died for us was not only man but God: Et quoniam non
 solum homo erat qui moriebatur pro nobis, ait Elaias, Et commemoratus est Dominus Sanctus Israel mortuorum suorum, quia
 (leg. qui) dormierunt in terra sepulchris, & descendit ad eos, evangelizare salutem que est ab eo, ut salvari eos. Adv. Hærec. l. 3. 23.
 Only he names Elaias instead of Jeremias, whom he rightly names again, 1. 4. c. 39. Sicut Hieremias ait, Recommenoratus est
 Dominus Sanctus Israel mortuorum, &c. And as there, so more plainly 1. 5. c. 25. applies it to the soul of Christ while it was
 absent from his body: Nunc autem tribus diebus conversatus est ubi erant mortui, quemadmodum Prophetia ait de eo, Com-
 memoratus est Dominus Sanctorum, (lege, Sanctus Israel) mortuorum suorum, eorum qui ante dormierant in terra stipulationis,
 (lege, sepulchris) & descendit ad eos, extrahere eos, & salvare eos. Thus did Irenæus make use of this verse, to shew Christ
 preached unto the dead, rather than that of S. Peter; and yet there is no authority in it. For it is not to be found in the Hebrew Text,
 and Iustin Martyr charges the Jews only of raising it out of the LXX: which how they could do out of those Copies which were in
 the Christians hands is scarce intelligible; and yet it's not now to be found there. * Clemens Alexandrinus first brings a
 strange place of Scripture to prove Christ's preaching in Hell, Strom. l. 6. Διὸ καὶ ὁ Κύριος ἐν ψυχραῖς καὶ τοῖς ἐν ᾧ. Φησὶ
 ὁ Ἰησοῦς, λέγει ὁ ἄνθρωπος τῇ ψυχῇ, Εἰς τὸ μὴ αὐτὸ ἐκ εἰδωλῶν, οὐκ ἐκ αὐτῶν ἡκούσας. which he thus interprets:
 ἐκ οὗτος ὁ Ἰησοῦς τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἔθεν τὰ περιεφθάρτα, ἀλλ' οἱ ἐν ᾧ ἐκκλησιασμοὶ καὶ οἱ ἐν ἀπολείαν αὐτῶν ἐκδεδοκότες,
 καθάπερ ἔστιν ὁ νόμος ἐν ἡλάρων ἐκόντες ἀπὸ τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ τοῦ αὐτοῦ ἡνὶν οἱ ἀπακούσαντες τῆς λέξης δαμάσκων καὶ ὁ
 νόμος. and then seeming to aim at the place of S. Peter, he passes to another proof, which he had produced in his second Book: Δέ-
 δεικται ὅτι καὶ πρὸς τὸν δαδὶν Σβουαλῆ, τὸν Ἀποστόλου, ἀκούσαντος τοῦ Κυρίου, καὶ τὸν ἐν ᾧ ἐν ψυχραῖς καὶ τοῖς ἐν ᾧ. which he there
 first shew'd to be the authority of the Book called Pallor, and attributed to Hermes: Ὁ Ἐρμῆς ὁ..... φησὶ τὸν Ἀποστόλου καὶ τὸν διδά-
 σκαλον, τὸς κηρύττοντας τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ κοινιθῆναι, τῇ δαμάσκων καὶ τῇ ψυχῇ κηρύττοντας τοῖς ποταμοῦ μινῶναι,
 Strom. l. 2. which words are thus in the old Latine Translation of Hermes, lib. 3. Similit. 9. Quoniam hi Apostoli & doctores qui
 predicaverunt nomen filii Dei, cum habentes fidem ejus & potestatem defuncti essent, predicaverunt his qui ante obierunt.
 And then Clemens supplies that authority with a reason of his own, that as the Apostles were to imitate Christ while they lived, so
 did they all imitate him after death: Ἐπεὶ γὰρ ὁ κύριος, ὥσπερ κηρύττομεν, ὥτως καὶ κηρύττετε, τὸν αἰεὶς ὡς μαθητῶν μιμητῶν
 ἡμῶν τὰ διδάσκοντες. Stromat. l. 6. And therefore they preached to the Souls in Hell, as Christ did before them. This is the
 Authority of Clemens Alexandrinus out of his Apocryphal Authorities.

Nor is this only to be suspected in reference to those pretended Authorities which first induced men to believe it, and to make forced interpretations of

of Scripture to maintain it; but also to be rejected in it self, as false and inconsistent with the nature, scope and end of the Gospel, (which is to be preached with such commands and ordinances as can concern those only which are in this life) and as incongruous to the state and condition of those Souls to whom *Christ* is supposed to preach. For if we look upon the Patriarchs, Prophets, and all Saints before departed, 'tis certain they were never *disobedient in the days of Noah*; nor could they need the publication of the Gospel after the death of *Christ*, who by virtue of that death were accepted in him while they lived, and by that acceptation had received a reward long before. If we look upon them which died in disobedience, and were in torments for their sins, they cannot appear to be proper objects for the Gospel preached. The rich man, whom we find in their condition, desired one might be sent from the dead to preach unto his Brethren then alive, lest they also should come unto that place: but we find no hopes he had that any should come from them which were alive to preach to him. For if the living, who *heard not Moses and the Prophets, would not be persuaded though one rose from the dead*; surely those which had been disobedient unto the Prophets, should never be persuaded after they were dead. Luke 16. 31.

Whether therefore we consider the Authorities first introducing this Opinion, which were Apocryphal; or the testimonies of Scripture, forced and improbable; or the nature of this Preaching, inconsistent with the Gospel; or the persons to whom *Christ* should be thought to preach, (which, if dead in the Faith and Fear of God, wanted no such instruction; if departed in infidelity and disobedience, were unworthy and incapable of such a dispensation:) this Preaching of *Christ* to the Spirits in prison cannot be admitted either as the end, or as the means proper to effect the end, of his Descent into Hell.

Nor is this Preaching only to be rejected as a means to produce the effect of *Christ's* Descent; but the effect it self pretended to be wrought thereby, whether in reference to the just or unjust, is by no means to be admitted. For though some of the Ancients thought, as is shewn before, that *Christ* did therefore descend into Hell, that he might deliver the Souls of some which were tormented in those flames, and translate them to a place of Happiness: yet this opinion deserveth no acceptance, neither in respect of the Ground or Foundation on which it is built, nor in respect of the Action or Effect it self. The Authority upon which the strength of this Doctrine doth rely, is that place of the *Acts*, *whom God hath raised up, loosing the pains of Hell*, for so they read it: from whence the Argument is thus deduced. God did loose the pains of Hell when *Christ* was raised: But those pains did not take hold of *Christ* himself, who was not to suffer any thing after death; and consequently he could not be loosed from or taken out of those pains in which he never was: in the same manner the Patriarchs and the Prophets and the Saints of old, if they should be granted to have been in a place sometimes called Hell, yet were they there in happiness: and therefore the delivering them from thence could not be the loosing of the pains of Hell: It followeth then, that those alone which died in their sins were involved in those pains, and when those pains were loosed then were they released; and being they were loosed when *Christ* was raised, the consequence will be, that he descending into Hell, delivered some of the damned Souls from their Torments there.

¶ The Vulgar La-
tine renders it
thus. Quem De-
us sollicitavit, so-
lutis doloribus
infernī: So also
the Syriack,
ושלח חבליה
דשיור.

So some of the
ancient Fathers
read it: as Ire-
naeus, l. 3. c. 12.

or rather his Interpreter, Quem Deus excitavit, solutis doloribus inferorum: Capreolus Bishop of Carthage, Resolvere, sicut scriptum est, interorum parturitiones: And before these Polycarpus, ὃν ἡ γερην ὁ Θεός, λύσας τὰς ὀδύνας τοῦ ᾄδου, Quem re-sollicitavit Deus, dissolvens dolores inferni, Epist. ad Phil. whom I suppose Grotius understood, when he cited Barnabas: and thus S. Augustine read it, and laid the stress of his Interpretation upon this reading. Quia evidencia testimonia & infernum commemorant & dolores, &c. But in the Original Greek it is generally written ὀδύνας θανάτου, and in all these many Copies of it, only that of Petrus Fraxardus, and two of the sixteen Copies which Robertus Stephanus made use of, read it ᾄδου. And this mistake was very easie: for in the eighteenth Psalm, verse the fifth, there is חבל לי מית, ὀδύνας θανάτου, and verse the sixth, חבל לי מית, ὀδύνας ᾄδου. And we find twice in the Proverbs, 14. 12. and 16. 25. מית דרכי מית translated πνεύμα ᾄδου, and 2 Sam. 22. 6. שורר מית, ὀδύνας θανάτου. * Quod si movet aliquem, quemadmodum accipiendum sit, Inferni ab illo solutos dolores: (neque enim cœperat in eis esse tanquam in vinculis, & sic eos solvi tanquam si catenas solvisset quibus fuerat alligatus) facile est intelligere, sic eos solutos, quemadmodum solvi possunt laquei venantium, ne teneant, non quia renuerunt. S. August. Epist. 99.

Matth. 25. 41,
45.
Mark 9. 44.

¶ This is the Ar-
gument of Gre-
gory the Great;
Si fideles nunc
sine operibus
bonis non sal-
vantur, & infi-
deles ac repro-
bi sine bona a-
ctione, Domi-
no ad Inferos
descendente,
salvati sunt;
melior illorum
ioris fuit qui in-
carnationem
Domini mini-
me viderunt,
quam horum
qui post Incar-
nationis ejus
mysterium na-
triunt Quod
quanta fatu-
ris sit dicere,
ipse Dominus
reclatur, assi-
pulis dicens,
Adisti Reges &
Prophetas & vide-
runt faciem meam & non viderunt, l. 6. Epist. 117. 2 Cor. 5. 10.

Again, as the Authority is most uncertain, so is the Doctrine most incongruous. The Souls of men were never cast into infernal torments, to be delivered from them. The days which follow after death were never made for opportunities to a better life. The Angels had one instant either to stand or fall eternally; and what that instant was to them, that this life is unto us. We may as well believe the Devils were saved, as those Souls which were once tormented with them. For it is an *everlasting fire*, an *everlasting punishment*, a *worm that dieth not*. Nor does this only belong to us who live after the death of *Christ*, as if the damnation of all sinners now were ineluctable and eternal, but before that death it were not so; as if Faith and Repentance were now indispensably necessary to Salvation, but then were not. For thus the condition of mankind before the fulness of time, in which our Saviour came into the world, should have been far more || happy and advantageous than it hath been since. But neither they nor we shall ever escape eternal flames, except we obtain the favour of God before we be swallowed by the jaws of death. *We must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body*: But if they be in the state of Salvation now by virtue of *Christ's* Descent into Hell, which were numbred amongst the damned before his death, at the day of the general Judgment they must be returned into Hell again; or if they be received then into eternal Happiness, it will follow either that they were not justly condemned to those flames at first, according to the general dispensations of God, or else they did not receive the things done in their body at the last; which all shall as certainly receive, as all appear. This life is given unto men to work out their Salvation with fear and trembling, but after death cometh judgment, reflecting on the life that is past, not expecting amendment or conversion then. He that liveth and believeth in *Christ* shall never die; he that believeth, though he die, yet shall he live; but he that dieth in unbelief shall neither believe nor live. And this is as true of those which went before, as of those which came after our Saviour, because he was the Lamb slain before the foundation of the World. I therefore conclude, That the end for which the Soul of *Christ* descended into Hell, was not to deliver any damned Souls, or to translate them from the torments of Hell unto the joys of Heaven.

The next consideration is, whether by virtue of his Descent the Souls of those which before believed in him, the Patriarchs, Prophets, and all the people of God, were delivered from that place and state in which they were before; and whether *Christ descended into Hell* to that end, that he might translate them into a place and state far more glorious and happy. This hath been in the later Ages of the Church the vulgar Opinion of most men, and that as if it followed necessarily from the denial of the former; He delivered not the Souls of the damned, || therefore he delivered the Souls of them which believed, and of them alone: Till at last the Schools have followed it so fully, that they deliver it as a point of * Faith and infallible certainty, that the Soul of *Christ* descending into Hell, did deliver from thence all the Souls of the Saints which were in the bosome of *Abraham*, and did confer upon them actual and essential Beatitude, which before they enjoyed not. And this they lay upon two grounds: first, that the Souls of Saints departed saw not God; and secondly, that *Christ* by his death opened the gate of the Kingdom of Heaven.

|| So Gregory the Great, after he had proved that none of the damned were released by *Christ's* descent, thus infers and concludes; Hæc itaque omnia pertractantes nihil aliud reneatis, nisi

quod vera fides per Catholicam Ecclesiam docet; quia descendens ad Inferos Dominus illos solummodo ab Inferni claustris eripuit, quos viventes in carne per suam gratiam in fide & bona operatione servavit. l. 6. Epist. 179. So Isidore Hispalensis by way of opposition; Ideo Dominus in Inferno descendit, ut his qui ab eo non poenaliter detinebantur viam aperiret revertendi ad coelos. So Venerable Bede upon the place of S. Peter; Catholica fides habet, quia descendens ad Inferna Dominus non incredulos inde, sed fideles tantummodo suos, educens ad cœlestia secum regna perduxerit; neque exutis corpore animabus & inferorum carcere inclusis, sed in hac vita vel per seipsum, vel per suorum exempla sive verba fidelium, quodidie viam vitæ demonstraret. * These are the words of Suarez in 3^m Thomæ Disputat. 43. Sect. 3. Primo ergo, certum est Christum descendendo ad Inferos animabus sanctis, quæ in sinu Abrahamæ erant, essentialem beatitudinem & cætera animæ dona quæ illam consequuntur contulisse. Hoc de fide certum existimo, quia de fide est, illas animas non vidisse Deum ante Christi mortem. Deinde est de fide certum, Christum per mortem aperuisse hominibus januam regni: ideoque de fide etiam certum est, animas Sanctorum omnium post Christi mortem decedentium (si nihil purgandum habeant) statim videre Deum. Ergo idem est de prædictis animabus.

But even this opinion, as general as it hath been, hath neither that consent of Antiquity, nor such certainty as it pretendeth, but is rather built upon the improbabilities of a worse. The || most ancient of all the Fathers, whose Writings are extant, were so far from believing that the end of *Christ's* descent into Hell was to translate the Saints of old into Heaven, that they thought them not to be in Heaven yet, nor ever to be removed from that place in which they were before *Christ's* death, until the general resurrection. Others, as we have also shewn, thought the bosom of *Abraham* was not in any place, which could be termed Hell; and consequently could not think that *Christ* should therefore descend into Hell to deliver them which were not there. And others yet which thought that *Christ* delivered the Patriarchs from their infernal mansions, did not think so exclusively, or in opposition to the disobedient and damned spirits, but conceived many of them to be saved as well as the Patriarchs were, and * doubted whether all were not so saved or no. Indeed I think there were very few (if any) for above 500 years after *Christ*, which did so believe *Christ* delivered the Saints out of Hell, as to leave all the damned there; and therefore this opinion cannot be grounded upon the prime Antiquity, when so many of the Ancients believed not that they were removed at all, and so few acknowledged that they were removed alone.

|| We have shewed this before to have been the opinion of the most ancient, producing the express testimonies of Justin Martyr, Irenæus, Tertullian, Hilary, Gregory Nyssen. So also Novatian l. de Trinitate, Quæ infra terram jacent, neq; ipsa sunt digestis & ordinatis potestatibus vacua. Locus enim est quo piorum anime impiorumque ducantur futuri iudicii præjudicia sentientes.

* We have already shewn that many did believe all the damned souls were saved then; and S. Augustine had his adhuc requiro, when he wrote unto Euodius concerning that opinion. Beside, the doubt of that great Divine, Gregory Nazianzen, is very observable, who in his Oration de Paschæ hath these words, * Ἀν εἰς αὐτὴν κατὰ συνκρίτελθαι: γινώθι καὶ τὰ ὅτι οὐκ εἶναι τοῦ Χριστοῦ μυστήρια: τίς ἢ οἰκονομία τῆς ἀπλήρης καὶ ἀσάφους; τίς ὁ λόγος; ἀπλῶς οὐδεὶς πάντων ἀπαιτείς, ἢ καὶ τοῦ πικροῦτος; Where his question is clearly this, whether *Christ* appearing in hell did save all without exception, or did save there as he does here, only such as believed. To this it is answered by Suarez two ways, that it is the ordinary and universal Law; that none of the damned should be saved: An vero ex speciali privilegio sua voluntate & arbitrio aliquem damnatum ex Gehenna Christus eduxerit, dubitari quoquo modo potest. * Et juxta hæc possent intelligi Nazianzenus & Augustinus. But this will by no means solve their autho-

rities; for neither of them did doubt or question whether some of the damned were released, but whether all were released or some only: which Suarez did very well perceive, and therefore was ready in the same sentence with another answer, *Quamquam Nazianzenus non videretur illa scripsisse verba, quoniam de hac veritate dubitaret, sed solum ut proponeret quid de hoc mysterio inquirere ac scire oporteat. Which is as much as to say, that He was satisfied of the truth, but desired to satisfy no man else. Whereas 'tis clear that it was a doubt in his age, as we have before shewn, and that he would leave it still a doubt and undetermined. And as for the other, Augustinus recte potest intelligi de animabus Purgatorii, it is certainly false, unless they will enlarge that Purgatory as wide as Hell; for the question was of emptying that.*

And if the Authority of this opinion in respect of its Antiquity be not great, the certainty of the truth of it will be less. For first, if it be not certain that the Souls of the Patriarchs were in some place called *Hell* after their own death, and until the death of *Christ*; if the bosom of *Abraham* were not some infernal mansion; then can it not be certain that *Christ* descended into *Hell* to deliver them. But there is no certainty that the Souls of the just, the Patriarchs and the rest of the people of God, were kept in any place below, which was, or may be called *Hell*: the bosom of *Abraham* might well be in the heavens above, far from any region where the Devil and his Angels were; the Scriptures no where tell us that the spirits of just men went unto, or did remain in *Hell*; the place in which the rich man was in torments after death is called *Hell*, but that into which the Angels carried the poor mans Soul is not termed so. There was a vast distance between them two; nor is it likely that the Angels which see the face of God should be sent down from Heaven to convey the Souls of the just into that place where the face of God cannot be seen. When God translated *Enoch*, and *Elias* was carried up in a Chariot to Heaven, they seem not to be conveyed to a place where there was no vision of God; and yet it is most probable, that *Moses* was with *Elias* as well before as upon the Mount: nor is there any reason to conceive that *Abraham* should be in any worse place or condition than *Enoch* was, having as great a testimony that he pleased God, as *Enoch* had.

Secondly, It cannot be certain that the Soul of *Christ* delivered the Souls of the Saints of old from *Hell*, and imparted to them the beatifical vision, except it were certain that the Souls are in another place and a better condition now than they were before. But there is no certainty that the Patriarchs and the Prophets are now in another place and a better condition than they were before our blessed Saviour died; there is no intimation of any such alteration of their state delivered in the Scriptures; there is no such place with any probability pretended to prove any actual accession of happiness and glory already past. *Many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the Kingdom of heaven;* there then did the Gentiles which came in to *Christ* find the Patriarchs, even in the Kingdom of Heaven; and we cannot perceive that they found them any where else than *Lazarus* did. For the description is the same, *There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the Prophets in the Kingdom of God, and you your selves thrust out.* For as the rich man in hell lift up his eyes being in torments, and seeth *Abraham* afar off, before the death of *Christ*; so those that were in weeping and gnashing of teeth, saw *Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and the Prophets,* when the Gentiles were brought in.

Thirdly, Though it were certain that the Souls of the Saints had been in a place called *Hell*, as they were not; though it were also certain that they were now in a better condition than they were before *Christ's* death, as it is not; yet it would not follow that *Christ* descended into *Hell* to make this alteration; for it might not be performed before his Resurrection, it might not be effected till his Ascension, it might be attributed to the merit of his Passion, it might have no dependance on his Descension. I conclude therefore

that

that there is no certainty of truth in that Proposition which the Schoolmen take for a matter of Faith, That *Christ* delivered the Souls of the Saints from that place of Hell which they call *Limbus of the Fathers*, into Heaven; and for that purpose after his death descended into Hell.

Wherefore being it is most infallibly certain that the death of *Christ* was as powerful and effectual for the Redemption of the Saints before him, as for those which follow him; being *they did all eat the same spiritual meat, and did all drink the same spiritual drink*; being *Abraham* is the Father of us all, and we now after *Christ's* Ascension are called but to walk in the steps of the faith of that Father; being the bosom of *Abraham* is clearly propounded in the Scriptures as the place into which the blessed Angels before the death of *Christ* conveyed the Souls of those which departed in the favour of God, and is also || promised to them which should believe in *Christ* after his death; being we can find no difference or translation of the bosom of *Abraham*, and yet it is a comfort still * to us that we shall go to him, and while we hope so never fear that we shall go to Hell; I cannot admit this as the end of *Christ's* descent into Hell, to convey the Souls of *Abraham*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob*, and those which were with them, from thence; nor can I think there was any reference to such an action in those words, *Thou shalt not leave my soul in hell*.

1 Cor. 10. 34.

Rom. 4. 12, 16.

|| Although the Bosom of Abraham in express and formal terms be spoken only of Lazarus whom Christ being yet alive in the flesh supposed dead; yet the same Bosom is

virtually and in terms equivalent promised to those which afterwards should believe. For the joys of the life to come are likened to a Feast, in which, according to the custom then in use, they lay down with the head of one toward the breast of the other, who is therefore said to be in his bosom, as we read of S. John, *ὁ ἀνακείμενος ἐν τῷ κόλπῳ Ἰησοῦ* thus in that heavenly Feast in the Kingdom of God, Lazarus is ἀνακείμενος ἐν τῷ κόλπῳ Ἀβραάμ. And in the same Chapter Christ saith, that Many shall come from the East and from the West, καὶ ἀνακλιθήσονται μετ' Ἀβραάμ, discurrent cum Abrahamo, sit down with Abraham, as we translate it after our custom, at the same Feast, that is, ἀνακλιθῶνται ἐν τοῖς κόλποις τοῦ Ἀβραάμ, &c. as Euthymias, Quia Deus Abraham, cœli conditor, Pater Christi est; idcirco in regno cœlorum est & Abraham, cum quo accubitura sunt nationes quæ crediderunt in Christum filium creatoris. * S. Augustine often shews the comfort which he had in going to the bosom of Abraham: As in the case of his friend Nebridius, Nunc ille vivit in sinu Abraham. Quicquid illud est quod illo significatur sinu, ibi Nebridius meus vivit, dulcis amicus meus, tuus autem, Domine, adoptivus ex liberto filius ibi vivit. Nam quis alius tali animæ locus? Confess. l. 9. c. 3. And he seats that place (as uncertain as before) where it was before. Post vitam illam parvam nondum eris ubi crunt Sancti, quibus dicetur, Venite benedicti Patris, percipite regnum quod vobis paratum est ab initio mundi. Nondum ibi eris, quis nescit? Sed jam poteris ibi esse ubi illum quondam ulcerosum pauperem dives ille superbus & sterilis in mediis suis tormentis vidit à longe requiescentem, Concio 1. in Psal. 36. And this he must necessarily take for a sufficient comfort to a dying Christian, who seats that place in conspectu Domini, de Civit. Dei, lib. 1. cap. 12. and looked upon them which were in it, as upon those, à quibus Christus secundum beatificam præsentiam nunquam recessit, Epist. 99.

Another Opinion hath obtained, especially in our Church, that the end for which our Saviour descended into Hell, was to triumph over Satan and all the powers below within their own dominions. And this hath been received as grounded on the Scriptures and consent of Fathers. The Scriptures produced for the confirmation of it are these two, *Having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them*: And, *when he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men*. Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth. By the conjunction of these two they conceive the triumph of *Christ's* descent clearly described in this manner. Ye were buried with *Christ* in baptism, with whom ye were also raised; and when ye were dead in sins, he quickned you together with him, forgiving your sins, and cancelling the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us, and spoiling powers and principalities, he made an open shew of them, triumphing over them in himself. That is, say they, ye died and were buried with *Christ*, who fastned the hand-writing of ordinances to the Cross, that he might abolish it, from having any right to tie or yoke his members. Ye likewise were quickned, and raised together with *Christ*, who spoiled powers and principalities, and triumphed over them in his own person. So that these words, *spoiling principalities and powers*, are not referred to the Cross, but to *Christ's* resurrection. This Triumph over Satan

Col. 2. 15.

Eph. 4. 8, 9.
B. Bill. p. 294.
Col. 2. 12, 13;
14, 15.

Eph. 4. 8, 9. Satan and all his Kingdom, the same Apostle to the *Ephesians* setteth down as a consequent to *Christ's* death, and pertinent to his resurrection, *Ascending on high he led captivity captive*: and this, *He ascended, what meaneth it, but that he descended first into the lower parts of the earth?* so that ascending from the lower parts of the earth he *led captivity captive*, which is all one with he *triumphed over power and principalities*. With this coherence and conjunction of the Apostles words, together with the interpretation of the ancient Fathers, they conceive it sufficiently demonstrated, that *Christ* after his Death, and before his Resurrection, in the lowermost parts of the earth, even in Hell, did lead captivity captive, and triumphed over Satan.

But notwithstanding, I cannot yet perceive either how this triumph in Hell should be delivered as a certain truth in it self, or how it can have any consistency with the denial of those other ends, which they who of late have embraced this opinion, do ordinarily reject. First, I cannot see how the Scriptures mentioned are sufficient to found any such conclusion of themselves. Secondly, I cannot understand how they can embrace this as the interpretation of the Fathers, who believe not that any of the Souls of the damned were taken out of the torments of Hell, or that the Souls of the Saints of old were removed from thence by *Christ's* Descent; which were the reasons why the Fathers spake of such a triumphing in Hell, and leading captivity captive there.

That the triumphing in the Epistle to the *Colossians* is not referred to the Cross but to the Resurrection, cannot be proved; the coherence cannot inforce so much; no Logick can infer such a division, that the *blotting out of the hand-writing* belongeth precisely to our *burial with him*, and the *triumphing over principalities and powers* particularly to our being *quickned together with him*; or that the *blotting out* was performed at one time, and the *triumphing* at another. Our present Translation attributeth it expressly to the Cross, rendring the last words, *triumphing over them in it*, that is, in the Cross, mentioned in the former Verse; and though || anciently it have been read, *triumphing over them in himself*, yet still there are these two great advantages on our side; First, That if we read, *in it*, it proves the triumph spoken of in this place performed upon the Cross; and if we read, *in himself*, it proveth not that the triumph was performed in any other place, because he was *himself* upon the Cross. Secondly, The ancient * Fathers of the Greek Church read it as we do, *in it*, and interpret the triumph of his death, and those others of the Latin Church, which did read it otherwise, did also acknowledge with the Greeks the Cross not only to be the place in which the victory over Satan was obtained, but also to be the trophy of that Victory, ∴ and the triumphal Chariot.

|| So the Vulgar Latin, Palam triumphans illos in semetipso; as also the Syriack, כבומה. So Novatianus de Trin. triumphatis illis in semetipso. S. Hilary, triumphans eos in semetipso. So Ambrose, Augustine, and Pacianus.

* O. Cumenius sheweth their reading, Θειάμβωσας αὐτὸν ἐν αὐτῷ, and Interpretation, Θείαμβω· λέγειται ἡ χρῆσις ἡ πῆρυξ τῆς πομπῆς τῆς αὐτοῦ. Ἐθειάμβωσεν αὐτὸν διὰ τοῦ σώματος, τὸ ἐστὶν ἐνίκησε, καὶ κατ' αὐτὴν θείαμβωσεν νοητὸν ἀτετέλεστο. Ἐν αὐτῷ θένεις διὰ τοῦ σώματος, and this Θείαμβω· νοητὸς on the Cross will no way agree with that actual triumph in Hell. But Theophylact yet more clearly, Θειάμβωσας αὐτὸν ἐν αὐτῷ, τετέστιν, ἐν τῷ σώματι τοῦ δαίμονος ἡ πῆρυξ δειξάς. Θείαμβω· γὰρ λέγεται ὅταν τις διὰ τῆς πόλεως ἐπ' αὐτῶν δημοσίων πομπῶν τελεῇ τοῦ ἡγεμένου δεικνύει παρὰ δεικνύων. Ἐν τῷ σώματι ἐν τῷ σώματι ὅτι οὐκ ἐστὶν, ὡς καὶ ἐν δημοσίᾳ θεοῦ Ἐκκλησίᾳ, Παύλῳ, Ἰωάννῳ, τοῦ δαίμονος ἐθειάμβωσεν. And this Exposition they receive from S. Chrysostom, who makes the Θειάμβωσις on the Cross, to consist in the death upon it, Ἐκεῖ ὅτι ἡ ψυχὴ λαβὼν τὸ διαβολικὸν τὸ σῶμα· νεκρὸν καὶ κατεῖον λαβὼν. Where it is to be observed that the triumph is not attributed to the soul departed from the body and descended into Hell, but rather to the body left by the soul and hanging on the Cross, διὰ τοῦ σώματος ὅτι οὐκ ἐστὶν ἡ ψυχὴ καὶ αὐτῇ χειρὶ αὐτῶν νικῶν, says Theodoret. And before all these Origen most expressly, Vnde et quidem Filius Dei in cruce crucifixus est, invisibiliter verò in ea cruce diabolus cum principatibus suis & potestatibus amicus est cruci. Non tibi hoc videbitur verum, si tibi horum testem produxero Apostolum Paulum? Quod erat contra nos, nunc illud de medio affigens cruci suæ, exuens principatus & potestates traduxit liberè, triumphans eas in ligno crucis. Ergo duplex Dominicæ crucis est ratio; una illa, quæ dicit Petrus quod Christus crucifixus nobis reliquit exemplum; & hæc secunda, quæ crux illa trophæum Diaboli fuit, in quo & crucifixus est & triumphatus, in fine. Requiescit in Leo, cum in cruce positus principatus & potestates exuit, & triumphavit eos cum ligno cruci, in fine.

∴ Tertullian, Serpentis spoliū, devicto Principe mundi, affixit ligno refugarum immane trophæum.

Prudentius

Prudentius. Dic trophæum passionis, Dic triumphalem crucem, *Cathem. Hymn. 10.* S. Hilary most expressly, *Manus ejus edoſta ad bellum ſunt cum vicit ſeculum.* Ego enim, ait, *vici mundum,* cum exrenſus in crucem invictiſſimis armi: ipſius paſſionis inſtruitur. *Et poſuiſti,* inquit, *ut aream areum brachia mea,* cum de omnibus virtutibus ac poteſtatibus in ipſo trophæo glorioſe crucis triumphat, & principatus & poteſtates *traduxit cum fiducia triumphans in ſemetipſo,* in *Pſal. 143.* Where it is obſervable that the Father does read it in ſemetipſo, and interprets it in cruce. Nos quoniam trophæum jam videmus, & quod currum ſuum triumphator aſcendit, conſideremus quod non arborum, non quadrijugis pluſtri manubias de mortali hoſte quaſitas, ſed patibulo triumphali captiva de ſeculo ſpolia ſuſpenderit, *S. Amb. l. 10. in c. 23. S. Lucæ;* and amongſt the reſt of the captives he reckons afterwards, captivum principem mundi, & ſpiritualia nequitie quæ ſunt in coeleſtibus. To this alludes Fulgentius, *l. 3. ad Thraſim.* Sic oportuit peccatorum noſtrorum chirographum deleri, ut dum verus homo noſter ſimul cruci aſſigitur, tanquam in trophæo triumphatoris victoria panderetur, *Whether therefore we read it, εν αὐτῷ with the Greeks, that is, εν σωρῶ, or, εν αὐτῷ with the Latines in ſeiſo, it is the ſame: for he triumphed over the Devil by himſelf upon the Croſs, as in the ſame caſe it is written Eph. 2. 16. καὶ ἀποκαταλάξῃ τοῦ ἀμφοτέρου ἐν ἐνὶ σωματί τοῦ Θεοῦ διὰ τοῦ σωρῶ, ἀποκρίνας τὴν ἐχθρὸν ἐν ἑαυτῷ.*

This place then of S. Paul to the *Coloſſians* cannot prove that *Chriſt deſcended into Hell*, to triumph over the Devil there; and if it be not proper for that purpoſe of it ſelf, it will not be more effectual by the addition of that other to the *Ephesians*. For, firſt, we have already ſhewn, that the *deſcending into the lower parts of the earth*, doth not neceſſarily ſignifie his deſcent into Hell, and conſequently cannot prove that either thoſe things which are ſpoken in the ſame place, or in any other, are to be attributed to that deſcent. Again, if it were granted, that thoſe words did ſignifie *Hell*, and this Article of our Creed were contained in them, yet would it not follow from that Scripture, that *Chriſt* triumphed over Satan while his Soul was in Hell; for the conſequence would be only this, That the ſame *Chriſt* who led captivity captive, *deſcended firſt into Hell.* In that he aſcended (and aſcending led captivity captive) *what is it but that he deſcended firſt?* the Deſcent then, if it were to Hell, did precede the triumphant Aſcent of the ſame perſon, and that is all which the Apoſtles words will evince. Nay further yet, the Aſcent mentioned by S. Paul cannot be that which immediately followed the Deſcent into Hell, for it evidently ſignifieth the Aſcenſion which followed forty days after his Reſurrection. It is not an Aſcent from the parts below to the ſurface of the earth, but to the heavens above, an *aſcending up on high*, even far above all Heavens. Now the *leading captivity captive* belongeth clearly to this Aſcent, and not to any Deſcent which did precede it. It is not ſaid, that he *deſcended firſt to lead captivity captive*; and yet it muſt be ſo, if *Chriſt* deſcended into Hell to triumph there; it is not ſaid, when he had led captivity captive, he aſcended up on high; for then it might be ſuppoſed that the captives had been led before: but it is * expreſſly ſaid, *aſcending up*

* The Original words do manifeſtly ſhew that this triumphant act did not precede this Aſcent. For had it been ἀρχαλωτῶσαι ἀρχαλωτῶσαν ἀνέβη ἡς ὕψους, we might well have expounded it thus, *Chriſt did lead*

ſin and death and Satan captive; and when he had done ſo, aſcended up on high: but being it is written ἀναβὰς ἡς ὕψους, that is, having aſcended up on high, ἀρχαλωτῶσαν ἀρχαλωτῶσαν, he captivated a captivity, the Aſcent muſt here precede the captivation, though not in time (as it did the giving of gifts) yet in nature: ſo that it is not proper to ſay, by captivating he aſcended; but it is proper to expreſs it thus, by aſcending he led captive a captivity.

As for the teſtimonies of the Fathers, they will appear of ſmall validity to confirm this triumphant Deſcent as it is diſtinguiſhed from the two former effects, the removal of the Saints to Heaven, and the delivering the damned from the torments of Hell. In vain ſhall we pretend that *Chriſt deſcended into Hell* to lead captivity captive, if we withal maintain, that when he deſcended

* So S. Hierom on that place of the Ephesians, Inferiora autem terræ infernus accipitur, ad quem Dominus nosse Salvatorque descendit, ut Sanctorum animas quæ ibi tenebantur incluseret, secum ad cælos Victor abduceret. And on Math. 12. 29. Alligatus est fortis, & religatus in Tartarum, & Domini contritus pede; & direpris sedibus Tyranni, captiva ducta est captivitas. So Arnoldus Carnotensis is to be understood, De Unione

Christi maris, Passus est rex illudi, & vita occidi, descendensque ad inferos captivam ab antiquo captivitate reduxit; Applying it to the custom of the Church, Omnino convenit, ut eo tempore quo Christus captivos eduxit ab inferis, reconciliati peccatores ad Ecclesiam reducantur. Ibid. Thus Athanasius when he speaks of Christ's triumphing over Satan in Hell, he mentions τὸ ἄδω πικρὸν δόνημα, Hell spoiled, to wit, of those Souls which before it kept in hold. Otherwise in the same Oration, in Passionem & crucem, he acknowledgeth the Triumph on the Cross, Ἐκεῖ γὰρ τὸ νικῆσαι τὸ δεινὸν δόνημα (not δεινὸν δόνημα) καὶ τὰ δαιμόνια, μὴ ἄλλω συγχωρῆναι ἀλλ' ἐαυτῷ βασιλεῖν τὸ τεύχος. Thus Leo the Emperour, Χειρὲς ἀνέστη τὸν ἄδω αἰχμαλωτίζουσα, καὶ τοῖς αἰχμαλώτοις ἐλευθερίαν κηρύττει. And thus Macarius supposeth Christ victoriously speaking unto hell and death, Κελεύει τοὺς ἄδω καὶ θάνατον, καὶ δαίμονας, ἐκβαλεῖ τοὺς ἐγκληματοῦσθαι ψυχάς. Author libelli de Paschate, under the name of S. Ambrose, Expers peccati Christus cum ad Tartari ima descenderet, feras inferni januasque confringens, vincas peccato animas, mortis dominatione destructa, à diaboli faucibus revocavit ad vitam. Atque ita divinum triumphum æternis characteribus est conscriptum, dum dicit, Ubi est, Mors, aculeus tuus? Ubi est, Mors, victoria tua? cap. 4. And the Commentaries under the same name, Gratia Dei abundavit in descensu Salvatoris, omnibus dans indulgentiam, cum triumpho sublevis eis in cœlum, ad Rom. 5. 14. Secundum animam descendit ad inferna & spoliavit principes tenebrarum ab animabus electorum, Ebert. Serm. 9. contra Catharos. Thus still the Fathers which speak of spoiling hell, of leading Captivity captive, of triumphing over Satan in his own quarters, are to be understood in respect to those Souls which they thought were taken out of the custody, possession, or dominion of Satan, whether just or unjust.

Nor can we see how the Prophet David could intend so much, as if when he spake those words in the person of our Saviour, *Thou shalt not leave my soul in Hell*, he should have intended this, Thou shalt not leave my Soul separated from my Body, and conveyed into the regions of the damned Spirits, amongst all the principalities and powers of Hell; I say, thou shalt not leave me there, battering all the infernal strength, redeeming the Prisoners, leading captivity captive, and victoriously triumphing over death, and Hell, and Satan. In summ, those words of the Prophet cannot admit any interpretation involving a glorious, triumphant and victorious condition, which is not a subject capable of dereliction. For as the hope which he had of his body, that it should not see corruption, supposed that it was to be put in the grave, which could not of it self free the body from corruption; so the hope that his Soul should not be left in Hell, supposeth it not to be in such a state as was of it self contradictory to dereliction.

And this leads me to that end which I conceive most conformable to the words of the Prophet, and least liable to question or objection. We have already shewn the substance of the Article to consist in this, That the Soul of Christ, really separated from his Body by death, did truly pass unto the places below, where the Souls of men departed were. And I conceive the end for which he did so, was, That he might undergo the condition of a dead man as well as of a living. He appeared here in the similitude of sinful flesh, and went into the other world in the similitude of a sinner. His body was laid in a grave, as ordinarily the bodies of dead men are;

his Soul went to the place where the Souls of men are kept who die for their sins, and so did wholly undergo the law of death: but because there was no sin in him, and he had fully satisfied for the sins of others which he took upon him, therefore as God suffered not his Holy One to see corruption, so he left not his Soul in Hell, and thereby gave sufficient security to all those who belong to *Christ*, of never coming under the power of Satan or suffering in the flames prepared for the Devil and his Angels. And thus, and for these purposes may every Christian say, I believe that *Christ descended into Hell*.

He Rose again.

WHatsoever variations have appeared in any of the other Articles, this part of *Christ's* Resurrection hath been constantly delivered without the least alteration, either by way of addition or * diminution. The whole matter of it is so necessary and essential to the Christian Faith, that nothing of it could be omitted; and in these few expressions the whole doctrine is so clearly delivered, that nothing needed to be added. At the first view we are presented with three Particulars: First, The Action it self, or the Resurrection of *Christ*, *he rose again*. Secondly, The Verity, Reality, and Propriety of that Resurrection, *he rose from the dead*. Thirdly, The Circumstance of Time, or Distance of his Resurrection from his Death, *rose from the dead the third day*.

* For though Eusebius Gallicanus and Venantius Fortunatus leave out the last Word, à mortuis, and some Copies in Rufinus have it not; yet is it generally expressed in all the rest which are more ancient, than Eusebius or Fortunatus: and therefore that omission is to be imputed rather to negligence either of the Author or the Scribe, than to the usage of the Church in their age. Quod die tertio resurrexit à mortuis Dominus Christus, nullus ambigit Christianus, S. Aug. Serm. in Vigiliis Paschæ.

For the illustration of the first Particular, and the justification of our belief in *Christ's* Resurrection, it will be necessary, first, To shew the promised *Messias* was to rise from the dead; and secondly, That *Jesus* whom we believe to be the true and only *Messias*, did so rise as it was promised and foretold. As the *Messias* was to be the Son of *David*, so was he particularly typified by him and promised unto him. Great were the oppositions which *David* suffered both by his own People and by the Nations round about him; which he expressed of himself, and foretold of the *Messias* in those words, *The Kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together against the Lord and against his anointed, that is, his Christ*. From whence it came to pass, That against the holy child *Jesus*, whom God had anointed, both *Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel*, were gathered together to do whatsoever the hand and the counsel of God determined before to be done, which was to crucify and slay the Lord of life. But notwithstanding all this opposition and persecution, it was spoken of *David*, and foretold of the son of *David*, *Yet have I set mine anointed upon my holy hill of Sion. I will declare the decree, the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee*. As therefore the persecution in respect of *David* amounted only to a depression of him, and therefore his exaltation was a setting in the Kingdom; so being the conspiracy against the *Messias* amounted to a real Crucifixion and Death, therefore the Exaltation must include a Resurrection. And being he which rises from the dead, begins as it were to live another life, and the grave to him is in the manner of a womb to bring him forth, therefore when God said of his anointed, *Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee*, he did foretel and promise that he would raise the *Messias* from death to life.

But

But because this prediction was something obscured in the figurative expression, therefore the Spirit of God hath cleared it farther by the same Prophet, speaking by the mouth of *David*, but such words as are agreeable not to the person, but the Son of *David*, *My flesh shall rest in hope; for thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.* As for the Patriarch *David*, he is both dead and buried, and his flesh consumed in his sepulchre; but being a Prophet, and knowing that God hath sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loyns according to the flesh he would raise up *Christ* to sit on his throne; he seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of *Christ*, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. They were both to be separated by his death, and each to be disposed in that place which was respectively appointed for them: but neither long to continue there, the body not to be detained in the grave, the soul not to be left in Hell, but both to meet, and being reunited to rise again.

Psal. 16. 10.

Acts 2. 31.

Again, Lest any might imagine that the *Messias* dying once might rise from death, and living after death yet die again, there was a further Prophecy to assure us of the excellency of that resurrection and the perpetuity of that life to which the *Messias* was to be raised. For God giving this promise to his people, *I will make an everlasting covenant with you* (of which the *Messias* was to be the Mediator, and to ratifie it by his death) and adding this expression, *even the sure mercies of David*, could signifie no less than that the *Christ*, who was given first unto us in a frail and mortal condition, in which he was to die, should afterwards be given in an immutable state, and consequently that he being dead should rise unto eternal life. And thus by virtue of these three predictions we are assured that the *Messias* was to rise again, as also by those Types which did represent and prefigure the same. *Joseph*, who was ordained to save his brethren from death who would have slain him, did represent the Son of God, who was slain by us, and yet dying saved us; and his being in the dungeon typified *Christ's* death; * his being taken out from thence represented his resurrection, as his elevation to the power of *Egypt* next to *Pharaoh*, signified the Session of *Christ* at the right hand of his Father. *Isaac* was sacrificed, and yet lived, to shew that *Christ* should truly die, and truly live again. And *Abraham* offered him up, ^a *accounting that God was able to raise him up even from the dead, from whence also he received him in a figure.* In *Abraham's* intention *Isaac* died, in his expectation he was to rise from the dead, in his acceptance being spared he was received from the dead, and all this acted to * prefigure, that the only Son of God was really and truly to be sacrificed and die; and after death was really to be raised to life. What was the intention of our Father *Abraham* not performed, that was the resolution of our heavenly Father and fulfilled. And thus the Resurrection of the *Messias* was represented by Types, and foretold by Prophecies; and therefore the *Christ* was to rise from the dead.

* Post duos annos dicunt, tertio incipiente, de carcere educitur Joseph. Et noster Joseph Christus Dominus die tertio à mortuis resurrexit. Præsentatur Pharaoni, mundo resurrectione declaratur.... Data est Joseph à Pharaone in tota Ægypto potestas. Et noster Joseph Christus Dominus

post resurrectionem dicit, Data est mihi omnis potestas in cælo & in terra, Prosper. de Promis. & Prædict. p. 1. c. 29. ^a Heb. 11. 19. * Ideo Isaac immolatus non est, quia resurrectio Filio Dei servata est, Prosper. de Prom. & Præd. p. 1. c. 17. Οὕτως ὡς τὸ ἄγριον πνεῦμα λέγει τὸ μέγα μυστήριον τυπικῶς ἀποφάσκει ὁμολογῶν, τὸ τε ἡγιασμένον ὡς καὶ τὸ συμπαρονομήσει περὶ βάρῳ, ὥστε διειχθῆναι ἐν τῷ περὶ βάρῳ τὸ τὸ θανάτου μυστήριον, ἐν ᾧ τὸ μονοθεῖ καὶ ζῶν, καὶ μὴ θάνατον ὡς τὸ θανάτου. Greg. Niss. Orat. 1. in Resur.

That *Jesus*, whom we believe to be the true and only *Messias*, did rise from the dead according to the Scriptures, is a certain and infallible truth, delivered unto us and confirmed by testimonies Humane, Angelical and Divine. Those pious Women which thought with sweet spices to anoint him dead, found him alive, *held him by the feet, and worshipped him*, and as the first Preachers of his Resur-

Resurrection, *with fear and great joy ran to bring his Disciples word.* The blessed Apostles follow them, *to whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs ; who with great power gave witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus,* the principal part of whose office consisted in this testimony, as appeareth upon the election of *Matthias* into the place of *Judas*, grounded upon this necessity. *Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.* The rest of the Disciples testified the same, to whom he also appeared, even to *five hundred brethren at once.* These were the witnesses of his own family, of such as worshipped him, such as believed in him. And because the testimony of an adversary is in such cases thought of greatest validity, we have not only his disciples, but even his enemies to confirm it. Those Souldiers that watched at the sepulchre, and pretended to keep his body from the hands of his Apostles ; they which felt the earth trembling under them, and saw the countenance of an Angel like lightning, and his raiment white as snow ; they who upon that sight did shake and became as dead men, while he whom they kept became alive : even some of these came into the city and shewed unto the chief Priests all the things that were done. Thus was the Resurrection of *Christ* confirmed by the highest humane testimonies, both of his friends and enemies, of his followers and revilers.

But so great, so necessary, so important a mystery had need of a more firm and higher testimony than that of man : and therefore an Angel from Heaven, who was ministerial in it, gave a present and infallible witness to it. He descended down, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. Nay, two Angels in white, sitting the one at the head, the other at the feet where the body of *Jesus* had lain, said unto the Women, *Why seek ye the living among the dead ? he is not here but is risen.* These were the witnesses sent from Heaven, this the Angelical testimony of the Resurrection.

And if we receive the witness of men, or Angels, the witness of God is greater, who did sufficiently attest this Resurrection ; not only because there was no other power but that of God which could effect it, but as our Saviour himself said, *The Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me ; adding these words to his Apostles, and ye shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.* The Spirit of God sent down upon the Apostles did thereby testify that *Christ* was risen, because he sent that Spirit from the Father ; and the Apostles witnessed together with that Spirit, because they were enlightened, comforted, confirmed and strengthened in their testimony by the same Spirit. Thus God raised up *Jesus*, and shewed him openly, not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God, even to those who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead. And thus, as it was foretold of the *Messias*, did our *Jesus* rise ; which was the first part of our enquiry.

For the second, concerning the reality and propriety of *Christ's* Resurrection, expressed in that term *from the dead*, it will be necessary first to consider what are the essential characters and proprieties of a true resurrection, and secondly, to shew how those proprieties do belong and are agreeable to the raising of *Christ*. The proper Notion of the Resurrection consists in this, that it is a substantial change by which that which was before, and was corrupted, is reproduced the same thing again. It is said to be a change, that it may be distinguished from a second or new creation. For if God should annihilate a man or Angel, and make the same man or Angel out of nothing, though it were a restitution of the same thing, yet were it not properly a resurrection, because it is not a change or proper mutation, but a pure and
total

total production. This change is called a substantial change to distinguish it from all accidental alterations: he which awaketh from his sleep, ariseth from his bed, and there is a greater change from sickness to health, but neither of these is a Resurrection. It is called a change of that which was, and hath been corrupted, because things immaterial and incorruptible, cannot be said to rise again: Resurrection implying a reproduction, and that which after it was, never was not, cannot be reproduced. Again, of those things which are material and corruptible, of some the forms continue and subsist after the corruption of the whole, of others not. The forms of inanimate bodies, and all irrational Souls, when they are corrupted, cease to be; and therefore if they should be produced out of the same matter, yet were not this a proper Resurrection, because thereby there would not be the same individual which was before, but only a restitution of the *species* by another individual. But when a rational Soul is separated from its body, which is the corruption of a man, that Soul so separated doth exist, and consequently is capable of conjunction and re-union with the body; and if the two be again united by an essential and vital union, from which life doth necessarily flow, then doth the same man live which lived before; and consequently this re-union is a perfect and proper Resurrection from death to life, because the same individual person, consisting of the same Soul and Body, which was dead is now alive again.

Having thus delivered the true nature of a proper Resurrection, we shall easily demonstrate that *Christ* did truly and properly rise from the dead. For first, by a true, though miraculous, generation he was made flesh; and lived in his humane nature a true and proper life; producing vital actions as we do. Secondly, He suffered a true and proper dissolution at his death; his Soul being really separated, and his body left without the least vitality, as our dead bodies are. Thirdly, The same Soul was re-united to the same body, and so he lived again the same man. For the truth of which, two things are necessary to be shewn upon his appearing after death, the one concerning the verity, the other concerning the identity of his body. All the Apostles doubted of the first, for when *Christ* stood in the midst of them, *they were af-*

Luke 24. 37,
39.

* *Thom* Ignatius disputes against the Δοκίμα in his days, Εγὼ γὰρ οὕτως ἀναστάντων ἐν σαρκὶ αὐτὸν εἶδον καὶ πρὸς αὐτὸν ὄντα. Καὶ ὅτε πρὸς τὸ αὐτὸ

Πέτρον ἦλθεν, ἔρη αὐτοῖς, λάβετε, φηλαρήσατέ με, καὶ ἴδτε ὅτι ἐκ ἐμοὶ δαμόμιον ἀτόματον. Καὶ εὐθὺς αὐτὸς ἠφανίσθη καὶ ὅπως ὡσαν κεχρηθέντες τῇ σαρκὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ τοῦ πνεύματος. ... Μετὰ ᾧ ἡ ἀνάστασις σωτήρα αὐτοῖς καὶ σωτήριον ὡς σαρκικὸς, καὶ ὡς πνευματικὸς ἐν αὐτῷ. τῷ Παύλῳ. *Epist. ad Smyrn.* Palpandum carnem Dominus præbuit, quam januis clausis introduxit, ut esse post resurrectionem ostenderet corpus suum & ejusdem naturæ & alterius gloriæ. *Greg. Hom. 26. in Evang.* Resurrexit Christus, absoluta res est. Corpus erat, caro erat, pendit in cruce, positus est in sepulchro, exhibuit illam vivam qui vivebat in illa, *Serm. 158. De Tempore.*

And that we might be assured of the Soul as well as of the Body, first he gave an argument of the vegetative and nutritive faculty, saying unto them, *Have ye here any meat? and they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb, and he took it and did eat before them:* Secondly, Of the sensitive part, conversing with them, shewing himself, seeing and hearing them: Thirdly, He gave evidence of his rational and intellectual Soul, by speaking to them and discoursing out of the Scriptures, concerning those things which he spake unto

them

* Ideo clausis
addiscipulos o-
stis introibat,
& statim suo da-
bat Spiritum
Sanctum, & da-
to intelligenti-
æ lumine san-
ctarum Scrip-
turarum oc-
cultis pande-
bat; & rursus
idem vulnus la-
teris, fixuras
clavorum, &
omni recentif-
simæ passionis
signa monstra-
bat, ut agnosce-
retur in eo
proprietas di-
vinæ humane-
que naturæ in-
dividuæ perma-
nere, *Leo vii.*
1. de Resurre-
ctione.
| Ut mediator
Dei & homi-
num homo
Christus Jesus
resurrectione
clarificaretur,
prius humili-
atus est passi-
one: non enim
à mortuis resurrexisset si mortuus non fuisset. Humilitas claritatis est meritum, claritas humilitatis est præmium, *S. Aug.*
Tract. 104. in Job.

them while he was yet with them. Thus did he shew, that the body which they saw was truly and vitally informed with an humane Soul. And that they might be yet further * assured that it was the same Soul by which that body lived before, he gave a full testimony of his divinity by the miracle which he wrought in the multitude of fishes caught, by breathing on the Apostles the Holy Ghost, and by ascending into Heaven in the sight of his Disciples. For being *no man ascended into heaven but he which came from heaven, the Son of man which was in heaven*, being the divinity was never so united to any humane Soul but only in that person, it appeared to be the same Soul with which he lived and wrought all the miracles before. To conclude, being *Christ* appeared after his death with the same body in which he died, and with the same Soul united to it, it followeth that *he rose from the dead* by a true and proper Resurrection.

Moreover, that the verity and propriety of *Christ's* Resurrection may further appear, it will be necessary to consider the cause thereof, by what power and by whom it was effected. And if we look upon the meritorious cause, we shall find it to be *Christ* himself. For he by his voluntary sufferings in his life, and exact obedience at his death, did truly deserve to be raised unto life again. Because he drunk of the Brook in the way, because he humbled himself unto death, even to the death of the Cross, therefore was it necessary that he should be exalted, and the first degree of his exaltation was his Resurrection. Now being *Christ* humbled himself to the sufferings both of Soul and Body; being whatsoever suffered, the same by the virtue and merit of his passion was to be exalted; being all other degrees of exaltation supposed that of the Resurrection; it followeth from the meritorious cause that *Christ* did truly rise from the dead with the same Soul and the same body, with which he lived united, and died separated.

The Efficient cause of the Resurrection of *Christ* is to be considered either as Principal or Instrumental. The Principal cause was God himself; for no other power but that which is omnipotent can raise the dead. It is an act beyond the activity of any creature, and unproportionate to the power of any finite Agent. *This Jesus hath God raised up*, saith the Apostle, *whereof we all are witnesses*. And generally in the Scriptures as our, so *Christ's* Resurrection is attributed unto God; and as we cannot hope after death to rise to life again without the activity of an infinite and irresistible power, no more did *Christ* himself, who was no otherwise raised than by an eminent act of God's omnipotency; which is excellently set forth by the Apostle, in so high an exaggeration of expressions, as I think is scarce to be parallell'd in any Author, * *That we may know what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of the might of his power which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him up from the dead*. Being then Omnipotency is a divine attribute, and infinite power belongs to God alone: being no less power than infinite could raise our Saviour from the dead; it followeth, That whatsoever instrumental action might concur, God must be acknowledged the principal Agent.

* Eph. 1. 19.
Εἰς τὸ ὑπερ-
βαλλόν μὴ με-
θούσας τὸ δύναμι-
ος αὐτοῦ, ὡς
τὸ ἔργον ἐν
τῇ ἐκείνῃ τῇ
ἐξουσίᾳ αὐτοῦ, ὃ
ἐποίησεν ἐν
τῷ Χριστῷ.

Which is our Translation copies for short of, and I doubt our Language can scarce reach it. For first, here are *δυνάμις* and *ἐξουσία*, two words to press the power of God and the validity and force of it, but not sufficient; wherefore there is an addition to each of them, *μὴ μεθούσας τὸ δύναμιος*, and *ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἐξουσίᾳ*, two words more to express the eminent greatness of this power and force but not sufficient yet, and therefore there is another addition to each addition, *τὸ ὑπερβαλλόν μὴ μεθούσας*, and *ἡ ἐκείνη ἐκείνη τῇ ἐξουσίᾳ*, to set forth the eminence and activity of that greatness; and all yet as it were but flat and dull, till it be quickened with an active verb, *ὃ ἐποίησεν ἐν τῷ Χριστῷ ἐκ νεκρῶν*. All which he yet on with all which he acted in *Christ*, when he raised him from the dead.

And

And therefore in the Scriptures the Raising of *Christ* is attributed to God the Father (according to those words of the Apostle, *Paul an Apostle not of men, neither by men, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father who raised him from the dead*) but it is not attributed to the Father alone. For to whomsoever that infinite power doth belong, by which *Christ* was raised, that person must be acknowledged to have raised him. And because we have already proved that the eternal Son of God is of the same essence, and consequently of the same power with the Father, and shall hereafter shew the same true also of the Holy Ghost, therefore we must likewise acknowledge that the || Father, Son, and Holy Ghost raised *Christ* from the dead. Nor is this only true by virtue of this ratiocination, but it is also delivered expressly of the Son, and that by himself. It is a weak fallacy used by the *Socinians*, who maintain That God the Father only raised *Christ*, and then say, they teach as much as the Apostles did, who attribute it always either generally unto God, or particularly to the Father. For if the Apostles taught it only so, yet if he which taught the Apostles, taught us something more, we must make that also part of our belief. They believe the Father raised *Christ*, because *S. Paul* hath taught them so, and we believe the same; they will not believe that *Christ* did raise himself, but we must also believe that, because he hath said so. These were his words unto the Jews, ^a *Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up*, and this is the explication of the Apostle, *But he spake of the temple of his body*, which he might very properly call a Temple, because ^b *the fulness of the Godhead dwelt in him bodily*. And when he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them, and they believed the Scripture and the word that Jesus had said. Now if upon the Resurrection of *Christ* the Apostles believed those words of *Christ*, *Destroy this temple, and I will raise it up*, then did they believe that *Christ* raised himself; for in those words there is a person mentioned which raised *Christ*, and no other person mentioned but himself.

|| Quis nisi solus Filius resurrexit, quia solus mori potuit qui carnem habuit? & tamen ab hoc opere quo solus Filius resurrexit non erat Pater alienus; de quo scriptum est, Qui suscitavit & mortuis Jesum. An forte se ipse non suscitavit? Et ubi est quod ait, Solvite templum hoc, & triiduo suscitabo illud; & quod potestatem habere se dicit ponendi & iterum sumendi animam suam? Quis autem ita desipiat, ut Spiritum Sanctum

resurrectionem hominis Christi dicat non co-operatum, cum ipsum hominem Christum fuerit operatus. *S. August. contra Serm. Arian. cap. 15.* ^a *John 2. 19, 21.* ^b *Coloss. 2. 9.*

A strange opposition they make to the evidence of this Argument, || saying, That God the Father raised *Christ* to life, and *Christ* being raised to life, did lift and raise his body out of the grave, as the man sick of the Palsie raised himself from the bed, or as we shall raise our selves out of the graves when the Trump shall sound: and this was all which *Christ* could do. But if this were true, and nothing else were to be understood in those words of our Saviour, he might as well have said, ^a *Destroy this temple, and in three days any one of you may raise it up*. For when life was restored unto it by God, any one of them might have lifted it up, and raised it out of the grave, and have shewn it alive.

This answer therefore is a meer shift: for to raise a body which is dead, is in the language of the Scriptures to give life unto it, or to quicken a mortal body. ^b ** For as the Father raiseth up the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth whom he will*. He then which quickeneth the dead bodies of others when he raiseth them, he also quickened his own body when he raised that. The temple is supposed here to be dissolved, and being so to be raised again; therefore the suscitation must answer to the dissolution. But the temple of *Christ*'s body was dissolved when his Soul was separated, nor was it any

|| Aliter Deus Christum suscitavit, aliter Christus corpus suum: Deus Christo vitam restituendo, Christus vitam recuperata corpus suum levando, & e sepulchro procedendo, seque post mortem vivum sistendo prae-bendoque. Sic & Paralysicus ille crexerat corpus suum, accepta à Christo sanitate: sic & omnes mortui surgent, & ex monumentis prodibunt, recepti

ab eodem Christo vita, *Confessionis Sociniane Vindices.*

^a *John 2. 19.*

^b *John 5. 21.*

νεκρῶν and ζωοποιῶν is the same thing; and therefore one in the Apodosis answereth to both in the Protasis, and sheweth that Christ raiseth and quickeneth whom he will, which demonstrateth his infinite and absolute Power. *Καὶ τοι τὸ, ὅτι ἐγὼ ζωοποιῶ*

in the same Soul, and the same body. For if we look upon the Father, it is beyond all controversy that he raised his own Son: and as while he was here alive, God spake from heaven, saying, *This is my well beloved Son*; so after his death it was the same person, of whom he spake by the Prophet, *Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee*. If we look upon *Christ* himself, and consider him with power to raise himself, there can be no greater assurance that he did totally and truly arise in Soul and body by that Divinity which was never separated either from the body or from the Soul. And thus we have sufficiently proved our second particular, the Verity, Reality, and Propriety of *Christ's* Resurrection, contained in those words, *He rose from the dead*.

The third Particular concerns the time of *Christ's* Resurrection, which is expressed by *the third day*; and those words afford a double consideration: one in respect of the distance of time, as it was after three days; the other in respect of the day, which was the third day from his Passion, and the precise day upon which he rose. For the first of these, we shall shew that the *Messias*, who was foretold both to die and to rise again, was not to rise before, and was to rise upon, the third day after his death; and that in correspondence to these predictions, our *Jesus*, whom we believe to be the true *Messias*, did not rise from the dead until, and did rise from the dead upon, the third day.

The typical predictions of this truth were two, answering to our two considerations, one in reference to the distance, the other in respect of the day it self. The first is that of the Prophet *Jonas*, who was in the belly of the great fish three days and three nights, and then by the special command of God he was rendred safe upon the dry land, and sent a Preacher of repentance to the great City of *Nineveh*. This was an express type of the *Messias* then to come, who was to preach repentance and remission of sins to all Nations; that as *Jonas* was three days and three nights in the whale's belly, so should the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth: and as he was restored alive unto the dry land again, so should the *Messias*, after three days, be taken out of the jaws of death, and restored unto the land of the living. Jon. 1. 17. & 2. 10.

The type in respect of the day was the waved sheaf in the feast of the first-fruits, concerning which this was the law of God by *Moses*, *When ye come into the land which I give unto you, and shall reap the harvest thereof, then ye shall bring a sheaf of the first-fruits of your harvest unto the Priest, and he shall wave the sheaf before the Lord to be accepted for you, on the morrow after the sabbath the Priest shall wave it, and ye shall offer that day when ye wave the sheaf an he-lamb without blemish of the first year for a burnt-offering unto the Lord*. For under the Levitical Law all the fruits of the earth in the land of *Canaan* were prophane; none might eat of them till they were consecrated, and that they were in the feast of the first-fruits. One sheaf was taken out of the field and brought to the Priest, who lifted up as it were in the name of all the rest, waving it before the Lord, and it was accepted for them, so that all the sheafs in the field were holy by the acceptation of that. *For if the first-fruits be holy, the lump is also holy*. And this was always done the day after the Sabbath, that is, the Paschal solemnity, after which the fulness of the harvest followed: by which thus much was foretold and represented, that as the sheaf was lifted up and waved, and the lamb was offered on that day by the Priest to God, so the promised *Messias*, that immaculate Lamb which was to die, that Priest which dying was to offer up himself to God, was upon this day to be lifted up and raised from the dead, or rather to shake and lift up and present himself to God, and so to be accepted for us all, that so our dust might be sanctified, our corruption hallowed, our mortality consecrated to eternity. Lev. 23. 105. Rom. 11. 16.

Thus was the Resurrection of the *Messias* after death, typically represented both in the distance and the day.

And now in reference to both resemblances, we shall clearly shew that our *Jesus*, whom we believe, and have already proved to be the true *Messias*, was so long and no longer dead, as to rise *the third day*; and did so order the time of his death, that the third day on which he rose might be that very day on which the sheaf was waved, the day after that Sabbath mentioned in the Law.

As for the distance between the Resurrection and the Death of *Christ*, it is to be considered, first, generally in it self, as it is some space of time; secondly, as it is that certain and determinate space of three days. *Christ* did not, would not, suddenly arise, lest any should doubt that he ever died. It was as necessary for us that he should die, as that he should live, and we, which are to believe them both, were to be assured as well of the one as of the other. That therefore we may be ascertained of his death, he did sometime continue it. || He might have descended from the Cross before he died, but he would not, because he had undertaken to die for us. * He might have revived himself upon the Cross after he had given up the ghost, and before *Joseph* came to take him down, but he would not, lest as *Pilate* questioned whether he were already dead, so he might doubt whether he ever died, The reward of his Resurrection was immediately due upon his Passion, but he deferred the receiving of it, lest either of them being questioned, they both might lose their efficacy and intended operation. It was therefore necessary that some space should intercede between them.

|| De cruce descendere poterat, sed differre-bar ut de sepulchro resurgeret. S. Aug. in Joh. Tract. 22.
* Ἡ δὲ κρίσις καὶ τὰς αὐτὰς τὸ θάνατον τὸ σῶμα διεγέρσει καὶ τάλιν δώσω ζωὴν.

ἀλλὰ καὶ ἵκτο καλῶς περιέδω. ὁ Σωτὴρ ἐπεποίηκε. Εἶπε γὰρ ἄλλῃς μὴδ' ὅλως αὐτὸ τεθυγκέναι, ἢ μὴδ' τέλειον αὐτὸ τὸν θάνατον ἐλκεῖν, ἢ πρὸ αὐτὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν ἡ δεικνύει. Τάχα καὶ ἐν ἰσῷ τῷ διασημαίῳ ὡς τὸ τε θανάτω τε καὶ τῆς ἀναστάσεως ἀδελφὸν ἐξέτερό το σῶμα τῆς ἀθανάτου καλέσθαι. Ὅθεν ἵνα δευχθῇ νεκρὸν τὸ σῶμα, καὶ μίαν ἐσέμενε μέσλιν ὁ Λόγος, καὶ τελευτῶν τὸ το πᾶσιν ἐδείξεν ἀρ' ἀρ' ἵσον, S. Athanas. de Incarnat. Verbi. Καὶ τρεῖς καὶ ἡμέρας διὰ τὸ το σώμα χεῖρην, ἵνα πεισθῇ ὅτι ἀπέθανεν, καὶ τὸ σώμα αὐτὸ μόνον βεβαιῶται, καὶ τῇ πάντων ὁφεί, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῇ χεῖρην τῇ ἡμερῶν, S. Chrysost. Homil. 43. in Matt.

Again, because *Christ*'s exaltation was due unto his humiliation, and the first step of that was his Resurrection; because the Apostles after his death were to preach repentance and remission of sins through his blood, who were no way qualified to preach any such doctrine till he rose again; because the Spirit could not be sent till he ascended, and he could not ascend into Heaven till he rose from the Grave; therefore the space between his Resurrection and Passion could not be long; nor can there be any reason assigned why it should any longer be deferred, when the verity of his death was once sufficiently proved. Lest therefore his Disciples should be long held in suspense, or any person after many days should doubt whether he rose with the same body with which he died, or no; that he might shew himself alive while the Soldiers were watching at his grave, and while his crucifixion was yet in the mouths of the people, he would not stay || many days before he rose. Some distance then of time there was, but not great, between his Crucifixion and his Resurrection.

|| Ἐνεκα μὲν ἐν τῷ δευχθῶναι τὸ θάνατον ἐν τῷ σώματι τελευτῶν ἀνάστα τὸ το. ἵνα καὶ μὴ ὅτι πολὺ διαμῆναι καὶ θάνατον τέλειον ὕστερον ἀνάστασις ἀπεισθῇ, ὡς ἐκ αὐτὸ ἀλλ' ἔτερον σῶμα εἶρην (ἐμελλεῖν) τις καὶ δι' αὐτὸν χρόνον ἀπισταῖν πρὸ σώματος καὶ ἀποθανεῖν τῷ σώματι διὰ τὸ το πᾶσι τῶν πνεύματων καὶ τῷ πολὺ τῶν ἐκείνων αὐτὰ πρὸ ἀναστάσεως παρήλκυσεν. ἀλλ' ἔτι τῷ σώματι αὐτῷ ἵνα αὐτὸν ἐχθρῶν καὶ ἀγόνων, καὶ τῷ ὁρθοκλήτῳ αὐτῷ ἐκ δεχομένων, καὶ τῇ διανοίᾳ αὐτῷ ἐρηπιαίης, καὶ ζώων ὅτι γὰρ ἐτι καὶ ὅτι τὸ πᾶσιν ὅλων τῷ θανάτῳ πάντων καὶ ἐκείνων τῶν ἀνὰ τὸ σῶμα καὶ σῶματι, αὐτὸς ὁ το Θεὸς ὅς ἐν τῷ σώματι τῷ σώματι τῷ σώματι νεκρὸν σῶμα ἐδείξεν ἀθάνατον. Ibid.

The particular length of this space is determined in *the third day*: but that expression being capable of some diversity of interpretation, it is not so easily conclu-

Mat. 12. 40.

Matt. 27. 62.

Mark 8. 32.

John 2. 19.

Mark 14. 58.

² *Mull.* 16. 35.

17. 22.

20. 10.

Mark 9. 21.

10. 34.

Luke 9. 22.

18. 33.

24.7, 46.

Acts 10. 40.

1 Cor. 15. 4.
11. 7. 6. 6.

|| These several
*thence are used

phrases are used;
first that Christ

was in the heart

of the earth

τρεῖς ἡμέρας.

κὶ τρεῖς κύματα·

secondly, that he

was to rise up

τρῆς ἡμέρας·

thirdly, that he

would rebuild

this Temple on

πειπὼν μέγα

and did ter-

ων ημερων ·

and lastly, that
benefit = \sim = 1

which

is the most gene-

ral and constant

form of speech.

∴ Lazarus is

said to be 73-

ταρταῖς, four

sepulchre. And

Feuer

terra. Quidam παρασκευῇ, quando Sole fugiente, ab hora sexta usque ad horam nonam nox successit diei, in duas dies & noctes dividunt, & apponentes Sabbatum, tres dies & tres noctes affirmant supputandas: nos verò παρασκευῇ totum intelligamus à parte; ut ex eo quod ἐν παρασκευῇ mortuus est, unam diem supputemus & noctem, & Sabbati alteram; tertiam verò noctem, quæ diei Dominicæ nuncupatur. referamus ad exordium diei alterius: nam & in Genesi nox præcedentis diei (add non) est sed sequentis, id est, principium futuri, non finis præteriti. To the same purpose S. Augustine, Ipsum autem triduum non totum & plenum fuisse Scriptura testis est; sed primus dies à parte extrema totus annumeratus est; dies verò tertius à parte prima & ipse totus; medius autem inter eos, i. e. secundus dies absolute totus viginti quatuor horis suis, duodecim nocturnis & duodecim diurnis. Crucifixus est enim primo Judæorum vocibus hora tertia, cum esset dies sexta Sabbati. Deinde, in ipsa cruce suspensus est hora sexta, & spiritum reddidit hora nona. Sepultus est autem cum jam sero factum esset: sic sese habent verba Evangelii, quod intelligitur in fine diei. Unde libet ergo incipias, etiamsi alia ratio reddi potest, quomodo non sit contra Evangelium Johannis, ut hora tertia ligno suspensus intelligatur, totum diem primum non comprehendis. Ergo à parte extrema totus computabitur, sicut tertius à parte prima. Nox enim usque ad diluculum quo Domini resurrectio declarata est, ad tertium diem pertinet, De Trinit. l. 4. c. 6. And after him Leo the Great. Ne turbatos Discipulorum animos longa mœstitudo cruciaret, denunciata tridui moram tam mira celeritate brevavit, ut dum ad integrum secundum diem pars primi novissima & pars tertii prima concurrat, & aliquantum temporis spacio decideret, & nihil dierum numero deperiret. De Resur. Domini, Serm. 1. Isidor. Pelus. Epist. 114. l. 1.

This is sufficient for the clearing the precise distance of *Christ's* Resurrection from his Crucifixion, expressed in the determinate number of three days: the next consideration is, what day of the week that *third day* was, on which *Christ* did actually rise, and what belongeth to that day in relation to his Resurrection. Two characters there are which will evidently prove the particularity of this third day: the first is the description of that day in respect of which this is called the *third*, after the manner already delivered and confirmed; the second is the Evangelists expression of the time on which *Christ* rose.

The character of the day in which our Saviour died is undeniable, for it is often expressly called the || *preparation*; as we read, they therefore laid *Jesus* in the garden, ^a *because of the Jews preparation day, for the supulchre was nigh at hand.* And ^b *the next day that followed the preparation, the chief Priests and Pharisees* asked a guard. Now this day of preparation was the day immediately before the Sabbath or some other great feast of the *Jews* called by them the Eve of the Sabbath or the Feast: and therefore called the preparation, because on that day they did prepare whatsoever was necessary for the celebration of the following Festival; according to that command in the case of Manna, ^c *It shall come to pass that on the sixth day they shall prepare that which they bring in, and it shall be twice as much as they gather daily.* This preparation being used both before the Sabbath and other Festivals, at this time it had both relations: for first, it was the preparation to a Sabbath, as appeareth by those words of S. Mark, ^d *Now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath;* and those of S. Luke, ^e *That day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drew on.* Secondly, It was also the Eve of a Festival, even of the great day of the Paschal solemnity, as appeareth by S. John, who saith, when *Pilate* sat down in the Judgment-seat, ^f *it was the preparation of the Passover.* And that the great Paschal Festivity did then fall upon the Sabbath, so that the same day was then the preparation or Eve of both, appeareth yet farther by the same Evangelist, saying, *The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the Cross on the Sabbath day, for that Sabbath day was an high day;* that is, not only an ordinary or weekly Sabbath, but also a great Festival, even a Paschal Sabbath. Now being the Sabbath of the *Jews* was constant and fixed to the seventh day of the week, it followeth that the Preparation or Eve thereof must necessarily be the sixth day of the week, which from the day and the infinite benefit accruing to us by the Passion upon that day, we call *Good Friday*. And from that day being the sixth of one, the third must consequently be the * eighth or the first of the next week.

|| Παρασκευῇ, Parascève interpretatur preparatio, saith S. Augustine, and in the Greek Language it signifieth generally any preparation of what nature soever: but in this case it signifieth rather the time in which preparation was made; as Luke 23. 54. Καὶ ἡμερῶν παρασκευῇ and that preparation among the Jews for the Sabbath; as S. Mark 15. 42. Ἐπεὶ ἦν παρασκευῇ ὁ δὲ προσέβλεπον and in the Edit of Augustus Cæsar, ἐγγύας τῇ μὴ ὁμολογῆν ἐν σάββατον, ἢ τῇ πελάτης παρασκευῇ στὸ ὄρας ἐνάτης, Jud. Ant. l. 6. c. 10. which is well expressed by Synchius, Ep. 4. Ἡμέρα μὲν ὅν ἦν, ὡς τινὰ ἀ-

γινον οἱ Ἰουδαῖοι παρασκευῇ. ἥ ὅτι κατὰ τὴν μέσιν αὐτὴν ἡμέραν λορίζονται καθ' ἣν ἡδεῖ δέμις ἐδὲν ἐπερδὸν ἔχειν ἥ χεῖρα, ἀλλὰ τιμωρὲς διατρέφοντες αὐτὴν ἀγασιν ἀποτρέφον. This παρασκευῇ of the Hebrews was answerable to the ævena pura of

of the Gentiles, as the old Glossary, Coena pura, *τεσσεράτων*, & in Gloss. Latino-Arabico, Parasceue coena pura, id est, preparatio qua fit pro sabbato. From whence some of the Fathers interpret the Eve of the Jewish Sabbath, as Tertullian. Dies observatus & mens & tempora & annos & sabbata, ut opinor, & coenas puras, & jejunia & dies magnos. *Adv. Marcion. l. 5. c. 4.* Acceleraram vult intelligi sepulturam ne advesperasceret, quando jam propter parasceuen, quam coenam puram Judaei Latine ulitius apud nos vocant, facere tale quid non licebat. *S. Aug. Tract. 76. in Job.* And the ancient Translators of the Greek Fathers did use the Latin coena pura, for the Greek *παρασκευὴ*. As the Interpreter of S. Chrysostom, *Serm. in Natalem Joh. Bapt.* Quia enim die conceptus est Dominus, eadem die & passus est; eadem ipsa die coena pura fuit, in qua & luna quattodecima occurrit. So likewise the old Interpreter of Irenaeus, Parasceue quae dicitur coena pura, id est, sexta feria, quam & dominus ostendit passus in ea. *Iren. l. 5. c. 23. & lib. 1.* Moleni sexta die disisse, qua est in coena pura. As therefore the coena pura among the Gentiles was that time in which they prepared and sanctified themselves for their sacred Solemnities, so the Jews and make use of that word to signify their sanctification, and of the Greek *παρασκευὴ* to testify the preparation of all things used on their holy days, upon the Eve thereof, or day before. Parasceue Latine preparatio est, sed isto verbo Graeco libentius utuntur Judaei in hujusmodi observationibus, etiam qui magis Latine quam Graece loquuntur, saith *S. Aug. Tract. 117. in Job.* So that the same Father testifieth that the Jews speaking Latin in his time, did sometimes use parasceue, sometimes coena pura, for their Eve of preparation. Otherwise in their own Language they called it *ערב* or *ערבה*; by which generally, they understood the sixth day of the week, the day before the Sabbath. For so they reckoned the days of the week in Beroth Rabbba, *ה' בשבתא* the first of the week, *ב' תר* the second, *ג' תרתא* the third, *ד' רבועא* the fourth, *ה' רבועא* the fifth, *ו' ערבא* the Eve, *ז' שבתא* the Sabbath. Thus in Hebrew *ערבה*, in Greek *παρασκευὴ*, in Latin Coena pura, were used by the Jews for the same day, the Friday or sixth of the week; but not for that alone, but for the Eve of any great Festival which answered to a Sabbath, so that they had their *ערבה*, and *יום טוב*, and *ערב*, as *παρασκευὴ τῆς σαββάτου*, and *παρασκευὴ τῆς Πάσχα*. And when a great Festival fell upon the Sabbath, then as the Festivities were both one day, so the Eve to both was the same Friday. And such was the day of preparation on which our Saviour was crucified. ^a John 19. 42. ^b Matt. 27. 62. ^c Exod. 16. 5. ^d Mark 15. 42. ^e Luke 23. 54. ^f John 19. 14. * *Ὁρᾶτε πῶς λέγει, ὅτι τὰ ἰὺ σαββάτα ἐμοὶ δευτὰ, ἀλλὰ ἂν πεποίηκα, ἐν τῷ καταπαύσαις τὰ πρῶτα ἀρχὴν ἡμέρας ὁδοῦ ποιήσω, ὅτι ἄλλο κόσμος ἀρχὴν. διὸ καὶ ἀγορεύω τὴν ἡμέραν τὴν ὁδοῦ εἰς ἐπεσπύλωσιν, ἐν ᾧ καὶ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἀνέστη ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ φανερωθεὶς ἀνέβη εἰς τοὺς οὐρανούς. Barnabas Epist. c. 11.* *Ἡ μὲν οὖν τῇ τιμῇ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἀνάπαυσις ἐν κυριακῇ ἐν ὁδοῦ ἡ κυριακῇ ὀνομάζεται. Theodorus Epist. 1.* *Ἡ δ' ἐντολὴ τῆς σπειρομένης καλῶς τῇ ὁδοῦ ἡμέρας ἐκ παντὸς σπειρομένη τὰ ὀνόματα, τύπῃ τῇ τῶν ἀνθρώπων σπειρομένης τῇ σπειρομένης καὶ τῶν πλάνης καὶ ποικίλης, διὰ τὸ τὸ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν ἐν μία τῇ σαββάτων ἡμέρᾳ. Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς τὸ κύριος ἡμῶν. Μία γὰρ τῇ σαββάτων πρώτη μὴν τῇ πασῶν ἡμερῶν, καὶ τῇ ἀειζῶν πάλιν τῇ πασῶν ἡμερῶν τῆς καλλοποιίας, ὁδοῦ καλῶν, καὶ πρώτῃ οὐ μὴν. Justinus Dial. cum Tryphone.* Cum in septimo die Sabbati nomen sit & observantia constituta, tamen nos in octava die quae & ipsa prima est, perfecti Sabbati festivitate laetamur. *S. Hilar. Comm. in Psal. Prol.* Hac octava sententia quae ad caput redit, perfectumque hominem declarat, significatur fortasse & circumcisio octava die in veteri Testamento, & Domini resurrectione post Sabbatum, quod est utique octavus idemque primus dies. *S. Augustin. de Serm. Dom. in monte, l. 1. c. 11.* Καὶ τὸ ἐθῆ καὶ τὸ πρῶτον ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τῶν κυριακῶν τιμῶν καὶ ἐν ταύτῃ πανηγυρίζον, ἐπειδὴ ἐν ταύτῃ ὁ κύριος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς τὸ ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν ἡμῶν ἐπετυγχάνει. διὸ καὶ ἐν τῇ ἡμέρᾳ τῇ πρώτῃ κέκληται, ὡς ἀρχὴ ζωῆς ἡμῶν ὑπαρχοῦσα, καὶ ὁδοῦ, ἀπὸ τῆς ἀποβροχῆς τῇ τῶν Ἰουδαίων σαββατισμῶν. Theophilus Alexand.

The next Character of this third day is the expression of the time of the
Mark 15. 1, 2. Resurrection in the Evangelists. *When the Sabbath was past*, saith S. Mark, which was the day after the preparation on which he was buried, *very early in the morning the first day of the week.* In the end of the Sabbath, as it began
Matt. 28. 1. *to dawn towards the first day of the week*, saith S. Matthew. Upon the first day
Luke 24. 1. *of the week early in the morning*, saith S. Luke. The first day of the week early
John 20. 1. *when it was yet dark*, saith S. John. By all which indications it appeareth that the body of Christ being laid in the sepulchre on the day of the preparation, which was the Eve of the Sabbath, and continuing there the whole Sabbath following, which was the conclusion of that week, and farther resting there still and remaining dead the night which followed that Sabbath, but belonged to the first day of the next week, about the end of that night early in the morning, was revived by the accession and union of his Soul, and rose again out of the sepulchre.

Whereby it came to pass, that the obligation of the day, which was then the Sabbath, died and was buried with him, but in a manner by a diurnal transmutation revived again at his Resurrection. Well might that day which carried with it a remembrance of that great deliverance from the Egyptian servitude resign all the Sanctity or Solemnity due unto it, when that morning once appeared upon which a far greater Redemption was confirmed. One day of seven was set apart by God in imitation of his rest upon the Creation of the world, and that seventh day which was sanctified to the Jews was reckoned in relation to their deliverance from Egypt. At the second delivery
Deut. 5. 15. of the Law we find this particular cause assigned, *Remember that thou wast a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the Lord thy God brought thee out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm, therefore the Lord thy God,*
com-

commanded thee to keep the Sabbath-day. Now this could not be any special reason why the *Jews* should observe a seventh day; first, because in reference to their redemption, the number of seven had no more relation than any other number; secondly, because the reason of a seventh day was before rendered in the body of the commandment it self. There was therefore a double reason rendered by God why the *Jews* should keep that Sabbath which they did, one Special, as to a seventh day, to shew they worshipped that God who was the Creatour of the World; the other Individual, as to that seventh day, to signify their deliverance from the *Ægyptian* bondage, from which that seventh day was dated.

Being then upon the Resurrection of our Saviour a greater deliverance and far more plenteous redemption was wrought than that of *Ægypt*, and therefore a greater observance was due unto it than to that, the individual determination of the day did pass upon a stronger reason to another day, always to be repeated by a seventh return upon the reference to the Creation. As there was a change in the year at the coming out of *Ægypt*, by the command of God: *This month, the month of Abib, shall be unto you the beginning of months, it shall be the first month of the year to you*, so at this time of a more eminent deliverance a change was wrought in the Hebdomadal or weekly account, and the first day is made the seventh, or the seventh after that first is sanctified. The first day because on that *Christ* rose from the dead, and the seventh day from that first for ever, because he who rose upon that day was the same God who created the world, and rested on the seventh day; *For by him all things were created that are in heaven and that are in the earth, all things were created by him and for him.* Exod. 12. 2.
Coloss. 1. 16.

This day did the Apostles from the beginning most religiously observe, by their meeting together for holy purposes and to perform religious duties. The first observation was performed providentially, rather by the design of God than any such inclination or intention of their own: *For the same day, saith the Evangelist, that is the day on which Christ rose from the dead, at evening, being the first day of the week, the Disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews.* The second observation was performed voluntarily, *for after eight days again his Disciples were within, and Thomas with them: the first day of the week, when Christ rose by the providence of God, the Disciples were together, but Thomas was absent; upon the first day of the next week, they were all met together again in expectation of our Saviour, and Thomas with them.* Again, *when the day of Pentecost was fully come, which was also the first day of the week, they were all with one accord in one place, and having received the promise of the Holy Ghost they spake with tongues, preached the Gospel, and the same day were added unto them above three thousand souls.* The same practice of convening we find continued in the following years. *For upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them: and the same Apostle gave express command concerning the collection for the Saints both to the Churches of Galatia and of Corinth, Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him.* John 20. 19.
John 20. 26.
Acts 2. 1.
Acts 2. 41.
Acts 20. 7.
1 Rev. 1. 10.

From this Resurrection of our Saviour, and the constant practice of the Apostles, this first day of the week came to have the name of the *Lord's day*, and is so called by *S. John*, who says of himself in the *Revelation*, *I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day.* And thus the observation of that day, which the *Jews* did sanctify, ceased, and was buried with our Saviour, and in the stead of it, the religious observation of || that day on which the Son of God rose from the dead, by the constant practice of the blessed Apostles was transmitted to the Church of God, and so continued in all Ages.

κοινωνία πάντες τὴν σωτηρίαν ποιεῖν, ἐπειδὴν ἐργάτη ἔσιν ἡμεῖς ἐν ᾧ ὁ Θεὸς τὸ σκότος καὶ τὴν ὕλην τρέφει, κόσμον ἁγιάσας

Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead. First, because without it our Faith is vain, and by virtue of it, strong. By this we are assured that he which died was the Lord of life, and though he were crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God. By this Resurrection from the dead, he was declared to be the Son of God, and upon the morning of the third day did those words of the Father manifest a most important truth, *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.* In his death he assured us of his humanity, by his Resurrection he demonstrated his Divinity.

Secondly, by the Resurrection we are assured of the justification of our persons, and if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead, it will be imputed to us for righteousness: For he was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification. By his death we know that he suffered for sin, by his Resurrection we are assured that *the sins for which he suffered were not his own: had no man been a sinner he had not died; had he been a sinner he had not risen again: but dying for those sins which we committed, he rose from the dead to shew that he had made full satisfaction for them, that we believing in him might obtain remission of our sins, and justification of our persons, ^a God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh; for sin condemned sin in the flesh, and raising up our surety from the prison of the grave, did actually absolve, and apparently acquit him from the whole obligation, to which he had bound himself, and in discharging him acknowledged full satisfaction made for us. ^b Who then shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth, who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again.

ὁ ἀνέστη, ἐδύνηλον ὅτι ἀμαρτωλὸς ἔκ ἡν; εἰ δὲ ἀμαρτωλὸς ἔκ ἡν, πῶς ἐσαυρώθη; δι' ἑτέρους· εἰ δὲ δι' ἑτέρους, πᾶν ἡμῶν ἀνέστη. ^a Rom. 8. 3. ^b Rom. 8. 33, 34.

2 Cor. 13. 4.

Rom. 1. 4.

Acts 13. 33.

Rom. 4. 24, 25.

* S. Chrysostom excellently upon that place, *Ὁ γὰρ πᾶς ἡμῶν αἰτίαν ἔπαυτο τοῦ θανάτου, καὶ αὐτὴν καὶ ὑποδείξιν τῆς ἀναστάσεως ποιεῖται.* Διὰ τὴν γὰρ ἐσαυρώσθην, ζητήσις ἐστὶ τοῦ κτείναν ἀμαρτίαν· καὶ δύλον ἐκ τῆς ἀναστάσεως· εἰ γὰρ ἦν ἀμαρτωλός, πῶς ἀνέστη; καὶ πᾶς ἀνέστη; καὶ

Thirdly, it was necessary to pronounce the Resurrection of Christ as an Article of our Faith, that thereby we might ground, confirm, strengthen and declare our hope. For the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, unto an inheritance uncorruptible and undefiled. By the Resurrection of Christ his Father hath been said to have begotten him; and therefore by the same he hath begotten us, who are called brethren and co-heirs with Christ. For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more being reconciled we shall be saved by his life. He laid down his life, but it was for us; and being to take up his own, he took up ours. We are the members of that body of which Christ is the head; if the Head be risen, the members cannot be far behind. He is the first-born from the dead, and we the sons of the Resurrection. The Spirit of Christ abiding in us maketh us the members of Christ, and by the same spirit we have a full right and title to rise with our Head. For if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in us, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken our mortal bodies by his spirit that dwelleth in us. Thus the Resurrection of Christ is the cause of our resurrection by a double causality, as an Efficient, and as an Exemplary cause. As an efficient cause, in regard our Saviour by and upon his Resurrection hath obtained power and right to raise all the dead; For as in Adam all die, so in Christ shall all be made alive. As an exemplary cause, in regard that all the Saints of God shall rise after the similitude and in conformity to the Resurrection of Christ; For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection. He shall change our vile bodies that they may be like unto his glorious body: That as we have born the image of the earthy, we may also bear

1 Pet. 1. 3.

Rom. 1. 10.

Col. 1. 12.

Rom. 8. 11.

1 Cor. 15. 22.

Rom. 6. 5.

Phil. 3. 21.

1 Cor. 15. 49.

the image of the heavenly. This is the great hope of a Christian, That *Christ* rising from the dead hath obtained the power, and is become the pattern, of his Resurrection. *The breaker is come up before them: they have broken up and have passed through the gate, their King shall pass before them, and the Lord on the head of them.*

*Ephes. 2. 5.
Rom. 6. 4.*

Fourthly, it is necessary to profess our Faith in *Christ* risen from the dead, that his Resurrection may effectually work its proper operation in our lives. For as it is efficient and exemplary to our Bodies, so it is also to our Souls. *When we were dead in sins, God quickned us together with Christ.* And, *as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we should walk in newness of life.* To continue among the graves of sin while *Christ* is risen, is to incur that reprehension of the Angel, *why seek ye the living among the dead?* To walk in any habitual sin, is either to deny that sin is death, or *Christ* is risen from the dead. Let then *the dead bury the dead*, but let not any Christian bury him who rose from death that he might live. *Awake, thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.* There must be a spiritual Resurrection of the Soul before there can be a comfortable Resurrection of the Body. *Blessed and holy is he that hath part in this first resurrection, on such the second death hath no power.*

Ephes. 5. 14.

Rev. 20. 6.

Having thus explained the manner of *Christ's* Resurrection, and the necessity of our faith in him risen from the dead, we may easily give such a brief account as any Christian may understand what it is he should intend when he makes profession of this part of the Creed; for he is conceived to acknowledge thus much, I freely and fully assent unto this as a truth of infinite certainty and absolute necessity, That the eternal Son of God, who was crucified and died for our sins, did not long continue in the state of death, but by his infinite power did revive and raise himself by re-uniting the same Soul which was separated to the same body which was buried, and so rose the same man: and this he did the third day from his death; so that dying on *Friday* the sixth day of the week, the day of the preparation of the *Sabbath*, and resting in the grave the *Sabbath-day*, on the morning of the first day of the week he returned unto life again, and thereby consecrated the weekly revolution of that first day to a religious observation until his coming again. And thus I believe *the third day he rose again from the dead.*

ARTICLE VI.

He ascended into Heaven, and sitteth on the Right Hand
of God the Father Almighty.

THIS Article hath received no variation, but only in the addition of the name of God, and the attribute *Almighty*; the * Ancients using it briefly thus, *He ascended into Heaven, sitteth at the right hand of the Father*. It containeth two distinct parts: one transient, the other permanent: one as the way, the other as the end: the first is *Christ's* Ascension, the second is his Session.

* Ascendit in
cœlos, sedet ad
dextram Pa-
tris. *Ruffinus in*
Symb. S. Aug.
in Enchirid.
Maximus Tau-
rin. Chrysol.
Autor Expos.

Symb. ad Catechumenos, Venantius Fortunatus, the Latin and Greek MSS. set forth by the Arch-bishop of Armagh. S. Augst. de Fide & Symb. hath it, Seder ad dextram Dei Patris; to which was afterwards added Omnipotentis. Seder ad dextram Patris omnipotentis. Euseb. Gallican. Sedet ad dextram Dei Patris omnipotentis, Etherius Uxam. & Author Sermonum de Tempore, the Greek and Latin MSS. in Bennet College Library.

In the Ascension of *Christ* these words of the Creed propound to us three considerations and no more : the first of the Person, *He* ; the second of the Action, *ascended* ; the third of the Termination *into heaven*. Now the Person being perfectly the same which we have considered in the precedent Articles, he will afford no different speculation but only in conjunction with this particular Action. Wherefore I conceive these three things necessary and sufficient for the illustration of *Christ's* Ascension : First, to shew that the promised *Messias* was to ascend into Heaven ; Secondly, to prove that our *Jesus*, whom we believe to be the true *Messias*, did really and truly ascend thither ; Thirdly, to declare what that heaven is, into which he did ascend.

That the promised *Messias* should ascend into Heaven, hath been represented typically, and declared prophetically. The High-priest under the Law was an expresse type of the *Messias* and his Priestly Office; the atonement which he made was the representation of the propitiation in *Christ* for the sins of the world: for the making this atonement, the High-priest was appointed once every year to enter into the Holy of Holies, and no oftner. For the Lord said unto Moses, *Speak unto Aaron thy brother, that he come not at all times into the Holy place within the Vail before the Mercy-seat, which is upon the Ark, that he die not.* None entered into that Holy Place but the High-priest alone; and he himself could enter thither but once in the year; and thereby shewed that the *High-priest of the good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle not made with hands, was to enter into the Holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.* The Jews did all * believe that the Tabernacle did signifie this World, and the Holy of Holies the highest Heavens; wherefore as the High-priest did slay the Sacrifice, and with the blood thereof did pass through the rest of the Tabernacle, and with that blood enter into the Holy of Holies; so was the *Messias* here to offer up himself, and being slain to pass through all the Courts of this world below, and with his blood to enter into the highest Heavens, the most glorious seat of the Majesty of God. Thus *Christ's* Ascension was represented typically.

Lev. 15. 2.

Heb. 9. 11, 12.

* Εἰ τις τῶς
σκληρῶς κατα-
νοήσῃ τὴν
πίστιν, καὶ πε-
ριεραστῇ τὴν
σοφίαν τὰ τε
καὶ οἷς περὶ
τὴν ἰερωσύνην
ῥημένα· τὸν
τε νομοθετῶν
ἀποστολὴν
ἀνδρῶν καὶ μα-
κρῶν, οἷς ἀπο-
στολὴν καὶ ἡ
καὶ ὡς ταῦτα
ῥημένοι. Ἰωάν.
Αντ.

antiqu. l. 5. c. 8. Where it is to be observed, that the place which S. Paul calls the first Tabernacle, Josephus terms βέβηλον τινα καὶ κοινὸν τόπον, a common and prophane place, as representing this world in which we live, and our life and conversation here: as the Apostle seems to speak, Heb. 9. Εἶτε τὸ ἅλ. καὶ πρῶτον σκηνὴ διανομή, λαβὴν αὐτὸ τὸ ἄγιον κοσμηκόν. For ἄγιον κοσμηκόν sanctum secular, or as the syriack עולםא בית קודשא donus sancta mun-ana, may well be that part of the Tabernacle which represented this world, and therefore termed common and prophane in respect of that more holy part which represented heaven.

The same Ascension was also declared prophetically, as we read in the Prophet David, *Thou hast ascended up on high, thou hast led captivity captive, thou hast received gifts for men*: which phrase *on high* in the Language of David signifying Heaven, could be applied properly to no other conquerour but the Messiah, not to Moses, not to David, not to Joshua, not to any but the Christ; who was to conquer sin, and death, and hell, and triumphing over them to ascend unto the highest Heavens, and thence to send the precious and glorious gifts of the Spirit unto the sons of men. The Prophecy of Micah did foretel as much, even in the opinion and confession of the *Jews themselves, by those words, *The breaker is come up before them: they have broken up and have passed through the gates and are gone out by it; and their Kings shall pass before them, and the Lord at the head of them*. And thus Christ's Ascension was declared prophetically as well as typically; which was our first Consideration.

ascension was declared prophetically as well as typically; which was our first Consideration.

that is in the language of the Chaldee Paraphrase, **לבי שִׁנְחַךְ תֵּב**, return to the house of thy majesty; and Psal. 93. 4. **אֵיךְ** בשמי מרום, in the upper heavens. Psal. 71. 19. Thy righteousness, O Lord, is **עַד מְרוֹם** usque ad excelsum; the Chaldee again, **עַד שְׁמֵי מְרוֹמָא**. In the same manner in this place, **עָלִית לְמְרוֹם**, thou hast ascended high, the Chaldee Paraphrase translateth **סִלְקַתָּ לְרָקִיעַ** thou hast ascended the firmament: and he addeth immediately **מֹשֶׁה נְבִיא** O thou Prophet Moses: yet there is a plain contradiction in that interpretation; for if it were meant of Moses it cannot be the firmament; if it were the firmament, it cannot be understood of Moses, for he never ascended thither. * This breaker up is by the confession of the Jews the title of the Messias. So the Author of Sepher Abchath Ruchal in his description of the coming of the Messias maketh use of this place. And the same appeareth farther by that saying of Moses Haddarshan in Bereshit Rabba, **נִטְעָה מִן מַטֵּה זֶה אֲבִרָהִם נִטְעָה מִלְכָּעֵדָה** The plantation from below is Abraham, the plantation from above is Messias, as it is written, *the breaker is come up before them*, &c. So he on Gen. 40. 9. *Again the same Bereshit Rabba*, Gen. 44. 18. **אֲמִיתִי וְהִנֵּה רַגְלֵי הַשְּׁכִינָה עַל הַר הַחַיִּים** When shall we rejoice? when the feet of the Shecinah shall stand upon the Mount of Olives; and again, **אֲמִיתִי וְהִנֵּה בְּרָאשׁם** When? when the captives shall ascend from Hell, and Shecinah in the head, as it is written (*Mic. 2. 13.*) *Their King shall pass before them, and the Lord in the head of them.*

Secondly, whatsoever was thus represented and foretold of the promised *Messias*, was truly and really performed by our *Jesus*. That only begotten and eternal Son of God, who by his divinity was present in the Heavens while he was on earth, did by a local translation of his humane nature, really and truly ascend from this earth below on which he lived, into the heavens above, or rather above all the heavens, in the same body, and the Soul with which he lived and died and rose again.

The Ascent of Christ into Heaven was not metaphorical or figurative, as if there were no more to be understood by it, but only that he obtained a more heavenly and glorious state or condition after his Resurrection. For whatsoever alteration was made in the body of Christ when he rose, whatsoever glorious qualities it was invested with thereby, that was not his Ascension, as appeareth by those words which he spake to *Mary*, *Touch me not, for I am not yet ascended to my Father*. Although he had said before to *Nicodemus*, *No man ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven*; which words imply that he had then ascended: yet even those concern not this Ascension. For that was therefore only true, because the Son of man, not yet conceived in the Virgins womb, was not in Heaven, and after his conception by vertue of the hypostatical union was in Heaven; from whence speaking after the manner of men, he might well say, that he had ascended into Heaven; because whatsoever was first on Earth and then in Heaven, we say ascended into Heaven. Wherefore beside that

John 20. 17.

John 3. 13.

that grounded upon the hypostatical union, beside that glorious condition upon his Resurrection, there was yet another and that more proper Ascension: for after he had both those ways ascended, it was still true that he had not yet ascended to his Father.

Now this kind of Ascension, by which Christ had not yet ascended when he spake to *Mary* after his Resurrection, was not after to be performed; for at the same time he said unto *Mary*, *Go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father*. And when this Ascension was performed, it appeared manifestly to be a true local translation of the Son of man as man from these parts of the world below into the heavens above, by which that body which was before locally present here on earth, and was not so then present in heaven, became substantially present in heaven, and no longer locally present in earth. For *when he had spoken unto the Disciples, and blessed them*, laying his hands upon them, and so was corporally present with them, *even while he blessed them he parted from them, and while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight, and so he was carried up into heaven, while they looked stedfastly towards heaven as he went up*. This was a visible departure, as it is described, a real removing of that body of *Christ* which was before present with the Apostles; and that body living after the Resurrection, by virtue of that soul which was united to it: and therefore the Son of God according to his humanity was really and truly translated from these parts below unto the heavens above, which is a proper local ascension.

Thus was Christ's Ascension visibly performed in the presence and sight of the Apostles, for the confirmation of the reality and the certainty thereof.

* They did not see him when he rose, but they saw him when he ascended; because an eye-witness was not necessary unto the act of his Resurrection, but it was necessary unto the act of his Ascension. It was sufficient that *Christ shewed himself to the Apostles alive after his passion*; for being they knew him before to be dead, and now saw him alive, they were thereby assured that he rose again: for whatsoever was a proof of his life after death, was a demonstration of his Resurrection. But being the Apostles were not to see our Saviour in heaven, being the Session was not to be visible to them on earth, therefore it was necessary they should be eye-witnesses of the act who were not with the same eyes to behold the effect.

λατ' ἐκέτι· παρῆλκε γὰρ ἐκ τῶν τῶν ἀρχῶν ἰδεῖν, αὐτὸς τὰ ταῦτα οὐρανοῦ παρῆλκε, καὶ τὰ μνῆμ' αὐτοῦ δὴ ἐστὶν ἐκεῖ· ἄλλα τὸ μὴ τὸτο λόγῳ ἔδει μαθεῖν, S. Chr. Hom. 2. in Act. Apost.

* Βλεπόντων
αὐτὸν ἀνέστη,
βλεπόντων δ'
ἐπὶ τῇ ἐπι-
στάσει ἐν ταῦτα
ἡ ὁφείλει τὸ πᾶν
ἔσχυσε· καὶ γὰρ
τὸ ἀναστῆναι
τὸ μὴ τέλει
ἦδον, καὶ τὸ ἀρ-
χὴν ἐκείνῃ· καὶ
τὸ ἀναλήψαι
τὴν αὐτὴν ἀρχὴν
ἦδον, τὸ δὲ τῆ-

Beside the eye-witness of the Apostles, there was added the testimony of the Angels; those blessed Spirits which ministred before, and saw the face of God in heaven, and came down from thence, did know that *Christ* ascended up from hence unto that place from whence they came: and * because the eyes of the Apostles could not follow him so far, the inhabitants of that place did come to testify of his reception, For *behold two men stood by them in white apparel, which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven*. We must therefore acknowledge and confess against all the wild || Heresies of old, that the eternal Son of God who died and rose again, did with the same Body and Soul, with which he died and rose, ascend up to heaven; which was the second Particular considerable in the Article.

(πρόβλεπον γὰρ ἐκ ἐπὶ τῶν ἰδόντων γινώσκαι) ὅτι ὁ οὗτος ὁ ἑαυτὸν ἀναλαμβάνει, αὐτοὶ λοιπὸν ἐδίδασκον οἱ ἄγγελοι. S. Chryz. Hom. 2. in Acta Apost. || Acts 1. 10, 11. || The various Heresies in the Primitive time concerning the humanity of

* Ἐπειδὴν ἐκ
ἀρκούσιν οἱ ὁρ-
θολοὶ δὴ ἔδει
τὸ ὑψοῦ, ἔδει
παρουσῆσαι πο-
τερον εἰς τὸ
εἰς τὸν αὐτὸν
ἡ αἰεὶ, καὶ ἀρ-
χὴν τὴν γί-
νεται ὅτι μὴ
αὐτὸς ὅστις ἴη-
σὺς ἦδεν ἐν
τῷ δεικνύοντι
πρὸς αὐτὸν

Christ

Christ ascended into heaven are briefly touched by Tertullian; *Uc & Illi erubescant, qui adfirmant carnem in cœlis vacuum sensu* ut vaginam exempro Christo sedere, aut qui carnem & animam tantumdem, aut tantummodo animam, carnem vero non jani. De carne (*Christi*. c. 24. Of which Gregory Nazianzen, *Εἰ τις ἀποτιθέσθαι ὅτι σάρκα λέγει, καὶ γυνεύει* ἢ *θεότητα* αὐματος, ἀλλὰ μὴ κατὰ προσλήματος

Christ left his body dissolved in the air, and so ascended into heaven without it; Hunc Apellem dicunt quidam etiam ac Christo carnem falsâ sensisse, ut diceat eum non quidem carni duxisse de cœlo, sed ex elementis mundi accipisse, quæ mundi reddidit cum fine carne refurgens in cœlum ascendit. S. Aug. *Hæres.* 23. This opinion of Apelles is thus delivered by Epiphanius in his own words, "Εν τῷ ἑρχειῶς ἀπὸ τῶ ἐπεσθάνον ἡλθεν εἰς τὴν γῆν καὶ σωτήρα ἡμῶν ἀπὸ τῶ πωσθάνον σώματι. Ἐδωκεν ὁ Χριστὸς ἑαυτὸν παθεῖν ὃν αὐτῷ πρὸ σώματι, καὶ ἑσαυρώθη ἐν ἀληθείᾳ, καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτῷ τὴν σάρκα τοῖς ἑαυτοῦ μαθηταῖς, καὶ ἀναλυσας αὐτὴν τὴν ἐν αὐτῷ ἔστησεν ἐνωτὸ ἀπὸ μέλει πάλιν ἐκαστῷ τῶ σικῶν ἀπὸ τοῦ ἰσίου ἀποδόν, τὸ θεῖον πρὸ θεοῦ, τὸ συνηντὸν πρὸ φύξεως, τὸ ἑνὸν πρὸ ἑνῶς, τὸ ὕψιν πρὸ ὕψους. καὶ ἕως ἀναλυσας ἀπὸ αὐτοῦ πάλιν τὸ ἑσαυρον σώμα ἀνέστη εἰς τὸ ἐσθάνον, ὅθεν ἦν καὶ. *Hæres.* 44. Of which Gregory Nazianzen, *εἰ τις διακρίνει* to be understood in that Epistle before cited, ἡ εἰς τὸ ἀσθάνον ἐχέσθαι καὶ διεκρίσθαι, ὡς φωνῆς ῥύσις, καὶ ὁμοῦς ῥύσις, καὶ ἀετῶν δόξμος ὡς ἰσαῶνις.

Thirdly, being the name of *Heaven* admitteth divers acceptions in the sacred Scriptures, it will be necessary to enquire what is the true Notion of it in this Article, and what is the proper termination of Christ's Ascension. In some sense it might be truly said Christ was in heaven before the cloud took him out of the Apostles sight; for the clouds themselves are called the clouds of heaven: but that heaven is the first; and our Saviour certainly ascended at least as far as *S. Paul* was caught up, that is, into the third heaven; For *we have a great High-priest that is* * *passed through the heavens.* And needs must he pass through the heavens, because he was ^a *made higher than the heavens*; For ^b *he that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens.* When therefore Christ is said to have ascended into heaven, we must take that word as signifying as much as the heaven of heavens, and so Christ is ascended through and above the heavens, and yet is still in heaven: for he is *entred* ^c *into that within the vail*, there is his passage through the heavens: ^d *into the holy place, even into heaven it self to appear in the presence of God*, this is the heaven of heavens. For *thus said the Lord, the heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool*; and as Christ descended unto the footstool of his Father in his humiliation, so he ascended unto the throne of his Father in his exaltation. This was the place of which our Saviour spake to his Disciples, *What and if you shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before*? Had he been there before in body, it had been no such wonder that he should have ascended thither again: but that his body should ascend unto that place where the Majesty of God was most resplendent; that the flesh of our flesh, and bone of our bone should be seated far above all Angels and Archangels, all principalities and powers, even at the right hand of God; this was that which Christ propounded as worthy of their greatest admiration. Whatsoever heaven then is higher than all the rest which are called heavens; whatsoever sanctuary is holier than all which are called holies, whatsoever place is of greatest dignity in all those Courts above, into that place did he ascend, where in the splendor of his Deity he was before he took upon him our humanity.

As therefore when we say Christ ascended, we understand a literal and local ascent, not of his Divinity, (which possesseth all places, and therefore being every where is not subject to the imperfection of removing any whither) but of his humanity, which was so in one place that it was not in another: so when we say the place into which he ascended was heaven, and from the expositions of the Apostles must understand thereby the heaven of heavens or the highest heaven, it followeth that we believe the body with the Soul of Christ to have passed far above all those celestial bodies which we see, and to look upon that opinion as a low conceit which left his body in the || Sun.

¶ The Seleucia-
ni and Hermia-
ni taught that
the body of Christ
ascended no farther
vatoreni in car-
de Pſalmo, In

ἡ δὲ ἐπικαταλαβάνη. Hom. 11. in Epist. ad Hebræos. Another notion there is among the Greeks of the fruit which is ripe and come to perfection before the rest, as Isaiah 28. 4. Καὶ ἔσται τὸ ἀνθὺ τὸ ἐκπεσὼν τὸ ἐλπίδῃ τὸ δόξης ἰπ' ἄκρας τοῦ ἔτους ὡς πρῶτον σῦκα, ΠΡΩΤΟΝ, tanquam primitiæ, or fructus primogeniti, ficus præcox. Hesychius, Πρῶδεςμα, τὰ ἐν πρῶτῳ ἔσται, ἢ τὰ πρῶτα ἐκείνη σῦκα. lege Πρῶδεςμοι, for they indeed are properly τὰ πρῶτα ἐκείνη σῦκα, præcoces n-cus: For so Theophrastus speaking particularly of Συκῆς, hath these words, ὡς οὐκ ἐκείνην τὴν πρῶτον τῆς τοιαύτης ὑγρότητος, ὅταν αὖτε ἐπὶ ἡβῇ μαλακὸς καὶ ὑγρὸς καὶ θερμὸς, ὁρῶμεν αὐτὸν τὴν βλάστησιν. ἔτι δὲ τὸ τοιοῦτον συμβαίνει καὶ ἐν, ὅτι ἐκ τῶν τῶν μέρους ὁ καρπὸς ἀνίστηναι, ὅθεν καὶ οἱ πρῶδεςμοι. De causis Plant. lib. 5. cap. 1. Ὁ γὰρ πρῶτος, Πάλιν δὲ τὸ πρῶτον αὐτὸ μὲν εἴρεται, ὅς, ἢτε Λακωνικὴ καὶ Λακωνικὰ καὶ ἔτερος πλῆθος, αὐτὸ δὲ εἴρεται. The first-fruits of the early figs were called πρῶδεςμοι, and the tree which bare them πρῶδεσμος. Now as this early fruit doth fore-run the latter fruit of the same tree, and comes to ripeness and perfection in its kind before the rest; So our Saviour goes before those men of the same name with him, and they follow in their time to the maturity of the same perfection.

¶ Ephes. 2. 5. As therefore ^a God hath quickned us together with Christ, and hath raised us up together by virtue of his resurrection; so hath he also made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus, by virtue of his ascension. We are already seated there || in him, and hereafter shall be seated by him; in him already as in our head, which is the ground of our hope; by him hereafter, as by the cause conferring, when hope shall be swallowed up in fruition.

¶ Τῆς κεφαλῆς καθέζουσιν καὶ τὸ σῶμα συγκαθίστα· διὰ τοῦτο ἐπὶ ἡμῶν ἐν Χριστῷ. S. Chrysost. in locum.

¶ Matth. 6. 21.

¶ John 12. 32.

¶ 2 Kings 2. 2.

Thirdly, the profession of Faith in Christ ascended, is necessary for the exaltation of our affections. ^b For where our treasure is, there will our hearts be also. ^c If I be lifted up from the earth, I will draw all men unto me, saith our Saviour; and if those words were true of his crucifixion, how powerful ought they to be in reference to his ascension? ^d When the Lord would take up Elijah into heaven, Elisha said unto him, As the Lord liveth, and as thy soul liveth, I will not leave thee; when Christ is ascended up on high, we must follow him with the wings of our meditations and with the chariots of our affections.

¶ Col. 3. 1, 2, 3.

^e If we be risen with Christ, we must seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. If we be dead, and our life hid in Christ with God, we must set our affection on things above, not on things on earth. Christ is ascended into heaven to teach us, that we are strangers and pilgrims here, as all our fathers were, and that another country belongs unto us: from whence we ^f as strangers and pilgrims should learn to abstain from fleshly lusts, and not mind earthly things; as knowing that we are ^g Citizens of heaven, from whence we look for our Saviour, the Lord Jesus, yea ^h fellow-citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God. We should trample upon our sins, and subdue the lusts of the flesh, that our conversation may be correspondent to our Saviour's condition; that where the eyes of the Apostles were forced to leave him, thither our thoughts may follow him.

¶ 1 Pet. 2. 11.

¶ Phil. 3. 19,

20.

¶ Ephes. 2. 19.

Fourthly, the Ascension of Christ is a necessary Article of the Creed in respect of those great effects which immediately were to follow it, and did absolutely depend upon it. The blessed Apostles had never preached the Gospel, had they not been indued with power from above; but none of that power had they received, if the Holy Ghost in a miraculous manner had not descended: And the Holy Ghost had not come down, except our Saviour had ascended first. For he himself, when he was to depart from his Disciples, grounded the necessity of his departure upon the certainty of this truth, saying, If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: but if I depart, I will send him unto you. Now if all the infallibility of those truths, which we as Christians believe, depend upon the certain information which the Apostles had, and those Apostles appear to be no way infallible till the cloven tongues had lit upon them, it was first absolutely necessary that the Holy Ghost should so descend. Again, being it was impossible that the Spirit of God in that manner should come down, until the Son of God had ascended into Heaven; being it was not fit that the second Advocate should officiate on earth, till the first Advocate had entred upon his Office in heaven; therefore in respect of this great work the Son of God must necessa-

John 15. 7.

necessarily ascend, and in reference to that necessity we may well be obliged to confess that Ascension.

Upon these considerations we may easily conclude what every Christian is obliged to confess in those words of our Creed, *He ascended into Heaven*: for thereby he is understood to express thus much, I am fully persuaded, that the only-begotten and eternal Son of God, after he rose from the dead, did with the same Soul and body with which he rose, by a true and local translation convey himself from the earth on which he lived, through all the regions of the air, through all the celestial Orbs, until he came unto the heaven of heavens, the most glorious presence of the Majesty of God. And thus I believe in *Jesus Christ* who *ascended into heaven*,

And sitteth on the right hand of God the Father Almighty.

THE second part of the Article containeth two Particulars; the Session of the Son, and the Description of the Father: the first sheweth that *Christ* upon his ascension is set down *at the right hand of God*: the second assureth us that the God, at whose right hand *Christ* is set down, is the *Father Almighty*.

For the Explication of *Christ's* Session, three things will be necessary; First, to prove that the promised *Messias* was to sit at the right hand of God; Secondly, to shew that our *Jesus*, whom we believe to be the true *Messias*, is set down at the right hand of God; Thirdly, to find what is the importance of that phrase, and in what propriety of expression it belongs to *Christ*.

That the promised *Messias* was to sit at the right hand of God, was both pre-typified and foretold. *Joseph* who was betrayed and sold by his brethren, was an express type of *Christ*, and though in many things he represented the *Messias*, yet in none more than in this, that being taken out of the prison he was exalted to the Supreme power of *Egypt*. For thus *Pharaoh* spake to *Joseph*, *Thou shalt be over my house, and according to thy word shall all my people be ruled: only in the throne will I be greater than thou.* And *Pharaoh* took off the ring from his hand, and put it upon *Joseph's* hand, and arrayed him in vestures of fine linen, and put a gold chain about his neck; And he made him to ride in the second chariot which he had, and they cried before him, Bow the knee; and he made him ruler over all the land of *Egypt*. Thus *Joseph* had the execution of all the Regal power committed unto him, all Edicts and Commands were given out by him, the managing of all affairs was through his hands, only the authority by which he moved remained in *Pharaoh* still. This was a clear representation of the Son of man, who by his sitting on the right hand of God, obtained power to rule and govern all things both in heaven and earth, (especially as the ruler of his house, that is, the Church,) with express command that all things, both in heaven, and earth, and under the earth, should bow down before him: but all this in the name of the Father; to whom the throne is still reserved, in whom the original authority still remains. And thus the Session of the *Messias* was pre-typified.

The same was also expressly foretold, not only in the sense, but in the phrase. *The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool.* The Jews have endeavoured to avoid this Prophecy, but with no success: some make the person to

Gen. 41: 40,
42, 43.

Psal. 110. 1.

fit down at the right hand of God. His Ascension was the way to his Session, and his Session the end of his Ascension; as the Evangelist expresseth it, *He was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God*; or as the Apostle, *God raised Christ from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places*. There could be no such Session without an Ascension; and *David is not ascended into the heavens, but he saith himself, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thy foes thy footstool*. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, let all the blind and wilful Jews be convinced of this truth, that God hath not set at his own right hand neither Abraham nor David, neither Ezechias, nor Zerubbabel, but hath made that same Jesus whom they have crucified both Lord and Christ.

This was an honour never given, never promised to any man but the *Messias*: the glorious Spirits stand about the Throne of God, but never any of them set down at the right hand of God. For to which of his Angels said he at any time, *Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool*. But Christ was so assured of this honour, that before the Council of the Chief Priests and the elders of the People, when he foresaw his death contrived, and his Cross prepared, even then he expressed the confidence of his expectation, saying, *Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God*. And thus our Jesus, whom we worship as the true promised *Messias*, is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God. Which was our second Consideration.

Our next inquiry is, what may be the utmost importance of that phrase, and how it is applicable unto Christ. The phrase consists of two parts, and both to be taken metaphorically: First therefore, we must consider what is the *right hand of God*, in the Language of the Scriptures; Secondly, what it is to *sit down* at that right hand. God being a Spirit can have no material or corporeal parts; and consequently as he hath no body, so in a proper sense can he have no hands at all: but because God is pleased to descend to our capacity; and not only to speak by the mouths of men, but also, after the manner of men, he expresseth that which is in him by some analogy with that which belongs to us. The hands of man are those organical parts which are most active, and executive of our power; by those the strength of our body is expressed, and most of our natural and artificial actions are performed by them. From whence the power of God, and the exertion or execution of that power is signified by the hand of God. Moreover being by a general custom of the world the right hand is more used than the left, and by that general use acquireth a greater firmitude and strength, therefore the *right hand* of God signifieth the exceeding great and infinite power of God.

Symb. * Succedunt brachia & validi lacertorum tori, validæ ad operandum manus, & processibus digitis habiles ad tenendum: Hinc aptior usus operandi, hinc scribendi elegancia, & ille calamus scribæ velociter scribentis, quo divinæ vocis exprimuntur oracula. Manus est quæ cibum ori ministrat; manus est quæ præclaris eniter factis, quæ conciliatrix divinæ gratiæ sacris inferitur altaribus, per quam offerimus & sumimus sacramenta cœlestia. Manus est quæ operatur pariter atque dispensat divina mysteria, cujus vocabulo non dignatus est se Dei Filius declarari, dicente David, *Deatra Domini exaltavit me*. Manus est quæ fecit omnia, sicut dixit Deus omnipotens, *Nonne manus mea fecit hæc*? S. Ambros. Hexam. l. 6. c. 9.

¶ Credimus etiam quod scdet ad dexteram Dei Patris. Nec ideo rationem quasi humana forma circumscriptum esse Deum Patrem arbitrandum est, ut de illo cogitantibus dextrum aut sinistrum latus animo occurrat.

S. Aug. de Fide

Again, because the most honourable place amongst men is the right hand, (as when Bathsheba went unto King Solomon, he sat down on his throne, and caused a seat to be set for the Kings mother, and she sat on his right hand) therefore the *right hand* of God signifies the glorious Majesty of God.

Thirdly, because the gifts of men are given and received by the hands of men, and every perfect gift comes from the Father of lights, therefore the *right hand* of God is the place of celestial happiness and perfect felicity; according

Psal. 16. 11. cording to that of the Psalmist, *In thy presence is fulness of joy, at thy right hand pleasures for evermore.*

Now as to the first acception of the *right hand* of God, Christ is said to sit down at the *right hand* of the Father in regard of that absolute power and dominion which he hath obtained in heaven; from whence it is expressly said, *Hereafter ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power.*

Matth. 27. 64.
Mark 14. 62.
Luke 22. 69.

¶ Secundum consuetudinem nostram illi confessus offertur qui aliquo opere

As to the second acception, Christ is said to sit on the *right hand* of God in regard of that || Honour, Glory, and Majesty which he hath obtained there; wherefore it is said, *When he had by himself purged our sins, he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high:* and again, *We have an High-priest who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens.*

perfecto honoris gratia promeretur ut sedeat. Ita ergo & homo Jesus Christus passione sua diabolum superans, resurrectione sua inferna reterans, tanquam perfecto opere ad caelos victor adveniens, audit à Deo Patre, *Sede ad dextram meam.* *Max. Taurin. Hom. 1. de Pentecoste.* *¶ Heb. 1. 3.* *¶ Heb. 8. 1.*

In reference to the third acception Christ is said to sit on the *right hand* of God, because now after all the labours and sorrows of this world, after his stripes and buffetings, after a painful and shameful death, he resteth above in unspeakable joy, and everlasting * felicity.

* *Ad dextram intelligendum*

est dicendum esse in summa beatitudine, ubi iustitia & pax & gaudium est. *S. Aug. de Fide & Symb.* Quid est Patris dextera, nisi illa aeterna ineffabilisque felicitas quo pervenit Filius hominis, etiam carnis immortalitate percepta? *Idem contra Serm. Arian.* Beatus est à beatitudine, quæ dextera Patris vocatur; ipsius beatitudinis nomen, est dextera Patris. *De Symb. ad Catech.* Salus temporalis & carnalis in sinistra est, salus aeterna cum Angelis in dextra est. Ideo jam in ipsa immortalitate positus Christus dicitur sedere ad dextram Dei. Non enim Deus habet in seipso dextram aut sinistram; sed dextera Dei dicitur felicitas illa, quæ quoniam ostendi non potest, tale nomen accepit. *S. Aug. in Psal. 137.*

As for the other part of the phrase; that is, his *Session*, we must not look upon it as determining any posture of his body in the heavens, correspondent to the inclination and curvation of our limbs. For we read in the Scriptures a more general term which signifies only his being in heaven, without any expression of the particular manner of his presence. So *S. Paul*, who is even at the *right hand* of God; and *S. Peter*, Who is gone into heaven, and is at the *right hand* of God. Beside, we find him expressed in another position than that of Session: for *Stephen looking stedfastly into heaven, saw the glory of God; and Jesus standing on the right hand of God:* And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. He appeared standing unto *Stephen*, whom we express sitting in our Creed; but this is rather a difference of the occasion, than a diversity of position. He appeared || standing to *Stephen* as ready to assist him, as ready to plead for him, as ready to receive him: and he is oftner expressed sitting, not for any positional variation, but for the variety of his effect, and operation.

Rom. 8. 34.

1 Pet. 3. 22.

¶ Ἐπὶ τῷ ἁ-
πλῶν καθίστα-
σθαι αὐτὸν αὐ-
τοῖς ὡς, τίς
τῶν ἀνα-
στῶντων καὶ ἁλόντων, καὶ ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ ἰσχυρῶς. *S. Chrysost. Hom. 18. in Acta.*

Si major gratia & manifestior intelligentia in Novo est quam in Veteri Testamento, quare Esaias Propheta sedentem in throno Majestatis vidit Deum Sabaoth, in novo autem Stephanus primus Martyr stantem se vidisse ait Jesum à dextris Dei? Quid est istud, ut hic subiectus videatur post triumphos, & illic quasi Dominus antequam vinceret? Prout causa erat fecisse, ita & Dominus se ostendit. Prophetæ enim visus est quasi rex corripiens plebem, & hoc se ostendit quod erat, hoc est, sedentem, in pace enim erat causa divinitatis ejus. Stephano autem ut stans appareret fecit calumnia Judæorum. In Stephano autem Salvatoris causa vim patiebatur. Ideo sedente Judice Deo stans apparuit, quasi qui causam diceret; & quia bona causa ejus est, ad dextram Judicis erat; Omnis qui causam dicit, nec necesse est. *S. Aug. Quest. in Novo Test. 88.* Sedere judicantis est, stare verò pugnantis vel adjuvantis. Stephanus ergo in labore certaminis positus, stantem vidit quem adiutorem habuit. Sed hunc post ascensionem Marcus sedere scribit, quia post ascensionis suæ gloriam Judex in fine videbitur. *Greg. Hom. 29. in Evang. Maxim. Taurin. de Pentec. Hom. 1. movet the Question,* Quæ sit ratio quod idem Dominus à David sedens prophetatur, stans verò à Stephano prædicatur? and then renders this reason, Ut modo ejus omnipotentia, modo misericordia deferibatur. Nam utique pro potestate regis sedere dicitur, pro bonitate intercessoris stare suggeritur. Ait enim beatus Apostolus, quia *Advocatum habemus apud Patrem Jesum Christum.* Judex est igitur Christus enim residet, Advocatus cum assurgit. Judex plane Judæis, Advocatus Christianis. Ille enim stans apud Patrem Christianorum licet peccantium causas exorat; ibi residet cum patre Phariseorum persequentium peccata condemnans. Illis indignans vehementer ulciscitur; his interveniens leniter miseretur. Hic stans ut suscipiat Stephani Martyris spiritum; ibi residet ut condemnet Judæi proditoris admittam.

This phrase then to *sit*, preſcinding from the corporal poſture of ſeſſion, may ſignifie no more than habitation, poſſeſſion, permanſion, and continuance; as the ſame word in the || Hebrew and Greek Languages often ſignifies. And thus our Saviour is ſet down at the right hand of God in heaven, becauſe he which dwelt with us before on earth, is now aſcended up into heaven, and hath taken his manſion or habitation there; and ſo hath he ſeated himſelf, and *dwelleth in the higheſt heavens.

ישב *which properly ſignifieth to ſit, is familiarly uſed for permanſion, and habitavit; as* Jud. 5. 17.

לחם ימים LXX. Ἀπὸς ἐνὰ θύρας παραλίαν θαλασσῶν, After continued on the Sea ſhore. Lev. 8. 35. *וְיָשְׁבוּ יוֹכֵם וְלֵילָה שִׁבְעָה יָמִים*, καὶ ἐπὶ τῇ θύρῃ τῆς σκηνῆς τῆς μαρτυρίας καθύστερε ἐπὶ αὐτῇ ἡμέρας, ἡμέρας καὶ νύκτας, Therefore ſhall ye abide at the door of the Tabernacle of the Congregation, day and night, ſeven days. Upon which place S. Auguſt. Quid eſt quod dicit Moyses ad Aaron & filios ejus cum ſanctificantur ad incundum ſacerdotium? Ad ofſitium tabernaculi teſtimonii ſedebitis ſeptem dies, die & nocte, ne moriamini. Numquid nam credibile eſt ſitū corporis uno loco ſedere præceptos per dies ſeptem die & nocte, unde ſe omnino non commoverent? Nec tamē hic tanquam allegorice aliquid ſignificatum, quod non fieret, cogendi ſumus accipere, ſed potius agnoſcere locutionem Scripturarum, ubi ſeſſionem pro habitatione & commemoratione poſuit. Non enim quia dictum eſt de Semei quod ſederet in Hieruſalem annos tres, ideo putandum eſt per totum illud tempus in ſella ſediſſe & non ſurrexiſſe. Hinc & ſedes dicuntur, ubi habent commemorationem quorum ſedes ſunt; habitatio quippe hoc nomen accepit. Queſt. ſuper Levit. 24. And this is as familiar with the Latins as the Hebrews. Si venti eſſent, nos hic Coreyræ non ſederemus. Cic. l. 9. Epist. Id horreum fuit præſidium Pœnis ſedentibus ad Trebiam. Liv. l. 2. de Bell. Pun. * Sedet ad dextram Patris. Credite Sedere, intelligite habitare; quomodo dicimus de quocunque homine, in iſta patria ſedit per tres annos. Dicit illud & Scriptura ſediſſe quendam in civitate tantum tempus. Numquid ſedit, & nunquam ſurrexit? Ideo hominum habitationes ſedes dicuntur. Ubi habitantur ſedes, numquid ſemper ſederet, non ſurgitur, non ambulatur? Et tamen ſedes vocantur. Sic ergo credite habitare Chriſtum in dextera Dei Patris ubi eſt. Author. lib. de Symb. ad Catech.

Again, the Notion of *sitting* implieth reſt, quietneſs and indiſturbance; according to that promiſe in the Prophet, *They ſhall ſit every man under his fig-tree, and none ſhall make them afraid.* So Chriſt is aſcended into heaven, where reſting from all pains and ſorrows, he is ſeated free from all diſturbance and oppoſition; God having placed him at his right hand, until he hath made his enemies his footſtool.

Mic. 4. 4.

Thirdly, this *sitting* implieth yet more than quietneſs or continuance, even || Dominion, Sovereignty, and Majeſty; as when Solomon ſat in the throne of his Father, he reigned over *Israel* after the death of his Father. And thus *Chriſt is ſet down at the right hand of the throne of God.* And S. Paul did well interpret thoſe words of the Prophet, *Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footſtool*, ſaying, *He muſt reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet.*

Ipſum verbum ſedere regni ſignificat po-teſtatem. S. Hier. Com. ad Eph. c. 1. v. 19. Heb. 11. 2. Pſal. 110. 1.

Fourthly, this *sitting* doth yet more properly and particularly imply the right of Judicature, and ſo eſpecially expreſſeth, *a King that ſitteth in the throne of Judgment*; as it is written, *In mercy ſhall the throne be eſtabliſhed, and he ſhall ſit upon it in truth, in the tabernacle of David, judging and ſeeking judgment, and haſting righteouſneſs.* And ſo Chriſt * ſitting at the right hand of God is manifeſted and declared to be the great Judge of the quick and the dead. Thus to *ſit* doth not ſignifie any peculiar inclination or flexion, any determinate location or poſition of the body, but to be in heaven with permanence of habitation, happineſs of condition, regular and judiciary power; as in other || Authors ſuch ſignifications are uſual.

1 Cor. 15. 25. Prov. 20. 8. Iſa. 16. 5. * Sedere quod dicitur Deus non membrorum poſitionem ſed judiciariam ſignificat po-teſtatem, quā illa Majeſtas nunquam carce, ſemper digna dignis tribuendo; quamvis in ex-

remo judicio multo maniſeſtius inter homines Unigeniti Dei Filii Judicis vivorum & mortuorum clariuſ indubitata eſſulgebit. S. Auguſt. de Fide & Symb. cap. 7. Hoc quod dicitur Filius ſedere ad dextram Patris, demonſtratur quod ipſe homo, quem ſuſcepit Chriſtus, po-teſtatem acceperit Judicantis. Author, l. 3. de Symb. ad Catechum. || *Moſt anciently*, ſedere did ſignifie no more than eſſe, to be in any place; as Servius noteth on that place of Virgil, *Aeneid. 9.* Luco tum forte parentis Piliſmini Turnus ſacrata valle ſedebat. Sedebat, ut Aſper dicit, erat. Quæ clauſula antiqua eſt, & de uſu remota. And then he goes on to ſhew that ſedere is taken for that which men were wont to do ſitting. Secundum Plautum autem ſedere eſt conſilium capere, qui inducit in Moſtellaria ſervum dicentem, *Sine juxta aram ſedeam & dabo meliora conſilia.* Sed ſecundum Augures ſedere eſt augurium captare: Namque poſt designata cœli partes à ſedentibus captabantur auguria. Quod & ſupra ipſe oſtendit laſcentem, inducens Picum ſolum ſedentem, ut, *Parvaque ſedebat Succineſti in trabea*, quod eſt augurum, cum alios ſtantes induxerit. Ergo Sedebat, aut erat, aut conſilia capiebat, aut augurabatur.

The importance of the Language being thus far improved, at last we find the substance of the Doctrine, which is, that sitting at the right hand of God was our Mediator's solemn entry upon his Regal Office, as to the execution of that full Dominion which was due unto him. For *worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power and riches and wisdom, and strength and honour and glory and blessing.* Wherefore Christ after his death and resurrection saith, *All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.* For because he humbled himself and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross, therefore God hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name; That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth. And this obedience and submission was and is due unto him, because God raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principalities and powers, and might and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world but also in that which is to come; and hath put all things under his feet; and gave him to be the head over all things to the Church.

There was an exprefs promise made by God to David, *Thine house and thy Kingdom shall be established for ever before thee, thy throne shall be established for ever.* This promise strictly and literally taken was but conditional: and the condition of the promise is elsewhere expressed, *Of the fruit of thy body will I set upon thy throne. If thy children will keep my covenant and my testimony that I shall teach them, their children also shall sit upon thy throne for evermore.* Notwithstanding this promise this Kingdom of David was intercepted, nor was his family continued in the Throne: part of the Kingdom was first rent from his posterity, next the regality it self; and when it was restored, translated to another family: and yet we cannot say the promise was not made good, but only ceased in the obligation of a promise, because the condition was not performed. The posterity of David did not keep the Covenant and Testimony of their God, and therefore the throne of David was not by an uninterrupted lineal succession established to perpetuity.

But yet in a larger and better sense, after these intermissions, the throne of David was continued. When they had sinned and lost their right unto the Crown, the Kingdom was to be given unto him who never sinned, and consequently could never lose it; and he being of the seed of David, in him the throne of David was without interception or succession continued. Of him did the Angel Gabriel speak at his conception, *The Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David, and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his Kingdom there shall be no end.* Thus the throne of Christ is called the throne of David, because it was promised unto David, and because the Kingdom of David was a type, resemblance and representation of it; insomuch that Christ himself in respect of this Kingdom is often called David, as particularly in that promise, *I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and my servant David a Prince among them.*

Now as David was not only first designed, but also anointed King over Israel; and yet had no possession of the Crown; Seven years he continued anointed by Samuel, and had no share in the Dominion; seven years after he continued anointed in Hebron only King over the tribe of Judah; at last he was received by all the Tribes, and so obtained full and absolute regal power over all Israel, and seated himself in the Royal City of Jerusalem: So Christ was born King of the Jews, and the conjunction of his humane nature with his divine in the union of his person was a sufficient unction to his Regal Office,

fice, yet as the Son of man he exercised no such dominion, professing that his *Kingdom was not of this world*; but after he rose from the dead, then as it were in *Hebron* with his own Tribe he tells the Apostles, *All power is given unto him*, and by virtue thereof, gives them injunctions; and at his Ascension he enters into the *Jerusalem* above, and there sits down at the right hand of the throne of God, and so makes a solemn entry upon the full and entire dominion over all things; then could S. Peter say, *Let all the house of Israel know assuredly, That God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.* Acts 2. 36.

The immediate effect of his Regal power, the proper execution of this Office, is the subduing of all his Enemies; For he is *set down on the right hand of God, from henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.* Heb. 10. 12, 13. This was the ancient custom of the Oriental Conquerors, to tread upon the necks of their subdued enemies; as when *Josuah* had the five Kings as his prisoners, he said unto the men of war which went with him, *Come near, put your feet upon the necks of them.* Josh. 10. 24. Thus to signify the absolute and total conquest of *Christ*, and the dreadful Majesty of his throne, all his enemies are supposed to lie down before him, and he set his feet upon them.

The Enemies of *Christ* are of two kinds, either Temporal or Spiritual; the Temporal Enemies I call such as visibly and actually oppose him, and his Apostles, and all those which profess to believe in his name. Such especially and principally were the *Jews*, who rejected, persecuted and crucified him; who after his Resurrection, scourged, stoned, and despightfully used his Disciples; who tried all ways and means imaginable to hinder the propagation, and dishonour the profession of Christianity. A part of his Regal Office was to subdue these enemies, and he set down on the right hand of God that they might be made his footstool: which they suddenly were according to his prediction, *There be some standing here which shall not taste of death till they see the son of man coming in his Kingdom.* Mat. 16. 28. For within few years the Temple, the City, and the whole Polity of the *Jews* were destroyed for ever in a revenging manner by the hands of the *Romans*, which they made use of to crucify the Lord of life. The *Romans* themselves were the next Enemies, who first complied with the *Jews* in *Christ's* crucifixion, and after in defence of their heathen Deities endeavoured the extirpation of Christianity by successive persecutions. These were next to be made the footstool of the King of kings, and so they were when *Rome* the regnant City, the head of that vast Empire, was taken and sacked; when the Christians were preserved, and the Heathens perished; when the worship of all their Idols ceased, and the whole *Roman* Empire marched under the banner of Christianity. In the same manner all those Persons and Nations whatsoever, which openly oppose and persecute the name of *Christ*, are Enemies unto this King, to be in due time subdued under him, and when he calleth to be slain.

The Spiritual Enemies of this King are of another nature; such as by an invisible way make opposition to *Christ's* dominion, as Sin, Satan, Death. Every one of these hath a Kingdom of its own, set up and opposed to the Kingdom of *Christ*. The Apostle hath taught us, that *sin hath reigned unto death*; and hath commanded us not to *let it reign in our mortal bodies, that we should obey it in the lusts thereof.* Rom. 6. 12. There is therefore a dominion and Kingdom of sin set up against the throne of the immaculate Lamb. Satan would have been like the most high, and being cast down from heaven, hath erected his throne below; he is *the Prince of this world: the spirit which now worketh in the children of disobedience is the Prince of the power of the air*; and thus the John 12. 31. Ephes. 2. 2. 83 6. 12.

Rom. 5. 14, 17. rulers of the darkness of this world oppose themselves to the true light of the world. Death also hath its dominion, and, as the Apostle speaks, *reigned from Adam to Moses*; even by one offence death reigned by one, and so set up a ruling and a regal power against the *Prince of life*.

1 Cor. 15. 24. For the destruction of these powers was *Christ* exalted to the right hand of God, and by his Regal office doth he subdue and destroy them all. And yet this destruction is not so universal, but that Sin, Satan and Death shall still continue. 'Tis true he shall put down all rule and authority and power, but this amounts not so much to a total destruction, as to an absolute subjection: for as he is able, so will he subdue all things to himself. The principal end of the Regal office of the Mediatour is the effectual redemption and actual salvation of all those whom God hath given him, and whosoever or whatsoever opposeth the salvation of these, is by that opposition constituted and become an enemy of *Christ*. And because this enmity is grounded upon that opposition, therefore so far as any thing opposeth the salvation of the sons of God, so far it is an enemy, and no farther: And consequently, *Christ* by sitting at the right hand of God, hath obtained full and absolute power utterly to destroy those three spiritual enemies, so far as they make this opposition; and farther than they do oppose they are not destroyed by him, but subdued to him: whatsoever hindereth and obstructeth the bringing of his own into his kingdom, for the demonstration of God's mercy is abolished; but whatsoever may be yet subservient to the demonstration of his justice is continued.

Christ then as King destroyeth the power of sin in all those which belong unto his Kingdom, annihilating the guilt thereof by the virtue of his death, destroying the dominion thereof by his actual grace, and taking away the spot thereof by grace habitual. But in the reprobate and damned souls, the spot of sin remaineth in its perfect die, the dominion of sin continueth in its absolute power, the guilt of sin abideth in a perpetual obligation to eternal pains: but all this in subjection to his throne, the glory of which consisteth as well in punishing Rebellion as rewarding Loyalty.

Heb. 2. 14. Again, *Christ* sitting on the right hand of God destroyeth all the strength of Satan and the powers of Hell: by virtue of his death perpetually represented to his Father, he destroyeth him that had the power of death, that is, the Devil. But the actual destruction of these powers of darkness hath reference only to the Elect of God. In them he preventeth the wiles; those he taketh out of the snare, in them he destroyeth the works, those he preserveth from the condemnation of the Devil. He freeth them here from the prevailing power of Satan by his grace, he freeth them hereafter from all possibility of any infernal opposition by his glory. But still the reprobate and damned souls are continued slaves unto the powers of Hell; and he which sitteth upon the throne delivereth them to the Devil and his Angels, to be tormented with and by them for ever; and this power of Satan still is left as subservient to the demonstration of the Divine justice.

1 Cor. 15. 26. Thirdly, *Christ* sitting on the throne of God at last destroyeth death it self: For the last enemy which shall be destroyed is death. But this destruction reacheth no farther than removing of all power to hinder the bringing of all such persons as are redeemed actually by *Christ* into the full possession of his heavenly Kingdom. He will ransom them from the power of the grave, he will redeem them from death. O death, he will be thy plague; O grave, he will be thy destruction. The Trump shall sound, the Graves shall open, the Dead shall live, the Bodies shall be framed again out of the dust, and the Souls which left them shall be re-united to them, and all the Sons of men shall

return

return to life, and death shall be *swallowed up in victory*. The Sons of God shall then be made completely happy both in soul and body, never again to be separated, but to inherit eternal life. Thus he who sitteth at the right hand of God *hath abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light*. But to the reprobate and damned persons death is not destroyed but improved. They rise again indeed to life, and so the first death is evacuated; but that life to which they rise is a *second*, and a far worse death. And thus *Christ* is set down at the right hand of God, that he might subdue all things to himself.

The regal power of *Christ* as a branch of the Mediatorship, is to continue till all those enemies be subdued. *For he must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet. But now we see not yet all things put under him.* Therefore he must still continue there: and this necessity is grounded upon the promise of the Father, and the expectation of the Son. *Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy foot-stool*, saith the Father; upon which words we may ground as well the continuation as the session. Upon this promise of the Father the Son *sate down at the right hand of God, from henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his foot-stool*. Being then the promise of God cannot be evacuated, being the expectation of *Christ* cannot be frustrated, it followeth, that our Mediatour shall exercise the Regal power at the right hand of God till all opposition shall be subdued.

When all the enemies of *Christ* shall be subdued, when all the chosen of God shall be actually brought into his Kingdom, when those which refused him to rule over them, shall be slain, that is, when the whole office of the Mediatour shall be compleated and fulfilled, then every branch of the execution shall cease. As therefore there shall no longer continue any act of the Prophetical part to instruct us, nor any act of the Priestly part to intercede for us, so there shall be no further act of this Regal power of the Mediatour necessary to defend and preserve us. The beatifical vision shall succeed our information and instruction, a present fruition will prevent oblation and intercession, and perfect security will need no actual defence and protection. As therefore the general notion of a Mediatour ceaseth when all are made one, because *a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one*; so every part or branch of that Mediatourship, as such, must also cease, because that unity is in all parts compleat. *Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father, when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that hath put all things under him, that God may be all in all.*

Now though the Mediatourship of *Christ* be then resigned, because the end thereof will then be performed; though the Regal Office was part of that Mediatourship be also resigned with the whole; yet we must not think that *Christ* shall cease to be a King, or lose any of the power and honour which before he had. The dominion which he hath was given him as a reward for what he suffered: and certainly the reward shall not cease when the work is done. He hath promised to make us Kings and Priests, which honour we expect in Heaven, believing we shall *reign with him* for ever, and therefore for ever must believe him King. *The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of the Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever*, not only to the modiflicated eternity of his Mediatourship, so long as there shall be need of Regal power to subdue the enemies of God's elect; but also to the compleat eternity of the duration of his humanity, which for the future is co-eternal to his Divinity.

1 Cor. 15. 54.

1 Cor. 15. 25.

Heb. 2. 8.

Psal. 110. 1.

Heb. 10. 12, 13.

Gal. 3. 20.

1 Cor. 15. 24, 28.

Videamus an
traditio regni
defectio sit in-
telligenda reg-
nandi, ut quod
tradidit Filius
Patri tradendo
non teneat. S.
Hilar. l. 11.

2 Tim. 2. 12.

Rev. 11. 15.

Left we should imagine that *Christ* should ever cease to be King, or so interpret this Article, as if he were after the day of judgment to be removed from the right hand of God, the ancient Fathers added those words to the *Nicene Creed*, † *whose kingdom shall have no end*, against the Hereſie which then aroſe denying the eternity of the Kingdom of *Christ*.

† Οὗ ὁ βασι-
λεια ἡ ἐς αἰ-
τέλῃ. We find
not these words

in the *Nicene Creed*, as it was in it ſelf before the additions at *Conſtantinople*. But not long after, *S. Cyril* expounds them in his *Catechiſm*, and *Epiphanius* in *Ancorato* repeating two ſeveral *Creeds*, a ſhorter and a longer, §. 120. and 121. both theſe words in both. After this they were added expreſſly in the *Conſtantinopolitan Creed*. And the reaſon of their inſertion without queſtion was that which *S. Cyril* inſinuateth in his explication, that is, the Hereſie which was then newly begun. Εὐν ποτὶ τινὲ ἀκρίως λέγουσιν, ὅτι τέλει ἔχει ἡ Χρῆς βασιλεία, μίσηται τὴν αἰῶνα, τὸ δὲ αἰὼν τὸς ὄντιν ἄλλη κεφαλὴ περιφράτως πρὸς τὴν Γαλατῖαν ἀναρῶσα ἐπέληψε λέγειν, ὅτι μὴ τὸ τέλει τῆς Χρῆς ὁ Χρῆς ὁ βασιλεὺς· καὶ ἐτόλμησιν εἰπῆν, ὅτι ὁ Λόγος ἐκ Πατρὸς ἐγενήθη ἐκτὸς Πατρὸς πάλιν ἀναλῶν ἐκτὸς ἐκτὸς, Catech. 15. This was the particular Hereſie of *Marcellus* Biſhop of *Ancyra*, followed by *Photius* born in the ſame place, and therefore termed by *S. Cyril* πρὸς τὴν Γαλατῖαν ἀναρῶσα. It conſiſted of two parts; firſt, that the Kingdom of *Christ* did wholly ceaſe at the end of this world; ſecondly, that the Word was reſolved again into the Father, and conſequently did not only ceaſe to reign, but alſo ceaſe to exiſt. Which is yet more plainly expreſſed by *Eusebius* in his ſecond Book againſt *Marcellus*. Καὶ πάλιν τὸν αὐτὸν παυδῆς μὴ τὸν τῆς Χρῆς καὶ εἶναι, τὸ μὲν Λόγον ἐνωμένον τῷ Θεῷ, ὡς μὴδὲν ἕτερον ἐστὶν πλὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ· τῆς δὲ Χρῆς ἐν ἑαυτῇ κατελεγεσθαι τὴν οὐσίαν, ὡς μὴτε τὸν ὕδωρ τῷ Θεῷ ποτὶ ὑφῆσται, μὴτε τὸν ὕδωρ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ, ὃν ἀνέληψε. This Hereſie of *Marcellus* *S. Baſil* properly calls an impiety as τὴν ὑπόθεσιν τῆς Κυρίας ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χρῆς, Epist. 78. and again, Epist. 52. εἰς αὐτὴν τὴν ὑπόθεσιν τῆς τοῦ μονοθεοῦ θεότητι· which he there more fully expreſſeth, Ὅς (Μαρκέλλος) Λόγον μὲν ἡρώδης τὸν Μονοθεῶν διδουσι καὶ Χρῆς καὶ ὅτι καὶ πρὸς ἐκείνῃ, πάλιν δὲ εἰς τὸν θεὸν ἐξῆλθε ἐπαναφύλαξιν, ὅτε περὶ τῆς ἐξόδου ἐστὶν, ὅτε μὴ ἔτι ἀναρῶν ὑφῆσται. This exiſtence of the Word and the Kingdom of the Son that Hereſie made co-equal; beginning when the Word came from the Father, that is, at the Incarnation, and ending when the Word returned into the Father, that is, at the day of judgment. Which is manifeſtly delivered by the *Eastern Biſhops* in that profeſſion of Faith which they ſent to thoſe in Italy. Ἄλλ' ἐκ ποτὶ Χρῆς αὐτὸν γεγενῆσθαι καὶ ὕδωρ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ ἡμετέραν ἐκ τῆς πατρὸς σάρκα ἀνέληψε, περὶ τετρακοσίον ὅλων ἐστὶν, Ἐκ τῆς γὰρ Χρῆς ἀρχὴ βασιλείας ἐγενήσθαι θέλει, καὶ τέλει ἔχον αὐτὴν μὴ ὡς ἐκείνην καὶ Χρῆς. Τοιοῦτοι δὲ ὄντες οἱ ἀπὸ Μαρκέλλου καὶ Φωτίου καὶ Ἀρχιεπισκόπου, ἐν τῷ προωόντιον ὑπαρξίν τε καὶ θεότητι τῷ Χρῆς, καὶ τῷ ἀτελείῳ τῶν αὐτῶν βασιλείαν ἀνέστησαν, ἵνα δὲ δόξαν τῷ μοναρχίαν, Socrat. l. 2. c. 19. But although *Marcellus* did thus teach the Kingdom of *Christ* not to be eternal, yet his Hereſie did not ſo much conſiſt in the denial of this eternity as of the ſubſiſtence and perſon of our Saviour: for otherwiſe he did truly teach that *Christ* was an eternal King; as appeareth out of his own words in his Book againſt *Asterius* the *Arian*, cited by *Eusebius*, Οὐκ ἔστιν οὐδὲν τινα δεκά ἔχον ἢ καὶ ἀνθρώπων αὐτῶν οἰκονομία τε καὶ βασιλεία, ἐστὶν γὰρ ἕτερον βέβαιον ἢ τὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ Ἀποστόλου ῥηθὲν, ἕως ἀνθρῶπου καὶ ἐχθρὸς αὐτῷ ὑποπόδιον ἦν ποδῶν αὐτοῦ· ἐκὼν ἐπὶ κεφαλῇ τοῦ ἐχθρὸς ὅλῃ ὑποπόδιον ἦν ποδῶν, καὶ ἐπὶ κεφαλῇ τῆς ἐν μέρῃ ταύτης βασιλείας πάντων καθόλου βασιλεὺς ὑπαρχων. And therefore he made the ſame confeſſion with the *Catholicks*, when he delivered an account of his Faith to *Julius* Biſhop of *Rome*. Πιστὸς ὅτι ἐτόλμησεν ἡ θεία χαράς, ὅτι εἰς Θεός, καὶ ὁ τῆς μονοθεοῦ ὕδωρ Λόγος ὁ ἀπὸ ζωοπαρχῶν τῷ Πατρὶ, καὶ μὴ δευτέρου ἀρχὴ τῷ Θεῷ ἐγενήσθαι, ἀληθῶς ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ὑπαρχων, καὶ κληθεὶς, καὶ ποιηθεὶς, ἀλλ' ἀπὸ τοῦ, ἀεὶ συμβασιλεύον τῷ Θεῷ καὶ Πατρὶ, ἐκ τῆς βασιλείας, καὶ τῷ Θεῷ Ἀποστόλου μάρτυριαν, καὶ ἔσται τέλει, Epiph. Hæc. 72. §. 2.

The profeſſion of Faith in *Christ* as ſitting on the right hand of God is neceſſary; Firſt, to mind us of our duty, which muſt needs conſiſt in ſubjection and obedience. The Majesty of a King claimeth the Loyalty of a Subject; and if we acknowledge his authority, we muſt ſubmit unto his power. Nor can there be a greater incitation to obedience, than the conſideration of the nature of his government. Subject we muſt be whether we will or no; but if willingly, then is our ſervice perfect freedom; if unwillingly, then is our averſeneſs everlaſting miſery. † Enemies we all have been, under his feet we ſhall be, either adopted or ſubdued. A * double Kingdom there is of *Christ*; one of power, in which all are under him; another of propriety, in thoſe which belong unto him: none of us can be excepted from the firſt, and happy are we if by our obedience we ſhew our ſelves to have an intereſt in the ſecond; for then that Kingdom is not only *Christ's* but ours.

† inimicus e-
ras, eris ſub
pedibus ejus
aut adoptatus
aut vincetus, S.
Augustine.

* Βασιλεία ἡ
Θεοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ
ἡγετοῦ, τὸν μὲν

κατ' ἐκείνους, καὶ ὁ καὶ δημιουργίαν βασιλείαν μὲν γὰρ ἀπὸ πάντων καὶ Ἑλλήνων καὶ Ἰουδαίων καὶ δαμόνων καὶ ἡ ἀνιέμεται καὶ ἡ καὶ τῶν δημιουργίας λόγον· βασιλείαν δὲ ἡ πῶς πῶς καὶ ἐκόντων καὶ ἀνιέμεται καὶ ἡ καὶ τῶν οἰκονομίας, S. Chryſoſt. Hom. 59. in 1 ad Corinth.

Secondly, It is neceſſary to believe in *Christ* ſitting on the right hand of God, that we might be aſſured of an auſpicious protection under his gracious dominion. For God by this exaltation hath given our Saviour to be the head over all things to the Church; and therefore from him we may expect direction and preſervation. There can be no illegality where *Christ* is the Law-giver, there can be no danger from hoſtility where the Son of God is the Defender.

The

The very name of † *head* hath the signification not only of Dominion but of Union, and therefore while we look upon him at the right hand of God we see our selves in heaven. This is the special promise which he hath made us since he sate down there, *ⁱ To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame and am set down with my Father in his throne.* How should we rejoyce, yea rather how should we * fear and tremble at so great an honour!

† This is the exclamation of S. Chrysost. upon those words of S. Paul, Εὐχαριστοῦμεν πάντες ὑμῖν ἀπὸ παντοῦ ἐν ᾧ τῷ κυρίῳ ἡμῶν ἰησοῦ χριστῷ διὰ τοῦ ὁποῦς ἡμεῖς πάντες οὐκ ἐξ ἑαυτῶν ἐσμέν.

οὐδὲν αὐτῷ ἀνέγραψε μέγα καὶ αὐτὸν ἐκάθισεν εἰς ἐκθρόνον· ἐνθα γὰρ ἡ κεφαλὴ ἐκείνη καὶ τὸ σῶμα· ἔδειξεν ἅμω ἐν
 Διέξωσιν ἡ κεφαλὴ καὶ τὸ σῶμα· ἔδειξεν, ὅτι ἐκ αὐτοῦ εἶπεν σῶμα, ἐκ αὐτοῦ εἶπεν κεφαλὴ, *10m. 3. in Epist. ad Ephes.*
² Rev. 3. 21. Ἐννοεῖται ὁ θρόνος ὁ βασιλικὸν, ἐνθα εἰς τιμὴν τὴν ὑπερβαλὴν· τὸ καὶ γέννησις, εἶπε βολοῦσθαι, πολλοὺς
 ἡμᾶς ἐροῦσθαι διωκίσταται. Εἰ γὰρ μὴ γέννηται ἡν, τὸ τιμηθῆναι τιμὴν ἀναξίως εὖρεθῆναι καὶ κακίαι, τίνα καὶ ἂν ἔχει κολά-
 σιν· τίνα τιμωρίαν· ἐνόησον τίνος ἔργου ἡ κεφαλὴ σε ἐκάθηται (τὸ μόνον καὶ ὑποχρηθῆναι πρὸς πάντας οὕτως) τίνος ὡς δεῖξαι
 ἰδούσθαι, *idem ibidem.*

Thirdly, the belief of *Christ's* glorious Session is most necessary in respect of the immediate consequence, which is his most gracious Intercession. Our Saviour is ascended as the true *Melchisedech*, not only as the *King of Salem* the Prince of peace, but also as the *Priest of the most high God*; and whereas every *Priest* according to the Law of *Moses*, stood daily ministering and offering often times the same Sacrifices which could never take away sins, this man after he had offered one Sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God. And now *Christ* being set down in that Power and Majesty though the Sacrifice be but once offered, yet the virtue of it is perpetually advanced by his Session, which was founded on his Passion: For he is entered into heaven it self, now to appear in the presence of God for us. Thus, If any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, *Jesus Christ the righteous*. And he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. What then remaineth to all true believers but that triumphant exclamation of the Apostle, *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth; who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us*. For he which was accepted in his oblation; and therefore sat down on God's right hand, to improve this acceptation continues his intercession: and having obtained all power by virtue of his humiliation, representeth them both in a most sweet commixtion; by an humble omnipotency, or omnipotent humility, appearing in the presence, and presenting his * postulations at the throne of God.

* S. Austin di-
scoursing upon
that place, of
S. Paul, 1 Tim.
2, 1. Exhort

hat first of all supplications, prayers and intercessions be made for all men, observeth what is the nature of intercession. Pro interpellationibus autem quod nostri, secundum codices credo vestros, postulationes posuisti. Hæc interim duo, id est, quod alii postulationes, alii interpellationes interpretari sunt, unum verbum transferre voluerant, quod Græcus habet ΕΥΧΕΣ. Et profecto advertis: Sed nosti aliud esse interpellare, aliud postulare. Non enim solenus dicere, postulant interpellaturi, sed interpellant postulatūri. Veruntamen ex vicinitate verbum usurpatum, cui propinquas ipsa impetrat intellectum, non est velut censoria notatione culpandum. Nam & de ipso Domino Jesu Christo dictum est, quod interpellat pro nobis. Numquid interpellat, & non etiam postulat? Imo vero quia postulat pro eo positum est interpellat. Evidenter quippe alibi de eo dicitur, Si quis peccaverit, Advocatum habemus ad Patrem, Jesum Christum justum, ipse est exoratio pro peccatis nostris. Quamquam fortassis codices apud vos etiam in eo loco de Domino Jesu Christo non habent interpellat pro nobis, sed postulat pro nobis. In Græco enim, quo verbo hic posite sunt interpellationes, quas ipse posuisti postulationes, ipsum & illic verbum est, ubi scriptum est, interpellat pro nobis. Cum igitur & qui precatur orat, & qui orat precatur, & qui interpellat Deum ad hoc interpellat ut oret & precetur, &c. Epist. 59. ad Paulinum, Quæst. 5.

Having thus explicated the Session of our Saviour, we are next to consider the Description of him at whose right hand he is set down; which seems to be delivered in the same terms, with which the Creed did first begin. *I believe in God the Father Almighty*, and indeed, as to the expression of his essence, it is the same name of *God*; as to the setting forth his Relation, it is the same name of *Father*; but as to the adjoining attribute, though it be the same word, it is not the same notion of *Almighty*. What therefore we have spoken

† In the first Article it is Παντοκράτωρ, in the sixth Παντοδύναμος. See p. 50. And this distinction is very material, and much observed by the Greeks; as Dionysius Areopagita (whosoever that is) in his Book de Divinis Nominibus in the 18 Chapter, explicates the δυναμωμύαν, or παντοδύναμον, and in the 10. Chapter παντοκράτωρ, as two distinct names with different notions of God. Of the Παντοκράτωρ, which we have already considered, he gives this account, Τὸ μὲν γὰρ λέγεται διὰ τὸ πάντων αὐτὸν εἶναι παντοκράτειον ἐδρῶν σωέχουσαν καὶ περιέχουσαν τὰ ὅλα, καὶ ἐνιδρύουσαν καὶ διμελίσσουσαν καὶ ποιεῖσθαι ἴσχυον, καὶ ἀρράγως ἐν αὐτῇ τὸ πᾶν ὑποτελεῖν καὶ ὅς ἐαυτῆς τὰ ὅλα καθάπερ ἐκρίζης παντοκρατορικῆς περὶ ἄνθρωπον, καὶ ὡς ἐαυτῷ τὰ πάντα καθάπερ ἐκ πυθμένα παντοκράτειον ἐκ δὲ πύργου καὶ σωέχουσαν αὐτὰ, ὡς πάντων ἐδρῶν παμμεγέτη τὰ σωεχόμενα πάντα καὶ μὴν περιέχουσαν πάντα ζωοχὴν ἀσφαλιζομένη καὶ ἐδρῶν αὐτὰ διεκπεσύνει ἐαυτῆς, ὡς ἐκ ταῖς ἑστέαις κινήμασι περὶ πολέως. But of the δυναμωμύα he gives another account, as we shall see hereafter.

of the nature of God, and the Person of the Father is not here to be repeated but supposed; for *Christ* is set down at the right hand of that God and of that Father, which we understand when we say, *I believe in God the Father*. But because there is a difference in the Language of the Greeks between that word which is rendered † *Almighty* in the first Article, and that which is so rendered in the sixth, because that peculiarly signifieth authority of Dominion, this more properly power in operation; therefore we have reserved this notion of omnipotency now to be explained.

In which two things are observable; the Propriety, and the Universality; the Propriety in the Potency, the Universality in the Omnipotency; first, that he is a God of power; secondly, that he is a God of infinite power. The potency consisteth in a proper, innate, and natural force or activity, by which we are assured that God is able to act, work and produce true and real effects, which do require a true and real power to their production: and in respect of this he is often described unto us under the notion of a *mighty* God. The omnipotency or infinity of this power consisteth in an ability to act, perform and produce, whatsoever can be acted or produced, without any possibility of impediment or resistance: and in this respect he is represented to us as an *Almighty* God. And therefore such an Omnipotency we ascribe unto him: Which is sufficiently delivered in the Scriptures, first by the testimony of an Angel, *For with God nothing shall be impossible*; secondly, by the testimony of Christ himself, who said, *With men it is impossible, but not with God; for with God all things are possible*. Now he, to whom all things are possible, and to whom nothing is impossible, is truly and properly Omnipotent. Thus whatsoever doth not in it self imply a repugnancy of being or subsisting, hath in reference to the power of God a possibility of production; and whatsoever in respect of the power of God hath an impossibility of production, must involve in it self a repugnancy or contradiction.

This truth, though confessed by the Heathens, hath yet been denied by some of them; but with poor and insufficient † Arguments, that we shall need no more than an explication of the Doctrine to refute their objections.

† The Arguments which the Heathen used are briefly touched

by Plutarch, but were more largely delivered by Pliny. Ἀνθρώπων γὰρ (οὐκ ἔστιν) οὐ καλλιμάχῳ τὸ λέγοντι, εἰ θεὸν εἶδα, ἴδ' ὅτι καὶ ῥέζαν δαίμονι πᾶν δυνάμει. (So it must be read) ἔδ' γὰρ ὁ θεὸς δυνάμει πᾶν ποιεῖν. Ἐπεὶ τοιγάρ εἰ θεὸς ἐστι ποιεῖται τὴν χίονα μέλαιναν, τὸ δ' ὅς πῦρ ἄνελον, τὸ δ' κατὰ ἡμέραν ὄρεον, καὶ τὸ ἐναντίον, Plutarch. de Plac. Philos. l. 1. c. 7. Imperietur verò in homine naturæ præcipua solatia ne Deum quidem posse omnia. Namque nec sibi potest mortem consciscere, si velit, quod homini dedit optimum in tantis vitæ præniis, nec mortales æternitate donare, aut revocare defunctos, nec facere ut qui vixit non vixerit, qui honores gessit non gesserit; nullumque habere in præterita jura præterquam oblivionis: atque (ut facietis quoque argumentis societas hæc cum Deo copulatur) ut bis dena viginti non sint, ac multa similia efficiere non posse; per quæ declaratur haud dubie natura potentia, idque esse quod Deum vocamus, Plin. Nat. Hist. l. 2. c. 7. Add unto these that Obelision of Elymas the Sorcerer, recorded by Dionysius, Κάτοι κενὸν Ἐλμας ὁ μάγος, εἰ παντοδύναμος ὢν ὁ θεὸς πῶς λέγει αὐτὸ μὴ δυνάμει πρὸς τὸ καθ' ἑμῆς Θεολόγου. Λοιδρεῖται δ' τὸ πρὸ θεῶ Παῦλος φήσας, μὴ δυνάμει. † ὁ δὲ ἐαυτὸν ἀνέσπευξεν, De Divinis Nominibus, cap. 8.

First then we must say God is Omnipotent, because all power whatsoever is in any Creature is derived from him; and well may he be termed *Almighty*, who is the fountain of all might. There is no activity in any Agent, no influence of any Cause, but what dependeth and proceedeth from the Principal

cipal Agent, or the first of Causes. † There is nothing in the whole circumference of the Universe, but hath some kind of activity, and consequently some power to act; (for nothing can be done without a power to do it:) and as all their entities flow from the first of beings, so all their several and various powers flow from the first of powers: and as all their beings cannot be conceived to depend of any but an infinite essence, so all those powers cannot proceed from any but an infinite power.

ἡ νοεστὴν, ἡ λογικὴν, ἡ αἰσθητικὴν, ἡ ζωικὴν, ἡ ἐπὶ πᾶσι δυνάμειν ἔχει. Καὶ αὐτὸ ὅ, εἰ τίμεις εἴπῃν, τὸ ὅ δυνάμειν, εἰς τὸ ὅ ἔχει παρὰ τὸ ὑπερῶς δυνάμεως. Dionys. Arcopag. De Divin. Nom. cap. 8.

† Ἡ ἀποστολή
δυνάμειν τῶ
Θεοῦ διὰ τὴν
εἰς πᾶσα τὰ
ὄντα χάριτι καὶ
ἐξουσίᾳ τῶ ὄν-
των ὁ παντοκ-
λως ἀποφύλα-
τὸ ἔχειν τὴν
δυνάμειν, ἀλλ'

Secondly, God may be called Omnipotent, * because there can be no resistance made to his power, no opposition to his will, no rescue from his hands. ^a *The Lord of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?* ^b *He doth according to his will, in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What dost thou?* According to the degrees of power in the Agent and the Resistent is an action performed or hindered; if there be more degrees of power in the Resistent than the Agent, the action is prevented; if fewer, it may be retarded or debilitated, not wholly hindered or suppressed. But if there be no degree of power in the Resistent in reference to the Agent, then is the action totally vigorous; and if in all the powers beside that of God there be not the least degree of any resistance, we must acknowledge that power of his being above all opposition, to be infinite. As *Jehosaphat* said, ^c *In thine hand, O God, is there not power and might, so that none is able to withstand thee?* From hence there is no difficulty with God to perform any thing; no greater endeavour or activity to produce the greatest than the least of creatures; but an equal facility in reference unto all things: which cannot be † imagined but by an infinite excess of power above and beyond all resistance.

Thirdly, God is yet more properly called Omnipotent, because his own active power extendeth it self to * all things; neither is there any thing imaginably possible which he cannot do. Thus when God several ways had declared his power unto *Job*, ^d *Job answered the Lord and said, I know that thou canst do every thing.* Now that must needs be infinite activity which answereth to all kinds of possibility. Thus the power of God is infinite extensively, in respect of its object, which is all things; for whatsoever effects there be of his power, yet still there can be more produced; intensively, in respect of the action, or perfection of the effect produced; for whatsoever addition of perfection is possible is within the sphere of God's Omnipotency. The object then of the power of God is whatsoever is simply and absolutely possible, whatsoever is in it self such as that it may be; and so possible every thing is which doth not imply a contradiction. Again, whatsoever implieth a contradiction is impossible, and therefore is not within the object of the power of God, because impossibility is the contradiction of all power. For that is said to imply a contradiction, which if it were, it would necessarily follow that the same thing would be and not be. But it is impossible for the same thing both to be and not to be at the same time and in the same respect: and therefore whatsoever implieth a contradiction is impossible. From whence it followeth, that it may be truly said, God cannot effect that which involveth a contradiction, but with no derogation from his power: and it may be as truly said, God can effect whatsoever involveth not a contradiction, which is the expression of an infinite power.

Now an action may imply a contradiction two ways, either in respect of the

* Neque enim veraciter ob aliud vocatur Omnipotens nisi quia quicquid vult potest; nec voluntate cujuspiam creaturæ voluntatis omnipotentis impeditur effectus, S. Aug. Ench. ad Laur. cap. 96.
^a Isa. 14. 27.
^b Dan. 4. 35.

^c 2 Chron. 20. 6.

† Nisi omnipotens esset, non una eademque facilitate summa atque imae fecisset, Fulgent. de Fide ad Petrum, cap. 3.
^a Quis est omnipotens nisi qui omnia potest? S. Aug. de Trin. l. 4. c. 7.
^d Job 42. 1, 2.

the Object, or in respect of the Agent. In respect of the object it may imply a contradiction immediately or consequentially. That doth imply a contradiction immediately, which plainly and in terms doth signifie a repugnancy and so destroys it self, as for the same thing to be and not to be, to have been and not to have been. And therefore it must be acknowledged that it is not in the power of God * to make that not to have been, which hath already been : but that is no derogation to God's power, because not within the object of any power. And he may certainly have all power, who hath not that which belongeth to no power. Again, that doth imply a contradiction consequentially, which in appearance seemeth not to be impossible, but by necessary consequence if admitted, leadeth infallibly to a contradiction. As that one body should be at the same time in two distinct places, speaks no repugnancy in terms ; but yet by consequence it leads to that which is repugnant in it self ; which is that the same body is but one body, and not but one. Being then a covert and consequential contradiction is as much and as truly a contradiction as that which is open and immediate, it followeth that it is as impossible to be effected, and therefore comes not under the power of God.

* Τὸ γὰρ οὐδὲν
ἐκ ἐξελείπει
μὴ ἵσχυρὸν, διὰ
τοῦτο ἄγαν
ἐν ἑαυτῷ. Ἄνθρωπος
αὐτὸς καὶ θεὸς
ἐξελείπει. Ἀ-
ποστολὴ Κορινθίων
α' αὐτὸς ὁ θεὸς
πατερὰ ἡμῶν.
Arist. Ethic.
Eud. l. 5. c. 2.
Quisquis dicit,
Si omnipotens
est Deus, faciat
ut quæ facta
sunt facta non
fuerint, non videt hoc se dicere, si omnipotens est faciat ut ea quæ vera sunt eo ipso quo vera sunt falsa
fint, S. Aug. contra Faustum, l. 25. c. 5. It is granted therefore to be true, which Pliny objects, Deum non facere ut qui vixit
non vixerit, qui honores gessit, non gesserit; as this proves nothing against omnipotency because it is no act of possibility. Had
the Act objected been seizable, and God had not the power to effect it, then had he wanted some power, and consequently had
not been Omnipotent. But being it is not want of power in the Agent, but of possibility in the Object, it proveth no deficiency
in God.

That doth imply a contradiction in respect of the Agent, which is repugnant to his essential perfection ; for being every action floweth from the essence of the Agent, whatsoever is totally repugnant to that essence, must involve a contradiction as to the Agent. Thus we may say, God cannot sleep, God cannot want, God cannot † die ; he cannot sleep whose being is spiritual ; he cannot want, whose nature is all-sufficient ; he cannot die who is essentially and necessarily existent. Nor can that be a diminution of his Omnipotency, the contrary whereof would be a proof of his impotency, a demonstration of his infirmity. Thus it is impossible for God to ^a lie, to whom we say nothing is impossible ; and, he who can do all things, * cannot deny himself. Because a lie is repugnant to the perfection of Veracity, which is essential unto God as necessarily following from his infinite knowledge, and infinite sanctity. We who are ignorant may be deceived, we who are sinful may deceive ; but it is repugnant to that nature to be deceived which is no way subject unto ignorance ; it is contradictory to that essence to deceive, which is no way capable of sin. For as it is a plain contradiction to know all things and to be ignorant of any thing : so is it to know all things and to be deceived ; as it is an evident contradiction, to be infinitely holy, and to be sinful, so is it to be infinitely holy and deceive. But it is impossible for any one to lie, who can neither deceive nor be deceived. Therefore it is a manifest contradiction to say that God can lie, and consequently it is no derogation from his Omnipotency, that he cannot. Whatsoever then God cannot do, whatsoever is impossible to him, doth not any way prove that he is not Almighty, but only shew that the rest of his Attributes and perfections are as essential to him as his power ; and as his power suffereth no resistance, so the rest of his perfections admit no repugnance. Well therefore may we conclude him absolutely † Omnipotent,

† Neque enim
et vitam Dei
& præscienti-
am Dei sub ne-
cessitate poni-
mus si dica-
mus, Necess-
se est Deum
semper vive-
re & cuncta
præscire, sicut
nec potestas
ejus minuitur,
cum dicitur
mori fallique
non posse. Sic
enim hoc non
potest, ut po-
tius si posset,
majoris esset
utique pote-
statis ; Recte
quippe Oni-
nipotens dicitur
qui ramen
mori & falli
non potest.
Dicitur enim
Omnipotentia
ciendo quod
vult, non pari-
endo quod non
vult. Quod si ei
accideret, nequaquam
esset Omnipotens.
Unde propterea quidam
non potest quia
Omnipotens est, Aug. de Civ. Dei, l. 5. c. 10. Nam ego dico quanta non possit. Non potest mori, non potest peccare, non
potest mentiri, non potest falli. Tanta non potest, quæ si posset non esset Omnipotens, Autor Serm. 119. ad
Temp. ^a Heb. 5. 18. * Nunquid mentitur Deus? Sed non mentitur; quia impossibile est mentiri Deum.
Impossibile autem istud nunquid infirmitatis est? Non utique; Nam quomodo omnia potest, si aliquid efficere
non potest? Quid ergo ei impossibile? Illud utique quod naturæ ejus contrarium est, non quod virtute arduum. Im-
possibile

possibile, inquit, est ei mentiri, & impossibile istud non infirmitatis est, sed virtutis & majestatis; quia veritas non recipit mendacium, nec Dei virtus levitatis errorem, S. Amb. Ann. in Num. Si volunt invenire quod Omnipotens non potest, habent prorsus, ego dicam, mentiri non potest. Credamus ergo quod potest non credendo quod non potest, S. Aug. de Civ. Dei, l. 22. c. 25. * 2 Tim. 2. 13. *This was the Argument of Elymas the Sorcerer before-mentioned, to which Dionysius gives this answer, 'Εαυτὸ ἀρνησάμενος ἐκπλήρωσις ἀληθείας ὄντων· ἢ τὴν ἀλήθειαν ὄντων· καὶ ἢ τὴν ἀλήθειαν ἐκπλήρωσις τῶν ὄντων· ἐκπλήρωσις. Εἰ τούτων ἡ ἀλήθεια ὄντων, ἢ τὴν ἀρνησάμενος τὴν ἀλήθειαν τῶν ὄντων· ἐκπλήρωσις, ἐκ τῶν ὄντων ἐκπλήρωσις ὁ Θεὸς ἐστὶν δυνάστης· καὶ τὸ μὴ εἶναι, ὡς ἂν τις εἴπῃ τὸ μὴ δυνάστης ἐστὶν δυνάστης, καὶ τὸ μὴ εἶναι καὶ εἶναι, De Divin. Nom. cap. 8. Φαυλὸν τὸ καὶ εἶναι καὶ μὴ εἶναι αἰχρῶν ὁ Θεός, ἐπεὶ εἶναι ὁ Θεὸς δυνάστης τὸ μὴ εἶναι Θεός· εἰ γὰρ αἰχρῶν δεῖται ὁ Θεός, ἐκ τῶν Θεῶν. Orig. cont. Cels. l. 5. Jobius gives this Solution to the same Objection, 'Α φαυλὸν μὴ δυνάστης τὸ εἶναι ταῦτα καὶ μὴτε ὄντων ὄντων καὶ μὴτε δυνάστης ὄντων· Παντοδυνάστης τὸ εἶναι καὶ λέγειν ὡς τά τε περὶ πάντων, καὶ περὶ καὶ σωτηρίας καὶ δεινουργημάτων πάντων δυνάστης ὅτε βέλῃται, Job. de Verb. Incarn. l. 3. apud Photium in Biblioth. 'Ο Ἀποστόλος φησὶ περὶ τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ πατρὸς, 'Εν οἷς ἀδυναστον δυνάστης Θεὸν ἐκ ἀδυνατοῦ τινος κατὰ τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ δυνάμειος ἀλλὰ μετὰ τὴν βούλησιν, ὅτι ἀντίθετος ὅτι τὸ δυνάστης ὁ τῆς ἀληθείας πατὴρ· καὶ ἀλλὰ χόστος τὸ ταῦτα ὅχι κατὰ τὴν βούλησιν ἐστίν, ἐὰν ἀρνησάμενος αὐτὸν ἐκπλήρωσις πᾶσις μὲν ἐστὶν ἀρνησάμενος γὰρ αὐτὸν ἐστὶν δυνάστης. Καὶ τὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐκ ἀδυνατοῦ ὄντων ἀποδείξει, ἀλλ' ἀνυπόκλητος ἐκπλήρωσις, ὅτι ἐκ ἐκπλήρωσις τὴν δυνάμει ἐστὶν ἐκπλήρωσις ἀρνησάμενος, Ibid. Peleus. Ep. 335. l. 3. Theodoret upon that place of S. Paul, It is impossible for God to lie, Οὐκ ἀδυνατοῦ τὸ ἀδυνατοῦ, ἀλλὰ ἀρνησάμενος αὐτὸ δεικνύς δυνάστης. Οὕτως γὰρ φησὶν, ὄντων, ἀληθὲς ὡς ἀδυνατοῦ εἶναι εἶναι ἐν αὐτῷ καὶ ποτε. Τὸ δυνάστην ἀρνησάμενος (ita lege, non ἀδυνατοῦ ἐν) τῆς ἀληθείας διὰ τὸ ἀδυνατοῦ σημαίνει. And upon that, He cannot deny himself, πάλιν οὕτως τὸ ἐστὶν δυνάστης τῆς ἀπείρου δυνάμειος ὡς ἀρνησάμενος, ὅτι. Theod. Dial. 3. † Theodoret having proved that there were many things which fell not under the power of God, at last thus concludes, Πολλὰ τοίνυν ἀρνησάμενος ἀδυνατοῦ ὄντων τὸ παντοδυνάστης Θεῶν. Ἀλλὰ τὸ μὴ δυνάστης τὴν τῶν, ἀπείρου δυνάμειος ἐκπλήρωσις τεκμηρίον· τὸ δὲ γὰρ δυνάστης, ἀδυνατοῦ δυνάστης, ἐστὶν δυνάμειος. "Ὅτι τῶν ἐκαστον τὸ ἀρνησάμενος τὸ Θεῶν κηρύττει καὶ ἀναλλοίωτον, Dial. 3. And Origen cont. Cels. l. 3. gives this for the Christian's general Rule. Δυνάστης καὶ ἡμᾶς πᾶσις ὁ Θεὸς ἀρνησάμενος τὸ Θεῶν εἶναι, καὶ τὸ ἀρνησάμενος εἶναι, καὶ τὸ σφῶν εἶναι ἐκπλήρωσις. And the words of Celsus, thougħt ill intended, are yet very true. 'Αυτοὺς γὰρ (ὁ Θεός) ὄντων ὁ πᾶσις καὶ ὄντων λόγος, ἐστὶν ἐν οἷς τε πᾶσις καὶ ἐστὶν ἐκπλήρωσις, Apud Orig. l. 4. And so Origen in his Answer confesses. Ἀλλὰ καὶ ἡμᾶς ἐστὶν οἷς τε πᾶσις καὶ ἐστὶν ἐκπλήρωσις ὄντων ὁ Θεός.*

who by being able to effect all thing consistent with his perfections, sheweth infinite ability: and by not being able to do any thing repugnant to the same perfections, demonstrateth himself subject to no infirmity or imbecillity. And in this manner we maintain God's Omnipotency, with the * best and eldest, against the worst and latest of the Heathen Authors.

* It was the constant Opinion of the most an-

cient Heathens, as appeareth by Homer, who expresseth it plainly, Odyss. κ'.

Χαλεπὸν δὲ τ' ὀρέσμεν

Ἀνδράσι γε θυσιόισι, θεοὶ δὲ τε πάντα δυνάστηται.

And the same sense is attributed to Linus in a Distich cited for his by Stobaeus; but may rather be thought to have been made by some of the Pythagoreans. For this was the plain Doctrine of Pythagoras, who taught his Scholars to believe miracles, and to doubt of nothing said to be done by the Gods, because all things were possible to them; Οὐ γὰρ εἶναι τὰ μὴ δυνάστης τὸ Θεῶν (vel potius τοῖς Θεοῖς) τὰ τὴν δυνάστης, ὡς ὅτι οἱ Θεοὶ πάντες σοφιστοὺς, ἀλλὰ πάντα δυνάστης· καὶ ἡ ἀρχὴ ἢ αὐτὴ ὅτι τὸ ἐπ' αὐτῶν, ἀπὸ ἐκείνων ἐστὶν εἶναι Linus ὅτι καὶ τοῖς ἱστοῖς ἐκπλήρωσις. Ἐλπεὶ γὰρ τὸ πᾶσι· ἐπεὶ ἐκ ἐστὶν ἐστὶν ἀρνησάμενος. Πᾶσις πᾶσις Θεῶν τῶν, καὶ ἀνυπόκλητος. Iamb. de Vic. Pythag. c. 28. So Epicarmus a Disciple of Pythagoras, Ἀδυνατοῦ ἐστὶν Θεῶν. So Patet Omnipotens, and Jupiter Omnipotens, familiar in Virgil and the Poets before and after him. These do far overweigh the authority in Plutarch, and that of Pliny, with the addition of Galen, who opposeth the Opinion of the Philosophers to that of Moses expressly, and to our Saviour obliquely, Οὐ γὰρ δὲ τὸ βελήσμεν, τοιαῦτα καὶ μόνον καὶ αὐτὰρ ἐστὶν· ἐστὶν γὰρ, εἰ τὸ πᾶσις ἐκπλήρωσις ἐκπλήρωσις, ἀνυπόκλητος τοιοῦτον δυνάστην αὐτῶν. Which seems to be opposed to those words of our Saviour, God is able to raise children unto Abraham out of these stones. Καὶ τὰ τ' ἐστὶ καὶ τὸ τὸ Μωϋσῆος δόξης ἢ ἡμετέρας καὶ Πλάτωνος καὶ ἢ τῶν ἄλλων παρ' Ἑλλήσιν ὁρῶν μετὰ χεῖρας αὐτῶν τὸ πᾶσις ἐκπλήρωσις λόγους διαφέρει. Τὸ μὴ γὰρ ἀρνησάμενος τὸ βελήσμεν τὸ Θεῶν κοσμίῃσι τὴν ὕλην, ἢ δὲ ἐκείνων ἐκπλήρωσις· πᾶσις γὰρ εἶναι τὸ Θεῶν δυνάστης νομίζῃ, καὶ εἰ τὴν τῶν τῶν ἱστοῖς ἢ βῆν ἐκπλήρωσις· ἡμῶς δὲ ἐκπλήρωσις τῶν τῶν τῶν, ἀλλ' εἶναι τὴν δυνάστης καὶ μόνον τὸ βελήσμεν αὐτῶν, De usu Part. l. 11.

Thus God is Omnipotent, and God only. For if the power of all things beside God be the power of God, as derived from him, and subordinate unto him, and his own power from whence that is derived can be subordinate to none, then none can be Omnipotent but God.

Again, We say, that God the Father is Almighty; but then we cannot say, that the Father only is Almighty. For the reason why we say the Father is Almighty, is because he is God; and therefore we cannot say that he † only is Almighty, because it is not true that he only is God. Who-

soever then is God, hath the same reason and foundation of Omnipotency, which the Father hath, and consequently is to be acknowledged properly and truly Omnipotent as the Father is. But we have already shewed that the Son of God is truly God, and shall hereafter shew that the Holy Ghost is also God; and that by the same nature by which the Father is God. The Father therefore is Almighty, because the Father is God;

scilicet & Filium & Spiritum Sanctum. Non enim cum dicimus nos credere in Deum Patrem Omnipotentem sicut Hæretici Ariani negamus Filium Omnipotentem, aut Spiritum Sanctum, Author lib. de Symbolo ad Catechum. l. 2. c. 3.

the Son Almighty, because the Son is God; and *the Holy Ghost Almighty*, because the Holy Ghost is God. The Father, Son, and Holy Ghost are God by the same Divinity: therefore the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost are Omnipotent by the same Omnipotency. The *Father* then is not called *Almighty* by way of exclusion, but is here mentioned with that Attribute peculiarly,

* Nor is it unusual in other Authors to make use of the word Omnipotens, rather in relation to the present occasion, than in reference to the Person who is said to be Omnipotent; as is

* because the power of God answereth particularly to the right hand of God, as being *the right hand of power*. The *Father* therefore is here described by the notion of *Almighty*, to shew that *Christ* having ascended into heaven, and being set down at *the right hand of God*, is invested with a greater power than he exercised before: and that power which was then actually conferred upon him, acknowledgeth no bound or limits; but *all power* in the ultimate extent of its infinity is *given unto* him, who is set down on the right hand of him who is *God the Father*; and, being so, is therefore truly and properly *Almighty*.

observed by Servius upon that Verse of Virgil, *Æneid.* 9. Jupiter omnipotens audacibus annue cœptis. Hoc epitheton interdum ad gloriam numinis ponitur, interdum ad causam dicentis. Namq; hoc loco dicendo *Omnipotens* ostendit cum etiam his qui per se minus valent præstare posse virtutem.

Deut. 10. 7.
Luke 12. 5.

It is necessary to profess belief in God *Almighty*; First, because the acknowledgment of his Omnipotency begetteth that fear and reverence, submission and obedience which is due unto his infinite Majesty. Our God is a *great God, a mighty, and a terrible*; therefore terrible because mighty. *I will fore-warn you, saith our Saviour, whom ye shall fear: Fear him which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell, I say unto you, fear him.* Three times we are commanded to fear, and one only reason rendred, but sufficient for a thousand fears, the power of him who is able eternally to punish us. God gave a general command to *Abraham*, and with it a powerful perswasion to obedience, when he said unto him, *I am the Almighty God, walk before me and be thou perfect.* It was a rational advice which the Apostle giveth us. *Humble your selves under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.* And it is a proper incentive to the observation of the Law of God, to consider that he is the *one Law-giver who is able to save and to destroy.*

Gen. 17. 1.

1 Pet. 5. 6.

James 4. 12.

† This was the Argument which the Pythagoreans used, who be-

lieved many miraculous actions, which others looked upon as fabulous. Because they would disbelieve nothing which was referred to the Divine power, and the reason of that was because they thought all things possible to God, as we shewed before. Τῶν τοιούτων ὃ (saith Iamblichus, having related several strange actions either fabulous or miraculous) ἥ δὲ δοκούστων μυθικῶν ἀπομνημονεύσαντες ὡς μὴ δυνάμεις ὅ,τι αὐτοὶ τὸ θεῖον ἀνέγνωσαν. And whereas others looked upon them as weak and simple people, for giving credit to such fabulous relations, τοῖς πάντα τὰ τοιαῦτα ἐχθρὸν αὐτοῦ εὐήθεις νομίζουσιν, ἀλλὰ τοῦ ἀπιστεῖν, Iamblichus de vit. Pythag. cap. 28.

Thirdly, It is not only necessary in matters of bare Faith, and notions of Belief, but in respect of the active and operative reliance upon the promises of God. This was the particular confidence of *Abraham* the Father of the faithful, who staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief, but was strong in faith, giving glory to God, and being fully perswaded that what he had promised he was able also to perform. The promises of God are therefore

Rom. 4. 20, 21.

* firm

* firm and sure, because he is both willing and able to perform them. We doubt or distrust the promises of men, either because we may fear they intend not to do what they have promised, or cannot do what they intend; in the first, we may suspect them, because they are subject to iniquity; in the second, because they are liable to infirmity. But being God is of infinite sanctity, he cannot intend by breaking his promises to deceive us; therefore if he be also of infinite power, he must be able to perform what he intended, and consequently we can have no reason to distrust his promises. From whence every good Christian may say with the Apostle, *I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.* I am assured that if I be a sheep, and hear my Saviour's voice, the powers of darkness and the gates of hell can never prevail against me, for it was the voice of the Son of God, *My Father which gave them me is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.*

* Nulla est in promissis Dei falsitas, quia nulla est in faciendis difficultas aut impossibilitas, Fulgent. l. 1. Ad Monim.

2 Tim. 1. 12.

John 10. 29.

Lastly, The belief of God's Omnipotency is necessary to give life to our devotions. We ask those things from heaven which none but God can give, and many of them such, as, if God himself were not *Almighty*, he could not effect. And therefore in that form of Prayer which *Christ* hath taught us, we conclude all our Petitions unto the Father with that acknowledgment, *For thine is the Kingdom, the Power, and the Glory.* Nor can there be a greater encouragement in the midst of all our temptations, than that we are invited to call upon him in the day of trouble, *who is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us.*

Math. 6. 13.

Eph. 3. 20.

After this Explication of our Saviour's Session, we may conclude what every Christian ought, and may be supposed to intend, when he maketh profession to believe that *Christ is set on the right hand of God, the Father Almighty.* For thereby he is conceived to declare thus much, I assent unto this as a most infallible and necessary truth, That *Jesus Christ* ascending into the highest heavens, after all the troubles and sufferings endured here for our Redemption, did rest in everlasting happiness; he which upon earth had not a place to lay his head, did take up a perpetual habitation there, and sit down upon the Throne of God, as a Judge, and as a King, according to his office of Mediatour, unto the end of the World, according to that which he merited by his Mediatourship, to all eternity; which hand of God the Father Almighty signifieth an Omnipotent Power, able to do all things without any limitation, so they involve not a contradiction, either in themselves or in relation to his Perfections. And thus I believe in *Jesus Christ* who sitteth at the right hand of God the Father Almighty.

ARTICLE VII.

From * thence shall he come to Judge the Quick and the Dead.

* Or, from whence; the Latines sometimes inde. some times unde. And the Greek is ἐθεν, unde, both in the ancient MS. in Sir Robert Cotton's Library, and in the Creed of Marcellus. But ἐκθεν ἐρχόμενον, in the latter MS. in Benner College Library. Others

neither ὅθεν nor ἐκθεν but πάλιν, as Justine Martyr, Ἡμεῖς ἐπὶ γινώσκωμεν Χριστὸν ὃν Θεὸς σωτηρίαν καὶ ἀνασφάλαν, καὶ ἀνελυστά ἐς τοὺς αἰώνους, καὶ πάλιν παραχρυσώμενον κελεύει πάντων ἀπλῶς ἀνθρώπων μίχθῃς αὐτῷ Ἀδὰμ. Dial. cum Tryphone. Others without inde or unde, only venturus, as the Nicene Creed, ἐρχόμενον κεῖναι, others πάλιν ἐρχόμενον, or ἤξει πάλιν; and Fortunatus leaving out inde venturus, hath only judicaturus vivos & mortuos.

For the illustration of the first Particular, two things will be necessary, and no more; first, to shew that the promised *Messias* was to come again after he once was come; secondly, to declare how our *Jesus* (whom we have already proved once to have come as the true *Messias*) did promise and assure us of a second coming.

That the *Messias* was to come again, was not only certainly, but copiously foretold; the Scriptures did often assure us of a second advent. As often as we read of his griefs and humility, so often we are admonished of his coming to suffer: as often as we hear of his power and glory, so often we are assured of his coming to judge. We must not fanſie with the *Jews*, a double *Messias*, one the son of *Joseph*, the other of *David*; one of the tribe of *Ephraim*, the other of *Judah*; but we must take that for a certain truth, which they have made an occasion of their errour; that the *Messias* is twice to come, once in all humility, to suffer and die, as they conceived of their son of *Joseph*; and again in glory, to govern and judge, as they expect the son of *David*. Particularly, *Enoch the seventh from Adam* prophesied of his Advent, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his Angels. And more particularly *Daniel* saw the Representation of his judiciary power and glory. I saw in the night visions, and behold, one like the Son of man, came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him before him. And there was given him dominion and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations and languages should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. This Son of man the * *Jews* themselves confess to be the promised *Messias*, and they take the words to signify his coming, and so far give testimony to the truth, but then they evacuate the prediction by a false interpretation, saying, that † if the *Jews* went on in their sins, then the *Messias* should come in humility, according to the description in *Zachary*, lowly and riding upon an ass; but if they pleased

* R. Saadiah Gaon ad locum,

והו כשיה
צדקו
כדכתיב
נאם יי

לדאנשין דימיני In Bereshit Rabba, speaking of the Genealogy concluding (1 Chron. 2. 24) with Anani the youngest of the seven sons of Elioenai, the Author asks this question, וימי הוא ענני and who is this Anani? and answers it thus, והוא משיח שנ' הוה הוית נחוי לדיא וארו עם ענני שמיא כנר אנש אתח הוה: This is the *Messias*, as it is written, Dan. 7. 13. I saw in the night visions, and behold one like the Son of man, came with Anani, that is, the clouds of heaven; Solomon Jarchi ad locum, אנש הוא מלך המשיח, and Aben Ezra, ibidem, אמר רנ' ישועה כי זה כנר, אנש

וְסוּר אֲדָם חוּא סוּר הַמְּשִׁיחַ כְּאִמְרֵי כֹהֵן *So the Author of Tzeror Hammor*; אֲנִשׁ הַמְּשִׁיחַ וְנִבְיָו הָרֹכֵךְ *The mystery of man is the mystery of the Messias, according to that of Daniel, he came as the Son of man.* This place is mentioned for one of the כְּתוּבֵי נִין which speak of the Messiah, in the Midrash Tillim, Psal. 2. And the Midrash upon the 21. Psal. v. 7. אֲנִשׁ : אֲנִשׁ שְׁמִי אֲכַנֵּר אֲנִשׁ : *speaking of the Messias.* Indeed the Jews do so generally interpret this place of Daniel of the Messias, that they make it an Argument to prove that the Messias is not yet come, because no man hath yet come with the clouds of heaven. † This interpretation is delivered in libro Sanhedrim, אֲרִי אֶלְכַּסְנֶרֶי בְּתִינַן עַל מֶלֶךְ הַמְּשִׁיחַ וְאֵרוּ עִם עֲנִי שְׁמִי אֲכַנֵּר אֲנִשׁ אֲתָהּ הוּא וְכָתִיב : אֲנִשׁ : *Idem etiam legitur in Bereshit Rabba R. Moshe Haddarshan, Gen. 49. 11.* Thus they make the coming of Christ to depend upon their merit or demerit; whereas the promises of the Messias are absolute and irrelative, depend only on the goodness of God, not to be evacuated or altered by the wickedness of man. Nay the unworthiness of the Jews which Christ found when he came in humility, is one special cause why he should come again in glory.

God, then he should come in glory, according to the description in the Prophet Daniel, with the clouds of heaven. Whereas these two descriptions are two several predictions, and therefore must be both fulfilled. From whence it followeth, that, being Christ is already come lowly and sitting upon an ass, therefore he shall come gloriously with the clouds of heaven. For if both those descriptions cannot belong to one and the same advent, as the Jews acknowledge, and both of them must be true, because equally prophetic; then must there be a double advent of the same Messias, and so his second coming was foretold.

That our Jesus, whom we have already proved to have come once into the world as the true Messias, shall come the second time, we are most assured. We have the testimony of the Angels, *This same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.* Acts 1. 11. We have the promise of Christ himself to his Apostles, *If I go to prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto my self: ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away and come again unto you.* John 14. 3, 28. He it is which from the beginning was to come; that express prophecy so represented him, *The Scouter shall not depart from Judah until Shiloh come; the name of Shiloh was obscure, but the notion of the comer, added to it, was most vulgar.* Gen. 49. 19. According to this notion once Christ came, and being gone he keeps that notion still; he is to come again. ^a *For yet a little while and he that shall come will come.* Heb. 10. Our Jesus then shall come, and not only so, but shall so come, as the Messias was foretold, after the same manner, in the same glory of the Father, as the ^b Son of man coming in his Kingdom. This was expressed in the prophetic vision by coming with clouds, and in the same manner shall our Jesus come; For ^c *Behold he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him.* Those clouds were anciently expounded by the [†] Jews of the glorious attendance of the Angels, waiting upon the Son of man: and in the same manner, with the same attendance do we expect the coming of our Jesus, even as he himself hath taught us to expect him, saying, *For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels.* And thus our Jesus as the true Messias shall come again, which was our first Consideration.

which made the Apostles ask that Question, Matt. 24. 3. When shall these things be, and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? ^b Matt. 16. 28. ^c Rev. 1. 7. † As R. Saadiah Gaon upon that place of Dan. 7. 13. : אֲנִשׁ : אֲנִשׁ שְׁמִי אֲכַנֵּר אֲנִשׁ : *speaking of the Messias.* From hence is that exposition in Midrash Tillim, Psal. 21. 7. אֲרִי אֶלְכַּסְנֶרֶי בְּתִינַן עַל מֶלֶךְ הַמְּשִׁיחַ וְאֵרוּ עִם עֲנִי שְׁמִי אֲכַנֵּר אֲנִשׁ : *Idem etiam legitur in Bereshit Rabba R. Moshe Haddarshan, Gen. 49. 11.* Thus they make the coming of Christ to depend upon their merit or demerit; whereas the promises of the Messias are absolute and irrelative, depend only on the goodness of God, not to be evacuated or altered by the wickedness of man. Nay the unworthiness of the Jews which Christ found when he came in humility, is one special cause why he should come again in glory.

The place from whence he shall come is next to be considered, and is sufficiently expressed in the Creed by reflection upon the place whither he went when

when he departed from us; For *he ascended into heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God, and from thence shall he come*: that is, from, and out of the highest heaven (where he now sitteth at the right hand of God) shall *Christ* hereafter come to judge both the quick and the dead. For *him must the heaven receive till the time of the restitution of all things*; and when that time is fulfilled, from that heaven shall he come. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel and with the trump of God. Our conversation ought to be *in heaven*, because from thence we look for our Saviour the Lord Jesus. Our High-priest is gone up into the Holy of Holies not made with hands, there to make an atonement for us; therefore as the people of Israel stood without the Tabernacle expecting the return of Aaron, so must we look unto the Heavens and expect *Christ* from thence, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty Angels. We do believe that *Christ* is set down on the right hand of God; but we must also look upon him as coming thence, as well as sitting there; and to that purpose *Christ* himself hath joyned them together, saying, *Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven*. Thus shall the Saviour of the world come from the right hand of power, in fulness of Majesty, from the highest heavens, as a demonstration of his sanctity: that by an undoubted authority, and unquestionable integrity, he might appear most fit to judge both the quick and the dead: which is the end of his second coming, and leads me to the third consideration, the act of his judging, *From whence shall he come to judge*.

For the explication of this Action, as it stands in this Article, three considerations will be necessary, First, How we may be assured that there is a Judgment to come, that any one shall come to judge. Secondly, In case we be assured that there shall be a Judgment, how it appeareth that he which is ascended into heaven, that is, that *Christ* shall be the judge. Thirdly, In case we can be assured that we shall be judged, and that *Christ* shall judge us, it will be worthy our inquiry in what this judgment shall consist, how this action shall be performed: and more than this cannot be necessary to make us understand, that *he shall come to judge*.

That there is a Judgment to come after this life, will appear demonstrable, whether we consider our selves who are to undergo it, or God who is to execute it. If we do but reflect upon the frame and temper of our own spirits, we cannot but collect and conclude from thence, that we are to give an account of our actions, and that a judgment hereafter is to pass upon us. There is in the soul of every man a Conscience, and whose soever it is, it giveth testimony to this truth. The antecedent or directive conscience tells us what we are to do, and the subsequent or reflexive conscience warns us what we are to receive. Looking back upon the actions we have done, it either approves or condemns them; and if it did no more, it would only prove that there is a judgment in this life, and every man his own Judge. But being it doth not only allow and approve our good actions, but also doth create a complacency, apology, and confidence in us; being it doth not only disprove and condemn our evil actions, but doth also constantly accuse us, and breed a fearful expectation and terrour in us; and all this prescinding from all relation to any thing either to be enjoyed or suffered in this life: it followeth that this conscience is not so much a judge as a witness, bound over to give testimony, for or against us at some judgment after this life to pass upon us. For all men are a Law unto themselves, and have the work of the Law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or excusing one another in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men.

Again,

Again, if we consider the God who made us and hath full dominion over us, whether we look upon him in himself, or in his Word, we cannot but expect a judgment from him. First, If we contemplate God in Himself, we must acknowledge him to be the judge of all mankind, *so that a man shall say, verily he is a God that judgeth in the earth.* Now the same God who is our Judge, is, by an attribute, necessary and inseparable, Just; and this Justice is so essential to his Godhead, that we may as well deny him to be God, as to be Just. It was a rational expostulation which *Abraham* made, *Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?* We may therefore infallibly conclude that God is a most just Judge; and if he be so, we may as infallibly conclude that after this life he will judge the world in righteousness. For as the affairs of this present world are ordered, though they lie under the disposition of providence, they shew no sign of an universal Justice. The wicked and disobedient persons are often so happy, as if they were rewarded for their impieties; the innocent and religious often so miserable, as if they were punished for their innocence. Nothing more certain than that in this life, rewards are not correspondent to the virtues, punishments not proportionable to the sins of men. Which consideration will enforce one of these conclusions; either that there is no Judge of the Actions of mankind; or if there be a Judge, he is not just, he renders no proportionable rewards or punishments; or lastly, if there be a Judge, and that Judge be just, then is there a judgment in another world, and the effects thereof concern another life. Being then we must acknowledge that there is a Judge, which judgeth the earth, being we cannot deny but God is that Judge, and all must confess that God is most Just; being the rewards and punishments of this life are no way answerable to so exact a justice as that which is divine must be; it followeth that there is a judgment yet to come, in which God will shew a perfect demonstration of his justice, and to which every man shall in his own bosom carry an undeniable witness of all his actions.

From hence the Heathen, having always had a serious apprehension both of the power of the conscience of man, and of the exactness of the justice of God, have from thence concluded that there is a judgment to come. Infomuch that when *S. Paul* reasoned of righteousness and temperance and judgment to come, *Felix* trembled. The discourse of righteousness and temperance touched him who was highly and notoriously guilty of the breach of both, and a pre-conception which he had of judgment after death, now heightened by the Apostles particular description, created an horror in his soul and trembling in his limbs. The same Apostle discoursing to the *Athenians*, the great lights of the Gentile world, and teaching them this Article of our Creed, that God hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead; found some which mocked when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, but against the day of judgment none replied. That was † a principle of their own, that was confessed by all who either believed themselves, or a God; a conscience, or a Deity.

ledged by all their Writers, and as the great encouragement of his Apology for the Christian Religion. Ἐπὶ τοίνυν ἡμῖν ὁ Θεὸς τῆς ἀληθείας θεοσεβῆσαι περὶ κείνου λόγος ἦν ὃν οἱ μὲν περὶ τιμωτέραν, τοῖς ἀκινδυνόσι βιωῶν περιηρημένοις ἔδον νομισμαὶ διὰ τὴν μέλλουσαν αὐτὴν τὴν τελευτῶν τῆς δὲ τῆς βίης ἐστὶς κρίσιν. ὡς μὲν οἱ ἡμέτεροι καὶ θεὸν κηρύττουσιν πρὸς ἅπαντας πρὸς τὴν ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ παρ' ὑμῶν νομιζόντες ἔδον σοφοί, καὶ ποιῆται μόνον ἀλλὰ καὶ φιλόσοφοι. οἱ τὴν ἀληθείαν καὶ θεὸν ἐκ παλαιῶν ἀπαγγελλόμενοι παρ' ὑμῶν εἰδέναι γινώσκον, ad Græcos Cohort. 1. Tertullian shews the same not only from the writings but the constant conversation and language even of the Gentiles. Anima licet corporis carcere pressa, licet institutionibus pravis circumscripta, licet libidinibus & concupiscentiis evigorata, licet falsis Diis exancillata, cum tamen respiciat ut ex crapula, ut ex somno, ut ex aliqua valetudine, & sanitatem suam patitur, & Deum nominat, hoc solo quia proprie verus hic unus Deus bonus & magnus. Et quod Deus dederit omnium vox est. Judicem quoque contestatur illum, Deus vider, & Deo commendat, & Dens mihi reddet. O testimonium animæ naturaliter Christianæ! Apol. adv. Gentes. Indeed the Ancient Gentiles have expressed this judgment to come very exactly. As Philemon cited by Justin Martyr de Monarch. Dei, Ἐστὶν Δίκης ὁρῶμεν

Psal. 58. 11.

Gen. 18. 25.

Acts 24. 25.

Acts 17. 31.

† This principle of a judgment to come, Justin Martyr propounds to the Gentiles, as generally acknowledged

ὁ θεὸς ἡμεῖς ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν ἔσται. Εἰ δὲ ὁ δίκαιος καὶ ἁγίος ἔσται ἐν ἡμῖν, ἄρα ταῖς ἀποστολὰς καὶ τοῖς ἐπισκόποις καὶ τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις καὶ τοῖς ἱεροῦσιν ἐκείνων. Ὅθεν καὶ παλαιὸν διεσέσταις. Οὐ γὰρ ἔστιν ἡμεῖς ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν, ἀλλ' ἐν τοῖς ἱεροῦσιν ἔσται. And Plato originally has delivered it according to their Nature and participation, whose places to this purpose are faithfully collected by Eusebius and Theodoret, and may be read in them; Eusebius de Prepar. Evang. lib. 11. c. 38. & lib. 22. c. 6. Theodor. Sem. de Fine & Iudicio. Where after the citation of several places he concludes, Οὕτως ἀκριβῶς ὁρίσκει ὁ Παῖς τῶν ἱεροῦ ἐν ταῖς πόλεσιν καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἱεροῦ.

But yet, beside the consideration of the eternal power of conscience in our selves, beside the intuition of that essential Attribute, the Justice of God (which are sufficient arguments to move all men,) we have yet a more near and enforcing persuasion grounded upon the express determination of the will of God. For the determinate council of the Almighty actually to judge the world in righteousness is clearly revealed in his word. *It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the Judgment.* There is a death appointed to follow this life, and a judgment to follow that death, the one as certain as the other. For in all Ages God hath revealed his resolution to judge the world.

Upon the first remarkable action after the fall, there is a sufficient intimation given to angry Cain, *If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door*; which by the most ancient † interpretation signifieth a reservation of his sin unto the Judgment of the world to come. Before the Flood Enoch prophesied of a Judgment to come, saying, *Behold the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his Saints to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodlily committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him*. His words might have an aim at the waters which were to overflow the world; but the ultimate intention looked through that fire which shall consume the world preserved from water.

Gen. 4 7.
† So the Tar-
gam of Jona-
than renders it,

הר"ר
אם תשיב
עבוד
י' שתבק לר
היבד און
ל' תשיב
עבוד
נעל מ'
הר"ר
דיבא דב' :

חַטָּאָה נָטִיר If thou makest thy works good, shall not thy sin be forgiven thee? And if thou makest not thy works good in this world, thy sin is kept unto the day of the great judgment. And the Jerusalem Targum yet more expressly, חַטָּיִב עֹוֹבֵד כַּעֲלָמָא הָרִין שְׁחִרְיֹוֹ שְׁחֵבֵק דִּךְ לַעֲלָמָא דִּאֲחֵי יִוָּאן לֹא חַטָּיִב וְנִרְקַנֵּעַ לְמַן הָרִין הֲלֵא אִין חַטָּיִב עֹוֹבֵד כַּעֲלָמָא הָרִין שְׁחִרְיֹוֹ שְׁחֵבֵק דִּךְ לַעֲלָמָא דִּאֲחֵי יִוָּאן לֹא חַטָּיִב וְנִרְקַנֵּעַ לְמַן הָרִין הֲלֵא אִין חַטָּאָה נָטִיר-Unto thee in the world to come? And if thou makest not thy works good in this world, thy sins shall be reserved unto the day of the great judgment. In the same manner the Chaldee Paraphrase of Onkelos, חַטָּאָה נָטִיר c. Jud. 4.

The testimonies which follow in the Law and the Prophets, the predictions of *Christ* and the Apostles, are so many and so known, that both the number and the plainness will excuse the prosecution. The Throne hath been already seen, the Judge hath appeared sitting on it, the Books have been already opened, the Dead small and great have been seen standing before him; there is nothing more certain in the Word of God, no doctrine more clear and fundamental, than that of *eternal Judgment*. I shall therefore briefly conclude the first consideration from the internal testimony of the conscience of man, from the essential attribute, the justice of God, from the clear and full revelation of the will and determination of God, that after death, with a reflection on this, and in relation to another life, there is a Judgment to come, there *shall* some person *come to judge*.

Our second consideration followeth ; (seeing we are so well assured that there shall be a judgment,) who that person is which *shall come to judge*, who shall sit upon that Throne, before whose tribunal we shall all appear, from whose mouth we may expect our sentence. Now the Judiciary power is the power of God, and none hath any right to judge the subjects and servants of God, but that God whose servants they are. The Law by which we are to be judged was given by him, the actions which are to be discussed were due to him, the persons which are to be tried are subject to his dominion ; God therefore is *the Judge of all*. He *shall bring every work into judgment with every secret thing, whether it be good or whether it be evil* ; and so the last day, that day of wrath is *the revelation of the righteous judgment of God*. Now if God, as God,

Mal. 12. 23.
Eccles. 12. 14.
Rom. 2. 5.

committed all judgment to the Son; and the reason why he hath committed it to him, is because he is, not only the Son of God, and so truly God, but also the Son of man, and so truly man; because he is that Son of man, who suffered so much for the sons of men.

From whence at last it clearly appeareth not only that it is a certain truth that *Christ* shall judge the World, but also the reasons are declared and manifested unto us why he hath that power committed unto him, why *He shall come to judge the quick and the dead.* For certainly it is a great demonstration of the justice of God, so highly to reward that Son of man, as to make him Judge of all the World, who came into the World and was judged here; to give him absolute power of absolution and condemnation, who was by us condemned to die, and died that he might absolve us; to cause all the sons of men to bow before his Throne, who did not disdain for their sakes to stand before the Tribunal and receive that sentence, *let him be crucified;* which event as infallible, and reason as irrefragable, *Christ* himself did shew at the same time when he stood before the judgment seat, saying, *Nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.*

† Veniet Christus ut iudex qui stetit sub iudice: veniet in ea forma in qua iudicatus est, ut videant in quem pupugerunt, & cognoscant Iudæi quem negaverunt, convincat eos homo ille susceptus & ab eis crucifixus, *Author l. de Sym. ad Catech. l. 1 c. 4.* Veniet ergo, fratres mei, veniet ille; qui prius venit occultus, veniet in potestate manifestus. Ille qui iudicatus est veniet iudicaturus. Ille qui stetit ante hominem iudicaturus est omnem hominem, *Idem l. 2. c. 8.* Iudex hic erit filius hominis; forma illa hic iudicabit quæ iudicata est. Audite & intelligite, jam hoc Propheta dixerat, *Videbunt in quem pupugerunt.* Ipsam formam videbunt quam lancea percusserunt. Sedebit Iudex qui stetit sub iudice. Damnabit veros reos qui factus est falsus reus. Ipse veniet, forma illa veniet, *S. Aug. de Verbis Domini. Serm. 64.* ² *Matth. 26. 64.*

Again, If we look upon our selves which are to be judged, whom can we desire to appear before, rather than him who is of the same nature with us? If the children of *Israel* could not bear the presence of God as a Law-giver, but desired to receive the Law by the hand of *Moses*; how should we appear before the presence of that God judging us for the breach of that Law, were it not for a better Mediatour, of the same nature that *Moses* was and we are, who is our Judge? In this appeareth the wisdom and goodness of God, that making a general Judgment, he will make a visible Judge, which all may see who shall be judged. *Without holiness no man shall ever see God,* and therefore if God, as only God, should pronounce sentence upon all men, the ungodly should never see their Judge. But that both the righteous and unrighteous might see and know who it is that judgeth them, *Christ* who is both God and man is appointed Judge; so as he is man all shall see him, and as he is God they only shall see him who by that vision shall enjoy him.

† Cum boni & mali visuri sunt iudicem vivorum & mortuorum, proculdubio cum videre non poterunt mali, nisi secundum formam qua filius hominis est; sed tamen in claritate in qua iudicabit, non in humilitate in qua iudicatus est. Caterum illam Dei formam in qua æqualis est Patri proculdubio impii non videbunt. Non enim sunt mundicordes, quoniam ipsi videbunt Deum, *S. Aug. de Trin. l. 1. c. 13.* Hoc rectum erat ut iudicandi viderent iudicem. Iudicandi autem erant boni & mali. Beati enim mundi corde, quoniam ipsi Deum videbunt. Restabat ut in iudicio forma servi & bonis & malis ostenderetur, forma Dei solis bonis servaretur, *Idem de verbis Domini Serm. 64.* Et potestatem dedit ei iudicium facere quia filius hominis est. Puto nihil esse manifestius. Nam qui Filius Dei est æqualis Patri, non accepit hanc potestatem iudicii faciendi, sed habet illam cum Patre in occulto. Accepit autem illam ut boni & mali eum videant iudicantem, quia filius hominis est. Visio quippe Filii hominis exhibebitur & malis. Nam visio formæ Dei non nisi mundis corde, quia ipsi Deum videbunt, id est, solis piis exhibebitur, quorum dilectioni hoc ipsum promittit quia seipsum ostendit illis, *Idem rursus de Trin. lib. 1. cap. 13.*

Christ Jesus then, the Son of God, and the Son of man, he which was born of the *Virgin Mary*, he which suffered under *Pontius Pilate*, he which was crucified, dead and buried, and descended into hell, he which rose again from the dead, ascended into heaven, and is set down on the right hand of God; He, the same person, in the same nature, ² *shall come to judge the quick and the dead.* For the

Son

Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his Angels, and then he shall reward every man according to his works. He then which is to come is the Son of man, and when he cometh, it is to judge. *The same Jesus which was taken up from the Apostles into heaven, shall so come in like manner as they saw him go into heaven.* That Son of man then, which is to judge, is our Jesus, even the same Jesus, and shall come in the same manner, by a true and local translation of the same nature out of heaven. For God will judge the world in righteousness, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof he hath given an assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. He then which ascended into heaven, was the same which was raised from the dead, and by that Resurrection God assured us that the same man should judge us. For to this end Christ both died and rose and revived, that he might be the Lord both of the dead and living. It appeareth therefore by God's determination, by Christ's Resurrection and Ascension, that the man Christ Jesus is appointed Judge.

This Office and Dignity of the Son of man was often declared by several figurative and parabolical descriptions. John the Baptist, representeth him that cometh after him by his delineation of an husbandman. *Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner, but will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.* The Son of man describes himself as an householder saying to the Reapers in the time of harvest, * *Gather ye together first the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn: and this harvest is the end of the world.* He representeth himself under the notion of a Fisherman, ^a *casting a net into the sea, and gathering of every kind; which, when it was full, he drew to the shore and sat down and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.* He is the Bridegroom who took the wise Virgins ^b *with him to the marriage, and shut the door upon the foolish.* He is the man who travelling into a far country, delivered the talents to his servants, and ^c *after a long time cometh again, and reckoneth with them, exalting the good and faithful, and casting the unprofitable servant into utter darkness.* Lastly, He is the Shepherd, and is so expressly described in relation to this judgment. For ^d *when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit down upon the throne of his glory. And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd his sheep from the goats. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, and the goats on his left.* Being then the Son of man is thus constantly represented as making the great decretory Separation, and the last judicatory Distinction between man and man; as an Husbandman separating the Wheat, sometime from the Chaff, sometime from the Tares: as a Fisherman gathering the good Fish, casting the bad away; as a Bridegroom receiving the wise, excluding the foolish Virgins; as a Master distinguishing the Servants of his Family, rewarding the faithful, punishing the unprofitable; as a Shepherd, dividing his Sheep from the Goats, placing one on the right hand, the other on the left; it plentifully proveth that the same Son of man is appointed the Judge of all the Sons of men. And thus it appeareth that Christ is he who shall be the Judge, which is the second consideration subservient to the present Explication.

Thirdly, It being thus resolved that the Son of man shall be the Judge, our next consideration is, What may the nature of this Judgment be; in what that Judicial Action doth consist; what he shall then doe, when he shall come to judge. The reality of this Act doth certainly consist in the final determination, and actual disposing of all persons in soul and body to their eternal condition: and in what manner this shall particularly be performed

Acts 10. 11.

Acts 17. 31.

Rom. 14. 9.

Matt. 3. 12.

Ἀνατρεψὲς ὁ
κόλασιν ἐσεν-
εργήσεται καὶ
καίτω θείοντι
σιν, καὶ τὴν ἱμε-
ρίαν ἀθανάτου
εἰσάγει. S.
Chrys. in loc.

* Matt. 13. 30;
39.

ὁ δὲ ἀνα-
μνησκὸς αὐ-
τοῦ Ἰω-
άννου ῥημάτων
αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν αὐ-
τὸν εἰσαγόν-
των, S. Chrys.
ad locum.

^a Matt. 13. 47;
48.

^b Matt. 25. 10.

^c Matt. 25. 19;
21, 30.

^d Matt. 25. 31;
32, 33.

† S. Augustine speaking of the particulars foretold to be exhibited at the day of Judgment, concludes them in this manner, *Quæ omnia quidem ventura esse credendum est; sed quibus modis & quo ordine veniant magis tunc docebit rerum experientia quam nunc valeat consequi ad perfectum hominem intelligentia.* De Civ. Dei, l. 2.

c. 30.

^a Matt. 19. 28.

^b Rev. 20. 4. 11.

^c Rom. 14. 10.

^d 2 Cor. 5. 10.

^e Rev. 20. 12.

^f Matt. 25. 32.

^g Matt. 24. 31.

^h 2 Thess. 2. 1.

ⁱ 1 Cor. 4. 5.

^k Eccl. 12. 14.

^l Rev. 20. 12.

* Dominus

non accepta

persona judi-

cat mundum,

unusquisq; se-

cundum quæ

facit accipiet.

Si fuerit bonus,

bonitas eum

antecedit; si

nequam, mer-

ces nequitie

eum sequitur,

Ep. Barnab. c. 3.

^a Matt. 24. 34.

^b Verse 41.

^c Verse 46.

is not so † certain unto us; but that which is sufficient for us, it is represented under a formal judiciary process. In which first there is described a Throne, a tribunal, a judgment-seat; for ^a *in the regeneration the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory*: and that this Throne is a seat not only of Majesty but also of Judicature, appeareth by the following words spoken to the Apostles, *ye also shall sit upon the thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel*. As in that vision in the Revelation, ^b *I saw thrones and they sate upon them, and judgment was given unto them*. And I saw a great white throne, and him that sate on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. This Throne of Christ is expressly called his Judgment-seat, when the Apostle tells us, ^c *we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of Christ*, and ^d *we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ*. In respect then of the Son of man, he shall appear in the proper form and condition of a Judge, sitting upon a Throne of Judicature. Secondly, there is to be a personal appearance of all men before that Seat of Judicature upon which Christ shall sit, for *we must all appear, and we shall all stand before that judgment-seat*. ^e *I saw the dead*, saith the Apostle, *stand before the throne of God*. Thus ^f *all nations shall be gathered before him*. He ^g *shall send his Angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other*. For the ^h *coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is our gathering together unto him*. Thirdly, when those which are to be judged are brought before the Judgment-seat of Christ, all their actions shall appear; ⁱ *he will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts*: he will ^k *bring every work into judgment with every secret thing, whether it be good or whether it be evil*. To this end in the Vision of Daniel, when the Judgment was set, the books were opened; and in that of S. John, ^l *the books were opened, and the dead were judged out of those things that were written in the books according to their works*. Fourthly, After the manifestation of all their actions, there followeth a * definitive sentence passed upon all their persons, according to those actions, which is the fundamental and essential consideration of this judgment; the sentence of Absolution, in these words expressed, ^a *Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world*; the sentence of Condemnation, in this manner, ^b *Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his Angels*. Lastly, after the promulgation of the sentence followeth the execution. As it is written, ^c *And these shall go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into life eternal*. Thus appeareth Christ's Majesty by sitting on the throne, his Authority by convening all before him, his Knowledge and Wisdom by opening all secrets, revealing all actions, discerning all inclinations, his Justice in condemning sinners, his Mercy in absolving believers, his Power in his execution of the sentence. And thus the Son of man shall come to judge, which is the last particular subservient to the third Consideration of this Article.

The fourth and last consideration is what is the object of this Action, who are the persons which shall appear before that Judge, and receive their sentence from him, what is the latitude of that expression, *the quick and the dead*. The phrase it self is delivered several times in the Scriptures, and that upon the same occasion; for Christ was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead; and so his commission extendeth to both: he is ready to judge the quick and the dead; his resolution reacheth to each: and as he is ordained and ready, so shall he judge the quick and the dead; the execution excludeth neither. But although it be the Scripture language, and therefore certainly true; yet there is some ambiguity in the phrase, and therefore the intended sense not evident.

Acts 10. 42.

1 Pet. 4. 5.

2 Tim. 4. 1.

The Holy Ghost speaketh of death in several notions, which makes the quick and the dead capable of several interpretations. Because after death the soul doth live, and the body only remaineth dead; therefore † some have understood the souls of men by the *quick*, and their bodies by *the dead*: and then the meaning will be this, that *Christ* shall come to judge immediately upon the resurrection, when the souls which were preserved alive shall be joyned to the bodies which were once dead; and so men shall be judged entirely both in body and soul, for all those actions which the soul committed in the body. Now though this be a truth, that men shall be judged when their souls and bodies are united; though they shall be judged according to those works which their souls have acted in their bodies; yet this is not to be acknowledged as the interpretation of this Article, for two reasons; first, because it is not certain that all men shall die, at least a proper death, so that their bodies shall be left any time without their souls; secondly, because this is not a distinction of the parts of man, but of the persons of men.

τίς κεχωρισμένον· ἀλλ' ὡς ὅτι κοινὸν τὸ ἐν ταῦτα σωματικὴν ἐποίησαντο, ἔτω καὶ τὸ ἐκείθεν δίκην ἡνωμένως ὑφ' ἐξουσίας,
Epist. 222. lib. 1.

† So Theophylact testifieth, τινὲς δὲ καὶ ψυχὰς καὶ σώματα ἐνόησαν, Comment. in 2 Tim. 4. 1. Indeed Isidorus Pelusiota giveth this as the first Interpretation, τὸ κεῖναι ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς, τὸ τὸ ὄν, τὸ καὶ ψυχῶν καὶ σωμάτων κεῖσιν ἐλδ' ὅτι, καὶ ἔτε ἐν θανάτῳ.

Again, because the Scripture often mentioneth a death in trespasses and sins, and a living unto righteousness, others have conceived by the *quick* to be understood the † just, and by *the dead* the unjust: so that *Christ* shall judge *the quick*, that is the just, by a sentence of absolution; and *the dead*, that is the unjust, by a sentence of condemnation. But, though the dead be sometimes taken for sinners, and the living for the righteous, though it be true that *Christ* shall judge them both; yet it is not probable that in this particular they should be taken in a figurative or metaphorical sense, because there is no adjunct giving any such intimation, and because the sense affordeth a fair explication; further yet, because the Scripture in the same particular naming the quick and the dead sufficiently teacheth us that it is to be understood of a corporeal death, ^a *Whether we live or die, saith the Apostle, we are the Lords: for to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.*

τὸ νεκρωθῆναι τοῖς ἀδικήμασι καὶ τὸ θθῆν αὐτοῖς τὰ λαντον ὡς ἐν τῷ τῷ αὐτῷ καταχάσανται βαθυμίας, καὶ ἀμύνασθαι αὐτοῖς, Epist. 222. lib. 1. ^a Rom. 14. 9.

† This is the second exposition delivered by Isidorus Pelusiota to such as are not satisfied with the first, Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἄλλως ζητῆς, ἔτω διακρίναι, ζῶντας τοὺς ἀδικῶν βίον καὶ θροῦν καὶ ἀδικήματα, καὶ ἔτω θῆναι αὐτοῖς τελευτήτας ἀμύνας, κεῖναι.

Thirdly, Therefore by * *the dead* are understood all those who ever died before the time of *Christ's* coming to judgment, and by *the quick* such as shall be then alive: so that the quick and the dead literally taken are considered in relation to the time of *Christ's* coming; at which time there shall be a generation living upon the face of the earth, and before which time all the generations passed since the creation of the world shall be numbred among the dead. And this undoubtedly is the proper † and literal sense of the Article, that *Christ* shall come to judge, not only those which shall be alive upon the earth at his appearing, but also all such as have lived and died before. None shall be then judged while they are dead: whosoever stand before the judgment-seat shall appear alive; but those which never died, shall be judged as they were alive; those which were dead before, that they may be judged, shall rise to life. He shall judge therefore *the quick*, that is those which shall be * then alive when he cometh, and he shall judge *the dead*, that is those which at the same time shall be raised from the dead.

* This is the third Exposition of Isidorus Pelusiota, Εἰ δὲ καὶ ἄλλως, ἔτω καὶ κεῖναι τοὺς τότε ζῶντας καταλείποντας, καὶ τοὺς ἡδη περὶ αὐτῶν κοιμηθέντας, Ib. Others of the Fathers give the second and the third explication, leaving it indifferent, and preferring neither; as S. Chrysost.

ταῦτα λέγει καὶ δικαίως, ἥτοι καὶ τοὺς ἀπελθόντας καὶ τοὺς νῦν ὄντας, ὅτι πολλοὶ καταλειφθήσονται ζῶντες, Corn. in 2 Tim. 4. 1. Duobus autem modis accipi potest quod vivos & mortuos judicabit; sive ut vivos intelligamus quos hic nondum mortuos sed adhuc in ista carne inventurus est ejus adveniens; mortuos autem qui de corpore priusquam veniat exierint vel

vel exiri sunt: five vivos justos, mortuos autem injustos, quoniam justī quoq; judicabuntur, *S. August. in Enchirid. c. 54.* Credimus etiam inde venturum convenientissimo tempore, & judicaturum vivos & mortuos, five istis nominibus justī & peccatores significentur; five quos tunc ante mortem nostram in terris inventurus est appellati sunt vivi, mortui vero qui in ejus adventu resurrexerunt, *Item de Fide & Symb. c. 8.* Inde venturus judicare vivos & mortuos. Vivos qui superfuerint, mortuos qui praecesserint. Potest & sic intelligi, vivos, justos; mortuos, injustos: utrosque enim judicat sua cuique retribuens. Justis dicturus est in iudicio, *Venite Benedicti, &c.* Sinistris quid? *Ite in ignem, &c.* Sic judicabuntur a Christo vivi & mortui, *Author l. 1. de Symb. ad Catechum.* Duobus modis hæc sententia accipitur. Vivi & mortui in animo, item vivi & mortui in corpore. In corpore secundum priorem, judicabit vivos in anima credentes, & mortuos in anima fidem nullam habentes: secundum posteriorem judicabit vivos in carne, quos praesentes invenerit ejus adventus; judicabit & mortuos in carne, quos resuscitaturus est Deus excelsus, *Author l. 4. de Symb. ad Catech. c. 7.* But although these two Expressions were thus indifferently propounded, yet the former ought by no means so to be received as any way to evacuate or prejudice the latter. Quod autem dicimus in Symbolo, in adventu Domini vivos ac mortuos judicandos, non solum justos & peccatores significari, sicut *Dionysius* putat; sed & vivos eos qui in carne invenienda sunt credimus, qui adhuc morituri creduntur, vel immutandi sunt, ut alii volunt, ut suscitati continuo, vel reformati, cum ante mortuis judicentur, *Gennadius de Dogmat. Eccl. c. 8.* † This is the clear interpretation of Theodoret, without the least mention of any other, *Νεκρῶν καὶ ζώντων κειτὼν ἢ Κύριον κέκληκεν, ἐπειδὴν καὶ τῶν νεκρῶν ἀνίστασθαι καὶ εἰς τὸ κρείττερον ἀγεῖν, καὶ τῶν ζώντων ἢ τὴν σωτηρίαν καὶ ἐνδοξασθῆναι ἐν τῷ αἰθέρι, ὡς ἀπαρτίαν ἀποδείξαι τῆς ἐκείνου δυνάμεως. Πάντες γάρ, φησιν, ἢ κοιμηθησόμεθα, πάντες ἢ ἀλλαγησόμεθα, Com. in 2 Tim. 4. 1.* Vivi agnoscuntur qui in corpore erunt in adventu Domini, mortui qui ex hac luce migraverunt, *Author Exp. Symb. sub nomine S. Chris.* * This is cleared by the Author of the Questions and Answers under the name of Julian Martyr, *Εἰ τὸ τὸ ἀναστασιῶς δώσω τῷ πᾶσι τοῖς θανόντι οὗτος ὁ Θεὸς δίδωμι ὑμῖν ἕως ἄγε, καὶ πάντες ἐκ τῆς τῶν ἀνίστασθαι τῶν κειτὼν παύσασθαι μέλλουσιν, τῶς πληρωθῆσιν τὸ, κείναι νεκρῶν καὶ ζώντων; καὶ οὕτως ἢ νεκροὶ κειτὼν δυνήσονται, ὡς τὰ μὲν σώματα ἐν μνήμασιν ἐκείναι, αἱ δὲ ψυχὴ καὶ τῶν σωμάτων κεχωρισμέναι εἰσιν; Resp. Οὐ πάντες, φησὶ, κοιμηθησόμεθα· κείναι δὲ ζώντες μὲν, τῶν τότε ζώντων, νεκρῶν δὲ, τῶν ἀνίσταμένων ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν, Quest. 109.*

The only doubt remaining in this interpretation is, whether those that shall be found alive when our Saviour cometh, shall still so continue till they come to judgment; or upon his first appearance they shall die, and after death revive, and so together with all those which rise out of their graves, appear before the judgment-seat. The consideration of our mortality, and the cause thereof, (that it is appointed for all men once to die, in that death hath passed upon all) might persuade us that the last generation of mankind should taste of death as well as all the rest that went before it; and therefore it hath been thought, especially of late, that those whom *Christ* at his coming finds alive shall immediately die; and after a sudden and universal expiration shall be restored to life again, and joyed with the rest whom the graves shall render, that all may be partakers of the Resurrection.

∴ Omnium enim hominum erit resurrectio. Si omnium erit, ergo omnes moriuntur, ut mors ab Adam ducta omnibus filiis ejus dominetur, & maneat illud privilegium in Domino, *Non dabis sanctum tuum videre corruptionem.* Hanc rationem maxima Patrum turba tradente suscepimus, *Gennadius de Eccl. Dogmat. cap. 7.*

But the Apostles description of the last day mentioneth no such kind of death, yea rather excludeth it. For we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout with the voice of the Archangel and the trump of God, and the dead in *Christ* shall rise first; then we which are alive and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so shall we be ever with the Lord. In which words they which remain unto the coming of the Lord, are not said to die or to rise from the dead, but are distinguished from those which are asleep and rise first; yea being alive are * caught up together with them, having not tasted death.

* This is the observation of Epiphanius

who from these words proves as much. For having repeated the text, he thus infers, *Ἀπὸ τῆς σωζομένης ἐκάστης λείψανος ὅτι ἐν τῷ αἰθέρι. Διαρῶν γὰρ ὁ κύριος Ἀπόστολος τῆς δυνάμεως τοῦ ἑαυτοῦ εἰς μίαν ἐλπίδα συνηγάγη, ὅτι τὸ, ἡμεῖς ἀπαρτίαν ἐν νεβύλῳ εἰς σωάντησιν αὐτῷ· ἵνα δὲ εἴη ὅντως τὸ τοῦ σώματος, καὶ ἔτι πλεονεκτήσει, ὁ γὰρ ἀπαρτίαν ἐπὶ τῷ αἰθέρι.* *Hæf. 65. §. 70.*

1 Cor. 15. 51.

The same is farther confirmed by the same Apostle, saying, *Behold I shew you a mystery, we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed.* Which being added to the former, putteth this doctrine out of question: for the living which remain at the coming of *Christ* are opposed to them which are asleep, and the opposition consists in this, that they shall not sleep; which sleep is not opposed to a long death, but to death it self, as it followeth, *the dead shall be raised*

quidem exuri & non nudi inveniamur ; id est , ante volumus superinduere virtutem celestem aternitatis , quam carne exuimur . Hujus enim gratia privilegium illos manet , qui ab adventu Domini deprehenduntur in carne , & propter duritias temporum Antichristi merebuntur compendio mortis per demutationem expuncte concurrere cum resurgentibus , sicut Thessalonicensibus scribit , Tert. de Ref. Carn. c. 41 . Sancti qui die consummationis atq; judicii in corporibus rependi sunt cum aliis sanctis qui ex mortuis resurrexerunt , rapiuntur in nubibus obviam Christo in aere , & non gustabunt mortem ; eruntq; semper cum Domino , gravissima mortis necessitate calcata , unde ait Apostolus , Omnes quidem non dormiemus , omnes autem immutabimur . Theod. Heracl. Com. ad loc. apud S. Hier. Ep. 152 . Appollinarius licet alii verbis eadem qua Theodorus asseruit ; quosdam esse morituros , sed de praesenti vita rapiendos in tutam , ut mutaris glorificatq; corporibus sint cum Christo , S. Hier. ib. " Ο ὅς λέγει τὸ τοῦ θαν· ἐπ' αὐτῆς δὲ σποτανέμβει , πάλιν εἰ ἀλλαγνόςμει· καὶ οἱ μὴ σποθνήσκουσιν· οὗτοι γὰρ καὶ οἱ κείνοι· Μὴ τοίνυν ἐπιμένει σποθνίσκεις διὰ τὸτο δέχης , φησὶν αὖς ἐκ ἀναστρέψου· Εἰσι γὰρ τίτες , εἰσι , οἳ καὶ τὸτο διατρέπονται καὶ οὕτως μὴ ἀρκεῖ τὸτο αὐτοῖς εἰς τὸ ἀνδραποχεῖναι , ἀλλὰ δεῖ καὶ εἶναι τὰ σώματα τὰ μὴ σποθνήσκουσι ἀλλաγνῶς , καὶ οἱ ἀφθαράτοι μέλειπεσθαι , S. Chrys. ad loc. So S. Hier. speaking of that place , 1 Thess. 4 . Hoc ex ipsius loci continentia sciri potest , quod sancti qui in adventu Salvatoris fuerint deprehensi in corpore , in iidem corporibus occurrant ei , ita tamen ut inglorium & corruptibilem & mortale gloria & immortalitate mueretur : ut qualia corpora mortuorum surrectura sunt , in talem substantiam etiam vivorum corpora transformentur , S. Hier. Ep. 148 . ad Marcell. And St. Austin in relation to the same place , Revela quantum ad verba beati Apostoli pertinet , videtur asserere quosdam in fine saeculi , adveniente Domino , cum futura esset resurrectio mortuorum , non esse morituros , sed vivos repositos in illam immortalitatem qua Sanctis etiam ceteris datur , repente mutandos , & simul cum illis rapiendos , sicut dicit , in nubibus . Nec aliquid aliud mihi visum est quores de his verbis volui cogitare , S. Aug. ad tertiam Quaest. Dulcitii . These and others of the Ancients have clearly delivered this truth , so that Genadius notwithstanding his maxima Patrum turba for the contrary , did well confess . Verum quia sunt & alii aque Catholici & eruditi viri , qui credunt anima in corpore manente immutandos ad incorruptionem & immortalitatem eos qui in adventu Domini vivi inveniendi sunt ; & hoc eis reputari pro resurrectione ex mortuis , quod mortalitatem praesentis vitae immutatione deponant , non morte . Quolibet quis acquiescat modo , non est haereticus , nisi ex contentionem haereticus fiat , De Eccl. Dogm. c. 7 . * There have been observed three several readings of that place , 1 Cor. 15 . 51 . one of the Latin , two of the Greek . Illud autem breviter in fine commonco ; hoc , quod in Latinis codicibus legitur , Omnes quidem resurgemus , non omnes autem immutabimur ; in Graecis voluminibus non haberi , sed vel , Omnes dormiemus , non autem omnes immutabimur ; vel , Non omnes dormiemus , omnes autem immutabimur , S. Hier. Ep. 152 . But there was not one of these three only in the Latin Copies , that is the first , but one which was in the Greek , was also in the Latin , that is the second . For both these S. Austin takes notice of . Nam & illud quod in plerisque codicibus legitur , Omnes resurgemus , unde fieri poterit , nisi omnes moriamur ? Resurrectio quippe , nisi mors praecesserit , nulla est . Et quod nonnulli codices habent , Omnes dormiemus , multo facilius & aperius id cogit intelligi , Ad 3 . Quaest. Dulcit . Sed aliud rursum occurrit quod idem dicit Apostolus cum de resurrectione corporum ad Corinthios lequeretur , Omnes resurgemus , vel , sicut alii codices habent , Omnes dormiemus , Idem de Civit. Dei l. 20 . c. 20 . Two readings therefore were anciently in the Latin , two in the Greek ; one of the Greek in the Latin and no more . First then that reading , Omnes quidem resurgemus , &c. which is at this day in the Vulgar Latin , was by the testimony of S. Jerome and S. Austin the ordinary reading in their times , and is also used by Tertullian , Horum demutationem ad Corinthios dedit dicens , Omnes quidem resurgemus , non autem omnes demutabimur , De Resur. Carn. c. 42 . And altho' S. Jerome testifieth that it was not to be found in the Greek Copies , yet to the same purpose it is amongst the Varie Lectiones March. Velef. Πάντες ἀναβιώσωμεν , ἀλλὰ ὁ πάντες ἀπαργνόςμει . And in codice Claromontano , the Greek is erased in this place , but the Latin left is , Omnes quidem resurgemus . As for the second Reading , Omnes dormiemus , &c. this was anciently in the Latin Copies according to S. Austin , and also in the Greek , according to S. Jerome . Didymus did so read it , and contend for that reading , Scio quod in nonnullis codicibus scriptum sit , Non quidem omnes dormiemus , omnes autem immutabimur ; Sed considerandum est an ei quod praeissimum est , Omnes immutabimur , possit convenire quod sequitur , Mortui surgent incorrupti , & nos immutabimur ; Si enim omnes immutabuntur , & hoc commune cum ceteris est , superfluum fuit dicere , & nos immutabimur . Quamobrem ita legendum est , Omnes quidem dormiemus , non autem omnes immutabimur , Apud S. Hier. Ep. 152 . Indeed Acacius Bishop of Caesarea doth not only acknowledge this Reading , but saith it was in most Copies . Dicamus primum de eo , quod magis in plurimis codicibus invenitur . Ecce mysterium dico vobis , Omnes quidem dormiemus , non omnes autem immutabimur . The Alexandrian MS. may confirm this lesson , which reads it thus , Οἱ πάντες μὲν ἐκοιμηθήσονται , ὁ πάντες δὲ ἀλλαγνόςμει , for the first ὁ is not written in the line but above it . And the Ethiopick Version to the same purpose . Omnes nos moriemur , sed non omnes nos immutabimur . The third reading , Non omnes dormiemus , &c. though it were not anciently in the Latin , yet it was frequently found in the Greek Copies . Accacius testifieth thus much , Transcamus ad secundam lectionem , quae ita fertur in plerisque codicibus , Non quidem omnes dormiemus , omnes autem immutabimur , apud Hier. ib. It was so anciently read in the time of Origen , as appeareth by the fragment taken by S. Jerome out of his Ἐξηνήσια upon the first Epistle to the Thessalonians , (which he mentioneth himself in his 2 Book against Cellus) and by his words in the 3 against Cellus , ἐκ νεκρῶν μέλει τινα ἀποιεῖς λελέχθαι παρὰ τὸ Ἀποστόλων , ᾧ ἵστατο , ὁ πάντες κοιμηθήσονται , πάντες δὲ ἀλλαγνόςμει . The same is acknowledged by Theodorus , Heracleotes , Appollinarius , Didymus , S. Chrylstonne , Theodorot , Theophylact , and Occumenius . The same is confirmed by the ancient Syriack Translation : הָלְהִיבַר כָּל בְּנֵי אָדָם כְּלוּ כְלוּ כְלוּ כְלוּ as also by the Arabick . Being then of the three Readings but two were anciently found in the Greek Copies , Quare quo sensu dictum sit , & quo modo in prima ad Cor. Epistola Pauli sit legendum , Omnes quidem dormiemus , non autem omnes immutabimur ; an juxta quaedam exemplaria , Non omnes dormiemus , omnes autem immutabimur ; utrumq; enim in Graecis codicibus invenitur . S. Hier. ib. being of those two but one is now to be found , and the Greek Fathers successively have acknowledged no other , being that which is left agrees with the most ancient Translations , we have no reason to doubt or question it .

Wherefore being the place to the *Thessalonians* sufficiently proves it of it self, being that to the *Corinthians*, as we read it, invincibly confirmeth the same truth, I conclude that the living when *Christ* shall come, are properly distinguished from all those which die before his coming; because death is

† This was well
observed by S.
Austin, Si au-
tem in illis
verbis Aposto-
li nullus alius
sensus poterit

tenfus poterit
reperiri, & hoc cum intelligi voluiffet clarum erit, quod videntur ipfa verba clamare; id eft, quod futuri fint in fine feculi,
& fecundo adventu Domini, qui non expolientur corpore, fed superinduantur immortalitate, ut abforbeatur mortale a
vita: huic fententiæ proculdubio conveniet quod in Regula Fidei confitemur, *venturum Dominum, judicaturum vivos &*
mortuos, ut non hic intelligamus, vivos iuftos, mortuos autem iniuftos, quamvis iudicandi fint & iufti & iniufti, fed vivos,
quos nondum exiiffie, mortuos autem, quos jam exiiffe de corporibus adventus ejus inveniet, ad 3. *Quæft. Dulciffi.* And Ori-
genes *long before did make the fame expofition of thofe words*, That he might be Lord both of the dead and living, *Rom. 14.9.* *Ὁ Θε-
ς ὢν τοῖς ὄντι ἀπὸ θανάτου Ἰησοῦς, ἵνα νεκρῶν κυριεύσῃ, καὶ ἀνέστη ἵνα μὴ μόνον νεκρῶν ἀλλὰ καὶ ζώντων κυριεύσῃ. Καὶ εἰς τὴν
ὁ Ἀπόστολος νεκρῶν μὴν κυριεύει ὁ Χεῖρος, τοῦ ἔτοι κατελεγευμένος ἐστὶν πρὸς Κορινθίους πεντήρα (σαλτίσιν) ὃς οἱ πε-
ρὶ ἐκρηθήσονται ἀφ' ἁρτοῖς. ὧς ἵνα καὶ τὸν ἀλλὰ γενομένης, ἑτέρας ὅσας τὴν ἐκρηθήσονται νεκρῶν. Ἐξ ἧς καὶ οἱ πε-
ρὶ τῶν αὐτῶν, καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀλλὰ γενομένης ἑξῆς ἱερωνύμῳ τοῖς, Οἱ νεκροὶ ἐκρηθήσονται πρῶτον. Ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν πρὸς
Θεολογικῆς πεντήρα ἐν ἐτέροις αὐτῶν καὶ αὐτῶν διαφορὰν παλαιῶς ἐπιστολῆς, ἄλλος μὲν ἐπὶ τοῖς κοιμωμένοις, ἄλλος δὲ τῶν ζώντων
λέγων, ἑστ. 1. 2. contra Celsum.* Which expofition is far more proper than that of Methodius, *Ἐπὶ τῶν ζώντων καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν
περὶ ἀνέστην, ζώντων μὲν τῶν ζώντων, καὶ ἀνέστην, νεκρῶν δὲ τῶν περὶ ἀνέστην.* Phot. in Biblio. Cod. 234. and Rufinus, Quid
autem dicitur judicare vivos & mortuos, nisi quod alii vivi, alii mortui ad judicium veniant? sed anima simul judicabuntur &
corpora, in quibus vivos animas, corpora mortuos nominavit, *Expof. in Symb.*

Fsal 73. 2.

To believe an universal Judgment to come is necessary : First, to prevent the dangerous doubts arising against the ruling of the World by the providence of God ; that old rock of offence upon which so many souls have suffered shipwreck. That which made the Prophet *David* confess, *his feet were almost gone, his steps had well nigh slipped*, hath hurried multitudes of men to eternal perdition. The conspicuous prosperity of the wicked, and apparent miseries of the righteous, the frequent persecution of Virtue, and eminent rewards of Vice, the sweet and quiet departures often attending upon the most dissolute, and horrid tortures putting a period to the most religious lives, have raised a strong temptation of doubt and mistrust whether there be a God that judgeth the earth. Nor is there any thing in this life considered alone, which can give the least rational satisfaction in this temptation. Except there be a life to come after such a death as we daily see, except in that life there be rewards and punishments otherwise dispensed than here they are, how can we ground any acknowledgment of an over-ruling justice ? That therefore we may be assured that God who sitteth in heaven ruleth over all the earth, that a divine and most holy Providence disposeth and dispenseth all things here below : it is absolutely necessary to believe and profess, that a just and exact retribution is deferred, that a due and proportionable dispensation of rewards and punishments is reserved to another World ; and consequently that there is an Universal Judgment to come.

Secondly, It is necessary to believe a Judgment to come, thereby effectually to provoke our selves to the breaking off our sins by repentance, to the regulating our future actions by the Word of God, and to the keeping a conscience void of offence toward God and toward man. Such is the sweetness of our sins, such the connaturalness of our corruptions, so great our confidence of impunity here, that except we looked for an account hereafter, it were unreasonable to expect that any man should forsake his delights, renounce his complacencies, and by a severe repentance create a bitterness to his own Soul. But being once persuaded of a judgment, and withly

withal possessed with a sense of our sins, who will not tremble with *Felix*? who will not *flee from the wrath to come*? what must the *hardness* be of that impenitent heart which *treasureth up unto it self wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God*? We are naturally inclined to follow the bent of our own wills, and the inclination of our own hearts: all external rules and prescriptions are burthen some to us; and did we not look to give an account, we had no reason to satisfy any other desires than our own: especially the dictates of the Word of God are so pressing and exact, that were there nothing but a commanding power, there could be no expectation of obedience. It is necessary then that we should believe that an account must be given of all our actions; and not only so, but that this account will be exacted according to the rule of God's revealed will, that *God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to the Gospel*. There is in every man not only a power to reflect, but a necessary reflection upon his actions, not only a voluntary remembrance, but also an irresistible judgment of his own conversation. Now if there were no other judge beside our own souls, we should be regardless of our own sentence, and wholly unconcerned in our own condemnations. But if we were persuaded that these reflections of conscience are to be so many witnesses before the tribunal of Heaven, and that we are to carry in our own hearts a testimony either to absolve or condemn us, we must infallibly watch over that unquiet inmate, and endeavour above all things, for a good conscience. For *seeing that all things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought we to be in all holy conversation and godliness, looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God*. Reason it self will tell us thus much; but if that do not, or if we will not hearken to our own voice; *the grace of God that bringeth salvation teacheth us, That denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world, looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ*.

Thirdly, 'Tis necessary to profess faith in *Christ* as Judge of the quick and the dead, for the strengthening our hope, for the augmenting our comfort, for the establishing our assurance of eternal life. If we look upon the Judgment to come only as revealing our secrets, as discerning our actions, as sentencing our persons according to the works done in the flesh, there is not one of us can expect life from that tribunal, or happiness at the last day. We must confess that we have all sinned, and that there is not any sin which we have committed but deserves the sentence of death; we must acknowledge that the best of our actions bear no proportion to eternity, and can challenge no degree of that weight of glory; and therefore in a judgment, as such, there can be nothing but a fearful expectation of eternal misery, and an absolute despair of everlasting happiness. It is necessary therefore that we should believe that *Christ* shall sit upon the throne, that our Redeemer shall be our Judge, that we shall receive our sentence not according to the rigour of the Law, but the mildness and mercies of the Gospel; and then we may look upon not only the precepts but also the promises of God; whatsoever sentence in the sacred Scripture speaketh any thing of hope, whatsoever Text administred any comfort, whatsoever argument drawn from thence can breed in us any assurance, we may confidently make use of them all in reference to the Judgment to come; because by that Gospel which contains them all we shall be judged. If we consider whose Gospel it is, and who shall judge us by it, we are *the members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones; for which cause he is not ashamed to call us brethren. As one of our brethren he hath redeemed us, he hath laid down his life as a ransom for us. He is our High-priest who made an atonement for our sins, a merciful and faithful*

Rom. 2. 5.

Rom. 2. 16.

2 Pet. 3. 11.

Tit. 2. 11, 12;
13.Ephes. 5. 30.
Heb. 2. 11.
Lev. 25. 43.

Ephes. 3. 12.

John 5. 24.

High-priest in all things ; being made like unto his brethren. He which is Judge is also our Advocate ; and who shall condemn us , if he shall pass the sentence upon us, who maketh intercession for us? Well therefore may we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him unto the Throne of that Judge, who is our Brother, who is our Redeemer, who is our High-Priest, who is our Advocate, who will not by his Word at the last day condemn us, because he hath already in the same Word absolved us, saying, *Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that beareth my word and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation. But is passed from death unto life.*

Having thus explained the nature of the judgment to come , and the necessity of believing the same, we have given sufficient light to every Christian to understand what he ought to intend, and what it is he professeth, when he saith, I believe in him who shall come to judge the quick and the dead. For thereby he is conceived to declare thus much. I am fully persuaded of this as of an infallible and necessary Truth, That the eternal Son of God, in that humane nature, in which he died , and rose again, and ascended into Heaven, shall certainly come from the same Heaven into which he ascended, and at his coming shall gather together all those which shall be then alive, and all which ever lived and shall be before that day dead : when causing them all to stand before his judgment-seat, he shall judge them all according to their works done in the flesh ; and passing the sentence of condemnation upon all the Reprobates, shall deliver them to be tormented with the Devil and his Angels, and pronouncing the sentence of absolution upon all the Elect, shall translate them into his glorious Kingdom, of which there shall be no end. And thus I believe in *Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead.*

ARTICLE VIII.

I Believe in the Holy Ghost.

IN this Article we repeat again the first word of the Creed, *I believe*; whereas a Conjunction might have been sufficient, but that so many particulars concerning the Son hath intervened. For as we are baptized in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost: so do we make Confession of our Faith, saying, *I believe in the Father, the Son, *and the Holy Ghost*; and the ancients whose Creed was something shorter, made no repetition of the Act of Faith, but only an addition of the Object; † *And in the Holy Ghost*. And as we repeat the Act of Faith in this Article, so some did also in the second, || *I believe in Jesus Christ*. Wherefore being this word, *I believe*, is taken here only by way of resumption or repetition, and consequently must be of the same sense or importance of which it was in the beginning of the Creed, it may well receive the same explication here which it received there; to that therefore the Reader is referred.

* Sed enim ordo rationis, & fidei auctoritas digestis vocibus & literis Domini, admonet nos post hæc credere etiam in Spiritum S. olim Ecclesiæ repromissum, sed statutis temporum

opportunitatibus redditum. Novatian. de Trin. c. 29. Schlichtingius the Socinian in his Preface to the Polonian Confession of Faith, endeavourth to persuade us that this Article of the Holy Ghost is not so ancient as the rest; which being diametrically opposite to that Original of the Creed, which I have delivered, the Baptismal words, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, it will be necessary to examine his reason, which is drawn only from the authority of Tertullian; who in his Book de Veland. Virg. reciting the Rule of Faith, makes no mention of the Holy Ghost: and de Prascr. Hærec. propounds this Article no otherwise, quam ut credamus Christum in cœlos receptum sedere ad dextram Patris, misisse vicariam vim Sp. Sancti. But this Objection made for the Novelty of this Article is easily answered. For Irenæus before Tertullian hath it expressly in his Confession, l. 1. c. 2. and calls at the Faith in Patrem & Filium, & Spiritum Sanctum, and also declares, That the Church received that Faith, and preserved it through the whole World. † So the ancient Greek MS. εἰς πνεῦμα ἅγιον; and Marcellus, καὶ εἰς τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα; as also Arius and Euzoius, and the Council of Nice. Thus also the Latines, Post hoc ponitur in ordine fidei, Et in Spiritum Sanctum, Rufinus in Symb. Mac. Taurin. & Author lib. de Symb. ad Catechum. The MS. in the Oxford Library, Et in Spiritu Sancto. Others instead of the Conjunction made use of Credo by way of repetition as we do. Credo in Spiritum Sanctum, Chrysolog. Euseb Gallican. Author Serm. de Tempore, Etherius Uxam. the Greek and Latine MS. in Bennet College Library: and Credo in Sancto Spiritu: Venantius Fortunatus. || As the ancient Saxon Creed set forth by Freherus.

For although the * Ancient Fathers did frequently make use of this Language to prove the Divinity of the Spirit, and did thence argue that he is really and truly God, because we *believe in the Holy Ghost*; yet being that Language is not expressly read in the Scriptures in relation to the Spirit, as it is in reference to the Son; being to believe in the Holy Ghost, is only the expression of the Church contained in the Creed; being in the same Creed many of the Ancients, without any reprehension, have used the same phrase in the following Articles expressly, and where the Preposition is not expressed, it may very well be thought it was understood; therefore I think fit to acquiesce in my former Exposition, and lay no great force in the Preposition.

* Gregory Nazianzen disputing for the Divinity of the Holy Ghost, protesteth that he is no Creature, thus. Αλλ' εἰ μὴ κτίσμα, τὸς αὐτὸ πνεῦμα ὡς αὐτὸ πνεῦμα; ἢ οὐ αὐτὸ τέλει μεθεῖα, ἔχον τὰ αὐτὸν ὅτι πνεῦμα ἐστὶν, οὐ πνεῦμα ἐστὶν

σθεῖν. τὸ μὲν γὰρ ὅτι θεότης, τὸ δὲ παντὸς προσημασία, Orat. 37. Epiphanius seems to speak thus much, shewing that though the Fathers of the Nicene Council had determined nothing particularly of the Holy Ghost, yet they sufficiently shew that he is God by those words, καὶ εἰς πνεῦμα ἅγιον. Εὐθύς γὰρ ἡ ἐκθεσις ὁμολογεῖ καὶ ἐκ ἀνάγκης. Πνεῦμα ὡς εἰς ἐνα θεὸν Πατέρα παντοκράτορα. Τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα ὡς ἀπλῶς εἰρησιν, ἀλλ' ἡ πίστις εἰς τὸν θεόν, καὶ εἰς ἐνα κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, ἔχον ἀπλῶς εἰρησιν, ἀλλ' εἰς θεὸν ἡ πίστις. Καὶ εἰς τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα, ἔχον ἀπλῶς εἰς μίαν θεολογίαν, καὶ εἰς μίαν ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ εἰς τὰ τέλει, μίαν δὲ θεότητα, μίαν κυριότητα, ἀπὸ τοῦ πνεῦματος ὡς πνεῦμα καὶ πνεῦμα, Hæc. 4. Agnoscamus verbi ipsius privilegium. Credere illi quilibet potest hominum, credere vero in illum soli debere re Majestati noveris. Sed & hoc ipsum aliud est Deum credere, aliud est credere in Deum. Elic Deum & Diabolus credere dicitur, secundum Apostolum; nam & daemones credunt & contremiscunt. In Deum vero credere, hoc est fideliter eum quærere, & tota in eum dilectione transire. Credo ergo in illum hoc est dicere, Confiteor illum, colo illum, adoro illum, totum me in jus ejus ac dominium trado, atque transfundo. In professionis hujus reverentia universa divino nomini debita continentur obsequia, Paschasius in Prasat. Operis de Spiritu S.

It will therefore be sufficient for the explication of this Article, if we can declare what is the full and proper object of our Faith contained in it; what

we are obliged to believe concerning the *Holy Ghost*. And as to this we shall discharge our undertaking, and satisfy whatsoever is required in this Exposition, if we can set forth these two particulars, the Nature and the Office of that blessed Spirit. For the name of *GHOST* or *GAST* in the ancient Saxon Language signifieth a Spirit, and in that appellation of the Spirit of God, his nature principally is expressed. The addition of Holiness though it denote the intrinsecal sanctity essentially belonging to that Spirit, yet notwithstanding it containeth also a derivative notion, as signifying an emanation of that Holiness and communication of the effects thereof; and in this communication his Office doth consist. Whatsoever therefore doth concern the Spirit of God, as such, and the intrinsecal sanctity which belongeth to that Spirit, may be expressed in the explication of his Nature; whatsoever belongeth to the derivation of that sanctity, may be described in his Office; and consequently more cannot be necessary than to declare what is the Nature, what the Office of the Spirit of God.

For the better indagation of the Nature of the Holy Ghost, I shall proceed by certain steps and degrees, which as they will render the Discourse more clear, so will they also make the Reasons more strong, and the Arguments more evident. And first, as to the existence of the Spirit of God, it will be unnecessary to endeavour the proof of it; for although the Sadducees seemed to deny it, who said that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit; though it hath † been ordinarily concluded from thence that they rejected the Holy Ghost, yet it cannot be proved from those words that they denied the existence of the Spirit of God, any more than that they denied the existence of God, who is a Spirit: nor did the Notion which the Jews had of the Spirit of God any way incline the Sadducees, who denied the existence of the Angels and the Souls of men, to reject it. The Resurrection, Angel, and Spirit, which the Sadducees refused to acknowledge, were but two particulars, for it is expressly added that the *Pharisees confessed both*; of which two the Resurrection was one, * Angels and Spirits were the other; wherefore that which the Sadducees disbelieved was the existence of such created spiritual natures, as the Angels and the Souls of men are conceived to have. And as for those Disciples at *Ephesus*, who had ^a not so much as heard whether there be an *Holy Ghost*; if they were Gentiles, it is no wonder, because they never had that notion in their Religion; if they were *Jews* as they seem to be, because they were baptized with the baptism of *John*, it signifieth not that they never heard of the Spirit of God, but only that they had not heard of the giving of it, which the Apostle mentioned. As we read elsewhere, that the ^b *Holy Ghost* was not yet; not denying the existence, but the plentiful effusion of it. For, whatsoever the Nature of the Spirit of God may be thought to be, no man can conceive the Apostle should deny his existence before *Christ's* glorification, whose operation was so manifest at his conception. Howsoever, the Apostle asked those ignorant Disciples, *Unto what then were ye baptized?* intimating that if they were baptized according to the rule of *Christ*, they could not be ignorant that there is an *Holy Ghost*; because the Apostles were commanded to baptize in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the *Holy Ghost*. It is therefore presumed that every one who professeth the name of *Christ*, from the first baptismal institution, acknowledgeth that there is an *Holy Ghost*; and the only question consists in this, what that *Holy Ghost* is, in whose name we are baptized, and in whom, according to our baptism, we profess in the Creed to believe.

In order to the determination of which question; our first Assertion is, That the *Holy Ghost*, described to us in the Word of God, and joyned with
the

Acts 23. 3.

† *As* Epiph.

Haref. 14.

Πνεῦμα τὸ ἅ-
γιον Σπῆρυ-
γμα καὶ ὁ θεὸς ἢ
τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ
νόμιμον (ὃ δὲ
ἡ ἀγγέλους, ὃ
δὲ ἀνθρώπων)
ἐκ οὗτος ὁ θεὸς
ταῖς τοσαύταις
ἐν αὐτῷ ὑπο-
στασεῖς ἐν τῇ
παλαιᾷ δια-
τύσει, *Orat.*

37.

* Φεισάμενοι
ἐσθιν, ὁμολο-
γῶσι τὰ ἀμ-
εβλήτα κρυμ-
μένα ὑπὸ τῆς
ἐκκλησίας ἡ
ἐκ τῆς
ἐκκλησίας καὶ
ἐκ τῆς ἐκ-
κλησίας, *S. Chrys.*
ad locum.

^a *Acts* 19. 2.

^b *John* 7. 39.

the Father and the Son in the form of Baptism, is a Person. We are all baptized in the name of Three, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; and the publick Confession of our Faith hath relation to those Three. We all confess that two of these, the Father and the Son, are persons: that which we now assert is only this, that the Holy Ghost, who is of the three the third, is also a Person as the other two. That blessed Spirit is not only an † energy or operation, not a quality or power, but a spiritual and intellectual subsistence. * If we conceive it is an operation only, then must it only be actuated and not act; and when it is not actuated, it must not be at all. If we say that it is a quality, and not a substance; we say that it is that which we cannot prove to have any being. It seemeth to me strangely unreasonable that men should be so earnest in endeavouring to prove that the Holy Ghost which sanctifieth them is no substance, when they cannot be assured that there is any thing operative in the world beside substantial beings, and consequently if they be not sanctified by that, they can be susceptible of no holiness. By what reason in nature can they be assured, by what revelation in Scripture can they be confident, that there is a reality deserving the name of quality distinguished from all substance, and yet working real and admirable effects? If there were no other Argument but this, that we are assured by the Christian Faith, that there is an Holy Ghost existing; and we cannot be assured, either by reason or faith, that there is a quality really and essentially distinguished from all substance, it would be sufficient to deter us from that boldness to assert the Holy Ghost, in whose name we are baptized, to be nothing else but a quality.

† To conclude the nature of the Holy Ghost, which is not so immediately expressed in the Scriptures, it will be needful so to place our assertions, as that they may occur to all other misconceptions. Now the old notions; (and more they cannot now have,) were thus delivered by Gregory Nazianzen, that great Divine so much concerned in this Subject: Τὸν δὲ καθ' ἑμᾶς σφῶν οὐ μὲν ἐνέργειαν

τὸτο (τὸ πνῆμα) ὡσεὶ λαβόν, οἱ δὲ κλίσμα, οἱ δὲ Θεὸν, οἱ δὲ ἐκ ἐργασίας ὁπόταν τεταρ' αὐτοῖς τὴν γὰρ φησὶν, ὡς φασιν, ἐνέργειαν σαφῶς δηλωσάντες, Οἷα. 37. These were the three particular and opposite Opinions, either the Spirit is an operation, or a created substance, or God; the fourth is but a doubt or hesitation which of the three is true. The first of these is thus propounded by way of question. Τὸ πνῆμα τὸ ζῶν ἢ ὡς καθ' ἑαυτὸ ὑφίσταται πάλιν ὡς ὁθετέον, ἢ ὡς ἐν ἑτέρῳ θεωρουμένην, ὡς τὸ μὲν ἕκαστον οἱ περὶ ταῦτα δεινὸν, τὸ δὲ συμβεβηκός, Either it is subsisting in it self, as a substance, or in another as an accident. This was the first question then, and still is. * This is the Argument of the same Father, Εἰ μὲν ἐν συμβεβηκέν, ἐνέργεια τὸτο ἂν εἴη Θεὸς, τὸ δὲ ἕτερον, ἢ τίνος; τὸτο γὰρ πᾶσι μάλλον ἐφ' ὧν ὁμῶς, καὶ εἰ ἐνέργεια, ἐνεργηθήσεται δηλονότι ἐκ ἐνεργείας, καὶ ὁ μὲν περὶ ἐνεργηθῆναι πᾶσι παύσαι· τοῦτον γὰρ ἢ ἐνέργεια. Πῶς ἐν ἐνεργείᾳ, καὶ τὰδε λέγειν, καὶ ἀρνεῖσθαι, καὶ λυπῆται, καὶ παρέρχεται, καὶ ὅσα κινουμένη σαφῶς ὅτι ἐκ κινήσεως.

But we are not left to guess at the nature of the Spirit of God; the word of God which came from that Spirit hath sufficiently delivered him as a person. It is indeed to be observed that in the Scriptures there are some things spoken of the Holy Ghost which are proper and peculiar to a Person, as the Adversaries confess: others, which are not properly and primarily to be attributed to a Person, as we cannot deny: and it might seem to be equally doubtful, in relation to the Scripture-Expressions, whether the Holy Ghost were a person or no; and that they which deny his Personality may pretend as much Scripture as they which assert it. But in this seeming indifferency we must also observe a large diversity; inasmuch as the Holy Ghost, or Spirit of God, is not always taken in the same propriety of signification; nor do we say that the Holy Ghost which signifieth a Person, always signifieth so much. It is therefore easily conceived, how some things may be attributed to the Spirit in the Scriptures which are not proper to a Person, and yet the Spirit be a Person, because sometimes the Spirit is taken for that which is not a Person, as we acknowledge. Whereas, if ever any thing be attributed to the Holy Ghost, as to a Person, which cannot be otherwise understood of the Spirit of God than as of a Person, then may we infallibly conclude that the Holy Ghost is a Person. This therefore we shall endeavour fully and clearly to demonstrate; first, that the Scriptures declare unto us the Holy Ghost as a Person, by such attributes and expressions as cannot be understood to be spoken

spoken of the Spirit of God any other way than as of a Person : Secondly, that whatsoever attributes or expressions are used in the Scriptures of the Holy Ghost, and are objected as repugnant to the nature of a Person, either are not so repugnant, as is objected ; or if they be, they belong unto the Spirit, as it signifies not a Person.

First then the Holy Ghost, or good Spirit of God is clearly and formally opposed to those evil Spirits, which are and must be acknowledged persons, of a spiritual and intellectual subsistence. As, *the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an evil Spirit from the Lord troubled him.* Now, what those evil spirits from the Lord were, is apparent from the sad example of *Ahab*, concerning whom we read, *there came out a Spirit and stood before the Lord and said, I will entice him ; and the Lord said unto him ; wherewith ? and he said, I will go out and be a lying Spirit in the mouth of all his Prophets ; and the Lord said, Thou shalt entice him, and thou shalt also prevail ; go out and do even so.* From whence it is evident that the evil Spirits from God were certain persons, even bad Angels, to which the one good Spirit as a person is opposed, departing from him to whom the other cometh.

Again, The New Testament doth describe the Holy Ghost by such personal dispositions, and with such operations, as are as evident marks and signs of a person as any which are attributed to the Father or the Son, which are unquestionable persons, and whatsoever terms are spoken of the Spirit by way of quality, are spoken as well of those which are acknowledged persons. We are exhorted by the Apostle *not to grieve the Spirit of God*, and grief is certainly a personal affection of which a quality is not capable. We are assured that the same Spirit *maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered ;* and we can understand what are interceding persons, but have no apprehension of interceding or groaning qualities. The operations of the Spirit are manifest, and as manifestly personal : for he *searcheth all things, yea even the deep things of God*, and so he knoweth all things, *even the things of God*, which can be no description of the power of God ; he *worketh all the spiritual gifts, dividing to every man severally as he will ;* in which the operation, discretion, distribution, and all these voluntary, are sufficient demonstrations of a person. He revealeth the will of God and speaketh to the sons of men, in the nature and after the manner of a person ; for the Spirit said unto Peter, *Behold three men seek thee. Arise therefore and get thee down, and go with them doubting nothing, for I have sent them :* and the Holy Ghost said unto the Prophets and Teachers at Antioch, *Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.* We cannot better understand the Nature of the Holy Ghost than by the description given by Christ which sent him : and he said thus to his Disciples, *The Comforter (or, the Advocate) which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, he shall testify of me : and ye also shall bear witness. If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you, but if I depart I will send him unto you. And when he is come he will reprove the world, and he will guide you into all truth ; for he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear that shall he speak, and he shall shew you things to come ; he shall glorify me, for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.* All which words are nothing else but so many descriptions of a person, a person hearing, a person receiving, a person testifying, a person speaking, a person reproofing, a person instructing.

† The present Adversaries to this truth are the Socinians, and their Opinion was thus first delivered by Socinus, Quod in testimoniis sacris quæ adversarii citant Spiritui S. actiones tribuuntur, & ea quæ personarum sunt propria, ex hoc nihil concludi potest, eam aliis rebus, quas personas non esse constat,

The † Adversaries to this truth acknowledging all these personal expressi-

tionibus, & ea quæ personarum sunt propria, ex hoc nihil concludi potest, eam aliis rebus, quas personas non esse constat,

stat, similiter in Scripturis sacris actiones tribuantur, & ea quæ sunt propria personarum. Cuius rei plenissimam fidem facere potest vel locus ille Pauli, 1 Cor. 13. à v. 4. ad 8. ubi perpetuo de Charitate, tanquam de persona aliqua loquitur illi permulta tribuens, quæ revera non nisi in personam cadunt, *Faustus Socinus contra Wickum*, c. 10.

ons, answer that it is ordinary in the Scriptures to find the like expressions, which are proper unto persons, given unto those things which are no persons: as when the Apostle saith, *Charity suffereth long and is kind, charity envieth not, charity vaunteth not it self, is not puffed up, doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh none evil, rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth, beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.* All which personal actions are attributed to Charity which is no person, as in * other cases it is usual, but belonging to that person which is charitable; because that person which is so qualified doth perform those actions according to, and by vertue of, that charity which is in him. In the same manner, .∴ say they, personal actions are attributed to the Holy Ghost, which is no person, but only the virtue, power, and efficacy of God the Father of our Lord *Jesus Christ*; because that God the Father is a person, and doth perform those personal actions, attributed to the Holy Ghost, by that virtue, power, and efficacy in himself which is the Holy Ghost. As when we read *the Spirit said unto Peeter, Behold three men seek thee; arise therefore and get thee down and go with them, doubting nothing; for I have sent them*: we must understand that God the Father was the person which spake those words, and which sent those men; but because he did so by that virtue which is the Holy Ghost, therefore the Holy Ghost is said to speak those words and send those men. In the same manner when we read, *the Holy Ghost said unto those at Antioch, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them*; we must conceive it was God the Father who spake those words, who had called *Barnabas* and *Saul*, and to whom they were to be separated: but because God did all this by that power within him which is his Spirit, therefore those words and actions are attributed to the Holy Ghost. This is the sum of their answer; and more than this I conceive cannot be said in answer to that Argument which we urge from those personal expressions attributed to the Spirit of God, and, as we believe, as to a person.

1 Cor. 13. 4-9, 6, 7.

* See the Racovian Catech. doth enlarge this Answer, stating the question thus, Qui vero in Scriptura loci accipiendi sunt in quibus Sp. S. actiones personarum propriæ & ad Deum ipsum spectantes attribuantur? And returning this solution, Ad eum modum, quo in Scripturis rebus id attribuitur (sepenumero; quod personarum est, neque tamen res illæ propterea personæ censentur, ut peccato, quod deceperit, & occiderit, Rom. 7. 11. & legi, quod

loquatur, Rom. 2. 19. & Scriptura quod prospiciat & prænunciet, Gal. 3. 18. & Charitati quod sit longanimis, &c. 1 Cor. 13. 4, 5, 6, 7. Denique Spiritui, i. e. vento, quod spirer ubi velit, c. 6. Vide Socini Epistolam 3. ad Petrum Statorium. .∴ Quod si quis dixerit satis constare Paulum eo in loco figurate loqui, & charitatis nomine eum intelligere qui charitate est præditus quatenus ea est præditus: respondebo, Cum Spiritus S. sit Spiritus Dei, certumque sit alioqui spiritum alicujus personæ non posse esse personam ab ea cujus est Spiritus distinctam, non minus constare cum Spiritui S. ea tribuantur, quæ personæ & simul ipsius Dei sunt propria, nihil aliud intelligendum nomine Spiritus S. esse, quam ipsum Deum spiritu suo, id est, virtute atque efficacia sua agentem atque operantem. F. Socinus, *ibid.* Quoniam vero Spiritus S. virtus Dei est, hinc fit ut ea quæ Dei sunt, Spiritui S. attribuantur, & sub nomine Spiritus S. sepe Deus ipse intelligatur, quatenus suam virtutem Deus per Spiritum suum exerit; Catech. Racov. *ibid.* ^a Acts 10. 20. ^b Acts 13. 2.

But this answer is most apparently insufficient, as giving no satisfaction to the Argument. For if all the personal actions, attributed in the Scriptures to the Spirit, might proceed from the Person of God the Father, according to the power which is in him, then might this answer seem satisfactory; but if these actions be personal, as they are acknowledged and cannot be denied, if the same cannot be attributed to the Person of God the Father, whose Spirit it is, if he cannot be said to do that by the power within him, which is said to be done by the Holy Ghost, then is that defence not to be defended; then must the Holy Ghost be acknowledged a person. But I shall clearly prove, that there are several personal attributes given in the sacred Scriptures expressly to the Holy Ghost, which cannot be ascribed to God the Father, which God the Father by that power which is in him, cannot be said to do;

and

and consequently cannot be any ground why those attributes should be given to the Spirit if it be not a person.

To make intercession is a personal action, and this action is attributed to the Spirit of God, *because he maketh intercession for the Saints according to the will of God.* But to make intercession, is not an act which can be attributed to God the Father, neither can he be said to intercede for us according to that power which is in him; and therefore this can be no Prosopopeia, the Holy Ghost cannot be said to exercise the personal action of intercession for that reason because it is the Spirit of that person which intercedeth for us. To come unto men, as being sent unto them, is a personal action, and so the Comforter, or Advocate, who is the Holy Ghost, did come, being sent; *when the Comforter is come whom I will send you from the Father,* saith Christ, and again, *If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him to you.* But to come unto men as being sent, cannot be ascribed to God the Father, who sendeth, but is never sent; especially in this particular, in which the Father is said expressly to send, and that in the name of the Son (*whom the Father will send in my name,* saith our Saviour.) When therefore the Holy Ghost cometh to the Sons of men, as sent by the Father in the name of the Son, and sent by the Son himself, this personal action cannot be attributed to the Father as working by the power within him, and consequently cannot ground a Prosopopeia, by which the virtue or power of God the Father shall be said to do it. To speak and hear are personal actions, and both together attributed to the Spirit, in such a manner as they cannot be ascribed to God the Father. *When he,* saith Christ, *the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth; for he shall not speak of himself: but whatsoever he shall hear, that he shall speak.* Now to speak and not of himself cannot be attributed to God the Father, who doth all things of himself; to speak what he heareth, and that of the Son; to deliver what he receiveth from another, and to glorify him from whom he receiveth by receiving from him, as Christ speaketh of the Holy Ghost, *He shall glorify me, for he shall receive of mine, and shew it to you,* is by no means applicable to the Father; and consequently it cannot be true that the Holy Ghost is therefore said to do these personal actions, because that person whose Spirit the Holy Ghost is, doth those actions, by and according to his own power, which is the Holy Ghost. It remaineth therefore that the Answer given by the Adversaries of this truth is apparently insufficient, and consequently that our Argument, drawn from the personal actions attributed in the Scriptures to the Spirit, is sound and valid.

I thought this discourse had fully destroyed the Socinian Prosopopeia; and indeed as they ordinarily propound their Answer, it is abundantly refuted. But I find the subtilty of *Socius* prepared * another explication of the Prosopopeia to supply the room where he foresaw the former would not serve. Which double Figure he groundeth upon this distinction. The Spirit, that is, the power of God, saith he, may be considered either as a propriety and power in God, or as the things on which it worketh are affected with it. If it be considered in the first notion, then if any Personal attribute be given to the Spirit, the Spirit is there taken for God, and by the Spirit God is signified: if it be considered in the second notion, then if any Personal attribute be given to the Spirit, the Spirit is taken for that man in which it worketh, and that man, affected with it, is called the Spirit of God.

* Credo me fatis ostendisse, Spiritum S. non esse personam, non magis quam alie vel proprietates, vel effectus Dei sint personae, cum nihil sit aliud quam peculiaris quaedam virtus & efficacia Dei; quae si ut ipius Dei

proprietas, & vis per quam agit consideratur & accipitur, figura metonymiae aut prosopopoeiae accommodatissimus est locus: & metonymia quidem, si Spiritus S. nomine ipse Deus cujus est Spiritus, quique per eum agit significatur; prosopopoeia vero, ut quando Deus per Spiritum S. agit, ipsi Spiritui S. Dei actio tribuatur: siu autem haec virtus & efficaciam

efficacia Dei consideratur & accipitur, ut res in quibus agit, ab ipsa afficiuntur, utrique isti figuræ similiter aptissimus est locus quandoquidem commodissimè per metonymiam is qui à Spiritu S. aliquo modo affectus quidpiam agit, quatenus id agit, Spiritus S. seu Spiritus Dei metonymicè dici potest: ut factum est apud Paulum, cum ait (1 Cor. 2. 10.) Spiritum (sub. Dei) omnia scrutari etiam profunda Dei: ubi Spiritus Dei nomine sine dubio intellexit hominem Spiritu Dei præditum, quatenus viz. ab isto Spiritu afficitur. Jam per prosopopœiam ipsi Spiritui S. actionem tribui, quæ ipse Spiritus ope ab homine fiat adeo est proclive ut nihil magis; F. Socin. in Resp. ad Wiel. cap. 10.

So that now we must not only shew that such things which are attributed to the Holy Ghost cannot be spoken of the Father, but we must also prove that they cannot be attributed unto man, in whom the Spirit worketh from the Father. And this also will be very easily and evidently proved. The Holy Ghost is said to come unto the Apostles as sent by the Father and the Son, and to come as so sent is a personal action, which we have already shewed cannot be the action of the Father, who sent the Spirit; and it is as certain that it cannot be the action of an Apostle who was affected with the Spirit which was sent, except we can say that the Father and the Son did send S. Peter an Advocate to S. Peter: and S. Peter, being sent by the Father and the Son, did come unto S. Peter. Again, Our Saviour, speaking of the Holy Ghost, saith, *He shall receive of mine*: therefore the Holy Ghost in that place is not taken for the Father; and *shew it unto you*, therefore he is not taken for an Apostle: in that he *receiveth* the first Socinian Prosopopœia is improper; in that he *sheweth* to the Apostle the second is absurd. The Holy Ghost then is described as a person distinct from the Person of the Father, whose power he is, and distinct from the Person of the Apostle in whom he worketh, and consequently neither of the Socinian Figures can evacuate or enervate the Doctrine of his proper and peculiar Personality.

Secondly, For those Attributes or expressions used of the Holy Ghost in the sacred Scriptures, and pretended to be repugnant to the nature of a Person, either they are not so repugnant, or if they be, they belong unto the Spirit, as it signifieth not the Person but the gifts or effects of the Spirit. † They tell us that the Spirit is given, and that sometimes in measure, sometimes without measure, that the Spirit is poured out, and that men do drink of it, and are filled with it, that it is doubled and distributed, and something is taken from it, and that sometimes it is extinguished; and from hence they gather, that the Holy Ghost is not a Person, because these expressions are inconsistent with Personality. But a satisfactory Answer is easily returned to this Objection. 'Tis true, that God is said to have *given the Holy Ghost to them that obey him*, but it is as true that a Person may be given; so we read in the Prophet *Isaiah*, *unto us a Son is given*, and we are assured that *God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son*, and certainly the Son of God is a Person. And if all the rest of the expressions be such as they pretend, that is, not proper to a Person, yet do they no way prejudice the truth of our Assertion, because we acknowledge the effects and operations of the Spirit to have in the Scriptures the name of the Spirit, who is the cause of those operations. And being to that Spirit, as the cause, we have already shewn those Attributes to be given which can agree to nothing but a Person; we therefore conclude against the Socinians and the * Jews, That the Holy Ghost is not a Quality, but a Person; which is our first Assertion.

† Spiritum S. non esse Deitatis Personam hinc discere potes, primum quod ea quæ Spiritui S. in Scripturis attribuantur, nulla prorsus ratione Personæ convenient, ut sunt quod detur, quod ex eo detur, idq; aut secundū mensuram, aut absque omni mensura quod confundatur ipse & ex ipso confundatur, & quod copotentur homines, quod augeretur, quod id duplo detur,

in partes distribuatur, tollatur ipse, & ex ipso tollatur; & similia in Scripturis extant. Catech. Ræcov. c. 6. Quæst. 12. * *Acts* 5. 32. *Isa.* 9. 6. * *The Opinion of the Jews was, That the Holy Ghost was nothing else but the att'rus or energy of God, and therefore they which denied the substantiality of the Spirit were looked upon as symbolizing with the Jews in this particular.* Lactantius in libris suis, & maxime in Epistolis ad Demetrianum Spiritus S. omnino negat substantiam; & errore Judaico dicit cum vel ad Patrem referri, vel ad Filium, & sanctificationem utriusq; Personæ sub ejus nomine demonstrari, S. Hier. Ep. 55. *Moses Maimonides sufficiently declareth the Opinion of the Jews, who delivering the several significations of מִיָּד, maketh the fifth and sixth to be these.* Quinto significat influentiam illam intellectualem divinam à Deo Prophetis instillatam, cujus virtute Prophetant. Sexto significant Propositum, & Voluntatem. And then concludes, Vox hæc מִיָּד quando Deo attribuitur, ubiq; sumitur partim in quivra, partim in sexta significatione, quatenus voluntatem significat, *Mose Nevechim*, p. 1. c. 40.

1 Cor. 2. 11.

* The Socinians endeavouring to prove from this place, That the Holy Ghost is not a Person, lay the foundation of their Argument in this, That he is the Spirit of God, and by nature in God, so that those things which are proper to the Divine Nature are attributed and

belong to him, and because there is another Person in the Divine Essence, and, as they say, there can be but one, therefore the Holy Ghost is not a Person. Deinde idem (sc. Sp. S. non esse Personam) ex eo patet, quod non sit extra Deum natura sed in ipso Deo. Nisi enim natura Deo inesset, non potuisset Paulus Spiritum Dei cum spiritu hominis qui homini inest natura conferre, idque eo in loco, 1 Cor. 2. 11. ubi ait, *Quis hominum novit quæ sunt hominis nisi spiritus hominis qui inest homine? Ita quæ sunt Dei nemo novit nisi Spiritus Dei.* Quoniam vero Spiritus S. in Deo est, nec tamen in Spiritu S. reciprocè dici potest esse Deum, hinc apparet Sp. S. non esse Personam. Præterea cum superius demonstratum sit unam tantum esse in Deitate personam, & Spiritus S. sit Dei virtus, ut verba Christi ad Apostolos indicant, Luc. 24. 49. efficitur Spiritum S. non esse personam divinam. Denique si Spiritus S. esset persona, essentiam quoque divinam cum habere oporteret. Nam ea attribuantur illi quæ propria sunt essentiæ divinæ: at superius docuimus substantiam divinam unam esse numero, nec tribus personis esse posse communem. Quamobrem Sp. non esse Deitatis personam planum est, Catech. Racovian. c. 6. To the same purpose doth Socinus argue against Wickus, That the Nature of the Spirit is the Nature of God, and that the Spirit cannot therefore be a Person, because there can be but one Person in the Nature of God. Whereas therefore independently from this place we have proved, That the Holy Spirit is a Person, and from this place have inferred with them, That the same Spirit is in God and of the Divine Nature, it followeth, That he is no created Spirit, inasmuch as nothing in the Divine Nature can be created.

* Matt. 12. 31, 32. Quomodo audent inter omnia numerare Spiritum S. quando ipse Dominus dixerit, Qui blasphemaverit in Filium hominis remittetur ei, qui autem blasphemaverit in Spiritum S. nec hic nec in futurum remittetur ei. Quomodo

igitur inter creaturas audent quisquam Spiritum computare? Aut quis sic se obligat, ut si creaturæ derogaverit, non putet sibi hoc aliqua venia relaxandum? S. Ambros. de Spiritu S. l. 1. c. 3.

Our second Assertion is, That the *Holy Ghost*, in whose name we are baptized, and in whom we profess to believe, is not a created, but a divine and uncreated, Person. And for the proof of this Assertion, we shall first make use of that Argument which our Adversaries have put into our hands. The Spirit of God which is in God is not a created Person: But the Holy Ghost is the Spirit of God which is in God, and therefore not a created Person. This Argument is raised from those words of the Apostle, *For who knoweth the things of a man save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man but the Spirit of God.* That this Spirit of God is the *Holy Ghost* I find denied by none. That the same Spirit is in God, appeareth by the Apostles discourse, and is granted by the * *Socinians*: that it is so the Spirit of God, and so by nature in God that it cannot be a creature, is granted by the same. It followeth therefore undeniably that the *Holy Ghost* is no created Person; inasmuch as that cannot be a created person which hath not a created nature, and that can neither have nor be a created nature, which by nature is in God. Wherefore although it be replied by others, that it is not said in the Text that the Spirit is in God, yet our Adversaries reason over-weighs their negative observation; and it availeth little to say that it is not expressed, which must be acknowledged to be understood. The *Holy Ghost* then is a Person, (as I have proved) and is not of a nature distinguished from that which is in God, (as is confessed, and only denied to be in God, because it is not said so when it is implied,) therefore he is no created Person.

Secondly, The *Holy Ghost* is such a one, as against whom a sin may be committed, and when it is so, cannot be remitted. But if he were no Person, we could not commit that sin against him; and if he were a created Person, the sin committed against him could not be irremissible. Therefore he is a Person, and that uncreated. The Argument is grounded upon the words of our Saviour, * *All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men, but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever speaketh a word against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.* By which words it appeareth there is a sin or blasphemy against the Holy Ghost distinct from all other sins and blasphemies committed against God the Father or the Son of God; that this sin hath an aggravation added unto it, beyond other sins and blasphemies: but if the Holy Spirit were no Person, the sin could not be distinct from those sins which are committed against him whose Spirit he is; and if he were a Person created, the sin could receive no such aggravation beyond other sins and blasphemies.

Thirdly, Every created person was made by the Son of God as God, and is now put under the feet of the Son of God as man. But the Spirit of God was not made by the Son of God, nor is He now put under the feet of the Son of man. Therefore the Spirit of God can be no created Person. *All things were made by the Word, and without him was not any thing made that was made; therefore every created person was made by the Word. God hath put all things under the feet of Christ, and when he saith all things are put under him; it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him: and being none is excepted beside God, every created person must be under the feet of the Son of man. But the Spirit of God in the beginning was not made, yea, rather in the beginning made the world, as *Job speaks of God, By his Spirit he hath garnished the heavens; nor is he under the feet of Christ, now set down at the right hand of God, who with supreme authority together with the Father sent the Prophets, as Isaiah testifieth, saying, Now the Lord God and his Spirit hath sent me, and with the same authority, since the exaltation of our Saviour, sent forth such as were separated to himself, as appeareth in the case of Barnabas and Saul, and † with the same authority giveth all Spiritual Gifts, ^a dividing to every man severally as he will; so that in this Kingdom of Christ all things are done ^b by the power of the Spirit of God.*

γῆτος τοῦ ἀβέβητος ὑπὸ τοῦ υἱοῦ γενόμενα, καὶ γὰρ καὶ περὶ τοῦ Πνεύματος ὁ βλασφημῶς καὶ τολμῶς λέγειν ἐκλήρωται ὑπὸ τοῦ υἱοῦ. *Har.*
 69. §. 52. Ariani ab Ario, in consunt notissimi errore quo Patrem & Filium, & Spiritum S. nolunt esse unius ejusdemque na-
 turæ, sed esse Filium creaturam, Sp. vero S. creaturam creaturæ, hoc est, ab ipso Filio creatum volunt, *S. Aug. Hæ.* 49.
 Ὁ Εὐσεβίος, τὸ ὅτι παρὰ κληρὸν Ἀριον Πνεῦμα, ὅτε Θεός, ὅτε υἱός, ἐπὶ μὴ ἐκ τῶ Πατρὸς ὁμοίως τὸ ὕψος καὶ αὐτὸ τὸ πλὴν ἡ-
 ψησιον ἔληφεν, ἀν δέ τῃ διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ ἡγουμένην τυγχάνει, ὅτι τὴ πάντα δι' αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο, καὶ χωρεῖς αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο ὡς ἐν, *de Eccl.*
Theol. 1. 3. c. 6. Ὁ δὲ υἱός μόνος Πατρίκιος θεοτικὴ τέλει καὶ ποιητικὴς ἀνέτη, καὶ δημιουργητικὸς τῶν ἡγούμενων ἀπάν-
 των ὁρατῶν τε καὶ ἀορατῶν, καὶ διὰ αὐτοῦ τὸ τῶ πατρὸς καὶ Πνεύματος ὁμοειδέας· πάντα γὰρ δι' αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο, καὶ χωρεῖς αὐ-
 τῶ ἐξήρξιστο ὡς ἐν, *ib.* Where it is worth our observation, that Eusebius citing the place of S. John, to prove that the Holy Ghost was
 made by the Son, leaves out those words twice together by which the Catholics used to refute that Heresie of the Arians, viz. ὁ ζήρ-
 γεν. All things which were made were made by the Son, but the Holy Ghost was not amongst them αὖ γέγονεν, which were made,
 and therefore was not made by the Son. Τὸ Ἀριον γὰρ Πνεῦμα κτίσμα πάλιν κτισμάτων ἔστιν ἐν, διὰ τὸ, διὰ τῶ υἱοῦ τὰ
 πάντα γεννηθῆς, ὡς ἔπεν ἡ γραφή, ἀσώματος τινα διασπάζοντες, ἐ καθὼς ἐρηται τὸ ῥητὸν ἔχοντες, ἀλλὰ κακῶς ὑπονο-
 οῦντες, καὶ ἀπὸ ῥητῶ τὸ καλῶς ἐρημῶν καὶ πλὴν κακῶς αὐτοῦ ὑπονοοῖαν μεθερμηνεύοντες· ἐ γὰρ τὸ θεῖον Ἐυαγγέλιον περὶ τοῦ
 Πνεύματος ἔστιν, ἀλλὰ περὶ πάντων ὧν ἐκλήρισθον, ὅτι ἐπὶ τῇ κτίσει διὰ τοῦ Λόγου γεννηθῆναι, καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦ Λόγου· τὰ γὰρ πάντα
 δι' αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο, καὶ χωρεῖς αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο ὡς ἐν, παρεκληνομήνης τὴ ἀναγινώσκοντες ἔχον, ὁ γέγονεν, ἵνα ἐπὶ τοῦ γεννηθῆναι, ὅτι πάντα δι'
 αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο, καὶ χωρεῖς αὐτῶ ἐξήρξιστο ὡς ἐν, *Epiph. Hæ.* 69. §. 56. † *S. Chryl.* *Tom.* 5. p. 10. Ταῦτα πάντα ἐνεργεῖ τὸ
 ἐν καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ Πνεῦμα, διὰ τοῦ, ἰδίᾳ ἐκείνῳ καθὼς βέλεια. Καθὼς βέλειαί φησιν· ἐ καθὼς προστάτεια· διαρεῖν, ἐ δια-
 ρέμερον· αὐθεντεν, ἐκ αὐθεντίας ὑποκείμερον· πλὴν γὰρ αὐτῶ ἐξέστην ἡνὰρ ἐν ὧν ὕψησε τὸ Πατρὶ ταῦτων καὶ τὸ ἀγίῳ Πνεύ-
 ματι ἀναλίσθιν ὁ Παῦλος· καὶ ὡς περὶ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἔστιν· Ὁ ὅς Θεός ἐστιν ὁ ἐνεργῶν τὰ πάντα ἐν πᾶσιν, ἔτω καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦ
 ἀγίου Πνεύματος. ταῦτα γὰρ πάντα, φησὶν, ἐνεργεῖ τὸ ἐν καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ πνεῦμα, διαρεῖν, ἰδίᾳ ἐκείνῳ καθὼς βέλεια· ἐπὶ
 ἀναλίσθιν ἐξέστην· ὡν γὰρ ἡ ἐκείνῳ μία, ὅλων γὰρ ὅτι ἡ αὐθεντία μία· καὶ ὡν ἡ ἐκείνῳ ἡ ἀγία, τέτων καὶ ἡ διωταμία
 καὶ ἡ ἐξέστα μία. ^a *1 Cor.* 12. 1. ^b *Rom.* 15. 19.

Fourthly, He, by whose operation *Christ* was conceived in the womb of the Virgin, was no created Person: for by virtue of that conception he was called the Son of God; whereas if a Creature had been the cause of his Conception, he had been in that respect the Son of a Creature, nay, according to the Adversaries Principles, he had taken upon him the Nature of Angels. But the Holy Ghost it was by whose operation *Christ* was conceived in the womb of the Virgin. For it was an Angel that said to *Mary*, (not that an Angel, but that,) *the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the* Luke 1. 35.

† This express
 notion of the
 Spirit of God,

is no created Person; which is our second Assertion against the ancient, but
 newly revived Heresy of the † *Arians* and *Macedonians*.

that he was a Person, as a ministering Spirit, and created, was acknowledged the Doctrine of the Arians, as may appear out of the former Testimonies, and is evident by those which followed his Opinions. Which being of two kinds, the Anomeans, or pure Arians (such as were Acetius, Eunomius, and Eudoxius) and the Homoeousians, or Semi-Arians (such as Eusebius and Macedonius) they both alike denied the Divinity, and asserted the creation of the Holy Ghost. The Opinion of the Anomeans is clear out of the words of Eunomius, who very subtilly delivered it, as if it had been the Opinion of the Ancients. Τὴν τ' ἀρίων ἐν ᾧ πατρὶ κυριασμένης διδασκαλίαν, παρ' οὗ τεύτον αὐτὸ ἀζιώματι· καὶ τάξει μαθόντες, τεύτον ἔχον καὶ τῇ φύσει πεπιστευκάμεν. The confession of the Ancients was, That the H^{oly} G^{host} was the third Person in the Trinity in Order and Dignity, and Eunomius pretending to follow them, added, That he was also third in Nature, which the Ancients never taught. And what this third in Nature was, he thus declared, Τεύτον τάξει καὶ φύσει πρεσβυτάτη μὲν τῷ Πατρὶ, ἐκτεργεία δὲ τοῦ υἱοῦ ὑπομέτρον· τέστιν χώρα τιμώμερον, ὡς πρώτων καὶ μετῶν ἀπάντων, καὶ μέγιστον τοιούτων τῷ μονογενέσι ποίημα, θεότης αὐτοῦ καὶ δημιουργικῆς δυνάμεως ἀπλετοπόνηρον. And again, Εἰ μὴ χρίσμα ἐστίν, ὅθεν γέννημα ἢ ἀφ' οὐσίας· εἰς δὲ ἀναρχοῦ Θεός καὶ ἀφ' οὐσίας· ἕτερον μὲν γέννημα, λήσεται ἐν κτίσματι καὶ ποίημα αὐτὸ νομαζέσθαι, apud S. Basil. advcrf. Eunom. l. 3. So Gregory Nyssen repeats the words of the same Eunomius, Πιστώμενον εἰς τὴν Παρεκκλησίαν, γινόμενον ὑπὸ τοῦ μόνης Θεοῦ διὰ τοῦ μονογενούς, and declares that their ordinary language was, ἀντὶ τοῦ ἀρίου Πνώματι καὶ κτίσματι κτίσμα καὶ τῷ υἱοῦ ἐξερρον ἐξερρον νομαζέσθαι, Orat. 1. cont. Eunom. Beside these, the Semi-Arians and some of those which were Orthodox as to the Divinity of the Son, were of the same Heresie at to the nature of the Holy Ghost, and therefore were called Πνώματιστάρχαι (as Epiphanius derives them in the description of that Heresie, ὑπὸ Ἡμιαρειάν καὶ ὑπὸ Ὁρθοδοξών) and afterward Macedoniani. Macedoniani sunt à Macedonio Constantinopolitanæ Ecclesiæ Episcopo, quos & Πνώματιστάρχας Græci dicunt, eo quod de Spiritu S. licigent. Nam de Patre & Filio rectè sentiant, quod unus sint ejusdemq; substantiæ vel essentiæ, sed de Spiritu S. hoc nolunt credere, creaturam cum esse dicentes, S. Aug. Heres. 52. This Heresie was first condemned by the Council of Alexandria, ἥνθα τὸ Ἀρίον Πνεῦμα θεολογήσαντες τῇ δημοσίᾳ ταράδι Σωαυελαμβάνοντο, Socrat. l. 3. c. 7. Afterward by the Council held in Illyricum. Ἡμεῖς δὲ προσέμεν ὡς καὶ αἱ Σύνοδοι, νῦν ἡ τε καὶ Ρώμην καὶ ἡ καὶ Γαλιαν, μίαν ἔχον καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν πίστιν, τὸ Πατρὸς, καὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ, καὶ τοῦ ἀρίου Πνώματος· ἐν τριῇ ἁγιασμῶσι, τετέστιν ἐν τριῇ τελείᾳ ὑποστάσει, apud Theodorct, Hist. Eccl. l. 4. c. 8. The Synod held at Rome with the Gallican Bishops under Damasus. Ὡς καὶ Πατριεὶ καὶ τῷ υἱοῦ μιὰ ὁσία, μιὰς θεότητος, μιὰς ἀρετῆς, μιὰς δυνάμεως, καὶ ἐνὸς χαρακτήρος πιστεύουσιν καὶ τῇ αὐτῇ ὑποστάσει καὶ ὁσίᾳ, καὶ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἀρίον, Apud Theodoret. l. 2. c. 22. Another Synod held under the same Damasus at Rome, Εἰ τίς ἐποιεῖ τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἀρίον ποίημα, ἢ διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ, γεγενῆσθαι, ἀνάθεμα ἔστω, apud Theodor. l. 5. c. 10. After and upon these particular Synods this Heresie was fully condemned in the second general Council held at Constantinoale, in which these words were added to the Nicene Creed, Καὶ εἰς τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἀρίον, τὸ κύριο, τὸ κύριο, τὸ ζωοποιόν, τὸ ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκτορευόμενον, καὶ σὺν Πατρὶ καὶ υἱῷ συμπροσκυνούμενον, καὶ κομισζόμενον, τὸ λαλοῦν διὰ τοῦ Προφητῶν, And in the first Canon mentioning the Heresies condemned expressly by the Council; they name Ἱδικῶς τὴν τοῦ Ἑνωμομένων, εἶπον Ἀνομοίων, καὶ τὴν τοῦ Ἀρειανῶν, εἶπον Ἐυδοκιανῶν, καὶ τὴν τοῦ Ἡμιαρειανῶν, ἥντων Πνώματιστάρχων. And thus the Heresie of Macedonius, who made the Holy Ghost a created Person, was condemned by the second general Council, ἔτως δὲ ἐν ὁ ιεροσολάνῃς χορῆς Μακεδονίου τινα τὸ Κωνσταντινούπολεις συνέρον ἀπαγμα πάλαι ποιησάμενον, ὅτι τὸ πανάριον καὶ ζωαρχικὸν ἐδόστημι Πνεῦμα, ἐυθύως ἱδικῶς δεύσαι· ὡς γὰρ Ἀρειοῦ καὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ, ἔτα καὶ αὐτὸς καὶ παναρίς παρεστήθημεν Πνώματι, εἰς δόξης καὶ ἀληθείας τὴν ἀποστολικὴν καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικὴν αὐτῶ σωεστατὶς κυριότησα, Photius, Epist. 1.

But were there nothing, which is already said, demonstrated, there is enough written in the Word of God to assure us of the Deity of the Holy Ghost, to make us undoubtingly believe that the Spirit of God is God. It is written by *Moses*, That *when he went in before the Lord to speak with him, he took the vail off, until he came out.* And that Lord with whom *Moses* spake was the one *Jehovah*, the God of heaven and earth. But we are assured that

the Spirit was and is that Lord to which *Moses* spake ; for the Apostle hath taught us so much by his own interpretation, saying, *Even unto this day when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit.* The Spirit is here so plainly said to be *the Lord*, that is, *Jehovah*, the one Eternal God, that the Adversaries of this truth must either deny that *the Lord* is here to be taken for God, or, that *the Spirit* is to be taken for the Spirit of God : either of which denials must seem very strange to any person which considereth the force and plainness of the Apostles discourse.

But indeed they are so ready to deny any thing, that they will by no means acknowledge either the one or the other : but *the Lord* must be something which is not God, and *the Spirit* must be something which is not the Spirit of God : and then they conclude the Argument is of no force, and may as well conclude the Apostles Interpretation hath no sense. *The Lord*, they say, is *Christ*, and not God : for *Christ*, they say, is not God : *the Spirit* they say, is the mystery of the Law, or the hidden sense of it, and that every one knows, is not the Spirit of God. But we are assured that the Apostle did mean by the *Spirit* the Spirit of God, not the sense of the Law ; for he addeth immediately, *Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty*, and the sense of the Law is never called the Spirit of the Lord. Nay, were it not that the coherence of the discourse did satisfy us ; yet the objection ought not at all to move us ; for the name of *Spirit* in those places mentioned by them to signify *the sense of the law* hath no affinity with this, according to their own way of argumentation : for it is † never so taken with the emphasis of an Article, and put in the place either of an intire subject or a predicate in a proposition except by way of opposition ; and one of those it must of necessity be, in those words of the Apostle, *Now the Lord is the Spirit*, and that without the least intimation of any opposition.

† The places al-
leged by them
are these, Πνε-
μα καὶ καρδιά
ἐν Πνεύματι
& γένηματι,
Rom. 2. 29.
* Ωςτε δαδὲν
ἰρὰς ἐν καινότητι πνεύματος, καὶ ἐπαλαύτῃ γένηματι, Rom. 7. 6. ἥτις καλεῖται πνευματικῶς Σίδεμα καὶ Αἴγιον, Rom. 11. 8. One of these places speaks only adverbially ; the other two have Πνεύμα in obliquo ; and one of those two have it cum adjuncto, both of them cum opposito, none of them cum articulo, none of them are in loco subjecti or predicati ; and therefore how any of these can shew, that τὸ Πνεύμα in this place by us urged, invested with an Article, standing in the place either of a complete Subject, or a complete Predicate, with nothing adjoined, nothing opposed unto it, must be taken in the same sense with them, I cannot imagine. In the sixth verse of this Chapter indeed it is the subject of a Proposition, and invested with an Article ; but that is an Article of Opposition. τὸ γὰρ γένημα ποιεῖν, τὸ δὲ πνεύμα ζωοποιεῖ, and this not. Howsoever, in that sense objected, it neither agrees with the words before it, nor with those which follow it.

Again, We are assured that by *the Lord* the Apostle did understand the eternal God ; for he speaketh of the same Lord which he mentioned in the verse before, and that is the Lord God spoken of in the Book of *Exodus* ; of which except the Apostle speaks, his Argument hath neither inference nor coherence. In vain therefore is this pretended for an answer, that the Apostle by *the Lord* doth always, unless he cite some place out of the old Covenant, understand *Christ* ; for in this particular he * citeth a certain place out of the Book of *Exodus*, and useth the name of the *Lord* in the same notion in which there 'tis used, framing an Argument and urging it from thence ; and if he did not, † that rule is not so universal and infallible, but that *the Lord* in the Language of the same Apostle may not signify the second, but the first or third Person of the Trinity. If then *the Lord* be the eternal God, as the Apostle without any question understood him in *Moses*, if the *Spirit* be the Spirit of the Lord, as the Apostle expounds himself in the words immediately following, then the Spirit of the Lord is the eternal God, and so termed in the Scriptures.

* The words in
Exodus were
these, 34. 34.
'Ἡνίκα ὃ ἄν
ἐπιπορεύετο
Μωϋσῆς ἐναν-
τι Κυρίου λα-
λοῦν αὐτῷ, πε-
ρῆτο τὸ κά-
λυμμα· which
are thus made
use of by the
Apostle, Ἡνίκα
ὃ ἄν ἐπὶ τῷ
ὄρει περὶς Κυ-
ρίου περιεῖται τὸ κάλυμμα. Κύριος then is here used by S. Paul citing some place out of the old Covenant, and the words which follow, 'Ὅ γὰρ Κύριος signifies the same Κύριος, as appears by the Connexion ; and if so, then according to the Doctrine of

of our Adversaries, it cannot signifie Christ. For that Lord of whom Moses spake, was then when Moses wrote; but that Christ of which they interpret it, was not then, as they teach, therefore that Lord cannot be Christ, in their interpretation without a contradiction. † For though Christ be most frequently called our Lord, yet being God the Father of Christ is our Lord, being ὁ Κύριος is often by S. Paul without any restriction or intimation of appropriating that all unto the Son, which is attributed to the Lord by him, the rule cannot be certain and universal. For I desire to know by what means they can be assured that the Apostle doth by the title ὁ Κύριος intend Christ, and not the most High God the Father, in these following places, 1 Cor. 3. 5. 4. 19. 7. 10, 12. 16. 7. 1 Thess. 4. 6. 5. 27. 2 Thess. 3. 1. 5. 16. 2 Tim. 1. 16, 18. 2. 7. And beside, I ask how the pretence of this general rule can be properly objected by those who knew that they to whom they do object this Rule, have contended that this title is elsewhere attributed to the Holy Ghost. As S. Basil upon that place, 2 Thess. 3. 5. 'Ὁ ὃς Κύριος καὶ δυνάμις ἡμῶν τὰς καρδίας ὡς τὴν ἀγάπην τῷ Θεῷ, καὶ εἰς τὴν ὑπομονὴν τῷ Χριστῷ, thus disputes, Τίς ὁ καὶ δυνάμις Κύριος εἰς τὴν τῷ Θεῷ ἀγάπην, καὶ εἰς τὴν τῷ Χριστῷ ἀγάπην; ἀποκρινάμεθα ἡμῖν οἱ τὸ Πνεῦμα καὶ ἀποκρινάμεθα. Εἴτε γὰρ πάλιν Παῖδες ὁ λόγος, πάλιν ἂν ἔρητο, ὁ ὃς Κύριος ὑμεῖς καὶ δυνάμις εἰς τὴν αὐτοῦ ἀγάπην. ὥστε πάλιν τῷ Θεῷ, προσέειπεν ἄν, οἱς τὴν αὐτοῦ ὑπομονὴν. ζητήσωσαν ἂν τι ἄλλο πρὸς τὸν ὃν τὴν προσοχὴν τὸ Κύριος τιμᾷ ἄξιον. And upon the like place, 1 Thess. 3. 12, 13. Ποῖον Κύριον ὀφείλουται ὑμπερῆσαι τῷ Θεῷ καὶ Πατρὶς ἡμῶν ἐν τῇ παρουσίᾳ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν, ἀμέμπους τὰς καρδίας ἐπὶ ἐργασίᾳ ἐν ἀγάπῃ ὡς ὁ Θεὸς ἀγαλλοῖται τῷ ἑαυτοῦ, Ἀποκρινάμεθα ἡμῖν οἱ μὲν ὡς ἡμεῖς ἀποκρινάμεθα τῷ Πνεύματι τῷ Θεῷ, ἀλλ' ἔκ ἑχου, De Spiritu Sancto, cap. 21.

Again, The same Scriptures do clearly manifest the same Spirit to be God, and term him plainly and expressly so. For when Peter said, *Ananias, Why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost?* he repeateth the same question in reference to the same offence, *Why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.* To lie unto the Holy Ghost, is to lie unto God: to lie unto the Holy Ghost, is not to lie unto men, because the Holy Ghost is not man, and consequently not to lie unto any Angel, because the Holy Ghost is not an Angel, not to lie unto any Creature, because the Holy Ghost is no Creature, but to lie unto God, because the Holy Ghost is God.

To this plain and evident Argument there are so many Answers, that the very multitude discovers the weakness of them all; for if any one of them were sufficient to bear down the force of our reason, the rest would be superfluous. First, They answer that it cannot be collected from hence that the Spirit is God, because the *Holy Ghost* in the Original is † put in one case, and *God* in another, and the Apostle speaking in one manner of the Spirit, and in another of God, cannot shew that the Spirit is God. To which is easily answered, that the case or manner of the Apostles speech can make no difference, if the fence and substance be the same, as here it is; for to deceive the Holy Ghost is nothing else but to lie unto him, or by a lie to endeavour to deceive him. The act objected to *Ananias* was but one, which act of his the Apostles looked upon as injurious not to themselves but to the Holy Ghost; and therefore S. Peter shewed the sin to be not against men, but against God; as certainly then as the Apostles were men, so certainly was the Holy Ghost, in the esteem of S. Peter, God.

As for that sense which they put upon the words, different from that of lying to God, as if *Ananias* were accused for counterfeiting the *Holy Ghost*, it is most certain that the words can in this place bear no such sense; for the sin of *Ananias* is again expressed in the case of his Wife *Sapphira*, to whom S. Peter said, *How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?* but to tempt the Spirit, and to counterfeit the Spirit are two several things: And it is evident that in this place the tempting of the Spirit, was nothing else but lying to him. For S. Peter said to *Sapphira*, *Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much; And she said Yea, for so much.* In which answer she lied. Then Peter said unto her, *How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?* viz. in saying that ye sold the land for so much. Here is no colour then for that new pretence, that *Ananias* did bear the Apostles in hand that what was done he did by the motion of the Holy Spirit, and so did pretend, counterfeit and bely the Holy Ghost. This is not to expound S. Peter, but to bely *Ananias*, and make him guilty of that sin which he was never yet accused of. It is most certain that he lied, it is also certain that he to whom

he

† Ex his facile apparet haudquam ex eo loco concludi posse Spiritum S. esse Deum, cum alio modo de Spiritu S. loquatur Petrus, alio de Deo. Illic dicit mentiri seu fallere, ac ludificari Spiritum S. hic mentiri Deo, Crellius d: uno Deo Patre, l. 1. § 3. Argum. 1.

† Our Transla-
tion is here ac-
cused without

reason. For though the Original be $\text{ἡ ἀπαρχὴ τοῦ πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου}$, yet some Copies have it ἐν τῷ πνεύματι , and the Syriac did so read and interpret it, $\text{רְתִּי נָל בְּרִיחָא דְּק רְשָׁא}$ the Vulgar Latin to the same purpose, *mentiri te Spiritui S.* And the Author of the *Trisulæ de temp. Barcarico*, under the name of S. Austin, *mentiri te apud Spiritum S. c. 3.* Now $\text{ἡ ἀπαρχὴ ἐν τῷ πνεύματι}$ is the same with τῷ πνεύματι , as $\text{Μὴ ἡδεδεσμεν ἐν ἀλλήλοις}$, Lye not one to another. If we read it ἐν πνεύματι , then it is rightly translated. Again, If we read it τῷ πνεύματι , it has in this case the sense of τῷ πνεύματι . As Psal. 65. 2. $\text{יְכַחֵשׁ דָּן אֵיבִיבִי}$ Lxx. $\text{ἡδυνταί ᾧ οἱ ἐχθροί ᾧ}$ of the same sense with that Psal. 18. 61. $\text{יְכַחֵשׁ יְהוָה יְכַחֵשׁ אֹתִי}$ Lxx. $\text{ἡδυνταί ᾧ οἱ ἐχθροί ᾧ}$ As Isa. 57. 11. $\text{Κυεὶς ἡδυνάσθη αὐτῷ}$. So Deut. 33. 26. $\text{יְכַחֵשׁ אֵיבִיבִי דָּן}$ Lxx. $\text{καὶ ἡδυνταί ᾧ οἱ ἐχθροί ᾧ}$ And Isa. 57. 11. $\text{יְכַחֵשׁ אֵיבִיבִי דָּן}$ Lxx. καὶ ἡδυνάσθη αὐτῷ and verse 41. $\text{ἐπέερεσαν ᾧ ἐπείεσαν ᾧ ὁ λόγος}$. Therefore whatever shifts are laid upon the phrase, or difference of expression, are either false or frivolous.

1 *Thess.* 4. 8.

1 Cor. 6. 19.

† Si quis ex eo
quod corpus
nostrum Spiri-
tus S. templum

fit, concludere velit eum esse Deum, illi demonstrandum est ita corpus nostrum Sp. S. templum dici, ut intelligatur eum esse personam cujus honori corpus nostrum sit dedicatum, à qua corpus nostrum eo jure quod divini numinis proprium est, possideatur, & principaliter incolatur, *Cress. de uno Deo Patre, l. 1. §. 3.*

divine

1 Cor. 3. 16.

divine right. But we have already proved that he is a Person, and certainly there can be no other right but that which belongs to God, by which the Holy Ghost inhabiteth and possesseth us. Nor have they any pretence to evince the contrary, but that which more confirmeth our Assertion; for they urge only those words of the Apostle, *Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you.* We do certainly know that we are the Temple of God; and we also know that the Spirit of God therefore dwelleth in us; and we therefore know that we are the Temple of God, because we know that the Spirit of God dwelleth in us, and we know no other reason why we are the Temple of God, when the Spirit of God dwelleth in us, but only because we know the Spirit of God is God; for if the Spirit were any other Person not divine, or any thing but a Person though divine, we could not by any means be assured that he did properly inhabit in us, or if he did, that by his inhabitation he could make a Temple of us. The second hath very little to say, but only this, that being the Holy Ghost who possesseth us, is a Person, we must shew that our bodies are his by the highest interest, and primarily dedicated to his honour: which he therefore conceives we cannot shew, because he thinks our body is not at all his by interest, or dedicated to his honour. But it were very strange, if we should be baptized in the name of the Holy Ghost, and that the Holy Ghost should have no interest in us, but that he should be ours by interest, and not we his; that the Spirit of God should call for men to be separated to himself, and that they which are so separated should be no way dedicated to his honor. If the Holy Ghost had no interest in us, because he is given unto us, then Christ can have no interest in us, for he is also given unto us. Indeed if the Apostle had said, as our Adversary doth, that *we ought with our body to glorifie, not the Spirit but God,* I should have concluded that the Spirit is not God; but being that blessed Spirit which dwelleth in us, and spake by the Apostles, never taught us not to glorifie him, I shall rather take leave to suspect that of blasphemy, than the Assertion of his Deity to be false Divinity. And whereas it is said, that *the Apostle hath hinted in what respect our body is the temple of the Holy Spirit, to wit, by inhabitation*; that is so far from breeding in me the least thought of diminution, that by this only notion I am fully confirmed in the belief of my Assertion. For I know no other way by which God peculiarly inhabiteth in us but by the inhabitation of the Spirit: and I understand no other way by which we can be the Temple of God but by the inhabitation of God, as it is written, *Ye are the temple of the living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people*: And therefore I conclude that the Holy Ghost who by his inhabitation maketh our bodies Temples, is that God which dwelleth in us.

2 Cor. 6. 16.

Fourthly, He, to whom the divine attributes do belong as certainly as they belong unto God the Father, is truly and properly God; because those are divine attributes which are proprieties of the divine nature, and consequently none can be indued with them to whom the nature of God belongeth not. But the divine attributes, such as are Omniscience, Omnipotency, Omnipresence, and the like, do belong as certainly unto the Holy Ghost as they do unto God the Father. Therefore we are as much assured that the Holy Ghost is God. The Scriptures to prove these attributes are so well known, that I shall not need to mention them, and they are so many that to manage them against the exceptions of the Adversaries would take up too much room in this discourse: especially considering they question some of them in the Father as well as in the Spirit, and so I should be forced to a double proof.

Fifthly,

Fifthly, He, to whom are attributed those works which are proper unto God, by and for which God doth require of us to acknowledge and worship him as God, is properly and truly God : because the operations of all things flow from that essence by which they are, and therefore if the operations be truly divine, that is, such as can be produced by no other but God, then must the essence of that Person which produceth them be truly such. But such works as are proper unto God, by and for which God hath required us to acknowledge him and worship him as God, are attributed often in the Scriptures to the Spirit of God, as the acts of Creation and Conservation of all things, the miracles wrought upon and by our blessed Saviour, the works of grace and power wrought in the hearts of true Believers, and the like. Therefore without any further disputation, which cannot be both long and proper for an Exposition, I conclude my third Assertion, That the Holy Ghost, or Spirit of God, is a Person truly and properly Divine, the true and living God.

Now being we do firmly believe, That the true and living God can be but one, that the Infinity of the Divine Essence is incapable of multiplicity ; being we have already shewn, That the Father is originally that one God, which is denied by none, and have also proved, That the onely Son is the same God, receiving by an eternal generation the same Divine Nature from the Father ; it will also be necessary for the understanding of the nature of the Spirit of God, to shew how that blessed Spirit is God : to which purpose, that I may proceed methodically, my fourth Assertion is, That the Spirit of God, which is the true and living God, is neither God the Father, nor the Son of God.

First, Though the Father be undoubtedly God, though the Holy Ghost be also God, and (because there cannot be two Gods,) the same God ; yet the Holy Ghost is not the Father. For the Scriptures do as certainly distinguish them in their persons, as they do unite them in their nature. He which proceedeth from the Father is not the Father, because it is impossible any person should proceed from himself ; but the Holy Ghost *proceedeth from the Father* ; therefore he is not the Father. He which is sent by the Father, and from the Father, is not the Father ; by whom and from whom he is sent ; for no person can be sent by himself, and by another from himself. But the Holy Ghost is sent by God the Father, and by the Son *from the Father* ; therefore he is not the Father.

John 15. 26.

Secondly, Though we have formerly proved, That the Son of God is properly and truly God, though we now have formerly proved, That the Spirit of God is God, and in reference to both we understand the same God ; yet the Holy Ghost is not the Son. For he which receiveth of that which is the Son's, and by receiving of it glorifieth the Son, cannot be the Son, because no person can be said to receive from himself that which is his own, and to glorify himself by so receiving. But the Comforter, *who is the Holy Ghost*, received of that which is the Son's, and by receiving of it glorified the Son ; for so our Saviour expressly said, *He shall glorify me, for he shall receive of mine* ; Therefore the Holy Ghost is not the Son. Again, He whose coming depended upon the Son's departing, and his sending after his departure, cannot be the Son who therefore departed that he might send him. But the coming of the Holy Ghost depended upon the Son's departing, and his sending after his departure ; as he told the Apostles before he departed, *I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you that I go away ; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you, but if I depart I will send him unto you* ; therefore the Holy Ghost is not the Son.

John 16. 7.

Thirdly, Though the Father be God, and the Son be God, and the Holy

Ghost be also the same God; yet we are assured that the Holy Ghost is neither the Father nor the Son; because the Scriptures frequently represent him as distinguished both from the Father and the Son. As, when *the Spirit of God descended like a dove, and loe, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased,* he was manifestly distinguished from the Person of the Son, upon whom he lighted, and from the Person of the Father, who spake from heaven of his Son. The Apostle teacheth us, *That through the Son we have an access by one Spirit unto the Father,* and consequently assur-eth us that the Spirit, *by whom,* is not the Father, *to whom,* nor the Son, *through whom,* we have that access. So *God sent forth his Son, that we might receive the adoption of sons: and because we are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son, into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father.* Where the Son is distinguished both from the Father as first sent by him, and the Spirit of the Son is distinguished both from the Father and the Son, as sent by the Father after he had sent the Son. And this our Saviour hath taught us several times in a word, as, *The Comforter whom the Father will send in my name; the Comforter whom I will send unto you from the Father,* and when that Comforter is come, *Go, teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.* I conclude therefore against the old † *Sabellian* Heresie, That the Holy Ghost, although he be truly and properly God, is neither God the Father, nor God the Son; which is my fourth Assertion.

† This Heresie was very ancient, even before Sabellius, tho

those which held it were afterwards all so denominated from Sabellius. For we find it was the opinion of Praxeus, against whom Tertullian wrote. Who being urged with that place where the three Persons were distinguished, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee, Therefore that which is born of thee shall be called the Son of God, answered thus, Filius Dei Deus est, & virtus altissimi altissimus est. After Praxeus followed Noetus, μονοθεως τ' αυτης Παλιεζ, κ' υιον, κ' αγιον Πνευμα η γνωστωμεν, Epiph. Har. 57. Noetiani à quodam Noeto, qui docebat Christum eundem ipsum esse Patrem & Spiritum S. S. Aug. Har. 36. Suddenly after Noetus arose Sabellius. Δογματισις τ' αυτης, κ' οι απ' αυτης Σελλιανοι, τ' αυτην η Παλιεζ, τ' αυτην υιον, τ' αυτην η αγιον Πνευμα, ως η εν μια υποστασει τρις ονομασιας, Epiph. Har. 62. From him afterwards were all which held the same opinion called Sabellians. Sabelliani ab illo Noeto quem supra memoravimus detulisse dicuntur. Nam & discipulum ejus quidam perhibent fuisse Sabellium. Sed qua causa duas hareses Epiphanius computet nescio, cum fieri potuisse videamus, ut fuerit Sabellius ille famosior, & ideo ex illo celebrius hæc hæresis nomen accepit. Noetiani enim difficillime ab aliquo sciuntur, Sabelliani autem sunt in ore multorum, S. Aug. Har. 41.

Our fifth Assertion is, That the *Holy Ghost* is the third Person in the blessed Trinity. For being he is a Person, by our first Assertion; a Person not created, by the second; but a Divine Person, properly and truly God, by the third; being though he is thus truly God, he is neither the Father nor the Son, by the fourth Assertion it followeth that he is one of the three; and of the three is the third. For as there is a number in the Trinity, by which the Persons are neither more nor less than three, so there is also an order, by which, of these Persons, the Father is the first, the Son the second, and the Holy Ghost the third. Nor is this order arbitrary or external, but internal and necessary, by virtue of a subordination of the second unto the first, and of the third unto the first and second. The Godhead was communicated from the Father to the Son, not from the Son unto the Father; though therefore this were done from all eternity, and so there can be no priority of time, yet there must be acknowledged a priority of Order, by which the Father not the Son is first, and the Son not the Father second. Again, The same Godhead was communicated by the Father and the Son unto the Holy Ghost, not by the Holy Ghost to the Father or the Son: though therefore this was also done from all eternity, and therefore can admit of no priority in reference to time; yet that of Order must be here observed; so that the Spirit receiving the Godhead from the Father who is the first Person, cannot be the first, receiving the same from the Son who is the second, cannot be the second, but being from the first and second must be of the three the third. And thus both the number and the order of the

the Persons are signified together by the Apostle, saying, *There are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one.* And though they are not expressly said to be three, yet the same number is sufficiently declared, and the same order is expressly mentioned, in the baptismal Institution made *in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.* As therefore we have formerly proved the Son to be truly the second Person, and at the same time the Father to be the first, so doth this which we have, but briefly, spoken, prove that the Holy Ghost is the third; which is our fifth Assertion.

Our sixth and last Assertion, (sufficient to manifest the nature of the Holy Ghost, as he is the Spirit of God,) teacheth that Spirit to be a Person proceeding from the Father and the Son. From whence at last we have a clear description of the blessed Spirit, that he is the most high and eternal God, of the same Nature, Attributes, and Operations with the Father, and the Son, as receiving the same Essence from the Father and the Son, by proceeding from them both. Now this procession of the Spirit, in reference to the Father, is delivered expressly, in relation to the Son, is contained virtually in the Scriptures. First, It is expressly said, *That the Holy Ghost proceedeth from the Father, as our Saviour testifieth, When the Comforter is come whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me.* And this is also evident from what hath been already asserted: for being the Father and the Spirit are the same God, and being so the same in the unity of the nature of God, are yet distinct in their Personality, one of them must have the same nature from the other, and because the Father hath been already shewn to have it from none, it followeth that the Spirit hath it from him.

Secondly, Though it be not expressly spoken in the Scripture, that the Holy Ghost proceedeth from the Son, yet the substance of the same truth is virtually contained there; because those very expressions which are spoken of the Holy Spirit in relation to the Father, for that reason because he proceedeth from the Father, are also spoken of the same Spirit in relation to the Son; and therefore there must be the same reason presupposed in reference to the Son, which is expressed in reference to the Father. Because the Spirit proceedeth from the Father, therefore it is called the Spirit of God and the Spirit of the Father. *It is not ye that speak, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.* For by the language of the Apostle the Spirit of God is the Spirit which is of God, saying, *The things of God knoweth no man but the Spirit of God.* And we have received not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God. Now the same Spirit is also called the Spirit of the Son, for because we are sons, *God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts:* the Spirit of Christ, *Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ he is none of his;* even the Spirit of Christ which was in the Prophets; the Spirit of Jesus Christ, as the Apostle speaks, *I know that this shall turn to my salvation through my prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ.* If then the Holy Ghost be called the Spirit of God and the Father, because he proceeded from the Father, it followeth, that, being called also the Spirit of the Son, he proceedeth also from the Son.

Again, Because the Holy Ghost proceedeth from the Father, he is therefore sent by the Father, as from him who hath by the original communication a right of mission; as, *the Comforter which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send:* But the same Spirit which is sent by the Father is also sent by the Son, as he saith, *when the Comforter is come whom I will send unto you.* Therefore the Son hath the same right of mission with the Father, and conse-

quently must be acknowledged to have communicated the same essence. The Father is never sent by the Son, because he received not the Godhead from him, but the Father sendeth the Son, because he communicated the Godhead to him: in the same manner neither the Father nor the Son is ever sent by the Holy Spirit, because neither of them received the Divine Nature from the Spirit: but both the Father and the Son sendeth the Holy Ghost, because the Divine Nature common to both the Father and the Son was communicated by them both to the Holy Ghost. As therefore the Scriptures declare expressly, That the Spirit proceedeth from the Father, so do they also virtually teach, That he proceedeth from the Son.

† This is not the late but ancient Opinion of the Latine Church, as will appear by these testimonies, Loqui de eo (Sp.S.) non necesse est, quia de Patre & Filio auctoribus confitendus est, S. Hil. de Trin. l. 2. Spiritus quoque Sanctus cum procedit à Patre & Filio, non separatur à Patre, non separatur à Filio, S. Amb. de Sp. Sanct. c. 10. Spiritus autem Sanctus vere procedens

quidem à Patre & Filio: sed non est ipse Filius, quia non generatur, neque Pater, quia procedit ab utroque; Id. de Symb. c. 3. Et in servos ecclesiæ dona profudit. Spiritum ab Unigena Sanctum & Patre procedentem, Paulinus in Nat. 9. S. Felicitis. Non possumus dicere quod Spiritus S. & à Filio non procedat, neque enim frustra Spiritus & Patris & Filii Spiritus dicitur. S. Aug. de Trin. l. 4. Firmissime tene & nullatenus dubites, eundem Spiritum S. qui Patris & Filii unus est Spiritus, de Patre & Filio procedere, Fulg. de Fide ad Petrum. Qui noster Dominus, qui tuus unicus spirat de Patris corde Paracletum. Prud. Hymn. 5. Cathem. Tanquam idem Deus nunc Pater, nunc Filius, nunc Spiritus S. nominetur, nec alius est qui genuit, alius qui genitus est, alius qui de utroque processit. Leo speaking of the Sabellian Heresy, Epist. 93. c. 1. Audi manifestus proprium Patris esse genuisse, & proprium Filii natum fuisse: proprium vero Sp. S. procedere de Patre Filioque; Vigil. cont. Eut. l. 1. By which testimonies, and the like, of the Latine Fathers we may well guess in which Church the Creed commonly attributed to Athanasius first was framed; for as it is confessed to be written first in Latine, so it is most probable that it was composed by some member of the Latine Church, by that expression in it. Spiritus S. à Patre & Filio, non factus, nec creatus, nec genitus, sed procedens. * The ancient Greek Fathers speaking of this procession, mention the Father only, and never, I think, express the Son, as sticking constantly in this to the language of the Scriptures. Thus Gregory Nazianzen distinguisheth the three Persons, Ἐπὶ τῷ ἡμετέρῳ ὄντι ἱσχυόμεθα, καὶ τὸ ἁγνόν, καὶ τὸ ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκπορεύμενον, Orat. de Filio. And the three properties attributed to the three Persons, are these, ἁγνότης to the Father, ἁγνότης to the Son, and ἐκπόρευσις to the Holy Ghost. But this word ἐκπόρευσις, or the very ἐκπορεύεσθαι, was not used by the Greeks in reference to the Son, but only, as the Scriptures speak, in relation to the Father. || As Epiphanius, καὶ ὁ καὶ πνεῦμα ὁ βασιλικὸς, καὶ πολυῶσι λέγειν κατέλιπε, ὡς δὲ ἡμεῖς ὁρῶντες, ἐκ Πατρὸς ἐκπορεύμενον, καὶ τὸ τῷ λαμβάνον, Hag. 62. § 52. Τὸ ἄγιον πνεῦμα, πνεῦμα ἅγιον, πνεῦμα θεῶν, ἀπὸ ὧν συνήλθε καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα, ἐκ ἀλλήλων θεῶν, ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκπορεύμενον, καὶ τὸ τῷ λαμβάνον, idem Ancor. c. 6. Ἀπὸ τῶν πνεύματων συνήλθε καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα, ἐκ ἀλλήλων θεῶν, ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς ἐκπορεύμενον, καὶ τὸ τῷ λαμβάνον, Id. Hag. 62. § 4. ** A Filio accipit, qui & ab eo mittitur, & à Patre procedit: & interrogo utrum id ipsum sit à Filio accipere quod à Patre procedere. Quod si nihil differre crederetur inter accipere à Filio, & à Patre procedere, certe id ipsum atque unum esse existimabitur, à Filio accipere, quod sit accipere à Patre. Ipse enim Dominus ait, Quoniam de me accipiet, & annuntiabit vobis, S. Hil. l. 3. de Trin. So S. Cyril, Ἐπειδὴ (τὸ πνεῦμα) ὁμοῦσιον τὸ ἐστὶν τῷ Πατρὶ, καὶ παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ πατρὸς ἐκ αὐτῶν πᾶσαν αὐτῶν τῶν ἐν ᾧ ζωῶν τελεσιγὰρ ἔχον ἐκτελεῖν τε καὶ δυνάμειν διὰ τὸ τὸ ζῆναι, ἐκ τῶν ἐμὸν λήψαι, Com. in Joann. l. 11. De Filio ergo accipit, & omnia quæ habet Pater Filii sunt, quæ Spiritus S. accipit; quia non de solo Filio, sed simul de utroque procedit, Fulg. l. 7. contr. Fab. apud Theodulph. de Sp. S. †† That this was the sense of the Greek Fathers anciently, who used those two Scriptures of the Holy Ghost, appeareth by Epiphanius, who frequently declares so much: As in Ancorato, πνεῦμα δὲ θεῶν καὶ πνεῦμα πατρὸς καὶ πνεῦμα τῷ, ἐκ τῶν πατρὸς καὶ τῶν τῷ, τεῖτον τῇ ὁνομασίᾳ, cap. 8. And speaking of Ananias who lied unto the Spirit, Ἀναθανᾶς ἐκ Πατρὸς καὶ τῷ τὸ πνεῦμα, ὃ ἐφάρσατο οἱ ἀπὸ τῶν τιμῶν, & νοσεῖσάμενος, cap. 9. Οὐκ ἀλλότριον πατρὸς καὶ τῷ, ἀλλὰ ἐκ τῶν αὐτῶν ὡς, ἐκ τῶν αὐτῶν θεότητι, ἐκ πατρὸς καὶ τῷ, συνήλθε καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα ἅγιον, Id. Hæres. 62. In these words is plainly contained this truth, That the Spirit is God of God the Father, and of God the Son. And that they did conclude this truth from those two Scriptures, he proceedeth from the Father, and receiveth of the Son, is also evident by these and the like passages, Εἰ δὲ Χεὺς ἐκ τῶν πατρὸς πορεύεται θεὸς ἐκ θεῶν καὶ τὸ πνεῦμα ἐκ τῶν Χεὺς ἢ παρὰ ἀμφοτέρων, ὡς φησὶν ὁ Χεὺς, ὃ παρὰ τῶν πατρὸς ἐκπορεύεται, καὶ ὅτι ἐκ τῶν ἐμὸν λήψαι, Epiphani. Ancor. § 57. Εἰ τοίνυν

mitted the addition Filioque. This was done first in the time and by the power of Pope Nicolaus the first, who by the activity of Photius was condemned for it. Tunc inter alias accusationes hoc principaliter posuit Photius ipsum (Nicolaum) fore excommunicatum quod apposerat ad Symbolum Spiritum S. à Filio procedere. Similiter & depositum, quod ipse Nicolaus Papa incidisset in sententiam tertii Concilii, Antioch. Part. 3. tit. 22. c. 13. This was it which Photius complained of so highly in his *Encyclick Epist.* to the Archiepiscopal Sees of the Eastern Church. 'Αλλὰ ὁ δὲ καὶ μόνον αἱ ταῦτα παρενοχλεῖν ἐξωχέθηςαι, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἰς κακὴν δὲ κοινὴν αἰς πάντων ἀντίθεσμον, πρὸς τοὺς τοῖς ἐκκλησίαις ἀποστήσας καὶ τὸ ἱερὸν καὶ ἄγιον σύμβολον ὁ πᾶν τοῖς ὁμοδοχοῖς καὶ οἰκουμενικοῖς ἐνεστήσας ἁμαχὸν ἔχει καὶ ἰσχυρὸν, ἐνδοξοῖς λογισμοῖς καὶ περιεργαστοῖς λόγοις καὶ θρασυῖς ὑπεβόλῃς καθόλου ἐπετίθεισαν (ὡς ἂν τὸ πονηρὸν μηχανισμῶν) τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἄγιον ἐκ ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς μόνον ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐκ τοῦ Υἱοῦ ἐκπορεύεσθαι κατελογίζοντες, Phot. Epist. 2. §. 8. Hugo Etherianus legit κατελογίζοντες, dum vertit, Iusta proficitur; Thus far Photius against Nicolaus before he was deposed. After he was restored again, in the time of Pope John the eighth, in the eighth General Council, as the Greeks call it, it was declared that the addition of Filioque made in the Creed should be taken away. 'Εξήτησαν ὅτι ἡ Σύνοδος αὕτη καὶ οὗτοι οἱ προεδρικοὶ τοῦ Συμβόλου, καὶ ἐκείνην ἄξιον ἵνα ἐξαίρεθῃ παντελῶς, says Marcus Bishop of Ephesus in the Council of Florence. After this the same complaint was continued by Michael Cerularius, and Theophylact, in as high a manner as by Photius, Ἐστὶν ἡ τὸ μίγνυσθαι ἐκείνο σεῦλα, καὶ τοῦτο ὅτι τὸ τοῦ Σολομῶντος ἁγία πεταυρὸς τοῖς σωτηρίαις, ἡ ἐν τῷ τῷ αἰτίῳ Συμβόλῳ κατετομία, ὡς ἐποίησαν οἱ ἀνακηρύττοντες τὸ πνεῦμα ἐκ τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ ἐκ τοῦ Υἱοῦ ἐκπορεύεσθαι, Theoph. ad Fran. c. 3. Καὶ τοῖς Δυτικοῖς τοῖσι μὲν οὗτοι οὗτοι τὸ δόγμα διαμρτάνεται τὴν πατερικὴν πίστιν σαλευόν, ὅτι δὲ τὸ ἐν τῷ Συμβόλῳ περὶ τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος περὶ τῆς ἐκείνου, ἐνθα ἐκείνου μίγνυσθαι, τοῦτο μὴ διορθώσεως ἀξιούμενον ὁ συγχωρεῖν ἀσχωρεῖν, Ibid. Thus did the Oriental Church accuse the Occidental for adding Filioque to the Creed, contrary to a General Council, which had prohibited all additions, and that without the least pretence of the Authority of another Council; and so the Schism between the Latin and the Greek Church began and was continued, never to be ended until those words καὶ ἐκ τοῦ Υἱοῦ, or Filioque are taken out of the Creed. The one relying upon the truth of the doctrine contained in those words, and the Authority of the Pope to alter anything; the other either denying or suspecting the truth of the doctrine, and being very zealous for the Authority of the ancient Councils. This therefore is much to be lamented, that the Greeks should not acknowledge the truth which was acknowledged by their Ancestors, in the substance of it; and that the Latins should force the Greeks to make an addition to the Creed, without as great an Authority as hath prohibited it, and to use that Language in the expression of this doctrine which never was used by any of the Greek Fathers.

Now although the addition of words to the formal Creed without the consent, and against the Protestation of the Oriental Church be not justifiable; yet that which was added is nevertheless a certain truth, and may be so used in that Creed by them who believe the same to be a truth; so long as they pretend it not to be a Definition of that Council, but an addition or explication inserted, and condemn not those who, out of a greater respect to such Synodical determinations, will admit of no such insertions, nor speak any other Language than the Scriptures and their Fathers spake.

Howsoever we have sufficiently in our Assertions declared the nature of the Holy Ghost, distinguishing him from all qualities, energies or operations, in that he is truly and properly a Person; differencing him from all creatures and finite things, as he is not a created Person; shewing him to be of an infinite and eternal essence, as he is truly and properly God; distinguishing him from the Father and the Son, as being not the Father, though the same God with the Father, nor the Son, though the same God with him; demonstrating his order in the blessed Trinity, as being not the first or second, but the third Person, and therefore the third, because as the Son receiveth his essence communicated to him by the Father, and is therefore second to the Father, so the Holy Ghost receiveth the same essence communicated to him by the Father and the Son, and so proceedeth from them both, and is truly and properly the Spirit of the Father, and as truly and properly the Spirit of the Son.

Thus far have we declared the Nature of the Holy Ghost, what he is in himself, as the *Spirit of God*; it remaineth that we declare what is the Office of the same, what he is unto us, as the *Holy Spirit*. For although the Spirit of God be of infinite essential and original holiness, as God, and so may be called *Holy* in himself; though other Spirits which were created, be either actually now unholy, or of defectible sanctity at the first, and so having the name of Spirit common unto them, he may be termed *Holy*, that he may be distinguished from them: yet I conceive he is rather called the *Holy Spirit*, or the *Spirit of Holiness*, because, of the three Persons in the blessed Trinity, it is his particular Office to sanctify, or make us holy.

Now when I speak of the Office of the Holy Ghost, I do not understand any Ministerial office or function, such as that of the created Angels is, who are all ministering Spirits sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of sal-

Rom. 1. 4.

Heb. 1. 14.

vation;

vation; for I have already proved this Spirit to be a Person properly divine, and consequently above all ministration. But I intend thereby whatsoever is attributed unto him peculiarly in the salvation of man; as the work wrought by him, for which he is sent by the Father and the Son. For all the Persons in the Godhead are represented unto us as concurring unto our salvation: *God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, and through that Son we have an access by one Spirit unto the Father.* As therefore what our Saviour did and suffered for us belonged to that Office of a Redeemer which he took upon him: so whatsoever the Holy Ghost worketh in order to the same salvation, we look upon as belonging to his Office. And because without holiness it is impossible to please God, because we all are impure, and unholy, and the purity and holiness which is required in us to appear in the presence of God whose eyes are pure, must be wrought in us by the Spirit of God, who is called Holy because he is the cause of this holiness in us, therefore we acknowledge the Office of the Spirit of God to consist in the sanctifying of the servants of God, and the declaration of this Office, added to the description of his nature, to be a sufficient explication of the object of Faith contained in this Article, *I believe in the Holy Ghost.*

Now this sanctification being opposed to our impurity and corruption, and answering fully to the latitude of it, whatsoever is wanting in our nature of that holiness and perfection, must be supplied by the Spirit of God. Wherefore being by nature we are totally void of all saving truth, and under an impossibility of knowing the will of God; being as *no man knoweth the things of a man save the spirit of man which is in him, even so none knoweth the things of God but the Spirit of God; this Spirit searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God, and revealeth them unto the sons of men; so that thereby the darkness of their understanding is expelled, and they are enlightened with the knowledge of their God.* This work of the Spirit is double, either external and general, or internal and particular. The external and general work of the Spirit, as to the whole Church of God, is the Revelation of the Will of God, by which so much in all Ages hath been propounded as was sufficient to instruct men unto eternal life. For there have been *holy Prophets ever since the world began; and prophecy came not at any time by the will of man, but Holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.* When it pleased God in the last days to speak unto us by his Son, even that Son sent his Spirit into the Apostles, *the Spirit of truth, that he might guide them into all truth, teaching them all things, and bringing all things to their remembrance whatsoever Christ had said unto them.* By this means it came to pass that *all Scripture was given by inspiration of God, that is, by the motion and operation of the Spirit of God; and so whatsoever is necessary for us to know and believe, was delivered by Revelation.* Again, The same Spirit which revealeth the Object of Faith generally to the Universal Church of God, which object is propounded externally by the Church to every particular Believer, doth also illuminate the understanding of such as believe that they may receive the truth. For Faith is the gift of God not only in the object but also in the act; *Christ is not only given unto us, in whom we believe, but it is also given us in the behalf of Christ to believe on him; and this gift is a gift of the Holy Ghost working within us an assent unto that which by the word is propounded to us: by this the Lord opened the heart of Lydia, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul; by this the word preached profiteth being mixed with faith in them that hear it.* Thus by grace are we saved through faith, and that not of our selves, it is the gift of God. As the increase and perfection, so

John 3. 16.
Ephes. 2. 18.

1 Cor. 2. 10, 11.

Luke 1. 70.
2 Pet. 1. 21.

Heb. 1. 2.
John 16. 13.

Phil. 1. 29.

Acts 16. 14.
Heb. 4. 2.
Ephes. 2. 8.

the

† This is the ancient determination of the second Arausican Council, Si quis sicut augmentum, ita etiam initium Fidei, ipsamque credulitatis affe-

ctum quo in eum credimus qui justificat impium, & ad regenerationem baptismatis pervenimus, non per gratiæ donum, id est, per inspirationem Sp. S. corrigentis voluntatem nostram ab infidelitate ad fidem, ab impietate ad pietatem, & naturaliter nobis inesse dicit, Apostolicis dogmatibus adversarius approbatur, beato Paulo dicente, *Confidimus quia qui cepit in vobis bonum opus perficiet usque in diem Domini nostri Jesu Christi; & illud, Vobis datum est pro Christo non solum ut in eum credatis, sed etiam ut pro illo patiamini. Et, Gratiæ saluti saluti estis per fidem, non ex vobis, Dei enim donum est, Can. 5. Concil. Araus. & Gennad. Eccl. Dogm. c. 42.*

* It was the known opinion of the Pelagians that it is in the power of man to believe the Gospel without any internal operation of the grace of God, and S. Austin was once of that Opinion, Neque enim fidem putabam, says he, Dei gratia præveniri, ut per illam nobis daretur quod posceremus utiliter, nisi quia credere non possemus, si non præcederet præconium veritatis. Ut autem prædicato nobis Evangelio consentiremus nostrum esse proprium, & nobis ex nobis esse arbitrabar. Quem meum errorem nonnulla Opuscula mea satis indicant ante Episcopatum meum scripta, *De Prædest. Sancti. l. 1. c. 3.* But whatever he had so written before he was made a Bishop, he recalled and reversed in his Retraction, l. 1. c. 23. and disavowed earnestly against it as a part of the Pelagian Heresie. This, as the rest of Pelagianism is renewed by the Socinians, who in the Racovian Catechism deliver it in this manner, Nunc ad credendum Evangelio Spiritus Sancti interiore dono opus est? Nullo modo: neque enim in Scripturis legimus cuiquam id conferri donum, nisi credenti Evangelio.

Tit. 3. 5.

1 Cor. 5. 11.

the original, or † initiation of Faith is from the Spirit of God, not only by an external proposal in the word, but by an internal illumination in the soul; by which we are inclined to the obedience of Faith, in assenting to those truths; which unto a natural and carnal man are foolishness. And thus we affirm not only the Revelation of the will of God, but also the illumination of the Soul of man, to be part of the Office of the Spirit of God, against the old and new * Pelagians.

The second part of the Office of the Holy Ghost in the sanctification of man, is the regeneration and renovation of him. For our natural corruption consisting in an aversion of our wills, and a depravation of our affections, an inclination of them to the will of God is wrought within us by the Spirit of God. For according to his mercy he saveth us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. So that except a man be born again of water and of the Holy Ghost, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. We are all at first defiled by the corruption of our nature and the pollution of our sins; but we are washed, but we are sanctified, but we are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. The second part then of the Office of the Holy Ghost is the renewing of man in all the parts and faculties of his Soul.

Gal. 5. 25.

Gal. 5. 16.

Rom. 8. 14.

Zach. 12. 10.

1 John 5. 14.

Rom. 8. 26, 27.

John 14. 16.

1 John 2. 1.

Rom. 8. 34.

The third part of this Office is to lead, direct and govern us in our actions and conversations, that we may actually do and perform those things which are acceptable and well-pleasing in the sight of God. If we live in the Spirit, quickened by his Renovation, we must also walk in the Spirit following his direction, led by his manuduction. And if we walk in the Spirit, we shall not fulfil the lusts of the flesh; for we are not only directed but animated and acted in those operations by the Spirit of God, who giveth both to will and to do, and as many as are thus led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. Moreover that this direction may prove more effectual, we are also guided in our prayers, and acted in our devotions by the same Spirit, according to the promise, I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem the spirit of grace and of supplication. Whereas then this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will he heareth us; and whereas we know not what we should pray for as we ought, the Spirit it self maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered, and he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the Saints according to the will of God. From which intercession especially I conceive he hath the name of the Paraclete given him by Christ, who said, I will pray unto the Father, and he shall give you another Paraclete. For if any man sin we have a Paraclete with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous, saith S. John: who also maketh intercession for us, saith S. Paul, and

Fifthly, It is the Office of the Holy Ghost to assure us of the adoption of Sons, to create in us a sense of the paternal love of God towards us, to give us an earnest of our everlasting inheritance. *The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. And because we are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father. For we have not received the Spirit of bondage again to fear; but we have received the Spirit of adoption whereby we cry, Abba, Father. The Spirit it self bearing witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God. As therefore we are born again by the Spirit, and receive from him our Regeneration, so we are also assured by the same Spirit of our Adoption; and because being sons we are also heirs, heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ, by the same Spirit we have the pledge, or rather the earnest of our inheritance. For he which establisheth us in Christ and hath anointed us is God, who hath also sealed us, and hath given the earnest of his Spirit in our hearts; so that we are sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession.* The Spirit of God as given unto us in this life, though it have not the proper nature of a pledge; as in the gifts received here being no way equivalent to the promised reward, nor given in the stead of any thing already due; yet is to be looked upon as an * earnest, being part of that reward which is promised, and, upon the condition of performance of the Covenant which God hath made with us, certainly to be received.

* The word ἀρραβών which the Apostle only useth in this particular, is of an

Hebrew extraction, ערבות from ערב a word of promise and engagement in commerce, bargains, and agreements; and being but in one particular affair used in the old Testament, it taken for a pledge, Gen. 38. 17, 18, 20. and translated ἀρραβών by the LXX, as well as נכונות by the Chaldee; yet the Greek word otherwise, consonantly enough to the origination, signifieth rather an earnest than a pledge, as the Greeks and Latines generally agree. Hesych. 'Αρραβών, πείθεμα, Etyim. 'Αρραβών, ἡ ἐστὶ τῶν ὠνείας παρὰ τῶν ἀνθρώπων διδομένη περὶ ἀποδοτῆς ἢ ἀποδοτέας. Which words are also extant in Suidas, but corruptly. To this purpose is cited that of Menander, Μικρὰ μὲν ἀρραβὼν μὲν ἐπείσυν ἐνδοῦς καὶ ἀποδοτέας. So Aristotle speaking of Thales, ἐκκορήσας τὰ χρημάτων ὀλίγων ἀρραβῶνας διὰ δὲ νότον ἢ ἐλαυτέρων. Polit. l. c. 11. So the Latines, Arrabo sic dicta ut reliquum reddatur. Hoc verbum à Græco ἀρραβών. Reliquum ex eo quod debitum reliquit, Varro de L.L. lib. 4. In terrenis negotiis arrhæ quantitas, contractus illius pro quo intercesserit quadam portio est; pignoris vero ratio meritum rei pro qua poni videtur excedit. Paschas. Disc. l. 1. de sp. S. Pignus Latinus Interpres pro arrabone posuit. Non idipsum autem arrabo quod pignus sonat. Arrabo enim futuræ emptioni quasi quoddam testimonium & obligamentum datur. Pignus vero, hoc est, ἐνέχυρον, pro mutua pecunia opponitur, ut cum illa reddita fuerit reddendi debitum pignus à creditore reddatur, S. Hier. ad Ephes. 1. 14. There is such another observation in A. Gellius, upon these words of Q. Claudius, Cum tantus arrhabo penes Samnites Populi Romani esset. Arrabonem dixit sexcentos obfides, & id maluit quam pignus dicere, quoniam vis hujus vocabuli in ea sententia gravior acriorque est, Noll. Ant. l. 17. c. 2. The sense and use of this word is evident in Plautus, Eas quanti destinas? Talentis magnis totidem quot ego & tu sumus. Sed arrhaboni has dedit quadraginta minas, Mystellaria. The sum was 120l. of which he gave 40l. in part of payment, and this was the arrhabo. So the Greek Fathers interpret S. Paul, Διὰ ὧν τοι ἀρραβὼν ἦν ἡ πίστις τῶν ὁδοποιοῦν τὸ μέγεθος, ὃ γὰρ ἀρραβὼν μικρόν τι μέγεθος ἐστὶ τῆς πίστεως. Theod. 2 Cor. 1. 22. & 1 Cor. 15. 44. Διὰ τὰ τοιαῦτα καὶ ἀρραβὼν τὸ νῦν δέθεν ὁνομαζέσθαι ὡς πολλαπλάσιον ἐστὶ τῶν ὁδοποιοῦν τῶν χιλιῶν. Οὐδὲ Πνεῦμα ἔπεν ἀπλῶς, ἀλλ' ἀρραβὼνα ὀνόμασεν, ἵνα ἀπὸ τούτου καὶ οἱ τῶν πάντων δὲ θάλασσης, S. Chryl. In this manner speaks Eusebius, Τὰ περὶ ὅλην τὴν ἐπαύλιον ἐν δέξιν δε περὶ ὅλην τὴν ἐπαύλιον, De vita Constant. l. 1. c. 3. Theodor. in Cl. Alex. 802. Οὕτως γὰρ πᾶν νεκροῦσιν ὁμοῦ ὡς τε πάντες ὑστερεῖν. ἀλλ' ὅτι ἀρραβὼνα τῶν αἰνίων ἀγαθῶν καὶ τῶν παρὰ τὴν πλάνην πειρασμῶν. So Tertullian. Hic interrogator Dei atq; hominum appellatus ex utriusq; partis deposito commisso sibi carnis quoq; depositum servat in semetipso, arrabonem summæ totius. Quemadmodum enim nobis arrabonem Spiritus reliquit, ita & à nobis arrhabonem carnis accipit, & vexit in cælum pignus totius summæ illuc quandoq; redigendæ. De Resur. Carn. c. 51. Planè accepit & hic Spiritum caro: sed arrhabonem, animæ autem non arrhabonem sed plenitudinem, c. 53. So though the Translator of Irenæus render ἀρραβὼν pignus, yet it is evident that Irenæus did understand by ἀρραβὼν an earnest. Quod & pignus, dixit Apostolus, hoc est parte ejus honoris qui à Deo nobis promissus est, in Epistola quæ ad Ephesios est, l. 5. c. 8. and a little after, Si enim pignus complectens hominem in semetipsum jam facit dicere Abba Pater, quid faciet universa Spiritus gratia quæ hominibus dabitur à Deo, cum similes nos ei efficiet, & perficiet voluntate Patris?

Sixthly, For the effecting of all these and the like particulars, it is the Office of the same Spirit to sanctifie and set apart Persons for the duty of the Ministry, ordaining them to intercede between God and his People, to send up prayers to God for them, to bless them in the name of God, to teach the doctrine of the Gospel, to administer the Sacraments instituted by Christ, to perform all things necessary for the perfecting of the Saints, for the work of the Ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ. The same Spirit which illuminated the Apostles, and endued them with power from above to perform personally

Ephes. 4. 12.

personally their Apostolical functions, fitted them also for the Ordination of others, and the committing of a standing power to a successive Ministry unto the end of the World; who are thereby obliged to *take heed unto their selves and to all the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made them overseers to feed the Church of God.* A.T. 20. 29.

By these and the like means doth the Spirit of God sanctifie the sons of men, and by virtue of this sanctification, proceeding immediately from his Office, he is properly called the Holy Spirit. And thus have I sufficiently described the Object of our Faith contained in this Article, What is the *Holy Ghost* in whom we believe, both in relation to his * Nature, as he is the Spirit of God, and in reference to his Office, as he is the Holy Spirit.

* In respect of the Nature of the Holy Ghost, I have endeavoured the same which Faustus Rhegiensis did, of whom Gennadius relates thus much; Faustus ex Abbate Lirinensis Monasterii apud regnum Galliarum Episcopus factus, vir in divinis Scripturis satis intentus, ex traditione Symboli occasione accepta, composuit librum de Spiritu S. in quo ostendit eum juxta fidem Patrum, & consubstantialem & coeternalem esse Patri & Filio, ac plenitudinem Trinitatis obinentem.

The necessity of the belief of this Article appeareth, first, from the Nature and Condition of the Creed, whereof it is an essential part, as without which it could not be looked upon as a Creed. For being the Creed is a Profession of that Faith into which we are baptized, being the first Rule of Faith was derived from the sacred Form of Baptism, being we are baptized *in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*, we are obliged to profess Faith in them three; that as they are distinguished in the Institution, so they may be distinguished in our profession. And therefore the briefest comprehensions of Faith have always included the Holy Ghost, and some * concluded with it.

* I have formerly shewn at large how the Creed did first arise from the Baptismal Institution,

P. 34, 35. And therefore as the name of the Holy Ghost is an essential part of that form, so must the belief in him be as essential to the Creed, which was at first nothing else but an Explication of that form. The first enlargement and explication we find in Justin Martyr, thus expressed: *Ἐπὶ ὀνόματι τοῦ Πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος, καὶ ἐπὶ ὀνόματι τοῦ ἁγίου Πνεύματος* Apol. 2. And the Rule of Faith delivered soon after by Irenaeus is very consonant unto it: *Εἰς ἕνα Θεὸν Πατέρα παντοκράτορα καὶ ποιητὴν πάντων, καὶ ἕνα υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ ἕνα ἁγίον Πνεῦμα, καὶ τὰς ἐκείνων ἐκκλησιῶν, καὶ τὰς ἐκείνων ἐκκλησιῶν, καὶ τὰς ἐκείνων ἐκκλησιῶν* Adv. Har. l. 1. c. 2. As that delivered soon after him by Tertullian. Unum quidem Deum credimus, sub hac tamen dispensatione (quam οἰκονομίαν dicimus) ut Unici Dei sit & Filius Sermo ipse, qui ex ipso processerit, per quem omnia facta sunt, & sine quo factum est nihil. Hunc missum à Patre in virginem & ex ea natum Hominem & Deum, filium hominis & filium Dei, & cognominatum Jesum Christum; Hunc passum, hunc mortuum, & sepultum secundum Scripturas, resuscitatum à Patre, & in coelos resumptum, sedere ad dexteram Patris venturum judicare vivos & mortuos. Qui exinde miserit secundum promissionem suam à Patre Spiritum S. Paracletum, Sanctificatorem fidei eorum qui credunt in Patrem & Filium & Spiritum S. Adv. Prax. c. 2. Indeed there is an objection made against this truth by the Socinians, who would have us believe that in the first Creeds or Rules of Faith the Holy Ghost was not included. Thus Schlichtingius writing against Meiser. Porro observatum est à quibusdam terram hanc Symboli istius partem quæ à Sp. S. incipit, ab initio de fuisse, seu in Symbolo non fuisse additam: idque non immerito, cum non personas ullas in quas credendum sit, (quas solas, ut apparet, auctoribus Symboli commemorare propositum fuit) sed res tantum credendas complectatur, quæ implicite fide in Deum & in Jesum Christum omnes continentur. Hoc si ita est sane desuit tertia Persona, quæ Deum illum unum nobis declararet. Tertullianus sane Auctor antiquissimus & temporibus Apostolorum proximus, hanc terram Symboli istius partem non tantum ita non apposuit, ut omitteret; sed ita ut excluderet, lib. de Virginibus velandis. But as he argues very warily with his Hoc si ita est, so he disputes most fallaciously. For first he makes Tertullian the most ancient and next to the Apostles, and so would bring an example of the first Creed from him, whereas Justin Martyr and Irenaeus were both before him, and they both mention expressly the Holy Ghost in their Rules of Faith. Secondly, He makes Tertullian exclude the Holy Ghost from the Rule of Faith, which he clearly expresseth in the place fore-cited: and therefore that place by him mentioned cannot be an exclusion, but an omission only, and the cause of that omission in that place is evident, that he might bring in his opinion of the Paracletus with the better advantage. Thus when Eusebius Caesariensis gave in a Copy of the Creed (by which he was catechized, baptized and consecrated) to the Council of Nice, it runs thus, *Πιστεύω εἰς ἕνα Θεόν Πατέρα, καὶ εἰς ἕνα Κύριον Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, καὶ εἰς ἕνα ἁγίον Πνεῦμα, ἄγιον, καὶ ἐκείνου ἐκκλησίαν*. And there concludes. In conformity whereunto the Nicene Council, altering some things, and adding others against the Arians, concludeth in the same manner, *Καὶ εἰς τὸ ἅγιον Πνεῦμα*. And the Arian Bishops in the Synod in Antioch not long after: *Πιστεύω καὶ εἰς τὸ ἅγιον Πνεῦμα, εἰς δὲ τὸν προφήτην, πιστεύω καὶ εἰς τὸν ἀναστάσαντα, καὶ ζῶντα αἰώνιως*. From whence it appeareth that the Profession of Faith in the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, was counted essential to the Creed, the rest which followeth was looked upon as a προσθήκη. Quid nunc de Spiritu Sancto dicemus quum credere consequente Symboli parte in Trinitate præcipiunt? Al. Aut. Serm. de Symb.

Secondly, It is necessary to believe in the Holy Ghost, not only for the acknowledgment of the eminency of his Person, but also for a desire of

the excellency of his graces, and the abundance of his gifts. What the Apostle wished to the *Corinthians*, ought to be the earnest petition of every Christian, That the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with us all. For if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his; if he have not that which maketh the union, he cannot be united to him: if he acknowledgeth him not to be his Lord, he cannot be his servant; and no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. That which is born of the Spirit is spirit; such is their felicity which have it; that which is born of the flesh is flesh; such is their infelicity which want it. What then is to be desired in comparison of the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ; especially considering the encouragement we receive from Christ; who said, *If ye being evil know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?*

Thirdly, It is necessary to profess Faith in the Holy Ghost, that the will of God may be effectual in us, even our sanctification. For if God hath from the beginning chosen us to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit; if we be elected according to the fore-knowledge of God the Father through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, if the office of the Spirit doth consist in this, and he be therefore called Holy, because he is to sanctifie us, how should we follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord? how should we endeavour to cleanse our selves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God? The temple of God is holy, which temple we are, if the Spirit of God dwelleth in us; for the inhabitation of God is a consecration; and that place must be a Temple where his Honour dwelleth. Now if we know that our body is the temple of the Holy Ghost within us which we have of God, if we know that we are not our own, for that we are bought with a price; we must also know that we ought therefore to glorifie God in our body, and in our spirit, which are God's: thus it is necessary to believe in the Spirit of Sanctification, that our hearts may be established unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his Saints.

Fourthly, It is necessary to believe in the Holy Ghost, that in all our weaknesses we may be strengthened, in all our infirmities we may be supported, in all our discouragements we may be comforted, in the midst of miseries we may be filled with peace and inward joy. For the Kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. We read of the Disciples at first, that they were filled with joy and with the Holy Ghost; and those which afterwards became followers of them and of the Lord, received the word in much affliction, but with joy of the Holy Ghost. These are the rivers of living water flowing out of his belly that believeth; this is the oyl of gladness wherewith the Son of God was anointed above his fellows, but yet with the same oyl his fellows are anointed also: for we have an unction from the Holy One, and the anointing which we receive of him abideth in us.

Lastly, The belief of the Holy Ghost is necessary for the continuation of a successive Ministry, and a Christian submission to the acts of their function, unto the end of the world. For as God the Father sent the Son, and the Spirit of the Lord was upon him, because he had anointed him to preach the Gospel, so the Son sent the Apostles, saying, *As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you; and when he had said this he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive the Holy Ghost: and as the Son sent the Apostles, so did they send others by the virtue of the same Spirit, as S. Paul sent Timothy and Titus, and gave them power to send others, saying to Timothy, Lay hands suddenly on no man, and to Titus, For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that*

that are wanting, and ordain Elders in every City, as I had appointed thee. Thus by virtue of an Apostolical Ordination there is for ever to be continued a Ministerial succession. Those which are thus separated by Ordination to the work of the Lord, are to feed the flock of God which is among them, taking the oversight thereof; and those which are committed to their care, are to remember and obey them that have the rule over them, and submit themselves, for that they watch for their souls as they that must give account. 1 Pet. 5. 2. Heb. 13. 7, 17.

Having thus at large asserted the verity contained in this Article, and declared the necessity of believing it, we may easily give a brief exposition, by which every Christian may know what he ought to profess, and how he is to be understood, when he saith, *I believe in the Holy Ghost*. For thereby he is conceived to declare thus much, I freely and resolvedly assent unto this as unto a certain and infallible truth, that beside all other whatsoever, to whom the name of Spirit is or may be given, there is one particular and peculiar Spirit, who is truly and properly a person, of a true, real and personal subsistence, not a created but uncreated Person, and so the true and one eternal God; that though he be that God, yet is he not the Father nor the Son, but the Spirit of the Father and the Son, the third Person in the blessed Trinity, proceeding from the Father and the Son: I believe this infinite and eternal Spirit to be not only of perfect and indefectible holiness in himself, but also to be the immediate cause of all holiness in us, revealing the pure and undefiled will of God, inspiring the blessed Apostles, and enabling them to lay the foundation, and by a perpetual succession to continue the edification of the Church, illuminating the understandings of particular persons, rectifying their wills and affections, renovating their natures, uniting their persons unto Christ, assuring them of the adoption of sons, leading them in their actions, directing them in their devotions, by all ways and means purifying and sanctifying their souls and bodies, to a full and eternal acceptance in the sight of God. This is the eternal Spirit of God: In this manner is that Spirit Holy; and thus *I believe in the Holy Ghost*.

ARTICLE

ARTICLE IX.

The Holy Catholick Church, the Communion of Saints.

** Although generally the Article of the Holy Church did immediately follow the Article of the Holy Ghost, as Tertullian well observeth, Cum sub tribus &*

IN this ninth Article we meet with some variety of position, and with much addition, for whereas it is here the ninth, in some Creeds we find it the * last, and whereas it consisteth of two distinct parts, the latter is wholly added, and the former partly augmented; the most Ancient professing no more than to believe *† the Holy Church*, and the Greeks having added by way of explication or determination, the word *Catholick*, it was at last received into the Latin Creed.

restatio fidei & sponso salutis pignorentur, necessario adjicitur Ecclesiæ mentio, quoniam ubi tres, id est, Pater & Filius & Spiritus Sanctus ibi Ecclesia quæ trium corpus est, *De Baptis. c. 6. and S. Aug. in Enchir. c. 56.* Spiritus S. si creatura non Creator esset, profectò creatura rationalis esset. Ipse enim esset summa creatura; & ideo in Regulâ fidei non poneretur ante Ecclesiam, quia & ipsa ad Ecclesiam pertineret. *And the Author of this first Book de Symb. ad Catech.* Sequitur post S. Trinitatis commendationem S. Ecclesia, *and S. Hier. cited in the next note.* Yet notwithstanding this order was not always observed, but sometimes this Article was reserved to the end of the Creed. As first appeareth in that remarkable place of S. Cyprian. Quod si aliquis illud opponit ut dicat eandem Novatianum legem tenere quam Catholica Ecclesia teneat, eodem Symbolo quo & nos baptizare, eundem nolle Deum Patrem, eundem Filium Christum, eundem Spiritum S. ac propter hoc usurpare eum potestatem baptizandi posse, quod videatur in Interrogatione baptismi à nobis non discrepare; sciat quisquis & hoc opponendum putat, primum non esse unam nobis & Schismaticis Symboli legem, neque eandem interrogationem. Nam cum dicunt, *Credis remissionem Peccatorum & vitam æternam per sanctam Ecclesiam?* mentiuntur in interrogatione, cum non habeant Ecclesiam. Tunc deinde voce sua ipsi confitentur remissionem peccatorum non dari nisi per Sanctam Ecclesiam, *Ep. ad Magn. Thus Arius and Euzoius, in the words hereafter cited, place the Church in the conclusion of their Creed. And the Author of the second Book de Sym. ad Catech. placeth the Remission of sins after the Holy Ghost.* Noli injuriam facere ei qui te fecit, ut consequaris ab illo quod in isto S. Symbolo sequitur, *Remissionem omnium peccatorum:* and after he hath spoken of the Resurrection and life everlasting, proceedeth thus to speak of the Church, Sancta Ecclesia, in qua omnis Sacramenti terminatur autoritas, &c. *The Author of the third, Ideo Sacramenti hujus conclusio per Eccl. terminatur quia ipsa est mater fecunda. And the Author of the fourth, Per sanctam Ecclesiam.* Propterea hujus conclusio Sacramenti per S. Ecclesiam terminatur, quoniam si quis absq; ea inventus fuerit, alienus erit à numero filiorum; nec habebit Deum Patrem qui Ecclesiam noluerit habere matrem. *Thus therefore they disposed the last part of the Creed, Credo in Spiritum S. peccatorum remissionem, carnis resurrectionem & vitam æternam per S. Ecclesiam.* And the design of this transposition was to signify that remission of sins and resurrection to eternal life, are to be obtained in and by the Church. As the Creed in the first Homily under the name of S. Chrysostom, Credo in Sp. S. Ille Spiritus perducit ad S. Ecclesiam, ipsa est quæ dimittit peccata, promittit carnis resurrectionem, promittit vitam æternam. *† Tertull.* Quæ est mater nostra, in quam repromissimus Sanctam Ecclesiam, *adv. Marcion, l. 5 c. 4.* So Rufinus, Sanctam Ecclesiam. For Catholicam is added by Pamelius. So S. Hier. contra Lucif. Præterea cum solenne sit in lavacro post Trinitatis Confessionem interrogare, Credis Sanctam Ecclesiam? Credis remissionem peccatorum? Quam Ecclesiam credidisse cum dices? Ariarum? sed non habent: nostram? sed extra hanc baptizatus non potuit eam credere quam nescivir; and S. Aug. De Fide & Symb. Credimus & Sanctam Ecclesiam, with this declaration, uriq; Catholicam. So Maximus Taurin. Chrysol. and Venancius Fortunatus. The Author of the first Book de Symb. ad Catech. Sequitur post Sanctæ Trinitatis commendationem S. Ecclesia. The Author of the other three who placeth this Article last of all, Sancta Ecclesia, in qua omnis hujus sacramenti terminatur autoritas, l. 2. and l. 4. expressly Per Sanctam Ecclesiam, as the words of the Creed with the explication before mentioned. As also the Interrogation of the Novatians ending with per Sanctam Ecclesiam, cited before out of S. Cyprian. Solikewise of those two Homilies on the Creed which are falsely attributed to S. Chrysost. the first hath Sanctam Ecclesiam after the Belief in the Holy Ghost, the second concludeth the Creed with per Sanctam Ecclesiam. In carnis resurrectione fides, in vita æterna spes, in Sancta Ecclesia charitas. Thus the ancient Saxon Creed set forth by Frocherus, Tha halgan gelahinge, i. e. the Holy Church, the Greek Creed in Saxon Letters in Sir Robert Cotton's Library, and the old Latin Creed in the Oxford Library. Deus qui in coelis habitat, & conludit ex nihilo ea quæ sunt, & multiplicavit propter Sanctam Ecclesiam suam, irascitur tibi, *Herm. l. 1. Visiōe 1.* Virtute sua potenti condidit Sanctam Ecclesiam suam, *ib.* Rogabam Dominum ut Revelationes ejus quas mihi ostendit per Sanctam Ecclesiam suam confirmaret, *Visi. 4.* But though it were not in the Roman or Occidental Creeds, yet it was anciently in the Oriental, particularly in that of Jerusalem, and that of Alexandria. In the Creed at Jerusalem it was certainly very ancient, for it is expounded by S. Cyril, Archbishop of that place, *ἐκ μὲν ἀρχαῖν καθολικῶν Ἐκκλησιῶν.* And in the Alexandrian it was as ancient, for Alexander Archbishop of that place inserts it in his Confession, in his Epistle at Alexandrum, *μὴν δὲ μὲν καθολικῶν τ' Ἀποστολικῶν Ἐκκλησιῶν.* Theodoret. Hist. l. 2. c. 4. And Arius and Euzoius in their Confession of Faith given into Constantine, thus conclude *ἐκ καθολικῶν Ἐκκλησιῶν τὸ Θεὸν, τὴν δὲ πρῶτον εἰς πρῶτον, Σοφίας* Hist. Eccl. l. 1. c. 26. The same is also expressed in both the Creeds, the lesser and the greater, delivered by Epiphanius in Ancorato; and words are repeated in the next Observation.

To begin then with the first part of the Article, I shall endeavour so to expound it, as to shew what is the meaning of the *Church*, which Christ hath propounded to us, how that Church is *holy*, as the Apostle hath assured us, how that holy Church is *Catholick*, as the Fathers have taught us. For when I say

say, *I believe in the Holy Catholick Church*, I mean that * there is a Church which is holy, and which is Catholick, and I understand that Church alone which is both Catholick and holy : and being this holiness and Catholickism are but affections of this Church which I believe, I must first declare what is the nature and notion of the Church, how I am assured of the existence of that Church, and then how it is the subject of those two affections.

strated make any difference. For although some of the Latin and Greek Fathers press the force of that Proposition as it before observed, though Rufinus urge it far in this particular. Ut autem una eademque in Trinitate divinitas doceatur, sicut dictum est in Deo Patre credi adjecta propositione, ita & in Christo Filio ejus, ita & in Spiritu S. memoratur. Sed ut manifestius fiat quod dicimus, ex consequentibus approbabitur. Sequitur namq; post hunc sermonem, Sanctam Ecclesiam, remissionem peccatorum, hujus carnis resurrectionem. Non dixit, in sanctam Ecclesiam, nec in remissionem peccatorum, nec in carnis resurrectionem, si enim addidisset in propositionem, una eademq; vis fuisset cum superioribus. Ne autem (f. Nunc autem) in illis quidem vocabulis, ubi divinitate fides ordinatur, in Deo Patre dicitur, & Jesu Christo Filio ejus, & in Spiritu S. in ceteris vero ubi non de divinitate sed de creaturis ac mysteriis sermo est, in propositione non additur ut dicatur in sanctam Ecclesiam, sed Sanctam Ecclesiam credendam esse, non ut in Deum sed ut Ecclesiam Deo congregatam; & remissionem peccatorum credendam esse, non in remissionem peccatorum, & resurrectionem carnis, non in resurrectionem carnis. Hac itaque propositionis syllaba creator à creaturis seceratur & divina separatur ab humanis, Ruff. in Symb. Though I say, this expression be thus pressed; yet we are sure that the Fathers did use it, and in for the rest of the Creed as well as for the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. We have already produced the Authorities of S. Cyril, Arius and Euzoius, p. 18, 19. and that of Epiphanius in Ancorato. Thus also the Latins, and S. Cyprian, In æternam patriam se credent, qui in vitam æternam credere noluerunt, Ad Demetrianum. So Interpres Irenæi, Quotquot autem timent Deum, & credunt in adventum Filii ejus, &c. So Chrysost. In Sanctam Ecclesiam. Quia Ecclesia in Christo, & in Ecclesia Christus est, qui ergo Ecclesiam facit, in Ecclesiam se confessus est credidisse, Serm. 52. And in the ancient edition of S. Jerome in the place before cited it was read, Credis in Sanctam Ecclesiam, and the word in was left out by Victorius.

For the understanding of the true notion of the Church, first we must observe that the nominal definition or derivation of the word is not sufficient to describe the nature of it. If we look upon the old English word now in use, *∴ Church or Kirk*, it is derived from the Greek, and first signified the House of the Lord, that is, of Christ, and from thence was taken to signify the People of God, meeting in the House of God. The Greek word used by the Apostles to express the Church, signifieth * a calling forth, if we look upon the origination; a congregation of men, or a company assembled, if we consider the use of it. But neither of these doth fully express the nature of the Church, what it is in it self, and as it is propounded in our Belief.

sed by the Apostle in Ἐκκλησία from ἐκκαλεῖν evocare. From ἐκκέκληται, ἐκκλησαν; from ἐκκλησις, ἐκκλησία, of the same notation with the Hebrew קהל Ecclesia quippe ex vocatione appellata est, S. Aug. Exp. ad Rom. And though they ordinarily take it primarily to signify convocatio, as S. Aug. Inter congregationem, unde synagoga, & convocationem, unde Ecclesia nomen habet, distat aliquid, Enar. in Psal. 177. yet the Origination speaks only of evocation, without any intimation of congregation or meeting together, as there is in (συγκλη)σις. From whence arose that definition of Methodius, "Οτι Ἐκκλησία πρὸς τὸ ἐκκεκλημέναι τὰς ἡδονὰς λέγεσθαι φησιν, Photius Biblioth. Whereas ἐκκαλεῖν is here no more than καλεῖν, ἐκκλησις no more than κλήσις; as κλητὸν and ἐκκλητὸν with the Atticks were the same; From whence it came to pass that the same preposition hath been twice added in the composition of the same word; from ἐκκαλεῖν ἐκκλησία, from thence ἐκκλησιάζειν, and because the preposition had no signification in the use of that word, from thence ἐκκεκλησιάζειν, to convocate, or call together. But yet ἐκκλησία is not the same with ἐκκλησις, not the evocation or the action of calling, but the κλητοὶ or the company called, and that (according to the use) gathered together; from whence ἐκκλησιάζειν is to gather together, or to be gathered. Hence S. Cyril, Ἐκκλησία ἢ καλεῖται φερωνύμως, διὰ τὸ πάντας ἐκκαλεῖσθαι καὶ ἐμὲ (Catech. 18. So Ammonius, Ἐκκλησίαν ἔλεγον οἱ Ἀδελφαὶ τὸ συνάδον τὸ καὶ τὸ πόλιν. To this purpose do the LXX use ἐκκλησιάζειν actively, to convocate or call together an Assembly, as ἐκκλησιάζειν λαόν, and ἐκκλησιάζειν (Catech. 18. and ἐκκλησιάζειν passively, as ἐκκλησιάζειν πᾶσι τὴν (Catech. 18. which the Attick Writers would have expressed by ἐκκλησιάζειν as Aristophanes, Ἐδοξέ μοι τῷ πρώτῳ ὕπνον ἐν τῷ πόλει Ἐκκλησιάζειν πρὸς τὴν συγκοινωνίαν, Vesps. Where though the Scholiast hath rendered it Ἐκκλησιάζειν, εἰς ἐκκλησίαν (Catech. 18. whereby the Lexicographers have been deceived, yet the word is even there taken as a neuter, in the passive sense, as generally the Atticks use it. Howsoever from the notation of the word we cannot conclude that it signifies a number of men called together into one assembly out of the mass or generality of mankind; first because the preposition ἐκ hath no such force in the use of the word; secondly, because the collection or coming together is not specified in the origination.

Our second observation is, that the Church hath been taken for the whole complex of Men and Angels worshiping the same God; and again, the Angels being not considered, it hath been taken as comprehending all the sons of men believing in God ever since the foundation of the World. But being Christ took not upon him the nature of Angels, and consequently did not properly purchase them with his blood, or call them by his Word; being they

* Credo sanctam Ecclesiam, I believe there is an holy Church; or Credo in sanctam Ecclesiam, is the same: nor does the particle in added or sub-

∴ Κῆρυξ the Lord, and that properly Christ; from whence Κυριακὸς belonging to the Lord Christ, ὁ Κυριακὸς, from thence Κυριακ, Kirk, and Church.

* The word u-

† Translatus in Paradisum jam tunc de mundo in Ecclesia. Tertull. l. 2. adv. Marcion.

are

are not in the Scriptures mentioned as parts or members of the Church, nor can be imagined to be built upon the Prophets or Apostles; being we are at this time to speak of the proper notion of the *Church*, therefore I shall not look upon it as comprehending any more than the sons of men. Again, being though Christ was the Lamb slain before the foundation of the World, and whosoever from the beginning pleased God were saved by his blood; yet because there was a vast difference between the several dispensations of the Law and Gospel, because our Saviour spake expressly of building himself a Church when the Jewish Synagogue was about to fail, because Catholicism, which is here attributed unto the Church, must be understood in op-

* *Plac S. Ignatius speaking of Christ, Αὐτὸς ὁ Θεὸς Πατρὸς δι' ἡμῶν παρὰ Χρὸναι Ἀβρα-*

* Fathers were generally wont to distinguish between the Synagogue and the Church, therefore I think it necessary to restrain this notion to Christianity.

αὐτὸς, καὶ Ἰσραὴλ, καὶ Ἰακώβ, καὶ οἱ Περεπῆται, οἱ Ἀπόστολοι, καὶ ἡ ἐκκλησία, Ep. ad Philad. Where ἡ ἐκκλησία is plainly taken for the multitude of Christians who were converted to the Faith by the Apostles, and those who were afterwards joyned to them in the profession of the same Faith. Sacrificia in populo, sacrificia & in Ecclesia, Iren. l. 4. c. 34. Disseminaverunt sermonem de Christo Patriarchæ & Prophetæ, demessa est autem Ecclesia, hoc est, fructum percipit, Id. l. 4. c. 34. Quid Judaicus populus circa beneficia divina perfidus & ingratus? nonne quod à Deo primum recessit impatientiæ crimen fuit. S. Impatientia etiam in Ecclesia hæreticos facit, S. Cyr. de Bono Parent. Quis non agnoscat Christum reliquisse matrem Synagogam Judæorum veteri Testamento carnaliter adhaerentem, & adhaesisse uxori suæ, S. Ecclesiae, S. Aug. contra Faust. l. 12. c. 8. Mater Sponsi Domini nostri Jesu Christi Synagoga est; proinde nurus ejus Ecclesia..... Idem. Enar. in Psal. 44.

Thirdly, therefore I observe that the only way to attain unto the knowledge of the true notion of the *Church*, is to search into the New Testament, and from the places there which mention it, to conclude what is the nature of it. To which purpose it will be necessary to take notice that our Saviour first spake of it, mentioneth it as that which † then was not, but afterwards was to be; as when he spake unto the great Apostle, *Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church*; but when he ascended into heaven, and the Holy Ghost came down, when Peter had converted *three thousand souls* which were added to the *hundred and twenty* Disciples, then was there a Church, (and that built upon † Peter, according to our Saviour's promise,) for after that we read, *The Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved.* A Church then our Saviour promised should be built, and by a promise made before his death; after his Ascension, and upon the preaching of S. Peter, we find a Church built or constituted, and that of a nature capable of a daily increase. We cannot then take a better occasion to search into the true notion of the Church of Christ, than by looking into the origination and increase thereof; without which it is ∴ impossible to have a right conception of it.

† In quem cingueret. in Ecclesiam? quærendum Apostoli struxerant, Terr. de Bapt. c. 16.

^a Matt. 16. 18.

^b Acts 2. 41.

^c Acts 1. 15.

† Qualis es convertens atque cōmutans manifestam Domini intentionem personaliter hoc Petro conferentem, Super te, inquit, ædificabo Ecclesiam me-

am, *Et dabo tibi claves, non Ecclesiæ. Sic enim & exitus docet: in ipso Ecclesia exstructa est, id est, per ipsum, ipse clavem inibuit, vides quam. Viri Israelitæ, auribus mandate quæ dico: Jesum Nazarenum virum à Deo vobis designatum, & reliqua Tertull. de Pudicitia, c. 21. So S. Basil. Εὐθὺς ᾧ ἐκ τῶν ἁγίων ταύτης νοῦν Πέτρον... τὸ δὲ τὸ εἶπεως ἑαυτὸν τὴν οἰκοδομίαν τῆς Ἐκκλησίας ἀρχαίον, adv. Eunom. l. 2. S. Peter took upon himself the building of the Church, that is, to build the Church, which he then performed, when he preached the Gospel by which the Church was first gathered. ^d Acts 2. 47. ∴ Tertullian mentioning the Acts of the Apostles, addeth these words, Quam Scripturam qui non recipiunt, nec Spiritus Sancti esse possunt, qui necdum Spiritum possint agnoscere discipulis nullam; sed nec Ecclesiam defendere qui quando & quibus incunabulis institutum est hoc corpus, probare non habent. De Praej. Hæret. c. 22.*

Now what we are infallibly assured of the first actual existence of a Church of Christ is only this. There were twelve Apostles with the Disciples before the descent of the Holy Ghost, and the *number of the names together were an hundred and twenty.* When the Holy Ghost came after a powerful and miraculous manner upon the blessed Apostles, and S. Peter preached unto the Jews, that they should repent and be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins; they

Acts 1. 15.

Acts 2. 38. 42.
47.

they that gladly received his word were baptized, and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. These being thus added to the rest, continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and in prayers: and all these persons so continuing are called the *Church*. What this Church was is easily determined, for it was a certain number of men, of which some were Apostles, some the former Disciples, others were persons which repented, and believed, and were baptized in the name of *Jesus Christ*, and continued hearing the Word preached, receiving the Sacraments administered, joyning in the publick Prayers presented unto God. This was then the *Church*, which was daily increased by the addition of other persons received into it upon the same conditions, making up ^a *the multitude of them that believed*, who were of one heart and one soul, ^b *believers added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women*.

But though the Church was thus begun, and represented unto us as one in the beginning, though that Church which we profess to believe in the Creed be also propounded unto us as one; and so the notion of the Church in the Acts of the Apostles might seem sufficient to express the nature of that Church which we believe; yet because that Church was one by way of [†] origination, and was afterwards divided into many, the actual members of that one becoming the members of several Churches; and that Church which we believe, is otherwise one by way of complexion, receiving the members of all Churches into it; it will be necessary to consider, how at the first those several Churches were constituted, that we may understand how in this one Church they were all united. To which purpose it will be farther fit to examine the several acceptations of this word as it is diversly used by the Holy Ghost in the New Testament; that, if it be possible, nothing may escape our search, but that all things may be weighed, before we collect and conclude the full notion of the *Church* from thence.

First then that word which signifies the *Church* in the Original Greek, is sometimes used in the vulgar sense according as the Native *Greeks* did use the same to express their Conventions, without any relation to the Worship of God or Christ, and therefore is translated by the word *Assembly*, of as great a latitude. Secondly, It is sometimes used in the same notion in which the Greek Translators of the Old Testament made use of it, for the Assembly of the people of God under the Law, and therefore might be most fitly translated the *Congregation*, as it is in the Old Testament. Thirdly, It hath been conceived that even in the Scriptures it is sometimes taken for the place in which the members of the Church did meet to perform their solemn and publick services unto God; and some [†] passages there are which seem to speak no less, but yet are not so certainly to be understood of the place, but that they may as well be spoken of the people congregated in a certain place. Beside these few different acceptations, the *Church* in the Language of the New Testament doth always signify a company of persons professing the Christian Faith, but not always in the same latitude. Sometimes it admitteth of distinction and plurality; sometimes it reduceth all into conjunction and unity. Sometimes the Churches of God are diversified as many; sometimes, as many as they are, they are all comprehended in one.

of the Christians in his time. Sicut Ecclesia dicitur locus, quo Ecclesia congregatur. Nam Ecclesia homines dicitur, Ut exhiberet sibi gloriosam Ecclesiam. Hanc tamen vocari etiam ipsam domum orationum, idem Apostolus testis est, ubi ait, Numquid domus non habetis ad manducandum & bibendum, Ecclesiam Dei contemnitis? Et hoc quotidianus loquendi usus obtinuit, ut, ad Ecclesiam prodire, aut ad Ecclesiam confugere, non dicatur, nisi quod ad locum ipsum parietesque prodierit, vel confugerit, quibus Ecclesiarum congregatio continetur, Quasi. super Levit. l. 3. c. 57. By these words it is certain that in S. Augustin's time they used the word Ecclesia, as we do now the Church, for a place set apart for the Worship of God; and it is also certain that those of the Greek Church did use Ἐκκλησία in the same sense as Eusebius speaking of the flourishing times of the Church, before the persecution under Dioclesian, says the Christians μεθεμῶς ἐν τοῖς πάλαι εὐσεβήμασι ἀνεμῶς ἐν ἐκκλησίαις.

∴ Cum remissis summi Sacerdotes Petrum & Joannem, & reverentia essent ad reliquos coapostolos & Discipulos Domini; id est in Ecclesiam, S. Irenaeus, l. 3. c. 2. ^a Acts 4. 32. ^b Acts 5. 14.

† Haec voces Ecclesiae, ex quibus habuit omnis Ecclesia initium. S. Irenaeus, ibid.

Acts 19. 32, 39, 40.

Acts 8. 32. Heb. 2. 12.

† Acts 11. 26. 1 Cor. 11. 18, 22. From these places, S. Augustine did collect that Ἐκκλησία was taken in the Scriptures for the place of meeting, or the house of God, and came so to be frequently used in the Language

name of * Church are understood all Christians whatsoever belonging to any of the Churches dispersed through the distant and divided parts of the World. For the single persons professing Faith in Christ are members of the particular Churches in which they live, and all those particular Churches are members of the General and Universal Church which is one by unity of aggregation; and this is the Church in the Creed which we believe, and which is in other Creeds expressly termed † *One, I believe in one Holy Catholic Church.*

Christians, τοῦ τοῦ μεγάλου ἐκκλησίας, apud Orig. l. 5. † So the Creeds of Epiphanius in Ancorato, πρὸς τοὺς ἑξ μίαν ἁγίαν καθολικὴν καὶ ἀποστολικὴν Ἐκκλησίαν. So the Jerusalem Creed in S. Cyril. Thus the Nicene with the Additions of the Council of Constantinople, μίαν ἁγίαν καθολικὴν καὶ ἀποστολικὴν Ἐκκλησίαν. Thus also the Alexandrian, as appeareth by those already quoted of Alexander, Arius and Euzoius.

It will therefore be farther necessary for the understanding of the nature of the Church which is thus one, to consider in what that Unity doth consist. And being it is an aggregation not only of many persons, but also of many congregations, the unity thereof must consist in some agreement of them all, and adhesion to something which is one. If then we reflect upon the first Church again, which we found constituted in the Acts, and to which all other since have been in a manner added and conjoined, we may collect from their union and agreement how all other Churches are united and agree. Now they were described to be believing and baptized persons, converted to the Faith by S. Peter, continuing stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and prayers. These then were all built upon the same Rock, all professed the same Faith, all received the same Sacraments, all performed the same Devotions, and thereby were all reputed members of the same Church. To this Church were added daily such as should be saved, who became members of the same Church by being built upon the same foundation, by adhering to the same doctrine, by receiving the same Sacraments, by performing the same Devotions.

From whence it appeareth that the first unity of the Church considered in it self, beside that of the head, which is one Christ, and the life communicated from that head, which is one Spirit, relieth upon the original of it, which is one; even as an house built upon one foundation, though consisting of many rooms, and every room of many stones, is not yet many, but one house. Now there is but one foundation upon which the Church is built, and that is Christ: for other foundation can no man lay, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. And though the Apostles and the Prophets be also termed the foundation, yet even then the unity is preserved, because as they are stones in the foundation, so are they united by one Corner-stone; whereby it comes to pass that such persons as are of the Church, being fellow-citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God, are built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone, in whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto a holy Temple in the Lord. This stone was laid in Zion for a foundation, a tried stone, a precious corner-stone, a sure foundation; there was the first Church built, and whosoever have been, or ever shall be converted to the true Christian Faith, are and shall be added to that Church, and laid upon the same foundation, which is the Unity of * Origination. Our Saviour gave the same Power to all the Apostles, which was to found the Church; but he gave that Power to Peter, to shew the unity of the same Church.

* Matt. 16. 18.
1 Cor. 12. 28.
15. 9. Gal. 1. 13.
Ephes. 1. 22. 3.
10. 21. 5. 23.
25. 27. 29. 32.
Phil. 3. 6. Col.
1. 18. 24. Heb.
12. 23. Of this
as of one Church
Celsus calls the

Acts 2. 41, 42.
44. 47.

1 Cor. 3. 11.

Ephes. 2. 19, 20.
21.

Lk. 28. 16.

* Tertullian
speaking of the
Apostles, Ec-
clesias apud
unamquamque
civitatem con-
diderunt, a qui-

bus traducem fidei & seipsam doctrinam extera exinde Ecclesie mutuata sunt, & quotidie mutantur ut Ecclesie fiant: ac per hoc & ipse Apostolica, ut soboles Apostolicarum Ecclesiarum. Omne genus ad Originem suam censetur necesse est. Itaque tot & tantæ Ecclesie una est illa ab Apostolis prima ex qua omnes. Sic omnes prima & Apostolica, dum una omnes probant unitatem: dum est illis communicatio pacis, & appellatio fraternitatis, & consecratio hospitali-

ratis: quæ jera non alia ratio regit quam ejusdem Sacramenti una traditio. *De Prescript. Hæret. c. 20. This is the Unitas originalis which S. Cyprian so much insists upon, Ecclesia una est quæ in multitudinem laicius incremento fecunditatis extenditur; quomodo Solis multi radii, sed lumen unum; & rami arboris multi, sed robur unum tenaci radice fundatum. Et cum de fonte uno rivi plurimi defluunt, numerositas licet diffusa videatur exundantis copię largitate, unitas tamen servatur in origine, &c. S. Cyp. de unitate Eccl. Loquitur Dominus ad Petrum, Ego tibi dico, inquit, quia tu es Petrus, & super istam petram ædificabo Ecclesiam meam, &c. Et idem post resurrectionem suam dicit, Pasce oves meas. Et quamvis Apostolis omnibus post resurrectionem suam parem potestatem tribuat, & dicat, Sic ut misit me Pater, & ego mitto vos, &c. tamen ut unitatem manifestaret, unitatis ejusdem originem ab uno incipientem sua auctoritate disposuit. Hec erant unique & ceteri Apostoli, quod fuit Petrus, pari consortio præditi, & honoris & potestatis, sed exordium ab unitate proficiscitur, ut Ecclesia una monstretur, Ibid. 'Εὐς ὁ θεὸς ὁ Θεός, καὶ ὁ υἱὸς ὁ υἱός, διὰ τοῦτο καὶ τὸ ἄρτος τῆς πίστεως καὶ τὸ μῆλον τῆς πίστεως, ὡς ἀρχὴς τῆς πίστεως. Clem. Alex. Stromat. l. 7. This is very much to be observed, because that place of S. Cyprian is produced by the Romanists to prove the necessity of one Head of the Church upon earth, and to show that the Bishop of Rome is that one Head by virtue of his Succession to S. Peter, whereas S. Cyprian speaks nothing of any such one Head, nor of any such Succession, but only of the Origination of the Church, which was so disposed by Christ, that the Unity might be expressed. For whereas all the rest of the Apostles had equal power and honour with S. Peter, yet Christ did particularly give that power to S. Peter, to show the Unity of the Church must be intended to build upon the foundation of the Apostles.*

Secondly, The Church is therefore one, though the members be many, because they all agree in one Faith. There is *one Lord, and one Faith*, and that Faith *once delivered to the Saints*, which whosoever shall receive, embrace, and profess, must necessarily be accounted one in reference to that profession. For if a company of Believers become a Church by believing, they must also become one Church by believing one Truth. If they be one in respect of the foundation, which is ultimately one, if we look upon *Christ*, which is mediately one, if we look upon the Apostles united in one Corner-stone; if those which believe be therefore said to be built upon the foundation of the Apostles, because they believe the Doctrine which the Apostles preached, and the Apostles be therefore said to be of the same foundation, and united to the Corner-stone, because they all taught the same Doctrine which they received from *Christ*, then they which believe the same Doctrine delivered by *Christ* to all the Apostles, delivered by all the Apostles to Believers, being all Professours of the same Faith, must be Members of the same Church. And this is the *Unity of Faith*.

† Of this dub
Irenæus speaks,
delivering the
same or brief

Abstrait of the material Object of Faith, Τὸ κέντρον τῆς παρακλήσεως, καὶ ταύτην τὴν πίστιν ἡ Ἐκκλησία, καὶ ὅς ἐστιν ἡ αὐτὴ πίστις διὰ τὴν ἀποστολὴν ὁποῦντος οὐκ ἔστιν, ὡς ἔστιν ὁ ἵκον ὁ ἵκον, καὶ ὁ ὅμοιος τῆς αὐτῆς πίστεως, ὡς μίαν ψυχὴν καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν ἔχοντες καρδίαν, καὶ συνειδήσεις ταῦτα κερύοντες καὶ διδάσκοντες καὶ παρακαλοῦντες ὡς ἐν σώμα καὶ ἐν κλήρῳ. Advers. Hæret. l. 1. Καὶ τὴν ἑνότητα πρὸς τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, κατὰ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, κατὰ τὴν ἀρχὴν, κατὰ τὴν ἐξουσίαν, μόνον ἔστιν οὐκ ἄλλο τὴν ἀρχὴν καὶ καθολικὴν Ἐκκλησίαν ἢ ἐκκλησία πιστῶν καὶ τῆς καὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας, καὶ ὅς ἐστιν ἡ αὐτὴ πίστις διὰ τὴν ἀποστολὴν ὁποῦντος οὐκ ἔστιν, ὡς ἔστιν ὁ ἵκον ὁ ἵκον, καὶ ὁ ὅμοιος τῆς αὐτῆς πίστεως, ὡς μίαν ψυχὴν καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν ἔχοντες καρδίαν, καὶ συνειδήσεις ταῦτα κερύοντες καὶ διδάσκοντες καὶ παρακαλοῦντες ὡς ἐν σώμα καὶ ἐν κλήρῳ. Clem. Alex. Stromat. l. 7. This Unity of Faith followeth the Unity of Origination, because the true Faith is the true Foundation. Si qua est Ecclesia quæ fidem respuat, nec Apostolicæ prædicationis fundamenta possideat, deferenda est, Petra una Christus est, S. Amb. in Luc. lib. 2. cap. 5. 'Ἡ γὰρ σωτηρία τὴν Ἐκκλησίαν, ὅς ἐστιν ὁ Ποιῶν, ἀρχὴ τῆς πίστεως ὅτιν. Clem. Alex. Stromat. l. 2. S. Jerome in these words of the Psalm 23. 11. Hæc est generatio querentium Dominum, habet this Observation. Superius singulariter dixit, Hic accipiet benedictionem; modo pluraliter, quia Ecclesia ex pluribus personis congregatur, & tamen una dicitur propter unitatem fidei.

Thirdly, Many persons and Churches, howsoever distinguished by time or place, are considered as one Church, because they acknowledge and receive the same Sacraments, the signs and badges of the people of God. When the Apostles were sent to found and build the Church, they received this Commission, *Go and teach all Nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*. Now as there is but *one Lord, and one Faith*, so also is there but *one Baptism*; and consequently they which are admitted to it, in receiving it are one. Again, At the institution of the Lord's Supper *Christ* commanded, saying, *Eat ye all of this, drink ye all of this*, and all by communicating of one, become as to that communication one. For *we being many are one bread, and one body; for we are all partakers of that one bread*. As therefore the Israelites were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea, and did all eat the same spiritual meat, and did all drink the same spiritual drink, and thereby appeared to be the people of God; so all believing persons, and

and all Churches congregated in the name of Christ, washed in the same laver of Regeneration, eating of the same bread, and drinking of the same cup, are united in the same cognizance, and so known to be the same Church. And this is the Unity of the Sacraments.

Fourthly, Whosoever belongeth to any Church is some way called, and all which are so, are called in one hope of their calling: the same reward of eternal life is promised unto every person, and we all through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. They therefore which depend upon the same God, and worship him all for the same end, the hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began, having all the same expectation, may well be reputed the same Church. And this is the Unity of Hope.

Fifthly, They which are all of one mind, whatsoever the number of their persons be, they are in reference to that mind but one; as all the members howsoever different, yet being animated by one soul, become one body. Charity is of a fastning and uniting nature, nor can we call those many, who endeavour to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. By this, said our Saviour, shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another. And this is the † Unity of Charity.

Lastly, All the Churches of God are united into one by the unity of Discipline and Government, by vertue whereof the same Christ ruleth in them all. For they have all the same pastoral guides appointed, authorised, sanctified and set apart by the appointment of God, by the direction of the Spirit, to direct and lead the people of God in the same way of eternal salvation: as therefore there is * no Church where there is no order, no Ministry; so where the same Order and Ministry is, there is the same Church. And this is the ∴ Unity of Regiment and Discipline.

habet Sacerdotes, S. Hier. adv. Lucifer. Πάντες ἀνθρώποις πένδωσαν τὸν Διακόνον ὡς Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν, καὶ τὸν Ἐπίσκοπον ὡς Πατέρα, καὶ ὁ Πρεσβύτερος ὡς Συνέδριον Θεοῦ καὶ ὡς Συνέδριον Ἀποστόλων. χεῖρες τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἐκλήθηται, Ignat. ad Trall. Τὸ γὰρ τὸ Ἐκκλησίας ὄνομα τὴν αὐτὴν αἰς χεῖρὸν πρεσβυτέρων ὑφαίνε, πληθύνει, ἐκτείνεται τε καὶ λαὸς ποικίλος καὶ διδασκαλὸς καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν χεῖρα κατεζωγυμῆς, S. Cyril ad cap. 45. ubi interpres ὑφαίνει, male transtulit declarat, quod est συνάγει; cum reddere oportuerit, connectit, aut contextit. ∴ Episcopatus unus est, cujus à singulis in solidum pars tenetur; Ecclesia una est quæ in multitudinem latius incremento fecunditatis extenditur, S. Cyp. ibidem. So he joyns these two together, Cum sit a Christo una Ecclesia per totum mundum in multa membra divisa, item Episcopatus unus Episcoporum multorum concordia numerofitate diffusus. Ep. ad Antonianum.

By these means and ** for these reasons, millions of persons, and multitudes of Congregations are united into one body, and become one Church. And thus under the name of Church expressed in this Article, I understand a body, or collection of humane persons professing faith in Christ, gathered together in several places of the World for the worship of the same God, and united into the same corporation by the means aforesaid. And this I conceive sufficient to declare the true notion of the Church as such, which is here the object of our Faith; it remaineth therefore that we next consider the existence of the Church; which is acknowledged in the act of Faith applied to this object. For when I profess and say, I believe a Church, it is not only an acknowledgment of a Church which hath been, or of a Church which shall be, but also of that which is. When I say, I believe in Christ dead, I acknowledge that death which once was, and now is not: for Christ once died, but now is not dead. When I say, I believe the resurrection of the body, I acknowledge that which never yet was, and is not now, but shall hereafter be. Thus the act of Faith is applicated to the object according to the nature of it; to what is already past, as past; to what is to come, as still to come; to that which is present, as it is still present. Now that which was then past, when the Creed was made, must necessarily be always past, and so believed for ever; that

which

Ephes. 4. 4.

Gal. 5. 5.

Ephes. 4. 3.

John 13. 35.

† Unus Deus enim & Christus unus, Ecclesia ejus una, fides una & plebs in solidam corporis unitatem concordia glutine copulata, S. Cyp. de Unitate Eccles.

* Ecclesia non est quæ non

** These are all expressed by Tertullian.

Una nobis & illis fides, unus Deus, idem Christus, eadem spes, eadem lavacri sacramenta; semel dixerim, una Ecclesia sumus, de Virg. veland. cap. 2. Corpus sumus de conscientia religionis, & discipline unitate, & spei fovere, Apolog. cap. 35.

which shall never come to pass until the end of the World, when this publick profession of Faith shall cease, that must for ever be believed as still to come. But that which was when the Creed began, and was to continue till that Creed shall end, is proposed to our belief in every Age as being; and thus ever since the first Church was constituted, the Church it self, as being, was the object of the Faith of the Church believing.

The existence therefore of the Church of *Christ* (as that Church before is understood by us,) is the continuation of it in an actual being, from the first collection in the Apostles times unto the consummation of all things. And therefore to make good this explication of the Article, it will be necessary to prove that the Church which our Saviour founded and the Apostles gathered was to receive a constant and perpetual accession, and by a successive augmentation be uninterruptedly continued in an actual existence of believing Persons and Congregations in all Ages unto the end of the World.

Now this indeed is a proper object of Faith, because it is grounded only upon the promise of God; there can be no other assurance of the perpetuity of this Church, but what we have from him that built it. The Church is not of such a nature as would necessarily, once begun, preserve it self for ever. Many thousand persons have fallen totally and finally from the Faith professed, and so apostatized from the Church. Many particular Churches have been wholly lost, many Candlesticks have been removed; neither is there any particular Church which hath any power to continue it self more or longer than others; and consequently, if all particulars be defectible, the Universal Church must also be subject of it self unto the same defectibility.

But though the providence of God doth suffer many particular Churches to cease, yet the promise of the same God will never permit that all of them at once shall perish. When *Christ* spake first particularly to *S. Peter*, he sealed his speech with a powerful promise of perpetuity, saying, *Thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.* When he spake generally to all the rest of the Apostles to the same purpose, *Go teach all Nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost;* he added a promise to the same effect, *and loe I am with you always, even to the end of the world.* The first of these promises assureth us of the continuance of the Church, because it is built upon a Rock; for our Saviour had expressed this before, *Whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock, and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew and beat upon that house, and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock.* The Church of *Christ* is the house of *Christ*, for he hath builded the house, and is as a Son over his own house, whose house are we; and as a wise man, he hath built his house upon a rock, and what is so built shall not fall. The latter of these promises giveth not only an assurance of the continuance of the Church, but also the cause of that continuance, which is the presence of *Christ*. *Where two or three are gathered together in the name of Christ,* there he is in the midst of them, and thereby they become a Church, for they are as a builded house, and the Son within that house. Wherefore being *Christ* doth promise his presence unto the Church, even unto the end of the World, he doth thereby assure us of the existence of the Church, until that time, of which his presence is the cause. Indeed, this is *the City of the Lord of hosts, the City of our God, God will establish it for ever,* as the great Prophet of the Church hath said.

† Non deserit Ecclesiam suam Divina protectio, dicente Domino, Ecce ego vobiscum omnibus diebus, &c. *Leo Epist. 31. S. August. upon these words of the Psal. 101. Exiguitatem dierum meorum annuntia*

mihī, maketh the Church to speak these words. Quid est quod nescio qui recedentes à me murmurant contra me? Quid est quod perdiri me perisse contendunt? Certe enim hoc dicunt, Quia fui & non sum. Annuncia mihī exiguitatem dierum meorum.

meorum. Non à te quero illos dies æternos; illi sine fine sunt, ubi ero, non ipsos quero; sed perales quero, temporales dies mihi annuncia. *Exiguitatem dierum meorum non æternitatem dierum meorum annuncia mihi.* Quamdiu ero in isto sæculo, annuncia mihi, propter illos qui dicunt, Fuir & jam non est: propter illos qui dicunt, Impleta sunt scripturæ, crediderant omnes gentes, sed apostatavit & periit Ecclesia de omnibus gentibus: Quid est hoc, *Exiguitatem dierum meorum annuncia mihi?* Et annuciavit, nec vacua fuit vox ista. Quis annuciavit mihi nisi ipsa via? Quomodo annuciavit? Ecce ego vobiscum sum usque ad consummationem sæculi. Concione secunda in Psal. 101. * Psal. 48. 8. Forte ista Civitas, quæ mundum renuit, aliquando everteretur. Absit. *Deus fundavit eam in æternum.* Si ergo Deus fundavit eam in æternum, quid times ne cadat firmamentum? S. Aug. ad locum.

Upon the certainty of this truth, the existence of the Church hath been propounded as an object of our Faith in every Age of Christianity; and so it shall be still unto the end of the world. For those which are Believers are the Church, and therefore if they do believe, they must believe there is a Church. And thus having shewed in what the nature of a Church consisteth, and proved that a Church of that nature is of a perpetual and indefectible existence, by virtue of the promises of Christ, I have done all which can be necessary for the explication of this part of the Article, *I believe the Church.*

After the consideration of that which is the subject in this Article, followeth the explication of the affections thereof; which are two, Sanctity and Universality; the one attributed unto it by the Apostles, the other by the Fathers of the Church: by the first the Church is denominated *Holy*, by the second *Catholick*. Now the Church which we have described, may be called holy in several respects, and for several reasons; First, In reference to the Vocation by which all the members thereof are called and separated from the rest of the World to God; which separation in the Language of the Scriptures is a sanctification: and so the calling being holy, (for *God hath called us with an holy calling*) the body which is separated and congregated thereby, may well be termed *holy*. Secondly, In relation to the Offices appointed, and the powers exercised in the Church, which by their institution and operation are holy; that Church for which they were appointed, and in which they are exercised, may be called *holy*. Thirdly, Because whosoever is called to profess faith in Christ, is thereby engaged to holiness of life, according to the words of the Apostle, *Let every one that nameth the name of Christ, depart from iniquity*: for those namers of the name, or named by the name of Christ, are such as called on his name, and that was the description of the Church; as when *Saul* did persecute the Church, it is said he had *authority from the chief Priests to bind all that called upon the name of Christ*, and when he preached Christ in the Synagogues, all that heard him said, *Is not this he who destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem?* Being then all within the Church are by their profession obliged to such holiness of life, in respect of this obligation, the whole Church may be termed *holy*. Fourthly, In regard the end of constituting a Church in God, was for the purchasing an holy and a precious people; and the great design thereof was for the begetting and increasing holiness, that as God is originally holy in himself, so he might communicate his sanctity to the sons of men, whom he intended to bring unto the fruition of himself, unto which without a previous sanctification they can never approach, because *without holiness no man shall ever see God*.

For these four reasons the whole Church of God, as it containeth in it all the persons which were called to the profession of the Faith of Christ, or were baptized in his name, may well be termed and believed *holy*. But the Apostle hath delivered another kind of holiness which cannot belong unto the Church taken in so great a latitude. For, saith he, *Christ loved the Church, and gave himself for it, that he might sanctify and cleanse it by the washing of water by the Word, that he might present it to himself a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish.*

Now

2 Tim. 1. 9.

2 Tim. 2. 19.

Acts 9. 14, 21.
vide 1 Cor. 1. 2.
Οτι γὰρ τὸ ἅ-
θροισμα τῶν
ἁγίων τὸ ἐξ
θεοῦ πίστεως
καὶ πολιτείας ἀ-
εισῆς συγκι-
νήσονται.
Εκκλησία ὅτι,
ἁλόν ὅτι τοῖς
σώται γὰρ πα-
μένοι. Ipsi Pe-
leus, Epist. 245.
l. 2.

Eph. 5. 25, 26,

27.

Now though it may be conceived that *Christ* did love the whole Church as it did any way contain all such as ever called upon his name, and did give himself for all of them: yet we cannot imagine that the whole body of all men could ever be so holy, as to be without spot, wrinkle, blemish, or any such thing. It will be therefore necessary, within the great complex body of the Universal Church, to find that Church to which this absolute holiness doth belong: and to this purpose it will be fit to consider both the difference of the persons contained in the Church, as it hath been hitherto described, while they continue in this life, and their different conditions after death; whereby we shall at last discover in what persons this holiness is inherent really, in what condition it is inherent perfectly, and consequently in what other sense it may be truly and properly affirmed that the Church is *holy*.

Where first we must observe that the Church, as it embraceth all the professors of the true Faith of *Christ*, containeth in it not only such as do truly believe and are obedient to the Word, but those also which are hypocrites, and prophane. Many profess the Faith, which have no true belief: many have some kind of Faith, which live with no correspondence to the Gospel preached. Within therefore the notion of the Church are comprehended good and bad, being both externally called, and both professing the same Faith. For the *Kingdom of heaven is like unto a field in which wheat and tares grow together unto the harvest; like unto a net that was cast into the Sea, and gathered of every kind; like unto a floor in which is laid up wheat and chaff; like unto a marriage-feast, in which some have on the wedding garment, and some not.* This is that Ark of *Noah* in which were preserved beasts clean, and unclean. This is that *great house* in which there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth, and some to honour and some to dishonour. There are many called, of all which the Church consisteth, but there are few chosen, of those which are called, and thereby within the Church. I conclude therefore, as the ancient Catholicks did against the † Donatists, that within the Church, in the publick profession and external communion thereof, are contained persons truly good and sanctified, and hereafter saved; and together with them other persons void of all saving grace, and hereafter to be damned: and that Church containing these of both kinds may well be called *holy*, as *S. Matthew* called *Jerusalem the Holy City*, even at that time when our Saviour did but begin to preach, when we know there was in that City a general Corruption in Manners and Worship.

Matt. 13. 24, 30, 47.

Matt. 2. 12.

Firmissime tene & nullatenus dubites arcam Dei esse Ecclesiam Catholicam, & intra eam usque in finem seculi frumento mixtas paleas contineri, hoc est, bonis malos sacramentorum communione misceri, *Fulgent. ad Petrum, c. 43.*

Mat. 22. 10.

2 Tim. 2. 20.

S. Jerom joins

these two together, *Arca Noe Ecclesiae typus: ut in illa omnium animalium genera, ita & in hac universarum & gentium & morum homines sunt, ut ubi pardus & haedi, lupus & agni, ita & hic iusti & peccatores, id est, vasa aurea & argentea cum ligneis & fictilibus commorantur, Dial. contra Luciferianos.* † The opinion of the Donatists confuted by the Catholicks is to be seen in *S. Augustin's Book*, entituled, *Breviculus Collationum*. Upon which reflecting in his *Book Post Collationem*, he observes how they were forced by the testimony of those Scriptures which we have produced, to acknowledge that there were mingled with the good such as were occultly bad, *Ecce etiam ipsi veritate Evangelica non aliud coacti sunt confiteri quam malos occultos nunc ei permixtos esse, as the good and bad fish are taken in the same net, because it could not discern the bad from the good. And from thence he enforceeth from their acknowledgement, that those which are apparently evil, are contained in the same Church.* Si cum propterea retibus bonos & malos congregantibus Ecclesiam comparavit, quia malos in Ecclesia non manifestos sed latentes intelligi voluit, quos ita nesciunt sacerdotes, quemadmodum sub fluctibus quid acceperint reria nesciunt Piscatores. Propterea ergo & arca comparata est, ut etiam manifeste mali cum bonis in ea praeunantur futuri. Neque enim palea quae in arca est permixta frumentis, etiam ipsa sub fluctibus later, quae sic omnium oculis est conspicua, ut potius occulta sint in ea frumenta, cum sit ipsa manifesta, *Lib. post Collat. cap. 9, 10.*

Of these promiscuously contained in the Church, such as are void of all saving grace while they live, and communicate with the rest of the Church, and when they pass out of this life, die in their sins, and remain under the eternal wrath of God; as they were not in their persons holy while they lived, so are they no way of the Church after their death, neither as members of it, nor as contained in it. Through their own demerit they fall short of the glory unto

unto which they were called, and being by death separated from the external Communion of the Church, and having no true internal communion with the members and the head thereof, are totally and finally cut off from the Church of *Christ*. On the contrary, such as are efficaciously called, justified, and sanctified, while they live are truly holy, and when they die are perfectly holy; nor are they by their death separated from the Church, but remain united still by virtue of that internal union by which they were before conjoined both to the members and the head. As therefore the Church is truly holy, not only by an holiness of institution, but also by a personal sanctity in reference to these Saints while they live, so is it also perfectly holy, in relation to the same Saints glorified in heaven. And at the end of the world, when all the wicked shall be turned into hell, and consequently all cut off from the communion of the Church; when the members of the Church remaining being perfectly sanctified, shall be eternally glorified, then shall the whole Church be truly and perfectly *holy*.

Then shall that be completely fulfilled, that *Christ* shall present unto himself a glorious Church, which shall be holy and without blemish. Not that there are two Churches of *Christ*, one, in which good and bad are mingled together, another, in which there are good alone; one, in which the Saints are imperfectly holy, another, in which they are perfectly such; but one and the same Church in relation to † different times, admitteth or not admitteth the permixtion of the wicked, or the imperfection of the godly. To conclude, the Church of God is universally holy in respect of all, by institutions and administrations of sanctity; the same Church is really holy in this World, in relation to all godly persons contained in it, by a real infused sanctity; the same is farther yet at the same time perfectly holy in reference to the Saints departed and admitted to the presence of God; and the same Church shall hereafter be most completely holy in the world to come, when all the members actually belonging to it, shall be at once perfected in holiness and compleated in happiness. And thus I conceive the affection of sanctity sufficiently explicated.

Ephes. 2. 27.

† This was it which the Catholics answered to the Donatists, objecting that they made two distinct Churches. De duabus etiam ecclesiis calumniam eorum Catholici refutarunt identidem expressius ostendentes quid dixerint,

id est, non eam Ecclesiam quæ nunc habet permixtos malos alienam se dixisse à regno Dei, ubi non erunt mali commixti, sed eandem ipsam unam & sanctam Ecclesiam nunc esse aliter, tunc autem aliter futuram, nunc habere malos mixtos, tunc non habituram, sicut nunc mortalem quod ex mortalibus constaret hominibus, tunc autem immortalem, quod in ea nullus esset vel corpore moriturus, sicut non ideo duo Christi, quia prior mortuus postea non moriturus, S. August. Collat. 3. diei.

The next affection of the Church is that of Universality, *I believe the holy CATHOLICK Church*. Now the word *Catholic*, as it is not read in the Scriptures, so was it not anciently in the Creed, (as we have already shewn) but being inserted by the Church, must necessarily be interpreted by the sense which the most ancient Fathers had of it, and that sense must be confirmed, so far as it is consentient with the Scriptures. To grant then that the word was not used by the * Apostles, we must also acknowledge that it was most anciently in use among the Primitive Fathers, and that as to several intents. For, first, they called the Epistles of S. James, S. Peter, S. John, S. Jude, the † *Catholic* Epistles, because when the Epistles written by S. Paul were directed to particular Churches congregated in particular Cities, these were either sent to the Churches dispersed through a great part of the World, or directed to the whole Church of God upon the face of the whole earth. Again, We observe the Fathers to use the word *Catholic* for nothing

* It was the ordinary Objection of the Schismatical Novatians, that the very name of Catholic was never used by the Apostles, and the answer to it by the Catholics was by

way of concession. Sed sub Apostolis, inquit, nemo Catholicus vocabatur; Esto, sic fuerit, vel illud Indulge, &c. Pacianus ad Synpronianum, Epist. 1. † S. S. Jerome of S. James. Unam tantum scripsit Epistolam quæ de septem Catholicis est: Of S. Peter, Scripsit duas Epistolas quæ Catholicæ non mutantur: Of S. Jude, Judas frater Jacobi

Again, When the Church is taken for the persons making profession of the Christian Faith, the *Catholick* is often added in opposition to Hereticks and Schismatics, expressing a * particular Church continuing in the true Faith with the rest of the Church of God, as the Catholick Church in *Smyna*, the Catholick Church in *Alexandria*.

* As the Smyrneans spake in Eusebius of Polycarpus. Γενόμεναι ὁμιλοῦντες

πρὸ τῆς ἐν Σμύρῃ καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας, lib. 4. cap. 15. So καθολικὴ ἐκκλησία ἡ ἐν Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ, in Epiphanius. Thus Gregory Nazianzen begins his own last Will. Γρηγόριος ἐπίσκοπος τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς ἐν Κωνσταντίνῃ πόλεως, in which he bequeaths his estate τῇ ἀγίᾳ καθολικῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τῇ ἐν Ναζιανζῷ, and subscribes it after the same manner in words in which he began it, and so the rest of the Bishops which subscribed, as witnesses, Ἀμειβλόχης ἐπίσκοπος τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς ἐν Ἰλαίῳ. Ὀπλίμης ἐπίσκοπος τῆς καὶ Ἀντιόχειαν καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας. Θεοδοτίου ἐπίσκοπος τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς ἐν Ὑδρῇ. Θεόδωρος ἐπίσκοπος τῆς ἀγίας καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς καὶ Ἀπάμειας. Θεμιστοῦ ἐπίσκοπος τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς καὶ Ἀδριανέπολιν. In the same manner speak the Latines, Eodem itaque tempore in Ecclesia Hipponensi Catholica Valerius Sanctus Episcoporum gerebat. Possidius de Vita Aug. c. 4. Thus any particular true Church is called the Catholic Church of the place in which it is, and all Churches which retain the Catholic Faith, are called Catholic Churches. As when the Synod of Antioch concluded their sentence against the Samosatenians thus, καὶ πάσαι αἱ καθολικαὶ Ἐκκλησίαι συμφωνῶσιν ἡμῖν. According to which notion we read in Leo the Great, Ad venerationem Pentecostes unanimiter incitemur exultantes in honorem S. Spiritus, per quem omnis Ecclesia Catholica sanctificatur, omnis anima rationalis imbutur, Ser. m. i. de Pentec. Whence where we read in the Synod of Ariminum, εἰς τὸ αὐτὸ πάντες ἐπίσκοποι συναλθούμεν, ἵνα καὶ ἡ πίστις τῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας γνωριεθῇ, καὶ οἱ πάντων ἐκκλησιῶν ἑκκλησίαι, although in Athanasius, Theodoret and Socrates, it is constantly written, τῆς καθολικῆς Ἐκκλησίας; yet S. Hilary did certainly read it, τῇ καθολικῇ Ἐκκλησίᾳ, for it is thus translated in his Fragments, Ut fides claresceret omnibus Ecclesiis Catholicis, & hæretici nocerentur. From whence it came to pass that in the same City Hereticks and Catholics having their several Congregations, each of which was called the Church, the Congregation of the Catholics was by way of distinction called the Catholic Church. Of which this was the old advice of S. Cyril of Jerusalem, Ἄν ποτε ἐπιθυμῆς ἐν πόλεσι, αὐθιπλὸς ὑφίσταζε πῦρ τὸ Κιρκιανόν ἐστῇ· καὶ γὰρ αἱ λοιπαὶ τῆς ἀρετῶν ἀρέσκεις Κιρκιανὰ τὰ ἑαυτῶν σπλάνα καλὸν ὀπληρῶσι· μηδὲ πῦρ ἐστὶν ἀπλῶς ἐκκλησία, ἀλλὰ πῦρ ἐστὶν ἡ καθολικὴ ἐκκλησία; Catech. 18. Ego forte ingressus populosam urbem hodie cum Marcionitis, cum Apollinaricos, Cataphrygas, Novatianos, & cæteros ejusmodi comperissem, qui se Christianos vocarent, quo cognomine congregationi meæ plebis agnoscerem nisi Catholica diceretur? Pacian. ad Symp. Ep. 1. Tenet postremo ipsum Catholica nomen, quod non sine causa ista Ecclesia sola obtrinit, ut cum omnes hæretici se Catholicos dici velint, quarenti tamen peregrino alicui, ubi ad Catholicam conveniatur, nullus hæreticorum, vel Basilicam suam vel donum audeat ostendere, S. Aug. cont. Epist. Fundamenti, cap. 4.

Now being these particular Churches could not be named *Catholick* as they were particular, in reference to this or that City, in which they were congregated, it followeth that they were called *Catholick* by their coherence and conjunction with that Church which was * properly and originally called so; which is the Church taken in that acception which we have already delivered. That Church which was built upon the Apostles as upon the foundation, congregated by their preaching and by their baptizing, receiving continued accession, and disseminated in several parts of the earth, containing within it numerous congregations, all which were truly called Churches, as members of the same Church; that Church, I say, was after some time called the *Catholick Church*, that is to say, the name *Catholick* was used by the Greeks to signify the whole. For being every particular congregation professing the name of *Christ*, was from the beginning called a Church; being likewise all such Congregations considered together were originally comprehended under the name of the Church; being these two notions of the word were different, it came to pass that for distinction sake at first they called the Church, taken in the large and comprehensive sense, by as large and comprehensive a name, the † *Catholick Church*.

* Nonne ap-
pellatione pro-
pria decuit ca-
put principale
signari? *Paci-
anus ibid.*

† I conceive at first there was no other mean-

ing in the word *Katholikē* than what the Greek language did signify thereby, that is, tota or universa, as S. Austin, Cum dixisset de seipso contexta, addidit per unum. Quod si referamus ad id quod significat, nemo ejus est expers qui pertinere invenitur ad totum: à quo toto sicut Græca indicat lingua, Catholica vocatur Ecclesia. *Irahl. in Joh. 118.* The most ancient Ambour which I find it in, (except Ignatius, "Ὁ πᾶν σαρὴν ὁ θεὸς κοποῖ, ἐκὲν τῷ πᾶσι θεῷ ἔσω, ὡς ὅτι ὅτι ἂν ἡ Χεῖρ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, ἐκὲν ἡ καθολικὴ ἐκκλησίᾳ. Ep. ad Smyrnos) is Clemens Alexandrinus, μόλις ἵνα αὐτὸν τῷ ἀρχιεπίαν καὶ καθολικῷ ἐκκλησίᾳ, Strom. l. 7. But the Passion of Polycarp written in the name of the Church of Smyrna, may be much ancienter, in which the Original notion seemeth most clear, "Ἡ Ἐκκλησία τῷ θεῷ ἡ παρῃκῆσα Σύνοδος τῇ παρῃκῆσιν ἐν φιλομνησίᾳ, καὶ πάσαις καὶ πᾶσι τὸ πᾶν τῆς ὁλῆς καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας παρῃκῆσαι, i. e. omnibus totius Ecclesie paræcis. *Euseb. Hist. Eccl. l. 4. c. 15.* It was otherwise called in the same notion ἡ καθόλου. As Apollinarius Bishop of Hierapolis, τὴν ἡ καθόλου καὶ πᾶσαν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν βλασφημεῖν διδασκονίᾳ τῇ ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐκδομένη, apud *Euseb. l. 5. c. 16.* Item Eusebius, Περὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας καὶ μέγιστον αὐτὴ καὶ αὐτὰ καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἔχουσα ἡ τῆς καθόλου καὶ μόνης ἀληθινῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀνακταμένη, *Hist. l. 4. c. 7.* *Katholikē* then and ἡ καθόλου is the same, the whole, general, or universal.

Although this seem the first intention of those which gave the name *Catholick* to the Church, to signifie thereby nothing else but the whole or universal Church, yet those which followed did signifie by the same that affection of the Church which floweth from the nature of it, and may be expressed by that word. At first they called the whole Church *Catholick*, meaning no more than the universal Church; but having used that term some space of time, they considered how the nature of the Church was to be universal, and in what that universality did consist.

As far then as the ancient Fathers have expressed themselves, and as far as their expressions are agreeable with the descriptions of the Church delivered in the Scriptures, so far, I conceive, we may safely conclude that the Church of *Christ* is truly *Catholick*, and that the truly *Catholick* Church is the true Church of *Christ*, which must necessarily be sufficient for the explication of this affection, which we acknowledge when we say, we *believe the Catholick Church*.

The most obvious and most general notion of this Catholicism consisteth in the diffusiveness of the Church, grounded upon the commission given to the builders of it, *Go, teach all Nations*, whereby they and their successors were authorized and impowered to gather congregations of Believers, and so to extend the borders of the Church unto the utmost parts of the earth. The Synagogue of the *Jews* especially consisted of one Nation, and the public worship of God was confined to one Country, *In Judah was God known, and his name was great in Israel; in Salem was his Tabernacle, and his dwelling place in Sion. He shewed his word unto Jacob, his statutes and his judgments unto Israel; he hath not dealt so with any nation.* The temple was the only place in which the Sacrifices could be offered, in which the Priests could perform their office of Ministration; and so under the Law there was an inclosure divided from all the World besides. But God said unto his Son, *I will give the Heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession.* And *Christ* commanded the Apostles, saying, *Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature: that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.* Thus the Church of *Christ*, in its primary institution, was made to be of a diffusive nature, to spread and extend it self, from the City of *Jerusalem*, where it first began, to all the parts and corners of the earth. From whence we find them in the *Revelation*, crying to the Lamb, *Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation.* This reason did the ancient Fathers render why the Church was called * *Catholick*, and the nature of the Church is so described in the Scriptures.

Rev. 5. 9.

* We have before observed of Arius and Euzoius, that naming the *Catholick Church* in

their Creed, they gave withal the interpretation of it. Εἰς μίαν Καθολικὴν Ἐκκλησίαν τῷ Θεῷ, ἢ ἀπὸ πλεόντων ἕως πλεόντων. S. Cyril of Jerusalem gives this as the first importance of the word. Καθολικὴ μὲν ὃν καλεῖται διὰ τὸ χρὶ τῆς οἰκουμένης ἀπὸ πλεόντων γῆς ἕως πλεόντων, Catech. 18. Ubi ergo erit proprietates Catholicæ nominis, cum inde dicta sit Catholica, quod sit rationalis & ubique diffusa? Optatus, l. 2. Ipsa est enim Ecclesia Catholica: unde Καθολικὴ Græcè appellatur, quod per totum orbem diffunditur, S. Aug. Epist. 170. Ecclesia illa est quam modo dixi unicam suam, hæc est unica Catholica quæ toto orbe copiose diffunditur, quæ usque ad ultimas gentes crescendo porrigitur, Idem Epist. 30. Si autem dubitas quod Ecclesiam quæ per omnes gentes numerositate copiosa dilatatur, S. Scriptura commendat, multis & manifestissimis testimoniis ex eadem autoritate prolatis onerabo, Idem contra Crescon. l. 1. c. 33. Sancta Ecclesia ideo dicitur Catholica, pro eo quod universaliter per omnem mundum sit diffusa, Isidorus de Summo Bono, Lib. 1. Cap. 9.

Secondly, They called the Church of *Christ* the *Catholick* Church, because it teacheth all things which are necessary for a Christian to know, whether they be things in Heaven or things in Earth, whether they concern the condition of man in this life, or in the life to come. As the Holy Ghost did lead the Apostles *into all truth*, so did the Apostles leave all truth unto the Church,

Church, which teaching all the same, may well be called † *Catholick*, from the Universality of necessary and saving truths retained in it.

† This is the second interpretation delivered

by S. Cyril. Καὶ διὰ τὸ διδάσκειν καθολικῶς καὶ ἀνελληπτικῶς ἅπαντα εἰς γνώσιν ἀνθρώπων ἐλθεῖν ὁρίζοντα δόγματα καὶ διὰ τὸ ἐκείνων πραγμάτων ἐκκεννίων τε καὶ ὁπηγείων, Catech. 18. Ecclesia Græcuni nomen est, quod in Latinum vertitur *Convocatio*, propterea quod ad se omnes vocet. Catholica (id est, Universalis) ideo dicitur quia per univertum mundum est constituta, vel quoniam Catholica, hoc est, generalis in eadem doctrina est ad instructionem, In Decret. Ivo. lib. 2.

Thirdly, The Church hath been thought fit to be called *Catholick* in reference to the universal obedience which it prescribeth; both in respect of the persons, obliging men of * all conditions, and in relation to the precepts, requiring the performance of all † the Evangelical commands.

* This is the third interpretation of S. Cyril,

Fourthly, ∴ the Church hath been yet further called or reputed *Catholick*, by reason of all graces given in it, whereby all diseases of the soul are healed, and spiritual virtues are disseminated, all the works, and words, and thoughts of men are regulated, till we become perfect men in *Christ Jesus*.

Καὶ διὰ τὸ πᾶν ὅσον ἀνθρώπων εἰς ἐκπαιδεύειν καὶ ἀρ-
χωμένων, λογί-
ων τε καὶ ἰδιω-
τῶν, Cat. 18.

In all these four exceptions did some of the ancient Fathers understand the Church of *Christ* to be *Catholick*, and every one of them doth certainly belong unto it. Wherefore I conclude that this Catholicism, or second affection of the Church, consisteth generally in Universality, as embracing all sorts of persons, as to be disseminated through all Nations, as comprehending all ages, as containing all necessary and saving truths, as obliging all conditions of men to all kind of obedience, as curing all diseases, and planting all graces, in the souls of men.

† Si reddenda Catholici vocabuli ratio est, & exprimens de Græco interpretatione Latina, Catholicus ubique unum, vel

(ut doctiores putant) obedientia omnium nuncupatur, mandatorum scilicet Dei. Unde Apostolus, Si in omnibus obedientes estis, & iterum, Sicut enim per imobedientiam unus peccator constituitur multi, sic per dicto-audientiam unus iustus constituitur multi, Ergo qui Catholicus, idem iustus obediens, Pacianus Epist. 1. ad Sympron. Acutum aliquid videris dicere cum Catholicæ nomen non ex orbis totius communione interpretaris, sed ex observatione præceptorum omnium divinarum atque omnium Sacramentorum: quasi nos etiam, si forte hinc sit appellata Catholica, quod totum veraciter teneat, cuius veritatis nonnullæ particulæ etiam in diversis inveniuntur hæresibus, huius nominis testimonio nitamur ad demonstrandam Ecclesiam in omnibus gentibus, & non promissis Dei & tam multis tamque manifestis oculis ipsius veritatis. Sed nempe hoc est totum, quod nobis persuadere conaris, solos remanisse Rogatistas, qui Catholici recte appellandi sunt ex observatione præceptorum omnium divinarum atque omnium Sacramentorum, S. Aug. Vincentio, Epist. 48. Indeed this Notion of the Catholic Church was urged by the Donatists as the only notion of it in opposition to the Universality of place and communion. For when the Catholics answered for themselves, Quia Ecclesia toto orbe diffusa, cui testimonium perhibet Scriptura divina, ipsi, non Donatistæ communicant, unde Catholici merito & iunct & vocantur: Donatistæ autem responderunt; Non Catholicum nomen ex universitate gentium, sed ex plenitudine Sacramentorum institutum, Idem Collat. 3. diel. c. 2. ∴ This is the fourth and last explication given by S. Cyril. διὰ τὸ καθολικῶς ἰατρῶν τε καὶ θεραπεύειν, ἅπαν τὰ ἥδη αὐτίκῃ ἐκείνῃ καὶ διὰ τὴν χάριν καὶ σώματα ὁπτηκέντων, κεκτῆσθαι τε ἐν αὐτῇ πᾶσαν ἰσαν ὀνομαζομένης ἀρετῆς ἐν ἔργοις τε καὶ λόγοις καὶ πνευματικοῖς παντοίοις χαρίσμασι, Catech. 18.

The necessity of believing the *Holy Catholick Church*, appeareth first in this, that *Christ* hath appointed it as the only way unto eternal life. We read at the first, that the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved; and what was then daily done, hath been done since continually. *Christ* never appointed two ways to heaven; nor did he build a Church to save some, and make another institution for other mens salvation. There is no other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved, but the name of *Jesus*; and that name is no otherwise given under heaven than in the Church. As none were saved from the deluge but such as were within the Ark of *Noah*, framed for their reception by the command of God; as none of the first-born of *Egypt* lived, but such as were within those habitations whose door-posts were sprinkled with Blood by the appointment of God for their preservation; as none of the inhabitants of *Jericho* could escape the fire or sword, but such as were within the house of *Rahab*, for whose protection a Covenant was made:

Acts 2. 47.

Acts 4. 12.

τὸ κόσμον κυμινουμένη καὶ χαμαζομένη ὑπὸ τῶν αὐτίκῃ ἐκείνῃ τὰς συντηγὰς λειτουργίας Ἐκκλησίας, ἐν αἷς καθὰ τὴν λιμῆ-
σιν εὐρύμοις ἐν νήσοις αἱ διδασκαλίας τῆς ἀληθείας εἰσι, πρὸς αὐτὰς κατασφύγουν οἱ θέλοντες σωθῆναι. S. Theophil. Antioch. adu.
Antioch. l. 2. Μιὰ δὲ πρὸς ὅλην ἐκκλησίαν ἡ σωτηρία ταύτην ὁπτημένη καὶ μηδὲν ἄλλο ἢ ἐκ καθολικῆς ἰσχύος ἐκκλησίας καὶ τίς τις
μιτήχην Χριστοῦ σωζόμενον μηδὲ σωθῆναι, S. Chrys. in Psal. lxxviii.

so none shall ever escape the eternal wrath of God, which belong not to the Church of God. This is the Congregation of those persons here on earth which shall hereafter meet in heaven. These are the Vessels of the Tabernacle carried up and down, at last to be translated into, and fixed in the Temple.

Secondly, It is necessary to believe the Church of *Christ* which is but one, that being in it we may take care never to cast our selves, or be ejected out of it. There is a power within the Church to cast those out which do belong to it; for if any *neglect to hear the Church*, saith our Saviour, *let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a Publican*. By great and scandalous offences, by incorrigible misdemeanours, we may incur the censure of the Church of God, and while we are shut out by them, we stand excluded out of heaven. For our Saviour said to his Apostles, upon whom he built his Church, *Whosoever sins ye remit they are remitted unto them, and whosoever sins ye retain they are retained*. Again, a man may not only passively and involuntarily be rejected, but also may by an act of his own, cast out or reject himself, not only by plain and complete Apostasy, but by a defection from the unity of truth, falling into some damnable Heresie, or by an active separation, deserting all which are in communion with the Catholick Church, and falling into an irrecoverable Schism.

Thirdly, It is necessary to believe the Church of *Christ* to be holy, lest we should presume to obtain any happiness by being of it, without that holiness which is required in it. It is not enough that the end, institution and administration of the Church are holy: but, that there may be some real and permanent advantage received by it, it is necessary that the persons abiding in the communion of it should be really and effectually sanctified. Without which holiness the priviledges of the Church prove the greatest disadvantages, and the means of salvation neglected, tend to a punishment with aggravation. It is not only vain but pernicious to attend at the marriage-feast without a wedding garment, and it is our Saviour's description of folly to cry, *Lord, Lord, open unto us*, while we are without Oyl in our Lamps. We must acknowledge a necessity of holiness, when we confess that Church alone which is holy can make us happy.

Sola Catholica Ecclesia est quæ verum cultum recinet. Hic est fons veritatis, hoc est domicilium fidei, hoc templum Dei: quo si quis non intraverit, vel à quo si quis exierit, à spe vitæ ac salutis æternæ alienus est. *Laſtant.* l. 4. c. 30.

Fourthly, There is a necessity of believing the Catholick Church, because except a man be of that he can be of none. For being the Church which is truly Catholick containeth within it all which are truly Churches, whosoever is not of the Catholick Church, cannot be of the true Church. That Church alone which first began at *Jerusalem* on earth, will bring us to the *Jerusalem* in heaven; and that alone began there which always embraceth *the faith once delivered to the Saints*. Whatsoever Church pretendeth to a new beginning, pretendeth at the same time to a new Churchdom, and whatsoever is so new is none. So necessary it is to believe the *holy Catholick Church*.

Having thus far explicated the first part of this Article, I conceive every person sufficiently furnished with means of instruction, what they ought to intend, when they profess to believe *the holy Catholick Church*. For thereby every one is understood to declare thus much; I am fully persuaded, and make a free confession of this, as of a necessary and infallible truth, that *Christ* by the preaching of the Apostles, did gather unto himself a Church consisting of thousands of believing persons, and numerous Congregations, to which he daily added such as should be saved, and will successively and daily add unto the same unto the end of the World: so that by the virtue of his all-sufficient promise, I am assured that there was, hath been hitherto, and

now is, and hereafter shall be so long as the Sun and Moon endure, a Church of *Christ* one and the same. This Church I believe in general holy in respect of the Author, end, institution and administration of it; particularly in the members, here I acknowledge it really, and in the same hereafter perfectly, holy. I look upon this Church not like that of the *Jews* limited to one people, confined to one Nation, but by the appointment and command of *Christ*, and by the efficacy of his assisting power, to be disseminated through all Nations, to be extended to all places, to be propagated to all Ages, to contain in it all truths necessary to be known, to exact absolute obedience from all men to the commands of *Christ*, and to furnish us with all graces necessary to make our persons acceptable, and our actions well-pleasing in the sight of God. And thus *I believe the holy Catholick Church.*

The Communion of Saints.

THis part of the Article beareth something a † later date than any of the rest, but yet is no way inferiour to the other in relation to the certainty of the truth thereof. And the late admission of it into the Creed will be thus far advantageous, that thereby we may be the better assured of the true intent of it, as it is placed in the Creed. For it will be no way fit to give any other explication of these words as the sense of the Creed, than what was then understood by the Church of God, when they were first inserted.

Oriental or the Roman Creed. They were not in the African Creed expounded by S. Austin De Fide & Symbolo; not in the Creed delivered by Maximus Turonensis; not in any of the Sermons of Chrysologus; not in any of the four Books de Symbolo ad Catechumēnos attributed to S. Austin; not in the 119 Sermon under his name De Tempore, Cum dixerimus Sanctam Ecclesiam, adjungamus Remissionem peccatorum. They are not in the Greek Creed in Sir Robert Cotton's Library, not in the old Latin Creed in the Oxford Library, not in that produced by Elipandus. We find them not in the old Greek Creeds, not in that of Eusebius given in the Council of Nice, not in that of Marcellus delivered to the Bishop of Rome, not in that of Arius and Euzoius presented to Constantine, not in either of the Creeds preserved in the Anconatus of Epiphanius, not in the Jerusalem Creed expounded by S. Cyril, not in that of the Council of Constantinople, not in that of Charisius given into the Ephesine Council, not in either of the Expositions under the name of S. Chrysostom. It was therefore of a later date, and is found in the Latin and Greek Copy in Bennet Colledge Library, and is expressed and expounded in the 115. and 181 Sermon De Tempore, attributed to S. Austin, v. P. schaffii Symbolum.

† These words Communio- nem Sancto- rum, were not in the Aquilei- an Creed ex- pounded by Ruf- finus; they were not mentioned by him, as be- ing either in the

If we look upon the first institution of the Church, and the original condi- tion of those persons which received the Gospel, how they were all together, *Acts 2. 44, 45.* and had all things common; how they sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men as every man had need, how S. Paul urged an equality, that the abundance of some might supply the want of others, as it was written, He that had gathered much had nothing over, and he that had gathered little had no lack: we might well conceive that the communion, (which word might be taken for communication) of the Saints, may signifie the great * charity, bounty and community, among the people of God. *2 Cor. 8. 14, 15.*

But being that community precisely taken, was not of eternal obligation, nor actually long continued in the Church; being I conceive this Article doth not wholly look upon that which is already past; and especially, being I think neither that custom, nor that notion was then generally received in the Church, when this communion of Saints was first inserted, I shall therefore endeavour to shew that communion which is attributed to the Saints both according to the Fathers who have delivered it, and according to the Scriptures from whence they derived it.

Now all communion being between such as are some way different and distinct, the communion of the Saints may either be conceived between them and others, or between themselves; between them and others as differing from them either in their nature or their sanctity, between themselves, as distinct

* Grotius upon that place of the Corinthians observes, Spectat & huc ea quam in Symbolo profiteamur Sancto- rum communem.

finēt in person only, or condition also. Wherefore if we can first understand who, or what kind of persons these are which are called *Saints*, with whom beside themselves, and how among themselves, in this relation as they are the *Saints*, they have communion, and lastly in what the nature of that *Communion* in each respect consisteth; I know not what can be thought wanting to the perfect explication of the *Communion of Saints*.

That we may understand what *Communion* the *Saints* have with others, it would be necessary first to consider what it is to be a *Saint*, in what the true nature of *Saint-ship* doth consist, by what the *Saints* are distinguished from others. Again, that we may understand what *Communion* the *Saints* have with or among themselves, it will be farther necessary to consider who are those persons to which that title doth belong, what are the various conditions of them, that we may be able to comprehend all such as are true *Saints*, and thence conclude the *communion* between them all.

I take it first for granted, that though the Greek word which we translate *Saints*, be in it self as applicable to † things, as persons; yet in this Article it signifieth not holy things, but *holy ones*, that is persons holy. Secondly, I take it also for granted that the singular Holy one, the Holy one of *Israel*, the Fountain of all sanctity, the sanctifier of all *Saints*, is not comprehended in the Article, though the communion of the Holy ones with that singular, eminent, and transcendent * Holy one, be contained in it. Thirdly, I take it farther for granted that the word in this Article, which we translate *Saints* is not taken in the Original of the Creed, as it is often taken in the Translation of the Old Testament, for the † *Sanctuary*, as if the communion were nothing else but a right of communicating or participating of the holy things of God. Lastly, I take it also for granted that although the blessed and holy Angels are sometimes called in the Scriptures by the name of * *Saints*, yet they are not those *Saints* who are here said to have the communion, though the *Saints* have communion with them.

† Κοινωνία ἁγίων may be as well understood in the Neuter as the Masculine, as Exod. 28. 38. Ἐξαρῆ Ἀζαρὼν τὰ ἁγία τήματα τοῦ ἁγίου, that Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things. So Levit. 5. 15. καὶ ἀμάρτη αἰσίου ἀπὸ τοῦ ἁγίου Κυρίου 22. 2. καὶ παρεχόμεσαν ἀπὸ τοῦ ἁγίου τοῦ ἁγίου

Ἰσραήλ. 1 Chron. 24. 5. ἀρχόντες τοῦ ἁγίου the Governours of the Sanctuary, of which notion afterwards. * This is one of the common names of God in the Old Testament, יְהוָה קדוש אֱלֹהֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל, which is also sometimes translated plurally by the LXX. as Esay 41. 16. יְהוָה בְּקִרְוֹשׁ יִשְׂרָאֵל ἐν τοῖς ἁγίοις *Ἰσραήλ*, Jer. 51. 5. מְקִרְוֹשׁ יִשְׂרָאֵל ἁγίων *Ἰσραήλ* and if it were so taken, then κοινωνία τοῦ ἁγίου, would be the communion of God, as τὸ ἅγιον Πνεῦμα. † Τὰ ἁγία frequently used in the Scriptures for the Sanctuary; and then κοινωνία τοῦ ἁγίου might be taken for the communion in all those things which belonged to the worship of God as, ἀκοινώνητος was a man excluded from all such communion. * The Angels are not only called holy in the Scriptures by way of addition or Epithete, as πάντες οἱ ἄγγελοι ἁγιοι, Mat. 25. 31. καὶ ἁγίων τοῦ ἁγίου, Mark 8. 38. Luke 9. 26. ἐξουμαλίσθη ἀπὸ ἀγγέλων ἁγίων, Acts 10. 22. ἐνώπιον τοῦ ἁγίου ἀγγέλων Rev. 14. 10. But also the ἁγίου holy ones, or *Saints* taken substantively or singly signifie sometimes the Angels, as Deut. 32. 2. קָדְשׁ וְאַחַהּ מִדִּנְנַת קָדְשׁ וְאַחַהּ מִדִּנְנַת קָדְשׁ he came with ten thousands of *Saints*, which the Jerusalem Targum renders יְהוָה קָדְשׁ וְאַחַהּ מִדִּנְנַת קָדְשׁ and with him ten thousands of holy Angels; and Jonathan, קָדְשׁ וְאַחַהּ מִדִּנְנַת קָדְשׁ וְאַחַהּ מִדִּנְנַת קָדְשׁ and with him myriads of myriads of holy Angels. And although the LXX. keep the Hebrew קָדְשׁ, yet they understood the Angels in that place (ὡς μουσεως Κἄδης, [Heb. h. Kādēs ἁγιασμός]) ἐκ δεξιῶν αὐτοῦ ἁγιοι μετ' αὐτοῦ. So Job 5. 1. To which of the *Saints* wilt thou turn? ἑτίνα ἀγγέλων ἁγίων ὁψη, LXX. Thus in the vision of Daniel, he heard one *Saint* speaking, and another *Saint* said unto that certain *Saint* which spake, Dan. 8. 13. So Zach. 14. 5. And the Lord my God shall come, and all the *Saints* with thee. And thus it may very well be understood in the New Testament, 1 Thess. 3. 13. ἐν τῇ παρουσίᾳ τοῦ Κυρίου πάντων τοῦ ἁγίου αὐτοῦ, in correspondence to that 2 Thess. 1. 17. ἐν τῇ ἀποκαλύψει τοῦ Κυρίου Ἰησοῦ ἀπ' ἑαυτοῦ μετ' ἀγγέλων δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ. These are the μυριάδες ἁγίων in S. Jude קָדְשׁ וְאַחַהּ מִדִּנְנַת קָדְשׁ the myriads of Angels; and thus κοινωνία ἁγίων should be the communion of the Angels.

For this part of the Article hath a manifest relation to the former, in which we profess to believe the *Holy Church*; which Church is therefore holy, because those persons are such, or ought to be, which are within it, the Church it self being nothing but a Collection of such persons. To that Confession is added this *Communion*; but because though the Church be holy, yet every person contained in it is not truly so, therefore is added this part of the Article which concerneth those who are truly such. There is therefore no doubt but the *Saints* mentioned here, are members of the Church of Christ, as we have described it, built upon the Apostles, laid upon the foundation of their doctrine,

doctrine, who do not only profess the Gospel, but are sanctified thereby.

The only question then remaining is, in what their Sanctity or Saintship doth consist, and (because though they which are Believers since our Saviour's death, be truly and more highly sanctified, yet such as lived before and under the Law, the Patriarchs, the Prophets and the Servants of God were so called, and were truly named the Saints of God) who were the persons which are capable of that denomination?

Now being God himself hath given a rule unto his people, which is both in the nature of a precept and of a pattern: (*Be ye holy as I the Lord your God am holy: be ye holy*, there's the command, as *the Lord your God is holy*, there's the rule :) being it is impossible that we should have the same Sanctity which is in God, it will be necessary to declare what is this holiness which maketh men to be accounted holy ones, and to be called *Saints*.

The true notion of *Saints* is expressed by *Moses* both as to the subject, and the affection or qualification of it; for they are called by him *men of holiness*; such are the persons understood in this Article, which is the communion of men of holiness. Now holiness in the first acception of it signifieth Separation, and that with the relation of a double term, of one from which the separation is made, of the other to which that which is separated is applied. Those things which were counted holy under the Law were separated from common use, and applied to the service of God, and their sanctity was nothing else but that separation from and to those terms, from an use and exercise profane and common, to an use and exercise peculiar and divine. Thus all such persons as are called from the vulgar and common condition of the world unto any peculiar service or relation unto God, are thereby denominated holy, and in some sense receive the name of *Saints*. The Pen-men of the Old Testament do often speak of the people of *Israel* as of an holy Nation, and God doth speak unto them as to people holy unto himself; because he had chosen them out of all the Nations of the world and appropriated them to himself. Although therefore most of that Nation were rebellious to him which called them, and void of all true inherent and actual sanctity, yet because they were all in that manner separated, they were all, as to the separation, called holy. In the like manner those of the New Testament writing to such as were called, and had received, and were baptized in, the faith, give unto them all the name of *Saints*, as being in some manner such, by being called and baptized. For being Baptism is a washing away of sin, and the purification from sin is a proper sanctification; being every one who is so called and baptized is thereby separated from the rest of the World which are not so, and all such separation is some kind of sanctification; being, though the work of grace be not perfectly wrought, yet when the means are used, without something appearing to the contrary, we ought to presume of the good effect, therefore all such as have been received into the Church, may be in some sense called holy.

But because there is more than an outward vocation, and a charitable presumption, necessary to make a man holy; therefore we must find some other qualification which must make him really and truly such, not only by an extrinsecal Denomination, but by a real and internal Affection. What this Sanctity is, and who are capable of this Title properly, we must learn out of the Gospel of *Christ*, by which alone, ever since the Church of *Christ* was founded, any man can become a Saint. Now by the tenure of the Gospel we shall find that those are truly and properly Saints which are *sanctified in Christ Jesus*; first, in respect of their holy faith, by which they are regenerated; for *whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God*; by which they are purged, God himself *purifying their hearts by faith*;

Exod. 22. 31.
אנשי קדש

1 Cor. 1. 2.
1 John 5. 1.
A7s 15. 9.

1 Cor. 6. 11. *faith, whereby they are washed, sanctified, and justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, in whom also after that they believe, they are sealed with the holy Spirit of promise: secondly, in respect of their conversation: For as he which hath called them is holy, so are they holy in all manner of conversation; adding to their faith vertue, and to vertue knowledge, and to knowledge temperance, and to temperance patience, and to patience brotherly kindnes, and to brotherly kindnes charity, that they may neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.* Such persons then as are called by a holy calling, and not disobedient unto it, such as are endued with a holy faith, and purified thereby, such as are sanctified by the holy Spirit of God, and by vertue thereof do lead a holy life, *perfecting holiness in the fear of God*, such persons, I say, are really and truly Saints, and being of the Church of Christ, (as all such now must of necessity be) are the proper subject of this part of the Article, *the communion of Saints*, as it is added to the former, *the holy Catholick Church*.

Now as these are the Saints of the Church of Christ, from whence they were called *the Churches of the Saints*: so there was never any Church of God but there were such persons in it as were Saints; we read in the *Psalms* of the congregation and the assembly of the Saints; and Moses assured the people of Israel, that all the Saints of God were in his hand; we read in the Prophets of *the Saints of the most high*, and at our Saviour's death *the bodies of such Saints which slept arose*. Where again we may observe that they were Saints while their bodies were in the grave; as Aaron in the time of David kept the name of Saint of the Lord. Such as are holy in their lives do not lose their sanctity but improve it at their deaths, nor can they lose the honour of that appellation, while that which gives it doth acquire perfection.

Hence grows that necessary distinction of the Saints on earth, and the Saints in Heaven; the first belonging to the militant, the second to the triumphant Church. Of the first the Prophet David speaketh expressly, *Thou art my Lord, my goodness extendeth not to thee, but to the Saints that are in the earth*: of these do we read in the *Acts of the Apostles*, to these did S. Paul direct his Epistles. Of the second doth the Apostle make that question, *Do ye not know that the Saints shall judge the world?* And all those which were spoken of as Saints then in the earth, if truly such, and departed so, are now, and shall for ever continue, Saints in Heaven.

Having thus declared what is the sanctity required to make a Saint, that is, a man of holiness; having also distinguished the Saints before and under the Gospel, (which difference is only observable as to this Exposition of the Creed,) and again distinguishing the same Saints while they live here with men on earth, and when after death they live with God in Heaven; having also shewed that of all these, those Saints are here particularly understood who in all ages lived in the Church of Christ; we may now properly descend to the next consideration, which is, Who are those persons with whom those Saints have this communion, and in what the communion which they have consists.

First then, the Saints of God living in the Church of Christ, have communion with God the Father; for the Apostles did therefore write that they to whom they wrote might have communion with them, (*that which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us*, saith S. John,) and did at the same time declare that their Communion was with the Father. Wherefore being all the Saints of God under the Gospel receiving the Doctrine of the Apostles have communion with them; being the communion of the Apostles was the communion with the Father, it followeth that all the Saints of God under the Gospel have a communion with God the Father. As we are the branches of the Vine, so the Father is the husbandman; and thus the Saints partake

1 Cor. 6. 11.
Ephes. 1. 13.
2 Pet. 1. 15.
2 Pet. 1. 8.

Psal. 89. 5, 7.
149. 1. בקהר
קדש
LXX. ἐν ἁ-
γίοις αἱ
ἐκκλησίαι
ἐν ἁγίοις.
Vulg. Latin. in
Ecclesia & in
consilio san-
ctorum. Deut.
33. 3. Dan. 7.
18, 21, 22, 25.
Matth. 27. 52.
Quis ignorat
sub altera di-
spensatione
Dei omnes re-
tro sanctos e-
jusdem fuisse
meriti cujus
nunc Christiani-
tatem? S. Hier.
adv. Jovinian.
a Psal. 106. 16.
b Psal. 15. 2, 3.
c 1 Cor. 6. 2.

1 John 1. 3.

Κοινωνία με-
τὰ Θεοῦ.

partake of his care and inspection. As *Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness, and he was called the friend of God*, so all which are heirs of the faith of *Abraham* are made partakers of the same relation. Nor are we only friends, but also sons; for *behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God*. Thus must we acknowledge, that the Saints of God have communion with the Father, because by the great and precious promises given unto them, they become partakers of the divine nature.

Jam. 2. 23.

1 John 3. 1.

2 Pet. 1. 4.

Θείας κοινωνίας
ἐνότητος.

1 John 1. 3.

2 John 9.

John 17. 20,
21, 23.

Secondly, The Saints of God living in the Church of God have communion with the Son of God: for, as the Apostle laid, *our communion is with the Father and the Son*; and this connexion is infallible, because *he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son*; and our Saviour prayed for all such as should believe on him through the word of the Apostles, *that they might be one, as the Father is one in him and he in the Father, that they also may be one in both*. I in them, saith Christ, and thou in me, *that they may be made perfect in one*. This communion of the Saints with the Son of God, is, as most evident, so most remarkable. He hath taken unto him our nature and infirmities; he hath taken upon him our sins, and the curse due unto them; while we all have received of his fulness grace for grace; and are all called to the fellowship of his sufferings that we may be conformable to his death. What is the fellowship of brethren and coheirs of the Bridegroom and the Spouse: what is the communion of members with the head, of branches with the vine, that is the communion of Saints with Christ. For *God hath called us unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord*.

John 1. 16.

Phil. 3. 10.

1 Cor. 1. 9.
κοινωνία τῶ
Υἱοῦ.

Thirdly, The Saints of God in the Church of Christ have communion with the Holy Ghost; and the Apostle hath two ways assured us of the truth thereof, one rhetorically, by a seeming doubt, *if there be any fellowship of the Spirit*; the other devoutly, praying for it, *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all*. The Saints are therefore such, because they partake of the Holy Ghost, for they are therefore holy because they are sanctified, and it is the Spirit alone which sanctifieth. Beside, the communion with the Father and the Son is wrought by the communication of the Spirit; for hereby do we become the Sons of God, in that we have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, *Abba, Father*; and thereby do we become co-heirs with Christ, in that, *because we are sons God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying, Abba, Father*; so that we are no more servants, but sons; and if sons, then heirs of God through Christ. This is the communion which the Saints enjoy with the three Persons of the blessed Trinity: this is the heavenly Fellowship represented unto entertaining Abraham, when the Lord appeared unto him, and three men stood by him; for our Saviour hath made us this most precious promise, *If any man love me he will keep my words, and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him*. Here is the soul of man made the habitation of God the Father and of God the Son; and the presence of the Spirit cannot be wanting where those two are inhabiting: for *if any man have not the Spirit of Christ he is none of his*. The Spirit therefore with the Father and the Son inhabiteth in the Saints; for know ye not, saith the Apostle, *that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you*?

Phil. 2. 1.

κοινωνία
Πατρὸς καὶ
Υἱοῦ.

2 Cor. 13. 14.

Gal. 4. 6, 7.

Gen. 18. 1, 2.

John 14. 23.

Rom. 8. 9.

1 Cor. 3. 15.

Fourthly, The Saints of God in the Church of Christ have communion with the holy Angels. They who did fore-tell the birth of John the fore-runner of Christ, they who did annunciate unto the blessed Virgin the conception of the Saviour of the World, they who sung a glorious hymn at the Nativity of the Son of God, they who carried the soul of Lazarus into Abraham's bosom,

they who appeared unto *Christ* from Heaven in his agony to strengthen him, they who opened the prison doors and brought the Apostles forth, they who at the end of the world shall sever the wicked from among the just, and gather together the elect of God, certainly they have a constant and perpetual relation to the children of God. Nay, *Are they not all ministering spirits sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?* They have a particular sense of our condition, for *Christ* hath assured us that *there is joy in the presence of the Angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.* And upon this relation the Angels, who are all the Angels, that is, the Messengers of God, are yet called the Angels of men, according to the admonition of *Christ*, *Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones, for I say unto you, That in heaven their Angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.*

Heb. 1. 14.

Luke 15. 10.

Math. 18. 10.

Thus far have we considered the *Communion of Saints* with such as are distinguished from them by nature as they are men; the fellowship which they have in Heaven with God, and his holy Angels, while they are on earth. Our next consideration will be, what is the communion which they have with those who are of the same nature, but not partakers of the same holiness with them.

Fifthly therefore, the Saints of God, while they are of the Church of *Christ* on earth, have some kind of communion with those men which are truly Saints. There were not hypocrites among the *Jews* alone, but in the Church of *Christ* many cry, Lord, Lord, whom he knoweth not. The tares have the privilege of the field, as well as the wheat, and the bad fish of the net, as well as the good. The Saints have communion with hypocrites in all things with which the distinction of a Saint and Hypocrite can consist. They communicate in the same water, both externally baptized alike; they communicate in the same Creed, both make the same open profession of Faith, both agree in the acknowledgment of the same principles of Religion; they communicate in the same word, both hear the same doctrine preached; they communicate at the same table, both eat the same bread, and drink the wine, which *Christ* hath appointed to be received: but the Hypocrite doth not communicate with the Saint in the same saving grace, in the same true faith working by love, and in the same renovation of mind and spirit, for then he were not an hypocrite but a Saint: a Saint doth not communicate with the hypocrite in the same sins, in the same lurking infidelity, in the same unfruitfulness under the means of grace, in the same false pretence and empty form of godliness, for then he were not a Saint but an hypocrite. Thus the saints may communicate with the wicked, so they communicate not with their wickedness, and may have fellowship with sinners, so they have no fellowship with that which makes them such, that is, their sins. The Apostles command runneth thus, *Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness*; and again, *Be not partakers of other mens sins*; and a voice from Heaven spake concerning *Babylon*; *Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins.* To communicate with sin is sin, but to communicate with a sinner in that which is not sin, can be no sin; because the one defileth, and the other cannot, and that which defileth not is no sin.

Ephes. 5. 11.

Μη κοινωνώ-
μετε τοῖς ἔργ-
οις.

1 Tim. 5. 22.

Μη κοινωνή-
σῃς.

Rev. 18. 4.

Ἦτε μὴ κοι-
νωνήσατε τῷ ἁμαρ-
τω.

Duobus modis non te maculat malus, si ei non consentias, & si redarguas. Communicatur enim quando facto ejus consortiū voluntatis vel approbationis adjungitur. Hoc ergo admonens Apostolus ait, Nolite commu-
care operibus infructuosus tenebrarum, magis autem & redarguite, S. Aug. de Verbis Dom. Sermon. 18.

Having thus considered those who differ from the Saints of God; first, in respect of their humanity, as they are men; secondly, in reference to their sanctity, as they are men of holiness: we are now to consider such as differ either only in person, as the Saints alive, or in present condition also, as the Saints departed.

Sixthly,

Sixthly, therefore, the Saints of God living in the Church of *Christ*, have communion with all the Saints living in the same Church. *If we walk in the light, we have fellowship one with another*: we all have benefit of the same ordinances, all partake of the same promises, we are all endued with the graces of the same mutual love and affection, keeping the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace, all engrafted into the same stock, and for receiving life from the same root, all *holding the same head, from which all the body by joynts and bands having nourishment ministred and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God*. For in the Philosophy of the Apostle the nerves are not only the instruments of motion and sensation, but of nutrition also; so that every member receiveth nourishment by their intervention from the head: and being the head of the body is *Christ*, and all the Saints are members of that body, they all partake of the same nourishment, and so have all communion among themselves.

Lastly, The Saints of God living in the Church of *Christ*, are in communion with all the Saints † departed out of this life and admitted to the presence of God. *Jerusalem* sometime is taken for the Church on earth, sometimes for that part of the Church which is in heaven, to shew that as both are represented by one, so both are but one City of God. Wherefore thus doth the Apostle speak to such as are called to the Christian Faith, *Ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the City of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and an innumerable company of Angels, to the general Assembly and Church of the first-born, which are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, and to Jesus the Mediator of the new Covenant*. Indeed, the Communion of Saints in the Church of *Christ* with those which are departed is demonstrated by their Communion with the Saints alive. For if I have communion with a Saint of God, as such, while he liveth here, I must still have communion with him when he is departed hence; because the foundation of that communion cannot be removed by death. The mystical union between *Christ* and his Church, the spiritual conjunction of the members to the head, is the true foundation of that communion which one member hath with another; all the members living and increasing by the same influence which they receive from him. But death, which is nothing else but the separation of the soul from the body, maketh no separation in the mystical union, no breach of the spiritual conjunction, and consequently, there must continue the same communion, because there remaineth the same foundation. Indeed, the Saint departed, before his death had some communion with the hypocrite, as hearing the Word, professing the Faith, receiving the Sacraments together; which being in things only external, as they were common to them both, and all such external actions ceasing in the person dead, the hypocrite remaining loseth all communion with the Saint departing, and the Saints surviving cease to have further fellowship with the hypocrite dying. But the true and unfeigned holiness of man wrought by the powerful influence of the Spirit of God not only remaineth, but also is improved after death; being the correspondence of the internal holiness was the communion between their persons in their life, they cannot be said to be divided by death, which had no power over that sanctity by which they were first conjoined.

This Communion of the Saints in heaven and earth, upon the mystical union of *Christ* their head, being fundamental and internal, what acts or external operations it produceth is not so certain. That we communicate with them in hope of that happiness which they actually enjoy is evident; that we have the Spirit of God given us as an earnest, and so a part of their felicity is certain.

1 John 1. 7.
κοινωνία μετ'
ἀλλήλων.

Coloss. 2. 19.

† This is that part of the Communion of Saints which those of the Ancients especially insisted upon who first took notice of it in the Creed. Sanctorum Communionem, i.e. cum illis Sanctis qui in hac quam suscepimus fide defuncti sunt societate & spei communione teneamur, Serm. 181. de Tempore. Et qui nunc cognoscitis per auditum communionem habetis cum Sanctis Martyribus, & per illos cum Domino Jesu Christo. Pref. Pass. S. Perpetue.

1 Heb. 12. 22, 23.

certain. But what they do in heaven in relation to us on earth particularly considered, or what we ought to perform in reference to them in heaven, beside a reverential respect, and study of imitation, is not revealed unto us in the Scriptures, nor can be concluded by necessary deduction from any principles of Christianity. They which first found this part of the Article in the Creed, and delivered their exposition unto us, have made no greater enlargement of this Communion, as to the Saints of heaven, and the society * of hope, esteem and imitation on our side, of desires and supplications on their side : and what is now taught by the Church of Rome, is, as unwarrantable, so a novitious interpretation.

* We have already produced the words of the 181 Sermon de Tempore, concerning hope. In the same we find also that of imi-

tation, Si igitur cum Sanctis in æterna vita communionem habere volumus, de imitatione eorum cogitemus. Debent enim in nobis aliquid recognoscere de suis virutibus, ut pro nobis dignentur Domino supplicare, *ib.* Hæc sunt vestigia quæ nobis Sancti quoque revertentes in patriam nobis reliquerant, ut illorum semitis inhærentes sequeremur ad gaudia, *ib.* Beside this imitation, he addeth their desires and care for us below. Cur non properamus & carrimus ut patriam nostram videre possimus? Magnus illic charorum numerus expectat, parentum, fratrum, filiorum, frequens nos & copiosa turba desiderat jam de sua incolumitate secura, adhuc de nostra salute sollicita, *ib.* Of the venerable esteem we ought to have of them, speaks Eusebius Gallicanus, Credamus & Sanctorum communionem, sed Sanctos non tam pro Dei parte, quam pro Dei honore veneremur. And again, Digne nobis venerandi sunt dum Dei cultum, & futuræ vitæ desiderium contemptu mortis insinuant. Thus far anciently they which expounded this Article : but the late Exposition of the Church of Rome runneth thus, Non solum Ecclesia quæ est in terris communicat bona sua cum omnibus membris sibi conjunctis, sed etiam communicat iustitia Ecclesiæ quæ est in Purgatorio, & Ecclesia quæ est in cœlis communicat orationes, & merita sua cum Ecclesia quæ est in terris, Bellar. in Symb. Where the communication of the Suffrages of the Saints alive to the Church in Purgatory, and the communication of the merits of the Saints in heaven to the Saints on earth, are novel expositions of this Article, not so much as acknowledged by Thomas Aquinas in his explication of the Creed, much less to be found in any of the ancient Expositors of it.

The necessity of the belief of this Communion of Saints appeareth, first, •
 1 John 1. 6, 7. in that it is proper to excite and encourage us to holiness of life. *If we walk*
 2 Cor. 6. 14, 15. *in the light, as God is in the light, we have fellowship one with another. But if*
we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not
the truth. For what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and
what communion hath light with darkness? and what concord hath Christ with
 Acts 26. 18. *Belial? When Christ sent S. Paul to the Gentiles, it was to open their eyes, and*
to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that
they might receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are san-
ctified by faith that is in Christ. Except we be turned from darkness, except
we be taken out of the power of Satan, which is the dominion of sin, we
 Col. 1. 12. *cannot receive the inheritance among them who are sanctified; we cannot be*
thought meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light. Indeed
there can be no communion where there is no similitude, no fellowship with
God without some sanctity; because his nature is infinitely holy, and his
actions are not subject to the least iniquity.

Secondly, The belief of the Communion of Saints is necessary to stir us up to a proportionate gratitude unto God, and an humble and chearful acknowledgment of so great a benefit. We cannot but acknowledge that they are exceeding great and precious promises, by which we become partakers of the divine nature. What am I? said David, and what is my life that I should be son in law to the King? What are the sons of men, what are they which are called to be saints, that they should have fellowship with God the Father? S. Philip the Apostle said unto our Saviour, Lord, shew us the Father and it sufficeth; whereas he hath not only shewn us, but come unto us with the Father, and dwelt within us by his holy Spirit; he hath called us to the fellowship of the Angels and Archangels, of the Cherubins and Seraphins, to the glorious company of the Apostles, to the goodly fellowship of the Prophets, to the noble Army of Martyrs, to the holy Church militant in earth, and triumphant in heaven.

Thirdly, The belief of the Communion of Saints is necessary to inflame our hearts with an ardent affection towards those which live, and a reverent respect

ſpect towards thoſe which are departed and are now with God. Nearneſs of relation requireth affection, and that man is unnatural who loveth not thoſe perſons which nature hath more immediately conjoynd to him. Now no conjunction natural can be compared with that which is ſpiritual, no temporal relation with that which is eternal. If ſimilitude of ſhape and feature will create a kindneſs, if congruity of manners and diſpoſition will conjoyn affections, what ſhould be the mutual love of thoſe who have the image of the ſame God renewed within them, of thoſe who are endued with the gracious influences of the ſame ſpirit? And if all the Saints of God living in communion of the Church deſerve the beſt of our affections here on earth: certainly when they are diſſolved and with *Chriſt*, when they have been bleſſed with a ſight of God, and rewarded with a Crown of Glory, they may challenge ſome reſpect from us who are here to wait upon the will of God expecting when ſuch a happy change ſhall come.

Fourthly, This tendeth to the directing and enlarging our acts of charity. We are obliged to be charitable unto all men, because the love of our Brother is the foundation of our duty towards man, and in the Language of the Scriptures whosoever is another is our Brother; but we are particularly directed to them that are of the household of Faith. And as there is a general reason calling for our mercy, and kindness unto all men, so there is a more special reason urging those who are truly sanctified by the Spirit of God to do good unto such as appear to be led by the same Spirit: for if they communicate with them in the everlasting mercies of God, it is fit they should partake of the bowels of mans compassion; * if they communicate with them in things spiritual and eternal, can it be much that they should partake with them of such things as are temporal and carnal?

To conclude, Every one may learn from hence what he is to understand by this part of the Article, in which he professeth to believe *the Communion of Saints*; for thereby he is conceived to express thus much, I am fully persuaded of this as of a necessary and infallible truth, that such persons as are truly sanctified in the Church of *Christ*, while they live among the crooked generations of men, and struggle with all the miseries of this world, have fellowship with God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, as dwelling with them, and taking up their habitations in them: that they partake of the care and kindness of the blessed Angels, who take delight in the ministrations for their benefit: that beside the external fellowship which they have in the Word and Sacraments with all the members of the Church, they have an intimate union and conjunction with all the Saints on earth as the living members of *Christ*; nor is this union separated by the death of any, but as *Christ* in whom they live, is the Lamb slain from the foundation of the World, so have they fellowship with all the Saints which from the death of *Abel* have ever departed in the true faith and fear of God, and now enjoy the presence of the Father, and follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. And thus I believe *the Communion of Saints*.

* Κοινωνήσεις
ἐν πάσι πε-
ρ πληστον συ-
νέβη· ἴδια· εἰ-
ζὼ ἐν τοῖς ἀ-
φάρτοις κοι-
νωνοῖσθε, πόσω
μᾶλλον ἐν τοῖς
εὐαρεστοῖς;
Barnabe Epist.
part. 2. cap. 12.

ARTICLE X.

The Forgiveness of Sins.

* Therefore Carolus Magnus in his Capitula. l. 3 c. 6. inveighs against Basilium the Bishop of Ancyra, because in his Confession of Faith which he delivered in the second Council of Nice (A.D. 1.) he omitted the Remission of sins,

THis Article hath *always been expressly contained and acknowledged in the Creed, as being a most necessary part of our Christian profession: and for some Ages it immediately followed the Belief of the † Holy Church, and was therefore added immediately after it, to shew that the remission of sins was to be obtained in the .: Church of Christ. For being the Creed at first was made to be used as a confession of such as were to be baptized, declaring their Faith in the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, in whose baptism they were to be admitted, and the forgiveness of sins, which by the same baptism was to be obtained; and therefore in some Creeds it was particularly expressed, ** I believe one baptism for the forgiveness of sins.

which the Apostles in so short a Compendium as the Creed would not omit, Hanc Apostoli in collatione fidei, quam ab invicem discessuri quasi quendam credulitatis & prædicationis normam statuerunt, post confessionem Patris & Filii & Spiritus Sancti posuissent perhibentur; & in tanti verbi brevitatem, de quo per Prophetam dictum est, Verbuni abbreviatum faciet Dominus super terram, hanc ponere minime distulerunt, quia sine hac fidei sinceritatem integram esse minime perpererunt. Nec cohibuit eos ab ejus professione illius Symboli brevitatem, quam exercebat sacra fidei integritas, tantique doni veneranda sublimitas. † Concordant autem Angeli nobiscum etiam tunc cum remittantur nostra peccata. Ideo post commemorationem S. Ecclesiæ in ordine Confessionis ponitur Remissio peccatorum: per hanc enim fiat Ecclesia quæ in terris est, per hanc non perit, quod perierat & inventum est, S. Aug. Enchir. c. 64. And to this purpose it is that in his Book De Agone Christiano, passing from one Article to another with his general transition; after that of the Church, he proceedeth with these words, Nec eos audiamus qui negant Ecclesiam Dei omnia peccata posse dimittere, cap. 31. So it followeth also in Venantius Fortunatus, and in such other Creeds as want that part of the former Article of the Communion of Saints. .: Orig. Hom. 2. in Genesim. Sanctam Ecclesiam teneat... in qua & remissio peccatorum & carnis resurrectio prædicabatur, Ruffin. in symb. Sed neque de ipsis criminibus quamlibet magnis remittendis in S. Ecclesia desperanda est misericordia, S. Aug. Enchir. c. 65. In remissionem peccatorum. Hac in Ecclesia si non esset, nulla spes esset. Remissio peccatorum si in Ecclesia non esset, nulla futura vitæ & liberationis æternæ spes esset. Gratias agimus Deo qui Ecclesiæ suæ dedit hoc donum, Author Homil. 119. de Tempore. Quia singuli quique cætus Hæreticorum se potissimum Christianos, & suam esse Catholicam Ecclesiam putant; sciendum est illam esse veram, in qua est religio, confessio, & pœnitentia, quæ peccata & vulnera, quibus est subjecta imbecillitas carnis salubriter curat. Laſtant. l. 4. c. 30. ** These are the words of the Constantinopolitan Creed, 'Ομολογῶ ἐν βάπτισμα εἰς ἄφεσιν ἁμάρτιων. Before which Epiphanius in his lesser Creed, 'Ομολογῶ ἐν βάπτισμα εἰς ἄφεσιν ἁμάρτιων in the larger, Πιστεύω εἰς μίαν καθολικὴν καὶ ἀποσταλικὴν Ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ εἰς βάπτισμα μετάνοιαι, in Anconato. S. Cyril both these together, Εἰς ἐν βάπτισμα μετάνοιαι εἰς ἄφεσιν ἁμάρτιων. Pelegrinus Laurenc. Episc. Credo unum Baptismum in remissionem omnium peccatorum. Symbolum Æthiopicum. Credimus unum Baptisma in remissionem omnium peccatorum in secula seculorum.

Looking thus upon this Article, with this relation, we find the sense of it must be this, that we believe *forgiveness of sins* is to be obtained in the Church of Christ. For the explication whereof it will be necessary; first to declare what is the nature of remission of sins, in what that action doth consist: secondly, to shew how so great a privilege is propounded in the Church, and how it may be procured by the members of the Church. That we may understand the notion of *forgiveness of sins*, three considerations are required; first, what is the nature of sin, which is to be forgiven: secondly, what is the guilt or obligation of sin, which wanteth forgiveness; thirdly, what is the remission it self, or the loosing of that obligation.

As the power of Sin is revealed only in the Scriptures, so the nature of it is best understood from thence. And though the writings of the Apostles give us few definitions, yet we may find even in them a proper definition of Sin. *Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law*, saith S. John, and then rendreth this reason of that universal assertion, *for sin is the transgression of the law*. Which is an argument drawn from the Definition of sin; for he saith not, *Every sin is the transgression of the law*, which had been necessary, if he had spoken by way of proposition only, to have proved the Universality of his Assertion, but produceth it indefinitely, *Sin is the transgression of the Law*, which

which is sufficient, speaking it by way of † definition. And it is elsewhere most evident that every sin is something prohibited by some Law, and deviating from the same. For the Apostle affirming, that *the law worketh wrath*, that is, a punishment from God, giveth this as a reason or proof of his affirmation, *for where no law is, there is no transgression*. The Law of God is the rule of the actions of men, and any aberration from that rule is * sin: the Law of God is pure, and whatsoever is contrary to that Law is impure. Whatsoever therefore is done by man, or is in man, having any contrariety or opposition to the Law of God, is sin. Every action, every word, every thought against the Law is a sin of commission, as it is terminated to an object dissonant from, and contrary to the prohibition of the Law, or a negative Precept. Every omission of a duty required of us, is a sin, as being contrary to the commanding part of the Law, or an affirmative Precept. Every evil habit contracted in the soul of man by the actions committed against the Law of God, is a sin constituting a man truly a sinner, even then when he actually sinneth not. Any corruption and inclination in the soul, to do that which God forbiddeth, and to omit that which God commandeth, howsoever such corruption and evil inclination came into that soul, whether by an act of his own will, or by an act of the will of another, is a sin, as being something dissonant and repugnant to the Law of God. And this I conceive sufficient to declare the nature of Sin.

† The manner of the Apostles speech is also to be observed, having an Article prefixed both to the subject and the predicate; as if thereby he would make the proposition convertible, as all definitions ought to be, *ἡ ἀδικία ἐστὶν ἡ ἀνομία*.

* Rom. 4. 15.

* Quid est peccatum nisi pravariatio legis divinæ, & cœlestium inobedientia peccatorum? S. Ambros. de Paradiso. c. 8. Peccatum est factum vel dictum vel concupitum ali-

quid contra æternam legem, S. August. contra Faustum, l. 22. c. 27. Quid verum est nisi & Dominum dare præcepta, & animas liberæ esse voluntatis, & malum naturam non esse, sed esse aversionem à Dei præceptis? Idem de Fide contra Manich. cap. 10. Neque negandum est hoc Deum jubere, ira nos in facienda justitia esse debere perfectos ut nullum habeamus omnino peccatum: nam neque peccatum erit, si quid erit, si non divinitus jubeatur ut non sit, Idem de Pec. Meritis, & Rem. lib. 2. cap. 16.

The second particular to be considered is the obligation of sin, which must be presupposed to the solution or remission of it. Now every sin doth cause a guilt, and every sinner, by being so, becomes a guilty person: which guilt consisteth in a debt or obligation to suffer a punishment proportionable to the iniquity of the sin. It is the nature of Laws in general to be attended with these two punishments, and rewards; the one propounded for the observation of them, the other threatened upon the deviation from them. And although there were no threats or penal denunciations accompanying the Laws of God, yet the transgression of them would nevertheless make the person transgressing worthy of, and liable unto, whatsoever punishment can in justice be inflicted for that sin committed. Sins of commission pass away in the acting or performing of them, so that he which acteth against a negative Precept, after the act is passed, cannot properly be said to sin. Sins of omission, when the time is passed in which the affirmative Precept did oblige unto performance, pass away: so that he which did then omit his duty when it was required, and in omitting sinned, after that time cannot be truly said to sin. But though the sin it self do pass away together with the time in which it was committed, yet the guilt thereof doth never pass which by committing was contracted. He which but once committeth adultery, at that one time sinneth, and at no time after can be said to commit that sin; but the guilt of that sin remaineth on him still, and he may be for ever said to be guilty of adultery, because he is for ever subject to the wrath of God, and † obliged to suffer the punishment due unto adultery.

† This Obligation unto punishment, remaining after the act of sin, is that Peccati Reatus

of which the Schools, and before them the Fathers speak. The nature of this Reatus is excellently declared by S. Austin, delivering the distinction between actual and original Sin. In eis qui regenerantur in Christo cum remissionem accipiunt prorsus omnium peccatorum; utique necesse est ut reatus etiam hujus licet adhuc manentis Concupiscentie remittatur, ut in peccatum non imputeretur. Nam sicut peccatorum quæ manere non possunt, quoniam cum sunt prætereunt, reatus tamen manet, & nisi remittatur, in æternum manebit; sic illius Concupiscentie, quando remittitur, reatus aufertur. Hoc est

enim non habere peccatum, reum non esse peccati. Nam si quisquam virg. fecerit adulterium etiam nunquam deinceps faciat reus est adulterii, donec reatus ipsius indulgentia remittatur. Habet ergo peccatum, quamvis illud quod admisit jam non sit, quia cum tempore quo factum est praterit. Nam si à peccando desistere hoc esset non habere peccatum sufficeret ut hoc nos moneret Scriptura. *Fili peccasti, non adjicias iterum*: Non autem sufficit, sed addidit, & de pristinis deprecare, ut tibi remittantur. Manent ergo nisi remittantur. Sed quomodo manent si praterita sunt, nisi quia praterierunt actu, manent reatu, S. Aug. de Nupt. & Concup. l. 1. c. 25. Ego de Concupiscentia dixi quæ est in membris repugnans legi mentis, quamvis Reatus ejus in omnium peccatorum remissione transierit, sicut è contrario sacrificium idolis factum, si deinceps non fiat, praterit actu, sed manet reatu, nisi per indulgentiam remittatur. Quiddam enim tale est sacrificare idolis ut opus ipsum cum sit pratercat, eodemq; praterito Reatus ejus maneat venia resolvendus, Idem cont. Julian. l. 6. c. 8.

^a Matt. 5. 22.

*Ενοχῶ ἔσται is the word used here, which is translated, shall be in danger, but is of a fuller and more pressing sense, as one which is a debtor, subject, and obliged to endure it, Helych. *Ενοχῶ, ἔσται, ὡς δὲ δυνάμει, ὡς ἀνάγκῃ. Suid. *Ενοχῶ, ὡς ἀνάγκῃ. Where by the way is to be observed a great

mistake in the Lexicon of Favorinus, whose words are these; *Ενοχῶ, ὡς ἀνάγκῃ, ἔσται. *Ενοχῶ, ὡς ἀνάγκῃ, Τίμαιος. The first taken out of Helychius, the last out of Suidas, corruptly and absurdly, corruptly *Ενοχῶ for *Ενοχῶ, absurdly Τίμαιος is added either as an interpretation of *Ενοχῶ, or as an Author who used it, whereas Τίμαιος in Suidas is only the first word of the sentence, provided by Suidas for the use of *Ενοχῶ in the signification of ὡς ἀνάγκῃ. Agreeable unto Helychius is that in the Lexicon of S. Cyril. *Ενοχῶ, Obnoxius, reus, obligatus. And so in the place of S. Matthew the old Latine Translation, Reus erit judicio. As in Virgil, Constituam ante aras voti reus, Servius, voti reus, Debitor. Unde vota solventes dicimus absolutos. Inde est, Damnabis tu quoq; voti, quasi reos facies. So the Syriack, ܢܘܢܝܢ ܗܘ ܕܡܝܢ ܕܝܢ ܕܡܝܢ ܕܝܢ from ܕܝܢ obligatum, debitorem, reum esse. For indeed the word *Ενοχῶ among the Greeks, as to this matter, hath a double signification, one in respect of the sin, another in respect of the punishment due unto the sin. In respect of a sin, as that in Antiphon, μὴ ὄντα φοβία μηδὲ ἔνοχον τῷ ἔργῳ, and that in Aristotle, Oecon. 2. ἔνοχον ἔχεισιν ἱεροσυλίας ἐστιάει, and that in Suidas taken out of Polybius. Τίμαιος καὶ τὰ ἑσέρε πεποιήσιν καὶ ἀδελφοὺς αὐτὸς ἐν ὅτῃ θανάτῳ ἀμαρτήμασιν ἔνοχῶ. τῷ μὲν, ὅτι πικρὰς κατηγόρει ὅς πῃλας ὄντα τῷ τοῖς οἷς αὐτὸς ἔνοχος ὄντα. In respect of the punishment of a sin, he is ἔνοχῶ ἀνά, who is obnoxious to the curse, and ἔνοχῶ ἐπιτίμῳ, obnoxious to the punishment. Ἐμποίνῃ, ἔμποίνῃ, τῷ τοῖς, ἔνοχῶ ποιῇ, ὅς ἐσ' οἷς ἡμαρτίαι δὲς τιμωρίαι. Suidas. Thus ἔνοχῶ θανάτῳ ὄντα, Matt. 26. 66. ܢܘܢܝܢ ܗܘ ܕܡܝܢ ܕܝܢ ܕܡܝܢ ܕܝܢ is not in the intention of the Jews, he is in danger of death, but he deserveth death, and he ought to die, he is κατὰ δίκην, by their sentence, as far as in them lay, condemned to die. S. Chrysostom. Τί ἐν ἐκείνοις; ἔνοχος ὄντα θανάτῳ. ἵν' ὡς κατὰ δίκην λαβόντες, ἔτω τὸ Πιλάτον λοιπὸν ἀποφύλαξαι παρασκευάσωσιν. ὁ δὲ καὶ οἱ ὡμιθεύτες φασίν, *Ενοχῶ θανάτῳ ὄντα, αὐτοὶ κατηγόρουσιν, αὐτοὶ δικάζουσιν, αὐτοὶ φησὶν, πάντες αὐτοὶ γινόμενον τότε. ^b Matt. 3. 28, 29.

God who hath the Sovereign power and absolute dominion over all men, hath made a Law to be a perpetual and universal rule of humane actions; which Law whosoever doth violate, or transgress, and thereby sin, (for by sin we understand nothing else but the transgression of the Law) is thereby obliged in all equity to suffer the punishment due to that obliquity. And after the act of sin is committed and passed over, this guilt resulting from that act, remaineth; that is, the person who committed it, continueth still a debtor to the vindictive Justice of God, and is obliged to endure the punishment due unto it: which was the second particular to be considered.

The third Consideration now followeth, what is *the Forgiveness of Sin*, or in what *Remission* doth consist. Which at first appeareth to be an act of God toward a sinner, because the sin was committed against the Law of God, and therefore the punishment must be due from him, because the injury was done unto him. But what is the true notion and nature of this act, or how God doth

doth forgive a sinner, is not easie to determine : nor can it be concluded out of the words themselves which do expresse it, the niceties of whose † origi-

† The word used in the Creed is ἀφεσις αὐτῶν, and that generally likewise

in use in the New Testament. But from thence we cannot be assured of the nature of this act of God, because ἀφίεναι and ἀφίσις are capable of several interpretations. For sometimes ἀφίεναι is emittere, and ἀφίσις emissio. As Gen. 35. 18. Ἐξέλιθον τὸ πνεῦμα, not cum dimitteret eam anima, as it is translated, but cum emitteret ea animam, i.e. efflaret : as ἀφίεναι τὸ πνεῦμα, emitit spiritum. Mat. 25. 50. So Gen. 45. 2. Καὶ ἀφίεναι τὸν κλαυθμὸν, not dimisit, but emisit vocem cum fletu, as ἀφίεναι τὸν κλαυθμὸν, emissit voce magna, Mark 15. 37. In the like manner ἀφίσις θαλάσσης are emissiones maris, 2 Sam. 22. 16. as ἀφίσις ὑδάτων, Joel 1. 20. in which sense may be referred that of Hesyck. Ἀφίσις, ὑπὸ πλησῆ. And this interpretation of ἀφίσις can have no relation to the remission of sins. Secondly, ἀφίεναι is often taken for permittere, as Gen. 2. 6. καὶ ἀφίεναι τὸν ὕδρα αὐτῆς. Mat. 3. 15. Ἀφίεναι τὸν ὕδρα αὐτῶν, which the Vulgar translated well, Sine modo, and then ill, Tunc dimisit eum, Mat. 7. 4. ἀφίεναι ἐκβάλλω, sine ejiciam ; So Hesyck. ἀφίσις, συγχώρησις. And this hath as little relation to the present subject. Thirdly, ἀφίεναι, is sometimes relinquere and deferere. as Gen. 43. 33. ἀφίεναι ἐνὰ ἀφίσις ὡς μετ' ἐμὸν, Mat. 5. 24. ἀφίεναι τὸ δάκρυον σου, 7. 4. καὶ ἀφίεναι αὐτὸν ὁ πυρετός, 19. 27. ἰδὲ, ἡμεῖς ἀφίεναι πάντας, 26. 56. τότε οἱ μαθηταὶ πάντες ἀφίεναι αὐτὸν ἐξυγόν. And in this acceptance it cannot explicate unto us what is the true notion of ἀφίεναι αὐτῶν. Fourthly, it is taken for omitttere, as Mat. 23. 23. καὶ ἀφίεναι τὰ βαρύτερα τῶ νόμου, and Luke 11. 42. ταῦτα ἴδὲ ποιῆσαι, καὶ ἀφίεναι, and yet we have nothing to our present purpose. But fifthly, it is often taken for remitttere, and that particularly in relation to a debt, as Mat. 18. 27. τὸ δάνειον ἀφίεναι αὐτῷ, and v. 32. τῶσαν τὴν οὐκ ἐκείνην ἀφίεναι αὐτοῖς. Which acceptance is most remarkable in the year of release, Deut. 15. 1, 2. Δι' ἐπὶ τὴν ἑβδμήτην ποιήσεις ἀφίσις. καὶ ἔτω τὸ πένταγμα τὸ ἀφίσις. ἀφίσις πᾶν χρεὶσιν ὁ δόξαι σου ὁ πλησίον, καὶ τὸ ἀφίεναι σου ἐν ἀφίσις, ὅτι ἐκείνην καὶ ἀφίσις. Kueio τὸ δέω σὺ. Now this remission or release of debts hath a great affinity with remission of sins ; for Christ himself hath conjoined these two together, and called our sins by the name of debts, and promised remission of sins to us by God, upon our remission of debts to man. And therefore he hath taught us thus to pray, Ἀφίεναι ἡμῖν τὰ δεικνύμενα ἡμῶν, ὡς καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφίεναι τοῖς δεικνύμενοις ἡμῶν, Mat. 6. 12. Besides he hath not only made use of the notion of debt, but any injury done unto a man, he calls a sin against man, and exhorteth to forgive those sins committed against us, that God may forgive the sins committed by us, which are injuries done to him, Luke 17. Ἐάνθρωπος τις σε ὁ ἀδικῶς σε, ὅτι τιμῶν αὐτὸν, καὶ ἐάν μελάνοις, ἀφίεναι αὐτόν.

For although the word signifying Remission have one sense among many other which may seem proper for this particular concernment, yet because the same word hath been often used to signify the same action of God in forgiving sins, where it could have no such particular notion, but several times hath * another signification tending to the same effect, and as proper to the remission of sins, therefore I conceive the nature of forgiveness of sins is rather to be understood by the consideration of all such ways and means which were used by God in the working and performing of it, than in this, or any other word which is made use of in expressing it.

* We must not only look upon the propriety of the words used in the New Testament, but we must also reflect

upon their use in the Old, especially in such subjects as did belong unto the Old Testament as well as the New. Now ἀφίεναι αὐτῶν, is there used for the Verb כפר, as Isa. 22. 14. : יכפר העון הזה לכם כגם עון אבותי, sometimes for the Verb נשח, as Gen. 50. 17. ונשח אחיך פשע נא שח, ἀφίεναι αὐτοῖς τὸ δίκαιον καὶ τὸν αὐτῶν αὐτοῦ. Psal. 25. 18. ושא לכל חטאותי καὶ ἀφίεναι πᾶσας τὰς ἀδικίας μου. And in that remarkable place which S. Paul made use of to declare the nature of remission of sins, Psal. 32. 1. : עשיתי פשע נא שח, ἀφίεναι αὐτοῖς τὸ δίκαιον καὶ τὸν αὐτοῦ αὐτοῦ. Sometimes it is taken for כפר as Numb. 14. 19. : כפר נא רעון העם הזה, ἀφίεναι τὸν αὐτῶν αὐτοῦ τὸν λαόν σου, Lev. 4. 20. : כפר נא רעון העם הזה, ἀφίεναι αὐτοῖς τὸν αὐτῶν αὐτοῦ. Now being ἀφίεναι in relation to sins, is used for כפר, signifying expiation and reconciliation ; for נשח signifying elevation, portation or ablation ; for כפר signifying pardon and indulgence ; we cannot argue from the word alone, that God in forgiving sins doth only and barely release the debt. There is therefore no force to be laid upon the words ἀφίσις ἀμαρτιῶν, Remissio peccatorum, or, as the ancient Fathers, Remissa peccatorum. So Tertullian, Diximus de remissa peccatorum, adv. Marc. lib. 4. cap. 18. S. Cyprian Epist. 14. Qui blasphemaverit in Spiritum Sanctum non habet remissionem, sed reus est eterni peccati. Idem de Bono Patien. Dominus baptizatur a servo, & remissionem peccatorum daturus, ipse non dignatur lavacro regenerationis corpus ablucere. Idem lib. 3. Epist. 8. of an infant, Qui ad remissionem peccatorum recipiendam hoc ipso facilius accedit, quod illi remittuntur non propria sed aliena peccata. Add the Interpreter of Irenæus concerning Christ, Remissionem peccatorum existentem his qui credunt in eum.

Now that we may understand what was done toward the remission of sins, that from thence we may conclude what is done in it : it is first to be observed, that * almost all things by the law were purged by blood, and without shedding of blood there is no remission. And what was then legally done, was but a type of that which was to be performed by Christ ; and therefore the blood of Christ must necessarily be involved in the remission of sins ; for he † once in the end of the world hath appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. It must then be acknowledged, and can be denied by none, that Christ did suffer a painful and a shameful death, as we have formerly described it ; that the death which he endured, he did then suffer for sin ; for this man, saith the

* Heb. 9. 22. Χωρίς αίματος ἡ καθαίρεσις τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἀφίεναι. † Heb. 9. 26. It is not only ἀφίσις, but ἀφίεναι τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν.

Heb. 10. 12. Apostle, offered one sacrifice for sins; that the sins for which he suffered were not his own, for *Christ hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust*, he was *holy, harmless, undefiled, and separate from sinners*, and therefore had no sin to suffer for; that the sins for which he suffered, were ours, for *he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; He was delivered for our offences, he gave himself for our sins, he died for our sins according to the Scriptures*; that the dying for our sins was suffering death as a punishment taken upon himself, to free us from the punishment due unto our sins: for God laid on him the iniquity of us all, and made him to be sin for us who knew no sin: he hath born our griefs and carried our sorrows, the chastisement of our peace was upon him, and with his stripes are we healed; that by the suffering of this punishment to free us from the punishment due unto our sins it cometh to pass that our sins are forgiven, for, *This is my blood*, saith our Saviour, *of the New Testament, (or Covenant) which is shed for many for the remission of sins. In Christ we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins according to the riches of his grace.*

In which deduction or series of truths we may easily perceive that *the forgiveness of sins*, which is promised unto us, which we upon that promise do believe, containeth in it a Reconciliation of an offended God, and a Satisfaction unto a just God; it containeth a Reconciliation, as without which God cannot be conceived to remit; it comprehendeth a Satisfaction, as without which God was resolved not to be reconciled.

For the first of these, We may be assured of forgiveness of sins, because *Christ* by his death hath reconciled God unto us, who was offended by our sins; and that he hath done so, we are assured; because he which before was angry with us, upon the consideration of *Christ's* death, becomes propitious unto us, and did ordain *Christ's* death to be a propitiation for us. For we are *justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ, whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood. We have an advocate with the Father, and he is the propitiation for our sins. For God loved us and sent his Son to be a propitiation for our sins.* It is evident therefore that *Christ* did render God propitious unto us by his blood, (that is, his sufferings unto death) who before was offended with us for our sins. And this propitiation amounted to a reconciliation, that is, a kindness after wrath. We must conceive that God was angry with mankind before he determined to give our Saviour; we cannot imagine that God who is essentially just, should not abominate iniquity. The first affection we can conceive in him upon the lapse of man, is wrath and indignation. God therefore was most certainly offended before he gave a Redeemer, and though it be most true, that he *so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son*; yet there is no incongruity in this, that a Father should be offended with that Son which he loveth, and at that time offended with him when he loveth him. Notwithstanding therefore that God loved men whom he created, yet he was offended with them when they sinned, and gave his Son to suffer for them, that through that Son's obedience he might be reconciled to them.

2 Cor. 5. 18. This Reconciliation is clearly delivered in the Scriptures as wrought by *Christ*; For *all are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ*; and that by virtue of his death, for *when we were enemies we were reconciled unto God by the death of his Son, making peace through the blood of his cross, and by him reconciling all things unto himself.* In vain it is objected that the Scripture saith our Saviour reconciled men to God, but no where teacheth that he reconciled God to man; for in the language of the Scripture to reconcile a man to God, is in our vulgar language to reconcile God to man, that is to cause

cause him who before was angry and offended with him to be gracious and propitious to him. As the Princes of the *Philistines* spake of *David*, *Wherewith should he reconcile himself unto his Master? should it not be with the heads of these men?* wherewith shall he reconcile *Saul* who is so highly offended with him, wherewith shall he render him gracious and favourable but by betraying these men unto him; As our Saviour adviseth, *If thou bring thy gift before the Altar, and there remembreſt that thy brother hath ought against thee, leave there thy gift before the Altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother*, that is, reconcile thy Brother to thy self, whom thou hast injured, render him by thy submission favourable unto thee, who hath something against thee, and is offended with thee. As the Apostle adviseth the wife that *departeth from her husband, to remain unmarried, or to be reconciled to her husband*, that is, to appease and get the favour of her husband. In the like manner we are said to be reconciled unto God, when God is reconciled, appeased and become gracious and favourable unto us, and Christ is said to reconcile us unto God, when he hath moved, and obtained of God to be reconciled unto us, when he hath appeased him and restored us unto his favour. Thus *when we were enemies we were reconciled to God*, that is, notwithstanding he was offended with us for our sins, we were restored unto his favour, *by the death of his Son*.

Whence appeareth the weakness of the *Socinian* exception, that in the Scriptures † we are said to be reconciled unto God: but God is never said to be reconciled unto us. For by that very expression, it is understood, that he which is reconciled in the Language of the Scriptures, is restored unto the favour of him who was formerly offended with that person which is now said to be reconciled. As when *David* was to be reconciled unto *Saul*, it was not that *David* should lay down his enmity against *Saul*, but that *Saul* should become propitious and favourable unto *David*: and therefore where the Language is that *David* should be reconciled unto *Saul*, the sense is, that *Saul*, who was exasperated and angry, should be appeased and so reconciled unto *David*.

vel Deo reconciliati; ut ex omnibus locis quæ de reconciliatione agunt videre est, *Cat. Rac. c. 8.* To this may be added the observation of Socinus. Ita communem ferre loquendi consuetudinem, ut scilicet is reconciliatus fuisse dicatur, per quem stabat ne amicitia aut denuo existeret, aut conservaretur: de Christo Servatore, p. 1. c. 8. Which observation is most false, as appeareth in the case of *Saul* and *David*, and in the person mentioned in the Gospel, who is commanded to be reconciled unto him whom he had offended, and who had something against him.

Nor is it any wonder God should be thus reconciled to sinners by the death of Christ, who *while we were yet sinners died for us*, because the punishment which Christ, who was our Surety, endured, was a full satisfaction to the will and justice of God. *The Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.* Now a ransom is a price given to redeem such as are any way in captivity; any thing laid down by way of compensation, to take off a bond or obligation, whereby he which before was bound becometh free. All sinners were obliged to undergo such punishments as are proportionate to their sins, and were by that obligation captivated and in bonds, and Christ did give his life a ransom for them, and that a proper ransom, if that his life were of any price, and given as such. For a ransom is properly nothing else but something of * price given by way of redemption, to buy or purchase that which is detained, or given for the releasing of that which is enthralled. But it is most evident that the life of Christ was laid down as a price, neither is it more certain that he died, than that

† Sam. 29. 4.

Εν τίνι δια-
λασθήσεται ὁ
πῶς κνέσῃ αὐ-
τῷ; ὅχι ἐν ἡ-
κεφάλαις; ὅτι
ἀνδρῶν ἐκεί-
νων; Π3 Π

acceptum se
reddet, ita se
geret ut Saul
eum in gratiam
recipere velit.

Mat. 5. 23, 24.
Πρῶτον διαλα-
σθήτω τὸ ἀ-
δελφῷ σου.

† I Cor. 7. 11.

Rom. 5. 10.

† Ad hæc ve-
ro quod nos
Deo reconcili-
ari quid as-
fers? Primum,
nufquam Scri-
pturam asse-
rere, Deum
nobis à Chri-
sto reconcilia-
tum, verum id
tantum quod
nos per Chri-
stum aut mor-
tem ejus sumus
reconciliati,

* Mat. 20. 28.

Δύναται τὴν ψυ-
χὴν αὐτοῦ λύ-
σον ἀντὶ πολ-
λῶν. What is
the true notion of
λύσον will easi-
ly appear, because
both the origi-
nation and use of
the word is suf-
ficiently known.
The Originati-
on is from λύω
solvere to loose,
λύσον quasi

λυτήιον. Etym. Θρίπτεα τὰ θρεπτήρια, ὡς τὰ λύβια τὰ λυτήρια Eustath. Δίγει δὲ Θρίπτεα (ita leg.) τὰ τε-
ρεῖα ἐκ τῶ θρεπτήριου καὶ Συγκοπλῶ· ὡς λυτήρια λύβια, σωτήρια σωσέα, Iliad. δ'. Λύσον igitur quicquid datur ut quis
solvatur.

folvatur. Ἐπὶ αἰχμαλώτων ἔξωιπας οἰκτὸν τὸ λύειν. ὅθεν καὶ λύβη τὰ δῶρα λέγονται τὰ εἰς τὸ διδόναι, Eustathius upon that of Homer Iliad. α. Λυσοῦντις τε θυλίαν. It is properly spoken of such things as are given to redeem a captive, or recover a man into a free condition. Heyseh. πάντα τὰ διδόναι εἰς ἀνάλυσιν ἀνθρώπων, (ὅς I read it, not ἀνέκλυσιν.) So that whatsoever is given for such a purpose is λύβη, and whatsoever is not given for such an end deserveth not the name in Greek. As the City Antandrus was so called because it was given in exchange for a man who was a captive. "Ὅτι Ἀτκάντι αἰχμαλωτὶ ἐρύετο ὑπὸ Πελασγῶν καὶ ἀντὶ αὐτῆς πῶν ἐδόθη, καὶ ἀπελύθη. Etym. So that there can be nothing more proper in the Greek Language than the words of our Saviour, δέναι ἢ λύβην αὐτὴν λύτεν ἀντὶ πολλῶν. δέναι λύτεν, for λύτεν is τὸ διδόναι, and ἀντὶ πολλῶν, for it is given, ἀντὶ ἀνθρώπων, as that City was called, Ἀντανδρῶν. ἦσαν ἀντὶ ἀνδρὸς διδομένη. And therefore 1 Tim. 2. 6. it is said, ὁ δὲ εἰς ἐμὴν ἀντίλυττον ἑστὶ πάντων. * Heyseh. Λύτεν, τίμημα.

1 Cor. 6. 20. he bought us; *Ye are bought with a price*, saith the Apostle, and it is the Lord
7. 23. *who bought us*, and the price which he paid was his blood, for * *We are not re-*
2 Pet. 2. 1. *deemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, but with the precious blood of*
* 1 Pet. 1. 18, *Christ*. Now as it was the blood of Christ, so was it a price given by way of
19. This is suf- compensation; and as that blood was precious, so was it a full and perfect
ficiently expres- satisfaction. For as the gravity of the offence and iniquity of the sin is augmen-
sed by two words ted, and increaseth, according to the dignity of the person offended and injur-
each of them ful- ed by it, so the value, price and dignity of that which is given by way of com-
ly significative pensation, is raised according to the dignity of the person making the satisfac-
of a price: the tion. God is of infinite Majesty, against whom we have sinned, and Christ is
first simple of the same divinity who gave his life a rancome for sinners; for God hath *pur-*
which is ἀγορά- chased his Church with his own blood. Although therefore God be said to remit
ζω, the second of our sins by which we were captivated, yet he is never said to † remit the price
in composition, without which we had never been redeemed: neither can he be said to have
which is ἔξαγο- remitted it, because he did require it and receive it.
εἶναι. That the
word ἀγοράζω
in the New Te-
stament, signi-
fieth properly to
buy, appeareth

generally in the Evangelists, and particularly, in that place of the Revelation 13. 17. ἵνα μὴ τις δώνηται ἀγοράσαι ἢ πωλήσῃ. In the same signification it is attributed undoubtedly unto Christ in respect of us whom he is often said to have bought, as 2 Pet. 2. 1. ἢ ἀγοράσῃ αὐτοὺς ἀποδόντω ἀνθρώποι, and this buying is expressed to be by a price, 1 Cor. 6. 20. ἔκ ἐστι ἐμῆς, ἡγοράσθη ὑδὲ τιμῆς. Vulg. Non estis vestri, empti enim estis pretio magno, & 1 Cor. 6. 23. Τιμῆς ἡγοράσθητε, μὴ γίνεσθε δούλοι ἀνθρώπων. What this price was is also evident, for the τιμὴ was the τιμὴ αἵμα, the precious blood of Christ, or the blood given by way of price, Rev. 5. 9. ὅτι ἐσθράγυν καὶ ἡγοράσας πῶς Θεὸς ἡμᾶς ἐκ πῶς αἵματι σου. Which will appear more fully by the compound word ἔξαγοράζω. Gal. 3. 13. Χεῖρε; ἡμᾶς ἔξηγοράσεν ἐκ τῆς κατάρας τοῦ νόμου, ἡγοράσθη ὑμῶν κατὰ τὴν ἐκ τῆς κατάρας, and Gal. 4. 4, 5. ἡγοράσθη ὑμῶν κατὰ τὸν νόμον, ἵνα τοὺς ὑμῶν κατὰ τὸν νόμον, ἔξαγοράσεν. Now this ἔξαγοράσας is proper redemption, or λύτρωσις, upon a proper price, though not silver or gold, yet as proper as silver and gold, and far beyond them both, ἢ εὐαγγελιστὶ ἀγγεῖον ἢ χρυσίον ἐλυβώθητε ἐκ τῆς ματαίας ὑμῶν ἀναστροφῆς πατέρων ὑμῶν, ἀλλὰ τιμῆς αἵματι ὅς ἀμνὸς ἀμώμης καὶ ἀσίλου, Χεῖρε; 1 Pet. 1. 18, 19. † As λύτρεν is a certain price given or promised for liberty, so ἀγείρειν λύβην is to remit the price set upon the head of any man or promised for him. As we read in the Testament of Lycon the Philosopher, Δημοκρίτης μὲν ἐλδοθίειν πάλαι ὄντι ἀγίμνι τὰ λύβη. Demetrius had been his servant, and he had set him free upon a certain price which he had engaged himself to pay for that Liberty, the sum which Demetrius was thus bound to pay, Lycon at his death remits; as also to Criton. Κεῖτονι δὲ Κερχηδοσίῳ, καὶ τέτρω, τὰ λύβη ἀγίμνι. Diag. Laert.

If then we consider together, on our side the nature and obligation of sin, in Christ the satisfaction made, and reconciliation wrought, we shall easily perceive how God forgiveth sins, and in what Remission of them consisteth. Man being in all conditions under some Law of God, who hath Sovereign power and dominion over him, and therefore owing absolute obedience to that Law, whensoever any way he transgresseth that Law, or deviateth from that Rule, he becomes thereby a sinner, and contracteth a guilt which is an obligation to endure a punishment proportionable to his offence; and God who is the Lawgiver and Sovereign, becoming now the party wronged and offended, hath a most just right to punish man as an offender. But *Christ* taking upon him the nature of man, and offering himself a sacrifice for sin, giveth that unto God for and instead of the eternal death of man, which is more valuable and acceptable to God than that death could be, and so maketh a sufficient compensation and full satisfaction for the sins of man; which God accepting, becometh reconciled unto us, and for the punishment which Christ endured, taketh off our obligation to eternal punishment.

Thus man who violated by sinning the Law of God, and by that violation offended God, and was thereby obliged to undergo the punishment due unto the sin, and to be inflicted by the wrath of God, is, by the price of the most precious

cious

cious blood of Christ, given and accepted in full compensation and satisfaction for the punishment which was due, restored unto the favour of God, who being thus satisfied, and upon such satisfaction reconciled, is faithful and just to take off all obligation unto punishment from the sinner; and in this act of God consisteth *the forgiveness of sins*. Which is sufficient for the first part of the explication of this Article, as being designed for nothing else but to declare what is the true notion of *Remission of sins*, in what that action doth consist.

The second part of the Explication, taking notice not only of the substance, but also of the Order of the Article, observing the immediate connexion of it with the *Holy Church*, and the relation, which in the opinion of the Ancients it hath unto it, will endeavour to instruct us how this great priviledge of *forgiveness of sins* is propounded in the Church, how it may be procured and obtained by the members of the Church.

At the same time when our Saviour sent the Apostles to gather a Church unto him, he foretold that *repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem*; and when the Church was first constituted, they thus exhorted those whom they desired to come into it, *Repent and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, and, Be it known unto you that through this man is preached unto you forgiveness of sins*. From whence it appeareth that the *Jews and Gentiles* were invited to the Church of Christ, that they might therein receive remission of sins; that the doctrine of remission of all sins propounded and preached to all men, was proper and peculiar to the Gospel, which teacheth us *that by Christ all that believe are justified from all things, from which they could not be justified by the law of Moses*. Therefore *John the Baptist*, who went before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways, gave knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins. Luke 24. 47.
Acts 3. 29.
13. 38.
Acts 13. 39.

This, as it was preached by the Apostles at the first gathering of the Church of Christ, I call proper and peculiar to the Gospel, because the same doctrine was not so propounded by the Law. For if we consider the Law it self strictly and under the bare notion of a Law, it promised life only upon perfect, absolute, and uninterrupted obedience; the voice thereof was only this, *Do this and live*. Some of the greater sins nominated and specified in the Law, had annexed unto them the sentence of death, and that sentence irreversibile; nor was there any other way or means left in the law of *Moses* by which that punishment might be taken off. As for other less and more ordinary sins, there were sacrifices appointed for them, and when those sacrifices were offered and accepted, God was appeased, and the offences were released. Whatsoever else we read of sins forgiven under the Law, was of some special divine indulgence, more than was promised by *Moses*, though not more than was promulgated unto the people, in the name and of the nature of God, so far as something of the Gospel was mingled with the Law.

Now as to the atonement made by the Sacrifices, it clearly had relation to the death of the *Messias*, and whatsoever virtue was in them did operate through his death alone. As he was the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world, so all atonements which were ever made, were only effectual by his blood. But though no sin was ever forgiven but by virtue of that satisfaction, though God was never reconciled unto any sinner but by intuition of that propitiation; yet the general doctrine of remission of sins was * never clearly revealed, and publicly preached to all Nations, till the coming of the Saviour of the World, whose name was therefore called *Jesus*, because he was to save his people from their sins.

Being therefore we are assured that the preaching Remission of sins belongeth

* Lex peccatorum nescit remissionem; lex mysterium non habet quo ocula purgantur: & ideo quod in lege minus est consumatur in Evangelio.
S. Ambr. in Lucam, l. 6. c. 7.

longeth not only certainly, but in some sense peculiarly, to the Church of *Christ*, it will be next considerable how this Remission is conferred upon any person in the Church.

For a full satisfaction in this particular two things are very observable, one relating to the Initiation, the other concerning the Continuation of a Christian. For the first of these, it is the most general and irrefragable Assertion of all, to whom we have reason to give credit, that all sins whatsoever any person is guilty of, are remitted in the Baptism of the same person. For the second, it is as certain that all sins committed by any person after Baptism are remissible, and the person committing those sins, shall receive forgiveness upon true Repentance, at any time, according to the Gospel.

First, It is certain that *Forgiveness of Sins* was promised to all who were baptized in the name of *Christ*; and it cannot be doubted but all persons who did perform all things necessary to the receiving the ordinance of Baptism, did also receive the benefit of that Ordinance, which is *remission of sins*. *John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the Baptism of Repentance for the remission of Sins*. And *S. Peter* made this the exhortation of his first Sermon, *Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins*. In vain doth doubting and fluctuating * *Socinus* endeavour to evacuate the evidence of this Scripture: attributing the Remission either to Repentance without consideration of Baptism, or else to the publick Profession of Faith made in Baptism; or if any thing must be attributed to Baptism it self, it must be nothing but a declaration of such remission. For how will these shifts agree with that which *Ananias* said unto *Saul*, without any mention either of Repentance or Confession, *Arise and be baptized, and wash away thy sins*, and that which *S. Paul*, who was so baptized, hath taught us concerning the Church, that *Christ* doth *sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water*. It is therefore sufficiently certain that Baptism as it was instituted by *Christ* after the preadministration of *S. John*, wheresoever it was received with all qualifications necessary in the person accepting, and conferred with all things necessary to be performed by the person administering, was most infallibly efficacious, as to this particular, that is, to the remission of all sins committed before the administration of this Sacrament.

Mark 1. 1.

Acts 2. 38.

* Vel Baptismo illi hoc est, ablutioni peccatorum Remissionem, nequaquam tribuit Petrus, sed poenitentiae; vel si Baptismi quoque rationem ea in re habuit, aut quatenus publicam nominis Jesu Christi professionem continet eam tantum consideravit; aut si ipse etiam externae ablutionis termino rationem habere voluit, quod ad ipsam attinet remissionis peccatorum nomine non ipsam remissionem verè sed remissionis declarationem, & obligationem quandam intellexit, Soc. de Baptismo.

^a Acts 22 16. ^b Ephes. 5. 26.

† *S. Chrysostom speaking of the power of the Priests, & ὁ δὲ ταυτην μὲν ἀντιφρονῶν μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ καὶ τῶν συγχρηστῶν ἔχουσιν ἐξουσίαν ἀμνηστίας.* De Sacerd. 3. Excepto baptismatis munere, quod contra originale peccatum donatum est, (ut quod generatione attractam est regeneratione detrahatur, & tamen activa quoque peccata quaecumque corde, ore, opere commissa invenerit tollit) hac ergo excepta magna indulgentia (unde incipit hominis renovatio) in qua solvitur omnis reatus & ingeneratus & additus, ipsa etiam vita cetera iam ratione utentis ætatis, quantalibet præpollent secunditate justitia, sine remissione peccatorum non agitur; quoniam filii Dei quamdiu mortaliter vivunt cum morte contigunt: & quamvis de illis sit veraciter dictum, *Quotquot Spiritui Dei aguntur, hi filii sunt Dei*: sic tamen Spiritu Dei excitantur, & tanquam filii Dei proficiunt ad Deum, ut etiam ipiricu suo (maxime aggravante corruptibili corpore) tanquam filii hominum quibusdam moribus humanis deficiant ad seipsos & peccent, *S. Aug. Enchir. c. 44.* Οὕτω καὶ καὶ τὸ βάπτισμα ἐκκαθαίρειται ἀμνηστία καὶ πόνη πολλὰ καὶ καμάρτα. Πᾶσαν τοίνυν ὁπδὲν ἐξώμεθα σπασθῶμεν, ὥστε αὐτὰ ἐξέλθωμεν ἐν τοῦ θέν, καὶ ἀρχήν καὶ τὴν κολᾶσται; ἀπολλομένη καὶ ἐμὴ, καὶ ὅδὲ μὲν ἐὰν ἀμνηστίας καὶ ἀνὲν ἐλπίδων, δωρησώμεθα πάντα τὰ τῶν ἀποθνήσκοντων ἀμνηστίας τὰ φορτία. *S. Chrys. Hom. in Penitencol. 1.* Quod autem scriptum, & sanguis Jesu filii ejus mundat nos ob omni peccato tam in Confessione Baptismatis, quam in clementia poenitudinis accipiendam est, *S. Hieron. adv. Pelag. l. 2.*

As those which are received into the Church by the Sacrament of Baptism receive the Remission of their sins of which they were guilty before they were baptized: so † after they are thus made members of the Church, they receive remission of their future sins by their repentance. *Christ* who hath left us a pattern of prayer, hath thereby taught us for ever to implore and beg the forgiveness of our sins; that as we through the frailty of our nature are always subject unto sin, so we should always exercise the acts of repentance,

and

and for ever seek the favour of God. This then is the comfort of the Gospel, that as it discovereth sin within us, so it propoundeth a remedy unto us. While we are in this life encompassed with flesh, while the allurements of the world, while the stratagems of Satan, while the infirmities and corruptions of our nature betray us to the transgression of the Law of God; we are always subject to offend, (from whence whosoever saith *that he hath no sin is a liar*, contradicting himself, and contracting iniquity by pretending innocency) and so long as we can offend, so long we may apply our selves unto God by repentance, and be renewed by his Grace, and pardoned by his Mercy.

And therefore the Church of God, in which *Remission of sin* is preached, doth not only promise it at first by the Laver of Regeneration, but afterwards also upon the Virtue of Repentance; and to deny the Church this power of Absolution is the * Heresie of *Novatian*.

* I call this the
Heresie of No-

van rather than of Novatus, because though they both joined it, yet it is rather sprung from Novatianus the Roman Presbyter, than from Novatus the African Bishop. And he is thus expressed by Epiphanius, λέγων μὴ τὴν ὁμολογίαν, ἀλλὰ μίαν μετάνοιαν· ὡς ὅτι τὸ λυγρὸν, μηκέτι διωκτὸς ἐλεῖσθαι παρεπεσπικτότα· that is, he acknowledged but one Repentance which was available in Baptism; after which if any man sinned, there was no mercy remaining for him. To which Epiphanius gives this reply, Ἡ μὲν τελεία μετάνοια ἐν τῷ λυγρῷ τυγχάνει· εἰ δέ τις παρῆπεν ἐκ πολλῶν τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἢ ἀγία τοῦ Θεοῦ Ἐκκλησία, διδοὺς καὶ ἐπὶ ἀνομιᾶν, καὶ ὡς τῷ μετάνοιαν τῷ μετάνοιαν· and again, λέγειται ἐν ὁμοιοῦ λόγῳ καὶ ἡ ἀγία Θεοῦ Ἐκκλησία παρῆπεν τῷ μετάνοιαν· and yet more generally, Τὰ πάντα σαφῶς τελεσθέντα ὡς τῷ λυγρῷ ἐκδιώκται, ἔτι ὅσων ἐν τῷ ἀγῶνι πάσῃ, καὶ ὡς πῶσιν ἔτι ἀνάστασις· ἔτι ἐλπίς, ἔτι θεία χάρις, ἔτι ὁμολογία· καὶ εἰ μὴ τελείαται, ἀλλ' ἐν τῇ αἰσῶνι ἀπὸ πηρὸς αἰσῶνι ἢ σωτηρία. Har. 59.

The necessity of the belief of this Article appeareth, first, because there can be no Christian consolation without this perswasion. For we have all sinned and come short of the glory of God, nay, God himself hath concluded all under sin, we must also acknowledge that every sinner is a guilty person, and that guilt consisteth in an obligation to endure eternal punishment from the wrath of God provoked by our sins; from whence nothing else can arise but a fearful expectation of everlasting misery. So long as guilt remaineth on the soul of man, so long is he in the condition of the Devils, *delivered into chains and reserved unto judgement.* For we all fell as well as they, but with this difference, remission of sins is promised unto us, but to them it is not. 2 Pet. 2. 4.

Secondly, It is necessary to believe *the forgiveness of sins*, that thereby we may sufficiently esteem God's goodness and our happiness. When man was fallen into sin, there was no possibility left to him to work out his recovery; that soul which had sinned must of necessity die, the wrath of God abiding upon him for ever. There can be nothing imaginable in that man which should move God not to shew a demonstration of his justice upon him; there can be nothing without him which could pretend to rescue him from the sentence of an offended and Almighty God. Glorious therefore must the goodness of our God appear, who dispenseth with his law, who taketh off the guilt, who looseth the obligation, who imputeth not the sin. This is God's goodness, this is man's happiness. For *blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered; blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth no iniquity.* The year of release, the year of Jubilee, was a time of publick joy; and there is no voice like that, *thy sins are forgiven thee.* By this a man is rescued from infernal pains, secured from the everlasting flames; by this he is made capable of Heaven, by this he is assured of eternal happiness. Psal. 31. 1, 2.

Thirdly, It is necessary to believe *the forgiveness of sins*, that by the sense thereof we may be inflamed with the love of God. For that love doth naturally follow from such a sense, appeareth by the Parable in the Gospel, *There was a certain creditor which had two debtors, the one owed him five hundred pence, the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them* Luke 6. 41, 42.

both. Upon which case our Saviour made this question, *Which of them will love him most?* He supposeth both the debtors will love him, because the creditor forgave them both; and he collecteth the degrees of love will answer proportionably to the quantity of the debt forgiven. We are the debtors, and our debts are sins, and the creditor is God: the remission of our sins is the frank forgiving of our debts, and for that we are obliged to return our love.

Fourthly, The true notion of *forgiveness of sins* is necessary to teach us what we owe to *Christ*, to whom, and how far we are indebted for this forgiveness. *Acts 13. 38.* *Through this man is preached unto us the forgiveness of sins,* and without a surety we had no release. He rendered God propitious unto our persons, because he gave himself as a satisfaction for our sins. While thus he took off our obligation to punishment, he laid upon us a new obligation of obedience. We *1 Cor. 15. 20.* *are not our own who are bought with a price: we must glorifie God in our bodies* *1 Cor. 7. 22, 23.* *and in our spirits, which are God's.* We must be no longer *the servants of men,* we are *the servants of Christ, who are bought with a price.*

Fifthly, It is necessary to believe *remission of sins* as wrought by the blood of *Christ*, by which the Covenant was ratified and confirmed; which mindeth us of a condition required. It is the nature of a Covenant to expect performances on both parts: and therefore if we look for forgiveness promised, we must perform repentance commanded. These two were always preached together, and those which God hath joined ought no man to put asunder. *Acts 5. 31.* *Christ did truly appear a Prince and a Saviour, and it was to give repentance to Israel and forgiveness of sins;* He joined these two in the Apostles commission, saying, that *Repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name* *Luke 24. 47.* *throughout all nations.*

From hence every one may learn what he is explicitly to believe and confess in this Article of *forgiveness of sins*; for thereby he is conceived to intend thus much, I do freely and fully acknowledge, and with unspeakable comfort embrace this as a most necessary and infallible Truth, That whereas every sin is a transgression of the Law of God, upon every transgression there remaineth a guilt upon the person of the transgressor, and that guilt is an obligation to endure eternal punishment, so that all men being concluded under sin, they were all obliged to suffer the miseries of eternal death, it pleased God to give his Son, and his Son to give himself to be a surety for this debt, and to release us from these bonds; and because without shedding of blood there is no remission, he gave his life a sacrifice for sin, he laid it down as a rancome, even his precious blood as a price by way of compensation and satisfaction to the Will and Justice of God, by which propitiation God, who was by our sins offended, became reconciled, and being so, took off our obligation to eternal punishment, which is the guilt of our sins, and appointed in the Church of *Christ* the Sacrament of Baptism for the first remission, and Repentance for the constant forgiveness of all following trespasses; and thus *I believe the forgiveness of sins.*

ARTICLE XI.

The Resurrection of the Body.

THis Article was anciently delivered and acknowledged † by all Churches, only with this difference, that whereas in other places it was expressed in general terms, *the Resurrection of the flesh*, they of the Church of *Aquileia* by the addition of a Pronoun propounded it to every single Believer in a more particular way of expression, *the Resurrection of this flesh*. And though we have translated it in our *English Creed*, *the Resurrection of the body*; yet neither the *Greek* nor *Latine* ever delivered this Article in those terms, but in these, *the * Resurrection of the flesh*; because there may be ambiguity in the one, in relation to the celestial and Spiritual bodies, but there can be no collusion in the other. Only it will be necessary, for shewing our agreement with the ancient Creeds, to declare that as by *flesh* they understood the body of man, and not any other flesh, so we, when we translate it *body*, understand no other *body*, but such a body of flesh, of the same nature which it had before it was by death separated from the Soul. And this we may very well and properly do, because our Church hath already taken care therein, and given us a fit occasion so to declare our selves. For though in the Creed it self, used at Morning and Evening Prayer, the Article be thus delivered, [*the Resurrection of the body*] yet in the Form of Publick Baptism, where it is propounded by way of question to the God-fathers in the name of the Child to be baptized, it runneth thus [*Dost thou believe----the Resurrection of the flesh?*] We see by daily experience, that all men are mortal, that the body left by the soul; the salt and life thereof, putrifieth and consumeth, and according to the sentence of old, returneth unto dust; but these bodies, as frail and mortal as they are, consisting of this corruptible flesh, are the subject of this Article, in which we profess to believe *the Resurrection of the body*.

*hujus carnis resurrectionem, Id. in Symb. Sive ergo corpus resurrecturum dicimus, secundum Apostolum dicimus, (hoc enim nomine usus est) sive carnem dicimus, secundum traditionem Symboli confitemur. Idem Prol. in Apolog. Pamphili. * The Greeks always ἀνάστασιν, the Latins Carnis Resurrectionem. And this was to be observed, because, being we read of spiritual bodies, some would acknowledge the Resurrection of the body, who would deny the Resurrection of the flesh. Of this S. Jerome gives an account, and withal of the words of the Creed. Exempli causa pauca subijciam, Credimus, inquit, resurrectionem futuram corporum. Hoc si bene dicatur, pura confessio est; sed quia corpora sunt coelestia, & terrestria; & aer iste & aura tenuis juxta naturam suam corpora nominantur, corpus ponunt, non carnem, ut Orthodoxus corpus audiens carnem putet, Hæreticus spiritum recognoscat. Hæc enim eorum est prima decipula; quæ si deprehensa fuerit, instruant alios dolos, & innocentiam simulant, & maliciosos nos vocant, & quasi simpliciter credentes alunt, Credimus resurrectionem carnis. Hoc vero cum dixerint, vulgus indoctum putat, sibi sufficere, maxime quia id ipsum & in Symbolo creditur. Ep. 55. ad Pam. & Oceam.*

† Cum omnes Ecclesiæ ita sacramentum Symboli tradant, ut postquam dixerant peccatorum remissionem, addant carnis resurrectionem: sancta Aquileiensis Ecclesia, ubi tradit carnis resurrectionem, addit unius pronominis syllabam; & pro eo quod cæteri dicunt, carnis resurrectionem, nos dicimus hujus carnis resurrectionem, Ruffin. Apol. adv. Hæc. Satis cauta & provida adjunctione fidem Symboli Ecclesiæ nostræ docet quæ in eo quod à cæteris traditur, carnis resurrectionem, uno addito pronomine tradit,

When we treated concerning the Resurrection of *Christ*, we † delivered the proper notion and nature of the Resurrection in general, that from thence we might conclude that our Saviour did truly rise from the dead. Being now to explain the Resurrection to come, we shall not need to repeat what we then delivered, or make any addition as to that particular, but referring the Reader to that which is there explained, it will be necessary for us only to consider what is the Resurrection to come, who they are which shall be raised, how we are assured they shall rise, and in what manner all shall be performed. And this Resurrection hath some peculiar difficulties different from those which might seem to obstruct the belief of *Christ's* Resurrection. For the body of the Son of God did never see corruption; all the parts thereof

continued in the same condition in which they were after his most precious Soul had left them, they were only deposited in the Sepulchre, otherwise the Grave had no power over them. But other mortal Bodies, after the Soul hath deserted them, are left to all the sad effects of their mortality; we may
Job 17: 14, 16. say to corruption, thou art my Father, to the worm, thou art my Mother and my Sister; our corps go down to the bars of the pit, and rest together in the dust.
 Our death is not a simple dissolution, not a bare separation of Soul and Body as *Christ's* was, but our whole Tabernacle is fully dissolved, and every part thereof crumbled into dust and ashes, scattered, mingled and confounded with the dust of the Earth. There is a description of a kind of Resurrection in the Prophet *Ezekiel*, in which there is supposed, *a valley full of bones, and there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone, the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them above, and their breath came into them, and they lived and stood upon their feet.* But in the Resurrection to come we cannot suppose the bones in the Valley, for they are dissolved into dust as well as the other parts.

Ezek. 7: 1, 7, 8, 10.

We must therefore undertake to shew that the bodies of men howsoever corrupted, wheresoever in their parts dispersed, how long soever dead, shall hereafter be recollected in themselves, and united to their own Souls. And for the more facil and familiar proceeding in this so highly concerning truth, I shall make use of this method: First, To prove that such a Resurrection is not in it self impossible. Secondly, To shew that it is upon general considerations highly probable. Thirdly, To demonstrate that it is upon Christian principles infallibly certain. It is not in it self impossible, therefore no man can absolutely deny it; it is upon natural and moral grounds highly probable, therefore all men may rationally expect it; it is upon Evangelical principles infallibly certain, therefore all Christians must firmly believe it.

* Pliny reckoning up these things which he thought not to be in the power of

God, mentions these two, *mortales æternitate donare, aut revocare defunctos, l. 2. c. 7.* And *Æschylus*, though a Pythagorean, yet absolutely denies it to be in the power of God, for so he makes *Apollo* speak to the *Eumenides*.

Πέδας μὲν ἂν λύσειν, ἔστι τῷδ' ἄκθ'
 καὶ κέφα πολλὴ μηχανὴ λύσειθ'.
 Ἄνδρες δ' ἐπειδὴν αἶμα' ἀρασάσθαι κίονι
 Ἄπαρ θάρσειθ', ὅτις ἔσ' ἀνδρατί.
 Τύπον ἐποδὰς ἐκ ἐποίησεν πατὴρ
 Οὐμὸς, τὰδ' ἄλλα πάντ' ἄνω τε καὶ κάτω
 Σβίψων τίθησιν, ἔδην ἀδμείνων μένει.

Æschyl. Eumenid.

Uti anima interire dicatur, ab Epicureis observatur: Ut carnis restitutio negetur, de una omnium Philosophorum schola fumitur. *Tertull.*

Acts 17. 12.

bodies, and that their flesh should rise out of the dust that it might be conjoined to the Spirit of a man. We read of *certain Philosophers of the Epicureans and of the Stoicks, who encountered S. Paul, and when they heard of the resurrection they mocked him, some saying, that he seemed to be a setter forth of strange Gods, because he preached unto them Jesus and the Resurrection.* But as the ancient Philosophers thought a Creation impossible, because they looked only upon the constant works of nature, among which they never find any thing produced out of nothing, and yet we have already proved a Creation not only possible, but performed; so did they think a Resurrection of corrupted, dissolved and dissipated bodies to be as impossible, because they could never observe any action or operation in nature, which did or could produce any such effect; and yet we being not tied to the consideration of nature only, but estimating things possible and impossible by the power of God,

God, will easily demonstrate that there is no impossibility that the dead should rise.

For, if the Resurrection of the dead be impossible, it must be so in one of these respects: either in reference to the Agent, or in relation to the Patient; either because it is a work of so much difficulty that there neither is nor can be any Agent of wisdom, power, and activity sufficient to effect it; or else because the soul of man is so far separated by death from the body, and the parts of the body so much dissolved from themselves and altered from their nature, that they are absolutely incapable by any power to be united as they were. Either both, or one of these two must be the reason of the impossibility, if the Resurrection be impossible; for if the body be capable of being raised, and there be any Agent of sufficient ability to raise it, the resurrection of it must be possible.

Now if the Resurrection were impossible in respect of the Agent which should effect it, the impossibility must arise * either from an insufficiency of knowledge or of power; for if either the Agent know not what is to be done, or if he know it, but hath no power to do it, either he will not attempt it, or if he do, must fail in the attempt; but that, of which he hath perfect knowledge, and full power to effect, cannot be impossible in relation to the Agent endued with such knowledge, armed with such power.

ποῖναι καλῶς τὸ ἐγνωσμένον. Ὁ γὰρ ἀγνοῶν τι τῆς φύσεως δεινῶν ἐκ ἀνέτ' ἐγχερήσει ἅτε ποιεῖναι τὸ πᾶσαν δυνάμειν ὅσοι ἀγνοεῖ ὅτε γνώσκων καλῶς τὸ ποιησόμενον καὶ πόθεν γένοιτ' αὐτὸ καὶ πῶς, δυνάμειν ἢ ἢ ἢ ἢ ὅπως ἔχων πρὸς τὸ ποιεῖναι τὸ γνωσόμενον ἢ μὴ ἀρκῶσαι ἔχων ἐκ ἀν' ἐγχερήσει * ἀρχὴν, ἐπὶ αὐτοῖς καὶ τὴν ἰδίαν ὁπισκίψας δυνάμειν, ἐγχερήσει ἢ ἀπεισκήσῃ ὡς ἐκ ἀν' ὅτι τελέσει τὸ δέξαν, Athenagoras de Resurrectione.

* τὸ ἀδυνατῶν
τινὶ γνώσκε-
ται καὶ ἀλή-
θειαν τοῖς τε, ἢ
ἐκ τῶ μὴ γι-
γνώσκων τὸ
γνωσόμενον, ἢ
ἐκ τῶ δυνάμειν
ἀρκῶσαι μὴ
ἔχων πρὸς τὸ

Now when we say the Resurrection is possible, we say not it is so to men or Angels or any creature of a limited knowledge or finite power, but we attribute it to God, *with whom nothing is impossible*; his understanding is infinite, he knoweth all the men which ever lived since the foundation, or shall live unto the dissolution of the world, *he knoweth whereof all things are made*, from what *dust* we came, into what *dust* we shall return. Our substance was not hid from thee, O Lord, when we were made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth; thine eyes did see our substance, yet being imperfect, and in thy book were all our members written, which in continuance were fashioned when as yet there was none of them. Thus every particle of our bodies, every dust and atome which belongeth to us, is known to him that made us. The Generation of our flesh is clearly seen by the *Father of spirits*, the augmentation of the same is known to him *in whom we live, move, and have our being*; the dissolution of our tabernacles is perceived by that God, by whom the *very hairs of our head are all numbred*, and *without whom one sparrow shall not fall to the ground*. He which numbreth the sands of the Sea, knoweth all the scattered bones, seeth into all the Graves and Tombs, searcheth all the Repositories and Dormitories in the Earth, knoweth what dust belongeth to each body, what body to each soul. Again, As his all-seeing eye observeth every particle of dissolved and corrupted man, so doth he also see and know all ways and means by which these scattered parts should be united, by which this ruined fabrick should be recompensed, he knoweth how every bone should be brought to its old neighbour bone, how every sinew may be reimbroided on it; he understandeth what are the proper parts to be conjoined, what is the proper *gluten* by which they may become united. The Resurrection therefore cannot be impossible in relation to the Agent upon any deficiency of knowledge how to effect it.

And as the Wisdom is infinite, so the power of this Agent is illimited; for
God

God is as much Omnipotent as Omniscient. There can be no opposition made against him, because all power is his; nor can he receive a check against whom there is no resistance: All creatures must not only suffer, but do what he will have them; they are not only passively, but actively obediential. There is no atome of the dust or ashes but must be where it pleaseth God, and be applied and make up what and how it seemeth good to him. The Resurrection therefore cannot be impossible in relation unto God upon any disability to effect it, and consequently there is no impossibility in reference to the Agent, or him who is to raise us.

Secondly, The Resurrection is not impossible in relation to the Patient, because where we look upon the power of God, nothing can be impossible but that which involveth a contradiction, as we before have proved; and there can be no contradiction in this, that he which was, and now is not, should hereafter be what before he was. It is so far from a repugnancy, that it rather containeth a rational and apparent possibility, that man who was once dust, becoming dust, should become man again. Whatsoever we lose in death, is not lost to God: as no creature could be made out of nothing but by him, so can it not be reduced into nothing but by the same: though therefore the parts of the body of man be dissolved, yet they perish not; they lose not their own entity when they part with their relation to humanity; they are * laid up in the secret places, and lodged in the Chambers of nature, and it is no more a contradiction that they should become the parts of the same body of man to which they did belong, than that after his death they should become the parts of any other body, as we see they do. Howsoever they are scattered, or wheresoever lodged, they are † within the knowledge and power of God, and can have no repugnancy by their separation to be reunited when and how he pleaseth. The first dust of which man was made, was as far from being flesh as any ashes now or dust can be; it was only an Omnipotent power which could mould that into an humane body, and breath into the nostrils of it the breath of life. The same power therefore, which must always be, can still make of the dust returning from the bodies of men unto the earth, humane bones and flesh, as well as of the dust which first came from the earth: for if it be not easier, it is most certainly as easie. ∴ to make that to be again which once hath been, as to make that to be which before was not. When there was no man, God made him of the earth, and therefore when he returns to earth, the same God can make him man again. The Resurrection therefore cannot be impossible, which is our first conclusion.

* Non sola anima seponitur, habet & caro suos sinus interrim, in aquis, in alitibus, in ignibus, in bestiis; cum in hac dissolvi videtur, velut in vasa transfunditur, Tertull. de Resurrectione carnis c. 68.

Tu perire Deo credis si quid oculis nostris habetibus subtrahitur? Corpus omne sive arefcit in pulverem, sive in humorem solvitur, vel in cinerem comprimitur, vel in nidore n te-

nuatur, subducitur nobis, sed Deo elementorum custodi reservatur, Minutius Felix in Octavio. Omnia quæ discernuntur, & in favillas quasdam putrescunt, integra Deo sunt, in illa enim elementa mundi eunt unde primo venerunt, S. Augustin in Psalm. cxxxviii. c. 2. † Absit autem ut ad resuscitanda corpora viræque reddenda non possit Omnipotentia Creatoris omnia revocare quæ vel bestia vel ignis absumpsit; vel in pulverem cineremque collapsum, vel in humorem solutum, vel in auras est exhalatum. Absit ut sinus ullus, secretumque naturæ ita recipiat aliquid subtractum sensibus nostris, ut omnium Creatoris aut lateat cognitionem, aut elugiat potestatem, S. Aug. de Civitate Dei, lib. 22. cap. 20. ∴ Recogita quid fueris antequam esses, utique nihil. Meminisses enim si quid fuisses. Qui ergo nihil fueras priusquam esses, idem nihil factus cum esse desieris, cur non possis esse rursus de nihilo, ejusdem Authoris voluntate, qui te voluit esse de nihilo? Quid novi nisi eveniet? Qui non eras, factus es, cum iterum non eris, fies. Redde, si potes, rationem qua factus es, & tunc require qua fies. Et tamen facilius utique fies quod fuisti aliquando, quia æque non difficile factus es quod nunquam fuisti aliando, Tertull. Apol. c. 43. Utique idoneus est rescicere qui fecit. Quanto plus est fecisse quam rescicisse, initium deum quam reddidisse; ita restitutionem carnis faciliorem credas institutione, Item de Resur. carn. c. 11. Difficilius est id quod non te incipere, quam id quod fuerit iterare, Minutius Felix in Octavio. Utique plus est facere quod nunquam fuit, quam reparare quod fuit. Quomodo ergo impossibile esse dicis, ut Deus qui hominem formavit ex nihilo reformet? Quomodo nos suscitare non potest conversos in pulverem, qui etiam in nihilum rediremus, facere poterat ut essemus. ficut effecti nos esse, cum antea nunquam fuisset? S. Aug. de verbis Apost. Serm. 19. To the same purpose the Jews

לֹא יָדָעוּ מִיּוֹם הַהוּא לֹא כָרַע שׁוֹכֵן

Secondly, The Resurrection is not only in it self possible, so that no man with any reason can absolutely deny it; but it is also upon many general considerations highly probable, so that all men may very rationally expect it.

If

If we consider the principles of humanity, the parts of which we all consist, we cannot conceive this present life to be proportionable to our composition. The souls of men as they are immaterial, so they are immortal, and being once created by the Father of Spirits they receive a subsistence for eternity; the body is framed by the same God to be a companion for his spirit, and a man born into the World consisteth of these two. Now the life of the most aged person is but short, and many far ignobler creatures of a longer duration. Some of the Fowls of the Air, several of the Fishes of the Sea, many of the Beasts of the Field, divers of the Plants of the earth are of a more durable constitution, and out-live the sons of men. And can we think that such material and mortal, that such inunderstanding souls should by God and Nature be furnished with bodies of so long permanſion, and that our spirits should be joyned unto flesh so subject to corruption, so suddenly dissolvable, were it not that they lived but once, and so enjoyed that life for a longer season, and then went soul and body to the same destruction, never to be restored to the same subsistence; but when the soul of man which is immortal is forced from its body in a shorter time, nor can by any means continue with it half the years which many other creatures live, it is because this is not the only life belonging to the sons of men, and so the soul may at a shorter warning leave the body which it shall resume again.

Again, If we look upon our selves as men, we are free agents, and therefore capable of doing good or evil, and consequently ordinable unto reward or punishment. The Angels who are above us, and did sin, received their punishment without a death, because being only spirits they were subject to no other dissolution than annihilation, which cannot consist with longer suffering punishment; those who continued in their station were rewarded and confirmed for all eternity, and thus all the Angels are incapable of a Resurrection. The creatures which are below us, and for want of freedom cannot sin, or act any thing morally either good or evil, they cannot deserve after this life either to be punished or rewarded, and therefore when they die, they continue in the state of death for ever. Thus those who are above us shall not rise from the dead, because they are punished or rewarded without dying; and where no death is, there can be no resurrection from the dead. Those which are below us, are neither capable of reward or punishment for any thing acted in this life, and therefore though they die, yet shall they never rise, because there is no reason for their resurrection. But man by the nobleness of his better part being free to do what is good or evil while he liveth, and by the frailty of his body being subject to death, and yet after that, being capable in another world to receive a reward for what he hath done well, and a punishment for what he hath done ill in the flesh, it is necessary that he should rise from the dead to enjoy the one, or suffer the other. For there is not only no just Retribution rendred in this life to man, but, considering the ordinary condition of things, it cannot be. For it is possible, and often cometh to pass, * that one man may commit such sins as all the punishments in this world can no way equalize them. It is just, that he who sheddeth man's blood, by man his blood should be shed; but what death can sufficiently retaliate the many murders committed by one notorious Pirate, who may cast many thousands over-board; or the rapines and assassinations of one Rebel or Tyrant, who may destroy whole Nations? It is fit that he who blasphemeth God should die; but what equivalent punishment can he receive in this life, who shall constantly blaspheme the name of God, destroy his Priests and Temples, abolish his Worship, and extirpate his Servants? What is then more proper, considering the providence of a most just God, than to believe

* Παύλος γὰρ λέγειν, ὅτι οὐ ζούσης τῆς ψυχῆς ἐστὶν ἡ θνήσκουσα οὐδὲ τὴν σὺν μὲν τῶν δούλων πλείων ἢ βαρυτέρων σφαγῶν πλημμελειῶν. Athenagoras.

mittas cum audieris, quod ubique jam videris, nec dubites Deum carnis etiam resuscitorem, quem omnium noris restitorem. Et utique omnia homini resurgunt cui procurata sunt: porro non homini nisi & carni, quale est ut ipsa deperat in totum propter quam & cui nihil deperit. *Idem de Resur. carn. cap. 12.*

We must not rest in this School of Nature, nor settle our persuasions upon likelihoods; but as we passed from an apparent possibility, unto a high presumption and probability, so must we pass from thence unto a full assurance of an infallible certainty. And of this indeed we cannot be assured but by the Revelation of the will of God; upon his power we must conclude that we may, from his will that we shall, rise from the dead. Now the power of God is known unto all men, and therefore all men may infer from thence a possibility; but the will of God is not revealed unto all men, and therefore all have not an infallible certainty of the Resurrection. For the grounding of which assurance, I shall shew that God hath revealed the determination of his will to raise the dead, and that he hath not only delivered that intention in his Word, but hath also several ways confirmed the same.

Many of the places produced out of the Old Testament to this purpose will scarce amount to a Revelation of this Truth. The Jews insist upon such * weak inferences out of the Law, as shew that the Resurrection was not clearly delivered by *Moses*; and in the Book of *Job*, where it is most evidently expressed they acknowledge it not, because they will not understand the true notion of a Redeemer properly belonging to *Christ*. The words of *Job* are very express, ^a *I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth, and though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God.* Against the evidence of this truth there are two Interpretations; one very new of some late Opinionists, who understand this of a sudden restitution to his former temporal condition; the other more ancient of the *Jews*, who make him speak of the happiness of another life, without any reference to a Resurrection. But that *Job* spake not concerning any sudden restitution, or any alteration of his temporal condition, is apparent out of the remarkable preface ushering in this expression, *O that my words were now written, O that they were printed in a Book! that they were graven with an iron pen and lead, in the rock for ever!* He desires that his words may continue as his expectation, that they may remain in the rock, together with his hope so long as the rock shall endure, even to the day of his Resurrection. The same appeareth from the objection of his friends, who urged against him that he was a sinner, and concluded from thence that he should never rise again; for his sins he pleadeth a Redeemer, and † for his Resurrection he sheweth expectation and assurance through the same Redeemer. It is further confirmed by the expressions themselves, which are no way proper for his temporal restitution: the first words *I also know*, denote a certainty and community, whereas the blessings of this life are under no such certainty, nor did *Job* pretend to it, and the particular condition of *Job* admitted no community, there being none partaker with him of the same calamity; *I know* certainly and infallibly, whatsoever shall become of my body at this time, which I know not, but this I know that I shall rise; this is the hope of all which believe in God, and therefore this || *I also know*. The title which he gives to him on whom he depends, the Redeemer, sheweth that he understands it of

* They produce several places out of *Moses*, which when the Resurrection is believed may in some kind serve to illustrate it, but can in no degree be thought to reveal so great a mystery. As because in the formation of man *Moses* useth the word וָצֶר with two jods, and in the formation of beasts וָצֶר with but one, therefore the beasts are made but once, but man twice; once in his Generation, and again in his Resurrection. They strangely apprehend a promise of the Resurrection, even in the malediction. Dust thou art, and to dust thou shalt return; תָּחֵן דָּם נָא אֶרֶץ חֵשֶׁב it is not thou shalt go to the dust, but thou

shalt return. As if he had said, thou art now dust while thou livest, and after death thou shalt return unto this dust, that is, thou shalt live again, as now thou dost. So from those words, *Exod. 15. 1. וְשִׁיר מִשְׁחָה אֶרֶץ נַחֲמָה יִשְׂרָאֵל*, it is not said, he sang, but he shall sing, viz. after the Resurrection in the life to come. With these and the like Arguments did the Rabbins satisfy themselves; which was the reason that they gave so small satisfaction to the Sadducees; while they omitted that pregnant place in *Job*. ^a *Job 19. 25, 26.* † This place is urged by *S. Clement Romanus*, the immediate successor of the Apostles, in his Epistle to the Corinthians, p. 35. where instead of these words of the LXX; ἀναστήσει τὸ σῶμα μου τὸ ἀναστάντων ταῦτα, he reads, καὶ ἀναστήσῃς τὸ σῶμα μου ταῦτῳ τὸ ἀναστήσασαν ταῦτα ὁ δὲ ἰσχυρὸς ὁ ἀβὴρ ἰσχυρὸς

נחמיו : *Christ*; the time expressed denotes the futuration at *the latter day*; the description of that Redeemer, *standing on the earth*, representeth the Judge of the quick and the dead; and, seeing God with his eyes, declares his belief in the Incarnation. The Jewish exposition of future happiness to be conferred by God, fails only in this, that they will not see in this place the promised *Messias*; from whence this future happy condition which they allow, would clearly involve a Resurrection. Howsoever they acknowledge the words of *Daniel* to declare as much, *and many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting confusion.*

Dan. 12. 2.

The Jews collect from hence the Resurrection, as Rabin in Sanhedrin, and in

the Midrash Tillim, Psal. 93. 3. אר רחמן ישרי עזר הם המתים שב ורבים משנן ארמת עזר יקצו : נני Rabbi Rachmon said, that the sleepers in the dust are the dead, as it is written, Dan. 12. 2. Many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, &c. And this is only denied by the Gentiles; for Porphyrius referreth it only and wholly to the times of Antiochus, whose words are thus left unto us translated by S. Hierom, Tunc hi qui quasi in terræ pulvere dormiebant, & operri erant malorum pondere, & quasi in sepulchris miseriarum reconditi, ad insperatam victoriam de terræ pulvere resurrexerunt, & de lumo elevaverunt caput, custodes legis resurgentes in vitam æternam, & pravavatores in opprobrium sempiternum: where it is to be observed that he gives a probable Gloss of the former part of the verse, but none at all of the latter, because it is no way consistent with his exposition of the former: for they which did rise from the burden of the pressures under Antiochus, did neither rise from thence to an eternal life, nor to an everlasting contempt. Thus, I say, only the Gentiles did interpret it, but now the Socinians are joined to them. So Volkelius urges, quod in præcedentibus de Antiochi tempore agatur, & resurrectio illa ad tempora quæ jam præcesserunt spectet.

If these and other places of the Old Testament shew that God had then revealed his will to raise the dead, we are sure those of the New fully declare the same. *Christ* who called himself *the resurrection and the life*, refuted the Sadduces, and confirmed the doctrine of the Pharisees as to that opinion. He produced a place out of the Law of *Moses*, and made it an Argument to prove as much, *As touching the Resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead but of the living.* With the force of which Argument the multitude was astonished, and the Sadduces silenced. For under the name of God was understood a great benefactor, a God of promise, and to be their God was to bless them and to reward them; as in them to be his servants and his people was to believe in him, and to obey him. Now *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob* had not received the promises which they expected, and therefore God after their death desiring still to be called their God, he thereby acknowledgeth that he had a blessing and a reward for them still, and consequently that he will raise them to another life in which they may receive it. So that the Argument of our Saviour is the same which the Jews have drawn from another place of *Moses*, *I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob by the name of God Almighty, but by my name Jehovah was I not known unto them. Nevertheless I have established my Covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their Pilgrimage wherein they were strangers.* It is not said, *to give their sons*, but, *to give them the land of Canaan*; and therefore, because while they lived here they enjoyed it not, they must live again that they may receive the promise.

Exod. 6. 4.

לתי רנס
לני נאמר
אלני לחם
מכאן
לתחית
המתים

מן התורה :

It is not said

to give you, but

to give them,

whereby the Resurrection of the dead appeareth out of the Law, R. Simai, in Pereh Helek.

And therefore the Jews hold the Resurrection for one of the foundations of the Law of *Moses*, קיאער שריעה מן קיאער המתים קאערה מן

משנן Moses Maim. Expl. c. 10. Tract. Sanhedrin.

And as our blessed Saviour did refute the Sadduces out of the Law of *Moses*, so did S. Paul join himself unto the Pharisees in this particular, for being called before the Council, and perceiving that the one part were Sadduces and the other Pharisees, one denying, the other asserting the Resurrection, he cried unto the Council, Men and Brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee, of the hope and resurrection of the dead I am called in question; and answering before Felix, that

Act. 23. 6.

that they had found no evil doing in him, while he stood before the Council he mentioned this particularly, except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the Resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day. Acts 24. 21.

It is evident therefore that the Resurrection of the dead was revealed under the Law, that the Pharisees who sat in Moses's chair did collect it thence, and believe it before our Saviour came into the world, that the Sadduces who denied it, erred, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God: that our blessed Saviour clearly delivered the same truth, proved it out of the Law of Moses, refuted the Sadduces, confirmed the Pharisees, taught it the Apostles, who followed him, confirming it to the Jews, preaching it to the Gentiles. Thus the will of God concerning the raising of the dead was made known unto the Sons of men; and because God can do whatsoever he will, and will certainly effect whatsoever he hath foretold, therefore we are assured of a Resurrection by virtue of a clear Revelation.

Beside, God hath not only foretold, or barely promised, but hath also given such testimonies as are most proper to confirm our faith in this particular prediction and promise. For God heard the voice of *Elijah* for the dead child of the widow of *Sarepta*, and the soul of the child came into him again, and he revived. Him did *Elisha* succeed, not only in the same spirit, but also in the like power, for he raised the child of the *Shunamite* from death; nor did that power die together with him; for when they were burying a dead man, they cast the man into the sepulchre of *Elisha*, and when the man was let down and touched the bones of *Elisha*, he revived and stood upon his feet. These three examples were so many confirmations, under the Law, of a Resurrection to life after death; and we have three to equal under the Gospel. When the daughter of *Jairus* was dead, *Christ* said unto her, *Talitha cumi*, *Damsel*, arise, and her spirit came again, and straightway the *Damsel* arose. When he came nigh to the gate of the city called *Naim*, there was a dead man carried out, and he came nigh and touched the bier, and said, *Young man*, I say unto thee, *Arise*; and he that was dead sat up and began to speak. Thus *Christ* raised the dead in the Chamber and in the Street, from the Bed and from the Bier, and not content with these smaller demonstrations, proceedeth also from the grave. When *Lazarus* had been dead four days, and so buried that his sister said of him, by this time he stinketh, *Jesus* cried with a loud voice, *Lazarus*, come forth, and he that was dead came forth. These three Evangelical resuscitations are so many preambulatory proofs of the last and general Resurrection; but the three former and these also come far short of the Resurrection of him who raised these.

Christ did of himself actually rise, others who had slept in their graves did come from thence, and thus he gave an actual testimony of the Resurrection. For if *Christ* be preached that he rose from the dead, saith *S. Paul* to the *Corinthians*, how say some among you that there is no resurrection from the dead? If it be most infallibly certain that one man did rise from the dead, as we have before proved that *Christ* did, then it must be as certainly false to assert that there is no Resurrection. And therefore when the Gentiles did themselves confess that some particular persons did return † to life after death, they could not rationally deny the Resurrection wholly. Now the Resurrection of *Christ* doth not only prove by way of Example, as the rest who rose, but hath a

† There were not only certain persons under the Law and among the Jews, who were raised to life; but there were also Histories amongst the Gentiles of several who rose to life after death. We mentioned before one out of *Plutarch*, p. 289. Who rose the third day, and *Plato* mentioneth another who revived the twelfth day after death. Ἀλλ' ἡ μὲν τοι σοι, ὡς αἱ ἐγώ. Ἀλλήν γε ἀπόλογον ἔρῳ. ἀλλ' ἀλλήμιν μὲν ἀνδρῶς, Ἠρόδ. τῆς Ἀρωβίνας, τὸ ἦν Πλαυτύλου, ὃς ποτὲ ἐκ πολέμου τραχίσαι ἀναγεθῆναι δικάσιων ᾧ νεκρῶν ἡδὴ διαθαυμάων, ὅστις μὲν ἀντιέβη, κομιδῆς ᾧ οἶκα δὲ μελλῶν θάλαττος θοδισκῶν ὅτι τῇ πυρρῇ κέμειν ἀνέβη, *Plat. de Rep.* l. 10. vide *Plin.* l. 7. c. 52. De his qui clari revixerunt.

force in it to command belief of a future general Resurrection. For God
Acts 17. 31. hath appointed a day in which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man
 whom he hath ordained, whereof he hath given an assurance unto all men, in that
 he hath raised him from the dead. All men then are assured that they shall
1 Cor. 15. 21, rise, because Christ is risen. And since by man came death, by man came also
22. the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all
 be made alive.

This consequence of a future Resurrection of the dead from that of Christ
 already past, either hath a general or particular consideration. In a general
 reference it concerneth all; in a more peculiar way it belongeth to the Elect
 alone. First, It belongeth generally unto all men in respect of that Dominion
 of which Christ at his Resurrection did obtain the full possession and execution.
Rom. 14. 9. For to this end Christ both died and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both
 of the dead and living. Now as God is not the God of the dead, but of the living,
 so Christ is not the Lord of the dead, as dead, but as by his power he can re-
 vive them and rule them when and in what they live. By virtue of this do-
1 Cor. 15. 25, minion entered upon at his Resurrection he must reign till he hath put all his ene-
25. mies under his feet, and the last enemy that shall be destroyed is death, and there
 is no destruction of death but by a general Resurrection. By virtue of this
Rev. 1. 18. did he declare himself after this manner to S. John, I am he that liveth and
 was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore, Amen, and have the keys of hell and
 of death. Thus are we assured of a general Resurrection, in that Christ is risen
 to become the Lord of the dead, and to destroy death.

Secondly, Christ rising from the dead assureth us of a general Resurrecti-
 on in respect of the Judgment which is to follow. For as it is appointed for all
 men once to die, so after death cometh judgment; and as Christ was raised that
 he might be Judge, so shall the dead be raised that they may be judged. As
 therefore God gave an assurance to all men that he would judge the World by
 that man, in that he raised him from the dead, so by the same act did he also
 give an assurance of the Resurrection of the World to judgment.

Now as the general Resurrection is evidenced by the rising of Christ, so in
 a more special and peculiar manner the Resurrection of the chosen Saints and
 Servants of God is demonstrated thereby. For he is risen not only as their
 Lord and Judge, but as their Head, to which they are united as members of
Coloss. 1. 18. his body (for He is the Head of the Body of the Church, who is the beginning of
 the first-born from the dead;) as the first-fruits, by which all the lump is lau-
1 Cor. 15. 20. tified and accepted, for now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-
 fruits of them that slept. The Saints of God are endued with the Spirit of
 Christ, and thereby their bodies become the temples of the Holy Ghost;
 now as the promise of the Spirit was upon the Resurrection of Christ, so the
 gift and possession of the Spirit is an assurance of the Resurrection of a Chri-
Rom. 8. 11. stian. For if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in us, he
 that raised Christ from the dead shall also quicken our mortal bodies by his Spirit
 that dwelleth in us.

Thus God hath determined, and revealed that determination, to raise the
 dead, and confirmed that revelation by the actual raising of several persons
 as examples, and of Christ as the highest assurance which could be given unto
 man, that the doctrine of the Resurrection might be established beyond all
 possibility of contradiction. Wherefore I conclude that the Resurrection of
 the body, is in it self considered possible, upon general considerations highly
 probable, upon Christian principles infallibly certain.

But as it is necessary to a Resurrection that the flesh should rise, neither will
 the life of the soul alone continuing amount to the reviviscence of the whole
 man,

man, so it is also necessary that the same flesh should be raised again; for if either the same body should be joyned to another soul, or the same soul united to another body, it would not be the Resurrection of the same man. Now the soul is so eminent a part of man, and by our Saviour's testimony not subject to mortality, that it never entered into the thoughts of any man to conceive that men should rise again with other souls; If the spirits of men departed live, as certainly they do, and when the Resurrection should be performed, the bodies should be informed with other souls; neither they who lived before then should revive, and those who live after the Resurrection should have never been before. Wherefore being at the latter day we expect not a new Creation but a Restitution, not a propagation but a renovation, not a production of new souls, but a reunion of such as before were separated, there is no question but the same souls should live the second life which have lived the first. Nor is this only true of our souls, but must be also made good of our bodies, those houses of clay, those habitations of flesh: as our bodies while we live are really distinguished from all other Creatures, as the body of every particular man is different from the bodies of all other men, as no other substance whatsoever is vitally united to the soul of that man whose body it is while he liveth, so no substance of any other Creature, no body of any other man shall be vitally re-united unto the soul at the Resurrection.

That the same body, not any other, shall be raised to life, which died, that the same flesh which was separated from the soul at the day of death shall be united to the soul at the last day, that the same tabernacle which was dissolved shall be reared up again, that the same temple which was destroyed shall be re-built, is most apparent out of the same Word, most evident upon the same grounds upon which we believe there shall be any Resurrection. † *Though after my skin worms destroy my body, saith Job, yet in my flesh, (in flesh, shewing the reality, in my flesh, shewing the propriety and identity) shall I see God, whom I shall see for my self, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another, or a stranger, eye.* ^a *He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken our mortal bodies;* after the Resurrection our glorified bodies shall become spiritual and incorruptible, but in the Resurrection of our mortal bodies, those bodies, by reason of whose mortality, we died, shall be revived. ^b *For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.* But this corruptible and this mortal is the same body which dieth, because mortal, and is corrupted because corruptible; the soul then, at the Resurrection of that man which is made immortal, must put on that body which putteth on incorruption and immortality.

† Job 19. 26, 27. Quid hac prophetia manifestius? Nul-
lus tam aperte post Christum; quam iste ante Christum de resurrectione loquitur,

S. Hier. Ep. 61.

^a Rom. 8. 11.

^b 1 Cor. 15. 53.

"ἵνα μὴ ἀλλο-
σας τις ὅτι
σὰρξ καὶ αἷμα
βασιλείαν Θεοῦ
ὁ κληρὸς νομίζ-
σῃ, νομίσῃ τὰ
σώματα μὴ ἀ-
νίστασθαι, ἐπι-
γὰρξον, ὅτι δὲ
τὸ φθαρτὸν τῶ-

το ἐνδύματι ἀθανάτου, καὶ τὸ θνητὸν τῶτο ἐνδύματι ἀθανάτου. φθαρτὸν ἡ σῶμα, καὶ θνητὸν τὸ σῶμα. ὅτι τὸ μὲν σῶμα μένει, αὐτὸ γὰρ ὅτι τὸ ἐνδύματι. ἡ δὲ θνητότης καὶ ἡ θοερὰ ἀφανίζεται, ἀθανάτου καὶ ἀφάρτου ἐπίσης αὐτῷ. S. Chrysost. ad loc. Ὅμως τὴν ἀκρίβειαν, τὸ θνητὸν τῶτο ἔδειξε δεικτικῶς, ἵνα μὴ ἄλλης νομίσας σαρκὸς ἀνίστασθαι, Theodoretus ibid. Oportet enim corruptivum istud induere corruptionem, & mortale istud induere immortalitatem. Quid mortale nisi caro? quid corruptivum nisi sanguis? Ac ne putes aliquid aliud sentire Apostolum providentem tibi, & ut de carne dictum intelligas laboran-tem, cum dicit istud corruptivum & istud mortale eutem ipsam tenens dicit. Certe istud nisi de subjecto, nisi de comparenti pronuntiasse non potuit: demonstrationis corporalis est verbum, Tertull. de Resur. carn. c. 51. Sed & Apostolus cum dicit, Oportet enim corruptibile hoc induere incorruptionem, & mortale hoc induere immortalitatem: numquid non corpus suum quodammodo contingens & digito palpatilis est vox? Hoc ergo quod nunc corruptibile corpus est, resurrectionis gratia incorruptibile est, & nunc quod mortale est immortalitatis virtutibus induetur, Russ. in symb. Quod dicit Apostolus Corruptibile hoc & mortale; hoc ipsum corpus, id est, carnem, quæ tunc videbatur ostendit. Quod autem copulat, Induere incorruptionem & immortalitatem; illud indumentum, id est, vestimentum, non dicit corpus abolere quod erant in gloria, sed quod ante in-
gloriam fuit efficere gloriosum, S. Hier. Epist. 51. ad Pammachium.

The identity of the body raised from death is so necessary, that the very name of the Resurrection doth include or suppose it; so that when I say there shall be a Resurrection of the dead, I must intend thus much, that the bodies of men which lived and are dead shall revive and rise again. For at the death

of

the nature of a * just retribution, that he which sinned in one body should be punished in another, he which pleased God in his own flesh should see God with other eyes. As for the wicked, God shall ^a *destroy both their soul and body in hell*: but they which ^b *glorify God in their body and their spirit, which are God's*, shall be glorified by God in their body and their spirit, for they are both *bought* with the same price, even the blood of *Christ*. The bodies of the Saints are the ^c *members of Christ*, and no members of his shall remain in death: they are the *temples of the Holy Ghost*, and therefore if they be destroyed they shall be raised again. For if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in us, as he doth, and by so dwelling maketh our bodies temples, ^d *he which raised up Christ from the dead should also quicken our mortal bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in us.*

* Quam absurdum, quam vero & iniquum, utrumque autem quam Deo indignum, aliam substantiam operari, aliam mercede dispungi, ut hæc quidem caro per martyria lanietur, alia vero coronetur: item hæc contrario hæc quidem caro

in spurciis volutetur, alia vero damnetur? Nonne præstat omnem semel fidem à spe Resurrectionis abducere, quam de gravitate atque iustitia Dei ludere, Marcionem pro Valentino resuscitari? *Tertull. de Resur. Carnis, c. 56.* And speaking to the soul of man, Affirmamus te manere post vitæ disunctionem, & expectare diem iudicii, proque meritis aut cruciatui destinari aut refrigerio, utroque sempiterno. Quibus sustinendis necessario tibi substantiam pristinam ejusdemque hominis materiam & memoriam reversuram, quod & nihil mali & boni sentire possis sine carnis passionis facultate, & nulla ratio sit iudicii sine ipsius exhibitione, qui meruit iudicii passionem, *Id de Testim. Animæ cap. 4.* ^a *Mat. 10. 28.* ^b *1 Cor. 6. 20.* ^c *1 Cor. 6. 15, 19.* ^d *Rom. 8. 11.*

Further, The identity of the dying and rising body will appear by those bodies which shall never rise because they shall never die. This may be considered not only in the ^a *Translations of Enoch and Elias*, but also in those whom *Christ* shall find alive at his coming, whom he shall not kill but change; ^a *the dead in Christ shall rise first, then they which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air, and so shall ever be with the Lord.* If those which are alive shall be caught up as they are alive with the same bodies, only changed into glorified and spiritual bodies, that is, with the same bodies spiritualized and glorified; certainly those which were dead shall rise out of their Graves to life in the same bodies in which they lived, that they may both appear alike before the *Judge of the quick and the dead*. Otherwise the Saints which shall be with God and with the Lamb for evermore would be checker'd with a strange disparity, one part of them appearing and continuing with the same bodies in which they lived, another part with others.

* Enoch translatus est in carne, Elias carneus raptus est in cælum, necdum mortui, & paradisi jam coloni habent quoque membra quibus rapiti sunt atque translati, *S. Hier. Epist. 61.* ^a *1 Thess. 4. 16, 17.*

Lastly, Those examples which God hath been pleased to give us to confirm our Faith in the Resurrection, do at the same time persuade us that the same body which died shall rise again. For whether we look upon the three Examples of the Old Testament, or those of the ^a *New*, they all rose in the same body before it was dissolved: if we look upon those which rose upon our Saviour's death; it is written that ^a *the graves were opened, and many bodies of Saints which slept arose, and came out of their graves*, certainly the same bodies which were laid in. If then they were to us * examples of the Resurrection to come, as certainly they were, then must they resemble in their substance after they lived again the substance in which all the rest shall rise. And being *Christ* himself did raise his own body, according to his prediction, ^b *Destroy the Temple, and in three days I will raise it up*, and declared it to be his own body, saying, ^c *Behold my hands and my feet that it is I my self*, being ^d *he shall change our vile bodies that they may be fashioned like unto his glorious body*; it followeth that we shall rise in the same bodies as our Saviour did, that every particular person at the Resurrection may speak the words which *Christ* then spake, *Behold it is I my self.*

^a *Iren. l. 5. c. 13.*

^a *Mat. 27. 52, 53.*

* Post dicta Domini factæ etiam ejus quid sapere credamus de capulis, de sepulchris mortuos resuscitantis? cui rei istud? si ad simplicem ostentationem potestatis, aut ad præsentem gratiam redactionis, non adeo magnum illi denuo mortuos suscitare. Enimvero si ad fidem potius sequestrandum futuræ resurrectionis, ergo & illa corporalis præscribitur de documentis sui forma, *Tertull. de Resur. carn. c. 38.* At ego Deum malo decipere

Enimvero si ad fidem potius sequestrandum futuræ resurrectionis, ergo & illa corporalis præscribitur de documentis sui forma, *Tertull. de Resur. carn. c. 38.* At ego Deum malo decipere

cipere non posse, de fallacia solummodo infirmum; ne aliter documenta prænisisse quam rem disposuisse videatur, imo ne si exemplum resurrectionis sine carne non voluit inducere, multo magis plenitudinem exempli in eadem substantia exhibere non possit. Nullum vero exemplum majus est eo cujus exemplum est. Majus est autem si animæ cum corpore resuscitantur in documentum sine corpore resurgendi, ut rota hominis salus dimidiæ patrocinaretur; quando exemplorum conditio istud potius expectet quod minus haberetur, animæ dico solius resurrectionem, velut gustum carnis resurrectionis suo in tempore, *Ibid.* ^o *John* 2. 19. ^o *Luke* 24. 39. ^o *Phil* 3. 21. ∴ Expectamus in hujus morte & sanguine emundatos remissionem peccatorum consecuturos: resuscitandos nos ab eo in his corporibus, & in eadem carne qua nunc sumus, sicut & ipse in eadem carne qua natus & passus & mortuus est resurrexit. *So we read in the Creed which by some is attributed to Athanasius, by others to Gregory Nazianzen.* Si ad exemplum Christi resurgamus qui resurrexit in carne, jam non ad exemplum Christi resurgemus si non in carne & ipsi resurgemus.

∴ Hæc est vera resurrectionis confessio quæ sic gloriam carni tribuit ut non auferat veritatem, *S. Hieron.*

Epist. 61. Cum ergo ita evidens, & ut ita dicam palpabile, & manu atrectandum nobis Christus dederit suæ Resurrectionis exemplum, ita aliquis infans, ut aliter se resurrectionem putet, quam resurrexit ille qui primus Resurrectionis aditum præfecit? *Ruff. Inveſtita.* Nostri autem illud quoque recogitent, corpora eadem recepturas in Resurrectione animas in quibus decesserunt, *Tertull. de Animâ, cap.* 56.

We can therefore no otherwise expound this Article, teaching the *Resurrection of the body*, than by asserting that the bodies which have lived and died shall live again after death, and that the same flesh which is corrupted shall be restored; whatsoever ∴ alteration shall be made shall not be of their nature, but of their condition; not of their substance but of their qualities. Which explication is most agreeable to the Language of the Scriptures, to the Principles of Religion, to the constant Profession of the Church, against the *Origenists* of old, and the *Soci-nians* of late.

Having hitherto proved the certainty of this Article, that there shall be a *Resurrection*, and declared the Verity and Propriety of it, that it shall be a *Resurrection* of the same *body* which was dead; we may now proceed farther to enquire into the Latitude of the same, to whom the Resurrection doth belong. And here we find a great difference between the Revelation of his truth under the Law, and under the Gospel; *Christ* proved out of the Law that there should be a Resurrection, but by such an argument as reacheth no farther than unto the People of God, because it is grounded upon those words, *I am the God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob.* *Job* speaketh most expressly of the Resurrection, but mentioneth no other than his Redeemer and himself. The place of *Daniel*, which was always accounted the most evident and uncontradicted testimony, though it deliver two different sorts of persons rising, yet it seems to be with some limitation, *Many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake.* From whence the Jews most generally have believed that some men shall live again, and some should not; because it is written, *Many shall awake, but it is not written, All shall awake.* Nay, some of them have gone so far by way of restriction, that they have maintained a Resurrection of the Just alone, according to that ancient saying accepted amongst them, that the ∴ *Sending the Rain is of the Just and Unjust, but the Resurrection of the dead is of the Just alone.* Against which two Restrictions by the light delivered in the Gospel we shall deliver the latitude of this Article in these two Propositions. First, the Resurrection of the dead belongeth not to the Just alone, but to the Unjust also. Secondly, The Resurrection of the dead belongeth not only to some of the Just, but to all the Just; not to some of the Unjust only, but to all the Unjust, even unto all the dead.

∴ This is recorded in the Eretic Rabbis. *Vide Maimonidis Expl.* 10. c. *Traſ. Sanhed.*

For the First, It is most evident, not only out of the New, but also out of the Old Testament, The words of *Daniel* prove it sufficiently; for of those *many* which *shall awake*, some shall rise to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. But it is most certain that the Just shall never rise to shame and everlasting contempt; therefore it is most evident

dent that some shall awake and rise beside the Just. The Jews themselves did understand and believe thus much, as appeareth by S. Paul's Apology to Felix, *But this I confess unto thee, that I have hope towards God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a Resurrection of the dead both of the just and unjust.* The just shall rise to receive their reward, the unjust to receive their punishment; the first unto a Resurrection called, in reference unto them, *the resurrection of life*; the second unto a Resurrection, named in relation unto them, *the resurrection of damnation*. For as there is † a Resurrection of the Just, so there must also be a Resurrection of the Unjust: that as Christ said unto the charitable person, *Thou shalt be blessed, for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the Just*; so it may be said to the wicked and uncharitable, *Thou shalt be accursed, for thou shalt be recompensed at the Resurrection of the Unjust*. For there shall be a Resurrection that there may be a Judgment, and at the Judgment there shall appear Sheep on the right hand of the Son of Man, and Goats on the left, therefore they both shall rise; those, that they may receive that blessing, ² *Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world*: these, that they may receive that sentence, *Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the Devil and his Angels*. At that Resurrection then which we believe, there shall rise both Just and Unjust.

Secondly; As no kind of men, so no person shall be excluded: whosoever dieth is numbred with the Just or Unjust. Adam the first of men shall rise, and all which come from him. *For as in Adam all died, so in Christ shall all be made alive.* Christ is the Lord of the dead, and so hath a right by that Dominion to raise them all to Life: it is called *the Resurrection of the dead* indefinitely, and comprehendeth them universally. By man came death, by man came the Resurrection of the dead, and so the Resurrection adequately answereth unto Death. Christ shall destroy death, but if any one should be left still dead, Death were not destroyed. The Words of our Saviour are expresse and full, *The hour is coming in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth, they that have done good, unto the Resurrection of life, and they that have done evil, unto the Resurrection of damnation.* In the description of the Judgment which followeth upon the Resurrection, when the Son of man shall sit upon the Throne of his glory, it is said that, *before him shall be gathered all nations. We shall all stand before the Judgement-seat of Christ, and if so, the dead, must all rise, for they are all fallen. We must all appear before the Judgement-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or evil*; and before we all appear, the dead must rise that they may appear. This is the Latitude of the Resurrection; the Resurrection of the dead is the Resurrection of all the dead, or of † all Mankind.

ἀναστῆναι πάντας τοὺς νεκρούς, καὶ ἀναστῆναι πᾶσιν σάρκα παύσης ἀνθρωπότητις. and Theophilus calls it, καθολικῶς ἀνάστασιν ἀπάντων ἀνθρώπων. Ad. Autol. l. i.

Now this Resurrection, as an object of our Faith, is yet to come; and we are obliged to believe the futurition of it. There were Hereticks in the Apostles days who acknowledged a Resurrection, but yet destroyed this Article, by denying the relation of it to the time, as *Hymeneus*

2 Tim. 2. 18. and *Philetus* who erred concerning the truth, saying, *That the Resurrection is past already, and so overthrow the faith of some.* To believe it already past, is to deny it, because it cannot be believed past, but by such an Interpretation as must destroy it. As they which interpret this Resurrection of the likeness of *Christ's* Resurrection; that as he died and rose again, so we should die unto Sin and live again unto Righteousness, attributing all to the Renovation of the mind, must deny *the Resurrection of the body.*

Nonnulli at-
rendentes ver-
ba quæ affidue
dicit Aposto-
lus, *Qui et
mortui sumus
cum Christo, et
resurreximus
cum eo; nec in-
telligentes qua-
tenus dicatur,*
arbitrari sunt jam factam esse resurrectionem, nec ullam ulterius in fine temporum esse sperandam. *Ex quibus est, inquit, Hymæus et Philetus, qui circa veritatem aberraverunt, dicentes resurrectionem jam factam esse. Idem Apostolus eos arguens detestatur, qui tamen dicit nos resurrexisse cum Christo, S. Aug. Epist. 119. ad Januarium. This was the Heresie of the Seleuciani or Hermiani, as the same S. Augustine testifies, Hæres. 59. Resurrectionem non putant futuram, sed quoridie fieri in generatione filiorum. Thus Tertullian relates of some Hereticks in his time, who made the Resurrection wholly Allegorical, and yet pretended to believe a Resurrection in the flesh, but understood it in this life at the Baptismal renovation, and so past when they professed to believe. Exinde ergo Resurrectionem fide consequutos cum Domino esse, cum eum in Baptismate induerint. Hoc denique ingenio etiam in colloquiis sæpe, nostros decipere consueverunt, quasi & ipsi resurrectionem carnis admittant. Væ, inquiunt, qui non in hac carne resurrexit, ne statim illos percutiant, si resurrectionem statim abnuerint: tacite autem secundum conscientiam suam hoc sentiunt. Væ, qui non, dum in hac carne est, cognoverit arcana hæretica, hoc enim apud illos resurrectio, Tertull. de Resurrect. Carnis, cap. 19.*

Now as we know the doctrine of the Resurrection was first delivered to be believed as to come; so we are assured that it is not yet come since the doctrine of it was first delivered, and is to be believed as to come to the
John 11. 24. end of the World; because, as *Martha* called it, it is the *Resurrection at the last day.* *Job* who knew that his Redeemer lived, did not expect that he should stand upon the earth till the *latter day*; *Christ* hath no otherwise declared *his Father's will*, than that of all which he hath given him, he should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. The Corn is sown and laid in the ground, and the Harvest is the end of the World. We must not expect to rise from the dead till the last trump. The Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an Archangel and with the trump of God before; all that are in the graves shall hear his voice. God shall judge the World, and therefore shall raise the World: but he will not raise them to that judgment till the end of the World.

Matt. 13. 39.
1 Cor. 15. 52.
1 Thess. 4. 16.

Acts 17. 31.
John 5. 28.

Thus having demonstrated that the will of God hath been revealed that there should be a Resurrection; that the Resurrection which was revealed is the Resurrection of the body; that the bodies which are to be raised are the same which are already dead or shall hereafter die; that this Resurrection is not past, but that we which live shall hereafter attain unto it; I conceive I have declared all which is necessary by way of explication and confirmation of the Truth of this Article.

The Value of this Truth, the Necessity of this Doctrine will appear; First, In the Illustration of the Glory of God, by the most lively demonstration of his Wisdom, Power, Justice, and Mercy. God first created all things for himself, and the Resurrection is as it were a new Creation. The Wisdom and Power of God are manifested in this acknowledgment, in as much as without infinite Knowledge he could not have an exact and distinct comprehension of all the particles and individual dusts of all the bodies of all men; and without an infinite Power he could not conjoin, cement, conglutinate and incorporate them again into the same flesh. The Mercy and Justice of God are declared by the same profession; the Mercy, in promising life after that death which we had so justly deserved; the Justice, in performing that promise unto all true Believers, and in punish-
ing

ing the disobedient with everlasting flames. *When ye see this, saith the Prophet, your hearts shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like an herb; and the hand of the Lord shall be known towards his servants, and his indignation towards his enemies.* Isa. 66. 14.

Secondly, It is necessary to profess the belief of *the Resurrection of the body*, that we may thereby acknowledge the great and powerful Work of our Redemption; confessing that Death could not be conquered but by Death, and that we could never have obtained another Life, had not the Saviour of the World *abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel.* If Christ were not the Life, the dead could never live: if he were not the Resurrection they could never rise. Were it not for him *that liveth and was dead and is alive for evermore*, had not he *the keys of hell and of death*, we could never break through the bars of Death, or pass the gates of Hell. But he hath undertaken to vanquish our enemies, and our *last enemy to be destroyed is death*: that the Prophecy Hos. 13. 14. may be fulfilled, *Death is swallowed up in victory*, and we may cry out with 1 Cor. 15. 54. the Apostle, *Thanks be to God, who giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.* 57.

Thirdly, The Belief of this Article is necessary to strengthen us against the fear of our own Death, and immoderate sorrow for the Death of others. The sentence of Death passed upon us for our sins, cannot affright and amaze us, except we look upon the suspension, relaxation, or revocation of it in the Resurrection; but when we are assured of a Life after Death, and such a Life as no Death shall follow it, we may lay down our fears arising from corrupted Nature, upon the comforts proceeding from our Faith. The departure of our Friends might over-whelm us with grief, if they were lost for ever; but the Apostle will *not have us ignorant concerning those which are asleep, that we sorrow not even as others which have no hope.* 1 Thess. 4. 13.

Fourthly, The Belief of the Resurrection hath a necessary reflection upon this Life, by way of preparation for the next, as deterring from sin, as encouraging to holiness, as comforting in afflictions. How can any man commit a deliberate sin while he thinks that he must rise and stand before the Judgment-Seat, and give an account, and suffer for ever the punishment due unto it? What pleasure can entice him, what inclination can betray him for a momentary satisfaction to incur an eternal rejection? How can we defile that body which shall never be raised to Glory hereafter, except it here become the Temple of the Holy Ghost? Saint Paul who had delivered the Doctrine, hath taught us by his own example what work is expected to be wrought upon our Souls by it. *I have hope, saith he, towards God that there shall be a Resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust. And herein do I exercise my self to have always a conscience void of offence toward God and toward man.* Acts 24. 15, 16. This is the proper work of a true belief, and a full perswasion of a Resurrection; and he which is really possessed with this hope, cannot chuse but purifie himself; *always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as he knoweth that his labour is not in vain in the Lord.* 1 Cor. 15. 58. This encourageth all drooping spirits, this sustaineth all fainting hearts, this sweeteneth all present miseries, this lighteneth all heavy burdens, this encourageth in all dangers, this supporteth in all calamities.

Having thus discovered the Truth of this Article, we may easily perceive what every man is obliged to believe, and understood to profess,

when he confesseth a belief of *the Resurrection of the body*; for thereby he is conceived to declare thus much, I am fully perswaded of this as of a most necessary and infallible truth, that as it is appointed for all men once to die, so it is also determined that all men shall rise from death, that the souls separated from our bodies are in the hand of God and live, that the bodies dissolved into dust, or scattered into ashes, shall be recollected in themselves, and re-united to their souls, that the same flesh which lived before shall be revived, that the same numerical bodies which did fall shall rise, that this resurrection shall be universal, no man excepted, no flesh left in the grave, that all the Just shall be raised to a resurrection of life, and all the Unjust to a resurrection of damnation, that this shall be performed at the last day when the Trump shall sound; and thus *I believe the Resurrection of the body.*

ARTICLE

ARTICLE XII.

And the Life Everlasting.

THis last Article though † not to be found in all, yet was expressed in * many ancient Creeds : in some by way of addition, *and the life everlasting* ; in others by way of conjunction with the former, *the Resurrection of the body unto everlasting life*. Upon this connexion with the former will follow the true interpretation of this concluding Article ; for thereby we are perswaded to look upon it as containing the state of man after the Resurrection in the world to come.

† Not in all, for divers ended with that of the Resurrection, as appeareth by Rufinus, who not only expounded the Aquileian Creed, but collated it with the Greek and

Roman, and yet makes no mention of this Article, but concludes with that of the Resurrection. Sed & ultimus iste sermo, qui resurrectionem carnis pronunciat, summam totius perfectionis succincta brevitate concludit. And whereas he shews the custom of the Aquileian Church to make a Cross upon their forehead at the naming of hujus carnis, he tells us elsewhere, in his Apology against S. Hierom, that it was to conclude the Creed. Quo scilicet frontem, ut mos est in fine Symboli, signaculo contingentes, & ore carnis hujus, videlicet quam contingimus, resurrectionem fatentes, omnem venenatæ adversum nos linguæ calumniandi aditum præstruimus. In the same manner S. Hier. his contemporary, In Symbolo fidei & spei nostræ, quod ab Apostolis traditum non scribitur in charta & atramento, sed in tabulis cordis carnalibus, post confessionem Trinitatis & Unitatem Ecclesiæ omne Christiani dogmatis sacramentum carnis resurrectione concluditur, Epist. 61. So S. Chrys. Hom. 40. in Cor. p. 514. Μετὰ τὸ ἁποστασθε τὴν καρδίαν ὑμῶν ἐκ τῶν νεκρῶν καὶ τοῦ σαρκὸς καὶ τοῦ αἵματος τῶν ἐνανδίων κατὰ χεῖρας, δογματῶν καὶ τῶτο πρὸς τὴν τέλει προσέδεσθαι, ὅταν μέλλομεν βαπτίζεσθαι, κελύοντες λέγειν ὅτι πιστεύομεν ἐν νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν, καὶ ἐπὶ τῇ αἰσὶ ταύτῃ βαπτίζεσθαι, καὶ γὰρ τὸ ὁμολογεῖναι τῶτο μὲν τῶν ἄλλων, τότε καθιέμεθα εἰς τὴν τηλικαύτην ἱερῶν ναμάτων ἐκείνων. So Maximus Taurinenis after those words Carnis Resurrectionem, adds, Hic Religionis nostræ finis, hæc summa credendi est. And Venantius Fortunatus after the same words, summa perfectionis concluditur. And in the Ms. set forth by the Archbishop of Armagh, Καρὸς ἀνάστασιν and Carnis Resurrectione are the last words. * As Petrus Chrysologus expressly, Credimus vitam æternam, quia post resurrectionem nec bonorum finis est nec malorum. Signate vos, Serm. 60. and again, Bene addidit vitam æternam, ut se resurrecturum crederet qui resurgeret per ipsum qui cum Deo Patre & Sp. S. vivat & regnat. So Etherius Uxomensis, and Eusebius Gallicanus. So we find Serm. de Temp. 131. & de Symb. ad Catech. l. 1. Quomodo carnis Resurrectionem ? Ne forte putet aliquis quomodo Lazari, ut scias non sic esles, additum est in vitam æternam, and l. 2. Hoc sequitur etiam in S. Symbolo, quod post Resurrectionem carnis, credamus ὑμῶν vitam æternam, l. 3. & l. 4. Hoc sequitur in S. Symbolo quod omnia quæ credamus & speramus in vita æterna percipiamus. And Carolus Magnus in his Reprehension of Basilii Bishop of Ancyra. Non eo modo præjudicat prætermisio imaginum adorationis sacræ fidei puritari, quæ interdicta potius quam instituta est ; sicut præjudicant Remissio peccatorum, carnis Resurrectio, & Vita futuri sæculi, si in confessione prætermittantur, quæ utiq. & in omni scripturarum serie prædicantur, & ab Apostolis in Symbolo laudabili brevitate connexæ tenentur, Capit. l. 3. c. 6. Anonymus in Homilia sacra set forth by Elmenhorstius with Genadius. Post illam abrenunciationem nos interrogati à Sacerdote, Credis in Deum Omnipotentem, creatorem cæli & terræ ? unusquisque respondit, Credo. Credis & in Dominum Christum Filium ejus unicum, Dominum natum ex Mariâ Virgine, passum & sepultum ? & respondit, Credo. Tertia interrogatio, Credis & in spiritum S. Sanctam Ecclesiam Catholicam, Sanctorum communionem, remissionem peccatorum, carnis resurrectionem, & vitam æternam ? & respondit unusquisque nostrum, Credo.

As therefore S. Paul hath taught us to express our belief of a *Resurrection both of the just and the unjust*, so after the Resurrection we are to consider the condition of them both, of the one as risen to everlasting life, of the other as risen to everlasting punishment and contempt, and so those who first acknowledged this Article † did interpret it. Although therefore *Life everlasting*, as it is used in the Scriptures, belongeth to the Just alone, and is never mentioned otherwise than as a reward promised and given to them who fear and serve the Lord, yet the same words may be used to express the duration of any persons which live never to die again, whatsoever their state and condition in it self shall be. For as the *Resurrection of the dead* is taken in the Scriptures for the happy and eternal condition which followeth after it, as when the Apostle saith, *∴ If by any means I might attain unto the Resurrection of the dead*; which he must needs be most certain to

† As appeareth by those words of Chrysologus, Credimus vitam æternam, quia post Resurrectionem nec bonorum finis est nec malorum.

Phil. 3. 11. Though in this place it is not barely ἀνάστα-

σι but ἐξανάστασις, εἰς τὴν ἐξανάστασιν ἥτις νεκρῶν. and in the Alexandrian Ms. εἰς τὴν ἐξανάστασιν τῶν ἐκ νεκρῶν, which is the most ancient reading, as appeareth by the Vulgar Translation, Si modo occurram ad resurrectionem quæ est ex mortuis, and the reading of Tertullian, Si qua concurrem in resurrectionem quæ est à mortuis, and the Syriack Translation,

station, *לְקִימָתָא דְּמִן בֵּיר מִיתָא*, yet the *Ἐξάνστασις* of it self, was taken for no more than *ἀνάστασις* by any of the Translators. And S. Chrysostom did so understand it, as appeareth by these words upon the place, *Εἰπὼς καλάντισμα, οὐδὲν, εἰς τὴν Ἐξάνστασιν τὴν ἐν νεκρῶν* (which is the reading of the Alexandrian Ms.) *τί λέγεις; καὶ μὴ πάντες αὐτῆς τυγχάνουσιν, καὶ οὐκ ἀνάστασις μόνος, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀσθαρσία πάντες, εἴ μὴ εἰς τιμὴν, οἱ δὲ εἰς ἐρόθον κολάσεως. Εἰ τοίνυν πάντες ἡ ἀνάστασις, ὡς τυγχάνουσιν, καὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις μόνος ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀσθαρσία, πῶς ὡς μάλλον ἔξαρξεν τινὸς τυγχάνειν ἕλεος, ἢ πῶς κολάντισμα;* By which it appeareth that S. Chrysostom took no notice of the word *Ἐξάνστασις*, or of the phrase *ἡ ἐν τῇ νεκρῶν*, but as the interpretation of the Apostles intention addeth, *ποῖαν ἐνταῦθα ἀνάστασιν οὐκ; τὴν πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀγνοῦν ἢ Χεῖσιν.* So also Theodoret's paraphrase, *ἵνα μετὰ καὶ τῆς ἀνάστασις.* It is therefore I conceive a Notion peculiar to Theophylact among the Greeks, *Πάντες ἀνίστανται, οἱ μὲν τοὶ πάντες ἔξανίστανται.*

attain unto, who believed the Resurrection of the Just and Unjust, and therefore if he had spoken of the Resurrection in general, as it belongeth unto all, he needed not that expression, *If by any means*, not that which went before, *the fellowship of Christ's sufferings*, for without them he should certainly rise from the dead; but he meant that Resurrection which followeth upon the being *made conformable unto his death*, which is a Resurrection in conformity to the Resurrection of Christ. As, I say, the *Resurrection of the dead* is taken in the Scripture for everlasting happiness, and yet the same Language is and may be used for the general Resurrection of all men, even of such as shall be everlastingly unhappy; † so *the life everlasting*, though used for a Reward given only unto the Elect, may yet be taken as comprehending the condition of the Reprobate also, understood barely for the duration of persons living.

† Sed sciendū enim quia omnes boni & mali resurgere habent ad vitam, sed non omnes resurgent ad gloriam. *R. p. fin. ad Psal. 1.*

All those then who shall rise from the dead shall rise to life, and after the Resurrection live by a true vital union of their souls unto their bodies: and because that union shall never cease, because the parts united shall never be dissolved, because it is *appointed for men once to die*, and after their reviviscency never to die again, it followeth that the life which they shall live, must be an *everlasting life*.

To begin then with the Resurrection to condemnation; the Truth included in this Article in reference unto that, is to this effect, that those who die in their sins, and shall be raised to life, that they may appear before the Judgment-Seat of *Christ*, and shall there receive the sentence of condemnation, shall be continued in that life for ever to undergo the punishment due unto their sins; in which two particulars are contained, the duration of their persons, and of their pains. For two ways this Eternity may be denied; one, by a destruction or annihilation of their persons, with which the torments must likewise cease; the other, by a suspension or relaxation of the punishment, and a preservation of the persons, never to suffer the same pains again. Both of which are repugnant to the clear revelations of the Justice of God against the disobedience of man.

Our first Assertion therefore is, that the Wicked after the day of Judgment shall not be consumed or annihilated, but shall remain alive in soul and body to endure the torments to be inflicted upon them by the justice of God, for all the sins committed by them while they were in the body. They who of late oppose the eternal subsistence and misery of the wicked, strangely maintain their Opinion not as a position to be proved by reason, as some of the * Heathens did, but as a truth delivered in the Scriptures; as if the word it self taught nothing but an annihilation of the enemies of God, and no lasting torment; as if all the threats and menaces of the justice and wrath of God were nothing else but what the scoffing Atheist expects, that is, after death never to be again; or if they be, as it were in a moment to lose that being for ever. Because the Scripture

* Μάχεται καὶ ἀθάνατος ἐν αἰσὶν ἀλγυδέσι καὶ βασάνοις, ἡ ποῖον πᾶν τὸ ἀλγὺν διητὸν ὅτι. S. Empiricus ad. *Ma them. p. 321.*

speaks

speaks of them as of such as shall be destroyed, and perish, and die; therefore they will give that comfort to them here, that though their life in which they sin be short, yet the time in which they are to be tormented for their sins shall be shorter far. They tell us where the Scripture mentioneth destruction in Hell, it speaks of perdition, but no torment there. In this sense will they understand those words of Christ, (so full of terror in the true, so full of comfort to the wicked, in their exposition,) * *Fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.* If this place speak, as those men would have it, of perdition only, not of cruciation, then will it follow that God is not able to cruciate and torment a man in hell; for there can be no other reason why it must be spoken of perdition only excluding cruciation, but because he is able to annihilate, not to cruciate. No, certainly a man may be said to be destroyed, and perish, to be lost and dead, who is rejected, separated and disjoyned from God the better and the nobler life of man; and that person so denominated may still subsist, and be what in his own nature he was before, and live the life which doth consist in the vital union of his soul and body, and so subsisting undergo the wrath of God for ever. Nor shall any Language, Phrases or Expressions give any comfort to the wicked, or strength to this Opinion, if the same Scriptures, which say the wicked shall be destroyed, and perish, and die, say also that they shall be tormented with never dying pains, as they plainly and frequently do.

Depart from me ye cursed, shall the Judge eternal say to all the Reprobate, * *into everlasting fire;* and lest any should imagine that the fire shall be eternal, but the torments not; it followeth, *and these shall go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into life eternal.* Now, if the fire be everlasting by which God punisheth the Reprobates, if the punishment inflicted be also everlasting, then must the Reprobates everlastingly subsist to endure that punishment, otherwise there would be a punishment inflicted and none endured, which is a contradiction. Now the *life eternal* may as well be affirmed to have an end, as *the everlasting punishment*, because they are both delivered in the † same expression.

† Καὶ ἀπελθόντων ἑτοὶ οἱ κόλασιν αἰώνιον, εἰ δὲ δίκαιοι οἱ ζωὴν αἰώνιον. Matth. 24. 46. Antiquus ille Persuador in membris suis, id est, in mentibus iniquorum futuras poenas quasi certo fine determinat, ut eorum correptiones extendat, & eo magis hic peccata non nūant, qui istuc affirmant peccatorum supplicia finienda. Sunt enim nunc etiam qui Idecirco peccatis suis ponere finem negligunt, quia habere quandoque finem futura super se judicia suspicantur. Quibus breviter respondemus, si quandoque finienda sunt supplicia reprobatorum, quandoque finienda sunt & gaudia beatorum: per semetipsam enim Veritas dicit, *Ibunt hi in supplicium aeternum, justi autem in vitam aeternam.* Si igitur hoc verum non est quod minatus est, neque est illud verum quod promisit. S. Gregor. Moral. lib. 34. cap. 11. Affirmamus te (Anima) manare post vitæ disputationem, & expectare diem Judicii, proque meritis, aut cruciatibus destinari, aut refrigerio utroque sempiterno. Tertull. de Testim. Animæ. Deus iraque judicabit plenius, quia extremus, per sententiam aeternam tam supplicii quam refrigerii. Tertull. de Anima, cap. 33. Qui producto ævo isto judicaturus sit suos cultores in vitæ æternæ retributionem; profanos in ignem æquè perpetem & jugem, suscitatis omnibus ab initio defunctis ad utriusque meriti disputationem. Apolog. c. 18.

* Mat. 10. 28. Locus Matthæi 10. 28. perditionem tantum animæ in gehenna, non cruciatum, Smalcus contra Meisnerum. Igni æterno illi Christi hostes qui quidem sunt Diabolus & Angeli ejus (vel saltem quorum nomine isti quoque continentur) cum impiis cruciabantur, & ita delebuntur: Crell. Com. in 1 Cor. c. 15. * Mat. 25. 41. 46. Iren. l. 4. c. 47. Quibuscunque enim dixerit Dominus, *Discedite à me maledicti in ignem perpetuum,* isti erunt semper damnati: & quibuscunque dixerit, *Venite benedicti Patris mei,* hi semper percipiunt regnum, & in eo proficiunt semper.

Indeed the eternity of that fire prepared for the Devil and his Angels is a sufficient demonstration of the eternity of such as suffer in it, and the question only can be what that eternity doth signifie. For, because some things are called in the Scriptures eternal which have but a limited or determined duration, therefore some may imagine the fire of Hell to be in that sense eternal, as lasting to the time appointed by God for the duration of it. But as the fire is termed eternal, so that eternity is described as absolute, excluding all limits, prescinding from all determinations. The end of the burning of fire is by extinguishing, and that which cannot be extinguished

Mat. 3. 12.
Luke 3. 17.
Mat. 18. 2.

* Tertull. de
Pœnitentiâ,
c. 12. Quid
illum thesaurū
ignis æterni æ-
stimamus, quū
fumariola quæ-
dam ejus ta-
les flammarum
ictus suscitent,
ut proximæ ur-
bes aut jam
nullæ extant
aut idem sibi
de die sperent?
diffiliunt super-
bissimi montes
ignis intrinse-
cus factu, &
quod nobis ju-
dicii perpetui-
tatem probat,
cum diffiliant,
cū devorentur,
nunquam
tamen finiun-
tur.

† Rev. 14. 11.
† Εἰς αἰῶνα ὃ
αἰῶνων αὐτῶν
ἀνακαίειν λέγειται, ἵνα μὴ θωπεύῃ ἀτελεῖς τῶν ἔθ' ἡ κλάσις ἡ ἀνθρώπων, ὡς καὶ τὴν ἡ δίκαιων τρυφῶν αἰῶνιον.
Andreas Casar ad locum. † Rev. 20. 10. † Rev. 4. 8. 7. 15.

guished can never end; but such is the fire which shall torment the Repro-
bate; for he, whose *fan is in his hand, shall burn up the chaff with unquench-
able fire*; and hath taught us before, that *it is better to enter into life halt
or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting
fire, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched*; and hath far-
ther yet explained himself by that unquestionable addition, and undeniable
description of the place of torments, *Where the worm dieth not, * and the
fire is not quenched*. And that we may be yet farther assured that this fire
shall be never extinguished, we read that *the smoke of their torment ascen-
deth up for ever and ever* †, and that those which are *cast into the lake of fire
and brimstone, shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever*; which ex-
pression of *day and night* is the same with that which declareth the eternal
happiness in the heavens, where *They rest not day and night, saying, Holy,
holy, holy: where they are before the throne of God, and serve him day and
night in his Temple*. If then the fire in which the Reprobates are to be tor-
mented, be everlasting, if so absolutely everlasting that it shall never be quen-
ched, if so certainly never to be quenched that the smoke thereof shall ascend
for ever and ever, if those which are cast into it shall be tormented for ever
and ever (all which the Scriptures expressly teach) then shall the wicked
never be so consumed as to be annihilated, but shall subsist for ever, and be
coeternal to the tormenting flames. And so this Language of the Scriptures
proves not only an effect eternal, as annihilation may be conceived, but an
eternal efficient never ceasing to produce the same effect, which cannot be
annihilation, but cruciation only. And therefore the fire which consumed
Sodom and Gomorrha, bears no proportion with the flames of Hell: because
all men know that fire is extinguished, nor doth the smoke thereof ascend
for ever and ever.

Rev. 2. 11.

Neither doth this only prove the eternity of infernal pains, but clear-
ly refute the only material Argument brought against it, which is laid upon
this ground, that the Wicked after the Resurrection shall be punished with
death, and that a second death; and so they shall be no more, nor can in
any sense be said to live or subsist. For, the enduring of this fire is that
very death, and they are therefore said to die the second death because
they endure eternal torments. *He that overcometh, shall not be hurt by the se-
cond death*; it seems that they which shall die that death shall be hurt by it;
whereas if it were annihilation, and so a conclusion of their torments, it
would be no way hurtful or injurious, but highly beneficial to them. But
the living torments are the second death. For *Death and Hell were cast into
the lake of fire, that is the second death. Whosoever was not found writ-
ten in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire, this is the second death*.
The Jews before our Saviour's time believed there was a second death, and
though it were not expressed in the Oracles themselves which were commit-
ted to them, yet in the received † exposition of them it was often mentio-
ned, and that as the punishment of the wicked in the life to come; and

† The Chaldee
Paraphrase ma-
keth often men-
tion of it, as
Deut. 33. 6.
Let Reuben live

and not die, he expoundeth thus, : יחי ראובן בחי עולם ומוחא תבינא לא ימור : Let Reuben live in
life of the world, and not die the second death. So the Targum of Onkelos. The Jerusalem Targ. more expressly, : יחי ראובן
בעולם חרין ודא ימות במיתנא חנינא רבה מיתין רשעיא לעלמא חרין : Let Reuben live in this
World, and let him not die the second death, which the wicked die in the World to come. So Isa. 22. 14. Surely this
iniquity shall not be purged from you till ye die. אב ישתנק חבא חרין לכין עד דו תמותון מותא : I will not keep silence but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom. אב
: חרין : and 65. 6. I will not keep silence but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom. אב
: חרין :

להן ארנא בחיור אדהן אשלם להן פורענית הובחון ואמסור למותא חביבאיהן ניותון I will not give them an end in this life, but will recompense them with vengeance for their sins, and deliver their bodies to the second death. *From these and the like places it appeareth, that the Jews believed that the wicked after death should be delivered to a second death; that this death should be in the World to come; that they should by this death be punished for their sins, and St. John revealed that this punishment shall be by everlasting burnings.* Καὶ θάνατοι ἡ ὥσπερ δὲ ὁ μὲν τῆς σαρκὸς περὶ σκαυ- ρῶ· ὁ δὲ τῆς ἀμύθητων ἐκκρίσεων ἐπαρρησίου ἐν τῷ μέλλοντι αἰώνι· ὅσπερ ἔστιν ἡ τῶ πυρὸς γέννησις. Andreas Casar. in Apocal.

what this punishment shall be, was in these Words revealed to St. John, *Rev. 21. 8.* But the fearful and unbelieving, and the abominable and murderers and whoremongers and forcerers and Idolaters, and all lyars shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. Now if the part in the lake be the second death, if that part be a perpetual permanſion in torment, as before it is proved; then to say that the wicked shall die the second death is not a confutation of their eternal being in misery, but an assertion of it, because it is the same thing with everlasting torments, but delivered in other terms.

And if the pretence of death will not prove an annihilation, or infer a conclusion of torment, much less will the bare phrases of *perdition* and *destruction*; for we may as well conclude that whosoever says he is * *undone*, ** *ὀλλυμαι*, intends thereby that he shall be no more: beside, the eternity of destru- perii.
ction in the language of the Scripture signifies a perpetual perpeſſion, and duration in misery. For when Christ shall come to take vengeance on them that *2 Theſſ. 1. 8, 9.* know not God, and obey not the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, they shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power. Wherefore I conclude that the wicked shall rise to everlasting punishment, continuing both in soul and body under the wrath of God and the torments proceeding from it, never to be quitted of them by annihilation; which is our first Assertion, against the † covert Doctrine of the Socinian.

by Socinus, and some of his brethren did profess themselves to be scandalized at it, though he thought he had so delivered it that it should sooner be believed by his Writings, than perceived by them, as appeareth out of his sixth Epistle to Volkeliuſ, who was offended at this Doctrine, and seems never to have assented to it. Quod ais ea in Disputatione mea cum Puccio tum de Christianorum resurrectione tum de morte impiorum passim contineri, quæ à multis sine magna offensione, tum nostris tum alienis, legi non possint; scio equidem ista ibi contineri, sed meo iudicio, non passim nec ita aperte (cavi enim istud quantum potui) ut quisquam vir pius facile offendi possit; adeo ut quod nominatim attinet ad impiorum mortem; in quo dogmate majus est multo offensionis periculum, ea potius ex iis colligi possit quæ ibi diſputantur, quam expresse literis consignata extet, adeo ut Lector, qui alioqui sententiam meam adversus Puccium de mortalitate primi hominis; quæ toto libro agitur, quæque ob non paucos quos habet fautores, parum aut nihil offensionis parere potest probandum censeat, prius censeat doctrinam istam tibi jam persuasam esse quam tuaderi animadvertat. Against this Germanus Patriarch of Constantinople in his defence of Gregory Nyſſen, shewed from the words of Christ, the Apostles, Prophets, and the Fathers; ὅσπερ αἰώνιον τὴν ἡμῶν δικαίων ἀνεκλάλητον ἀπολαύσιν. ἔτω καὶ τῶ ἀμύθητων ἀτελεύτητον τοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπου κόλασις. Photius, Cod. 233.

The second Assertion teacheth us, That as the Reprobates shall never fail to endure the torments due unto their sins, so the Justice of God will never fail to inflict those torments for their sins. They shall never live to pay the uttermost farthing, they shall never come to the days of refreshment who are cast into perpetual burnings. One part of their misery is the hor- rour of despair, and it were not perfect Hell if any hope could lodge in it. The fa- vour of God is not to be obtained where there is no means left to obtain it; but in the World to come there is no place for faith, nor virtue in repentance. If there be now such a vast distance between the tormenting flames and Abra- ham's bosom, that none could pass from one to other; what impossibility must there be when the final sentence is past upon all? As certainly as no person once received into the heavenly mansions shall ever be cast into outer darkness, so certainly none which is once cast into the fire prepared for the Devil and his Angels, shall ever enter into their Master's joy. As the tree sal-

leth so it lieth : there is no change to be wrought in man within those flames, no purgation of his sin, no sanctification of his nature, no justification of his person, and therefore no salvation of him. Without the mediation of *Christ* no man shall ever enter into Heaven, and when he hath *delivered up the Kingdom to God even the Father*, then shall the Office of the Mediator cease.

So groundless was the Opinion of *Origen*, who conceived that after some number of years the damned should be released from their torments, and made partakers of the Joys of Heaven, or at least try their fortunes in such Regions of the World, as he conceived should be reserved for their habitation. For he may as well imagine that *Christ* shall be born and die again, (who being risen *dieth not*) as that any person being condemned to the flames for contemning of his death, should ever come to live again, and by believing in the death of *Christ*, to be after saved. For certainly their condition is unalterable, their condemnation is irreversible, their torments inevitable, their miseries eternal. As they shall not be taken from their punishment by annihilation of themselves, which is our first ; so the punishment shall not be taken off them by any compassion upon them, which is our second Assertion.

To conclude this branch of the Article, I conceive these certain and infallible Doctrines in Christianity. That the wicked after this life shall be punished for their sins, so that in their punishment there shall be a demonstration of the Justice of God revealed against all unrighteousness of men. That to this end they shall be raised again to life, and shall be judged and condemned by *Christ*, and delivered up under the curse, to be tormented with the Devil and his Angels. That the punishment which shall be inflicted on them shall be proportionate to their sins, as a recompence of their demerits, so that no man shall suffer more than he hath deserved. That they shall be tormented with a pain of loss, the loss from God, from whose presence they are cast out, the pain from themselves, in a despair of enjoying him, and regret for losing him. That they farther shall be tormented with the pain of sense inflicted on them by the wrath of God which abideth upon them, represented unto us by a lake of fire. That their persons shall continue for ever in this remediless condition, under an everlasting pain of loss, because there is no hope of Heaven, under an eternal pain of sense, because there is no means to appease the wrath of God which abideth on them. Thus the *Athanasian Creed*, *They that have done good shall go into life everlasting, and they that have done evil into everlasting fire.*

The next Relation of this Article to the former is in reference to the Resurrection of the Just ; and then the *life everlasting* is not to be taken † in a vulgar and ordinary sense, but raised to the constant language of the Scriptures, in which it signifieth all which God hath promised, which *Christ* hath purchased, and with which man shall be rewarded in the World to come.

† Eam quippe vitam eternam dicimus, ubi est sine fine felicitas. Nam si anima in poenis vivit æternis, quibus

& ipsi spiritus cruciabuntur immundi, mors illa potius æterna dicenda est, quam vita. Nulla quippe major & pejor est mors quam ubi non moritur mors. *S. Aug. de Civit. Dei*, l. 6. c. 12. Quia *vita æterna* ab his qui familiaritatem non habent cum Scripturis Sanctis potest accipi etiam malorum vita ; vel secundum quosdam etiam Philosophos, propter animæ immortalitatem ; vel etiam secundum fidem nostram, propter poenas interminabiles impiorum, qui utique in æternum cruciari non poterunt nisi etiam vixerint in æternum ; profecto finis Civitatis hujus, in quo summum habebit bonum, vel pax in vita æterna, vel vita æterna in pace dicendus est, ut facilius ab omnibus possit intelligi. *Idem* l. 19. c. 11.

Now this Life Eternal may be looked upon under three Considerations ; as Initial, as Partial, and as Perfectional. I call that Eternal Life *Initial*, which

which is obtained in this life, and is as it were an earnest of that which is to follow; of which our Saviour spake, *He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.* I call that *Partial*, which belongeth though to the nobler, yet but a part of man, that is the soul of the Just separated from the body. I dispute not whether the Joys be partial as to the soul, I am sure they are but partial as to the man. For that life consisteth in the happiness which is conferred on the soul departed in the fear, and admitted to the presence of God. St. Paul had a desire to depart and to be with Christ; he was willing rather to travel and be absent from the body, and to be present and at home with the Lord: and certainly where St. Paul desired to be when he departed, there he then was, and there now is, and that not alone, but with all them which ever departed in the same Faith with him, and that is, with Christ who sitteth at the right hand of God. This happiness which the Saints enjoy between the hour of their death and the last day, is the *Partial* life eternal. Thirdly, I call that *Perfectional* which shall be conferred upon the Elect immediately after the blessing pronounced by Christ, *Come, ye blessed children of my Father, receive the Kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the World.*

This *Eternal Life* is to be considered in the Possession, and in the Duration; in the first, as it is *Life*, in the second, as it is *Eternal*. Now this Life is not only natural, that is, the union of the soul to the body, which is the Life of the Reprobate; but spiritual, which consisteth in the *union of the soul to God, as our Saviour speaks, || *He that hath the Son hath life, and he that hath not the Son hath not life.* And it is called after an especial manner *Life*, because of the †happiness which attendeth it: and therefore to understand that Life, is to know so far as it is revealed, in what that happiness doth consist.

deferat Deus. S. August. in Psal. 70. || 1 John 5. 12. † For Life is taken for happiness, and to live for being happy. As among the Greeks and Latines Ζῆν and Vivere were taken for living a cheerful and a merry life, as Vivamus, mea Lesbia, in Catullis and in Martial. Sera nimis vita est crastina, vive hodie, and as it is an old Inscription, AMICI DUM VIVIMUS VIVAMUS, and in the convivial wish, Ζήσεις, mentioned by Dio in the Life of Commodus: So in the language of the Scriptures and a religious notion, they signifie an happy and a blessed life: as 1 Sam. 10. 24. יְהִי הַמֶּלֶךְ. Let the King live, is translated by the Chaldee Paraphrast, יצליח המלך, Let the King prosper. And when David sent unto Nabal, he said, Thus shall ye say to him that liveth in prosperity, which is in the Origine nothing but יָרַח. So the Psalmist is to be understood, Ps. 69. 32. The humble shall see this and be glad, and your heart shall live that seek God. And S. Paul, 1 Thess. 3. 8. ὅτι ὡς ζῶμεν, ἐὰν ὑμεῖς ζήτετε &c. Kueig. Thus Life of it self is often taken in the Scriptures for a happy and glorious life, even that which is eternal, as S. Austin observeth upon these words of the 119. Psal. Veniant mihi miserationes tuæ & vivam. Tunc enim vere vivam, quando nihil potero timere ne moriar. Ipsa enim & sine ullo additamento dicitur Vita, nec intelligitur nisi æterna & beata, tanquam sola dicenda sit vita, in cujus comparatione ista quam ducimus, mors potius sit appellanda quam vita; quale illud est in Evangelio, Si vis venire ad vitam, serva mandata. Nunquid addidit æternam vel beatam? Item de resurrectione carnis cum loqueretur, Qui benefecerunt, inquit, in resurrectionem vitæ. Neque hic ait, æternæ vel beatæ. Sic & hic, Veniant, inquit, mihi miserationes tuæ, & vivam: Neque hic ait, in æternum vivam; vel beate vivam; quasi aliud non sit vivere quam sine ullo fine, & sine ulla miseria vivere: Thus St. Austin. And again Enchir. ad Laurent. c. 92. Non est vera vita, nisi ubi feliciter vivitur, nec vera incorruptio, nisi ubi salus nullo dolore corrumpitur.

To begin with that which is most intelligible; the bodies of the Saints after the Resurrection, shall be transformed into spiritual and incorruptible bodies. The flesh is sown in corruption, raised in incorruption, sown in dishonour, raised in glory, sown in weakness, raised in power, sown a natural body, raised a spiritual body. This perfective alteration shall be made by the Son of God, who shall change our vile body that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself. Thus when we come into that other World, the World of Spirits, even our bodies shall be spiritual.

As for the better part of man, the Soul, it shall be highly exalted to the utmost perfection in all the parts or faculties thereof. The understanding shall be

1 Cor. 13. 12. raised to the utmost capacity, and that capacity completely filled. Now we see through a glass darkly, but then face to face; now we know but in part, but then shall we know even as also we are known. And this even now we know, that when God shall appear we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is. Our first temptation was, that we should be like unto God in knowledge, and by that we fell; but being raised by Christ we come to be truly like him, by knowing him as we are known, and by seeing him as he is. Our wills shall be perfected with absolute and indefective holiness, with exact conformity to the will of God, and perfect liberty from all servitude of sin. They shall be troubled with no doubtful choice, but with their † radical and fundamental freedom shall fully embrace the greatest good. Our affections shall be all set right by an unalterable regulation, and in that regularity shall receive absolute satisfaction; and all this shall be effected that we may be thereby made capable, and then happy by a full fruition.

† Sicut prima
Immortalitas
fuit quam pec-
cando Adam
perdidit, pos-
se non mori,
novissima erit
non posse mo-

ri; ita primum liberum arbitrium, posse non peccare, novissimum non posse peccare. Sic enim erit inamissibilis voluntas pietatis & aquiratis quomodo est felicitatis. Nam utique peccando nec pietatem nec felicitatem tenuimus, voluntatem vero felicitatis nec perditam felicitatem perdidimus. Certe Deus ipse numquid quia peccare non potest ideo liberum arbitrium habere negandus est? Erit ergo illius Civitatis & una in omnibus & inseparabilis in singulis voluntas libera, ab omni malo liberata, & impleta omni bono, fruens indeficienter æternorum jucunditate gaudiorum, oblita culparum, oblita poenarum, nec tamen ideo suæ liberationis oblita, ut liberatori suo non sit ingrata. S. Aug. de Civit. Dei, l. 22. c. 30. v. eundem Tractatu de Epicuris & Stoicis, prope finem.

To this internal perfection is added a proportionately happy condition, consisting in an absolute freedom from all pain, misery, labour, and want; an impossibility of sinning and offending God; an hereditary possession of all good, with an unspeakable complacency and joy flowing from it, and all this redounding from the vision and fruition of God: This is the *Life*.

And now the *Duration* of this life is as necessary as the life it self, because to make all already mentioned amount unto a true felicity, there must be added an absolute security of the enjoyment, void of all fear of losing it or being deprived of it. And this is added, to complete our happiness, by the adjunction of Eternity. Now that this life shall be eternal we are assured who have not yet obtained it, and they much more who do enjoy it. He which hath purchased it for us and promised it unto us, often calleth it *eternal life*; it is described as a *continuing city*, as *everlasting habitations*, as an *house eternal in the heavens*; it is expressed by *eternal glory*, *eternal salvation*, by an *eternal inheritance*, *incorruptible*, *undefiled*, and that *fadeth not away*, by the *everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ*. And lest we should be discouraged by any short or lame interpretation of eternity, it is further explained in such terms as are liable to no mistake. For our Saviour hath said, *If any man keep my saying he shall never see death*. And, *whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall not die*. When God shall wipe away all tears from our eyes, there shall be no more death; and where there is life and no death, there must be everlasting life. Which is expressed by St. Paul by way of opposition, calling it *life and immortality*, and that together with the abolition of death, saying that *our Saviour Jesus Christ hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the Gospel*.

The belief of this Article is necessary, (as to the eternity of torment) to deter us from committing sin, and to quicken us to holiness of life and a speedy repentance for sin committed. For, *the wages of sin is death*; nothing can bring us to those everlasting flames but sin, no sin but that which is unrepented of; nothing can save that man from the never-dying worm, who dieth in his sins; and no other reason can bring him thither, but because he sinned

Heb. 12. 14.
Luke 16. 9.
2 Cor. 5. 1.
1 Pet. 5. 10.
Heb. 5. 9.
9. 15.
1 Pet. 1. 4.
2 Pet. 1. 11.
John 8. 51.
11. 26.
Rev. 21. 4.

2 Tim. 1. 10.

sinned and repented not. † They which imagine the pains inflicted for sin to be either small or short, have but a slender motive to innocence or repentance; but such as firmly believe them sharp and endless, have by virtue of that faith within themselves a proper and natural spur and incitement to avoid them: for *who can dwell in everlasting burnings?*

† Tertul. Apol. c. 45. recounting the advantages of the Christians towards innocence and holiness of

life which the Heathens had not. Recogitare etiam pro brevitate supplicii cuiuslibet, non tamen ultra mortem remansuri. Sic & Epicurus omnem cruciatum doloremque deprecatur, modicum quidem contemptibilem pronunciando, magnam vero non d'uturnum. Enimvero nos qui sub Deo omnium speculatore dispungimur quique æternam ab eo pœnam providemus, merito soli innocentia occurrimus & pro scientia plenitudine, & pro latebrarum difficultate, & pro magnitudine cruciatûs, non diuturni sed sempiterni, eum timentes quem timere debet & ipse qui timentes judicat, Deum non Proconsulem timentes.

Secondly, The belief of eternal pains after death is necessary to breed in us a fear and awe of the great God, a jealous God, a consuming fire, a God that will not be mocked; and to teach us to tremble at his word, to consider the infinity of his Justice, and the fierceness of his wrath, to meditate on the power of his menaces, the validity of his threats, to follow that direction, to embrace that reduplicated advice of our Saviour, *I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear; Fear him which, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea I say unto you, Fear him.* And that exclusively of such fear as concerns the greatest pains of this life; which the ∴ Martyrs undervalued out of a belief of eternal torments.

Luke 12. 5.

Thirdly, This belief is necessary to teach us to make a fit estimate of the price of Christ's Blood, to value sufficiently the work of our Redemption, to acknowledge and admire the love of God to us in Christ. For he which believeth not the eternity of torments to come, can never sufficiently value that ransom by which we were redeemed from them, or be proportionately thankful to his Redeemer by whose intervention we have escaped them. Whereas he who is sensible of the loss of Heaven, and the everlasting privation of the presence of God, of the torments of fire, the company of the Devil and his Angels, the vials of the wrath of an angry and never to be appeased God, and hopeth to escape all these by virtue of the death of his Redeemer, cannot but highly value the price of that Blood, and be proportionably thankful for so *plenteous a Redemption.*

∴ So Polycarpus the Martyr answered the Proconsul threatening to consume him with fire. Πῶς ἀπειλᾷς τὸ πῦρ ὡρᾶν καὶ ὄντων καὶ ἐλπίον σβεννύμενων. Ἀγνοῶς ὅτι τὸ ἔμελλεν εἶναι καὶ αὐτὸν νῦν καὶ ὁρᾷς τοῖς ἀστέσι τῆς ἐκκλῆσιας. Epist. Smyrn. Eccles.

Again, as this Article followeth upon the Resurrection of the just, and containeth in it an eternal duration of infinite felicity belonging to them, it is necessary to stir us up to an earnest desire of the Kingdom of Heaven and that righteousness to which such a life is promised, *I will now turn aside and see this great sight,* said Moses, when he saw the burning Bush. *It is good for us to be here,* said S. Peter, when he saw our Saviour transfigured in the Mount; how much more ought we to be inflamed with a desire of the joys of heaven, and that *length of days which only satisfieth by its eternity, to a careful and constant performance of those commands to which such a reward is so graciously promised! For as all our happiness proceedeth from the vision of God, so we are certain that without holiness no man shall see him.

* So S. Austin upon these words, Longitudine dierum replebo eum] in the 91. Psal. Quæ

est longitudo dierum? vita æterna est. Fratres, nolite putare longitudinem dierum dici, sicut sunt hyeme minores, æstate dies majores. Tales dies nobis habet dare? Longitudo illa est quæ non habet finem, æterna vita quæ nobis promittitur in diebus longis. Et vere quia sufficit non sine causa dixit, *replebo eum.* Non nobis sufficit quicquid longum est in tempore si habet finem, & ideo nec longum dicendum est. Et si avari sumus, vitæ æternæ debemus esse avari: talem vitam desiderate quæ non habet finem. Ecce ubi extendatur avaritia vestra. Argentum vis sine fine? Vitam æternam desiderate sine fine. Non vis ut habeat finem possessio tua? Vitam æternam desiderate.

Secondly, This belief is necessary to take off our inclinations and desires from the pleasures and profits of this life; to breed in us a † contempt of the immortal; desiderat, nisi cum vitæ hujus temporalis, corruptibilis, mortalisque pœniteat. S. Aug. Hom. 50.

† Nemô vitam æternam, incorruptibilem

world,

Col. 3. 2. 7. world, and to teach us to despise all things on this side heaven; to *set our affections on things above, not on things on the earth*, considering we are dead, and *our life is hid with Christ in God*. For *where our treasure is, there will our hearts be also*. Therefore we must forget *those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, press toward the mark, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus*.

Rom. 8. 18. Thirdly, An assent unto this Truth is necessary to encourage us to take up the Cross of Christ, and to support us under it, willingly and chearfully to undergo the afflictions and tribulations of this life, reckoning with the Apostle, *that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us*; and knowing that *our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory*: and this knowledge is not to be obtained, this comfort is not to be expected, except we look *not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen*; for *the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal*.

And now having thus shewed the propriety, proved the verity, and declared the necessity of this Article, we may fully instruct every Christian how to express his Belief in the last object of his Faith, which he may most fitly thus pronounce: I do fully and freely assent unto this as unto a most necessary and infallible truth, that the unjust after their Resurrection and Condemnation shall be tormented for their sins in Hell, and shall so be continued in torments for ever, so as neither the Justice of God shall ever cease to inflict them, nor the persons of the wicked cease to subsist and suffer them: and that the Just after their Resurrection and Absolution shall as the blessed of the Father obtain the Inheritance, and as the servants of God enter into their Masters joy, freed from all possibility of death, sin and sorrow, filled with all conceivable and inconceivable fulness of happiness, confirmed in an absolute security of an eternal enjoyment, and so they shall continue with God and with the Lamb for evermore. And thus I believe the *Life everlasting*.

F I N I S.



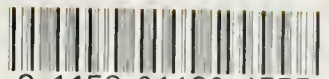
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA AT LOS ANGELES
THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below

MAY 30 1955
MAY 27 1961

Form L-9-15m-2,'36

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
AT
LOS ANGELES

992 Pearson -
P3le An exposition
1692 of the Creed.



3 1158 01180 4555



D 000 001 148 6

*BT
992
P3le
1692

